



MASKED KNIGHT

BOOK 03

Tiao Wu

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Masked Knight
by
Dancing

Synopsis

In a world where magic and sorcery flourish came a tale of a nobody who grew into a legend. Partake in the conquests and tribulations of a great army where warriors live day-to-day, seeking the thrill of combat.

Experience heart-rending drama and hilarious situations while awaiting the impending arrival of the malevolent evil stirring in the darkest depths of the world...

Journey alongside Rody, a young knight, as he dons a mask of circumstances that is filled with secrets to unravel the mysteries of the universe!

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201: Tit for Tat

That evening, a grand dinner banquet was held at the Duke's mansion in West Hill. The local officials of West Hill, the representatives of the local noble families and also some famous celebrities came to greet the Duke of the Tulip Family and his men.

At one of the banquet halls in a courtyard, the men and women socialized, dressed in their best clothes. The accompanying musicians played light brisk music. The guests chatted softly with one another. From time to time, the sounds of the wine glasses colliding and some light music mixed together. Rody and Nicole appeared at the same time.

That night, Nicole wore a red evening dress. The back part of the dress had a split and revealed half of Nicole's white and smooth back. Her golden hair was tied in a simple knot and scattered on her sleek back. She was like a blooming rose and attracted the attention of countless men at the banquet.

Rody wore some extremely exquisite, tailor-made, clothes. His slender and robust figure was perfectly highlighted. There were not many gorgeous decorations on the clothes. That made Rody look even more masculine.

Nicole gently held Rody's arm and snuggled into him. The smile on her face was filled with the contentment of a happy woman. From time to time, she exchanged tender looks with Rody. Her affection was clearly visible to all who were present.

Many of them were guessing the identity of that young man beside the Duke's sister. Later, they learned that the young man's name was Rody. He was the commander of the escort team for His Excellency the Duke. He was an officer of the Imperial Guards, Viscount Rody of the Empire.

Some of those people were skeptical. The young man who was obviously favored by the elder daughter of the Tulip Family was

not from an influential family? He was just an officer of the Imperial Guards and just a little Viscount?

However, many of them thought deeper. The interpersonal relationships of the social circles of the upper-class people were complex. Perhaps this young man had some kind of powerful background...

There were also one or two who were well informed. They had heard of rumors from the Imperial Capital about that man named Rody. When they saw Rody's eyes, they felt at ease and respectful.

Many people were around Nicole and Rody. Although Rody did not like to socialize with those nobles, fortunately, he had undergone rigorous training for this and had also a lot of similar experience during his time as the Duke of the Tulip Family. It was easy for Rody to deal with them. On the other hand, the others felt that this young man behaved like a noble. That certainly confirmed their speculation that the young man must have an extraordinary background.

They saw Nicole snuggling at the young man's side and also the young man's hand was at her waist, throughout the night. They were in each other's arms from the beginning until the end. That made a lot of the hopeful young men feel very disheartened.

A lot of them had come to the banquet prepared. Although they obviously knew the Duke of the Tulip Family would not attend, Miss Nicole was their target. As the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family, Miss Nicole was already famous for her beauty. On top of that, she did not have a male partner. That gave a lot of them hope, especially those young nobles from the more influential families. They had even dressed well for the night.

They did not give anyone any chance. From the start to the end of the dinner banquet, Rody and Nicole were together like couples madly in love with each other.

Nicole was smiling throughout the night. She was completely

different from the rumor that the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family was cold and arrogant. However, they could also see that her tender smile was only directed at Rody. When she spoke with others, her smile was completely artificial.

That was especially true when dealing with those reckless pesky suitors. Nicole would be extremely cold to them, even intimidating.

About midway through the banquet, Nicole's cheeks were already red. She had already drunk a lot of wine that night. As the leading figure for the night and the only representative of the Tulip Family, she was the focus of everyone. She gradually became drunk and softly leaned on Rody's body. The wine made her face look extremely seductive and beautiful.

Rody sighed. He was the only one who could feel that Nicole was acting abnormally. She deliberately drank so much wine. In fact, since their chat in the afternoon, Nicole's mood had been strange. Although she looked calm Rody could sense the storm in her heart.

The thing that surprised Rody, at the banquet, was the presence of Nedis. The banquet was already half way through when she walked in.

That night, that very seductive woman wore a very conservative long dress. Her beautiful body was tightly wrapped in her dress.

However, her charming smile and seductive eyes were a big contrast to her conservative dress.

That woman was a seductress who definitely understood men. The contrast of a seductive woman dressed so conservatively would make men feel excited and start fantasizing.

What gave Rody a headache was that Nedis had clearly seen him. She could not have missed him as he was standing beside Nicole and had also become the focus of the night. Nedis's eyes had a tinge of hatred as she smiled and slowly walked over with a silver wine

cup.

It was only a dozen paces away but with every step she took she swayed her waist gently, causing the men around them to gaze intently.

Rody immediately felt a headache. Did she come here to cause trouble?

The surrounding men who were staring at her were enchanted. Obviously, they all knew Nedis. Some of the higher rank people immediately gathered around her and smiled. They then guided her to Rody's and Nicole's side.

Rody was surprised when those beside him introduced Nedis. He originally thought that Nedis was only the owner of a pub.

"This is Miss Nedis, the President of the Wine Trading Association of West Hill."

One of the officials of West Hill gave the introduction. Nedis then elegantly raised her wine cup and nodded slightly. She then said, "Miss Nicole, how do you do? I am Nedis. It is my privilege to witness the enchanting manner of the Tulip Family, tonight."

Although Nicole was a little intoxicated, she immediately became vigilant. That was a woman's instinct. When an outstanding woman meets another unfamiliar but also outstanding woman, she would naturally become vigilant.

Almost instinctively Nicole moved closer to Rody. She then raised her chin and replied, "Miss Nedis, how do you do?"

Nedis smiled. She then faced Rody and stretched out her hand with the palms facing up. Rody hesitated for a moment. He then frowned as he pulled Nedis' hand and kissed it.

Soon, a few people pretended to chat. Their deliberately feigned harmonious conversation made Rody feel uncomfortable. The thing he was uneasy with in this situation was that he was actually very familiar with West Hill.

In fact, after his return from the war in the Northwest, he had put down the armed rebellion of the previous Assistant Governor in West Hill. He had replaced the entire government administration officials in West Hill province. When he was reorganizing West Hill, he had never heard of Nedis.

However, based on the situation that night, it would seem that Nedis was quite influential amongst the higher rank circles. Even the Assistant Governor was respectful when he talked to her.

"Miss Nedis." Rody finally said, "Based on what the Assistant Governor said, you are the President of the Wine Association in West Hill. However, I have never even heard of your name before. Please forgive my ignorance in the Imperial Capital."

Nedis smiled as her eye drifted to a noble man who was about thirty years old. The man's face immediately turned red. He then straightened his back and said proudly, "Lord Rody, Miss Nedis had just arrived at West Hill about six months ago. Her business is in several provinces of the Empire and not just the West Hill."

Nedis laughed and softly said, "Thank you for the compliment." That man immediately showed an enchanted expression. He could not help but stretch out his hand to hold Nedis' waist. Nedis smiled and stepped back to avoid the hand.

Rody furrowed his eyebrows and gave a wry smile, "Is that so? I was really ignorant. Today, I only heard that a wine bar near the barracks belongs to Miss Nedis. My soldiers had a little unhappy experience there. However, now we are all friends. I hope Miss Nedis does not mind." He then took his wine cup, gestured a little and downed it.

His words were very subtle but nevertheless, he was apologizing to her. That was because what he did to her today was a little overboard.

Nedis did not seem to care. She gave a shallow smile and charmingly looked at Rody.

The Assistant Governor noticed that the situation was a little awkward and smiled, "Miss Nicole had journeyed far. She must be tired. Why don't we go to the back, sit down and chat! This place is a little bit noisy."

They then walked towards the back of the banquet hall. Behind the banquet hall was a hall dedicated for private use. Of course, only the very high ranked guests would be invited to go there.

The two hosts, Rody and Nicole entered that private hall. Accompanying them were Nedis and the Assistant Governor. In addition, that thirty years old noble, who introduced Nedis, also followed. The rest, whose statuses were not high enough, did not follow them.

One of the walls of the side-hall had completely been transformed into a huge window. The curtain was slowly drawn open and the charming night scene outside was visible. West Hill was located at the Northwest of the Imperial Capital. Not only was the city bustling, it also had good sceneries. This was especially true for the Duke's mansion. At the moment, looking out from that special huge window, the towering mountains and the precipitous ridges in the northwest and the local birch trees in the north could be seen. The night wind was blowing and the leaves on the trees were rustling. That coupled with the twinkling of the vast numbers of stars in the sky made the scene fascinating.

The Assistant Governor was a smooth and slick man. Without waiting for Rody and Nicole, he had already ordered some people to bring drinks and snacks. After that, he led everybody to sit down.

That mansion of the Duke was usually not visited by people. If the Duke had not returned to West Hill to recuperate, the mansion would be deserted. Everything needed for welcoming the Duke was arranged by that Assistant Governor. As a result, he was more familiar with that place compared to Rody and Nicole.

They gradually sat down except Nedis, who had awkward expression. She quietly and fiercely stared at Rody, before she slowly sat down on a chair. Her forehead revealed an unnatural expression, suggesting that she seemed to be in pain.

Rody could not help but find it funny. He recalled that that morning he had fiercely hit her backside. Now he wondered if he had hit her too hard, especially after noticing her sitting unnaturally. When he thought of it, he could not help but reveal a strange smile. However, he did not avoid Nedis' look. Nedis fiercely glared at him with a red face when she saw him snicker.

Nicole saw the two of them looking at each other strangely. She could not help but feel a little unhappy. She cleared her throat, looked at Rody before she slowly said, "Miss Nedis, although West Hill is our family's fief I seldom come here. I heard that you are the President of the Wine Association. Then, you must have a very good understanding of the wine industry."

Nedis smiled and slowly replied, "Miss Nicole, thanks for the compliment. Most people, especially men, like wine..." Her eyes swept across those few men present. She continued, "That being said, the culture of wine is a profound subject. However, most people just enjoy drinking wine and only a few are interested in its culture."

"Oh!" Nicole laughed. She raised the wine cup in front of her, took a sip and asked, "So, what profound culture is in the wine?"

Nedis gracefully raised her wine cup. She slowly stood up, walked to the middle and gently turned a circle. She then raised the wine cup in her hand and said, "Can everyone see the cup of wine in my hand?"

Those few men present only took a look at the cup in her hands. Their attentions, intentionally or unintentionally, were more at her snake-like waist. That woman was a natural seductress. Even by just simply spinning in a circle earlier, she had created a strange

charm.

When Rody saw her get out of her seat and walk to the middle, he could not help but guess maliciously. Did she stand up because it was too painful to sit down? Was her attractive gait due to the pain in her backside making her walk unnaturally?

Nedis calmly asked, "Miss Nicole, I would like to ask you a question. Do you know what is the most romantic and most serious thing in this world?"

Nicole smiled and replied, "Miss Nedis, are you giving me a test?" She then muttered to herself and slowly said, "The most serious thing, I think it should be God's teachings. Religion has always been the most serious thing. I believe nobody has any objection to that. The most romantic thing..." Nicole then looked at Rody tenderly. She smiled and continued, "The most romantic thing should be love."

When she finished, some of the men nodded in approval.

Nedis also smiled and whispered, "Miss Nicole's words make sense. But I must ask, what is the thing that can combine the seriousness of religion and romance of love together?"

Nicole was smart. When she heard those words, she immediately understood and replied, "Is it wine?"

Nedis' smile vanished. Her eyes had a pious and serious gaze. Her look surprised Rody. It was a gaze indicating one's seriousness in the pursuit of the true essence of something. In the past, when Master Autumn talked about swords and when the Black Veil Saint talked about sorcery, they both had the same look in their eyes. It seemed that Miss Nedis was not a simple seductress. For her, wine is the most awesome pursuit.

Nedis slowly explained, "For example, the red wine in this cup. It is brewed from grape juice. It has a scarlet color, sparkling and transparent. Based on what I know, men and women in love use

red wine to create the atmosphere. During a candlelit dinner, a cup of red wine not only make people feel more pleasant, it is also a symbol of romantic love."

Nicole smiled and responded, "True, this is a type of custom."

Nedis nodded and slowly continued, "However, very few people knew the origin of red grape wine... It has nothing to do with love."

Nedis sighed and continued, "As early as about eight hundred years ago, mankind had learned how to brew grape wine. However, it was not on the Radiant Continent. Instead, it was on the Roland Continent. Hundreds of years ago, at Rhone Valley in the Gordon Kingdom of the Roland Continent, there was a beautiful vineyard. The beautiful scenery stimulated the creative inspiration of mankind. The people then fermented wine with grapes. But do you know that the wine was not recognized by the world? This was because, at that time, Gordon Kingdom was not a legitimate kingdom! It was not until about five hundred years ago when the Temple of the Roland Continent acknowledged the King of the Gordon Kingdom. The Gordon Kingdom was then recognized and admitted as a religious kingdom by the temple. The grape wine then became an absolute necessity for religious ceremonies and baptisms."

Nicole smiled and asked, "Are you saying that wine was originally used in religious rituals?"

Nedis nodded and smiled, "This is something not so nice to say..." Her eyes showed a bit of cunningness as she continued, "It should be said that the heathens in the North were using wine to do their evil rituals. The Church of the Radiant Empire would not recognize those evil rituals." The Assistant Governor and that noble immediately raised their wine cups and with a serious tone, loudly said, "Long live the God of Radiant Empire!"

Rody and Nicole were dumbfounded. They took their wine cups

and just went through the motions... After all, for hundreds of years in the Radiant Continent, under the influence of the teachings of God, it is impossible to openly go against the religion.

Nedis seemed to have a delicate appearance. However, she heroically bottomed up a cup of wine, in one mouthful. She then gently smiled and said, "This grape wine was later introduced from the Northern Continent to the Empire. It is a sacred and religious wine on the Roland Continent. However, in the Empire, after hundreds of years of evolution, this grape wine has become something used to create a romantic atmosphere for people in love."

They then exchanged jokes for a while. Nedis somehow always diverted the topic to Rody. Nedis did not need to say anything. She only simply needed to inadvertently insinuate and that Assistant Governor, as well as that noble, would start to inquire about all things. Her experienced socializing skills surprised Rody, and her skillful manipulations made Rody very weary.

Gradually, it was late in the night and the banquet had ended. Everybody went out to say their farewells to the other guests. Nicole was already quite drunk and softly leaned on Rody's arms. Although Nedis' face was red, her eyes were still very clear. When she bid farewell, she actually blew a kiss to Rody! She then took advantage of the moment when everybody was not paying attention to bitterly whisper in Rody's ear, "Boy, you just wait!"

Rody was still stunned but Nedis had jumped away. She then pulled Nicole's hand to bid a warm farewell and then left under the gazes of a group of men.

After everybody had left, Nicole, who was originally tipsy, suddenly stood straight up from Rody's arm. Her originally hazy drunken gaze also turned slightly more sober. She was clearly sober from the way she looked at Rody. She then pursed her lips and said to Rody with a jealous tone. "From now on, you are not allowed to get close to that woman!"

Rody looked at Nicole in a daze. He sighed in his heart. Women!

Without waiting for Rody to turn around, Nicole had already hooked her arms around his neck. She then whispered in his ear, "Carry me back. Do not forget, you are previously my servant, Rody..."

Rody felt his blood surge. With one motion, he carried Nicole up and then smilingly whispered, "Yes, my lady master."

Chapter 202: Nicole's Tender Love

The cold morning wind blew in through the window — they had forgotten to close it the previous night. Although the morning wind was not strong, it still slowly blew up the curtains in front of the window sill. The early morning light shone into the room through the narrow gap between the two big curtains.

Rody felt the cool wind, rubbed his eyes and exhaled.

At that moment he had a strange feeling in his heart. It happened?

The room was dim and there was an untidy mess of clothes on the floor. The dress that was torn... looked like the luxurious red evening dress that Nicole wore the previous night... At that moment, it had been crumpled and randomly thrown on the floor.

Half the soft bed sheet was on the floor... Rody was leaning against the bedhead on the left side of the bed. Nicole was still sleeping. She was hugging Rody's waist and arms with her soft, snow white body. Her head was on Rody's chest. She was like a kitten, partially lying on him. Her golden hair was gently scattered on the pillow, exposing only her sharp chin and delicate ears. She had a peaceful smile on her face and the corners of her mouth turned up.

Rody sentimentally looked at the figure in his arm. The confusion in his mind gradually cleared up and was replaced with a joyful and tender feeling.

He gently pulled out his arm that was held by Nicole. He then stretched out his hand to stroke her back. Nicole lay down sideways, snuggled up on his chest. Her smooth back and waist were curled up, forming a captivating curve. Parts of her buttocks and waist were exposed while the rest were covered in white sheets. The whole scene was very alluring.

Rody took two deep breaths and he finally became fully awake. It really happened last night.

Both of them were drunk when Rody carried Nicole back to her room. All along the way, when the servants saw the young rising star of the empire carry their Miss back, they gave way. Those servants of the aristocratic families were trained and they knew when it was appropriate to stay away.

After placing Nicole on her bed, Rody saw Nicole breathing heavily. Her red face and seductive eyes made Rody feel like he was firmly nailed to the floor and could not even move a single step. Although his heart told him that it was time to leave many times, under such circumstances, which men could walk away?

Fortunately, he soon did not need to make a decision. Nicole suddenly turned around and sat up on the bed. She hugged Rody's neck with both her hands and pulled him down. The two of them then rolled in the bed.

Rody could clearly remember then that Nicole was trembling. She was trembling not just because of nervousness and excitement, but also because it was an instinctive fear of a girl in anticipation of what was about to come next. Based on that, at least it could be confirmed that Nicole was sober.

Rody could not control himself as the intense passionate emotion flared in his heart. He tore off Nicole's dress. The excited couple was then entangled together in their embrace.

When the wonderful moment arrived, Rody could clearly feel Nicole trembling violently. He could also hear her soft shrieks. In the dark, Rody immediately stopped and held Nicole's face. His palm was damp. Nicole wept in the dark and placed her head in Rody's arms. She gritted her teeth and said, "It hurts!"

It was dawn and Rody was still recalling that moment. He felt a strange sense of satisfaction. He looked at the sleeping Nicole beside him and finally understood the feeling in his heart. She is

my woman.

Nicole's behavior was very strange the previous night. She seemed to be violently impulsive. Although in the beginning, she cried for a long time because of the pain, after that she was a little crazy. It was as if an invisible wave of passion rolled the two of them together; tossing them up, down and then up again...

Finally, Nicole fiercely bit Rody's arm. It was definitely not the action of a lover during the passion of s*x. Rody could clearly feel Nicole's bitterness and hatred along with the excitement and love in that bite.

Rody was not a fool. He remembered telling Nicole about Myka and the ring that afternoon. After that, Nicole unexpectedly gave herself to him that night. Rody understood the reason for her action.

He lifted his arm and saw the small circular teeth marks on his arm. Rody could not help but smile. It was no longer painful but the marks had a profound meaning.

When Rody lifted his arm, his actions had also aroused Nicole. Nicole groaned as she slowly opened her eyes. She stared at Rody with her blue eyes which were hidden behind her hair.

Rody's heart stirred. He smiled gently and whispered, "You are awake?"

Nicole smiled sweetly. She did not say anything but rubbed her head in Rody's arms. After a while, Nicole's vague voice came from within his arms, "Now, you are my man."

Rody was moved. He felt as if he was being wrapped by a tender feeling and something in his heart was slowly melting. He instinctively held Nicole with his two hands and kissed her on her head.

The two of them lay down on the bed, quietly. In their hearts, they felt the tender sentiments in the air that filled every corner

the room. The cool air blew in through the window and it seemed a little cold. Rody sighed. He then slowly let go of Nicole, stood up and walked towards the window. He closed the windows and after that drew open the curtains.

The sunlight had completely shined into the room. The morning light that was slightly golden shined on Rody's robust body, making him look like a legendary figure from ancient times. Nicole was stunned as she looked at Rody indulgently. She then smiled and softly said, "Has the sun already risen?"

Rody walked over and completely wrapped up Nicole with the bed sheets. He then hugged her whole body in his arms. His big hand gently touched Nicole's hair. Rody also looked infatuated as he ran his fingers down her curly hair.

"What are you thinking of?" Nicole immediately noticed that Rody was distracted.

Rody laughed and softly replied, "I just remembered that more than a year ago... I was still a pitiful boy whose only desires were to have enough money to pay my tuition fees and after that, find a woman I love."

Nicole's face was red. She smiled and said, "Well, now your dream has come true."

Rody's arms tightened a little bit and firmly said, "Nicole, do you know? On that night I first went to your house, in the stables I saw..."

Nicole blushed again. She spat and then smilingly said, "That night, you were..."

Rody laughed when he also recalled taking advantage of Nicole, that night when she was unconscious. He shook his head and continued, "Ah... That night, I saw you crying in the stables and felt sorry for you. I did not know what to say or how to express myself, but I think it was at that time that I fell in love with you."

Those few days when I followed you, I always thought, even if you had wanted me to die, I would be willing to."

Nicole frowned and gently covered his mouth. She bit her lips and whispered, "Nonsense, I will not ask you to die."

Rody silently smiled at her words.

Although Rody was just casually leaning against the bedhead, he looked somewhat different. If Rody was just a big boy the previous night, then today, he had already matured into a man. In the world, a woman would always be able to make a man mature.

After embracing each other for a long time, Nicole finally sighed. "Well, it is getting late. It is time to get up... There are still much that needs to be done today."

Rody also sighed. At that moment, he had a beauty in his arms as his hands were gently wrapped around her waist. He sniffed the petal like fragrance on Nicole's body and was reluctant to leave. It was at that moment when he finally understood why people said that the "gentle and soft fragrance is a hero's grave". With such tenderness, it was really possible to whittle away a man's spirit.

However, Nicol's next move surprised Rody.

Nicole stretched out one of her hands to pull a rope at the bedhead. There was the jingling sound of a small bell and within a moment the door to the room was pushed open.

Four to five servants dressed as maids slowly walked in. All of them were carrying various things in their hands. There were clothes, a silver basin filled with water, clean snow white scarf and even a set of soft underwears.

Rody seemed so shocked he shrank into a ball. At that moment, he was not wearing anything. He definitely did not feel natural to be naked in front of a group of women.

Nicole laughed when she saw Rody looking helpless and embarrassed. After that, her face also turned red. She waved her

hand and whispered, "Alright, all of you, put down those things and go out..."

Those few maids had a placid look. Their eyes always looked straight ahead and absolutely did not drift all over the place.

After all of them had left the room and closed the door, Rody then gave a long sigh and whispered, "They... Have they been waiting outside this whole time? The others... The others all know that I am here. They know that last night, we..."

Nicole replied with a red face, "You fool, do you think nobody saw you carrying me to my room last night? They are all my personal maids. Naturally, they would wait outside to serve me every morning."

Rody froze for a moment. Finally, he sighed and smiled. "Looks like our relationship can be considered already public."

Nicole smiled sweetly. She got out of Rody's arms. She was still wrapped in the white bed sheet as she struggled to stand on the floor. However, her movement was not very natural. She wrinkled her brows with every movement she made as if her body was having some pain.

Rody felt guilty. He hugged her as he sat by the bedside and asked, "Is it still painful?"

That question made Nicole's face immediately turn red. She glared at Rody and replied, "Do you still need to ask?"

Rody was in a daze. Nicole shyly unwrapped the bed sheet off her body. She stood in front of Rody, totally naked. Her seductive and snow white body was exquisite and nimble. She placed one hand to cover her chest and the other hand gently caressed her lower abdomen.

Nicole angrily said to Rody who was gaping blankly, "You... Don't look!" She then threw the bed sheet on Rody's head...

The moment she had raised her hands to throw the bed sheet,

Rody had a good glimpse of her naked voluptuous chest and the two pink dots...Then everything turned black as the bed sheet covered his head.

By the time Rody had scrambled to remove the bed sheet from his head, Nicole had already hurriedly put on her white silk robe. The soft silk robe hid her seductive body inside. However, she wore a short skirt over her long and slender legs. It would be hard for people to resist not to imagine what captivating scene would be under the skirt...

Nicole looked at Rody's infatuated expression. She blushed. She felt happy. She gently picked up the clothes that were just delivered by her maids. After that, she pulled Rody up and helped him with the clothes. Her movements were very gentle like that of a gentle wife. Rody laughed and asked, "What are you doing?"

Nicole did not stop as she replied, "Helping you to wear your clothes. You are now my man. Is it wrong for me to do so?"

She moved her gentle fingertips across Rody's chest. Rody could smell her body fragrance and could feel a strong emotion in his heart. His satiated desires started to rise again. Nicole, who was helping him to wear his clothes, immediately noticed that. She shyly bit her lips and whispered, "You better not have any bad thoughts! You don't sympathize with me at all."

Nicole then dipped the cloth in the clear water and carefully wiped Rody's face. She gently wiped every corner of Rody's face. She then took a thin string to tie up Rody's long blue hair.

Rody simply stood there. He had never been served so meticulously before. Even previously when he was in the mansion of the Duke of the Tulip Family in the Imperial Capital, he had refused the beautiful maid to help him to wear his clothes and wash his face. He had always been wearing his own clothes and washing his own face.

After a passionate night, Nicole felt weak and was breathing

rapidly. There were a few beads of sweat on her smooth forehead. However, she meticulously helped Rody to dress neatly, including helping him to wear his shoes.

After looking at Rody's new appearance, Nicole finally showed a satisfied smile. She noticed that Rody's gaze was strange. She then followed the direction of his gaze and realized that her previous actions had opened up her loose silk robe. She exclaimed as she held onto her clothes and ran a few steps to the back of the screen in the room.

Looking at the blurred silhouette behind the screen and listening to the sound of clothes being changed, Rody also did not know why but he suddenly felt touched. When a man finally obtained the woman he loved, that kind of feeling need not be taught. It would naturally emerge from the bottom of his heart.

When the two of them came out of the room, the maids were already waiting on both sides of the corridor. Rody looked somewhat embarrassed and Nicole also had an unnatural expression. She held on to Rody's arm, but as she walked she felt awkward.

In the Duke's mansion, almost all the people they met along the way, gave them respectful smiles. Rody's embarrassment gradually subsided as he slowly grew accustomed to the stares of others.

They had a simple light breakfast. That was the first time Rody ate breakfast together with Nicole, ever since he reassumed his own identity.

After that, Rody had an important matter to attend to — that was to 'visit the sick Duke of the Tulip Family'.

That was the act he must put on every day. In the courtyard of the Duke's mansion in West Hill, not far from the small building that Nicole was staying, there was a small two-storey building. That was the place where the seriously sick Duke of the Tulip Family was living in.

Surrounding the small building was a dozen of the Duke's loyal bodyguards. Those people are Rody's trusted subordinates and they were warriors who had transformed into vampires.

Those newly transformed vampires did not have any complicated thoughts and merely followed orders from their master. Just like what Sky had said, those people were the most loyal subordinates. There was also no fear that they would reveal secrets. The newly transformed vampires would need at least ten years before they have their own personal thoughts.

Right now, they were just like newborn animals that listen to their owner's commands.

The fact was, in the minds of those vampire warriors, there was no concept of a real or fake Duke. They only performed the most simple, basic orders in their heads. The order was that besides Nicole and their own master, Rody, no one else was allowed to enter.

What the public saw was that after a brief visit to see the sick Duke in the small building, Nicole, the Duke's sister, and Rody, her lover who was also captain of the bodyguards, left together.

From that day onwards, the news of Rody, Viscount of the Empire, Officer of the Imperial Guard and Court Warrior winning the heart of Miss Nicole, the Duke's sister, was finally announced to the public.

Chapter 203: Strange Visitor From the Imperial Capital

In the afternoon, Rody left the Duke's residence. He bade farewell to Miss Nicole and returned to the barracks.

The moment he entered the barracks, he felt the strange gazes of the soldiers. They looked at him with a smile. A few higher ranked officers had already come over and vigorously patted his shoulder. When they finally pulled him into a big tent everybody cheered.

Rody smiled wryly. The soldiers cheered as if they had won a battle. In the end, one officer shouted out indicating that he was proud of his commanding officer for successfully winning the most beautiful flower amongst the nobles.

Although wine was forbidden in the military, everybody had demanded it. Rody then took the soldiers out to the pub to have a drink. At the pub, the emotional officers broke many wine cups and drank many barrels of wine. They then shouted their victory slogan as they returned to the barracks.

The subsequent matters were relatively more simple. Rody and Nicole appeared together in public every day. Together, they attended various activities and banquets held by the nobles in West Hill. They were like lovers in front of everyone. Since he had 'started' his relationship with Nicole, he could not see Myka for a while. Otherwise, if it was known that the lover of the Duke's sister had another woman, there would be a huge uproar.

As the news gradually spread, the relationship between Viscount Rody and the Duke's sister was already known by everyone. Even people in the far away Imperial Capital had also received the news.

Some people could not help but suddenly realized that His Majesty's earlier marriage proposal to Miss Nicole was rejected presumably because she already had a lover. However, Rody's

identity was a little strange, as if Rody had suddenly appeared out of thin air. Perhaps, he was really just an ordinary low-ranked officer.

After the Military Minister, Marquis Garoline, received that news he fell into deep thought. Rody and Nicole?

The old Marquis sighed. It seemed like His Majesty the Emperor really wanted to win over the Tulip Family. After the war, the Tulip Family's influence had become very strong and peerless. The Empire's first family's power was deep rooted and they also had the undying loyalty of the Empire's most powerful army, the Lightning God's Whip. The Duke of the Tulip Family had also been appointed as the Marshal of the Empire.

That Rody must be His Majesty's illegitimate child. His relationship with Miss Nicole ... isn't it obvious? It must have been inspired by His Majesty!

However, this is strange. Initially, the father's marriage proposal was rejected. But, he then allowed his son to pursue...

Marquis Garoline did not care about how strange it was. Matters involving power struggles were naturally strange and complicated.

It is impossible to win over the Tulip Family. Looks like the only way to revitalize the Lionheart Family is through Rody.

Perhaps... Perhaps, His Majesty has the intention of making his illegitimate child the Crown Prince?

Marquis Garoline then shook his head as the various complicated thoughts crossed his mind. No matter what, he would need to create a connection and win over Rody.

Fifteen days after the Duke of the Tulip Family nursed his injuries in West Hill, a group of strange guests arrived at the barracks in the West Hill City.

Except for the middle-aged man, who wore an ordinary noble's clothes, the rest of those people were neatly dressed in the

warrior's uniform. The middle-aged man introduced himself as Baron Gadar, from the Imperial Capital. He requested to see His Excellency Viscount Rody and he also claimed to be his good friend in the Imperial Capital.

The officer of the Imperial Guards gave a strange smile as he told him that Rody was not in the barracks. He suggested that he could look for Rody at the outskirts, north of the city. Early that morning His Excellency Rody had received orders to bring along some men to escort Miss Nicole. The nobles of West Hill were having a hunting party at the hunting grounds on the outskirts of West Hill.

The hunting grounds in the north of West Hill was the property of the Tulip Family. It was a Black Forest. The outer perimeter of the forest was surrounded by a simple and crude wooden fence. Normally, the Assistant Governor would send men to upkeep the grounds. A group of soldiers would also take turns to guard the place.

The hunting grounds were specially meant for the nobles' hunting activities. Hunting was an activity only among the nobles and was very popular in the Empire. The Empire's militaristic nature and the law of the nobles' inheritance had encouraged the maintenance of these practices. Hunting was a good form of exercise that could develop their fencing and horsemanship skills.

It was the end of autumn and leaves were already starting to fall. About a dozen magnificent carriages were parked outside of the hunting grounds. It was almost noon and the drivers of the carriages lazily rest on the cushions.

The road leading to the hunting grounds were guarded by a group of armored Imperial Guards and the Lightning God's Whip. There were also about a dozen Imperial Guards standing at the entrance of the hunting grounds.

Baron Gadar and his subordinates were obstructed by a few layers of security. Finally, after he produced something to prove

his identity, the soldiers allowed him in. However, his subordinates had to stay outside. In accordance with the rules at the hunting grounds, each noble was only allowed to bring in up to two bodyguards.

That was an old tradition amongst the nobles of the Empire. Hunting expeditions help to develop their horseback archery. There would be no point in bringing a large group of people. If they did, then it would not be called a hunt. There would be no difference compared to having a picnic.

Such activity was popular amongst the nobles because it was exciting and risky. If they brought a large group of people to protect themselves, then there would be no meaning to it.

Baron Gadar took two of his subordinates along. They then took three bows and several arrow pouches before they rode their horses into the hunting grounds. The hunting grounds of the Tulip Family covered an area of at least ten square kilometers. There was a dense black forest in the hunting grounds and a small lake at the center of the forest.

As autumn was almost over, there were many animals that came out to forage for food for the winter. That was the best time to go hunting.

The one responsible for leading Baron Gadar was a cavalryman from the Imperial Guard. The news they received about an hour ago was that Miss Nicole and a group of nobles were at the center of the forest near the lake. The nobles would signal the guards outside once every two hours. They communicated using special fireworks. The firework would be tied to an arrow and then it would be shot towards the sky. The exploding fireworks in the sky would show their location.

After all, hunting was a dangerous activity. Although there were people guarding the hunting grounds, for an area of about ten square kilometers, it was inevitable that occasionally there would

be some trespassers or emergence of some large beast.

They galloped on the road in the forest for a while until they finally came close to the lake at the center.

From afar, a sharp whistle could be heard from the direction of the lake. It was a whistle used during hunting to drive out the prey. Using that method, the frightened prey would be driven to a pre-set ambush. After that, the prey would be surrounded and shot. That was the method used to deal with some of the larger prey.

In the dense forest, there was a short stretch sloping upwards. About a dozen horsemen were gathered together up there. Gadar and the others immediately went up the slope. Before they could approach, two cavalrymen rode forward and blocked their way.

Gadar looked at the two cavalrymen blocking his way and became alerted. The two cavalrymen wore the armor and uniform of the Lightning God's Whip. As the Lightning God's Whip was responsible for guarding Miss Nicole, it meant that Rody was in front.

The two cavalrymen from the Lightning God's Whip were obviously elites. Although they were just sitting on their horses, Gadar could feel a murderous aura. That kind of aura could only come from people that had fought in life and death battles.

The Imperial Guard who led them in, went up to the two Lightning God's Whip cavalrymen, to relate the message. The two cavalrymen then looked at Gadar vigilantly before they opened the way and let Gadar through. However, Gadar noticed that their hands were constantly on the hilts of their swords. Gadar was certain that if anything went a little bit wrong, the world renowned Lightning God's Whip would immediately draw their scimitars.

The two Lightning God's Whip had made way for Baron Gadar to pass through but they still followed him closely. Gadar was calm

but his two subordinates could not help but feel a bit angry. One of them could not help but whisper, "They are so arrogant. What is so great about the Lightning God's Whip?"

Gadar immediately turned around and fiercely stared at his subordinate. He also could not help but glance at the two cavalrymen following them. The two cavalrymen had heard the man's words but they did not show any sign of being irritated. Their facial expressions were still cold and filled with pride and confidence. However, they just looked over in disdain.

Gadar could feel that their self-confidence and pride was no pretense. It was the pride and dignity that came after going through truly tough experiences. He could also feel the way they looked at his subordinates. It was a disdainful gaze like a valiant wolf watching a dog baring its fangs and brandishing its claws.

Suddenly there was a loud bang and a few people cheered, "Your Excellency Rody, Good shot!"

Finally, Gadar arrived at that circle. In the middle of the circle of about ten meters, there were three wild boars. A group of nobles and their guards surrounded the three wild boars in the middle. They had already readied their bows and arrows. Some of them whistled loudly to frighten the prey.

One of the wild boars was shot by an arrow and it fell to the ground, struggling weakly. Based on the earlier cheers, it was obviously shot by Rody.

Although the guards were just sitting on their horses, they had already prepared the spears. They aimed at the wild animals in the center of the circle, for fear that the wild animals might, in a wild dash, hurt the person they were supposed to protect.

The wild boars squealed in terror, their hackles raised, and sharp fangs bared. They stayed low to the ground vigilantly watching the hunters who had already surrounded them, seemingly preparing for an attack at any time.

Gadar slowly rode towards the encirclement and from a distance, he saw two people sitting on a lofty white horse.

Sitting at the front of the horse was a woman wearing a thick fur coat. She had long golden curly hair. The high collars of her coat hid half of her beautiful face. She had a nervous and fearful expression as she looked at the fangs of the wild boar. Her body even shrank back tightly into the man sitting behind her.

Rody tightly wrapped one hand around Nicole's waist and also clutched the reins, while he held a spear in the other hand. He had already put down his bow and arrows. At that moment, he was speaking softly with Nicole. He was no longer paying any attention to the wild boars, his gentle eyes looking at his lover in his arms.

Gadar only needed a glance to confirm that the blue haired, craggy-faced man was the person he was looking for.

At that moment, there was an uproar in the place as the trapped preys tried to breakout.

The two boars that could still move dashed towards the north, one in front of the other...

The cunning boars realized that there were fewer people at the north!

Rody and Nicole, astride a horse, just so happened to be in the north!

When Nicole saw the prey rush towards them, she could not help but cry out. It was a woman's nature and it made her forget that she was a superb sorcerer. It was her innate woman's instincts to react by tightly holding on to her lover.

The surrounding hunters were already prepared and they fired their arrows. The difference was clear. Many of nobles obviously did not practice much on normal days. The successive shots all missed their targets. However, the guards had been instructed earlier and they were not allowed to shoot their arrows.

As a result, after a round of shooting, only two or three arrows had obliquely hit one of the wild boars. However, the force was only strong enough for the arrows to pierce the thick skin of the boars and were not fatal. In desperation, the boars had already turned violent.

Rody held Nicole with one hand and laughed softly. The other hand then swung the spear. There were only a flash and an explosive sound. One of the wild boars was hit and it was sent crashing to the ground a few meters away. It could no longer get up. Its whole body was trembling and its mouth was full of blood. Rody's strike had even caused the wild boar's internal organs to spill out of its body. If he had used fighting energy, the wild boar would have become a mangled mass of flesh and blood.

Rody then heard the other wild boar squeal. Not knowing when but Rody had already swung out his spear. The spear precisely pierced through the charging wild boar and firmly nailed that big animal to the ground.

There was another cheer but Rody did not even look back at the place. He turned his horse around and slowly rode towards the back. He was certain that Nicole would feel disgusted looking at such a gory sight.

He gradually rode away from the cheers with two of the Lightning God's Whip cavalymen following behind him. Rody looked at Nicole's uneasy expression and could not help but give a wry smile.

Nicole obviously did not like such bloody scenes but she still wanted to follow them for the hunt. Along the way, they had encountered a few antelopes and hares. However, she did not have the heart to harm them and let them go. She also refused to wait with the other noble women at the camp near the lake because she wanted to be with him.

Their actions were extremely intimate. They looked like they

were glued to each other, in front of everyone. Initially, it was an act and its purpose was to make everyone accept that fact as soon as possible. However, in the end, there was less and less pretense, as their words and actions were genuine and sincere. It was the actions of two people in love.

Both of them rode on one horse and gradually approached the lake.

The lake in the forest was exceptionally clean and clear. The locals claimed that the water in that lake was not stagnant water. They claimed that the depth of the lake was unfathomable. There was a never ending flow of undercurrent throughout the year, leading to the distant mountains.

There were some noble women already waiting at the camp on the edge of the lake. They had put up a few barbecue stands at the simple, constructed camp. Several guards were using their knives to cut and clean the prey, while those noble women in fur clothes were resting near the lake. There were also two to three young men who did not join in the hunt. Those men approached the women and it was obvious that they took advantage of the hunting activities to pick up women.

The sound of the galloping horses could be heard as the soldiers from behind caught up. They brought over the three wild boars. A few cavalymen had propped up the wild boars with their spears. Those cavalymen then rushed on ahead with the wild boars.

When Nicole saw the bloody carcasses, she frowned and closed her eyes.

The barbecue stands had some [game](#) that were already roasted earlier, a slight aroma rising from it. Rody dismounted from the horse and then carried Nicole down. He gently brushed off the leaves from her hair. The people around looked at Rody enviously but he had already grown accustomed to such stares.

Rody then heard a cough behind him. He turned around and saw

a middle-aged man smile and walked towards him.

That man was between thirty to forty years old. He wore a simple noble's outfit which was different from the hunting clothes worn by the other nobles. It was just a simple robe. Below his nose was a handsome mustache. He also had an affable smile. However, he did not look familiar and it seemed like he was not from West Hill.

"Your Excellency Rody, how do you do?" The man extended his hand and smiled. "My name is Gadar, Baron Gadar." He smiled modestly and respectfully. He continued, "I am from the Imperial Capital."

Rody was at a loss but he still stretched out his hand to shake the other man's hand.

Nicole opened her mouth and asked, "Baron Gadar... Are you that Baron Gadar of the '[Sharp Metal Lane](#)'?"

Rody did not know that man but when he heard the name 'Sharp Metal Lane', he immediately remembered.

The Sharp Metal Lane was the Empire's largest weapons manufacturer. Most of the weapons in the Empire was procured at the Sharp Metal Lane. In other words, he was from a very powerful family because they provided weapons and military equipment to the Empire. That family had a close relationship with the military forces of the Empire.

Baron Gadar bowed gracefully to Nicole. He then looked at Rody and whispered, "Your Excellency Rody, may I talk to you?"

Game can refer to animals hunted for sport or food.

Sharp Metal Lane, 锐金坊 Can also mean Sharp Metal Workshop. I just thought Lane sounds nicer as a name.

Chapter 204: Legendary Scimitar

Rody squinted his eyes slightly as he sized up the Baron, Gadar.

Of course, Rody is aware of the renowned Sharp Metal Lane. He had been in the army for a very long time and therefore, he understood the relationship between the military and Sharp Metal Lane.

Although that famous business family of the Empire did not reveal the extent of its power in the political field, he knew they really had a powerful influence. That was because almost half of all the local garrison's equipment was purchased from that family.

They had shops almost all over the Empire. The Empire had a special law stating that only soldiers and those with the title of warriors could carry weapons; civilians were not allowed to. However, one-third of the weapons held by the warriors of the Empire were all purchased from Sharp Metal Lane. Even Rody's sword when he was still studying in the Imperial Academy was purchased from Sharp Metal Lane.

The most important thing was that the armies of the Empire purchased a lot of weapons and equipment from the Sharp Metal Lane every year. Besides equipment used by the local garrison even weapons used by the Northern Legion and the Northwest Legion were also supplied by them.

It was impossible for their business to have grown to such an extent unless they really had some strong influence.

Rody frowned and asked, "Baron Gadar, why are you looking for me?"

Baron Gadar glanced at Nicole. He then straightened his body and said, "Your Excellency, can we sit down and chat? Miss Nicole, I am sure you would not mind being separated from Rody for a while?"

The two of them then walked together as they talked and looked for a place near the barbecue stands to sit down. Baron Gadar seemed subtle. He laughed casually and was not worried about the way he spoke.

Rody was also no longer as impatient as before. After the war, Rody had become more confident; he was not anxious at all. Rody smiled calmly as he handed over a [bota bag](#). He watched Gadar drink a mouthful of water before he asked again, "Baron Gadar, Why are you looking for me?"

Gadar laughed and replied, "Viscount Rody, you are the youngest hero of the Empire awarded by His Majesty for this crusade. Unfortunately, I was not in the Imperial Capital at that time. This time, I came to West Hill to deal with some matters related to my family's shops. This is why today I took the liberty of coming here, just to visit you and express my admiration for you!"

Rody smiled and waited quietly for the other person to continue.

Gadar continued to laugh. "You know this too. Our family's business is closely related to the Empire's military. Personally, I really like to make friends with military heroes. You are a new rising star in the Empire and I would certainly regret if I do not get to know you."

Rody faintly smiled and said, "Baron Gadar, you are too polite. Right now, I am just a small officer in the Imperial Guards. As for titles, I am only just a Viscount. I feel extremely flattered that a distinguished person like you from such a large business family in the Empire came to show appreciation for me!"

Gadar shook his head and loudly said, "A rising hero among the young! Viscount Rody, at your tender age you already displayed remarkable talents in the military. Your future is definitely limitless. I, Gadar, would definitely not be wrong in my judgment of people!"

Rody looked at him and softly said, "You are too polite."

Gadar gently smiled. He then took out something that was wrapped in layers of embroidered cloth. He smiled and said, "A precious sword must be bestowed to a hero. My family sells weapons and we have very little treasures. However, this blade is quite good. As it is my pleasure to meet you today, please accept my humble gift."

Rody looked at the gift that was handed over but he did not reach out to accept it. Instead, he shook his head and said, "Baron Gadar, I do not understand. I am just a small viscount. I am already very surprised that you specifically came to see me. It is even more inexplicable for you to present a gift to me."

Gadar did not refute Rody's statement. Instead, he drew off layer by layer of the embroidered cloth to reveal the thing inside.

It was a scimitar. The shape of that scimitar was the same as the scimitars used by the Wolf Fang of the Lightning God's Whip. However, other than the appearance, everything else about the scimitar was very different.

The sheath of the scimitar was made of leather from an unknown animal. It looked very thick. That leather was coated with cutin, giving it a rough appearance.

Gadar revealed a proud expression as he said, "This scimitar is my gift to you. The scabbard was made by using the skin of a strange fish, which was a specialty of the Southwest of the Empire. That fish was enormous and the body was a few meters long. It was very powerful. Its mouth was large enough to swallow a horse. Its skin was also tough and difficult cut with swords. Just the sheath, alone, was already a top-grade item."

After saying all that, Gadar slowly pulled out the scimitar and gently swung the scimitar a few times. Although his actions were light, the scimitar hummed with a faint resonance.

The blade of the scimitar gleamed like the cold autumn waters. There was also a strange writing engraved on the blade of the

scimitar. The writing was crooked making it look a bit weird. When the blade moved, the writing flashed with a strange light.

"The blade of that scimitar was made from a very special and rare cold iron. That cold iron was considered an absolute gem among iron. Usually, only a little bit of that rare cold iron could be extracted after mining tens of thousands of iron ores. Although cold iron was rare, it was still something from the mortal realm. Although weapons made from cold iron might be sharper and can cut through steel, it still could not be considered a sublime product. However, the spell casted on it was powerful..."

Gadar then lowered his voice and said, "With this line of incantation, this scimitar is now comparable to an ordinary magical artifact!"

Rody raised his eyebrows in surprise when he heard that.

Gadar noticed Rody's reaction and felt very satisfied. He then looked around and whispered, "Viscount Rody, The line of writing on the blade... is in the Dragon language!"

"Dragon language?"

"Yes!" Gadar whispered, "Dragon language! Dragons are powerful creatures that possess outstanding magic. The Dragon text written on the blade is a line of magic spell. With such a dragon's augmented magic, this scimitar has now become a sorcery weapon!"

Rody took a deep breath and vigilantly looked at Gadar. He then whispered, "Dragon sorcery? This does not seem like something we have on the Radiant Continent."

Gadar smiled faintly and there was a bit of pride in his smile. "Our family has businesses all over the Radiant Continent. Naturally, we are also familiar with the Roland Continent. This scimitar was obtained unintentionally by my family from the northern Roland Continent. This scimitar has a long history. It is

believed that this scimitar was the creation of a famous master sword smith from the Roland Continent more than a hundred years ago. That master sword smith was also a great sorcerer. He had somehow learned the dragon language and engraved the dragon magic spell onto the blade! Look at the hilt of this scimitar..."

Gadar then opened up his hands to show the hilt.

Rody took one glance at the hilt and his eyes flashed strangely.

The hilt... Why is it that the hilt is so similar to my previous lightsaber's?

Of course, there were still differences between the two hilts as they were made from different materials. However, both hilts looked very similar.

The hilt seemed to be made from a type of transparent crystal. The hilt was transparent, while the tip of the hilt was embedded with a red gem. However, the red color was weird. Rody could tell with a glance that other than the size of the gem, it was exactly the same as the one in the lightsaber.

Rody was naturally very familiar with the lightsaber and he also knew about the extraordinary feature of the red gem. The secret of the lightsaber was in that gem on the hilt. By transmitting fighting energy through that gem to the blade, it would turn from a fragile lightsaber into a very sharp weapon.

According to Dandong's notes, that kind of gem was purely a special 'energy converter'.

Gadar saw Rody's strange expression and thought that Rody was impressed by the scimitar. He then smiled and said, "Viscount Rody, like I said, this weapon can only be wielded by a hero like you. Please accept it!"

Rody did not move. He pondered. The lightsaber was a strange weapon created by Dandong. However, the gem on the hilt of this

scimitar... almost certainly confirmed that this scimitar had the same fantastic usefulness as the lightsaber. But how did Dandong's casting method appear on the Roland Continent?

When Rody still refused to accept the weapon, Gadar smiled and asked, "Viscount Rody, do you still have any questions?"

Rody took a deep breath and replied, "Baron Gadar, this gift is too valuable. I cannot accept it."

Gadar shook his head and replied, "I sincerely just want to make friends with the hero of the Empire. To tell you the truth, this scimitar is just a beautiful ornament in my hands and is of no use to me. I believe it can only display its true potential in the hands of a hero, like you."

Rody's heart stirred as he showed a strange smile and said, "It's true potential?"

Gadar smiled bitterly and shook his head, "Even though it sounds ridiculous, I will still say it. Although according to legend, this scimitar is apparently very miraculous, ever since I obtained it, I found that it did not have much use. Of course, it is really sharp to the extent that it can break ordinary weapons. However, according to the legend, this scimitar is supposed to be much more powerful. It is supposed to be able to split mountains. Naturally, the people from the Roland Continent likes to boast about their own sorcery. I believe it is mostly just groundless hearsay. So, please do not think it is too precious to accept..."

Rody hesitated for a moment. He then smiled and asked, "Can I take a look?"

"Of course!" Gadar immediately gave the scimitar to Rody.

Rody held the scimitar with one hand. He then stretched out the other hand and lightly flicked the blade of the scimitar. Omm... The scimitar issued a soft, continuous hum, sounding a bit strange.

Rody raised his eyebrows and said, "You do not know how to use

this scimitar?"

When Gadar saw that Rody had already taken the scimitar in his hand, he smiled, "Yes, it is not just me. Even on the Roland Continent, for more than one hundred years, this scimitar had already changed hands many times. Each of its owners was an excellent knight. However, in their hands, the scimitar had never shown any of its true power as stated in the legend. Instead, it was just an ordinary sharp and gorgeous-looking weapon only."

He laughed in a relaxed manner and lightly said, "This scimitar, after all, is made of cold iron. I just think that it is a waste to keep with me. It is better off in the hands of a hero of the Empire like you. It will be better if it can display its true potential. You are in the army. In the heat of the battle, it would be more convenient for you if you have a sharp weapon."

Rody laughed lightly. He had secretly figured it out. That Baron Gadar was obviously there to curry his favor for whatever reason. He personally came to present a gift and the present was, nothing else but a scimitar. That was a very smart move.

Giving gold coins and other treasures would be crude. Based on his position as a soldier and warrior, giving him a very good weapon was very clever. — this man truly understands the psychology.

Gadar had also said that that scimitar was not really very expensive. Although, according to legend, the scimitar was amazing, the fact was that it was just like an ordinary sharp weapon. Although weapons made from cold iron were expensive, they were not very uncommon. At the very least, many of the wealthy nobles have this kind of cold iron weapons in their homes. The price ranged from several thousand gold coins to several tens of thousands of gold coins. Although they were extremely expensive in the eyes of ordinary people, it was nothing to those VIPs.

Although the scimitar had some sort of scary legend attached, that only made it more mysterious. The only peculiar thing was Gadar most likely did not know how to use that scimitar. Rody could not help but laugh to himself. If he knew how to use this scimitar, would he still give it away as a present?

Naturally, Rody would not accept someone's gift without any reason. He also knew that nobody would give him things unless they have a reason. However, he was curious about the scimitar, especially the gem on its hilt. Is it the same kind of weapon as the lightsaber?

When things involved Dandong, Rody had to pay attention.

Everyone and everything that he encountered, as long as they were related to that legendary old man, were strange. Just one of that example was that living skeleton, Andy.

The legend of the scimitar aside, a cold iron weapon is probably only worth tens of thousands gold coins. It is not too expensive. Let me see what he wants first.

With those thoughts in his head, Rody smiled. He gently held the scimitar in front of him and whispered, "Baron Gadar, you traveled so far to visit me and to give me a gift. I am someone who does not like going in circles. Please tell me your intentions!"

Gadar saw that Rody did not refuse his gift but simply put the scimitar in front of him. He already had some ideas.

He then smiled slowly — his mustache made him look a little cunning.

With a calm expression, Gadar slowly said, "Viscount Rody, at the moment, you are still just an officer of the Imperial Guards. With your strength, that post is unworthy of your talents. Let me ask you, are you interested in transferring to a different place?"

Rody smiled as he looked at Gadar's face.

Gadar looked at his side before he lowered his voice and said,

"For example... The Military Affairs Department?"

Military Affairs Department?

Rody laughed in his heart. Looks like he was sent by Marquis Garoline to win me over.

When Rody thought of that, he could not help but feel dejected. After the investiture ceremony that day, Rody had heard some rumors. It was at that moment that he understood the purpose and consequence of the old skeleton's words. Illegitimate child? It must be have been very tough for him to come out with such an outrageous idea!

Now, Marquis Garoline really thinks that I am the illegitimate son of that old skeleton. He actually went to such a great extent to win my favor. He also seems to know that it is now impossible for the Lionheart Family to measure up to the Tulip Family.

The Emperor now clearly favors the Tulip Family! This means Marquis Garoline will have no choice but to earn my, the illegitimate child's, favor. Perhaps, this illegitimate child will become the future Emperor. After all, the Emperor has no son and the Crown Prince's seat is empty. It is simply a mess!

Rody then shook his head and laughed in a strange manner.

Gadar looked at Rody quietly. Although he did not understand the meaning of Rody's strange laugh, fortunately, Rody did not immediately reject him.

After waiting for a while, Gadar slowly asked, "Viscount Rody, what do you have in mind?"

Rody thought for a moment before he smiled and replied, "Baron Gadar, I believe you are asked by Marquis Garoline to visit me. However, Marquis Garoline is the Empire's Military Minister. He has a lofty position and so why does he need to bother with a minor person like me. I really do not dare to accept your gift."

Gadar was very smart and he immediately laughed, "Viscount

Rody, His Excellency the Marquis absolutely appreciates your worth. However, because of some special reasons, the Marquis cannot express it to you directly. I am merely entrusted by him to meet you and nothing more."

Rody nodded.

This sounds right. Marquis Garoline is a smart person. Since he thinks I am the illegitimate child of the Emperor, he would definitely not dare to contact me directly, to win me over. After all, he is also afraid of the Emperor's suspicion. But... But I am not the Emperor's illegitimate child!

Rody did not know whether to laugh or cry when he thought of that. However, that was not something that also could be spoken of openly. He shook his head and said, "I truly appreciate your kindness and I have to politely refuse your good intentions. Right now, I am very happy in the Imperial Guards. I cannot accept the Military Minister's good intention but I am grateful he appreciates my worth. Please convey my words to him."

Rody clearly understood Marquis Garoline's intentions.

He was thinking of winning Rody over to his side. Since in the hearts of most people, he was the illegitimate child of the Emperor, then he would become a major chip to be used in the future. Therefore, gaining Rody's favor before he appreciates in status would result in a major advantage.

If Marquis Garoline, as the Military Minister, wants to transfer me to the Military Affairs Department, naturally he will have a way. In fact, he does not need to personally come forward. He can just secretly instruct his trusted subordinates handle it. Although he is a Military Minister, the transfer of soldiers and other internal management of the army is not in his jurisdiction. However, he was already in the military department for so many years, he would definitely have his connections; for example, he already has Milo in Central Command.

On top of that, Garoline had identified me as the illegitimate son of the Emperor. He also thinks that if he were to transfer me to a senior position in the military office, then his action of promoting the Emperor's illegitimate son would definitely make the Emperor pleased.

What a mess... Very messy...

Gadar was not surprised to hear Rody refuse. Rody's mindset was still simple.

Before he left to visit Rody, Marquis Garoline had already given him instructions. Marquis Garoline had said that it did not matter if Rody refused the proposal this time.

After all, he was the 'illegitimate child of the Emperor' and he would most likely not be interested in whatever high post. The important thing was to make the gesture of appreciating him and leave a good impression. The goal would be achieved when a preliminary and harmonious relationship was established.

About that scimitar ... why would a big noble family from the Imperial Capital care about a scimitar?

The gifts did not necessarily have to be expensive. In fact, to people with such status, precious gifts would not impress them. It was more important to cater to their tastes.

A young warrior would presumably not refuse a beautiful and sharp weapon.

Gadar smiled and replied, "Since you are unwilling, it does not matter. However, His Excellency the Marquis sincerely invite you to pay him a visit at the Marquis' mansion, when you return to the Imperial Capital." He then saw Rody was about to return the scimitar and quickly added, "But, please accept this scimitar."

Rody smiled and without another word set the scimitar down.

In fact, he never had the intention to return the scimitar.

This scimitar is weird. I must take a close look at it later. Perhaps I should discuss with Andy about this when I return to the Imperial Capital.

At the very least, Marquis Garoline had guessed one thing correctly. Rody was a person who would not be interested in expensive treasures. However, he would be impressed by a mystical weapon.

The two then chatted freely. Rody remained calm and indifferent. His calm and confident temperament was developed in the battlefield. However, it was different in Gadar's eyes. To Gadar, Rody's temperament affirmed Marquis Garoline's view.

A person with such a calm, easy going temperament is definitely not an ordinary person!

They were sitting at the edge of the temporary camp. While they were chatting, they suddenly heard a sharp cry of alarm from the lakeside.

The cry was full of fear and surprise. It was obvious that the voice belonged to a woman.

"Ah!" The cry of alarm turned into a miserable scream. Rody's expression changed. Before Gadar could react, Rody had already shot out like an arrow.

Small leather pouches filled with drinking water. Ancient non-breakable drinking bottles before plastic was invented.

Chapter 205: Lake Monster

It happened suddenly without any warning. During the time Rody and Gadar were sitting next to a barbecue stand at the edge of the camp, there was a young noble couple talking to each other near the lake. They were whispering and laughing. The young man's adoring eyes and the young lady's bashful smiles all clearly showed their courtship.

It was a very simple matter. Any young men and women had the right to pursue love. It was a natural thing to happen between two people.

However, there was something different this time. This was because it involved three people instead of two. It was obvious that the young woman had more than one suitor. Just when the man and woman had avoided everyone else to chat at the lake, another young man stared at them angrily from a few meters away.

The young man's anger was justified as the woman that was smiling shyly at the other man was his fiancée. It was the same local noblewoman who had been spending time with him in bed the previous night.

Anybody would also understand why this man was angrily watching his fiancée chatting happily with another man at the side. After all, no men could tolerate being cuckolded.

So, the fiancé immediately drew his sword and roared as he rushed up.

The fiancée screamed when she was got caught by the fiancé. This was what Rody first heard.

Had things proceeded normally, the young warriors would duel for honor. For example, they would throw their gloves and then let their swords decide who was stronger and wash away their shame with blood.

Unfortunately, the man that seduced the lady was a coward. He took advantage of the time the other men went hunting to stay back at the camp together with other women. This had already explained his character well. When he saw the woman's fiancé step forward murderously with a sword in hand, the first thing that came to his mind was to run away.

He had forgotten that he was also a noble and also had the title of a warrior (even though the title was just an exaggeration). He instinctively turned around and ran towards the lake!

It was easy to understand that when a young man and a young woman had a secret rendezvous, they would prefer to hide in a secluded area. They would not dare to have an affair in the open. The water was icy-cold, but the man still ran towards it as the shallow waters at the edge could not drown a person and he would also be safer from the gleaming sword in the other man's hands.

However, there was a huge and sudden change which caused that nearby young woman to scream. The scene in front scared the wits out of the young lady.

The man had just walked a few steps into the lake. He tried to flee along the shore. Suddenly, two thin waves appeared on the quiet lake. Two thick tentacles then suddenly shot out from the water. The tentacles looked extremely ugly. It looked like a strange [mollusk](#) with [sarcomas](#) all over. The tips of the tentacles were filled with hook-like thorns.

It moved like a soft whip and coiled around that man running at the shore. That unlucky man wanted to scream. However, the sturdy tentacle coiled tightly against his chest. The numerous thorns on the tentacles pierced into his body. The tentacles had immediately shrunk and tightened its grip the moment it caught its prey. Its tremendous strength crushed the man's ribs in an instant.

He only screamed for a very short duration before it was cut off.

The man felt extreme pain as his lungs were ruptured. The handsome face that seduced the woman had turned purple. He spat out blood and his eyes almost dropped out.

The woman continued to scream sadly. Her two arms were clasped lightly in front of her. Her legs turned weak and she could no longer stand. However, her legs soon no longer needed to stand. Another ugly and scary tentacle shot out from the lake.

The tentacle seemed to have been waiting for a long time. It suddenly appeared from the nearest part of the lake and quickly coiled around her legs.

It contracted and the sound of bones breaking could be heard as the woman's legs were crushed. Her screams lasted for only a few seconds. The tentacle then flew upwards and threw the young woman to the center of the lake.

The dazed fiancé stared at the scary scene for a moment and finally recovered. He saw his beloved woman thrown into the lake by the ugly monster and roared. The fiancé was a courageous man. He rushed forward with a sword in his hand.

At that moment, he had forgotten about his fiancée's betrayal. He charged towards the lake with bloodshot eyes and slashed at the tentacles on the shore with his sword.

The sword struck the tentacle, but it was tougher than bull tendons.

The tentacle of the mollusk was not as weak as the man had imagined. He slashed with all his might, but only managed to cut through a little of the tentacle. The tentacle then started to flail violently as if it was in pain and slammed into his body forcefully. He was immediately thrown a few meters back and crashed into the ground. From his looks, the man was barely alive.

It was at that point in time that Rody arrived.

First, he looked for Nicole. When he saw Nicole standing some

distance away from the lake looking pale, Rody felt relieved.

At the moment, the other men had started to take out their weapons, but the pitiful man that seduced another person's fiancée was still in the grip of that tentacle. The tentacle then shot upwards about five to six meters over the lake.

Rody walked up and pulled the fiancé away from the lake. After that, he shouted, "Shoot the arrows!"

His voice sounded abnormally clear even in that clamoring din. Before the others started to react, the two Lightning God's Whip had immediately implemented their officer's command.

Two Wolf Fang arrows shot out quickly. As their target was large, both arrows easily hit their targets. However, the tentacles were not hurt so easily. The sarcomas on the tentacles were unusually tough, acting like an armor. The two arrows had accurately hit its target; however, one arrow bounced off the tentacle. The other arrow plunged into the tentacle between the sarcomas, but barely one-third of it went in.

As the monster struggled violently, the pitiful guy was being shaken in the air. He had lost consciousness, but as he bled, his blood continued to splatter from the violent swings.

The women behind screamed in fear, and Rody's expression looked grim. Suddenly, Rody took a bow from a man behind him. He then picked up the sword that the fiancé dropped onto the ground.

Whoosh! A light shot out as Rody used the bow to shoot the sword. The sword flew in an arc and chopped off five-to-six meters of the tentacle. The pitiful guy then fell back into the lake.

Two warriors looked as if they wanted to rush forward and drag the man back. However, Rody pulled them and shouted, "Fall back. Everyone move away from the lake!"

As if to confirm Rody's words, the waters roiled and another five

tentacles shot out from the lake. The tentacles then stretched out to those still at the shore.

Amidst the screams and shouts, the people frantically scattered away. The men had also retreated while they, at the same time, blindly shot their arrows.

The arrows were scattered, but they were not able to harm the monster. Fortunately, everybody ran very quickly and nobody else was caught. Meanwhile, the pitiful man had already been dragged into the lake. Three tentacles were wrapped around different parts of his body. The sound of ripping could then be heard as the man was torn into separate pieces. The tentacles then carried the body parts into the lake. The blue lake started to turn crimson.

Everybody had gradually retreated to the edge of the forest. They looked at the tentacles from afar as it waved and tossed around. The tents that they had set up near the lake were thrown into disarray by the sweeping tentacles. A horse that was tethered near the tent was not unhitched in time. It kicked and neighed in fear. As the tentacle swept around, it slammed into the horse. The one-hundred-kilogram horse was like a leaf as it was sent flying skywards. Its reins broke and it flew over a dozen meters away.

Following Rody's orders, everybody gathered together and retreated into the forest. Rody and the other noble's guards stayed at the rear, protecting the group. Although the guards all worked for different noble families, fortunately, most of them used to work in the army. Rody's decisive orders had calmed them down. Rody held a sword in one hand and a bow in the other. When they had successfully retreated to the edge of the woods, his men set off some fireworks signaling the guards outside the hunting grounds to come rescue them.

Nobody else was injured by the lake monster but during the confusion, while running away, some delicate noblewomen tripped and fell, some crashed into each other, and some got trampled on. There were also a few noblemen who fell off their

horses or even got kicked by them.

Fortunately, Rody had calmed them down. Although they were initially not convinced by Rody, a lowly Imperial Guard officer, they saw Miss Nicole still standing there, and he seemed to be in control of the situation as well. It was only natural to follow his lead.

Once everybody stopped at the edge of the forest, the Imperial Guards defended the place under Rody's orders as there was a possibility that the monster could go on land.

After a while, the sound of hooves could be heard coming from the woods. More than three hundred Imperial Guards and a hundred Lightning God's Whip arrived.

The Imperial Guards were Rody's men and the Lightning God's Whip were the Duke's bodyguards. The Duke's bodyguards were naturally respectful of Nicole's lover and thus obeyed his orders unconditionally. They then dispatched a hundred Imperial Guards to escort the frightened nobles in the evacuation. The nobles were already extremely frightened. They had watched two people die in front of them. One of whom had been torn apart into several pieces. These people had never seen such carnage.

The moment Rody dispatched soldiers to escort them, they could not wait to leave. Some of them did not even bid their farewell to Nicole. The Viscount Rody did not seem to plan on leaving, but it did not matter to them. This was the Tulip Family's hunting grounds and the monster would be their problem. In the end, the nobles believed that their lives were more precious.

Rody had an imposing expression. He pulled Nicole aside and whispered, "You should go back first!"

Nicole's face turned white and asked, "What about you? What are you going to do?"

Rody shook his head and replied, "This monster suddenly

appeared in the hunting grounds. No matter what, I have to find the reason for this."

Nicole's hands were cold. She bit her lip and said in a trembling voice, "What do you want to do? That monster is in the water..."

Rody stretched out his arm to gently hold Nicole. He then softly said, "Are you still worrying despite my strength? This kind of thing cannot hurt me! This thing is too strange. If I do not find out the reason for this, how would I have peace of mind?"

Nicole thought silently for a moment. However, she still frowned and looked at Rody with a worried expression.

After the nobles left, Baron Gadar was among the three people standing next to him.

He had seen the scene earlier and was also frightened. However, he managed to remain calm. While the others had already escaped, he and his two subordinates remained. Gadar was not a simple man. Although he was afraid, as a businessman, it was in his nature to take risks. He knew that if he ran away, he would be looked down upon by Rody. Although he could not help, it would still be able to significantly increase the goodwill of the other party. How could he let such a good opportunity go?

Rody also saw Gadar and frowned. "Baron, why are you still here? This place is dangerous. You should follow them and leave."

Although Gadar also looked pale, he smiled and lightly said, "Rody, you do not have to worry about me. This incident is really strange. I am also curious and I want to see it to the end. I have traveled a lot and have seen a lot of strange things. If I am not wrong, this monster is a Mythical Beast that should only exist on the Roland continent. If I stay, I might be able to provide some help."

Rody frowned silently. He looked at Gadar with gentler eyes than before. Looks like this guy is quite courageous.

He then gently kissed Nicole on the forehead, and said, "You should also better go back quickly."

Nicole shook her head and replied, "I will not!" She looked at Rody's difficult expression and softly said, "Have you forgotten? I am not a weak woman. Last time, you could not defeat me!"

Rody looked at Nicole's firm eyes and felt his scalp turn numb. He could only shake his head and order several hundred of his soldiers to line up. They then went back towards the lake.

About a dozen of the Wolf Fang followed Rody's orders and guarded Nicole at the back. At the front of the formation, there was about a few dozen Wolf Fang carrying their bows and arrows. Although the bows and arrows would not do much damage to the monster, the Wolf Fang had great prowess in archery. Besides that, it would be impossible for the soldiers fight in close quarters against that powerful monster. As a result, they could only rely on archery for long range combat.

The camp that they had returned to was already in ruins and the tents had already collapsed. The lakeside was drenched in blood. The lake was quiet and the lake monster seemed to have already retreated into it.

Rody frowned, and realized something...

How did that monster appear? Rody looked at the bonfire that was still lit and the collapsed barbecue stand. He then stared at the partially-cooked game and made a guess. After that, he looked at the shore again and finally understood.

The nobles that hunted the game had gone to the shore to cut and prepare the carcasses. The blood that flowed into the lake was probably what attracted the monster.

With that idea in mind, Rody instructed his men to stay put. He walked quickly to the camp. The carcass of a wild boar was still there, and it had not been cleaned yet. Rody then picked up a spear

and stabbed the wild boar a few times with it. After that, Rody threw it into the lake. There was a splash as the wild boar sank into the lake. The blue lake was dyed red again. Rody then took a few steps back and waited.

A Mollusc or mollusk is a large phylum Mollusca of invertebrate animals. Basically, a specific group of animals that neither possess nor developed a spine. (Just like how mushrooms are under fungi.) Some have shells like snails.

A sarcoma is cancer arising from mucous connective tissues. They generally look like ugly black spots or a really huge swelling. Surgery is important in most cases.

Chapter 206: Break Out

The surface of the water shook gently and with a loud thundering noise, some strong waves appeared. The wild boar carcass floated back up for a moment before something below pulled it back down into the water again.

"Archers, ready!" Rody immediately shouted.

The well-trained Wolf Fangs immediately aimed their arrows at the lake. Soon after, another seven or eight huge tentacles rose to the surface along with the boar before tearing it apart into several pieces.

"Shoot!"

Rody knew that an attack of this degree would not have much effect. He took out a thick rope from the saddle that he had specially prepared to tie up prey during a hunt. At one end of the rope, a specially-made heavy arrow was attached. [The tip of the arrow had metal barbs on four sides.](#) Rody weighed the arrow for a moment before shooting it out.

Swish! Through Rody's powerful strength, the arrow flew and pierced through a tentacle. The four barbs were embedded into the tentacle. The lake monster was in pain and struggled violently creating huge waves in the lake. The rope on the ground was being rapidly pulled into the lake.

"Don't even think of running!" Rody coldly shouted. He then pulled the rope hard with both hands... The rope was stretched taut; the ground under Rody's feet started to rustle due to the friction between the ground and the soles of Rody's shoes. A tremendous force was pulling Rody towards the lake. Rody raised his eyebrows. His eyes flashed with determination. He lifted a foot and then stomped the ground extremely hard. With a loud thump, a deep hole appeared at the place he stomped.

Rody was thus stuck like a nail to the ground. The rope trembled before it started to move again towards the lake...

The other Wolf Fang soldiers also followed suit. They grabbed the barbed arrows made specially for hunting from their saddles. They then tied up the arrows with ropes and shot the monster with it.

However, the tough sarcomas on the surface of the tentacles blocked a vast majority of the arrows shot. Only three or four of the arrows shot by the stronger warriors managed to pierce through the tentacles. The Wolf Fangs then gathered and pulled the ropes. Hundreds of people pulled the ropes at the same time.

Waves continued to break out as the rope gradually returned to shore. After that, a huge whirlpool emerged and a smooth and glossy head-like shape appeared from the surface of the water.

Everybody was shocked as the lake monster finally showed its true appearance.

It had an oval-shaped body that was as big as a two-story building. It had eight tentacles that were tossing about. It looked like a giant octopus.

The only difference was that this octopus had a huge opening at the center of its head. The opening seemed to have a gray and muddy eye in it. The monster did not seem to have a mouth. However, on its head, there were about three transparent, long and thin straw-like things — the tips were sharp and pointed. What made everyone surprised was that one of the tentacles was rolled around a boar body part. It was constantly crushing and squeezing it. The monster then planted the straw-like things into the carcass. The boar's red blood could be seen flowing through the transparent straw into the monster's body.

Gadar immediately cried out, "It is a bloodsucker!"

Rody also realized this and shouted loudly. "Release the arrows!"

Shoot the eye!"

The soldiers that weren't pulling the rope picked up their bows and shot arrows at the monster's eye, but there was no effect. The monster simply closed its eye. When the arrows hit the monster's head, it simply slipped away. It was as if the monster's body had a layer of unusually creamy grease. It had an invisible layer of protection that made arrows ineffective.

Gadar's eyes flashed. Although he was standing at the back and did not fight, he was still observing. He then suddenly shouted, "Pull it ashore! This monster seems to be a kind of octopus. It would be in trouble the moment it leaves the water!"

However, it was difficult to pull the monster closer to the shore even though more than a hundred soldiers including Rody were pulling the ropes. On top of that, the ropes were becoming tighter and had clearly reached their limit. The rope could break at any time.

The monster seemed to whimper and then swung its tentacles fiercely at the men. When the tentacles swung at them, the soldiers that had been pulling the ropes scattered quickly. Some fell because they were slow. If not for their armor, they would have been seriously injured even if they were still alive.

After losing two ropes, all the efforts were concentrated on the remaining two ropes. As the ropes were pulled longer and longer, they became thinner. Rody suddenly had an idea. He desperately shouted, "Use fire! Attack it with fire!"

Nicole was the first to react the moment Rody's voice faded. She opened her arms and two fireballs were launched towards the monster from both hands. Boom! Boom! The fireballs burst into sparks as they collided with the monster. The monster then whimpered violently and angrily although nobody knew where the monster's voice came from as it had no mouth, but the whimper sounded angry and painful.

It was obvious that the monster was afraid of the fireball attack. As the monster lived in the water, Rody guessed that it is mostly water-based. Sure enough, the fire attacks would harm it.

The only sorcerer available at that moment was Nicole. The other soldiers' ranks might not be low, but they did not know any magic or sorcery. Nicole had shot out several fireballs, causing the monster to struggle in pain. Its glossy, and clear black head now had traces of getting burnt. However, it was not a fatal blow.

Besides that, a rope also broke when it struggled fiercely from the intense pain. The soldiers all lost their balance when the rope broke and crashed.

"Damn..." Rody cursed softly. "Do I need to expose my real strength again?"

With Rody's strength, it was possible to chop the monster into two. However, he was now technically just a Grade 5 Swordsman. It would be dangerous to show his amazing strength, including that golden fighting energy.

While he was feeling troubled, he felt the last rope in his hands also broke. Before he could react, a huge shadow appeared. Rody then felt his body shook and flew into the air...

The tentacle had swept past and heavily hit him in the chest. Just that one hit caused the chest area of Rody's clothes to be torn. Rody also crashed into the ground.

Gadar felt scared and closed his eyes. He thought to himself: I am doomed!

He had already clearly seen how powerful the monster was. A horse that was a few hundred kilograms was sent flying. Two of the soldiers that were swept away had not died on the spot, but their armors were broken. They then fell to the ground and started spitting out blood. At least a few ribs were also broken.

On top of that, Rody is young. How much skill could he have? He

was also not wearing armor. If he encounters an unexpected misfortune here...

Nicole saw Rody fly away and she screamed instinctively. Even though she knew that Rody would be alright, when she saw that frightful scene, she could not help but worry and scream.

Rody flew to the edge of the woods and crashed into the ground. He immediately turned around and jumped back up. He saw the clothes on his chest torn. Although his strong body did not receive any injury, he could still feel a dull pain in his chest. He was trashed right in front of everyone! At this moment, Rody felt a strange heat rose up from his waist. The heat rushed towards his brain and he could not help but feel angry. As if his body was hit by a strong electric current, all the anger in his heart suddenly broke out.

Within a short moment, his mind became chaotic and angry. In his agitation, he suddenly shouted, "Bastard! That hurts!"

Everyone was surprised when they saw the young man completely furious. He then grabbed a large tree beside him, pulled it out from the ground, roots and all, and then angrily throw the tree at the monster as if he was throwing a spear...

Boom! The tree struck its target.

The monster originally had a smooth and round head. However, the head now seemed to have dented. Besides that, the dented area was at the edge of the eye. The injury caused half of the eyeball to protrude out. The crevice at the eye then secreted a sticky green liquid.

The monster suddenly shook violently. Its eight tentacles flew around and slapped the surface of the water as if it had gone crazy from the pain.

Rody's anger did not subside. He took off his torn clothes, revealing the strong muscles at his upper body. He then walked

towards the water.

The moment Rody went deep enough for the water to reach his knees, a tentacle swung at him. Rody's eyes then flashed. He dodged the tentacle and then grabbed onto it. Rody then saw the barbs on the tentacle as if it was a snakehead trying to bite him. Rody immediately used a free hand to pull out a scimitar. This was the curved sword that Gadar had presented to him. He had taken the scimitar with him during that desperate moment earlier.

There was a cold flash of light. After that, the sticky green liquid sprayed out as Rody cut off the tentacle. While everybody was still wide-eyed, they heard Rody shout and saw him hold the sword in his mouth. After that, Rody grabbed the huge tentacle, twisted his body and threw it.

The huge monster flew across the water and into the sky. For a short moment, the huge figure completely covered the sky. After that, there was a loud crashing sound. Rody had thrown the monster to the shore. Its huge body had smashed across seven to eight trees.

The monster lay on a pile of broken trees. Its tentacles clawed around trying to move itself, but it could not move easily on the shore just like what Gadar had guessed.

The soldiers had retreated to a side and looked at their commanding officer. Meanwhile, Rody walked out of the lake.

Gadar was the most astonished person. He was smart and noticed that something was strange. He saw that Rody was filled with a violent anger. However, Rody's eyes were clouded. It looked as if Rody was not clear-headed. For some reason, Gadar also felt like Rody's anger felt somewhat ... somewhat ... evil.

Rody looked like a cold-blooded death god. He had a cold and detached expression and he walked onto the shore in front of everyone. He only glared fiercely at the giant monster.

He walked up to the monster and took the sword from his mouth. He fiercely thrust the sword into the ground and then shouted in a cold and evil tone. "What's wrong? Painful? Are you afraid?"

Rody then bent down and picked up a broken tree trunk. The huge tree trunk was thick enough to be hugged by two to three people. However, Rody's hands clung to the trunk of the tree with his fingers stretched open and lifted it easily.

The monster cried out in fear and started to struggle again. It clumsily moved back towards the lake.

"Trying to run?" Rody's voice was cold like ice and was completely emotionless. With a really cold expression, he raised the four-meter-long tree trunk and started to smash the monster with it.

Bang!

Bang! Bang!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

His action was like a blacksmith hammering iron. He kept smashing the monster's head...

After two smashes, the monster's body had turned soft. Its original oval-shaped body had been smashed flat. Only a few of its tentacles were still moving. By the sixth smash, the monster had turned into a slush. It had been smashed out of shape. Green fluid flowed out of its wounds. Its tentacles that were still moving earlier lay softly on the ground like dead snakes.

Bang! Bang!

Rody continued to smash the monster expressionlessly. He continued to smash until it was badly mangled and unrecognizable, and the ground was sunk in.

Everyone around him was stunned. However, Rody still had a dark expression. He had a strange and violent aura that gave off a

murderous and oppressive feeling. Surprisingly, nobody around him said anything.

"Ro... Rody!" Nicole was frightened and could not help but shout, "Stop hitting it! It is dead!"

Nicole's delicate voice was like magic. Hong! The tree broke apart with one last smash. The tree in Rody's hands finally broke apart after so many consecutive smashes.

Rody looked at the broken piece of wood in his hands and finally stopped his actions.

He looked at his hands in a daze while breathing heavily.

What the hell just happened?

Rody had, for some reason, suddenly felt very angry. That strong emotion occupied his whole heart, and he had the intense desire to destroy something!

Nicole cried out and pushed away the guards. She then ran towards Rody. Two Wolf Fang officers tried to stop her. One of them even said, "Miss, it is dangerous over there."

Nicole did not care and forced her way forward as she ran towards Rody. She held him regardless of all the strange green fluid on his body and trembled. She could not help but cry as she asked, "Rody. What's the matter? What...What's the matter?"

Rody's mind gradually cleared up when he felt a familiar soft body clinging onto him, smelled that familiar body scent, and her familiar shouts. Nicole's sudden action thus brought him out of his dazed self.

Rody breathed deeply and hugged Nicole. He then said, "I am okay now."

Seeing Nicole still in tears, he then said, "I am really alright now. When I was dragged in just now, I was a little agitated."

He pushed her away a little and said, "Look at yourself. All the

dirty muck on me have now stuck onto you."

Nicole continued to hold him hard and whispered, "I don't care. So long as you are alright."

Rody nodded. He saw the scimitar stuck into the ground. He bent down and pulled it out. At that moment, when his hands touched the cold hilt, his body started to tremble. He felt a strange feeling move through his fingers. That weird feeling was the same as the one he felt when he got angry and became violent earlier.

Rody shook his head. His body vibrated and that strange feeling in his hand vanished. With a strange feeling, he put the scimitar back into the sheath.

This scimitar was really weird.

Rody did not notice that the sorcery spell engraved in the dragon language glowed with a strange light when he inserted the curved sword into the sheath.

Rody gently pulled Nicole's hands and walked to the front of the crowd. However, everyone had already looked at him differently.

At first, the Lightning God's Whip and the Imperial Guards had looked at him with the respect that was due to a commanding officer. When they learned that Rody had obtained the favor of the Duke's elder sister, they became more intimate and even cracked jokes.

But now, all of them looked at him with shock and awe.

Is this guy really human?

Is he really just a Grade 5 Swordsman?

All the soldiers had the same thoughts in their heads.

Rody frowned, feeling a little bit irritated. He then softly, "Fall in! Take our injured companions back! We are also going back now!"

Even after he gave his orders, everybody was still stunned. They

only started to execute the order after Rody coughed heavily.

Gadar walked to Rody with a complicated expression. He looked at Rody and could not say anything. At that moment, Gadar was still too shocked.

Gadar saw the young man's strength that exploded forth when the young man got angry—he had the same thoughts as the soldiers, as though the words were resounding in his brain: Is he human?

However, Gadar, who had been dealing with officialdom and business for many years, knew that questions involving people's secrets must never be asked. Accidentally touching on a taboo question would waste any goodwill that had been built up.

So, Gadar refrained from asking and then said, "Rody, I am afraid that you must properly investigate this matter."

Rody helped Nicole onto a horse and replied, "Yes... This hunting grounds had always been the Tulip Family's estate. Yet, nobody has ever heard of this strange monster."

Nicole suddenly whispered, "Gadar, earlier, you said that this monster was like some of the Roland Continent's Mythical Beast? I heard that the Mythical Beasts have all been eliminated in the Radiant Continent hundreds of years ago."

As he was questioned by the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family, Gadar immediately straightened his body and then replied, "Miss Nicole, legends must never be taken at face value."

Rody looked again at Gadar the moment Gadar said those words. Obviously, he agreed with these words.

He then heard Gadar continue. "The legend of the Mythical Beasts is only described in the records of the Church. However, these teachings were also passed down from generation to generation. None of us actually saw what really happened. Oh, I do not dare to doubt their teachings. I just do not have much trust

especially when it involves things I cannot ascertain myself. It is a personal habit."

Nicole nodded her head and looked at Gadar respectfully. She then said, "Then is that a Mythical Beast?"

Gadar whispered, "I am not sure whether or not it is really a Mythical Beast. After all, I have never seen a Mythical Beast before but... Miss Nicole, Rody, I have a little bit of an opinion that I am not sure if I should say." Gadar then glanced at the two.

Nicole did not speak but instead nodded towards Rody. Her meaning was for Rody to make the decision.

Rody smiled and said, "Baron, please speak."

Gadar pondered for a moment and then said, "I have two ideas. The first one is that what happened today is strange. This hunting ground belonged to the Tulip Family for a very long time, and such a thing has never happened before. However, the monster suddenly appeared today. In other words, this monster only appeared recently. So... this might be a good starting point to start investigating."

He then paused and looked at Rody. He looked as if he was hesitant to say it.

Rody smiled and said, "Baron, you don't have to hesitate. Please speak."

Gadar laughed very slowly and said, "Your Excellency Rody. Please just call me Gadar. It is too awkward for you to be addressing me Baron, and I addressing you Your Excellency. How about we just call each other by our names? It would be much simpler."

Rody understood that Gadar was trying to be friendly. He gave a wry smile and said, "Well, you do have the title of Baron... Alright. In that case, Gadar, please speak!"

Gadar showed a trace of satisfaction in his eyes. He then showed

an upright expression and said, "The second thing is... If this is really a Mythical Beast, then you should understand what it means. Mythical Beasts are things from the Roland Continent. This is related to the Roland Continent and should be reported to the Church. The Church's attitude..."

Rody laughed and then softly said, "I understand what you mean." He then slowly said in a cold voice, "Not everything in this world needs to be controlled by the Church!"

A kind of barbed arrowhead. A barbed arrowhead I found on google image only has two barbs and is flat. This specially made arrow has four barbs, forming something like a + symbol.

Chapter 207: Holy Beast, Mythical Beast

That day, all around the hunting grounds were guarded by two hundred Imperial Guards. The local Assistant Governor also dispatched five hundred security soldiers to guard the periphery of the hunting grounds.

Nobody was allowed to enter the hunting grounds until the investigation was completed.

That was an order given by Miss Nicole, on behalf of the Duke of the Tulip Family.

Rody did not expect to cover up that incident. To begin with, those nobles who had participated in the hunting activity and escaped would not be able to keep that as a secret. Those people, even in normal days, liked to find trouble and were the best people at spreading such strange news.

Rody even guessed that within a few days, the news would spread to the Imperial Capital and most probably that incident would be published in the newspaper.

The first to get shocked was West Hill city.

Everyone already knew that a strange monster was found in the hunting ground of the Tulip Family, on the outskirts of West Hill. In addition to that, two nobles had lost their lives! After that, the roads leading to the hunting ground were now blocked.

That Imperial Guard officer, Miss Nicole's lover, that young man named Rody, all at once became famous. It was said that this guy, alone, killed that strange monster.

"I heard that the strange monster could not be killed by hundreds of elite soldiers."

"I heard that the young man named Rody is extremely powerful..."

"I heard that the guy named Rody is truly handsome..."

"I heard that the guy named Rody is Miss Nicole's lover."

"I heard that the young guy named Rody was originally the Captain of the bodyguards of His Excellency the Duke. Later, because of his extraordinary martial skills, he had earned the confidence of Miss Nicole."

"I heard that in the Imperial Capital, Rody and Miss Nicole secretly rendezvous in the garden every day."

"I heard that in the Imperial Capital, Rody defeated all the rivals who also pursued Miss Nicole. On one occasion, he even broke the leg of one of his love rivals. "

As countless rumors began to spread, Rody became the focus of the rumors. Most of the highlights were on the secret between Rody and the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family. That was not surprising because most people loved novelty. A story of love between a hero and a beautiful woman would always be well received.

On the night that Rody's group returned from the hunting ground back to the city, near an ordinary, shabby and worn out building in the southern suburbs of West Hill...

Two figures wearing black cloaks flashed by on a small lane. Then, like a gust of wind, they floated into the downstairs courtyard of the small building. After that, they went through the doorway and entered...

The night was still and the surrounding was quiet. The two figures slid up a flight of dim stairs as if they were weightless.

The hall on the second floor had a few rotten chairs, placed disorderly. The metal candlesticks, at the side, were covered in stains and rusts; a sign of the age of the place.

There were a few old and deteriorating oil paintings on the wall. The most notable thing was that all of the paintings were full

portraits and they were neatly arranged on the wall. The faces of the characters in the portraits had some similarity. It was as if the portraits were a record of the family's ancestors...

The two figures stood in the middle of the hall, facing the portraits on the wall. They both knelt down on one knee. One of them whispered in a hoarse voice, "Your Excellency, we have come as ordered."

There were several light sizzling sounds as if an ill-wind was blowing. Suddenly, the candles on the candlesticks on both sides of the hall automatically lit up. The dusty candles flickered and faintly illuminated the dilapidated hall.

There was a very sharp laughter as the face of a middle-aged man in one of the portraits towards the rear of the wall suddenly moved.

Its serious face twisted into an expression that could barely be called a smile.

The portrait then gradually started to protrude. Eventually, a head stretched out of the oil painting.

The person's brown curly hair loosely dropped down from both sides of the head. The person had a horrible pale face with one red eye and one black eye.

With a sharp laughter, this face revealed a row of white teeth. Looking at them carefully, two of the teeth were long and sharp like a beast's fangs in the upper row.

First, the head of the portrait stretched out from the oil painting. It was then followed by his neck, shoulders, arm, upper body...

The two guys kneeling on the floor looked downwards. They did not dare to look up until they saw a pair of feet and a pair of shiny boots appeared in front of them. The owner of those boots then slowly asked, "How are things going now?"

Although he tried to lower his voice, his voice still sounded very

sharp and ear-piercing.

After saying that, he turned around and wrapped his body with his big black cloak, such that his whole body was concealed by the black cloak and half of his pale face was covered by the high pointed collar of the cloak. The light from the candle dragged his long shadow on the wall...

The two kneeling figures started to tremble. One of them, the one who spoke earlier, with chattering teeth said, "Your Excellency, we were late..."

"Late?" 'His Excellency' lifted his cloak and shrieked, "What do you mean late? What happened?"

The two guys on the floor trembled more violently and their teeth chattered loudly. They were almost lying limp on the floor.

That 'Excellency' had a gloomy face. He suddenly stretched out his scarlet red tongue and licked his lips before he coldly said, "Speak quickly! Otherwise, I will suck both your blood dry!"

Their two bodies shook violently before they started to speak. Although they still had a trembling voice, they still managed to intermittently but reluctantly relate the whole thing.

"Your, Your Excellency... The two of us, as ordered, went to take back the Holy Beast, but we were too late... One of the Holy Beast had encountered humans. When we arrived, the Holy Beast had already been killed. We... We also do not know what method the humans used to kill the Holy Beast. When we arrived, we only saw its corpse. The Holy Beast seemed to have been brought ashore while alive and then crushed to death."

"Crushed to death ashore?" 'His Excellency' suddenly raised his voice and angrily shouted, "Are you trying to lie to me? How could the Holy Beast leave the water? How could the humans bring it to the shore? Are you trying to deceive me?"

Although they were too afraid to look up at their master, they

could clearly see the shadow cast by the candle lights on the wall. The shadow of their master suddenly rose up. His black cloak spread out and his hands seemed to have turned to claws...

"No! Don't dare!" The kneeling guys quickly replied, "We really did not dare lie to Your Excellency!"

The other one also stammered, "When we arrived, we only saw the corpse of the Holy Beast. We also saw a lot of human soldiers guarding the outside of the hunting ground... Today, people from the Tulip Family had gone into the hunting ground... It is possible that they ended up fighting with the Holy Beast."

After the two of them finished relating the incident, they sweated profusely. They were almost going to lose their heads. They trembled violently like frightened mice.

They initially thought that they would have to meet their master's wrath at the next instant. Instead, after waiting for a while, 'His Excellency' coldly said, "You two... Didn't I tell you earlier not to breed the Holy Beast in that lake when the Tulip Family is around? The two of you only went there today, can that be considered as defying my orders?"

Following a sneering laughter, the two men were horrified. One of them quickly and loudly replied, "This... Your Excellency... You also know that, within a few hundred meters of West Hill, there is no place more suitable than that lake for breeding the Holy Beast. Besides that, that place is also the private territory of the Tulip Family. In normal days, nobody would go there. We did not expect today..."

The other one then continued, "In addition, Your Excellency, we had also reported to you before that the lake itself is strange. For some reason, it grew very quickly in that lake. We had only put the Holy Beast in the lake for less than a month, yet it had already grown to a Grade 3 evolution..."

"Wait..." That 'Excellency' coldly interrupted them and asked,

"What did you say? Grade 3 evolution? It had already reached Grade 3 evolution in just a single month? Is it really so fast!"

"Yes!" The two men responded, simultaneously. "We saw the size of the Holy Beast today. Without a doubt, it had already reached Grade 3 evolution!"

That 'Excellency' sighed and his voice sounded gentler, "Well, although we have lost a Holy Beast, we still managed to gain something... I want to personally see that lake. If it is really as magical as you say, I must make good use of it... Mmm. In just one month, it can make a Holy Beast grow into a Grade 3 evolution..." He then changed his tone and coldly asked, "Is there anything else?"

The man kneeling on the left felt relieved when he realized that his master was no longer angry. He then whispered, "There is... Your Excellency, there is one more thing. In the West Hill City, we found that traitor, the Elder put on the wanted list... That woman!"

"What!" His voice became sharp again. "Are you talking about that cross-breed, Nedis? She is in West Hill?"

"Yes, yes, yes, yes!" The kneeling man trembled again when he felt his master's fury. He stuttered, "I found her by accident today, but I did not dare get too close. However, I am certain that person is Nedis. I would not mistake her scent."

"Haha, haha!" The 'Excellency' laughed loudly. "Looks like coming here was the right choice. We actually managed to find that traitor, Nedis!"

His sharp laughter caused the broken fragments of the surrounding walls to shake and fall and even the flame on the candles to flicker faintly.

"Very good, very good!" The shadow of that 'Excellency' gradually approached the two kneeling men. He then gently pressed both

their heads, one hand each, and whispered, "No matter what, you caused me to lose a Holy Beast. I have no choice but to punish you, right?"

With a single "Chi" sound, that man pushed his hand into the head of one of the kneeling men. The red blood and white brain matter splashed out. That kneeling man did not even have the chance to cry before he dropped on the floor.

That 'Excellency' withdrew his hand and licked it. It looked like he was sampling a delicacy. He squinted and smiled. "Well, there were two of you. Kill one, leave one behind! You... You reported to me the trail of the traitor, I will consider you have earned merit to compensate for your mistake... Go and keep an eye on that woman, but make sure she does not notice you. Understand?"

"I understand!"

That 'Excellency' continued to whisper, "Right now, the Church of the Empire is really strict with their checks. Last time, that stupid Simao caused havoc at the Imperial Capital. It did not matter that the idiot had died, but he actually lost our sacred weapon, the Dracula Spear. He would not be able to atone for his sins even if he died ten thousand times! No matter what, you must now be very careful. You are one of the lowest ranked vampires. The scent of your body is very light and is harder for you to be noticed. You must be more careful. Understand?"

"Yes!" The kneeling man nodded again and again.

The master waved his hand and let the guy leave. In the end, he was the only left in the hall.

That 'Excellency' then slowly walked to a [relief sculpture](#) at the corner of the wall. It was the relief sculpture of a classical beauty. The gentle curves of her naked body looked seductive.

The master stretched out his hand to slowly stroke the relief. His hand slid down from her face to her chest.

At that time, the relief actually issued a series of sharp laughter. Soon after, the sculpture actually moved.

The plaster on the surface broke apart layer by layer and a woman appeared from inside!

Strictly speaking, she was also a vampire. Although her naked body was that of a mature and beautiful woman, she had a large black wing on her back like a bat.

That woman had an extremely charming and seductive face, but when she smiled, her mouth exposed two slender fangs.

"Your Excellency Jackal, you are angry again... Is it because of the loss of the Holy Beast or because you obtained information about that woman?" The female vampire voiced out, gently.

Jackal twisted his body a little. He then held the woman in his arms and gently bit her in the neck. He whispered, "Aren't you afraid I would suck your blood? My dear Ruth, I already said not to mention about that woman in front of me... especially you! I am worried about the Holy Beast... There must be something strange about that lake."

That female vampire called Ruth smiled gently. She moved away from Jackal's mouth and whispered, "In fact, you should be happy... That stupid Simao is dead. You are the only remaining Prince of the vampires... Simao went to the South and went through so many hardships to find those Holy Beast, but now, they are all under your control."

Jackal's eyes showed a hint of anxiety as he replied, "There is nothing to be happy about that... The matters at the Southern mountain was considered a failure. Although we found a few Holy Beasts, there is nothing left in that valley... That Mystic Dragon had also disappeared..."

Ruth rolled her eyes and smiled, "Who cares, let the Elders worry about that... As for now, do you think that I should find a way to

capture Nedis within the next two days? This would really be a meritorious service."

Jackal shook his head. His pair of claws slowly slipped down from Ruth's shoulder as he softly said, "As for this matter, there is nothing to worry about. Let's discuss this in two days' time... On the other hand, the lake is much more important. Once we understand it, it would possibly be a great help to us in breeding the Holy Beasts. Those old guys are also urging me to go to the Imperial Capital to find a way and retrieve the Dracula's Spear. That is a real headache... That old Pope is not easy to deal with."

Ruth's body twisted as she laughed softly. Jackal's breathing also immediately became heavier.

As the candlelight swayed, the two shadows on the wall gradually joined together and soon after they frantically got twisted into each other...

Under the dim candle light, dozens of insect-egg-like things were visible on the ceiling above the big hall. They were enveloped in a mass of sticky liquid and swayed when the wind blew...

Meanwhile, at the other mansion of the Duke of the Tulip Family, Nicole tightly nestled into Rody's arms. Her body trembled slightly from the evening breeze.

Rody sighed. He hugged Nicole tightly and whispered, "Let us go in."

Nicole nodded her head. She then thought for a moment and suddenly asked, "I understand... Are you going to see Myka?"

Rody was startled. He did not expect Nicole to suddenly ask such a question. In the past few days, Rody had been accompanying Nicole every day, in front of the other nobles. He had no time to see Myka. However, he felt uneasy after encountering that strange incident in that forest that day.

It seems like West Hill is not a peaceful place.

Nicole bit her lips and whispered, "Are you worried about the safety of Myka and the others after what happened today? I guess you are also worried that there may be more than one of that monster and perhaps, there could be more types other than the water monster... Am I right?"

Rody could hear that Nicole's voice sounded unnatural. However, Rody remained silent and just nodded his head.

Nicole took a deep breath. Suddenly, she used all her energy and tightly hugged Rody. After that, she whispered while still in his arms. "Tomorrow, if you can... bring Myka here... This place is always safer."

Rody obviously felt Nicole's body stiffen momentarily when she made that statement. He was touched and could not help but tightly hold Nicole. He then asked, "You... Do you really think so?"

Nicole sighed. She suddenly smiled and said, "Really."

The two of them then silently embraced each other.

After a moment, Rody slowly whispered, "The monster we encountered today in the hunting ground... It really seems like a Mythical Beast."

Nicole frowned and asked, "Are you sure?"

Rody sighed and replied, "Gadar said that Mythical Beasts were extinct from the Radiant Continent hundreds of years ago... The fact is, he was wrong... As far as I know, there are still Mythical Beasts on the Radiant Continent. I have even seen a lot of them."

Nicole seemed to tremble and softly asked, "Where?"

Rody replied in a weird tone. "There were a lot of strange monsters, all kinds of Mythical Beasts in the Death Valley of the mountains in the South, where I entered before!" Rody looked up at the sky, frowned and then said to himself, "Could it be that after I left, somebody entered that valley and brought out the Mythical Beasts?"

It is actually just called a relief. It is a kind of sculpture that is still stuck on a wall. The entire 'sculpture' could be sticking out which is high-relief or it could be 'dug out lines' in the wall, forming something like a drawing. There is also a counter-relief where the image is modeled in a 'negative manner' and the image goes into the surface. Mostly done on engraved gem seals.

Chapter 208: Darke Joins the Group

When Rody came in, Diane was pretending to trim an unknown plant with a pair of scissors. She snorted coldly when she saw Rody walk in. Her snort was filled with anger. After that, there was a series of clicking sounds, and the scissors in Diane's hand continued flying up and down. The plant that had originally been nicely trimmed, was already beyond recognition.

Myka was sitting at the side with her lips pursed but her face smiling. She stood up when she saw Rody. Rody gently hugged Myka and softly said, "I...I came to look for you regarding some matters."

Before Myka could speak, Diane coldly spoke from the side, "Hmph, the people in this world only visit when they need something. When there is nothing that they need, they will throw you on one side and ignore you."

Myka stifled a laughter and whispered, "Do worry about her. I am teaching her some gardening, but this girl is extremely clumsy. It is a skill that emphasizes supportive efforts, but she is already getting impatient after two days."

Diane glared with wide eyes. However, she seemed very well-behaved in front of Myka. She did not say anything but simply gritted her teeth and took the pair of scissors in her hand to vent her anger. The small bell that she wore at her foot was now on her wrist. The bell rang as the scissors flew up and down in her hands. That ringing sound was pleasant. However, suddenly there was a sharply discordant snap. Kacha!

It turned out to be that Diane, who was feeling dejected, accidentally cut off the main stem of the plant.

Rody saw Diane freeze for a moment. She looked at the scissors in her hands and the tragically chopped off plant in front of her. Her face was red from choking. Naturally, Rody did not dare laugh.

However, when he saw Diane looked as if she was almost going to bang her head against the wall, he was forced to stifle his laughter even more.

"I have come to pick you up." Rody whispered as he looked into Myka's eyes, "West Hill is not very safe. Something strange has happened..."

Myka's body trembled. She was obviously excited, but her face remained calm. She tried hard to suppress her voice and whispered, "Really? You... You are taking me with you?"

Before Rody could speak, Diane angrily threw the scissors on the ground and said, "I am not trimming anymore! This thing is broken!" Diane was still angry and she could not control her anger, so she severely stomped her feet on the broken plant. She then turned around to look at the two and shouted, "Why are both of you still dawdling? Obviously, every day you were thinking of him to the point of going crazy. Now that he is here to pick you up ... quickly, go and pack your things!"

Myka showed a strange smile. She calmly walked over to Diane, bent down and picked up the scissors. She then lightly said, "You are running wild again. For no apparent reason, you use my scissors to vent your anger." She then softly said, "The person who makes you angry is already here. You do not have to throw your temper on my scissors even if you are angry."

Diane was so embarrassed by those simple words until her face turned red. Her earlier anger had subsided and she did not dare look at Myka in her eyes.

Rody cleared his throat and asked, "Where is Darke?"

Myka smiled faintly. She looked at Diane and said, "Darke was bullied until he dared not to come here anymore. He would hide at Nedis' place, every day, drinking wine. He fears being dragged away to become someone's driver." Rody did not understand Myka's words, but Diane had already lowered her head from

embarrassment.

Rody pondered and said, "In that case, you pack up here. I am going to look for Darke... There are things that I need his help. Ah...does he know my identity? Did he ask after I hurriedly left, that day?"

Diane looked up and replied. "He asked but I did not say. He also did not dare probe further."

Myka could not help but grin, and softly said, "That is because he is scared of you. You are not gentle like a woman at all. Do you really think it is something to be proud of?"

Although Rody did not understand what they were talking about he could feel the awkwardness. He then nodded his head and said, "I will go and talk to Darke. I believe he should be at Nedis' pub."

"Wait..." Myka turned her eyes and said, "Let Diane accompany you. This is a complicated matter. If you go alone, Darke may not believe you. Moreover..." Myka's eyes were smiling as she added, "If she were to wait here, she will become very impatient."

Rody pondered for a moment and then said, "That sounds good. It's a good idea for Diane to go with me. This matter is strange and she may also be helpful... Sigh."

Looking at Rody's somber face, Myka became concerned and asked, "What is worrying you?"

Rody shook his head and before he could speak, Diane glared at him and said, "Of course, he is worried about Nicole's reaction when he brings you back! He is worried that he will be sandwiched between both of you when the three of you live under one roof!"

Rody blushed and frowned. "Don't talk nonsense... I am taking Myka to the mansion, but I stay in the barracks!"

Myka did not mind Diane's comment, but she still asked, "In that case, what are you worried about?"

Rody sighed. He looked at Diane and whispered, "Do you still remember those things that we saw in the Death Valley?"

As Rody and Diane walked towards Nedis' pub, Rody briefly related the incident of the monster he encountered in the hunting ground. After he finished, Diane looked serious. She hesitated for a moment and then she asked, "Are you suspecting that the monster is similar to those from the Death Valley?"

Rody shook his head and replied, "I am quite certain, but I am still skeptical... After all, we did not see that octopus-like thing in that valley... but I somehow have a strange feeling. As we only explored a small part of that valley, it is possible that there were other creatures we have not seen."

Diane recalled the situation at that time. She turned pale and fearful when she remembered those huge, hairy and bloodthirsty spiders.

The two sturdy bouncers standing at the entrance of the pub recognized Rody. When they saw him, they became afraid and ran inside. When Rody and Diane entered the pub, the middle-aged steward turned pale. He trembled at the side and did not dare approach them.

Rody looked around and saw that Nedis was not there. There were guests sitting in groups of twos and threes. The guests each had a woman with heavy make-up by their sides. There were three beautifully-dressed women on the stage. They were playing the harp and flute, while another woman slowly swayed along with the rhythm of the music. She slowly dropped off her clothes like a snake shedding its skin...

Rody frowned. He then saw Darke sitting at a table closest to the stage while leisurely drinking big mouthfuls of wine from the bottle. He looked very calm.

Rody and Diane went over. Rody looked normal but Diane was frowning. She had an unpleasant look on her face as she coldly

said, "Darke!"

Darke was startled when he heard Diane's voice. He panicked and almost dropped the bottle of wine in his hand. His calm facial expression also revealed a bit of awkwardness. He looked up at Diane and frowned, "You, girl... Haven't you finished yet? You bullied me all day and to avoid you, I have already stayed outside. You still rush all the way here, are you trying to chase and kill me?"

Diane raised her eyebrows and was about to get angry, when she suddenly remembered that Rody was currently beside her and also those words Myka had said privately to her. She bit her lips and lowered her head. She could not help but secretly glance at Rody.

Darke was stunned. Based on his experience, when he was to speak to Diane like that, she would immediately kick the chair. After that, the two of them would start fighting each other. However, Diane was totally different that day. She actually blushed and lowered her head, revealing a rarely seen side of her: a woman's demure demeanor ...

Darke then looked at the young man standing behind Diane. That young man was tall and wore a simple warrior's uniform. He had blue hair and a craggy face with a heroic essence. Darke immediately remembered that this was the young man who had severely punished Nedis and also had caught his arrow with just his bare hands.

Darke was surprised and alerted. He asked, "Who are you?"

Rody smiled and replied, "I am Diane's and Myka's friend."

Darke gave an inquiring glance to Diane and she quickly nodded her head. Darke still felt skeptical and asked, "Diane's friend? This girl came from the Southern mountains. I have never heard that she has any friends." He then lowered his voice and coldly said, "That day you said the words 'Ten years' promise'. How did you know about it?"

Rody smiled and replied, "I am one of the subordinates of the Duke of the Tulip Family."

Darke looked at Diane again. Diane did not say anything. She only forcefully and obediently nodded her head.

Darke was still puzzled but as there were a lot of people around, he did not say much. Instead, he asked, "Why are you looking for me?"

Rody grabbed a chair and sat down opposite Darke. He had a calm and unhurried expression. Instead of giving Darke a reply, he casually picked up the bottle of wine on the table and drank a mouthful.

Diane obediently stood at a side looking helpless. She did not know if she should sit down as she was not comfortable with that place. She looked around and saw the surrounding people were each hugging a beautiful woman. There were also some of them who threw lecherous glances at her own body. Diane felt angry but did not say anything.

Rody smiled and said, "Why are you standing? Sit down. It is not like you have never been here before. Didn't you beat up a few of my subordinates the last time you were here?"

Diane could not help but retort, "If it was not because we were inquiring about you... about the Duke, I would not come to this kind of place." Although she said so, she still obediently sat down beside Rody.

Rody lightly said, "What do you mean 'this kind of place'? This kind of place is really very normal. Men come here to spend their money and to buy happiness. There is nothing strange about it."

"But... But those women..." Diane pursed her lips.

Rody became more solemn and lightly said, "They are also people struggling to make a living. That is nothing shameful! I will never look down on such people and places!"

Diane saw a trace of anger in Rody's eyes and immediately realized that she had said the wrong thing. After all, Myka was also from a brothel.

Darke laughed loudly and said, "Your words make sense!" He showed an appreciative glance and then asked again, "So, why are you looking for me?"

Rody sighed and said, "I came looking for your help, but I think it will be a little dangerous." After pondering for a moment, Rody continued, "I am responsible for protecting His Excellency, the Duke. Yesterday, inside the hunting grounds..."

Rody briefly related the previous day's encounter and finally said, "That place is strange. I am looking for someone to accompany me there to investigate."

As soon as Rody finished, Darke stood up, put the longbow on the table behind his back and then picked up his scimitar. "Let's go!"

Rody froze for a moment. "What?"

Darke laughed and replied, "Didn't you come to me for help?"

Rody took a deep breath and looked at Darke with a complex expression. This is Darke. He is a straightforward man. This is the stranger that Muse and I met in the Northwest grasslands when we were at a dead end. He threw away his prey which he captured after chasing for a few days. Without saying anything, he saved us.

Rody looked somewhat moved. He could not help but ask, "You have already agreed?"

Darke laughed and he gently wiped off the remnants of the beer from his beard. He then said, "What is there to hesitate? How could I not go and see such a strange and interesting thing? Besides that, you are also a friend of this girl. If I do not agree to help you, she would not be happy..."

Rody knew that there was no need for him to be argumentative as Darke was also a warm-hearted man. Without saying anything

more, both of them shook hands. After that, Darke said, "You said that the place is a hunting ground in the forest... talking about hunting in the forest, I am actually quite skilled. It is getting late, let's go now."

Diane also stood up and hurriedly said, "I will also go with the two of you!" When she saw both of them frown, Diane said, "Don't forget, I am from a mountain tribe! How could you guys be better than me when it comes to the forest? Darke, you may be a hunter, but you may not be better than me when it comes to this particular skill."

Rody hesitated for a moment, but then he agreed after he thought of the fact that other than him Diane was the only other person who had seen a Mythical Beast. Besides that, she had good martial skills. She also had some strange magic and a special stealth ability.

So, with that, the three-people team decided to explore the forest that night.

Chapter 209: Trap

At first, Rody wanted to go and find Nedis, but Darke told Rody that Nedis was not in the pub. Rody also felt that it would be awkward to meet Nedis and so, he gave up.

The three of them went back to fetch Myka and took her to the Duke's mansion. Although Darke thought it was strange, he also knew the relationship between Myka and the Duke of the Tulip Family. However, he felt something strange from the way Myka was looking at the man named Rody.

The first meeting between Nicole and Myka inside the Duke's residence was not as awkward as Rody imagined it would be. Nicole looked tranquil, while Myka was also very calm.

Nicole had long expected Myka to be an outstanding woman. When she actually saw Myka standing in front of her, she could not help but have a strange feeling.

Nicole felt that the woman in front of her looked extremely beautiful. Her satin-like long hair gently stick to her cheeks, making her look extremely gentle and charming. The most enchanting thing about Myka was her personality. Her beautiful face had a faint quiet look. She looked like she would be indifferent to everything around her. Nicole's first thought was: She is such an exceptional person; how could her little brother abandon her so easily?

However, Nicole would not say all that. After a sigh, Nicole pulled Myka's hand as she smiled and said, "Follow me inside."

Myka glanced at Rody. After Rody nodded, she smiled and followed Nicole in.

Obviously, Rody only let out his held breath after watching the two women leave. On the other hand, Diane had a complicated expression. From the start until the end, she quietly bit her lips

and gently stepped on the tip of her toes.

The three of them spent the rest of their time preparing some tools. Following the guidance of the two jungle experts, Darke and Diane, the three prepared all their required tools and then rode out of the city.

The various roads, large and small, leading to the hunting grounds had already been blockaded by the army but Rody and his two companions were naturally unimpeded on their way there. A small barracks sat the periphery of the hunting ground. There were three hundred Imperial Guards stationed there. Rody ordered for them to wait outside while he brought Darke and Diane into the hunting ground.

The hunting ground was quiet at night. As the hunting ground belonged to the Tulip Family for centuries, some small roads were already constructed in the hunting ground. Although they were simple, they managed to enable the horses to run quickly. However, the three of them slowed down their horses when they entered the forest.

When the horseshoes trampled on the grass and the ground, they gave out a rustling sound. Rody rode in front while Darke and Diane rode side by side behind him, forming a triangular formation. All three of them were on alert, their hands on their weapons.

Occasionally, some wild rabbits and other animals that came out at night to forage for food were frightened and sprang from the roadside. Darke and Diane carefully looked around. Their expressions became more serious the closer they got to the lake at the center of the forest.

All along the way, it was quiet and peaceful. When they arrived at the central lake, they saw remnants of the damaged camps and the fallen trees from yesterday. They also saw the corpse of the huge monster killed by Rody.

Darke suddenly whispered from behind, "Wait!"

Rody immediately held the reins tight and turned around to look. Darke was sitting on his horse with his eyes closed. It was as if he was perceiving something. He then started sniffing vigorously.

His expression became even more serious. He immediately turned and dismounted from his horse. Clutching the bag of tools that he had prepared earlier, he slowly approached the carcass of that monster.

Rody and Diane also dismounted from their horses and conveniently tied the horses' reins to the trees beside them. They then followed Darke to the lake.

Darke suddenly climbed a tree. He squatted on the tree trunk and stretched out his hand to touch a tree branch. He then brought it to his nose to sniff. Later, he jumped down from the tree and once again approached the monster's corpse and carefully searched the surrounding area.

As the cold wind blew at night, Darke looked serious as if he had noticed something wrong. Diane who had been looking around also knotted her eyebrows.

Rody asked, "Did you find anything?"

Darke took a deep breath. He then turned around and replied, "There is something strange..." He then looked at Diane and asked, "Did you notice it as well?"

Diane nodded and slowly said, "The trees here are strange. Did you notice? All the trees near the lake are tall and sturdy. They grew excellently! This is very strange. Based on common sense, in the jungle, the places with water sources would be infested with animals. The vegetation here should quite often be trampled by animals, but if you were to look around, there are very few animal footprints!"

Rody thought for a moment and replied, "That seems to be the

case. When we came here hunting yesterday, we only found some prey on the outer parts of the forest. The further we ventured into the forest, the less prey there were. Towards the end, those wild boars we hunted were also found at the edge of the forest. We actually drove them into the forest before killing them. It seems like really very few animals appeared at the lake."

Darke nodded and said, "That is the strange part. Generally speaking, water sources would usually have animals around, unless these animals like to divide their territories. This is especially true if the animals are very big. Perhaps, there is a large creature here and has marked this place as its territory and does not let other animals approach."

Rody shook his head and replied, "Not possible... This may be a forest, but it is also a private hunting ground. At most, there are some bigger size animals, like wild boars. There are no powerful creatures. This is a hunting ground for nobles. If there are such creatures, the nobles will get hurt."

Diane suddenly said, "Listen!"

"Hm?" Rody froze for a moment and asked, "Is there a sound?"

Diane gave Darke a glance and replied, "There is no sound! That is why it is strange!"

Darke softly agreed, "That's right! This is such a large forest, yet, not even the sound of birds could be heard." He shook his head and continued, "I have looked at a few trees. There is no bird's nest or even any animal tracks..."

The two people's words made Rody aware. He remembered when he was in the Southern mountains, the birds were chirping even at night. He also remembered that on that day they went hunting, other than the chirping of the birds on the outside of the forest, the lake was completely silent even during the daytime — not even a bird call.

"Rody... Yesterday, did anybody get on the tree to check?" Darke suddenly asked.

"No, why?"

Darke gloomily replied. "There are footprints on the branches!"

Rody's face discolored and frowned, "Footprints?"

Darke sighed and whispered, "I saw those footprints just now. Those traces looked a little strange. Although I do not dare confirm, I suspect... maybe they belong to the vampires!"

The moment these words came out, Diane felt a chill. She instinctively leaned onto Rody's side. After that, Rody asked, "Vampires? Are you certain?"

Darke shook his head and replied, "No, not certain... The scent is very indistinct. If it was really a vampire, it has to be of the lowest rank. It was only vampires, those little bats that could fly and rest on the branches."

Rody frowned. To think, this actually involved vampires.

Darke slowly walked towards the side of his two companions and whispered, "There must be a special reason that there are no birds here. Most likely, there is something strange here."

Darke then thought for a moment and asked, "Did you really not notice anything during the day?"

Rody shook his head and replied, "No."

Diane thought for a moment and then asked, "Is it possible that it is something that only appears at night? After all, this hunting ground had been abandoned for a long time. Normally, the people from the Tulip Family would not enter this place. There were so many people here yesterday. Even if there was something, it would not dare approach."

"Let's test it out!" Darke suddenly laughed.

Darke went over and untied the reins of two of the horses. He

then whipped two of the horses, causing them to run out of the forest in pain. Darke then calmly led his horse over. He removed the saddle and the other things off the horse before leading the horse towards the trees at the edge of the lake.

Darke gently patted the horse's neck and whispered, "It is cruel, but I am forced to sacrifice you."

He then pulled out his knife and cut the two front legs of the horse so deeply that the bones in the legs were even visible. The horse instantly neighed painfully. It struggled violently for a while before crashing to the ground.

Darke sighed and turned back. He then pulled Rody and Diane to the back of a tree.

They watched the horse struggling under the moonlight. The injured horse was kneeling on the ground, struggling to stand up with its two hind legs. It neighed sorrowfully as the blood from the wounds flowed to the ground.

Diane seemed to be unable to bear it and could not help but gently pull Rody's clothes. Rody remained calm as he had already killed many on the battlefield. Rody noticed Diane's emotion. He gave her a smile and patted her gently on her shoulder.

Darke then took out a black bottle. He poured out some strange liquid and carefully sprinkled some on his body and pants. Diane looked at Rody's surprised expression and laughed, "This is used for hunting. The noses of beasts are more powerful than the noses of humans. This is to cover up the scent of his body and make it harder for the animals to detect him!" At this moment, Diane also took out a bottle. She smiled and said, "This one is used by the hunters of the Silvermoon Clan. Take it."

Rody imitated them and sprinkled the liquid onto his body. The liquid smelled like grass.

"Is it useful for us to wait here?" Rody asked with a frown.

Darke shook his head and replied, "I do not know... I hope this bloody smell would attract something." After thinking for a while, Darke whispered, "It is not good to stand here. Let us climb a tree and wait there."

The three of them climbed up a big tree. However, intentionally or unintentionally, Diane stood together with Rody. They calmly watched from above the tree branch.

Darke had already taken out his longbow from his back. He twirled a sharp arrow with his fingers as he looked around with his sparkling eyes.

As time passed by, the injured horse was still struggling on the ground. It was unable to stand as its injury at its front legs were too severe. The sorrowful neighing gradually stopped. Its breathing also became more helpless and it did not seem to have any more strength.

Rody started to feel restless, but he saw that Darke and Diane were still calm. He could not help but laugh as they were so much more experienced than him in this matter.

By the middle of the night, that horse had gradually stopped moving. It was on the verge of death from too much blood loss. Rody had already stopped talking since Darke had given him the hint. He just waited quietly.

Finally, he suddenly saw Darke gently wave his hand. There was movement! He looked at where Darke was pointing. There was a light rustle at a distance, near the lake. The sound was extremely soft and was almost covered by the wind. However, Rody's eyes were sharp and he could see a black figure in the trees with just a glance. It seemed to be waiting quietly for something. There were three green dots like ghost fire faintly flashing.

Darke gave Rody a restraining signal. Rody nodded, but he could not help but gradually clenched his fists. Diane leaned against Rody. She seemed tense.

The rustling sound came from the trees again. Soon after that, the grass separated as the black figure slowly moved out...

Although it was far away and it was night time, Rody could clearly see that the figure looked similar to a wolf.

The reason why he said 'looked similar' was because it had many different characteristics despite being having the shape of a wolf. Its size seemed larger than the most robust wolf Rody had ever seen. It had black, glossy fur and pointed ears... And its eyes...

Rody finally realized what the few green dots of ghost fire were. Those were the monster's eyes.

The monster actually had three eyes. In addition to its normal eyes, it had an eye on the center of its forehead. In the dark of the night, these eyes glowed with a scary green light.

It carefully came out from the bushes. Its steps were very slow and its body drooped very low. The more surprising thing was that it was dragging two large broom-like tails.

With each step it took, the monster's tail gently swept and erased its footprints.

What a cunning fellow!

Chapter 210: Taming

The three hunters were hiding on the tree quietly watching the approaching monster, not daring to breathe heavily.

Its body was close to the ground with its back bent in an arch. Rody knew that this was the best posture; whether to attack or to flee, instant action could be taken.

It crept slowly as it warily examined the bleeding horse in front of it. Instead of moving straight to the horse, it carefully walked around the horse as it slowly approached. The two tails behind it continued to sweep its tail along with the sand on the ground, like big brooms.

Finally, the wolf-like creature stopped less than five meters away from the horse. It stood there with its mouth open and bared its pointed fangs as it growled.

That horse was frightened. Its animal instincts made it struggle and neigh sorrowfully again. Its neighs became more and more tragic and more and more piercing.

Finally, the monster moved.

Its arched body straightened up and suddenly dashed out five meters away. It moved like a flash of lightning and in an instant, it reached the front of the horse.

Rody's first thought was: Very fast!

The three-eyed wolf bit the horse's neck. Its movement was swift and simple as it hit its target. Only Rody reacted and saw its movements while Darke and Diane were stunned.

However, the more surprising thing happened after then.

When the three-eyed wolf bit the horse's neck, the horse struggled. However, the strange creature then suddenly swung its head...and it managed to fling out the heavy horse that weighed

hundreds of kilograms.

Darke's eyes grew wide. Is this really a wolf? Even lions do not have that much strength!

The injured horse was flung out by about ten meters before it severely crashed onto the ground. By the time they looked at it, it had completely stopped moving. Obviously, that bite and that fling had broken the horse's neck!

The three-eyed wolf calmly approached the dead horse. It then stuck out its tongue and gently licked the blood on the horse's wound. After that, it bit the horse's neck and dragged the hundreds of kilograms horse towards the road.

It was a very strange scene as the three-eyed wolf-like creature was not bigger than the horse. However, it was scarily strong as it was able to easily drag a few hundred kilograms horse by the neck and was also extremely fast with its action.

Darke had already secretly pulled his bow at that creature from afar, but then he saw Rody give him a signal telling him not to move.

Rody's face was dour and he had a bad feeling. This three-eyed creature was definitely a Mythical Beast.

Besides that, Rody faintly felt a very strong aura.

Sure enough, he heard a sharp whistle from the distant lake.

That sound was extremely sharp and painful to the ears. It was like their ears were being pricked by needles.

After that, Rody saw a black figure with stretched out wings glide over from the surface of the water. It moved quicker and quicker until its figure could no longer be clearly seen.

The black figure flew closer and landed beside the three-eyed wolf. Its appearance was then clearly visible. It was a night owl.

However, this owl was extremely big and was about as big as the

three-eyed wolf. Its body looked long. There seemed to be bright scales at the edge of the wings. It opened its long beak, revealing its slender broken teeth, and gave a threatening screech at the three-eyed wolf.

Rody and the other two finally knew why there were no birds near the lake.

The three-eyed wolf had already let go of the dead horse and lowered its body on the ground. It looked at the night owl and growled. Its hackles were raised.

The two strange creatures faced each other. Finally, the three-eyed wolf suddenly raised its neck and gave out a long howl...

The night owl also flapped its large wings and then started to move!

Its speed was as fast as a shooting arrow. In an instant, it had, like the wind, fluttered to the front of the three-eyed wolf. However, that wolf was very cunning. It lowered its body just in time for the owl to swoop over its head.

Although this attack was fruitless, the owl's momentum was too great. It flew straight towards the nearby edge of the forest. There was a cracking sound and wherever its wings passed, it sliced off the branches that were as thick as a man's arm.

The night owl then stretched its neck and once again screeched intimidatingly at the three-eyed wolf. The three-eyed wolf sat there and continued to watch its opponent vigilantly.

Darker gave Rody an eye signal. What should we do?

Rody looked at Diane, who was beside him, and shook his head. He then waved his hand indicating...Let us wait.

After that, an even more shocking thing happened.

That night owl suddenly stood up straight. The wings fiercely flapped twice and shot out two blades of wind at the three-eyed

wolf.

Rody's eyes grew wide...Yes, this is Wind Blade! It is something only high ranked warriors with fighting energy could master!

The three-eyed wolf reacted quickly and immediately jumped to the side like black lightning. However, the horse's carcass was hit by the two Wind Blades and was immediately split into three parts.

The wolf seemed to have sensed something, as its third eye on its forehead flashed with a strange light. After that, a faint black aura erupted from the wolf's body.

With something that looked like a black electric cocoon around its body, the three-eyed wolf suddenly lifted its head and howled. Its body then started to transform.

Its body started to swell and its muscles grew bigger. After that, its body straightened up and its black hair grew longer. Its bones also became thicker. Finally, after another howl, the three-eyed wolf stood in an upright position, like a man.

It was three to four meters tall. Its claws on its front paws were as sharp as knives. It opened its big bloody mouth and howled at the night owl twice then suddenly rushed towards the night owl.

The night owl did not show any signs of evading and shot out another two more Wind Blades. However, the transformed three-eyed wolf was surrounded by a thick layer of black aura. The two Wind Blades smashed onto the aura but only caused a little bit of damage. The two Wind Blades also caused the three-eyed wolf to faintly howl in pain but did not slow it down.

The night owl instantly flapped its wings and charged forward. It opened up its brightly-scaled wings...Earlier, Rody had seen the sharpness of those scales as they could easily cut through thick tree trunks.

Sure enough, after a short while of clashing between the two strange creatures, the sharp wings of the night owl broke through

the black aura of the three-eyed wolf. The night owl left a deep gash on the chest of the three-eyed wolf. On the other hand, the claws of the three-eyed wolf also heavily hit the night owl, causing it to screech in pain. The night owl rolled and flew out. Finally, it fell to the ground, then staggered and stood up again.

The three-eyed wolf issued a series of painful howls and bared its sharp fangs inside its big mouth. It then rushed at the night owl again...

Diane was alarmed and Darke also turned pale as they watched the two monsters roll on the ground, attacking and biting each other.

Darke and Diane were strong, but they were weak when compared with Rody's strength. Both of them hid at the side to watch. The strength of the two strange creatures was far beyond their expectations. If they were to confront one of those monsters alone, they would still have a chance to win. However, if they were to fight both of those creatures together, they would definitely not be able to escape. They knew they would not be able to defend themselves, just by looking at the speed of the creatures' attacks.

Finally, the two creatures separated again. The two creatures had a lot of wounds, big and small, on their bodies. One of the wings of that night owl had been severely injured. It was dangling there and nearly broken.

On the other hand, the face of the three-eyed wolf had been bitten by the night owl until the wolf had almost become a two-eyed wolf. At present, its wound was still gurgling with blood.

The two creatures panted and angrily looked at each other.

Rody then gave Darke an eye signal. Darke nodded but when he looked at the arrow in his hand and thought to himself for a moment, he believed that one arrow would probably not be enough. Darke slowly took out more arrows until he had four sharp arrows in his hand before he aimed at the two creatures in

the distance.

Rody's braced himself and was ready to jump out the moment Darke fired the arrows. However, at that moment, the situation changed.

A strange sound came from a distance. That sound was ear-piercing, with a metallic tone. It seemed like a strange whistle.

A figure approached from a distance and it looked as if the figure was drifting up and down lightly, like a leaf. It headed towards the beasts, but it was not clear if he was flying or running.

The figure was slender but when Rody saw him, he immediately narrowed his eyes. That person was wearing a black cloak.

It's a vampire! Rody realized.

Strangely, after hearing the whistle, the two creatures immediately withdrew. The three-eyed wolf immediately lay down on the ground. Its body gradually shrank and the black aura also subsided. It soon returned to its normal size. On the other hand, the night owl wrapped its body with its wings and shrank into a ball, as if it was shivering.

The vampire landed in between the two creatures. He held a uniquely shaped whistle in his mouth. With an angry expression, the vampire first walked over to the three-eyed wolf and kicked it fiercely. The three-eyed wolf did not dare dodge and whined sadly after being kicked. The vampire then ran to the front of the night owl and similarly kicked it. The night owl rolled on the ground after being kicked. After that, it immediately stood up and continued to tremble.

Darke, Rody, and Diane felt surprised. Based on that vampire's movements, it was clear that the vampire was of the lowest rank as he could not even fly. The three of them knew how strong a low ranked vampire was. Even if three to five of those vampires were to fight against any one of the two creatures, the vampire would

die. Yet, the two creatures seemed like they were extremely afraid of that low ranked vampire.

Rody and Diane quickly exchanged glances. That whistle is special!

The vampire cursed angrily, "Why are you fighting each other? Damn...How did that wolf come to the lake? Its territory is not here!" The vampire soon found the corpse of the horse that had been split into three pieces. The vampire's expression changed as he jumped and shouted, "What is this?"

Rody thought quickly and immediately jumped out the tree. He was very fast and instantly dashed to the back of the vampire. The vampire only had time to look back. Before he could shout out, he felt a pain in his throat. Rody had clutched his neck and lifted him up.

The two strange creatures, at the side, were still lying on the ground and did not move. Rody sighed in his heart and said to himself, "Lucky! Looks like we placed the right bet!"

Rody guessed that the two creatures did not dare move and attack rashly as they did not hear the whistle. Although Rody was not afraid of the two creatures with his strength, if he were to really fight the creatures, it would be troublesome. That was especially true for the night owl as it would be difficult to catch it when it flew. Although Rody could use a wind technique to fly, it would not match that strange creature that was born with wings.

Rody then grabbed the whistle from the vampire's mouth. He carefully looked at the whistle. The whistle was black and heavy. Rody did not know what material was used to make the whistle. It looked a little strange and had a circular hook at the mouthpiece.

The two creatures began to stir and growl softly. Rody immediately shouted, "How do we make them stay down? Say!"

As Rody roared out the last word, he tightened his grip on the

vampire's neck. The vampire lost all the strength in his body and, completely frightened, he replied, "Long whistle! Long whistle!"

Rody felt nauseated but he still put the whistle in his mouth and blew hard.

After a long and mournful whistling sound, the two creatures quieted down. They lay down on the ground and no longer dared to move.

At that moment, Darke and Diane also jumped down from the tree and went to Rody's side. Diane was still frightened and leaned on Rody as she tightly pulled onto Rody's clothes. She vigilantly looked the two strange creatures, beside them.

Rody looked at the vampire that he had lifted up into the air and smiled coldly. He said slowly, "Good, answer my questions if you do not want to die!"

The vampire fell into despair when he saw Rody's cold smile.

Chapter 211: Scoundrel Darke

Generally, vampires lived much longer than humans. In fact, according to the records of human legends, no vampires ever died from old age.

Vampires, as a species, besides having a long lifespan, were also much stronger compared to humans. Fortunately, vampires were small in numbers.

On top of that, there were a lot of subtle things in the world. For example, richer people were greedier for wealth and older people were more afraid of death.

That was why the vampire captured by Rody showed that he was afraid of death.

Before Rody could even start to utilize the interrogation methods he had learned from Dandong's notes, the low ranked vampire had already started to answer all of Rody's questions.

The vampires had great difficulty expanding their blood family as they were suppressed for hundreds of years by the gods of the two continents. On the Radiant continent, for the current generation, there were only three Prince ranked vampires. One of them, Simao, had already been killed by Master Autumn in the Imperial Capital.

At present, there was a Prince ranked vampire hiding in West Hill. According to the captured vampire, that high-rank vampire was called Prince Jackal.

Rody then asked about those strange creatures.

A few months ago, before Prince Simao died, he received an important task from the Elder Vampires to go to the Southern mountains of the Empire. That vampire did not know where the Elder Vampires had learned of the Southern mountains having a peculiar valley. The thing that surprised Rody was those Elder

Vampires also knowing about the existence of the Mystic Dragon.

At first, Prince Simao was collaborating with Prince Barond in the Imperial Capital. However, when he received orders from the Elder Vampires, he left for the Southern mountains with some followers. At that time, Rody had already left the mountains with that fatty, Sky. That was why Simao was not able to find the Mystic Dragon.

As he had the strength of a Prince ranked vampire, he did not encounter too much danger in the Death Valley.

He had lost a few subordinates to the bloodthirsty spiders when they entered the Death Valley. After that, they crossed the Samsara River that was made stagnant by Wuya and finally reached the forest.

That forest had a lot of different mythical beasts. Naturally, most of them were low-ranked mythical beasts. Although Simao was not able to find the Mystic Dragon, he was still able to bring back a few young mythical beasts from the mountains.

The captured vampire was unable to give an answer as to why the vampires captured those mythical beasts. It was not something a low-ranked vampire like him would know.

Simao brought back a total of six young mystical beasts. They were supposedly the stronger and higher ranked creatures in the Death Valley.

Three of those mystical beasts were distributed to Prince Jackal. Those three mystical beasts were the two strange creatures in front of Rody and the large octopus-like creature that he killed the previous day.

The three-eyed wolf was an intermediate ranked mythical beast. Its real name was Fox Wolf. It had the cunningness of a fox and the aggressiveness of a wolf.

The night owl was a little weaker. Its name was [Red Monkey](#).

Hearing that, Diane could not help but look at the night owl again. Sure enough, she noticed that the owl really looked like a monkey except for the fact that monkeys did not have wings and small fangs.

Since Prince Simao was killed in the Imperial Capital, the Church started to hunt vampires again. Prince Jackal came to West Hill not too long ago and the reason was simple. It was because the Church's influence was not strong in the province of Westwood.

In fact, the Church's influence was built on two foundations: the support of the Empire's officials and the devotion of the common people.

Westwood Province was undoubtedly a special place. That place was the fief of the Tulip Family. The Imperial officials' power there basically belonged to the Tulip Family. The citizens also had more faith in the Tulip Family. It was because of those two reasons that the Church's influence was relatively weak in the entire Westwood province. As a result, West Hill was also an exceptionally good place for the vampires to recuperate.

The captured low ranked vampire's job was to raise the mythical beasts.

At that point, Rody looked at the vampire skeptically and coldly said, "Raise them? You are just a low ranked vampire while the mythical beasts are precious things. Would they actually let you manage them?"

The low ranked vampire felt the grip on his neck tighten and quickly shouted, "Really! I am telling you the truth!"

Under Rody's cold gaze, the low ranked vampire quickly explained the reason. Apparently, the other higher ranked vampires think it was beneath them to do a job like an animal breeder. The higher ranked vampires preferred to spend their time cultivating or sleeping. The strength of vampires was derived from their long lives, where they had more time to cultivate compared

to humans. That was why they were unwilling to spend their time doing a boring job like breeding animals. Prince Jackal, too.

In fact, Prince Jackal did not have a harmonious relationship with dead Prince Simao. He was actually unwilling to care for the mythical beast that Prince Simao had captured. However, he could not defy the orders from the Elder Vampires.

Since the high ranked vampires did not want to do that, the task fell onto the two pitiful lowest ranked vampires.

"Wait!" Rody showed a smile and asked, "What did you say? Two?"

That vampire sweated buckets as he trembled. "Yes, yes, two..."

Rody casually asked, "How did the two of you breed of the mythical beasts? Does one person attend to one mythical beast?"

"Yes...that's right." The vampire replied, "But, that guy had been executed by the Prince yesterday as he did a poor job. Now...I am the only one left."

Rody coldly said, "Good! This means that there should be one more of this whistle that you used to control the mythical beast! Am I right?"

The vampire's expression changed.

Suddenly, with one grab, Rody lifted the vampire up by his legs. Sure enough, after shaking him vigorously a few times, a strange black whistle fell out from the vampire's bosom. It looked not much different from the first whistle.

Diane bent over and picked up the whistle. She held it in her hand and looked at it for a while. After that, she looked back and accused, "You are still hiding this. Are you looking for an opportunity to steal back the mythical beasts?"

"No...no, I don't dare!" The vampire started to sob.

Rody's expression remained unchanged. He dropped the vampire

onto the ground and asked again, "One last question...why did you raise mythical beasts here?"

"In the whole of West Hill, this is the only place that is wide enough and not very populated. After all, this is the Tulip Family's private hunting ground. Normally, there would be people guarding outside and nobody would come in here."

Rody gazed coldly and lightly said, "What else? A mythical beast was already killed yesterday. What is it about that octopus?"

"Yes, yes, I will tell you!" He looked at Diane who was playing with her scimitar and eyeing his neck at the same time. The bearded and burly man, beside him, was swinging his sword. The vampire loudly replied, "The water in this lake is weird! We found out that the lake water was particularly suitable for the growth of the mythical beasts. The octopus that was killed yesterday was originally a low-ranked baby monster. However, it had evolved three times in less than a month. That is why we still left the other two mythical beasts here. However, Prince Jackal felt that this place is no longer safe and ordered me to take back the mythical beasts tonight."

After saying all that, the vampire sighed and thought to himself. If only I was here one day earlier, I would not have encountered these guys in front of me!

Rody then asked with interest, "The water in this lake is weird? What is weird about it?"

The vampire scowled miserably. "I don't know. Just that, the baby mythical beast that was placed in this water had grown extremely fast. It had grown much faster than the other two mythical beasts. As for the rest, I really don't know!"

Darke suddenly whispered, "I am afraid that what he says is true..." He thought for a moment and then whispered again, "Didn't we think that it was strange as well just now? It looks like the trees that are closer to the lake grew exceptionally well."

Rody nodded. He took another look at the vampire who was lying weakly on the ground and said, "You better think again carefully. What else have you not told us? If you had missed out anything, the consequences..."

"Yes, yes, I know!" The vampire had a distorted and fearful expression. With gritted teeth, he carefully thought for a long time and finally said, "Nothing else. Really nothing left. I have already told you all that I know."

Rody shook his head. He sighed and asked, "You have said everything already?"

"Yes!"

"Alright." Rody nodded and then he said, "I know you hope that I would spare you your life...In fact, I do not have much hatred for vampires. I am also not interested in the enmity between the vampires and the Church. But unfortunately, now I really hate you bloodsuckers...That is because I have a friend who was killed by a vampire!"

When Rody spoke his last sentence, a pained glimmer crossed his eyes. He then slowly raised his hand...

A trace of thin black flame gradually shot out of his hand. Diane and Darke were surprised and took a few steps back. The black flame from Rody's hand gradually wrapped around the vampire's body...

The vampire screamed bitterly and his body quickly turned into ashes...no, not even the ashes were left. In a short moment, nothing was left.

Darke took a deep breath and looked at Rody vigilantly. "Hellfire! Who in the world are you? Rody, how come you know how to use Hellfire?"

Diane bit her lips and had a complicated expression. She certainly knew why Rody could use Hellfire. That was not Rody's

own strength. That was power given to him by the Mystic Dragon.

The fire that could burn and destroy anything. That certainly meant one was the reincarnation of the Mystic Dragon.

The two mythical beasts, next to him, seemed to have instinctively felt something. They felt a kind of aura. The moment Rody used Hellfire, they whined, retreated and trembled on the ground.

"Alright!" Rody said with a sigh, "Now, let us examine this lake to see what is so strange." He then looked at Darke and said, "I will answer your question in the future, but I hope that you can believe that right now, we are still friends!"

Diane thought for a moment and then asked, "What should we do with these two mythical beasts?"

Rody smiled and replied, "It would be a pity to kill such interesting mythical beasts. It might a good idea to keep them." He once again put the whistle in his mouth and blew it. After a long sounding whistle, the two mythical beasts obediently lay down on the ground.

"Looks like these vampires are quite skilled. They actually had such a method to make the mythical beasts obey them." Diane said with a smile.

Darke shook his head and replied, "That is not entirely true...It is not hard to tame the young beasts. As long as they are trained, punished and rewarded daily, these young beasts would develop habits. Once these habits became their instincts, everything would become simple. For example, this whistle; blowing a long whistle definitely gives them a frightening impression as it means punishment. That is why they acted with fear when they hear a long whistle."

Rody waved his hands and said, "Let us talk about the mythical beasts later...Let us take a look at the lake first!"

However, the next question arose.

If the lake needed to be investigated, then the best method would be to send someone into the lake to explore.

Unfortunately, Rody did not know how to swim and Darke was not particularly good at swimming. Both of them were embarrassed. Diane sighed. She then gave a wry smile and said, "Looks like I would be the only one going down. I am surprised that the two of you do not know how to swim."

Rody frowned and asked, "Do you know how to swim?"

Diane smiled sweetly and replied, "Our tribe is next to a big river. From young, I am already used to swimming in the river."

Rody still frowned and hesitantly said, "I am afraid there is something strange in this lake...You..."

Diane felt happy when she saw that Rody was looking at her with concern. She no longer felt afraid and smiled. "Don't worry."

The three of them took out the ropes they brought and tied them together. They then tied one end of the rope to Diane's waist and the other end to a tree. Diane also put away all the loads and weapons she was carrying and only took with her a small dagger. She then walked towards the lake barefooted.

As she moved forward, the lake water gradually covered her knees, waist, chest until her whole body could no longer be seen.

Rody and Darke felt a little nervous as they saw the rope quickly slip into the lake. Rody could not help but walk to the shore and tightly hold a knife in his hand.

At that point in time, the sky had started to turn bright and the morning breeze started to blow. They could not help but feel cold. The two mythical beasts on the ground were also slowly getting restless. Darke was worried about Diane and he felt anxious. He walked over to the two mythical beasts and kicked one of them as he shouted, "Damn! Behave yourself!"

Sometime later, suddenly there was a ripple as Diane reappeared from the lake. With her head above the lake, she forcefully swam back to the shore. Rody immediately grabbed the rope and quickly pulled her back.

Diane was breathing rapidly. Her hair was wet and stuck to her head and face. Her face was pale and her lips were purple. Evidently, it was because the lake was extremely cold and unbearable.

She had been wearing a red dress that revealed her arms and calves. Her clothes were thin and stuck to her body after being soaked in water. That highlighted her graceful body. Rody took a single glance and could not help but get a strange feeling. He quickly took off his coat and wrapped it around her body.

Diane trembled as she was gently held by Rody. She suddenly opened up her arms and hugged Rody. Rody thought that she was cold. Originally, he just helped to wrap his coat around her body, but he did not expect to be hugged. He could not help but freeze for a moment. Immediately, he thought that this was her reaction to the cold. He smiled and asked, "Is the lake water very cold?"

Diane's teeth chattered as she smiled sweetly and replied, "I am fine."

Rody sighed and slowly brought out his fighting energy. In the darkness just before dawn, it looked like his body faintly issued a mass of golden light. The mass of golden light was like a burning flame, wrapping Rody and Diane inside it.

The water vapor faintly evaporated and Diane felt like she was covered in warmth. Her cold and wet body gradually warmed up and became dry. She could not help but groan softly as she leaned on Rody's chest.

Rody felt the trembling of her delicate body in his arms as she gradually calmed down. Rody took pity on her when he saw her pale face and blue lips. He then whispered, "Do you feel better

now?"

Diane stared at Rody. She seemed to have gone crazy and, for a moment, forgot to reply to Rody.

Suddenly, Darke's voice came from behind. "Golden fighting energy! You are actually a Sacred Swordsman!"

Rody gave a wry smile. He immediately let go of Diane to turn around and look at Darke. He then smiled and said, "Yes."

Darke had a shocked expression. He wanted to say something else, but then he unexpectedly saw Diane's cold and ferocious glare. Feeling frightened, he swallowed his words.

Diane fiercely glared at Darke, feeling abnormally angry.

Scoundrel Darke. He did not speak earlier. He did not speak later. He purposely chose to speak at the time he was hugging me...

This scoundrel, Darke!

After glaring fiercely at Darke for a while, she took a deep breath and said slowly, "Down there...is certainly weird."

The red here is 赤 chī instead of 红 hong. Hong is more red/festive. Chi can mean red, loyal, empty or naked, depending on the context. The red here is maroon red. Based on the context, I picked red as the other three choices would not make sense.

赤猴 Can also mean a patas monkey. It is also known as the wadi monkey or the hussar monkey. I do not know why it is called a monkey when 夜梟 yè xiāo, literally 'night smuggler' or 'night owl' has wings and should be an owl instead of a monkey. I also chose to call it Red Monkey because a patas monkey is an existing species that is not a mythical beast.

Chapter 212: Intimate

Diane had described that the lake was deathly still and devoid of life.

The lake might have been cold and dark, but Diane could not see a single creature in the lake. It was such a big lake, yet it did not have a single fish or aquatic plant. However, because she did not have enough time, she did not dive deeper or further into the lake. She had only searched near the shore. Nevertheless, she only saw bare rocks at the bottom of the lake.

"This is just a dead lake!" Diane spoke, feeling uneasy. "I have never seen anything like this in the water before."

They thought of the Mythical Beasts and what the vampire they met earlier had said. "The lake is strange and suitable for the growth of the Mythical Beasts."

The three of them showed an unnatural expression when they thought of all that. Darke pondered for a moment and said, "What do you think? What should we do next?"

Diane hesitantly replied, "Should we just go back? Tonight, we have found Mythical Beasts and vampires. There would still be a lot of other things to do after we go back..."

Rody was silently thinking of something. After a moment, he looked at the calm but frightening lake before saying, "I want to go down there and take a look!"

"What?" Diane and Darke blurted out.

Rody spoke with a firm tone and said, "I want to go down there and take a look!" He turned around to look at his companions and said, "There must definitely be something strange in this lake...I have a premonition that we would find something unexpected tonight! If we just go back like this, I would feel uneasy! There must be something hiding underwater...I want to go down there to

take a look!"

Diane could not help but loudly protest, "You don't know how to swim! Besides that, there are only stones down there..."

Rody shook his head and replied, "Maybe there would be something at some distance away."

Diane was extremely concerned and said, "Only God knows what else is down there...Didn't you find a monster here yesterday? You...I know you are powerful, but underwater is different from the shore!"

Rody laughed as he looked at Diane and leisurely said, "There is nothing to worry about. The vampire also said that there were only three Mythical Beasts. I have already killed one and the remaining two are over here. There should be no more monsters underwater..."

"But...but even the vampire said that the lake is weird..." Diane anxiously said.

Darke also asked, "Rody, are you sure about this?"

Rody nodded and said, "Since there is something strange here, I must investigate it!" He then continued with a strange tone, "A suitable place to raise Mythical Beasts is not a trifling matter."

The three of them argued for a while, but Rody insisted on going. Finally, Diane loudly said, "Fine! If you insist on going, I am coming with you!"

Rody furrowed his eyebrows and was about to speak when Diane spoke again. "What's wrong? Do you think you are very formidable? Let me tell you. It is already considered good if you could use ten percent of your ability underwater! If something bad happens, you would still need me to save you!"

Darke also wanted to say something, but Diane's ferocious glare made him turn silent. Diane was persistent no matter what Rody said. Finally, they all decided that Rody and Diane would go and

take a look in the lake while Darke would remain on the shore to pull the rope and watch over the two Mythical Beasts. Rody had insisted that the rope be tied to Diane's body.

Before going down, Rody whispered to Dark, "If you feel something wrong, immediately pull her back up to the surface! You don't need to care about me!"

Darke looked at Rody's eyes with a complicated expression and then said, "You must be careful...No matter what, you must bring her back safely. I have already gotten used to this little girl bullying me every day."

Rody then took a look at Diane. Taking advantage of the fact that Diane was not nearby, he whispered, "Later, when it is necessary, I will give you a signal. If you see the rope shake and flash with a golden light, you have to immediately pull her back."

The two men firmly shook hands. Rody and Diane then went into the lake.

The lake was really cold even though it was not winter. As they went deeper into the lake, Rody could feel the cold as if it were countless needles prickling his body. He realized then that Diane had a tough time when she went into the lake by herself.

They walked in deeper until the water was above their chests. Rody and Diane then exchanged a look and took a deep breath before going in.

The cold lake water flooded Rody's ears with a gurgling sound. At that moment, Rody felt a strange feeling.

He slowly opened his eyes but saw that it was dark and he could only see a few meters away from himself. Fortunately, he was holding Diane's hand, making him feel a little calmer.

Rody stretched his body and swam clumsily according to the little bit that Diane had thought him earlier. Both of them swam deeper while holding each other's hands.

One was proficient in water while the other was powerful. They held their breaths for a long time, but it was not something unbearable.

The lake was just as Diane had stated. It was completely silent and devoid of life. Ordinary rivers and lakes would have common fishes and aquatic plants, but this place was empty. There were some large and small bare stones at the bottom of the lake. As it had been eroded by the water from the lake, the stones were smooth, yet the stones could not hide how lifeless the lake was. Even the crevices had no moss.

At the beginning, Diane had been pulling Rody forward, but Rody's movements gradually became smoother and natural. The two of them then swam side by side. The deeper Rody went, the stronger his strange feeling became. He somehow felt like there was something awaiting him at the bottom of the lake.

The cold lake had started to make his body feel numb and frozen. Rody felt something and instinctively circulated his fighting energy. A soft warm current started to flow through his body and the suffocating feeling eased.

As if it was an illusion, Rody could feel his sweat pores all over his body breathe in air. Fresh air flowed into his body through that warm current. As Rody went deeper, his movements became smoother and finally, he was the one that pulled Diane forward!

Both of them did not know how deep and far they swam, but both of their bodies suddenly felt startled as the water around them became turbulent. Their surroundings were no longer calm like earlier and the rapid flow of water wrapped around them as if a tremendous force was tearing them apart. Rody grabbed Diane's hands in fear that she would be washed away and tried very hard to keep going forward and downward. They could almost see some whirlpools at the bottom of the lake. After passing through the whirlpools, they could see a strong undercurrent of darker colored water washing away the sand, but they could not see where the

water came from...

Diane immediately pulled Rody's hand and pointed to the front. Rody nodded, indicating that he had also seen it.

The two of them were unsteady from the turbulent movements of the water and could only hold each other. Rody suddenly pulled Diane's hand. He stretched out his finger and wrote on her palm, "You go back up first."

Diane shook her head. She pulled Rody's hand and wrote, "No!"

Rody felt helpless and grabbed the rope behind Diane in his hand. He then emitted his golden fighting energy. Like a snake, the fighting energy traveled along the rope and spread to the other end, causing the whole rope to turn golden...

Diane was stunned and had not reacted. Suddenly, she was startled as a fierce force pulled her from behind. She instantly understood what had happened and the contents of the two men's secret conversation.

The moment she saw Rody let go of her hands, she started to get pulled back up. Feeling anxious, she suddenly took out her short dagger and cut off the rope tied to her waist with a backhand swing.

Once the rope was cut off, Diane turned around and swam back to Rody. Although they were underwater, Rody could see the grudging look in her eyes. Diane then took Rody's hand and wrote, "I am staying with you!"

Rody felt helpless and wrote back, "How are you? Do you need to get some air first?"

Diane shook her head.

The two of them then carefully swam down and tried to resist the enormous pulling power of the water undercurrent from all directions. Grabbing the stones at the bottom of the lake, they moved towards the crevice at the center of a whirlpool.

Suddenly, there was a strong force pulling from the left. They could not help but be swept along with the wave. Rody reacted quickly and grabbed onto a huge boulder with one hand. Diane was in a state of confusion as her body was being pulled by the undercurrent. However, they were still holding on to each other's hands.

Rody spontaneously used his fighting energy again, but his body was suspended in water and was not able to utilize it. He was powerful but right now, he seemed to be standing in a void, his powers not usable. Rody's fighting energy became stronger and stronger, but his hand suddenly slipped. The boulder had been in the lake for a long time and had eroded so much that it was smooth and slippery, making it difficult to grasp. When his hand slipped and lost control, it was as if he was blown away like a leaf. They were hanging onto each other as they were swept away in circles and eventually entered the center of the whirlpool. After that, they were swept to the center of a rapid undercurrent and disappeared instantly without a trace...

They drifted with the undercurrent, tossed up and down, but both of them could not open their eyes due to the raging water. All they could feel was their bodies being thrown about. They could not help but hold onto each other tightly as they heard the waves around their bodies become more intense, washing over them in an indistinct thunderous roar.

Suddenly, they felt their surroundings turn dark. The undercurrent had carried them into a tunnel at the bottom of the lake. Rody was startled as his head bumped into a sharp edge. Although he was strong, the collision still hurt and caused him to be confused for a moment. After that, he felt his body occasionally bump against some stones. Rody realized that the water current had sent him into a narrow place. It would be bad if Diane was injured by all this bumping and collision.

Instinctively, Rody hugged Diane tightly and used his own body

to protect her. Rody collided with more stones along the way. Although this could not harm his body, the tunnel was not straight. There were two quick bends in the tunnel, and the current that carried him threw him hard into the sides each time. The violent collision was like a huge hammer ruthlessly hitting the body. The impact was almost comparable to Paladin Fielding's strikes during his duel at the Thunderous City. After the second collision, Rody had almost fainted and spat out blood.

Suddenly, Rody felt Diane's body twitch violently. She grasped to Rody tightly and trembled. Her head was firmly thrust into Rody's chin. Rody immediately realized that she was drowning.

In a confused state of mind, Rody made a quick and desperate decision. He lowered his head and kissed her on the mouth. He felt Diane stiffen up, but he could no longer worry about it. He stuck his tongue out to forcefully open up her teeth and then he slowly gave her his breath...

In the turbulent waters, they thus became intimate with each other; it was like an electric shock. Time seemed to pause as they kissed and embraced each other.

Chapter 213: The World at the Bottom of the Lake

The tunnels underwater turned in several directions. Rody and Diane did not know how many turns they had made as they were being swept by the turbulent undercurrent. Even though Rody was tough, after crashing continuously a few times, he could no longer persevere. Finally, he suddenly felt the surrounding terrain sink deeper until he arrived at an open space. Several of the surrounding chaotic pathways converged together, as the two of them were thrown up and out of the water.

Boom!

They crashed onto the ground. Diane groaned in pain.

They groped around and realized they were on a hard surface. They took a deep breath. The air was damp and very cold. They sighed in relief after realizing that they could breathe.

When they opened their eyes, the light was dim and they could vaguely see the surroundings. They seemed to be in a cave and they were standing on cold and hard limestone. It was wet and slippery. They supported each other and stood up and then shook their dizzy heads.

Diane suddenly exclaimed and pulled Rody to look at something by her side...

They found out that they were standing at the edge of a cave with a huge curtain of water by their side.

The water curtain looked turbulent. When they looked through the water curtain, they could see many large and small whirlpools. However, the water curtain was just right in front of them and did not flow towards them!

It was as if there was an invisible wall stopping the water at the mouth of the cave. Although it was still a world of water outside

the cave, the turbulent waves simply could not flow in.

"What the hell! What is going on?" Rody could not help but mutter. He felt dizzy. He also felt a dull ache all over his chest and his back. All the bumping earlier had left him some serious internal injuries as the force of the collision was unexpectedly strong. Even though his body was reinforced by the blood of the Mystic Dragon, he could hardly endure it.

Diane could not help but reach out her hand to touch the water curtain in front of her. Her hand easily passed through the water curtain. However, when she retracted her hand, the water curtain immediately reconnected without any water flowing in.

"This place is really strange." Diane became terrified and suddenly exclaimed, "We cannot see the sky from here at all. How do we get out of this place?"

Rody had an imposing expression as he said, "Looks like the only way out of here is the underwater path we used to come in here..." Rody seemed unable to continue speaking further.

They had been swept here by the furious waves of the undercurrent. With the furious waves in the pathway, once anyone entered the tunnel, they would not be able to move and could only be swept along following the violent flow of the current. To leave by swimming against the current was simply impossible.

Diane's face showed fear and despair. Rody suddenly smiled and said, "Let us not think about this first. This place looks strange and maybe there is another way out." He stretched out his hand and patted Diane's shoulder as if he was comforting her.

Diane suddenly had the urge to act like a baby as she took advantage of that moment to snuggle up to Rody. She trembled, from either the fear or the cold, as she tightly held onto Rody's other arm with both her hands.

As both of their bodies involuntarily huddled each other, Rody clearly felt a little strange. Diane's red dress was thin and after being soaked in water, it tightly stuck to her body, carving out her exquisite body. As she was snuggling so close to Rody's arms, Rody felt his heart jump wildly. His body stiffened and he did not dare move.

After a long time, he heard Diane whispered, "Just now, when we were in the water, thank you, thank you for saving me."

Rody blushed in the dark but luckily, Diane did not see it as she had her head in his arms. Rody cleared his throat and smiled, "Just now, under that situation, I had no choice. Hmm, it is fine as long as you do not blame me."

Diane's face turned red. However, she courageously whispered, "I... how can I blame you?"

Rody did not dare say anything. He took a deep breath and then gathered his fighting energy.

After that, Rody violently burst out with a golden flame. They were both wrapped in the flame and that golden flame quickly dried their wet clothes. Besides that, the golden flame also lit up the dim environment a little. Diane finally stood up from Rody's arms. Both of them carefully looked around with the help of the golden flame.

The cave had a width of about ten meters. The cave was totally empty. Not a single blade of grass could be found on the stone walls and the cave was deathly still. Deeper inside the cave was a dark hole. Based on the terrain, it looked like it was going all the way down.

Rody said with a forced smile, "Going down again...We are already somewhere deep under the lake. If we go even deeper, I am not sure if we can actually get back out."

Diane felt at peace. The earlier fear in her heart had already been

swept away. She was content just standing beside Rody and snuggling up to his arms. She was not afraid even if she were to die the next moment.

"Let's go." Rody gritted his teeth and pulled Diane by her hand in the dark. Diane could not help but tremble as she involuntarily leaned towards Rody.

Rody's entire body was like a golden torch illuminating the path as they entered the dark hole and moved downwards.

As they walked further in, the passageway became more and more spacious. Rody carefully looked at the surrounding environment and could not help but whisper, "Strange..."

"Hmm?" Diane was at a loss. She was being pulled by Rody and all her focus was on Rody beside her. She actually did not pay any attention to the surrounding environment.

Rody sounded surprised as he said, "Look, this dark hole is obviously a passageway. Look at the surrounding walls. There seem to be traces of chiseling...dug out by people. The cave at the bottom of this lake is man-made!"

After listening to Rody's words, Diane took a careful look at the surrounding. Sure enough, like what Rody said, the dark passageway that they were walking through was obviously a man-made passageway. There were traces of chiseling on the surrounding walls of the dome-shaped passageway. Such a passageway definitely was not formed naturally.

Diane was reminded of the time they spent together in the cave in the Southern mountains. Her heart was suddenly filled with tender feelings. She approached Rody and clung to his arms with both her hands as she whispered, "Do you think this cave is similar to the cave behind the tribe village where Wuya hid when he transformed into the large snake?"

Rody smiled and replied, "There are some similarities. I just hope

that there will be no more of the dozen-headed snake. Right now, we are both exhausted and won't have enough strength to resist."

People easily gave birth to intimate feelings when beside a companion in a strange and dark environment. Rody seemed to not notice that it was strange that Diane kept holding onto his arm. He even placed his arm around her shoulder as they continued to descend.

The passageway gradually widened as they walked. Diane, in a daze, followed Rody moving forward step after step and was totally unprepared when Rody suddenly stopped.

"Look at the wall." Rody's voice sounded weird. "Those meandering scribbles on the wall up there looks like some kind of writing."

Diane looked at the wall with the help of the golden flame. She saw that both sides of the walls were chiseled with some blurred writing.

Looking at the curly writing, Diane had an idea and said, "Let us go nearer to look! This writing looks very familiar."

Rody looked at her in surprise and asked, "Can you understand this writing?"

Rody pulled Diane to the side of the wall. Diane stretched out her hands to gently touch the engravings on the wall. She seemed a little excited.

"What is written on the wall? Can you read it?"

Diane raised her head to look at Rody and she nodded. Her voice was trembling with excitement. "This, this is written in the Kara clan language."

"Kara clan language?" Rody was shocked. He knew that Diane's Silvermoon clan was a real descendant of the Kara clan. God's religion called them the descendants of the "Devil' Kara clan. Rody swallowed his saliva and asked slowly, "So, what is written up

there?"

Diane shook her head and replied, "Just some simple words. For example, this one means the Great Kara would lead us to defeat the evil." She paused for a moment as if she was afraid that Rody could not understand. She then explained, "This is the scriptures of our Kara clan which is the same as your Church's teachings."

They slowed down their pace after finding the texts on the wall. Rody pulled Diane's hand and followed the path as she read the writings along the way.

However, most of those writings were simple parts of the Kara clan's scriptures praising the Kara God and had nothing special.

Rody thought for a moment and suddenly loudly said, "I understand now!" He looked at Diane and said, "This place must have been built thousands of years ago during the time the Kara clan ruled the Radiant continent! The writings on both sides of this passage must have been engraved by the craftsmen of the Kara clan at that time. If I were to follow this path, I am sure I will find the relics of the Kara clan!"

Diane shook her head and replied, "No, not really similar...I do not think this place was constructed by the Kara clan!"

She pointed at the text on the wall and said slowly, "Did you notice? Besides the writings we found, there were also other writings on the wall. However, most of those writings were roughly crossed out. Look at this sentence..." Diane pointed at a wall with a blurred carving. "This should also be part of the carved scriptures, but it seems that half of the carving was intentionally destroyed."

Diane spoke with remorse, "I believe that this place must be constructed during the time when your Protoss clan had just invaded the Kara clan. The workers that excavated this passageway might have been the captured slaves from the Kara clan. As they were tortured, they would turn to the prayers of the

God of Kara. They engraved on the wall of the passage the texts from the scriptures, seeking help from the God of Kara. However, most of the texts were destroyed after they were discovered."

Rody felt startled and sighed. He then said, "That is probably true. Sigh, how much manpower would they need to excavate this large cave under the lake?"

Rody and Diane continued to move forward for a while. Since the place was artificially excavated, then there must be something under there. Suddenly, there was a large and empty space in front and the cave was suddenly brighter. When Diane saw the scene in front, she screamed.

In front of her was a large pit that had been covered up again. However, there were still some hands and some arms poking out from the ground. Looking at the posture, it seemed like they were grasping upwards in pain. It must have happened many years ago and the hands had long become bones and were scattered all over the ground like claws, giving off a scary scene.

Rody sighed and said, "This must be where the slaves were buried alive." He then saw that Diane looked pale and had an agonizing expression. He hurriedly pulled her away.

Diane's body turned soft. Tears rolled down her face as she quietly cried for her ancestors.

They then walked forward to the huge and open area. It was a huge and deep square pit, about one hundred meters wide densely packed with people. Thousands of people sat on the ground in there.

Rody and Diane were shocked and at the same time knew that those people were all dead.

Those dead men were sitting in the same posture. All of them wore metal armors. Those armors looked quite similar to the armors worn by the present-day soldiers, except they were more

crude and simple.

After the passage of time, those bodies had become bones. Some of the skeletons had collapsed and scattered while others remained in their sitting postures. At a glance, thousands of skeletons sat neatly arranged in a phalanx formation. That was somewhat horrifying.

Diane was pale with fright, while Rody had a somber expression. Rody suddenly let go of Diane's hand and jumped into the pit. From the scattered armor on the ground, he picked up a sturdy looking shield. After that, he also selected a sword before going back to Diane.

He stared at Diane and said, "This place is strange. Only God knows what else is down there. We must not be unarmed. We might as well grab a weapon for defense!"

With a shield in one hand and a sword in the other, Rody led Diane forward by going around the pit. After going around the pit, they encountered a big square stone gate.

Rody carefully looked up and down for a while. He found out that the stone gate was very strong and did not have a single gap around it.

After looking at the gate for a long while, Rody still could not figure out how to open it. Feeling impatient, he gathered his fighting energy and slashed at the gate.

Suddenly, there was a loud noise. The stone gate faintly shook and only a superficial scratch appeared on it.

Rody and Diane looked at each other. Based on Rody's strength at that moment, together with the golden fighting energy, he could not only destroy a stone gate, he could even destroy a house. He even destroyed the ironwood gate at Thunder City with one strike. However, he only managed to scratch that stone gate.

"D*mned gate!" Rody grunted. "You, move out a little!"

He then put down the sword in his hand and took a deep breath. He saw that Diane had already retreated a distance away and he slowly stretched out his left hand.

Rody's eyes then flashed a black aura and his golden fighting energy suddenly changed color!

The golden fighting energy suddenly turned into a mass of black flames. The black flames condensed into a black ball of light on the palm of his left hand. The black ball of light gradually became bigger and there were black sparks bursting from the top...

Diane stood at the side with a complicated expression. She had a mixed feeling when she saw Rody use the Mystic Dragon's power.

She faintly heard the roar of a dragon coming from Rody's hand. A light shaped like a dragon sprang out from the ball of black light. It roared as it charged towards the stone gate.

Violent waves of air seemed to roll and all the nearby skeletons of the soldiers were broken by the waves of air. After the loud explosive noise, Rody suddenly shouted, "Not good!"

In a flash, he scuttled out grabbing Diane and rolled away.

Rody had used the Mystic Dragon Purge and forcefully attacked the stone gate. However, at the moment of impact, a strange glimmer suddenly flashed at the surrounding of the stone gate. After that, the rough stone gate had transformed into a glossy square mirror-like thing. On the surface, it faintly flashed a trace of strange brilliant light.

The violent black dragon light collided against the mirror. It shook fiercely for a moment before it bounced back.

The roaring black dragon was bounced back straight in the direction where Rody was standing. Fortunately, Rody responded quickly. He had grabbed and carried Diane, who was standing behind him, and they both rolled down. He then heard an extremely loud earth-shaking sound in his ear...

Chapter 214: Blood of the Sinners

The roar of the Mystic Dragon Purge instantly burst out. Countless waves of black lights seemed to roll and pulverized all the skeletons in the hundred-meter pit. Even the metal armors were torn to pieces. Then, violent shockwaves blasted the surrounding walls, creating a number of deep obtrusive pits. The whole cave shook and dust and gravel fell from the ceiling.

Rody tightly held Diane under him. He then released a mass of golden fighting energy and wrapped both of them inside.

Finally, after some time, the surrounding movements gradually died down. Rody then shook his head to shake off the dust on his head. The original neat square pit was ruined by the rebounding Mystic Dragon Purge and thousands of skeletons had already turned into ashes.

Rody then looked at Diane and saw her pretty face fully covered with dust. Diane did not show any surprise or fear at all as she held on tightly to Rody. She had a tender expression in her eyes that were difficult to describe and was smiling sweetly. She then said, "You better not use that technique anymore. Otherwise, this whole place will collapse before you get this gate open!"

They both stood up from the ground and dusted the debris off their bodies. Rody then said while feeling vexed, "That stone gate is really strange. Even the Mystic Dragon Purge could not blast through it."

Diane laughed and replied, "The Mystic Dragon is not invincible after all. Otherwise, he would not be defeated and sealed."

Diane pulled Rody back to the front of the stone gate. The violent quake earlier had already shaken off some debris from the surrounding walls around the frame of the stone gate. Diane then walked to the side of the wall and stretched out her hand to feel the rocks all over sides of the wall. She suddenly exclaimed, "Look,

there is something up there."

Hearing Diane's voice, Rody immediately went to her side. They then dusted off the debris from the walls.

Gradually, the two of them looked surprised. There were pit marks on the entire wall, forming a huge picture.

A hexagram and a variety of peculiar magic symbols were densely distributed according to a certain kind of strange pattern, forming a complete strange picture.

In the middle of that picture was the stone gate.

Rody took a deep breath and said, "This looks like a sorcery array!"

Diane looked for a long time and frowned. "Unfortunately, both of us are not sorcerers. We cannot understand this." Diane then sighed and said, "Are we really going to be stranded and die here?" After that, she gently leaned onto Rody's shoulders.

Rody's heart stirred when he felt Diane's delicate body snuggle up to him. An inexplicable tender feeling appeared deep in his heart. He then loudly replied, "No! We will definitely get out of here!"

He looked up at the sorcery array on the wall in front of him and laughed, "I wonder if it is possible to get rid of this sorcery array." After that, Rody laughed at his own idea and shook his head, "It should be impossible. How can sorcery array be destroyed so easily?"

Diane smiled sweetly. She then raised her head to look straight at Rody. She bit her lips and asked, "Rody...if we were to die here, would you be afraid?"

Rody froze for a moment and asked softly, "What about you? Would you be afraid?"

Diane shook her head and gave a firm smile. "I am not afraid...I

will not be afraid as long as you are by my side."

Rody was flustered by the way Diane looked at him and he could not help but avert his eyes.

Diane suddenly sighed and said, "Unfortunately, I know that although you are not afraid, you are still anxious to leave here! There are so many people waiting for your return such as Miss Nicole and Myka..." Her voice became softer and softer and finally sounded somewhat sad.

Rody struggled to smile. He gently hugged Diane's shoulders and loudly said, "Don't worry. We will definitely get out!"

Rody looked at the stone gate in front of him again and suddenly said, "Master Autumn told me that in this world, there are always certain rules. This means that if there is a gate here, then there must be a way to open it! There are no gates in this world that cannot be opened! If there are no ways to open this gate, the people who built this place might as well just build a wall. Why did they build a gate instead? As long as there is a gate, there must be a way to open it!"

Diane also showed a smile and replied, "Well, then we might as well try!"

After searching for a while, Rody suddenly cried out in surprise, "There are some texts here!"

Sure enough, there was a line of strange broken texts engraved at the top of the square-ish frame of the stone gate.

Diane looked at it for a moment and frowned, "This is strange. This is not the written language of the Kara clan. It looks more like the written language of the Empire. However, there are also a lot of differences."

Rody looked at it with rapt attention and suddenly laughed, "This is the language of the Empire...However, this is the ancient language of the Empire. After hundreds of years of evolution, the

written language we use now is naturally different from ancient times."

Diane laughed and asked, "Can you understand it?"

Rody nodded. He casually replied as he read the text with rapt attention, "I once studied the ancient language in the Imperial Academy. However, I did not learn it very well and can only understand a little."

He looked at the text for a moment. He then closed his eyes and mumbled out a series of strange words. His voice became softer and softer. He then saw the glossy mirror-like stone gate suddenly shake. Ripples appeared on the glossy surface of the mirror-like gate as if it was the surface of the water. He then heard a series of rumbling sounds of gears turning. After the roar, a large rock pushed out slowly from the wall about five meters from the left of the stone gate.

Then the large rock rolled over. A deep stone trough was revealed in it while a small funnel-shaped hole was seen in the trough.

"What is this?"

The two of them walked over and found a line of text engraved on the rock. The text was also in the ancient language.

Rody took a deep breath and slowly read out. "The blood of the sinners would be sacrificed to the Almighty God!" Rody frowned and asked, "What does this mean?"

Diane suddenly trembled and smiled bitterly, "Blood of the sinners. Don't you understand the meaning of the word 'sinners'? In the eyes of the Protoss, people in our Kara tribe are all sinners!" She then smiled sadly and said, "In other words, to open this gate, this stone trough must be filled with the blood of a Kara tribesman!"

Rody froze for a moment. He suddenly grabbed Diane's hand and shouted, "Don't even think about it! Don't even think of ... Damn!"

This trough is so large. Do you know how much blood is needed to fill it up?"

Diane reluctantly smiled, "Other than me, do you see anybody else here from Kara tribe?"

Rody shook his head and shouted, "Nonsense! Don't even think about it! You would die before you could even fill up that big trough!"

Diane trembled. Her eyes revealed a strange glint. "Do you care about me?"

Rody nodded his head and pulled Diane to his side. He then said, "No matter what, I will not let you do anything stupid!"

Diane sighed and the two of them returned to the front of the stone gate. They then looked at their reflections on the glossy mirror-like stone gate.

Diane stood in front of Rody and leaned back on Rody's arms. She gazed into the mirror and suddenly chuckled. "Rody, have you heard of a story?"

"What story?"

Diane smiled gently. She looked at Rody's reflection in the mirror and murmured, "Mirror, mirror, please tell me, who is the most beautiful woman in this world?"

She had an infatuated expression and an intoxicated smile as she tenderly looked at Rody's reflection in the mirror.

Rody trembled. He could not help but laugh, and replied, "Do you need to ask? Just look at the woman in the mirror and you will know the answer."

Diane smiled gently in the mirror. Although her hair was ruffled and her face was covered with a bit of dust, her beauty shone through. The eyes that looked at Rody were filled with infinite tenderness.

Rody reluctantly smiled and asked, "You have also heard of that story?"

Diane shook her head. She secretly put her hands into her bosom and then pushed something into her hands. Suddenly, she faintly sighed and her eyes gradually turned moist as she murmured again, "Mirror, mirror, please tell me, who is the person I love the most in this world?"

With a sigh, when that phrase "who is the person I love the most in this world" entered Rody's ears, Rody felt his heart severely twist.

Suddenly, Diane, who was standing in front of him, disappeared. Only Rody's reflection was left in the mirror.

Rody was stunned. Suddenly, he realized what happened and he roared loudly, "Diane!"

Rody immediately rushed towards the stone trough, but an invisible wall stopped him about two meters away from the trough.

Fresh blood could be seen flowing down from above the stone trough. The fresh blood flowed down into the funnel.

"Stop! You stop right now!" Rody roared and suddenly punched the invisible wall.

After a loud bang, there was a painful cry. Diane's figure reappeared next to the stone trough. She then opened her mouth and spat out a mouthful of blood.

"Rody, don't punch anymore. This boundary is connected to my body! If you break this boundary, I will die first!" Her face turned pale and she still had blood in her mouth. She smiled at Rody and said, "No matter what, this gate is your only way out...You must definitely leave this place!"

Both of Diane's hands were placed above the stone trough. Her

wrists had been bitten and fresh blood was gurgling into the stone trough.

Rody was terror-stricken. In desperation, he could not help but raise his fist to punch the wall again. However, he pulled back his hand when he remembered Diane's words. He shouted, "You must not do this! You must quickly stop!"

Diane ignored him. Rody shouted again, "We can think of other ways! Other ways! You...sh*t, you will die!"

Diane turned paler as blood continued to flow out of her body. Her forehead also started to sweat. Finally, she could no longer stand and she gradually sat down on the ground.

Rody was sweating buckets as he shouted from beside her. Diane did not say anything. She quietly looked at Rody with a gentle smile.

Finally, Rody suddenly shouted, "Fine! If you want to die here, then we will die together!"

Rody suddenly jumped a few steps away and then black flames burst violently out from his body. At the same time, black masses of energies emerged from both his hands and his hair was pulled and tossed about up by layers of air waves. The blacks of his eyes turned darker and darker. After that, Rody suddenly roared loudly. The voice of his roar was inhuman. It was as if the Mystic Dragon had roared.

Seeing the black colored air masses on both his hands becoming more and more powerful, Diane was alarmed and exclaimed, "Are you crazy? Rody, you are going to make this whole place collapse!"

"I do not care! Let it collapse! If you want to die, we will die together!"

Diane's body flashed fiercely. Suddenly, she turned weak and fell to the ground.

Rody immediately rushed forward. The invisible wall in front of

him had already disappeared. Rody then carried Diane in his hands. He then tore off his clothes and used it to bandage the wounds on both her wrists. After that, Rody angrily scolded, "You are a crazy woman! You..."

When he saw Diane slowly opened her eyes to look at him, Rody could not say another word.

Diane sighed and whispered, "I just want to do something for you. I am willing to die for you!" Tears flowed out of her eyes, and she looked somewhat distressed.

Finally, Rody could no longer endure it. He bent down and lightly kissed her pale face. "I do not want you to die! If you really want to do something for me, then you must keep on living!"

Rody gently held Diane and stood up. He placed one of his hands around her waist. With Diane in his arms, they once again stood in front of the stone gate.

"Sinners, sinners!" Rody suddenly shouted, "The world's most evil are these bastards who think of themselves as Gods! Sooner or later, I will kill all of them one by one!"

Diane smiled weakly. In his embrace, she felt silly when she saw Rody's upright and unafraid expression.

Rody sneered and said, "Killing Gods...hmph. I have almost forgotten. Gods also can be killed! I think I coincidentally have something in my hands that reportedly can kill Gods!"

After putting down Diane, Rody closed his eyes and stretched out his left hand. In the midst of a mass of black energy, a small silver bow and arrow appeared in his hands.

Chapter 215: Staff of Moses

"What is this?" Diane looked at the small silver bow in Rody's hand and asked. Although she did not know what it was, she could feel the invisible and powerful aura coming out of the silver bow.

Rody pulled the string of the silver bow until it nearly formed a circle. Holding the string lightly with his fingers he said, "God Slaying Bow."

Diane turned solemn with a grave expression.

Rody took a deep breath. Both his hands started to release golden fighting energy. He gathered his energy into a ball. The lower hem of his clothes fluttered. He put more effort into his fingers, then he said, "That stone door is nothing more than a mirror spell! It reflected my hellfire, but I don't think it can reflect this pure God's artifact!"

Rody's fighting energy flashed and condensed into a light arrow. The bow then resounded as the light arrow shot out. The smooth mirror was struck by the arrow and started to shatter with a light crackling sound. Slowly, cracks began spreading until the mirror shattered into countless pieces.

Diane cried out in alarm when she saw the stone gate instantly destroyed. The cracks spread throughout the surrounding walls. The sorcery array symbols around the gate also broke apart and fell.

Rody kept away the silver God Slaying Bow. He then pulled Diane and was about to walk forward. Suddenly, they heard a faint thunderous sound coming from the passageways behind the stone gate. This sound gradually grew louder as the cause of the sound approached. Rody and Diane turned pale. Rody suddenly embraced Diane the moment he saw a wall of white qi wave approach. The surging qi wave swept into the entire cave.

Rody's body shook violently. He felt the radiance of the qi wave become more and more violent and he could not open his eyes. The strong qi seemed to penetrate both their bodies. As the qi went through his body he felt his fighting energy going out of control. It was as if a powerful spiritual energy passed through his body from all directions. He was shocked. Then his body swelled up like a balloon. As the spiritual energy grew stronger and stronger, Rody staggered and groaned from the alternating pain and comfort.

Diane felt Rody's body tremble. Although she could not open her eyes in the bright light, she could also feel her body filled up with something. Her whole body felt so full of energy that she needed to open her mouth to say something.

The bright light had disappeared as quickly as it appeared. After a moment, everything turned calm. The strong light shrank into bright dots and vanished.

Rody let go of Diane and gasped for breath. Earlier, he felt his strength rise dramatically as if it was about to explode out of his body. Even his scalp was sweating. He probably would not be able to endure anymore had that light continued to shine for a little while longer.

At that moment, Rody's body was full of energy and he felt dizzy. However, he felt like his every move was so full of energy that he was about to explode.

"This is truly scary!" Rody looked surprised. He raised his hand and looked at it as he gasped. "Did you feel it? Just now..."

Diane nodded and replied, "Yes. I felt it...The strange thing was it felt like my strength has returned."

The two of them looked at the passage behind the stone gate with a puzzled expression. Rody then said, "I wonder what is in there?"

Diane shook her head and replied, "It does not matter. We will just need to go forward."

They looked at each other for a moment. Rody then reached out to Diane's waist. He held her as they walked towards the passage behind the stone gate.

Before entering the stone door, they tried to guess what they would find at the end of the passage. Rody guessed that there might be an ancient tomb or a place where a monster was sealed.

However, when they went through the stone gate, they both found that their guesses were wrong.

They found a small room that was only a few square meters big. They could easily see the entire room. The four walls around the room had no doors and looked evidently sturdy. It was basically a dead end.

In the middle of the room, there was a stone platform that was about one meter long. On top of the stone platform was a wooden staff.

The wooden staff was about as long as an ordinary sword. It was blackish and looked ordinary. It was thicker at the top end and thinner at the bottom end. It did not look any different from the [firewood](#) used by civilians at home. However, Rody felt a strange illusion when looking at it.

It seemed that the wooden staff was softly emitting an aura off and on—just like the fully energized radiance that passed through their bodies earlier.

Diane looked disappointed. They went through so much trouble to swim to the bottom of the lake and somehow ended up in such a dangerous place. At the end of the journey was evidently this very small sealed room. On top of that, the room only had a wooden staff.

Rody frowned. He slowly walked forward and gently rubbed the stone table. A thick layer of dust had gathered on the stone. After wiping away the dust, a line of ancient writings was revealed on

the stone.

Rody only took a glance and his expression changed immediately. His eyes looked astonished. He looked at the text in a daze, his mouth gaping open.

Diane saw Rody's expression and quickly asked, "What's wrong? What is written here? Is it the way out?"

Rody turned to look at Diane with a serious expression. He then said, "I finally understand why the water outside would not pour in. I also finally understand what that radiance that charged out was and what this place is!"

Rody then spoke slowly in a heavy tone, "This wooden staff is the legendary [Staff of Moses](#). Legend says it is the most powerful magic staff. It is one of the most powerful artifacts!"

Diane looked solemn but also seemed to be at a loss. She asked, "Staff of Moses?"

Rody nodded and had a weird expression. He glanced at Diane and said, "Perhaps you do not know about this legend...but basically, the people of Protoss only managed to conquer the Radiant Continent and almost caused the extinction of the Kara clan because they had this staff."

Diane immediately turned pale. Rody then shook his head and whispered, "When I was studying in the Imperial Academy, I read the teachings of the Church, including the legend of the Staff of Moses!"

"During ancient times, the people of Protoss and the people of Kara were divided into two different continents. The people of Protoss occupied the continent in the north which is now called the Roland Continent. Meanwhile, the Radiant Continent was ruled by the people of Kara! The people from both continents were hostile to each other but because of the Thunderous Straits, the powerful people of Protoss were unable to cross over and fight.

However, one day, the Gods had bestowed mankind a heavenly messenger. The messenger was originally just an ordinary farmer. At that time, the people in the Northern Continent did not have a unified country and was also fighting with each other. However, the heavenly messenger was a devout believer when he grew up and was bestowed a staff by God..."

At that moment, Rody looked at the wooden staff in his hand and said, "That staff is this thing!"

After pausing for a moment, Rody continued, "The name of that heavenly messenger was Moses! Perhaps you have heard of this name before. Everybody in this whole world who believes in the Church would know this name! Moses was mankind's first [Pontiff](#). He was also the one and only person who was ever crowned as Pontiff.

"Because Moses obtained this magic staff, he managed to persuade different kingdoms in the Northern Continent to stop the war amongst themselves and to set their sights on Kara's Radiant Continent across the treacherous Thunderous Straits. Moses then used his staff and created a legendary miracle."

At this point, Rody showed a weird expression as if he felt uneasy and said, "At the coast where the waves were roiling the Pontiff raised his staff and walked towards the ocean. Behind him was the Protoss' allied army. According to the records, the instant Moses entered the ocean it seemed an earth-shattering event happened. The calm ocean waves immediately turned into a heavy swell with its waves thrown high into the sky. Then right in front of the Pontiff, the ocean split into two! The water opened up to reveal a wide road...The Pontiff Moses raised his staff high and walked in front while the magnificent army followed behind. The army thus crossed the impassable Thunderous Straits unobstructed. They easily crossed the Kara clan's natural line of defense."

Rody sighed. He glanced at Diane and then said, "You should know what happened next! The people of Protoss advanced south

and conquered the entire Radiant Continent. The Radiant Continent became Protoss' territory. The Pontiff Moses then became the greatest man in the teachings of the Church because of this miracle!"

Diane turned pale. She looked at the wooden staff on the stone table with a complicated expression of hatred and agony.

Rody could not help embracing Diane, who was trembling lightly. He whispered, "The Pontiff Moses was the only Pontiff in history. Although both continents had been united under his leadership, human greed made the continents split up again. This created today's situation."

Diane closed her eyes and softly leaned onto Rody's body. She trembled and said, "This is the thing! This is the thing that destroyed our nation! There are also those skeletons with their hands sticking out of the ground outside."

Rody sighed and patted her back, "That outcome was predetermined. Since Kara had been defeated by the Gods, the people of Kara were already destined to be wiped out. Even if Moses and his staff had not existed, the Gods would still use other ways to help the people of Protoss conquer the Radiant Continent."

Rody watched the trembling Diane calm down. He then shook his head and looked at the Staff of Moses. 'Is this normal looking wooden stick really the legendary Staff of Moses? Could it really be one of the strongest legendary artifacts?'

Rody thought for a moment and then suddenly had an idea.

Staff of Moses, miracles, the ocean water dividing into two, the passageways under the lake...

Rody's face gradually looked excited!

For hundreds of years, the army of the Radiant Continent was invincible on land. The powerful Lightning God's Whip could easily sweep across the land, but the roiling waves of the

Thunderous Straits blocked the way forward. Now that Rody had this staff that could apparently split the ocean into two, nothing would be able to stop the Lightning God's Whip.

The Roland Continent's strong navy would become useless and the Lightning God's Whip could easily cross the Thunderous Straits to subjugate the Roland Continent.

Thinking of that, Rody could not help trembling in excitement. He reached out to grab the wooden staff when another thought flashed through his mind. What would happen then? Countless people would die! Thousands of warriors would spill their blood.

Rody's outstretched hands trembled gently as the two thoughts in his mind conflicted. Finally, Rody took a deep breath, restrained his complicated thoughts and grabbed the Staff of Moses on the stone platform. The wooden staff felt rough and icy cold. Rody then slowly lifted the staff.

As he lifted the wooden staff, he suddenly heard a faint rumble. After that, the small room started to sway.

'Not good!' This thought barely appeared in Rody's mind when there was a sudden change. The stone table holding the wooden staff suddenly sank down. A deep and square-shaped hole then appeared in its place. The bottom of the pit could not be seen but a splashing sound could be heard after the stone platform fell in.

After that, big pieces of rocks on the ceiling started to fall. One large square rock smashed onto the ground. Diane loudly exclaimed, "This place is collapsing!"

The moment she spoke, there was a loud booming sound. A large boulder had fallen at the stone gate and blocked the exit. A few large and small rocks then fell at the same place to tightly seal it off.

The movements at the ceiling became even stronger until they could not stand steadily. As the huge rock right above their heads

started to totter, Rody suddenly shouted, "Jump down! Jump into the pit!"

Before Diane could react, Rody continued, "It is water down there! There must definitely be a way out!"

Disregarding any view Diane might have, Rody grabbed the wooden staff with one hand and Diane with the other and jumped into the pit.

...

The skies outside were bright. Darke was standing anxiously at the shores of the lake. From time to time, he would grasp his beard or scratch his head. Worry and nervousness filled his face.

There were no more movements ever since Rody and Diane entered the lake last night. He would obviously see the rope glow with golden fighting energy indicating Rody's signal to pull Diane up. However, what he pulled up was only a cut-off rope.

Darke was extremely frightened when he saw the broken rope. He would have immediately jumped into the lake if he knew how to swim.

The two Mythical Beasts—the fox-wolf and the owl—started to get restless again. Darke was feeling impatient and when he saw the two Mythical Beasts becoming restless, he blew the whistle and kicked them several times. The two Mythical Beasts then trembled and shrank in fear.

"Know your place!" Darke scolded. "Otherwise, I will roast and eat you!"

Just as soon as he had scolded them, the earth at his feet shook. Darke missed his footing and fell. He then saw a large wave surging at the normally calm lake.

A huge whirlpool formed at the center of the lake. As the swirling of the whirlpool became more intense, it separated from the surface of the lake and flew ten meters above the lake. It then

turned into a waterspout.

The trees around the lake were bent and crushed by the waterspout. Suddenly, the waterspout stopped. The water splashed down everywhere in waves. One wave smashed into Darke near the lake, sending him off-balance. By the time he regained his balance, he was already totally soaked.

Before Darke could exclaim, he saw the water at the center of the lake separate. The lake separated rapidly on both sides and formed a wide space in the middle. The various boulders at the bottom of the lake came into view.

Darke murmured, "What in the world is going on here?"

The moment he said that, two figures appeared on the ground in the middle of the separated lake walking slowly along the path.

Walking at the front, holding a worn-out wooden staff high up, was Rody.

The raws simply said "Wood used for burning" Some might say firewood but firewood is thick and does not look like a staff.

Literally, Moses' God Staff/Cane/Rod. Staff of Moses is also referred to as staff of God or rod of God. I decided to go for staff instead of rod.

The 'Pontiff' here could actually mean Pope or Bishop, mostly applied to high/chief priests. The reason I used Pontiff here instead of Pope is because Moses here is a 教皇, jiaohuang, while the Pope Corsica VI is a 教宗 jiaozong. While both are Popes, Moses was the only 'jiaohuang' that has ever existed.

Chapter 216: Hatred

Darke was stunned when he saw Rody holding Diane's hand. Their hairs and clothes fluttered in the wind as they both walked slowly across the lake. The moment they reached the shore, the air shook and the energy dissipated. The lake reformed and the waves subsided. The turbulent wind also gradually returned to normal.

"You...you guys...What happened?" Darke looked at Rody in surprise.

Rody and Diane were soaked and also covered in mud, but they were smiling happily. This was especially true for Diane, who was smiling sweetly as she tightly held Rody's hand.

Darke looked at the two and realized something. His eyes fell onto their tightly held hands and then he looked at Diane's face. After that, Darke laughed and asked, "What happened down there? How did you create that huge incident?"

Rody laughed then replied, "Let us talk about it when we reach home. We almost lost our lives today!"

Darke looked at the wooden staff in Rody's hand and said somberly, "Did you find this under the lake?" After pondering for a moment, his expression changed and loudly asked, "Isn't this..."

Rody nodded and replied, "Yes! Like what you have guessed, this is the Staff of Moses!"

Darke's expression turned complicated. He thought to himself for a moment and quietly said, "The Staff of Moses is actually here...This is a really complicated matter. Let us leave here quickly! You also better keep that thing away properly. This artifact's reappearance is going to bring troubles from the Church."

After the three of them discussed a little, they left the forest bringing along the two Mythical Beasts.

The sky had turned bright and hundreds of soldiers surrounded

the hunting grounds. They had felt the earthquake but did not immediately rush into the hunting grounds because of Rody's strict order. They anxiously waited outside the hunting grounds and felt relieved when they saw them return.

Rody ordered that the soldiers continue keeping watch here. The hunting grounds had some animal cages which they used to secure the beasts. After preparing the carriages, with a group of cavalymen leading, these three departed for West Hill City.

When they reached a junction not far away from West Hill City, Darke stopped the carriage. He then said to Rody and Diane, "Take the Mythical Beasts back with you first. I have something else I need to do!"

Diane frowned and asked, "What do you need to do? Aren't you coming back with us?"

Darke shook his head and replied, "This is very important!"

Rody looked at Darke and said, "It is very important? Let me accompany you. Maybe I can help."

Darke hesitated for a moment. He then shook his head and whispered, "Not necessary. You two don't need to interfere with this. I will handle it on my own." After that, Darke did not say anything else and jumped off the carriage. He took a horse from a cavalryman. Darke left quickly on his horse after waving to Rody and Diane

Rody and Diane looked at each other after Darke had left. Diane first asked, "What happened to him? Why did he suddenly become so secretive?"

Rody pondered for a moment and then he smiled, "I think this may be related to the vampires."

...

The morning sun shone down as Darke rode quickly to the north of West Hill City. He had an anxious expression and did not stop at

all the entire way. He whipped his horse and hurried to the outskirts of West Hill. Using the army's token that Rody gave him, the guards at the gates did not stop him. He rushed to a large pub near the public square in West Hill City. He then jumped off the horse and went into the pub disregarding the stares from other people.

The pub was a three-story building. Darke quickly rushed in and grabbed hold of a waiter as he asked, "Where is Miss Nedis?"

The waiter apparently knew Darke. Although he was surprised by Darke, he smiled and replied, "Mister Darke, the Miss had just gone out to the winery to the south."

Darke released the waiter and rushed out. He jumped onto his horse and rode quickly towards the south. People nearby looked in surprise as Darke dashed quickly on the road without caring about the people around him.

Nedis' winery was in a village outside West Hill City. It was in a remote location next to the river. The air was thick with the smell of wine throughout the year. When Darke arrived at the winery, he was already soaked in sweat. He saw Nedis' carriage parked at the winery from afar. The surroundings also looked calm and nothing seemed to have happened. Darke felt relieved.

However, he noticed that something was not right as he got nearer to the winery.

It was too quiet.

In the past, the workers would be very busy and it would be very noisy. The waterwheel had also stopped turning. Only the cold wind blew, carrying the twigs along. The water gurgled in the river as it flowed rapidly.

The air was filled with a strange scent. Darke instinctively held the sword in his hand, jumped off his horse and ran into the winery.

"Damn!" Darke took a single glance and cursed.

There were about eight bodies lying down on the floor of the winery. Looking at their clothes, these people were the workers in the winery. Darke did not have the time to look at their wounds. He quickly ran out and looked into the carriage to find that it was empty.

Darke, who was somber, shouted, "Nedis!"

Darke ran around the winery a few times and finally found traces of footprints on the ground. After that, Darke started his pursuit by following the tracks.

The tracks led to the forest behind the winery. As it was late in the autumn, Darke had difficulty following the tracks because of all the fallen leaves on the ground. Fortunately, he was a seasoned hunter. He followed the tracks on the ground, the markings on the trees and also the scent of the blood in the air as he pursued hurriedly.

After tracking for about ten meters, he saw a corpse on the ground. Darke took a look and found that the person was Nedis' coachman. The corpse had a frightening appearance. His face was pale gray and twisted with fear. His neck had some small bite marks too.

"Vampires!" Darke cursed. He dashed ahead.

As he pursued further, the trees became denser and there was barely any space to run. Darke's face was scratched twice by branches, but he ignored it while rushing anxiously. Suddenly, he heard a rustling sound. Darke stood still and turned around to see a branch not far away from him shake.

Darke then thought to himself, 'There is no wind here. How could the branches shake?'

Just as soon as he thought that, he heard another rustling sound coming from the right. Darke immediately held his sword with his

mouth and took out his bow. Darke then grabbed four arrows and nocked them. He then watched the surroundings.

Another rustling sound came from behind him. Darke turned around sneering and immediately shot out four arrows. There were four muffled sounds as Darke took his sword and rushed forward. He saw his arrows stuck into a tree trunk but also noticed traces of blood on one of them.

"Hmph. Looks like it is a vampire!" Darke sneered. He then bit his own finger and pressed a drop of blood onto the blade of his sword. The blood merged with the sword. Darke then chanted a spell. A red light burst from his body and his sword turned into a unnaturally red color.

An odd and cruel laugh broke the silence. This laugh seemed to come from all directions. A voice then said, "To think an exorcist would actually appear! That traitor Nedis actually dared to collaborate with an exorcist!"

Darke then bravely said, "Bloodsucking bat! Come out if you dare! Do vampires only know how to hide and strike from the shadows?"

The voice unexpectedly replied in a soft, gentle and seductive voice, "Hey! This human looks interesting. Are you tensed up because of that slut Nedis? What is she to you?"

Darke turned pale and coldly shouted, "Come out!"

"Aiya! Isn't it easy if you want to see me? You just need to look up..."

Darke looked up to the top of a tree trunk to see a sweet and charming face giving him a strange smile. Her smile also revealed her two sharp fangs.

Darke swung his sword as he quickly retreated. The figure then sprang ahead. Her body descended slowly to the ground as she blocked Darke's escape route.

The vampire was obviously a woman. She was totally naked, her

body suspended in mid-air. She had a seductive expression as she licked her lips. She then laughed and said, "Didn't you say you wanted to see me? I am here now."

She opened up her pair of black wings behind her and gently flapped twice. After that, she slowly advanced towards Dark.

Darke's expression did not change and shouted with bated breath, "Evil spirit". Darke swung his sword down at the vampire.

The woman laughed and raised her hand to block. However, when the sword was nearer, she saw the red light on the sword and turned pale. She retreated a few steps and softly said, "Blood destroying blood! You actually know such a technique."

Darke did not stop and shouted, "It is to end your life!" He took a few steps forward and slashed again.

The female vampire avoided the slash quickly like a ghost. She dodged left and right as Darke slashed and her body drifted away. She did not stop laughing as she continued, "Aiya! Why are you so merciless? I am a woman. Don't humans show mercy to women?"

"Hmph!" Darke snorted and grabbed a few more arrows with his hand. He then nocked and shot the blood-destroying arrows consecutively like lightning.

The series of arrows shot out rapidly towards the female vampire. The female vampire was immediately flustered. Darke was very skilled in archery. The female vampire suddenly screamed as she retreated very far away. Her left arm was struck by an arrow.

The female vampire's seductive look disappeared and looked grim instead. "Bastard. I am only just toying with you, but you have injured me."

The vampire screamed. Her body expanded dramatically and her claws stretched out, revealing ten sharp blade-like fingers. She then shot towards Darke like lightning.

Darke clashed with the vampire. Ping! Ping! Pang! Pang! His sword was blocked by the vampire's claws and could not injure her at all. The vampire's gaze turned murderous. She stretched out one hand to grab Darke's neck. Darke rolled on the spot and slashed at her legs with a backhand swing. The vampire shrieked and jumped.

A wound appeared on her leg. The vampire then screamed in anger and the wound on her leg healed automatically. As she screamed, her body grew larger. Finally, her fur grew very long and her sharp fangs also protruded out. She screamed in a hoarse voice, "Bastard! How dare you hurt my noble body!"

She arched her body and charged, swinging her huge palm. Darke felt like he was hit by a huge force. One side of his body had turned numb as he was thrown flying away. He crashed into a tree before falling to the ground.

The vampire roared and then she approached in large strides.

Suddenly, the vampire roared in pain. She turned around as she swiped with her claw. Darke was lying down on the ground but he saw that the vampire had deep cuts on her back. He then heard a voice in his ear. "Run quickly!"

Darke immediately realized that this voice belonged to Nedis. Although he could not see her, he could feel her helping him up. They then ran deeper into the forest.

"Do you think you can run away?" the vampire roared from behind. She then grabbed a huge stone and threw it. The stone crashed beside Darke, who then heard Nedis' cry of pain. Her body suddenly reappeared and she spat out a mouthful of blood. They both then crashed onto the floor.

Nedis' clothes were a mess and her hair was scattered. She struggled to stand up but then she heard footsteps behind her. The vampire stood towering in front of them and had a hideous grin. "Nedis. You have finally appeared!"

Nedis sighed and coldly hmphed.

Darke suddenly pulled out a bottle from his body. He opened it and threw the bottle at the vampire while rolling away with Nedis.

When the bottle fell onto the vampire, the vampire was soaked in the liquid from the bottle and black smoke immediately started to emerge. The vampire suddenly roared loudly and struggled violently, moving forward to claw at Darke.

Darke felt a burst of pain on his back as he was caught by the vampire. Nedis was holding Darke's hand and could not avoid a powerful kick from the vampire. She was sent flying.

As the vampire's roar subsided, she gasped for breath and asked, "Did you think a single bottle of holy water is enough? Holy water is not enough to kill a higher ranked vampire like me!"

She flung Darke to the ground. His body trembled as some bones broke with a cracking sound.

The vampire took a deep breath. The wounds on her body instantly and automatically healed. After that, her body shrank and her appearance returned to that of a naked beauty. She flapped her wings and then smiled at Nedis, who was still struggling on the ground. "So? Nedis? Still trying to escape?"

Nedis grunted and coldly said, "So what if you have captured me? Ruth, you slut. You are just jealous of me!"

The vampire laughed charmingly then gently replied, "Nedis. You are right! I am indeed jealous of you! I am extremely jealous!" She then stepped one foot on Darke's chest. Her voice became gentler as she spoke, "Do you know? I really hate you a lot! Every day, I think about how I would torture you when you finally fall into my hands."

Even as her voice became softer, she stepped harder on Darke. He struggled to lift her foot, but she put even more weight into it. The great amount of pressure on his chest had caused more bones to

break. Darke could not help but groan in pain.

Ruth licked her lips and laughed, "What are you going to do? Nedis, I believe this human is your friend. He is about to die. Aren't you going to save him? Come! Come and save him!"

Nedis sighed and struggled to stand. Instead of looking at Ruth, she looked at Darke, who was on the ground, and said, "You already caught us anyway. Sigh...Darke, looks like both of us would not be able to survive."

Ruth smiled softly and sweetly. She pointed her index finger at Nedis and provoked her with a [beckoning gesture](#) as she whispered, "Come!"

Feeling helpless, Nedis could only slowly walk forward. However, the moment she was near enough, Ruth swiped at her with her hand. Nedis was hit and was flung away, her face covered in blood showing where the five fingers struck.

Ruth laughed sweetly and said, "Oh, I am sorry. Perhaps I used a little bit more strength...but our vampire's genius Nedis suddenly became so useless?"

Nedis shook her head. She ignored the blood on her face and struggled to stand. She then laughed bitterly and said, "It is not heavy, not heavy at all. Compared to the time I choked your brother to death and murdered your father, it is too light and not heavy in the slightest bit."

Ruth's expression immediately sank as she gritted her teeth. "Slut! You actually dare to speak to me with this tone!" She reached out to grab Nedis but stopped midway. Ruth flashed her sweet smile and said, "Oh, I have almost forgotten. Nedis, you are truly cunning! Are you trying to provoke me so that I would end your life quickly? Do not worry. I will not take your life so early. I had so much trouble locating and catching you. Now that I have finally found and caught you, I must definitely take my time to enjoy it! I promise to make you scream for ten full days! Rest assured..."

Ruth laughed sweetly and her voice became even more gentle. However, the tone of her voice was extremely cold that Nedis could not help shivering. Nedis turned pale and shouted, "Ruth, you slut! What ability do you have? All you can do is rely on Jackal, that old lecher who is on his last legs! I can't even bear to look at the face of that idiot! Only you..."

"Curse more! Keep cursing!" Ruth laughed and replied, "Just from you cursing me, I know that you are afraid of me! I am so happy to finally see our Miss Nedis afraid."

Darke, who was under her feet, groaned from the pain. Nedis' face was pale as she knew that there was no hope left. She sighed and asked, "Mister Darke, why did you come all the way here? Sigh."

Ruth laughed and said, "I really need to thank this human. If he did not come here, you would not have appeared. You are one of the few geniuses who know how to use Blood Escape. Miss Nedis, I am truly jealous of you!"

Ruth suddenly lifted her leg and ruthlessly kicked Darke towards Nedis. She smiled and said, "Alright. Both of you already know how strong I am, right? You might as well take this opportunity to bid farewell to each other."

Ruth smiled proudly and said, "Nedis, you better not try anything funny. Dozens of my subordinates are keeping watch outside. It is impossible for you to run! I deliberately allowed this human to come in to draw you out! You must wait for a taste of my revenge!"

Nedis smiled wryly. She supported Darke up and whispered, "Mister Darke, why are you here?"

Darke shook his head and whispered, "I found out today that there were vampires at West Hill today. After dealing with it, I wanted to inform you about it immediately so that you could escape quickly. I did not think that they would locate you first. Looks like I am too late. I am sorry, Miss Nedis."

Nedis smiled and said, "You do not have to apologize. You have saved my life before this. If you had not saved me in the Northwest that time, I would have died long ago. I should be the one apologizing as it seems like we will die here today."

Darke's face turned solemn when he heard Nedis mention the Northwest. He thought of something for a moment then shook his head and kept quiet.

Ruth looked at them struggling to stand up. She laughed and said, "What's wrong? You have finished bidding farewell so quickly? My subordinates are waiting excitedly outside! This man looks good and his blood must be delicious! My subordinates have not drunk fresh blood in a long time!"

Ruth laughed complacently until her body shook. At this moment, a cold voice came from outside. "Your subordinate? Are you talking about this fellow?"

Ruth's laughter suddenly stopped when she saw a young man slowly come out from the woods.

The man had a slender body and his craggy face was in a sneer. He had long blue hair that hung down loosely behind him. One of his hands was placed behind his back while the other was clutching a vampire's neck. He dragged the vampire in his hand as he walked forward.

He was not walking slowly or hurriedly, but each step seemed to emphasize his grim smile. Those footsteps seemed to ruthlessly trample on Ruth's heart.

The man then slowly lifted the vampire and tightened his grip. Crack! The vampire's neck broke! After that, he casually threw the corpse onto the ground and slowly wiped the blood off on the lower hem of his shirt. The man then raised his head and smiled at Ruth as he said, "I am sorry. I don't think your subordinates would be coming in. This is because, incidentally, I hate vampires. When I see one, I will kill one..."

"Who are you?" Ruth turned pale and looked surprised. She looked at the man fiercely and asked, "What happened to my subordinates?"

The man smiled, exposing his white teeth and lightly said, "Allow me to first introduce myself. My name is Rody, and I hate all of you flying bats."

He ignored Ruth to look at Darke and Nedis. He then smiled and said, "I am sorry I am late. The fellows blocking the way outside were annoying."

He then looked straight at Ruth's body and sneered. "You are also a vampire...That is great!"

Rody smiled cynically as he slowly walked towards Ruth. For some unknown reason, Ruth felt coldness creeping into her heart when she saw Rody slowly approach her. It was as if an inborn fear rose in her heart as she instinctively felt danger approaching.

She could not help but step back. Suddenly, she screamed and transformed into her vampire form. Her body grew much larger. She brandished her claws at Rody and roared at him. However, her legs did not stop moving backward.

Rody then stood there smiling. Suddenly, he frowned and mumbled to himself, "How should I kill you? Using the sword seems too simple." Rody suddenly thought of something and smiled. "Ah! Right! I found an interesting toy today! It is a good time to try it out on a high ranked vampire like you!"

Rody stretched out his hand and a white and holy light appeared. A wooden stick then appeared in his hand. Rody gently lifted the Staff of Moses. Smiling, he said, "Come on. The game begins!"

Nedis gave out a long sigh as she looked at the confrontation between Rody and the vampire. She whispered to herself, "Looks like I was not wrong. He really isn't a simple person." She then smiled at Darke and said, "It seems like we won't be dying today."

Right?"

Darke laughed. He sighed but kept quiet.

There are many different beckoning signs around the world, some even considered as insults to another country. (America beckoning signs are considered insults in Japan.) The one used here is the 'beckoning finger from United States'.

Chapter 217: Special Assignment

Ruth instinctively felt that she was in mortal peril as she watched Rody raise the wooden staff. Despair immediately flashed through her mind.

The vampire roared and, opening up her fingers, she attacked. She used all her strength, her whole body becoming like a fierce wind. Rody just stood there and narrowed his eyes as he looked at the vampire that was charging at him. The Staff of Moses swayed a little. After that, the vampire crashed into something about one meter away from Rody.

All this happened in a flash in front of Nedis and Darke. The staff in Rody's hands gleamed with a strange and faint light. They then heard a miserable shrill scream.

Ruth's body was thrown together with a burst of blood in midair. When she fell to the ground, half of her body was badly injured. Some blood had also splashed onto the tree trunk beside her.

Ruth's body shrank quickly and changed back to its original human appearance. Half of her broken body started to squirm as her injuries quickly healed itself. However, she was in a lot of pain and her cries became even more mournful.

"Hmph. A vampire's body is truly tough." Rody slowly said, "Your body can automatically heal. But now, the faster your injuries heal, the heavier the injuries will become."

Ruth did not have the strength to speak. She kept her mouth tightly closed, but she continued to stare at Rody with eyes filled with fear. She did not even dare to feel angry.

Rody walked in front of her and pointed the staff at her on the ground. A white light came out from the pointed end of the staff. Ruth seemed afraid of the white light and shivered. Rody slowly moved the staff towards the wings behind Ruth's back. Ruth

screamed when her wings withered rapidly and turned into powder.

Rody felt satisfied as he looked at the wingless vampire on the ground. Rody then coldly laughed, "Now you cannot fly anymore."

Ruth's teeth had chattered from fear when she looked at his icy-cold expression in front of her. When her wings were destroyed, her vision turned dark and she lost consciousness.

...

At the Duke of the Tulip Family's courtyard, Nicole and Myka were stunned to see the two Mythical Beasts in the cage in the courtyard.

"Did you guys catch this?" Nicole asked, feeling uneasy, "What about Rody? Where did he go?"

The Mythical Beasts were restless. The Fox-Wolf would bare its fangs and growl softly from time to time. Myka seemed to be afraid of them, so she hid behind Nicole.

Diane laughed as she replied, "Don't worry. Rody went to look for Darke. As for these two things, they are quite well behaved!" Diane then blew the whistle.

Myka breathed a sigh of relief when she saw the two Mythical Beasts instantly lie back down close to the ground. Nicole was still worried and said, "Miss Diane, these are Mythical Beasts! I am afraid it would be troublesome if you keep these Mythical Beasts!"

Diane raised her eyebrows and asked, "How would it be troublesome? These two fellows are so obedient. I will just whistle if they misbehave! Is there anything to be afraid of?"

Nicole shook her head and seemed she was going to say something. However, she was not very familiar with Diane and so she looked towards Myka, who then nodded and said, "Diane, the Mythical Beasts are sensitive issues. I am afraid the Church would give us trouble!"

Diane pursed her lips and wanted to argue with her. However, she saw that Myka was giving her a meaningful look and suddenly realized that Nicole was not an outsider. She must not speak too harshly and offend her. Otherwise, Rody would not be happy.

With this thought in mind, Diane immediately simmered down and earnestly said, "This is something Rody brought back. I believe he might have his own ideas."

Diane and Myka winked at each other. Nicole saw everything. She saw Diane suddenly blush and seemingly afraid to look at her. A strange feeling rose in Nicole's heart. She sighed and said, "Forget about it. Let us talk more about this when he returns."

...

It was truly an eye-opener for the common people in West Hill that day.

Countless people had gathered in the streets in the afternoon. They had all heard the news that the Duke's bodyguards had captured several vampires.

The public security quickly took to the streets to disperse the crowd. Rody took a group of soldiers with him as he led a carriage with great fanfare down the streets of the West Hill City. Ruth was tied to a stake on top of that carriage.

The crowd made a big fuss when they saw Ruth tied to the stake. They really could not believe that such a charming beauty could actually be one of the frightening rumored vampires. Especially, looking at Ruth's naked chest and pale face made it even more difficult for the people to believe it. Could such a delicate woman really be a vampire?

Rody calmly rode his horse. He ignored the pointing gestures of the people. After all, the security soldiers were there to keep things under control.

He had his own reasons for dragging Ruth through the streets

with such fanfare. After he captured Ruth, he immediately rushed to the vampire's lair at the outside of the West Hill City. He wanted to get rid of the legendary Prince Jackal. Unfortunately, when he arrived, the old building was empty and there was nothing there. Only those egg-like things were hanging on the ceiling.

Rody clearly understood what those eggs were and simply burned the entire lair. The security soldiers rushed hurriedly there when they saw the large fire. Rody explained that he was from the Imperial Guards. They then escorted them and Ruth back to the West Hill city.

Rody already had an idea about his next move.

Rody had arrived at the religious center at West Hill. He smiled because the Bishop in West Hill City had already brought out a few Flame Warriors to greet him.

These rascals in white robes were smiling of course. They were informed that the Imperial Guards had captured a vampire. The vampire would be handed over to them according to the practice of the Empire.

Rody left the moment he released Ruth to the religious hypocrites. He did not care whether they intended to burn her to death or send her back to the Imperial Capital to claim merits. Either way, Rody had already secretly done something to make sure Ruth would not be able to say anything. Right now, she was barely alive and Rody did not need to worry that she might reveal anything unnecessarily.

"Let the vampires and the Church handle their own mess!" Rody secretly sneered, "I would be happy no matter who dies."

The news of the captured vampire quietened down after a few days. During those days, Rody was not totally at peace too.

After escaping from the lake, there seemed to be some subtle feelings between him and Diane. While at death's door in the lake

and in the sudden commotion they had shown each other their true feelings but now, they had returned to reality...

For the past few days, Nicole had a dejected expression. She looked at Rody with a hint of bitterness in her eyes. Rody did not know how he should handle this matter. He felt guilty yet he could not stay aloof with Diane.

Rody could only try to avoid meeting them in a group. He had reduced his visits to the Duke's mansion to meet with Nicole. He spent most of his time in the military barracks.

After leaving that day, Darke and Nedis no longer appeared. Rody went to Nedis' pub to look for them, but Darke was recuperating and nobody had seen Nedis.

Diane seemed to visit the Duke's mansion every day. Rody did not go because he was afraid to see the three women together. Rody remembered the misery of being glared at by both Diane and Nicole when he returned that day. The young Rody was ferocious and would not even frown in battle. However, he felt helpless facing the tender and hidden bitterness of women.

In this world, a woman was more troublesome than swords, magic, and vampires!

A few days later, some people from the Imperial Capital arrived.

The Imperial Guard Gordon had personally come to deliver the Emperor's orders. The Emperor, Abbas XI, had given the order for the Viscount, a court warrior and an officer of the Imperial Guards, Rody, to be promoted to Commander of the Imperial Guards for the capture of the vampire. Rody was also ordered to immediately return to the Imperial Capital for an important task.

The responsibility of guarding the Duke of the Tulip Family would be given to General Gordon and his three thousand Imperial Guards.

As Gordon announced the Emperor's orders, he looked at Rody

with a complicated expression. Gordon was suspicious about the young man. Rody seemed to have appeared out of nowhere and rose rapidly after the war. In fact, it was a meteoric rise in his career.

Rody had suddenly received the Emperor's award. He was promoted from the Captain of the Duke's bodyguards to a Viscount and a court warrior. Now, he was once again promoted—a Commander of the Imperial Guards!

To become a Commander of the Imperial Guards was to be the commander of ten thousand Imperial Guards. There were only fifty thousand Imperial Guards, which meant that there were only five Commanders. Apart from Rody, all the other four Commanders came from well-known noble families that had connections with the Royal Family.

'Is...is the rumor true? Is Rody really His Majesty's...'

At this moment, Gordon stopped guessing. Gordon knew from his many years in the circle of power struggles in the Imperial Capital that this was not something he should be making conjectures or get involved with. This was a secret involving power and the more you know, the more dangerous it would be.

Nicole and the others felt unhappy when they found out that Rody needed to return to the Imperial Capital. Although Rody was also unhappy, he believed that leaving would be the best option in the current situation.

At the very least, it would be better than staying in West Hill and getting stuck with three women looking at him uneasily every day.

After publicly handing over the troops to Gordon, Rody was set to leave for the Imperial Capital. Nicole finally could not bear it and clung to Rody in front of everyone as her tears flowed.

Gordon was dumbstruck as he just came from the Imperial Capital. In West Hill City, Rody and Nicole's relationship could be

described as well known. However, Gordon was not aware at all.

The Lightning God's Whip and the Imperial Guards looked at the lovers' tearful farewell and smiled kindly. Rody sighed. He had been avoiding Nicole for the past few days and realized that he had acted too excessively. He could not help hugging her tightly and kissing her forehead. He wanted to say something, but he could not find the right words. After thinking for a long time, he said, "Wait for me."

Leading a group of cavalymen, Rody journeyed to the Imperial Capital.

After leaving the Duke's courtyard, Rody turned back to look at the tallest building. As Rody and Nicole just only made their relationship public, Myka could not appear. However, Rody believed that Myka would be watching him from the upper floor of that tall building.

After waving his hand, Rody gritted his teeth and raised his horse whip. He then rode far into the distance.

The light cavalry riding in haste would naturally be much faster than when he first came to West Hill. Andy had ordered him to return to the Imperial Capital for some reason. However, since Andy had ordered him to 'come back these few days', there must be an urgent matter.

Rody was already accustomed to forced marches during his time in the Lightning God's Whip and his soldiers were also well trained, reaching the Imperial Capital in just five days.

Rody immediately headed for the Imperial Palace with misgivings in his heart. The strange thing was Andy did not meet him in private. Instead, Rody saw the Military Minister, Garoline, standing at the Emperor's meeting hall.

Garoline immediately smiled to him and nodded his head when he saw Rody walk in. Garoline had decided to place all his bets on

Rody. Besides, Baron Gadal's report made Garoline even more convinced that Rody was someone with outstanding future prospects.

Although Rody did not expect to see Garoline, he was not surprised and greeted Garoline with the basic noble's courtesy.

Taking advantage of the time that the Emperor had not arrived, Garoline smiled and asked softly, "Rody, is the scenery at West Hill good?"

Rody immediately replied, "Everything is good. [Thank you for being concerned.](#)" Rody thought for a moment and then added, "[Also, thank you for caring.](#)"

No matter what, he had presented a fine sword to him. As a result, he should say another word of thanks.

The old Marquis gave an amiable laugh and replied, "Rody, I have already heard about the relationship between you and Miss Nicole. If there is anything I can help with, please speak. Hm..." Garoline muttered to himself for a moment and then laughed, "This time, the Emperor has an important task for you. After you complete that task, I can help you propose a marriage alliance between you and the Duke of the Tulip Family."

Rody laughed in his heart. These words were just to win him over. 'The so-called "important task" must be hinting that he was the one who proposed me for the job that would entail a large "contribution" to the empire and hence I better remember that. Proposing the marriage alliance is also an investment. After all, my current position is not high. The title of a Viscount is not sufficient to marry the Duke's sister. However, it would be a different story if this was proposed by the Empire's Military Minister.'

Rody smiled and was thinking of a reply when Andy arrived together with an obese Imperial Guard officer.

Andy's masquerade as the Emperor had improved tremendously:

his face was dignified and cold, and also had a majestic air. Rody then noticed Sky winking at him playfully.

'What tricks are you two old fellows up to now?' Rody could not help but feel his scalp turn numb.

Andy gently coughed and then said, "Viscount Rody, I heard that you have captured a vampire at West Hill! Very good!" The old skeleton acted haughtily like an Emperor. He then looked at Garoline and said, "Marquis Garoline, have you arranged Viscount Rody's appropriate reward?"

Garoline froze for a moment. 'Wasn't he just conferred a position? Getting promoted to a Commander from an officer was already a leap over several grades.'

Although Garoline did not know the Emperor's intentions, since the Emperor had already opened his mouth, Garoline had no choice but to carefully figure out the Emperor's intentions. After pondering for a moment, the old fox inquired, "Viscount Rody now assumes the position of a Commander in the military as his commendation. No other awards were given yet. Your Majesty..."

Andy pretended to sigh. He looked at Garoline and said, "We have already decided to let Rody deal with that business, but his status is not too appropriate. After all, he would be a representative of the Empire. A position like yours would be appropriate. "

Garoline's eyes immediately turned bright and said, "That's right! Your Majesty. As Viscount Rody had contributed greatly by defending the Duke at West Hill and also captured a vampire, I suggest that Your Majesty give an additional reward to Viscount Rody."

Andy blinked. He then laughed and asked, "Oh? Marquis Garoline. What do you propose?"

Garoline could not help but curse in his heart. 'You want to promote your illegitimate child, but you want me open up the way

for you.'

Naturally, Garoline did not dare to reveal any of his thoughts on his face. After pondering for a moment, he said, "Viscount Rody's position in the military is already a Commander. This is already a very high post for his age. Your Majesty. I think we should give Viscount Rody a different kind of reward, like a noble title..."

Andy could not help but sigh in his heart. 'This old fox is really crafty. He is so clever that he only needed a hint. He has already reached near perfection in understanding people's intentions. He is such a clever person. I initially wanted to find a way to get rid of him eventually but now, I am reluctant.'

Pretending to think for a moment, Andy slowly opened his mouth and asked, "Let us do it this way. Let us promote Rody to Palace Chief Warrior. His title will be one grade higher."

Rody was dumbfounded. 'Why am I suddenly promoted? One rank above the Viscount. That is the rank of an Earl.'

'Earl?'

Although he was puzzled, he knew that Andy must have his reasons.

After that, Andy finally said, "Rody, there is a reason I promoted your noble rank. Now, I have an important task. I need you to represent the Empire. Your previous rank of Viscount was not high enough, thus I made an exception to promote you to an Earl."

Rody was silent as waited for the old skeleton to continue.

Although Rody knew that Andy would definitely have something special for him to do, the skeleton's next words almost made him jump.

Andy squinted as he smiled at Rody. He then slowly said, "Earl Rody, I want you to journey to the Roland Continent."

关心 Guan xin. To be concerned.

关爱 Guan ai. To show concern and care for.

Chapter 218: Looking at the Roland Continent!

'Roland Continent?'

Rody's first thought was, 'Does this old skeleton want to launch an invasion when he learned that I found the Staff of Moses?'

However, Rody then rejected this idea. That was impossible!

Without the God's Smile mask, Andy would not be able to monitor his activities. It would be impossible for Andy to find out that he had the Staff of Moses.

Besides that, the Empire had fought against the Roland Continent and also the war at the Northwest within the last two years. We fought two major wars in these two years. These wars had drained the strength of the Empire. The Empire could not afford to provoke another large-scale war.

Although they had won the crusade, the Empire had also paid a heavy price. For the Empire, it was a very heavy drawdown on its resources.

'But what else could it be if not war? What are Andy's intentions?' Rody looked at Andy skeptically as he thought of this.

Andy knew what Rody was thinking but did not speak. Instead, he gave the Marquis, Garoline, a meaningful glance.

Garoline gave Rody a scroll. Rody unrolled it open to look. On the thick, slightly yellowed paper was a long list of text written in the language of the Roland Continent.

On the lower right corner of the paper was the insignia of the Roland Temple. The hexagram insignia was obviously a sorcery stamp and was still dazzling.

"What is this?" Rody frowned. He could not understand the written language of the Roland Continent.

Garoline looked serious and said in a low voice, "A war proclamation. Or rather, it is a public announcement. It is an announcement from the Temple to the whole continent!"

"Public announcement? War proclamation?" Rody thought to himself and then said, "Are they mobilizing for war? The Temple could not accept their previous defeat and is provoking another war?"

Garoline laughed and said, "Rody, it is not what you think. In fact, the general contents of this document describe the incompetence of the various kingdoms on the Roland Continent for losing the war, causing the defeat of the Temple. The Temple then said that the Roland Continent was disunited and did not have a leader, and thus would be unable to defeat the heathens... So..." Garoline then gloomily sneered and slowly said, "So the Temple announced to the world that the Archbishop of the Temple would be crowned Pontiff!" Garoline said the last few words with a strange flash in his eyes.

"Pontiff!" Rody looked somber. "He wants to be a Pontiff?"

Rody looked at Garoline, then looked at Andy. Suddenly, he sneered and asked, "Are these people from the Roland Temple crazy? Pontiff? There was only one Pontiff throughout the history of the Church! That one person was Pontiff Moses! Later on, the Church was split into two. The two factions grew stronger, but they still did not dare to claim to be the 'Emperors' of the religion! Even the people from the Church of our Radiant Continent only dared to elect a Pope although we have conquered the entire continent. Nobody dared to take the title of Pontiff! Is the Elder from the Temple a madman? Moses became a Pontiff those days because of his contribution in conquering the Radiant Continent by splitting the Thunderous Straits. What achievement did this Temple Elder have? He is mad!"

Andy still did not speak and just looked at Garoline, who sighed and said, "Rody, I am afraid that that Elder from the Roland

Temple is not mad! In fact, he has been plotting this for a very long time!" He smiled thoughtfully, looking at Rody.

A sudden realization struck Rody like lightning. "Was this the purpose of the war?"

Garoline nodded. He gathered his sleeves and laughed bitterly before saying, "We have always suspected something as we were unable to understand the reason for the war with the Roland Continent that had just ended. Although the Roland army made a huge move, no matter how we looked at it, they could never win the war. They sent eighty thousand soldiers...Hmph. Even if they sent one hundred and eighty thousand soldiers, it would be impossible to defeat us on land. Why did they start a war when they didn't have any confidence of winning? That is the only thing we couldn't understand."

Garoline then smiled a little and said, "Although the Temple has a strong influence in the Roland Continent, they are just spiritual leaders. The Saints in each Kingdom may be no less influential than the King, but the real power still belongs to the King. However, it seems now the Roland Temple has made a huge move. They are going to transform the entire Roland Continent into a religious empire."

Rody closed his eyes and carefully thought for a while. He then opened his eyes and said, "Hmm. That's right! First, mobilize the soldiers from the dozen Kingdoms in the whole continent. More than half of these soldiers were then dispatched here to start a war. The war would then exhaust the military strength of the dozen Kingdoms! As a result, the power balance between the Roland Temple and the Kingdoms was broken! Although the Temple had also lost some Holy Knights in the war, they were still much better off than the Kingdoms which suffered greatly! Haha! Good! [This is killing your enemy with a borrowed sword!](#)"

Garoline laughed and said, "Earl Rody is right! When the power balance is broken, the Kingdoms in the Roland Continent no

longer have the power to suppress the Temple. The Temple has gained the advantage! Now, the Chief Elder of the Temple wants to be crowned Pontiff...Rody, I believe you know what this means?"

Rody showed a complicated expression. He took a deep breath and replied, "I do!"

According to the history that Rody had learned, the only Pontiff in history, Pontiff Moses, was a leader of the people. He was a real leader. He had power and stood by his words. No one would disobey his orders. Basically, he was a dictator, an emperor!

Now, the Elder of the Roland Temple wanted to be crowned Pontiff. It was clear that his intentions were to unite the various Kingdoms on the Roland Continent and build a large religious empire that could rival the Radiant Empire.

Perhaps it would even be more powerful than the Radiant Empire as power in the Radiant Empire was still shared, with the Emperor and the Pope tying each other down. On the other hand, what the Temple wanted to achieve was an empire where the religious and national powers were integrated. There would be no separation between religious power and national power. The Pontiff would take both the authority of the Emperor and the Pope for himself.

"Truly insane! Insane idea! Insane act!" Rody tone was somewhat bitter.

Garoline shook his head and replied, "I am afraid it is not just insane. When we carefully thought about it, although this plan is insane, it is undeniable that right now is the best timing for them!"

Garoline sounded helpless. "Due to the Thunderous Straits, we cannot take advantage of them even if they have a civil strife. After all, the Roland Navy is still around. They would not give us the opportunity to go over and fight. Besides that, we do not have the strength to attack them after the war! We have also suffered heavy losses to obtain that victory. Earl Rody, you probably do not know this, but the Empire is in deep financial trouble. The war in the

North itself has cost the Empire tens of millions of gold coins. This does not include the expenditure in the Northwest war..."

'Killing your enemy with a borrowed sword.'

'Truly, killing your enemy with a borrowed sword!'

'The so-called crusade was a cover for the Roland Temple using the Radiant Empire to greatly reduce the strength of the Kingdoms and then...'

Rody thought about this and then asked, "So what is the reason for sending me to the Roland Continent?"

Andy then finally spoke. He still had the dignified expression of an Emperor. He said softly, "To negotiate for peace."

Negotiate for peace? Rody furrowed his eyebrows. Garoline smiled and said, "The Roland Continent's King Sauron is a very clever person. The Sauron Kingdom is the most powerful kingdom on the Roland Continent. Naturally, they would be very unwilling to be annexed by the Temple. If the Temple has a falling out with the Kingdoms, there would definitely be a war! However, they had already lost a lot of soldiers in the crusade and are anxious they might not be able to contend with the Temple..."

Rody finally understood and said, "So the Sauron Kingdom asked for peace? Or does the Sauron Kingdom want our soldiers to help them stop the Temple?"

"On the contrary." Garoline smiled and replied, "Did you forget that we have hundreds and thousands of prisoners in our hands?"

Rody's eyes lit up.

The prisoners of war!

During the crusade, the Empire had captured five hundred thousand soldiers. Under the care of General Sieg, they were now slaves in the North. These five hundred thousand soldiers were elite soldiers of the various Kingdoms. This was especially true for

the Royal Knights of the Sauron Kingdom and their powerful chariot troops.

Garoline then continued, "A secret envoy arrived from the Sauron Kingdom. He came to me and asked for permission to see His Majesty so that he could convey King Sauron's intentions. King Sauron had requested that we return the captured prisoners so that they could oppose the Temple."

Rody pondered for a moment and asked, "Should we actually agree to return the captured prisoners? After all, there are no benefits for us in doing this."

Garoline also sighed and said, "Of course nothing good will come out of it. After all, they were captured by the Duke of the Tulip Family and the warriors of the Empire after the loss of a lot of lives and blood. We are unwilling to return the prisoners too...but Rody, I believe the Temple could easily defeat these Kingdoms if we do not return these prisoners. Very soon, they would unify the Roland Continent! At that time, a strong and unified Empire would appear in the north and they would then be an even greater threat to the Empire!"

Rody nodded and smiled. However, his smile made Garoline's heart feel cold. Rody said, "I understand! For the future of the Radiant Empire, the people of the Roland Continent must remain divided. We must not allow them to form a unified empire."

Garoline gathered his sleeves and walked to Andy and bowed. He then softly said, "So, His Majesty wants you to go to the Roland Continent as an envoy to represent the Empire in negotiations."

Now that everything was clear, what remained were the pretense ...

Rody immediately put on a respectful expression. He then gently bowed to the Emperor and said, "Your Majesty, please give the order!"

Andy laughed and said, "Although it is decided that we have a peace negotiation with the Sauron Kingdom, we are still talking about several hundred thousand prisoners. No matter what, the people from the Roland Continent would need to pay a price."

Subsequently, they discussed the conditions of the peace negotiations. Andy did not have to speak much as Garoline came prepared. The old fox was really a master in politics. Although his normal behavior was nothing great, he was truly a capable minister. Right from the start, he had already thought out a complete plan with a long list of conditions.

Rody did not interrupt. He stood on the sidelines as he watched Andy and Garoline—two foxes, one old and one young (as Andy was over two hundred years old, Garoline had to be ‘young’)—schemed to extort the Roland people.

Rody secretly frowned but then he saw that Sky, now an Imperial Guard, was fascinated too as he listened to them with an expression that seemed to say, ‘That's the way’.

Rody could only smile wryly. He knew that these old fellows in the room were born schemers. He did not need to worry or interfere in the discussion about the conditions of the peace negotiations. They would definitely be able to draft the most demanding conditions for peace from the Roland people.

'Haha. I heard that the Sauron Kingdom is quite rich.'

'Roland Continent...Sigh...Roland Continent.'

Rody remembered that night when he was standing on the wall of Thunderous City and saw the magical flame sprouting a blooming tulip flower in the sky. Rody could not help but feel silly.

'Black Veil...Mouse...I am going to the Roland Continent!'

Thinking of this, Rody instinctively touched his chest. The ring she had presented to him was hanging on his chest. He felt the hard and cold metal on his chest, giving him a strange feeling. A

warm feeling that seemed to surge from his heart.

'Mouse, you must also be looking forward to our reunion...'

'Killing your enemy with a borrowed sword' was one of the Thirty-Six Stratagems attributed to Sun Tzu.

Chapter 219: At the Sea

The sea breeze was slightly salty. The gentle breeze blew creating layers and layers of waves in the calm sea, and Rody's hair and clothes fluttered.

It also raised his emotions.

Rody stood on the prow of the ship which was riding the waves. In front of him was the vast ocean.

Without looking back, he could feel the secret envoy from the Sauron Kingdom standing and looking at him from behind.

The envoy was probably more than forty years old. Rody did not like him. Since meeting each other in the Imperial Capital, the envoy had misgivings as he thought that Rody was too young. He thought that the Empire was treating the important peace negotiation as something trifling by dispatching a young man who was only about twenty years old as their main representative. However, Marquis Garoline later told him "His Excellency, Earl Rody, can definitely represent the Empire!" Hence, the envoy did not waste time to curry favor with Rody.

'Hmm, Marquis Garoline said that I could represent the Empire... He probably still thinks of me as the Emperor's illegitimate child. Isn't that right though? The Emperor's only son could definitely represent the Empire.'

There were no army banners on that ship as it was a merchant ship. That merchant ship belonged to Sharp Metal Lane, the largest weapons manufacturer in the Empire.

Rody together with his dozen followers, as well as the envoy from the Roland Continent and his men, were all dressed like retainers of an ordinary businessman.

After all, currently, the Roland Temple and the other kingdoms of the Roland Continent had not yet publicly turned hostile

towards each other. This peace negotiation was also a secret.

Secret? What a joke!

Rody sneered in his heart. He did not believe that there were any secrets in this world. With the influence and power of the Roland Temple in the Roland Continent, they would soon receive news of the peace negotiation. Speaking of that, the peace negotiation might be extremely dangerous. The Temple would not tolerate the peace negotiation between any kingdom of the Roland Continent and the Radiant Empire. For their own objective, they would definitely find ways to sabotage the peace process.

The best way for this would be to assassinate the envoy of the Radiant Empire.

Andy had already discussed that with Rody in the Imperial Palace. It was also one of the reasons why Rody was chosen for the peace negotiation. A person who did not have tremendous strength would not be able to protect himself from the masters of the Temple. So after some thoughts, the strongest person, Sky, would remain behind to protect Andy while Rody would be dispatched instead.

"Your Excellency Rody, the breeze out here is strong. Why don't you go inside the ship and rest?" The Roland envoy asked with a humble smile.

Rody frowned and softly replied, "Didn't I say not to call me 'Your Excellency'?"

"Ah!" The envoy was startled. He then laughed and said, "Yes, Mister Rody, please go in."

'Hmph. Currying favor!' Rody shook his head. He knew that the envoy was probably secretly cursing him.

'Who asked them to be the weaker ones now? Who asked them to come begging for our help?'

With such a person watching him from the side, Rody no longer

had the mood to enjoy the ocean view. The huge sail was raised on the mast of the ship. The sea breeze blew and the sails billowed. The deckhands, in short outfits, were bustling about the deck and hollering. Rody sighed and quietly went into the cabin.

In all fairness, that Roland envoy was very good at currying favors. A remarkable lackey.

Rody truly enjoyed the good food and wine prepared by that envoy. The food and drinks of the Roland people were very different from the Empire's. Rody was interested in the unusual cuisine. The only annoying thing was that the Roland envoy was sitting beside him and constantly asking questions about Rody.

In the beginning, the envoy inquired about Rody's identity and background. What a joke. Even that cunning old guy of the Radiant Empire, Marquis Garoline, did not know Rody's identity. What more a Roland envoy?

When the envoy saw that he was not getting anywhere with his questions, he started to ask about the conditions of the peace negotiations. Rody coldly replied that he would talk about the conditions after meeting the King.

Fortunately, the envoy was an eloquent and learned person. They talked about other matters on the Roland Continent. The envoy was very knowledgeable when they talked about the Roland people's skill in naval warfare and also various legendary myths on the Roland Continent.

Rody could not help asking about the legendary Mythical Beasts, which only existed in the Roland Continent. After all, Rody was currently raising two of them!

Although the envoy did not know why Rody asked that question, when he left Roland, his King and the Senior Prime Minister had instructed him to try his best to fulfill the requirements of the other party. As a result, he doubled his efforts to please Rody and told him everything he knew about the Mythical Beasts.

In fact, Mythical Beasts truly existed on the Roland Continent. Those strange creatures had existed from thousands of years ago until now. However, at present, in the Roland Continent, Mythical Beasts had been decreasing in numbers.

Three hundred years ago, due to the massacre caused by the Mythical Beasts, the Sorcerer's Association on the Roland Continent and the Temple made a joint announcement to the public. They announced that if any of the people of the Roland Continent were to capture or kill any Mythical Beast, they could then take the magical cores from the Mythical Beasts to the Sorcerer's Association to collect their rewards.

Under such a system, a special occupation was created on the Roland Continent: Monster Hunters! A few very powerful masters emerged amongst them!

Apparently, a hundred years ago, there was once a monster hunter who actually reached the standard of a Paladin.

Starting from about a hundred years ago, after more than two hundred years of killing, the number of Mythical Beasts had dropped. Mythical Beasts could no longer be found in most parts of the Roland Continent. A lot of Mythical Beast tracks could still be found in the northern mountains of the Sauron Kingdom and the forests in the north of the Roland Continent. As for the other regions, occasionally there were news of Mythical Beasts' activities but mostly they were just rumors.

The other mysterious legend of the Roland Continent was the legendary Dragon race!

Dragons were very powerful. They had a high degree of intelligence and naturally powerful bodies. They were born with their own Dragons' special magic capabilities.

The Dragons' territory was situated in the cold lands at the extreme north of the Roland Continent.

The temperature there was extremely low. Allegedly, to get there, one had to head north after passing through the northern forest where the Mythical Beasts abound. However, as the Dragon race was terrifying and the Mythical Beast forest was a barrier, nobody dared to venture there. The Dragons also had never stepped out of their own territory.

In the history of the Roland Continent, the monster hunters had a few large-scale operations to kill the Dragons but all failed in the end.

Even the most powerful monster hunter did not dare to provoke the Dragons anymore.

According to the legends, a few exceptionally powerful sorcerers had secret dealings with the Dragons. However, that was just a legend.

When Rody heard that, he smiled.

Just a legend? Rody could not help but look at the scimitar in the cabinet behind him.

On the scimitar was a Dragon's magical incantation. That proved that the legend of someone in the Roland Continent having dealings with the Dragons was true.

Rody carefully asked a few more questions again. After all, he was still very concerned about the legends of the Dragons. That was because the legendary and most powerful dragon, the Mystic Dragon, was in his body.

Unfortunately, that Roland envoy did not know much more about the secrets of the legend. After all, it would be impossible for someone of his standing to be knowledgeable about such secrets.

That envoy noticed that Rody was very interested in such strange things. In order to please him, that envoy told him another legend.

In the middle of the Roland Continent's inland sea, there was a large island. Legendary dwarves live on that island.

Rody looked skeptical and the envoy immediately explained that those dwarves were not legends and that they really existed. Those dwarves also believed in God, so they were recognized as a legal race on the Roland Continent. Dwarves were born shorter than other humans. They had bad temper and love to drink their own brewed malt wine. At the same time, those dwarves were excellent craftsmen and clever in making good weapons...

Rody, who was not very interested in that, could not help but lambast, "There are dragons, mythical beasts, and even dwarves. It seems like the Roland Continent is a place where all sorts of monsters and people gather."

The envoy's face turned stiff and immediately concealed it with a smile.

After thinking for a while, Rody asked about the Temple, especially the Saint who had been dispatched to the Sauron Kingdom, the Black Veil Saint.

In fact, after a whole day of questioning, this was the question that Rody truly wanted to ask. However, he was afraid of raising any suspicion, so he had beat around the bush in the beginning.

Sure enough, that envoy was immediately vigilant and asked, "Mister Rody, why are you asking all this? Right now, our relationship with the Temple is..."

Rody smiled as he understood that the envoy was afraid that he would secretly contact the Temple. The envoy was afraid that the Radiant Empire might secretly plot against the Sauron Kingdom.

"You do not have to worry. I just heard that there is a Black Veil Saint in the Sauron Kingdom and that she is the most powerful amongst the thirteen Saints. Since I am following you to the Sauron Kingdom, I am worried I would meet this person. Naturally, I would want to know more about her."

The Roland envoy felt relieved. He smiled and replied, "It looks

like you are well informed! The Black Veil Saint is indeed the most powerful Saint of the Temple! Although she is a young woman, rumors said that she had already cultivated to a very advanced level! She is as powerful as a Paladin!"

That envoy then showed a strange smile and lowered his voice, "The Black Veil Saint covers her face with a black veil all the time. However, rumors said that she is a stunning beauty!"

That envoy had a bewitched expression and did not notice that Rody's expression had sunk. Rody coldly grunted.

The Roland envoy shuddered a little. He quickly straightened his expression and said, "Normally, the Black Veil Saint does not like to interfere with things, especially now. Sigh. I heard that during her time at the Temple, she was admired by many high ranked knights of the Temple. Finally, the Black Veil Saint accepted the marriage proposal by Paladin Fielding. I heard that she was to marry Paladin Fielding after she completed her training at the Sauron Kingdom. Unfortunately..."

"What happened?"

The envoy smacked his lips and smiled, "Unfortunately, something went wrong. A year ago, the Black Veil Saint suddenly ignored His Excellency, Fielding. Apparently, His Excellency Fielding visited her but was stopped outside the Temple hall. She also publicly threw a magic staff, presented to her by His Excellency Fielding, down a flight of stairs."

"Oh?"

The Roland envoy noticed that the Earl seemed to be very interested in that topic. He then became spirited and told him all that he knew. "That magic staff was a present by His Excellency Fielding to the Black Veil Saint as a token of engagement. Then again, the Saint had agreed to the Paladin's proposal because of the wish of the Temple Elder. That magic staff was also given to His Excellency Fielding by the Elder so that Fielding could present it to

the Black Veil Saint."

"Hmph!" Rody's expression sank and he felt unhappy when he heard that.

The envoy was shocked as he did not know what he said wrong to make the Earl unhappy. He then heard Rody coldly said, "The Elders of the Roland Temple are strange. They even meddle in this kind of matters?"

"Haha, why not? The love between the Saint and the Paladin was a well-talked-about topic at that time! In fact...Haha."

"In fact what?" Rody could not help but ask.

That Roland envoy smiled and said, "In fact, there was more to that. Apparently, after approving the marriage of Fielding and the Saint, Fielding became very grateful to that Elder. He accepted that Elder as his godfather! That Elder is now the Chief of the Elders."

"Oh!" Rody's eyes turned bright. Was there such a thing?

'Hmph, good! He actually used such a trick to gain the favor of a Paladin. It seems like this fellow is not just a religious fanatic. He actually has such a devious mind.'

"What happened after that?" Rody asked with a smile.

"News of what happened after that came out. The Saint not only threw away the magic staff, she also refused to meet His Excellency, Fielding! Such an awe-inspiring Paladin had to stand outside the Temple Hall of the Sauron Kingdom and was not allowed to go in! Haha! It was said that the two ended up fighting. Apparently, the Black Veil Saint won and managed to chase out the Paladin." That envoy laughed, very pleased with himself. "That day, the Saint also told the Paladin that she had never loved him! The Paladin then ran to the Radiant Continent..." At that point, the envoy stopped speaking. He had a weird and awkward expression.

Rody smiled and continued, "After that, he went to the Radiant

continent and was defeated by the Duke of the Tulip Family. Am I right?"

"Yes." The envoy breathed a sigh of relief. As the two parties were now going to have peace negotiations, the mention of that war would be awkward.

Rody thought for a moment and then asked, "Has Paladin Fielding returned to the Temple?"

"I heard that he did. However, he no longer appeared after returning. It seemed like he was engrossed in cultivation."

Rody smiled and replied, "Not bad, he has a sense of shame. He probably wants to cultivate and then look for the Duke of the Tulip Family to take revenge." Rody paused for a moment. He was about to ask how the Black Veil Saint was doing in the Sauron Kingdom when he suddenly heard a loud bang and felt the hull of the ship shake violently.

The food on the table all fell to the floor. That envoy was also unprepared and fell to the floor.

They then heard the sailors outside shouting, "Somebody is firing at us!"

Chapter 220: Inhuman

"What happened?" Rody rushed out of the cabin and grabbed the sailor who was screaming in panic.

"Roland people! Warship of the Roland people!"

Suddenly, there was another loud bang as the other ship fired again. The shot did not hit Rody's ship, but a five to six meters high column of water shot out from the port side of the ship, spraying water everywhere. The hull of the ship also shook violently and the sailor fell down onto the deck.

"Behind us! They are behind us!" The signalman on the observation platform atop the mast shouted. Sure enough, at a distance behind Rody's ship was a Roland warship.

The warship looked bigger than Rody's ship. It was a typical Roland warship with its cannons pointing up from both sides of the warship.

After the two shots, the other party stopped firing. It sailed over at maximum speed.

"What happened?" That Roland envoy scrambled frantically out of the cabin. The sailor then shouted, "They are sending flag signals!"

Before Rody could speak, he heard someone beside him shouted, "What did they say?" The person who shouted was the ship's captain. He was about forty years old and was from the Sharp Metal Lane.

"They said that those two shots were just warning shots. They want us to immediately stop the ship and surrender. Otherwise, they would fire directly at our ship."

Rody loudly asked, "Who are they?"

A sailor from above replied, "I do not know! They are flying a

black flag!"

The captain shouted again, "Tell them that we are merchants from Sharp Metal Lane of the Radiant Empire!"

The sailor on top of the ship signaled with his flags for a while. After that, he loudly said, "They insist that we stop our ship!"

Rody gritted his teeth. He grabbed the Roland envoy who was standing beside him and asked, "Do you know what is going on?"

That Roland envoy turned pale and trembled. "No, I don't know. That is not the ship of the Sauron Kingdom!"

The captain gloomily looked at Rody and softly asked, "Your Excellency Earl, what should we do?"

Rody looked back and asked, "Can we return fire?"

The captain shook his head and replied, "Your Excellency, we are just a merchant ship from the Sharp Metal Lane. We do not have such cannons on our ship and would definitely not be able to win."

Rody frowned as he asked again, "What about escape? Can we escape?"

The captain sighed and said, "It is very difficult! You also know that the ships of Roland people are more advanced than ours. We do not have an advantage in speed." The captain then looked at the Roland envoy and saw panic in his eyes. The captain showed an expression of disdain and said, "Your Excellency, I will have my signalman delay them. During that time, we will try our best to escape as far away as possible! We cannot just wait here for their cannons to fire at us!"

The captain was evidently a veteran for the Sharp Metal Lane's ship. He made a gesture, ordering the signalman at the mast to stall for time. He then shouted to the sailors to get to work quickly.

Everybody on the deck became busy. The strong sailors hauled the ropes and all the sails were raised. The captain then kicked

aside the helmsman and personally took control of the ship's helm.

The sails billowed and the ship gradually accelerated. The Roland people behind them and their signalman had been negotiating. When they realized that Rody's ship was attempting to escape, they started chasing.

There were two loud bangs as the enemy fired again. One of the cannon shells hit the surface of the ocean by the side. The ocean waves pushed the hull of the ship and almost turned it over. The second cannon shell hit the deck of the ship. Two sailors were blasted before they could even scream. Their blood and flesh splattered in every direction. Another two more sailors were injured from the scattering splinters of wood.

The captain cursed as his hands accidentally pushed the helm to the extreme left. The entire ship had swerved and turned violently almost causing a few men to fall into the sea. The whole ship had turned to starboard and charged ahead.

"Turn the sails! You idiots! Turn the sails!" As the captain steered the ship, he shouted, "They are using the cannons on the right. Let's sail to their left!"

Rody grabbed the envoy by his collar and shouted, "Why are the Roland people intercepting our ship?"

"I-I don't know! Perhaps they are pirates..." The Roland envoy shivered.

"Pirates?" Rody grunted coldly. "Are there pirates in your sea?"

Two more shots were fired from the cannons. Rody shouted loudly and kicked the Roland envoy into the cabin. The cannon shells exploded at his side. Flesh and blood flew everywhere on the deck. A big hole was also blown open on the side of the ship.

The Roland people were not prepared when the enemy suddenly changed their direction to charge into them. The enemy had directed the attack on the other side of the ship. It was totally

unexpected. After hastily firing two shots, the enemy soldiers moved to set up the other cannon. After they had refilled the cannon and set the sights, the enemy's ship was already closing in. The next two shots were fired. One of the shots hit Rody's ship, punching a big hole in the stern. One of the cable frames supporting the mast was also damaged by the shot such that the sail crashed immediately.

After losing a sail, the ship slowed down. Fortunately, they were already out of the cannon's effective range of fire.

The commander of the attacking Roland warship was obviously not at the level of the Roland people's navy. Obviously, he lacked experience. When Rody saw that the enemy was at a loss momentarily, an opportunity appeared for Rody.

The captain of the ship and the sailors were shouting loudly. Rody also shouted to his subordinates. "Grab your weapons! Get ready to counterattack!"

At that point in time, the two ships were close to each other. Although their distance on the sea was still about a few ten meters away from each other, both sides would almost brush past each other when they finally get nearer.

Rody's dozen subordinates had long picked up their weapons, waiting at the side of the ship. When the two ships were finally side-by-side, the dozen elite soldiers immediately fired their arrows.

The first volley struck those thinly dressed enemy sailors on the other ship with arrows. After that, the enemy also started to return fire. Separated by twenty meters on the ocean, both sides shot their arrows at each other.

On Rody's side, they had already prepared a few small cannons on their deck. A round of close-range shots managed to hit most of the enemy.

However, the Roland people's ironwood warship was really sturdy. Although most of the shots found their marks it did not cause too much damage. On the other hand, the shots fired by the enemies had already caused a few gaping holes in Rody's ship. The hull had begun to tilt and half the crew had died.

"Damn it!" the captain cursed. He then roared out. "Your Excellency, you..." At that moment, a huge ball of light suddenly appeared on the enemy's ship. The ball of light shot out like lightning. The captain's last words were drowned out by the explosion. The huge waves knocked out the nearby people. The captain was obviously dead and the helm was blown off.

"Sorcerers!" Rody's eyes flashed. Sure enough, he saw about seven to eight black-robed sorcerers. The sorcerers were floating in the air. They raised their staffs and shot out big and small fireballs towards Rody.

"Preposterous!" Rody growled as he grabbed a sword from a soldier's waist and jumped up from the deck. Instantly, a mass of golden fighting energy appeared from his body. He then slashed his hand sideways. An air wave shot out in a circular arc. The wave seemed to cut the whole sky. Those sorcerers in the sky were sliced into two at their waists. Blood splashed out from their bodies.

However, another seven to eight sorcerers rose above the enemy warship. They all looked at Rody and, at the same time, they fired a series of light balls. There was a loud rumbling sound as those big and small light balls all struck Rody. Rody's body was surrounded and protected by a mass of golden fighting energy. Rody used the sword to deflect all the light balls in front of him. Two of the light balls he deflected flew back and struck the enemy warship.

Rody realized something. A normal Roland warship would not have so many sorcerers. According to what he knew, a normal Roland navy would only have up two to three sorcerers on each ship. Only one force could have so many sorcerers and that was the Roland Temple. When his ship changed direction and approached

the enemy, they panicked and reacted slowly. That was enough to show that these were not normal navy ships.

The moment Rody realized that, he leaped towards the enemy ship. He knew that he was at a disadvantage fighting from a distance. The Roland warship was sturdy and normal cannons were ineffective against them. Therefore, a close-range fight would be the best option.

Rody swiftly and severely smashed into the enemy ship. A hole was smashed open on the ironwood hull. After that, he rushed into the ship's hold. Immediately, cries of killings erupted from within. The enemy ship was in chaos.

Then, Rody broke out through the deck, covered in blood. Wherever he went, flesh and blood flew. Whichever Roland people stood in his way would not last two or three strikes from his sword. Within a short moment, he had already rushed up to the main mast and suddenly proceeded to cut down the mast!

There was a clanging sound as Rody's sword was blocked! A black cloaked man blocked Rody's way with a cross-shaped sword. That person looked like a knight. Rody felt anxious and growled. He slashed three times in succession, but the knight was not weak and blocked all three slashes. However, the knight moved back a few steps and spat out a mouthful of blood. Rody's face had a murderous expression and both his face and body were covered with blood. He ignored the enemy in front of him and turned around to cut the mast. However, the moment he swung down his sword, he heard a crisp sound of metal breaking and the sword in his hand had broken into two!

Rody was in a hurry earlier and had simply grabbed an ordinary sword from one of his subordinates. After fighting fiercely and recklessly against the high ranked knight, the sword could no longer withstand Rody's violent fighting energy and strikes. Besides that, the mast was also made of the sturdy ironwood. At long last, the sword finally broke.

Rody secretly cursed, regretting that he did not use the Dragon Fang Sword. After all, he had used that Dragon Fang Sword so much during the war. Rody did not dare to bring that Dragon Fang Sword because he was afraid that he might be recognized. However, it was now too late to get one.

Rody then heard the sound of the air being cleaved behind him. Rody turned around and felt his chest shake when something slammed into him. His chest had been stabbed at with a large sword. In front of him were two silver armored knights. Both of them were very skilled and had cooperated with each other to attack him. One of them had struck him in the chest while the other swung his sword at Rody's neck.

Rody twisted his body. He seized the sword at his chest with one hand and caught the other sword with the other hand.

The two Roland knights were indescribably frightened. They had never seen such a fierce person who used his bare hands to grab their sharp swords before. Within a short moment, Rody had already caught their swords and kicked one of them in the chest. That knight spat out blood as he flew and fell into the sea. Holding the sword blade, Rody swung the sword hilt at the other knight's head. That blow dented his helmet and flattened and deformed his head. The knight died without even groaning.

Rody then saw an old man wearing black robes shouting from the stern of the ship. "Stop him! Stop him!"

A few knights by the old man's side had already rushed towards Rody. Although Rody was not afraid of his enemy, he was entangled by the enemy and was unable to cut down the main mast. Seeing the enemy sailors still loading the cannons with ammunition, Rody rushed forward in quick strides.

Before the surrounding enemy knights had approached, Rody kicked away the two sailors beside him. Noticing that, by then, the light in the burning fuse had almost reached the gunpowder, he

forcefully turned the cannon around. Boom! The knight rushing towards him from the left received the brunt of the explosion and was blasted into pieces. Two more knights who were following from behind were also badly mangled!

Rody started to move faster and killed those in his way as he moved along the side of the warship. In less than a moment, he had destroyed six cannons and killed dozens of sailors. A few high ranked knights chased Rody from behind. Rody suddenly roared loudly. He then lifted a cannon with one hand and forcefully threw the cannon. There was a series of tragic yells as the cannon fell and rolled on the deck like a meteor. All those Roland people that the cannon hit or crashed into had their bones broken. It finally punched a huge hole in the side of the ship!

The Roland people were stunned!

'Is this guy human?' He single-handedly killed the people on the ship. In a single breath, he killed so many sailors. Those high ranked knights not only could not stop him. Instead, some were easily defeated! Lastly, that cannon weighed at least a thousand kilograms, yet that guy was able to throw it with just one hand.

'He is not human! This guy is definitely not human!'

Those Roland sailors finally became frightened and no longer dared to reload the cannons. They scattered in several directions away from Rody. Only the loyal and brave knights continued to charge at Rody.

Since Rody was causing trouble in the enemy ship, there was considerably less pressure in his own ship. Although the captain was dead, the sailors of the Sharp Metal Lane's merchant ship were clearly experienced. The first mate had commanded the crew to fight back, but they could not control the direction of the ship since the helm had been blown off.

Rody cut down another knight beside him when he saw his ship gradually moving away. When he was about to turn around to go

back, he suddenly heard a loud earthshaking sound.

With a groan, the main mast of Rody's ship suddenly came crashing down and injured several sailors below. The huge sails also fell and covered the hull, causing the people under it to scream.

Rody looked some distance away and saw two more Roland warships. They looked as if they were going to surround Rody's ship from a distance.

Black banners also hung on the two Roland warships. Immediately, seven to eight sorcerers per ship flew above their ships and started to cast out a series of light balls.

A soft voice came from the surface of the sea in the distance. That sound was cool and refreshing. It seemed to strongly vibrate in the ears but was incomparably distinct.

"People of the Radiant Empire! We will give you a minute to surrender! Otherwise, we will kill without consideration!"

Rody finally turned pale and asked, "Who is it...that has such strong fighting energy!"

Rody flew up and returned to his ship. He stood on the bow of the ship, took a deep breath, and then he shouted. "Who are you? Are you people from the Roland Temple?"

Rody's voice boomed over the sea as the sound waves rolled the sea waves backward.

The owner of the voice from the other end seemed very surprised. Perhaps he did not expect his enemy to have such a powerful master.

Rody heard a long whistling sound coming from the ship on the left. The whistling sound had a powerful aura and was sky piercing. After that, in the sunlight, he saw a figure fly up from the ship. His body was dazzlingly golden under the sun. He flew over to Rody's ship like a golden lightning and landed on the bow of the

ship.

That man wore a golden armor. He had a delicate and feminine face. His long and golden hair fluttered as he slightly sneered.

The slender and sharp sword he held in his hand was different from the double-edged swords held by normal Roland knights. That silver sword glimmered under the light. He stood at the bow of the ship with a sharp murderous look in his slender eyes. After looking around, his eyes finally rested on Rody.

Rody coldly confronted the man with a sharp expression. He then heard the man said with a haughty and indifferent voice, "I am a Paladin of the Roland Temple, Amore Hughes. Are you the one who spoke earlier?"

Chapter 221: Evil Rody

"Paladin?" Rody was slightly startled.

The man named Amore Hughes took a step forward and jumped from the bow. As he stood on the deck, the sailors and soldiers around Rody aimed their weapons at him. However, he did not even look at them and only stared straight at Rody. He shouted, "Did you not hear my question? Are you the one who spoke earlier?"

Rody lightly wiped the blood from his face. His body was covered in blood and looked like a butcher. He asked, "Did you say you were a Paladin? How come I have never heard of you? Weren't the two Paladins of the Temple, Fielding and Augustine?"

Amore Hughes smiled coldly and lightly flicked his wrist. The long and thin blade faintly vibrated and issued a buzzing sound. He then said with an arrogant tone, "The Pope has given me the title of Paladin less than ten days ago. Naturally, you heathens from the Radiant Continent would not know this!" His tone then gradually turned cold and said, "I will give you two options. First, you and your men lay down your weapons and surrender! Second, I will personally cut off your head!"

"Arrogant!" One of Rody's subordinates cursed and slashed his sword at him. That soldier was a Grade 3 swordsman and an officer of the Imperial Guards. He was standing beside Amore Hughes and when he heard his arrogant tone, he lost his patience and attacked without awaiting Rody's orders.

Amore Hughes showed a trace of disdain in his eyes. "Fool!" he coldly spoke. Those near him did not see his movements, but they heard a tragic cry as the Grade 3 swordsman flew away spitting blood. He severely crashed onto the cabin. There were several cracking sounds. Obviously, a few of his bones were broken.

Rody, who had a stern expression, said, "Everyone, move aside!"

He slowly walked two steps forward and said, "I will handle this." He then gave the subordinate beside him an eye signal. "Go to the cabin and get me my sword."

Amore Hughes, his one hand behind his back, coldly said with an arrogant expression, "Don't worry. I will wait for you!" He then took a deep breath and his voice resonated through the sea. "Without my orders, nobody is allowed to attack!"

Rody frowned slightly. Although he had never heard of this person, it was obvious that he had already reached the level of a Paladin. In fact, he was not inferior to Fielding.

"Are you ready?" Amore Hughes asked when he saw Rody's subordinate hand him a peculiar scimitar. He waved the long sword in his hand and a fierce and sharp force made a deep cut in the sturdy deck below his feet. "Well, can we start now?"

Rody held the [Dragon Spell Scimitar](#) in one hand and tightly clenched his other fist. The murderous gaze in his eyes became more intense and he suddenly roared. He twisted his body and rushed forward with his blade gleaming like a rainbow.

Ping! Ping! Ping! There were loud sounds of metal clashing successively as they struck several times at each other. A mass of golden lights flashed. The scattering waves of energy forced the people around them to retreat while the nearer ones were almost blasted away.

One used a single-edged scimitar while the other used a double-edged sword. Both their weapons glimmered with golden radiance. Sparks flew all over with every collision. There was a violent storm of energy. After that, there was an endless cracking sound as the deck beneath the feet of the two warriors began to split and crack.

Rody went all out. He continuously attacked but was not able to gain any advantage. His opponent effectively blocked his attacks. The deck started to break. He knew that the ship would be destroyed if they continued.

Rody suddenly slashed his sword and shouted, "Come with me!"

Rody swiftly flew to the sky. Amore Hughes uttered a long cry. He pointed his sword towards the sky and followed. Rody had anticipated accurately that his opponent would rush up. While above him, Rody slashed down at Amore. Amore Hughes took the heavy blow. The sword in his hand trembled violently. He felt as if he had just collided against a mountain. In a single breath, Rody's midair attack knocked him straight down. He fell and splashed into the sea.

The soldiers of the Radiant Empire onboard the ship cheered, while the Roland people on the warship beside them clamored.

Bang! A loud explosive sound then came from the surface of the water. Water splashed everywhere as Amore Hughes sprang back up from the water. His body was burning with a flame-like fighting energy that instantly dried his soaked body. A trace of anger flashed in his eyes, but he actually did not advance towards Rody. Instead, he flew higher and seemed to be standing on a cloud.

Rody secretly became vigilant. Without another thought, he slashed out two blades of light. One went left and the other went right over his head towards Amore Hughes above him.

Amore Hughes suddenly opened his mouth and blurted out a series of strange notes. Two golden wings of light immediately appeared on his back.

The strange notes entered Rody's ears, note after note. Mysteriously, it had some kind of strange attraction. Rody suddenly felt confused as if he was extremely familiar with each and every note. However, he just could not understand the meaning of those notes.

Under the sun, Amore Hughes looked as if his entire body was shrouded with a golden light. His extremely delicate face together with the miraculous light wings on his back made him look like a God from a distance!

Rody's two Half Moon Slash were easily countered by Amore with a wave of his hand and the blades of light slashed into the water surface, causing huge sprays of water!

Suddenly, the pair of light wings on Amore Hughes' back flapped twice. He gave a sharp whistle and his body then shot towards Rody like a golden lightning—his sword pointed ahead. The air was filled with an extremely sharp scent.

Rody saw that the figure had almost instantly appeared in front of him. He only had time to swing his scimitar obliquely. However, he suddenly felt a strange power coming out of the scimitar. Rody felt like his body was suddenly struck by lightning. His body fiercely shook a little. At that instant, Rody felt like all his strength had been drained from his body. His strength then burst out. Rody grunted and fell from the sky. Amore Hughes pursued relentlessly. His light wings flapped as he followed Rody down. The sword in his hands did not stop striking Rody. The two figures were entangled in the sky as they fell. The sound of the armor being smashed continued. After that, pieces of the armor also fell. Finally, an evil glint flashed in Amore Hughes' eyes as he struck his left hand on Rody's chest. Rody felt dizzy after the massive onslaught of attacks earlier. Right now, he only felt an icy cold feeling spread out on his chest. Then he suddenly felt as if he was being hammered in his heart. Rody finally could not endure it any longer and spat out blood into Amore Hughes' face before he fell, smashing into the ocean!

Amore Hughes screamed as he wiped off the blood from his face. He flew up again as his pair of light wings flapped a few times in midair. He floated steadily in the sky and seemed to be shrouded in a layer of halo.

"Long live! Long live the Paladin!" The people from Roland Continent cried out, "Long live the Temple! Long live the Paladin!"

Many of them saw Rody fought on top of that warship earlier. Those high ranked knights were like paper in front of that demon

as none of them could withstand the strikes of that demon. However, the Paladin of the Temple had finally defeated the demon!

On the other hand, the people from the Radiant Empire were saddened. An officer shouted with bated breath, "Idiots! What are you guys waiting for? Send two swimmers into the water and bring His Excellency back up! Quickly!"

Two sailors immediately jumped into the water while two other soldiers started to take off their armors.

Amore Hughes, who was still in midair, looked indifferent. But in fact, he did not feel good.

His series of fierce attacks earlier indeed struck his opponent. However, with every hit, his sword also emitted a strange reverse power. That extremely strange power radiated from the arm up his body and made half his body feel numb. It could be said that every time he struck his opponent, Amore Hughes was also injuring himself a little.

That was especially true with the final attack. The moment he struck his palm on his opponent's chest, he felt a subtle force flowing into his palm. That force seemed to penetrate his body like a needle and crazily devoured his own fighting energy.

Although Amore Hughes was still flying in the air, his face had already turned pale, sweating and breathing heavily. He could barely suppress his fighting energy from boiling. Most of all, the hand that was holding the sword was also trembling!

When Rody smashed into the sea, his head was submerged in the cold seawater, but his body started to feel warm!

Amore Hughes' final palm attack on Rody's chest had a penetrating bone-chilling effect. The violent cold power instantly froze the fighting energy in his body. The original growing and endless cycle of power in his body was obstructed. Rody's body

turned stiff and numb as the frozen feeling spread from his chest to all his limbs. The original burning golden flames in his body seemed to die out.

Cold!

This was the only thought in Rody's mind.

Cold!

That was the kind of coldness that could freeze the soul. Rody did not know that at that moment, a layer of ice had quickly formed around his body and began freezing him. That layer of sparkling ice crystal froze his entire body, his limbs, and his scimitar.

Rody drowsily opened his eyes and saw that he was in the sea. The bubbles in the water seemed to seethe as his body slowly sank into the sea.

Everything around him seemed to slow down. Even the sound of the water flowing into his ears was slower than usual.

Rody gradually started to black out as if he was engulfed by a strange power that made him slowly lose all of his perception such as hearing, vision, and touch...

With the last of his consciousness, Rody's mind flashed back to the last scene of the earlier fight.

'That Amore Hughes can actually grow a pair of light wings. On top of that, why did he say those notes...why is it...so familiar?'

'He seemed to say, "#@*\$#@#%".'

'Hmm, what does that mean?'

Rody did not notice that when the strange inexplicable words by Amore Hughes flashed in his mind, the scimitar in his hand suddenly burst out with brilliance. Silently, the ice crystal around him started to crack then shattered into small pieces.

The dragon spell inscribed on the scimitar flashed with a trace of strange light. That light transformed and spread from the blade of

the scimitar along Rody's arm to his upper body, chest...

The unconscious Rody suddenly opened his eyes. However, his eyes looked blank and did not seem to have any perception. Those eyes seemed to burn as if there was an inhumane mien of wrath, hatred, and violence.

A soft cry came from Rody's mouth. It was a prolonged cry with a faint rhythm. With his soft cry, the ice crystal that originally wrapped around Rody's body seemed to break and melt. The tinkling sound of the ice breaking was like a marvelous tune. Rody's face showed a slight smile as if he enjoyed listening to that sound.

Although Rody was under the sea, he did not seem to need to breathe. While under the sea, he suddenly stretched his body a little, raised his hand and looked, and then carefully looked at the scimitar in his hand. He then smiled.

That was definitely a dangerous smile. That was because his smile looked as if he was a bloodthirsty butcher looking at his knife. That was definitely not the kind of smile that Rody would carry.

After that, his smile grew even more amusing as if he was extremely interested in his own body. He carefully looked at his own palm. He lightly clenched his fist and opened it again. He lowered his head to look at his own body and his face showed a satisfied smile.

Finally, Rody moved. It was as if he was gently stretching his lazy waist...

The people on the sea suddenly noticed that something was wrong.

The original calm sea suddenly changed. Suddenly, numerous huge waves appeared within a ten mile radius of the sea. A series of huge waves fiercely hit the ship, and those who could not stand

firmly on the side of the ship fell into the sea.

After that, dozens of water columns shot out from the sea, which looked like water dragons coiling into the sky. A circularly shaped whirlpool then quickly formed in the sea. It only appeared for less than ten seconds, but it had managed to pull several surrounding ships towards it with its tremendous power. Countless sailors cried out in fear. They had no time to control their ships and the ships already started to move on their own.

A few ships in the whirlpool almost collided against one another. All the people on the ships had the same thought. We are doomed!

However, the huge whirlpool disappeared faster than it had appeared.

A figure shrouded in light appeared from the center of the whirlpool and after that flew higher and higher.

Amore Hughes obviously felt the strange aura. That aura had an intangible pressure that made him feel in extremely imminent danger.

Amore Hughes' delicate face had twisted as he fearfully looked at the figure enveloped in the light that appeared from the sea. He could see things differently from the others and could obviously see traces of black air atop the enveloping light.

Feeling an instinctive fear, Amore Hughes could not stop himself from shaking and he gradually moved back.

Suddenly, a loud and clear croon came out from the mouth of the figure within the mass of light.

That sound was neither sharp nor harsh. However, everyone who heard that croon had to cover their ears. When that sound was transmitted into their ears, they felt like their eardrums were being pierced. That sound was akin to a solid object fiercely slamming into their hearts. After that, it was as if there was an invisible hand grabbing their souls into a lump and twisting them.

Countless people started to scream miserably. One after another, they dropped their staffs, their weapons. With great effort, they covered their ears. However, it was to no avail. That sound seemed to penetrate everything and entered their ears as if there were no barriers.

The first unlucky victims were the Roland sorcerers. Their bodies that were full of magic power were like unstable gunpowder warehouses. A little bit of spark was enough to make them explode.

Some of the low ranked sorcerers were unable to suppress their power which had gone out of control. Many of their eyes started to congest with blood. After that, their bodies suddenly bounced up and floated into the air as if they were balloons. They swelled up and grew bigger until...Bang! They exploded into a fog of blood.

Initially, the high ranked sorcerers knew how to chant incantations loudly. They used the Light System's sorcery to stabilize their minds. A milky white light enveloped the bodies of the high ranked sorcerers to protect them. However, something even more strange happened.

Wave after wave of crooning later, the milky white light suddenly condensed together, like water condensing into ice. Countless sorcerers had lifetime dreams of being able to transform into an energy crystal. They somehow did it during this strange situation!

However, that did not seem like a good thing.

The energy light balls crystallized and enveloped their masters, the high ranked sorcerers, inside. Perhaps, we should say "imprisoned" inside. After that, the person and the crystallized energy balls fused together.

‘Rody’ then smiled wickedly. He suddenly snapped his fingers lightly...

As if it was a small hammer lightly hitting a glass. Those sorcerers who were wrapped inside the crystallized energy light balls suddenly shattered. Like glass-men, they shattered into pieces and there was no blood!

In such a strange scene, the more powerful the sorcerer the greater the damage. On the other hand, the ordinary soldiers and sailors only covered their ears and rolled on the deck in pain.

The scimitar was engraved with a spell written in the dragon language.

Chapter 222: Rapid Kill

"Shut...shut up!" When Amore Hughes saw his men on the ship had died, he trembled. However, he gritted his teeth and charged. Amore Hughes flapped his wings and flew high up. Within a short moment, he was already in front of Rody. He thrust the long and slender sword towards Rody's chest.

Rody finally closed his mouth and the huge wave suddenly stopped. However, his body seemed to flicker slightly for a moment and then instantly disappeared!

Amore Hughes' expression changed as he instinctively felt himself in peril. He turned around and sure enough, he saw Rody behind him. A silver blade of light was already in front of him. Amore Hughes cried out in fear as he shot towards the back in retreat!

The two of them fought fiercely in the sky. Both of them actually used [Teleport](#), a high ranked martial skill. The impact of using this martial skill caused waves of energy to smash all around.

The people on the ships, regardless whether they were from the Roland Continent or the Radiant Empire, had stopped screaming. One after another, they stood up on the deck of the ships. They had forgotten their hostility to each other and were stunned as they looked at the two fighters clashing with each other, in the midst of a churning gale wind in the sky.

Bits and pieces of something seemed to fall from the sky. One of the drops fell on the face of a Roland knight. He casually wiped his face only to find something wet, slippery and had a certain smell. When he raised his hand to look, he realized that it was blood.

That knight turned as pale as paper and said, "Where did this demon come from? Could it be that even His Excellency the Paladin is not his match?"

Amore Hughes was now desperate!

Amore Hughes kept on thrusting his sword out frantically. However, none of his blows could accurately strike his opponent. On the other hand, his opponent grinned and easily wounded him swinging his scimitar.

Teleporting was a martial skill that consumed a lot of energy. After more than ten attempts, Amore Hughes was exhausted. He no longer had the energy to teleport anymore. However, the demon he was fighting seemed to have an endless supply of energy.

To a regular person, Rody's teleports were simply a waste of energy. He would suddenly teleport to Amore Hughes' left, and the moment he raised his sword, he would disappear. After that, Rody appeared on Amore Hughes' right. When Amore Hughes reacted by raising the sword to block, a flash appeared in front of him and he felt pain on his back. And then, Rody inexplicably appeared right in front of him!

Rody was just toying with him!

Amore Hughes felt extremely dreadful. Anyone who could teleport—a top rate skill—so expertly yet in such a 'wasteful' manner was definitely much stronger than him. If Rody really wanted to kill him, there was no need for him to put in so much effort.

It was like a cat catching a mouse. Before killing the mouse, the cat would first play around with the mouse until it had enough.

During the first dozen teleports, Amore Hughes had difficulty but he could still contend with his opponent. After that, Amore Hughes could no longer keep up with his opponent's speed. At that moment, he had suffered a dozen more wounds on his chest, his back, and his arms. Blood continued to bleed and his entire body was bloodied. He could feel himself gradually losing his strength and the sword in his hand also felt heavier.

Rody's smile became even more joyful and radiant as he watched his opponent's blood dripp from the body.

When Rody grabbed his neck with his cold but extremely strong hand, Amore Hughes gave up resisting. He loosened his grip and his sword fell from the sky. He closed his eyes and awaited his death.

However, after waiting for a while, he realized that there was no movement. Amore Hughes opened his eyes and saw his opponent closely looking at him with a somewhat puzzled expression.

"You..." Amore Hughes gritted his teeth and had just said a word when he saw his opponent flashed his scimitar in front of him. His opponent then looked at him for a moment and then looked at the scimitar again.

Amore Hughes understood what his opponent meant. He looked at the dragon language on the scimitar. After hesitating for a moment, he slowly read out, "#&^*@\$%."

Rody smiled. That smile seemed genuine and did not have a murderous aura. Rody finally opened his mouth and spoke in a strange accent. With a harsh tone and difficulty, he said these words...

"You, are, a, Dragon!"

Those words made Amore Hughes looked as if he had just been slashed. He stared at Rody, gritted his teeth and asked, "Are you also from the Dragon race?"

Rody looked blank and he seemed to be lost in thought. After that, he smiled and let go of the hand holding Amore Hughes' neck. He then pointed at the ships below and slowly opened up his left hand.

The aura of a Dragon!

The most primitive and purest aura of a Dragon!

Space seemed to twist a little. As Amore Hughes was close to Rody, he felt as if the dozen wounds on his body was squeezed by an external force. He screamed as blood vigorously shot out from all his wounds. At the same time, a black aura solidified in Rody's palm and formed a small black ball of light.

Along with the crackling of the black electrical cocoon, Rody slowly raised his hand until it was above his head. The ball of light in his palm grew bigger as if he was holding it in his palm.

Amore Hughes trembled. He was not a timid man. He was truly a brave Dragon. However, when confronted by the incomparably powerful and pure Dragon aura emitted from the body of his opponent, he felt both respect and a deep fear in his soul.

Finally, Amore Hughes clearly heard a few notes spoken by Rody. Those notes were spoken most accurately in the Dragon language. The moment he heard those words, he felt as if his whole body was fiercely whipped. He looked inconceivably at the person beside him. His vision turned black and he became stiff.

This... This guy actually said the legendary words: 'Mystic Dragon Purge!'

An extremely loud and clear roar of a dragon reverberated through the skies. With a boom, a black dragon shot out from the ball of light in Rody's palm.

The huge meandering body carried black flames and dived down. The huge body of the dragon covered the whole sky as it opened its big mouth and roared towards the sea.

"No, this is impossible!" Amore Hughes seemed to have suddenly become sober and roared, "Impossible!"

He flapped his wings and dived down. He then roared in despair, "Run! Run quickly!"

The Paladin from the Dragon race used the last of his strength to dive underneath the huge black dragon. He raised his hands high

and a huge disc of golden light suddenly appeared in his hands. The disc flashed with the pattern of a gold colored, long-horned dragon head.

The black dragon light struck Amore Hughes' disc of light. Amore Hughes' body shook violently. Immediately, a raging golden flame burned him inside it. It was so dazzling that the sun looked dim in comparison.

He was like a raging golden fireball. He became so bright that people could not look directly at him.

The roar of that huge dragon vibrated and made everybody cover their ears. The sky also shook and the clouds in the sky had long since vanished. It was as if the sky had lost its color and the entire space was shaking endlessly. The figure of the Paladin in the sky was extremely small compared to the black light dragon. However, he ignited his fighting energy with all his vitality, using the dragon race's ultimate defensive technique, 'Dragon God Guardian' to stop the attack of that huge black dragon.

Rody floated in the sky as he looked coldly at everything below him. He clasped his hands behind himself and coldly said, "Why are you doing this? Did you think you can stop this just by burning away your own vitality?"

Amore Hughes was already speechless. He was like a piece of burning firewood. In the golden burning flames, the black demon dragon roared. His disc of light was pushed down bit by bit. Despair flashed in his eyes as his body started to dissipate.

His body turned into powder starting from his feet and slowly disappeared as the wind blew...

After his entire body disappeared, there was nobody else that could stop the roar of the Mystic Dragon. After losing the last line of defense, the black light dragon brought the hellfire down ...

Several ships immediately broke into countless pieces. The waves

immediately surged and vaporized. The countless pieces of debris disappeared completely in the hellfire. The surface of the sea within a five-kilometer radius had become a vacuum. In that circular vacuum, the sea water vaporized and everything else—such as the sea creatures, the stones, the corals, the debris of the ships, the Roland sorcerers, the soldiers and the sailors—all completely disappeared in the undying black flames!

The only thing that remained was the ship of the Radiant Empire. That ship was already shrouded by a mass of black light. The surrounding hell fire seemed to avoid it. The soldiers and the sailors of the Radiant Empire had distorted faces when they saw what happened around them. That had already gone beyond what they knew throughout their life. When they saw their powerful enemies destroyed instantly, they not only did not feel delighted, instead, they had a deep sense of fear.

The hellfire that could burn everything gradually disappeared. When the boundary of the vacuum disappeared, the surrounding seawater rushed in and refilled the empty space. The Empire's ship was thrown about by the waves of water filling up the empty space. The ship shook so violently that everybody on the ship was afraid that the ship would be destroyed. But at that moment, a figure fell heavily onto the deck of the ship.

When Rody's feet stepped onto the deck, all the shaking and vibration stopped. No matter how strong were the surrounding wind and waves crashing against the ship, the ship remained immovable, like a huge boulder amidst the waves.

After nearly an hour, the sea calmed down again. When the waves had subsided, they could see that the surrounding seawater was still blue, the sky was also still blue and the sun was still golden.

It was as if nothing had happened.

Looking at the broken hull of the ship and the demonic

Excellency the Earl standing on the deck, all of them wondered if they were having a nightmare.

Rody stood there but no one dared to say a word or approach him. Finally, after some time, Rody suddenly stepped forward. The black light in his eyes flashed and disappeared. With a clatter, the scimitar in his hand dropped to the ground. Rody seemed to open his mouth to say something, but before he could say anything, he fell to the ground with a loud crash.

In the sea, when the ship lost its mast and its helm, it actually lost its ability to move. The ship just stopped there adrift in the ocean. The sailors and the soldiers looked at one another, not knowing what to do next.

The captain of the ship was already dead. The leader of the soldiers was also already killed by the Paladin and His Excellency the Earl was unconscious. There was nobody on board who could give orders or lead. The only person left, the first mate of the ship, also did not have any ideas. He simply told the sailors to check the ship's condition and see if they could restore the ship's mobility.

The sailors were stunned by the horrible scene earlier and none of them dared to go near Rody. On the other hand, the soldiers, the loyal elites of the Imperial Guards, helped to carry Rody into the cabin. When they entered the cabin, they found that the Roland envoy was actually not in a good condition.

It seemed that the Roland envoy was also a sorcerer and was affected by the sound wave that killed most of the Roland sorcerers earlier. Fortunately, the envoy did not die. However, the envoy had shrunk into a ball and seemed to be delirious.

The condition of His Excellency the Earl also made them helpless. They took off the Earl's armor and wiped the blood off his body only to find that His Excellency obviously did not have any injury. However, he had fallen into a coma.

The soldiers were helpless and a higher ranked warrior ordered

everyone to vigilantly guard the cabin.

His Excellency the Earl remained unconscious for two days and two nights. The first mate along with his sailors checked the ship and were despondent that the ship had completely lost its ability to move. In the absence of tools, the main mast could not be repaired at all. In addition, the helm that had been crushed into pieces also could not be repaired. The ship could only continue to float with the flow of the waves in the sea.

Fortunately, there was an abundance of food and water on the ship. However, without the ability to move, it drifted aimlessly in the sea, making everyone's hearts feel heavier and heavier with every passing day.

Finally, on the third day, when the soldier guarding the cabin was trying to feed Rody, who was still in a coma, some water, the door of the cabin was pushed open.

The first mate rushed in with an excited expression. He could not conceal the excitement in his voice as he shouted, "Has His Excellency woken up?"

Seeing the soldiers shake their heads, the first mate continued, "A fleet of ships has appeared in front of us. They have found us and we are now negotiating!" He paused for a moment and then added, "They are warships from the Sauron Kingdom! Their signalmen informed us that they were ordered to welcome the Empire's envoy!"

The soldiers followed the first mate and rushed out of the cabin. They could see about seven or eight large warships in the distance. Flying high on the ships were the banners of the Sauron Kingdom.

瞬移 Shu yi. Literally, warping or teleportation. As it is a martial skill, some may also recognize it as Instant Transmission. As the word is used, first as a 'skill name' and later as an action, I decided to stick to teleport.

Chapter 223: Muddy and Turbid

The Sauron Kingdom occupied half of the Roland Continent. However, the capital city of the Kingdom was not as big as imagined.

The imperial palace definitely did not deserve to be called 'Brilliant Golden Wall'.

The Sauron Kingdom's reputation as a hundreds-of-years-old ancient kingdom was well known; there were even traces of history in the construction of the main building of the palace.

Beneath the tallest tower that had eighteen floors, was the main part of the palace. At the periphery of the palace were about a dozen statues recording the glorious achievements of great legendary personages in the kingdom. Around the carvings of those personages were also carvings of birds and beasts. Below the carvings were stone tablets packed with details of the brilliant histories of those personages. The stone tablets usually stated on a certain date, a certain monarch conquered a certain land or on a certain date, a certain monarch triumphed over a certain enemy army.

The main hall was spotless and extremely silent. The beautiful murals on the wall were lifelike. There were also sky-like reliefs on the ceilings. Although the floating cloud reliefs were not real, there were peculiar gems mounted on it, making it appear colorful. Unlike a normal palace, there were no guards on strict patrol here.

Like the previous kings before him, King Sauron had the same belief: unseen power was the most effective deterrent.

Having the place heavily guarded would be akin to what a newly rich would do; [a meat bun's filling is not placed on top of the creases](#).

The reigning king of the Sauron Kingdom was only thirty years

old. However, he looked much older and stronger than his actual age. That ambitious king had been working hard for his country every day since he became king five years ago. The greatest potential danger to his monarchical power would undoubtedly be the ubiquitous Roland Temple.

"God's authority is the greatest..." The king sneered, whispering to himself, "Why is God so high and mighty? Since I rule this country, then everything should be carried out according to my will."

The wrinkles at the corner of the King's eyes gradually reduced as he opened his eyes. He turned to look at his most trusted minister, the old aged [Senior Prime Minister](#).

The Senior Prime Minister was his teacher when he was still a crown prince. As the man was the King's teacher, the King trusted him and showed him more respect. Or at the very least, superficially, he was extremely respectful.

Looking at the Senior Prime Minister, the King smiled and said, "Senior Prime Minister, what is the Temple doing? Does our man have any information for us?" The King was a smart ruler. He knew that he needed to use an amiable approach with his most capable assistant, the Senior Prime Minister.

The aged Senior Prime Minister's face was wrinkled like the skin of dried mandarins. The King's court revered that ugly old man but to the King, he was just someone who could be trusted.

"Your Majesty, do not worry. Commander Bia has sent the fleet out to welcome them. Presumably, the Temple will not succeed so easily! We must take advantage of the current situation. The Temple would not dare to publicly turn hostile against us. Even if they want to act, they would do so secretly. We can take advantage of this."

The King casually played with the ring on his finger and slowly said, "Then, what about the Black Veil Saint? What is her position

on these matters?"

The Senior Prime Minister looked wise as he replied, "That woman seldom appears in public ever since she came back from the South. Before the war, she had already lost most of the Temple's trust. As a matter of fact, based on my secret observations, the Temple had long wanted to recall her. However, as she is already known to the public as a Saint and had been dispatched here by the Temple, they are probably waiting for an excuse to arise before acting."

The King laughed and said, "So, should we provide the Temple with an excuse? The Black Veil Saint is very powerful. Do we need to worry about this?"

The aged Senior Prime Minister lowered his head as if he was hiding his gaze and said, "No, I believe a Saint who only appears to be in harmony with the Temple is actually beneficial to us. If the Temple were to send us a completely loyal Saint, then we would have more trouble."

The King nodded, apparently satisfied with the aged Senior Prime Minister's answer. He then asked again, "Then, what is happening in the Temple right now? What is that Elder of the Temple thinking about? They actually appointed five new Paladins within the last ten days! I suspect he is up to some tricks! Are Paladins now worthless? It was so difficult to even find two to three real martial experts throughout the entire continent but suddenly so many of them appeared. Did they grow out from the ground?"

The King sounded a little angry and a little impatient. The more Paladins the Temple had, the greater the strength and the threat of the Temple.

The Senior Prime Minister bowed and whispered, "The Paladins' strength is beyond doubt. I have secretly sent people to investigate. These five people who were given the title Paladin all have

outstanding strength. Their backgrounds are also very clean and nothing strange could be found. However, I feel like their clean backgrounds are very suspicious."

The King's eyes lit up. "Do you mean...all these Paladins come from..."

The Senior Prime Minister kept quiet. He stretched out a single finger and pointed to the north.

The King looked at the Senior Prime Minister's gesture and showed a contemplative expression. "Is it the Franks Kingdom? Although the Franks Kingdom was known as the 'knight's birthplace', they have not produced a single Paladin for more than a hundred years."

The Senior Prime Minister shook his head and continued to point north.

The King frowned, "Is the Teuton Kingdom secretly supporting the Temple? Hmp, the current Paladin Fielding is from the Teuton Kingdom. It is said that the Teuton Kingdom had produced a few outstanding martial experts. However, these people could not become Paladins overnight! Is their power given to them by God?"

The Senior Prime Minister shook his head again. His finger was still pointing towards the north.

The King's expression finally changed as he asked, "Teacher, do you mean...those creatures?"

The Senior Prime Minister nodded and sighed, "This is probably the only logical explanation! Even if it was the Radiant Continent, it would be impossible for so many Sacred Swordsmen to emerge in such a short time. Similarly, it is impossible for so many Paladins to emerge out of thin air on the Roland Continent. The only possibility is that strong race in the north!"

The King sneered and said, "That old scoundrel of the Temple. In order to become a Pontiff, he even dared to collaborate with the

Dragon race. Weren't the Dragon race heathens? Could it be that the Dragons now dared to venture out of their territory?"

The Senior Prime Minister laughed and softly said, "Your Majesty, do you still remember the words I said during the time when I was your teacher?"

The king lowered his head and thought for a moment. He then laughed and said, "I remember!" He closed his eyes and repeated those words, "When something involves the highest interests, even grievances with mortal enemies could be solved. There are no permanent enemies nor permanent friends. Religion is just a deceit under guise. The brighter the place, the darker the hidden corners!" At this juncture, the King opened his eyes and looked at the Senior Prime Minister. He then gently said, "So, that old scoundrel of God, for the sake of achieving his highest interests, took this desperate action. He even went to the extent of tearing off their hypocritical religious masks. Is that right?"

The Senior Prime Minister did not say anything. He just bowed.

The King slowly walked towards the edge of the hall. His palm gently touched the beautiful murals and reliefs on the wall. When his fingers touched the cold reliefs, his movements were gentle as if he was caressing his lover. The King then showed a proud expression. "This is the wealth left behind by my ancestors. I will not give this kingdom away to God's scoundrels!" He then sighed and gave the Senior Prime Minister a glance. The King smiled. "That's enough. You may go back now. Tell me when there is news about the Radiant Empire's envoy."

The Senior Prime Minister gathered his sleeves and bowed.

He slowly stepped back a few steps and then turned around to leave. The moment he left the palace hall, the chilly air on his face startled him and he involuntarily straightened his hunched body. His senile look disappeared and his muddy eyes flashed brightly. "Our King is getting harder to control..."

Suddenly, he felt as if he was being watched. However, when he turned around to look, he found that the corner was empty. Was that uneasy feeling just an illusion?

The Senior Prime Minister once again hunched his back and slowly hobbled away from the palace—it is better to be more careful in this place.

The King seemed to be alone in the hall. Suddenly, he sighed. After that, he smiled and asked, "Master Sith, what do you think?"

A black robe suddenly appeared at an originally empty corner. Under the black robe, a figure was revealed. The figure had an indifferent expression as though he did not have any emotions.

"Your Majesty, how am I supposed to answer this kind of question?" His face gradually emerged from the dark corner, revealing a flat face as if it had been pared off with a knife. He had a cold expression and a cold tone of voice.

If there were other people here at the moment, they would definitely be surprised to see his face. That was because he undoubtedly had one of the most recognizable faces on the Roland Continent. He was the Chief Sorcerer of the Sorcerer's Association. The Grand Sorcerer, Master Sith, was undoubtedly the most famous person on the Roland Continent.

An even more surprising thing was that the Chief Sorcerer of the Sorcerer's Association had appeared at the Sauron Kingdom. This was because the Sorcerer's Association had always been the Temple's most loyal ally.

The King waved his hand and showed a dissatisfied expression. "Master Sith, do you need to show me that cold expression even when I am your ally, now? I also know that the Senior Prime Minister is secretly having dealings with the Temple. However, I am not surprised! It is just like what he taught me! When it involves personal interests, there are no permanent enemies nor permanent friends. For example, he is working together with the

Temple and right now, you are here on my side." The King then showed a profound smile as he looked meaningfully at the greatest sorcerer of the Roland Continent.

Sith's solemn expression flashed with a trace of color as he said, "However, you must also not forget. We are only temporary allies. There are some reservations in all cooperation with the Sauron Kingdom. Do you really trust me so much?"

The King gently smiled and cleverly changed the topic, "Is your information about the Radiant Empire's envoy accurate? Did he really kill the Temple's Paladin on his own?"

Sith shook his head and replied, "To be precise, I do not know very much. I only know that the Temple had dispatched the person I dislike, Amore Hughes, to intercept them. However, none of them returned."

The King laughed happily. He then sighed and said, "Looks like our new ally at the southern continent has given us an extraordinary fellow."

As if he deliberately did not want the King to feel too pleased, Sith's cold eyes flashed with ridicule as he said, "This news is not only known to us. In fact, your Senior Prime Minister should have received this news last night but..."

The King shook his head and said, "However, he did not tell me because this news came from the Temple. He is afraid that I would suspect the source of his information. Master Sith, is this the purpose you are telling me this?"

Sith coldly looked at the King and remained silent.

The King slowly sat down and firmly said, "No matter how the situation changes, I always believe in one truth. Exploit!" His serious expression revealed a bit of pride as he continued, "Any circumstance can be exploited, provided you are clever enough!"

Sith looked at the ordinary person sitting in front of him.

Although he respected the King, from the point of view of a sorcerer, the King was just an ordinary person. He did not have the strength of a knight and he did not have the powerful magic of a sorcerer. Even for now, if Sith were to casually cast a spell, the King would easily die.

However, the King's confidence gave Sith a strange feeling. The Sorcerer's Association and the Sauron Kingdom was cooperating so that we would not be swallowed up by the Temple. However, would we be swallowed up by this King instead if we continue to cooperate?

...

In the dark of the night, at a distance of about one hundred kilometers away from the King Sauron's tall and grey tower, there were about five horses rushing quickly towards the temple hall. As they held the staff of a High Priest of the Temple, the guards did not stop them.

When they directly rushed to a flight of stairs on their horses, they were finally stopped by two of the Temple's padres.

Looking at the big closed door behind the two padres, the five men dismounted from their horses. Black robes tightly wrapped around them and big hoods covered their faces. The man leading them said in a hoarse voice, "We came from the Temple to see Her Excellency!"

The two padres looked at each other and one of them showed an awkward expression as they replied, "Her Excellency is cultivating behind closed doors. I am afraid..."

That leader cried out, "This is the order of the Chief Elder of the Temple. Do you dare to defy it?" He slowly pulled down the hood covering his head and revealed his angry expression. The two padres could clearly see a metal armor gleaming below his neck.

Just when that man was about to say something, he felt a strong

big hand gently pat his shoulder. That man immediately lowered his head and retreated.

A tall figure then came out from behind him. His voice sounded deep and resonant. "Go and report this to Her Excellency. You will not be punished."

Before the two padres could speak, four young knights had already appeared from the corridors on both sides of the hall. Each of them wore silver armor and had a black cloak with the 'Holy Knight' symbol on it.

The young knight taking the lead had a cold expression. He said, "Who dares to disturb Her Excellency's cultivation? Her Excellency has commanded. If there is anything, you can just relay it to me!"

Some of the young knights had already moved their hands to the hilts of their swords at their waists.

Some of them thought to themselves, 'Temple! The Temple again! Did the Temple send people to punish Her Excellency? No matter what, we must not let them harm Her Excellency.'

The tall man with the deep voice sighed. He slowly raised both his hands to pull back his black hood, revealing his squarish face and his beard. The dense beard made him look courageous and resolute. After that, the man untied his belt and took off his robe to reveal a Paladin's golden armor.

The young knight who stopped him was finally so astonished that he called out, "Your Excellency Augustine!"

When faced with the most well-known and oldest Paladin of the Roland Continent, those young people immediately lowered their arrogant heads as if they saw their dream idol. They immediately moved their hands away from their sword hilts.

None of them dared to be rude in front of the Paladin. Besides his position, those young men also respected Augustine's refined personality.

Augustine spoke in a very mild tone, "Well, I came in secret. Do not disclose this. Now, take me to see Her Excellency."

Despite his mild tone, the Paladin could not help revealing an anxious expression.

The four young knights hesitated for a moment and then softly said, "Your Excellency Augustine, Her Excellency had said this before going in there that she would not meet anyone even if it was the Chief Elder."

Augustine frowned and replied, "Too willful! Don't tell me that just because of a little bit of discord, she can disobey the orders of the Temple?"

He suddenly walked two steps forward. The four young knights hesitated, but they still stood in front to stop him. However, they did not dare to touch their swords at their waists. They simply blocked the narrow flight of stairs with their bodies.

Augustine gently raised his eyebrow and whispered, "As the Holy Knights Regiment Commander, I command you to move aside. Do not force me to fight."

The young knights were still hesitant. Augustine suddenly laughed and said, "It seems like you really respect your Excellency. You even dare to defy my orders for her."

Augustine slowly raised his palm and put it on the shoulder of a young knight in front of him. A gentle power transmitted through to the body of the young knight. The body of that young knight went soft and was pushed to one side.

At that moment, the door above the flight of stairs opened quietly and a slender figure wrapped in black robe slowly walked out.

Her long and black satin-like hair fluttered in the night wind. The corners of her black veil also fluttered. Under the night light, her face was beautiful like a goddess. Her eyes were like the stars in

the sky, coldly looking down at the Paladin who was at the bottom of the stairs.

Augustine released his hands, smiled and said, "Mouse! Long time no see!"

The eyes within the black veil revealed some warmth, but her voice remained bland. "Augustine, they sent you here this time. However, I will not compromise even if it is you!"

Augustine sighed and replied, "I already guessed that you would say this. However, this time I am not here to force you to make a decision. I came bringing the latest order of the Temple. This is a joint decision by several Elders and not just His Excellency's intentions. I do not think you would oppose it this time."

The black veil woman closed her eyes and seemed to ponder for a moment. She then lifted her head and looked at Augustine. "Your Excellency Paladin, please come in."

A saying or phrase to tell people seeking the limelight that it is not necessary to display one's abilities.

右相(yòu xiāng). In ancient China, circa 700 BC, there used to be 2 Prime Ministers, 右相(yòu xiāng) and 左相(zuǒ xiāng). The more senior of them is 右相, hence, the translated term is Senior Prime Minister.

Chapter 224: Dragon Warriors

There were no furnishings in the hall. This made it difficult to believe that this was the place the Temple had dispatched the Saint to in the Sauron Kingdom for cultivation.

Augustine followed the Black Veil Saint into the hall. After that, the door behind him was closed and the place became isolated from the eyes of the others outside the hall.

The Black Veil Saint slowly turned to look at Augustine and whispered, "Alright. Augustine, you can now tell me the purpose you came here."

Augustine looked around and laughed, then he said, "Mouse, don't you have a place to sit here?"

The Black Veil Saint looked unconcerned. She pointed at a stone platform and said, "I cultivate there."

Augustine walked over and stroked the cold stone platform. Suddenly, he sighed and said, "Why do you do this? Nobody is blaming you. At the very least, we do not blame you. Even Fielding does not hate you. Why must you torture yourself?"

The Black Veil Saint remained unmoved and replied, "Augustine, you are wrong. I never tortured myself. I lock myself up in here to become stronger. I did not feel apologetic for anyone...Also..." She hesitated a little and then continued, "This includes Fielding."

Augustine frowned and said, "Mouse, you have changed a lot! You did not use to be so cold in the past!"

The Black Veil Saint gave a mocking smile and said, "In the past? Augustine, was the Temple like this last time?" Without waiting for Augustine to speak, she continued, "You are a Paladin of the Temple and a Commander of the Holy Knights. Let me ask you. What is the purpose of the Holy Knights?"

Augustine instinctively stood straight and proudly said, "The

existence of the Holy Knights is to protect the dignity and strength of the Temple! We fight for the Temple! We bleed for the Temple! Those who have the audacity to commit blasphemy against the Temple would first need to walk over the dead bodies of the Holy Knights!"

His deep voice echoed throughout the hall, filled with heroic pride. His eyes were also unusually steadfast.

The Black Veil Saint shook her head. Her mocking smile grew wider. "Augustine, you are talking about the past! What about now?" She slowly approached Augustine and softly said, "Why did the Temple want to wantonly expand the Holy Knights? Why must there be a dispatch of Holy Knights in every kingdom? Why did the Temple start a war that was as good as courting death? Why did they send eighty thousand loyal believers to the southern continent? Why is that Elder suddenly interested in the position of Pontiff at this moment? Why did all the kingdoms that were initially respectful to the Temple now become ferocious like tigers the moment the Temple is mentioned? Why did the Temple impose three additional taxes? Was the money earned by the devout believers from selling their last grain of rice being used to buy that sharp sword in your hands and that armor on your body?"

She did not speak impatiently or slowly. Each word was spoken unhurriedly and made Augustine speechless.

It was true. Augustine could not answer a single question asked by the Black Veil Saint. Perhaps Augustine also had doubts. However, he was trained to be a loyal Holy Knight of the Temple since childhood. As a result, he instinctively forced himself not to doubt the Temple that he had faith in.

The Black Veil Saint looked at Augustine's expression and asked a final string of questions, "Also, how did five Paladins suddenly emerged in the Holy Knights? Is it really a miracle like what His Excellency had said? Did God really grant us powerful champions for the faithfuls of the Temple? Augustine, how much hard work

does a person need to cultivate into a Paladin?"

Augustine was silent for a long time and finally gave a long sigh. He looked at the Black Veil Saint with a complicated expression and said, "Mouse, you have really changed. You have become very indifferent. The Temple may have some irregularities right now. However, we have cultivated together in the Temple together during all those years. Your brothers and sisters are all fighting for the cause of the Temple. Are you just going to stay at the side and watch?" He shook his head and continued, "The Gray Robed Saint is dead and the God Slaying Bow is also lost. Fielding was defeated and you...He does not seem like he would recover from this setback. He is no longer that brave and stalwart knight from those years! Right now, all the kingdoms are making preparations for war against the Temple. Can you still pretend and ignore this? The Temple has granted you the highest honor and extraordinary power. Can you abandon your faith in the Temple?"

The Black Veil Saint shouted in a stern voice, "Enough!" Anger appeared in her eyes as she said, "I have never betrayed my faith!" She then looked straight into Augustine's eyes and coldly said, "What you said is correct. All the kingdoms are making war preparations. Their war against the Temple is inevitable! However, is this the will of God? Sounds more like the will of that Elder! God loves the people. God would not desire war amongst his devout people. If this war cannot be avoided, it is because it was forced onto the people of the Roland Continent by that Elder! Paladin Augustine! Let me ask you!" Her gaze became sharper and colder as she said, "As a proud Paladin, can you call dealing with the pious people of the Roland as 'defending the dignity of the Temple'?"

Her indifferent voice echoed, "The one betraying one's faith is not me but the Temple! If you continue to follow His Excellency's leadership, the Temple would gradually abandon their faith!"

"Audacious!" Augustine flew into a rage and shouted. He

involuntarily held the hilt of his sword and a fierce aura emerged from his body. His gaze was like lightning as he glared at the Black Veil Saint. The Black Veil Saint did not look away. Instead, she looked at the angry golden armored Paladin in front of her. Her eyes were filled with ridicule.

Both of them glared at each other for a long time. After that, Augustine gave a long sigh and loosened his grip on his sword. He lowered his head and softly asked, "Mouse, what do you want? Do you want to publicly rebel against the Temple? Even if you are the Black Veil Saint, you will meet a bad end for rebelling against the Temple. You yourself know this!" Augustine had a hesitant expression, but he softly whispered, "Before I came here, the Elders were discussing you. Some of them could no longer put up with your current attitude. Some of them want to immediately recall you and imprison you. There are also some who want to strip the title of Saint from you and then execute you!"

The Black Veil Saint shook, feeling startled. However, she did not show any fear and coldly asked, "Is that so? The one that proposed to have me executed. Is it the Chief Elder?"

Augustine shook his head and replied, "No! On the contrary, he was the one who persisted in defending you! Mouse..." His tone grew soft and said, "No matter what, you are the Temple's Black Veil Saint! You are a genius that appeared in the Temple after hundreds of years. You are also the only one amongst the twelve Saints who could obtain a Master level! No matter what, the Temple currently needs your support! Did you not think about it? It would be a huge blow to the Temple's prestige if a Saint of the Temple rebels."

At this point, he hesitated and gritted his teeth, "Mouse, if you are willing to come back and fight together with us, in the future... I, Augustine, swear upon my knight's dignity that I would always stand by your side. Even if you take up position as an Elder, a Chief Elder, or even a Pontiff, I will still support you!"

A flash of disappointment crossed her eyes. The Black Veil Saint waited for Augustine to finish and then she whispered, "Are you done? Augustine, you really disappoint me." Her beautiful eyes were filled with tears. "Do you truly believe in your heart that I, Mouse, am someone who is greedy for power and influence? Do you also believe that I am rebelling against the Temple to fight for opportunities for a higher position and power?"

Augustine was shocked by the tears in her eyes and whispered, "So...sorry."

The Black Veil Saint took a deep breath and said, "I have already thought enough. I will not rebel against the Temple. If that does not work out, I will quietly leave."

"Leave?" Augustine anxiously asked, "Where will you go? As long as you are in the Roland Continent, you cannot escape the Temple! Are you..." His sturdy body trembled. "Do you intend to go to the Radiant Continent? Are you going to look for the Duke of the Tulip Family?"

There was a warm smile in the eyes of the Black Veil Saint. Her gaze seemed to drift away as she muttered, "I do not know. Maybe I will, maybe I won't. I just hope he is doing well there."

Augustine's expression became even more unsightly as he said, "So, Fielding's words were true? You fell in love with a heathen? You fell in love with a demonic and blasphemous butcher whose hands are stained with the blood of the Roland people?"

"He is not a demon! He is also not a butcher!" The Black Veil Saint shouted. Her eyes turned ice cold again as she said, "If there is anybody in this world that could understand me, it is that person!"

Augustine took a step back. His voice turned hoarse and he had a helpless expression. "Mouse, you are crazy!"

"I am not crazy!" The Black Veil Saint shook her head. "The one who is crazy is that Elder, the Temple, and also you, Augustine!"

You are all daydreaming! You are all dreaming of the Temple conquering the world like hundreds of years ago! All of you thought of going back to the age where the continent is ruled by the dictatorship of one Pontiff!"

Augustine clenched his fists and lowered his head. When he raised his head again, his expression had turned cold and devoid of any expression.

"Your Excellency Mouse!" His voice sounded indifferent, "I, Augustine, Paladin of the Temple, received orders from the Elders Council of the Temple! King Sauron of the Sauron Kingdom is secretly plotting with the heathens of the Radiant Continent. I am ordered to kill the envoy of the Radiant Continent. As the Saint of the Sauron Kingdom, Your Excellency Mouse, I order you to help me!"

He gave the Black Veil Saint a profound look and said in a low voice, "Before coming here, I have received news that the Paladin Amore Hughes that had been ordered to intercept them has failed! Twenty-four sorcerers, three warships, five hundred and sixty well-known sailors and one hundred knights were dispatched with Amore Hughes. Not a single one of them returned!"

He looked at the Black Veil Saint's indifferent expression. Augustine took a deep breath. He said in a cold tone, "The Chief Elder had also given me another secret order! Your Excellency Mouse! If you continue to defy us, I am ordered to execute you on the spot! His Excellency means that if you are willing to cooperate with the Temple one last time, he would allow you to 'leave peacefully'!"

The Black Veil Saint stared at Augustine's face and sneered, "Really? Execute me on the spot? Augustine. Do you really think you can kill me? Also, what does he mean by 'leave peacefully'?"

Augustine looked down to the sword on his waist. "Mouse, do not force my hand. At this distance, I have absolute certainty that I can

kill you. You also know that I would have ways to kill you even if you are a Great Practitioner!"

The Black Veil Saint gave an unusual expression and said, "I know." Her tone gradually became calmer as she said, "Augustine, I was the youngest amongst the people cultivating at the Temple. You cared for me and I would always remember it. I have also never told anyone about your secret."

Augustine laughed bitterly and said, "Thank you. Thank you for keeping my secret and not despising me for my cowardice."

"No, you are not a coward!" The Black Veil Saint shook her head and sighed, "That preposterous outdated rule was totally illogical."

The Black Veil Saint suddenly smiled and said, "Well then. If you want to kill me, then do it."

Augustine's expression changed as he took a step back and said, "You seriously intend to break away now?"

The Black Veil Saint's hand trembled. "I understand. If you cannot complete your order and report back, that Elder would not let you off. Augustine, you are too honest! Do you ever wonder why the Elder dispatched you here instead of the other Paladins? Do you ever wonder why the Temple suddenly has more Paladins? Fielding was sent to the battlefield on the southern continent deliberately to let him die. Do you still not understand this? What that Elder wants is a change. You, Fielding, and I are not included in his plans!"

Augustine turned pale as he thought, 'It is a purge!'

The Black Veil Saint laughed bitterly and continued, "If I did not guess incorrectly, the new Paladins are all that Elder's trusted subordinates? Just now you said about intercepting at sea. Did you know about it beforehand? Why was a Paladin and the Holy Knights mobilized but kept secret from the Commander of the Holy Knights?"

The Black Veil Saint slowed down her speech when she saw Augustine speechless. "Augustine, let me ask you this. Right now, you are loyal to the Temple. However, when that Elder becomes a Pontiff and if he orders you to kill the pious believers of God, will you accept the order without hesitation? Will you continue to maintain your loyalty? You must know that if there is a war, blood will flow. The soldiers of the kingdoms and even the civilians are all innocent believers of God! They just do not want to be dictated by a Pontiff! However, you cannot say that they have betrayed God!"

She continued to stand in front of the Paladin and asked, "Paladin Augustine! If a day comes when such an 'enemy' is right in front of you, will you be willing to kill?"

Augustine was speechless. He was really unable to give a reply.

The Black Veil Saint sighed, "That Elder is smarter than both of us! If I can think of this, he would have thought of this long ago! Do you think he would allow a disobedient and popular Paladin in the army to live?"

The Paladin trembled slightly and showed a pained expression. His glare gradually became as sharp as a blade as he gritted his teeth, "Mouse! Perhaps you may be right. However, until that day comes, I will not betray the Temple! Now, prepare for battle!" He took a deep breath and said, "Do not worry. If that day really comes, I will be fair to you! Even if I will be executed, I will kill the culprit first! But right now, your words cannot convince me!"

He slowly pulled out his sword and pointed it towards the ground. His stalwart figure was like a rock that existed since ancient times. He was ice-cold and unshakeable.

He asked in a murderous tone. "Mouse, I will ask you one last time. Are you unwilling to compromise?"

The Black Veil Saint calmly replied, "Augustine, you do not have to ask! That Elder knows I will not compromise which is why he

sent you here to take my life!"

Augustine gritted his teeth and said, "Fine! The esteemed Elder of the Temple has given a secret order. The Black Veil Saint is guilty of betraying the Temple and will be executed. The six people who manage the Sauron Kingdom's Temple and the four Holy Knights are also guilty of the same crime and will be executed together!"

"What?" The Black Veil Saint exclaimed. "They will be executed as well?" She shouted, "Augustine! They do not have any intentions of betraying the Temple. Why should they be executed?"

Augustine gritted his teeth and replied, "I don't care! I only receive orders to kill! Whether or not they are guilty is for the Elder Council to decide!"

The man who was reputed to be the oldest and strongest Paladin of the Roland Continent swung out his sword like lightning. The sharp edge of the sword shined brilliantly.

The silence in the hall was broken. A magnificent red flash rose as blood spilled onto the cold floor.

...

In the forest that was a few kilometers away from the Sauron Kingdom's Temple, three black-robed knights were sitting on three black horses. The moonlight shined between the gaps of the robe and revealed a golden brilliance. A gold-colored spear hanged on each of the horses.

The three horses quietly stood there in a triangular formation. The man on the left suddenly took a deep breath and said, "The sky is turning bright."

The man in front turned around and asked, "What's wrong?"

The man on the left replied, "I only said that the sky is turning bright. I do not like the air here. It is hot and damp. Only the cold breeze before dawn allows me to recall my hometown."

The man in front heard this and could not help but take a deep breath. He slowly said, "Yes, I don't like the weather here too. It makes me miss my snowy hometown, especially the freezing cold on the summit of the mountains." He suddenly turned the other way to look at the man on the right and asked, "What about you? What are you thinking of?"

The face of the man on the right was hidden by a huge black cloak but a pair of yellow eyes was visible. His voice sounded metallic and rhythmic as he said, "I was just thinking. Would that fellow Augustine be able to become ruthless if the Black Veil Saint still refuses to compromise? I heard that humans are full of emotions."

The man in front nodded and replied, "We do not need to think about this! If he does not act, then we will! We will just kill both of them together! Hmph. One of them is a Great Practitioner, the other one is a Paladin. I am really curious. They are the so-called strongest amongst the humans but how powerful are they? Especially Augustine. That guy looks really strong!"

The man on the right seemed to hesitate a little and said, "There is no news of Amore Hughes. I really suspect that he encountered a mishap. However, I feel even more skeptical. Is there really a human that could be strong enough to kill him?"

The man in front hmphed and said, "Do not talk about that useless-bum Amore Hughes. Even if he can return alive, I will personally kill him! He is a shame to our race!" His tone of voice gradually became thicker as he continued, "To be defeated by a human! Such a shameful Dragon warrior does not need to exist!"

The man on the left was indifferent as he looked towards the horizon in the East. He then sighed feeling depressed and said somewhat angrily, "Sigh. That damn sun has risen. The sky has turned bright again!"

The sun rose from the East and shined brilliantly onto the earth.

The morning sun shined onto the three men and their long shadows fell onto the ground.

The man in front turned around and smiled, "Alright. I know. An Snow Dragon like you hates this warm climate."

Chapter 225: Coincidence

The early morning sun was not very strong. A certain small city along the coast of the Sauron Kingdom was still shrouded with the quietness of the night. The soldiers on guard opened the gates early in the morning and were busy preparing for sentry duty.

The main street had only a few pedestrians. A group of Royal Knights galloped from the end of the street. Their neat formation surprised the pedestrians. 'What day is today? Why are the Royal Knights here?'

The soldiers had also been on the alert for a long time on the docks on the other side of the city.

This was the Sauron Kingdom's military harbor. Although the city was small, it could accommodate one hundred warships. It was something the city took pride in. At that moment, the harbor was closed and only a few of the navy's warships were at the docks.

A carriage slowly left the gates of the harbor while being escorted by cavalry.

The armors shone brightly as the Royal Knights led the way in front. At the rear, the exquisite carriage had the insignia of the Sauron Kingdom's royal family. However, the small flag above them showed that this was Prince Aimar's carriage.

The soldiers that were dragged out to guard the harbor in the middle of the night understood that His Majesty's younger brother had come to visit. No wonder the security here was so strict. The respected Prince must be sitting in that fine carriage.

Only some of the old and experienced knights could see from a few clues that this was something different.

The twenty knights around the carriage were somewhat different.

Although they wore the honorary uniforms of the Royal Guards,

their skills at riding and controlling the horses along with their valiant features and, most importantly, how they maintained their formation showed that these people were not those decorative guards of honor!

Their tight horseback formation was a special defensive formation. Although this formation was never used by the Sauron Kingdom's troops, an experienced soldier could see the subtlety of this formation.

Without a doubt, if there was an emergency situation, those people in the honorary guard uniforms could quickly spread out, defend and counterattack with this formation.

Although they tried to conceal their postures, it was evident that they were not the good-for-nothing honorary guards. These people were experienced soldiers. Experienced cavalrymen!

Even more strange was that these people were emitting killing intent. This was a temperament that was only seen in excellent soldiers who had fought life and death battles.

From a certain point of view, these people were more of an elite compared to the show-off Royal Knights that were leading the group.

The carriage gradually reached the center of the city. The few pedestrians that were on the streets that morning crowded to the sides by the cavalrymen.

A lot of civilians who were loyal to the royal family stood at the roadside. They took off their hats and waved and bowed at the carriage. Some of them even shouted, "Long live the King! Long live the Prince! Long live the Sauron Kingdom!"

As more spectators gathered, the Captain of the Royal Knights became nervous. More pedestrians would undoubtedly make escorting the carriage harder. He gave the order to quicken the pace.

Within the small crowd were two peculiar fellows.

"Interesting...The Sauron Kingdom's royal family seems to be very popular." A lazy languid voice laughed.

They gradually retreated from the crowd and entered a small building. They went upstairs, opened the window and looked at the soldiers speeding up from a distance.

The slender man gently touched his chin as if he was thinking of something. It was worth noting that his fingers were slender and his skin was fair. The owner of that hand was a high ranked noble.

After that, he placed his hand on his forehead in front of his disordered hair. Under the sun, his golden and curly hair looked magnificent.

The man laughed. His handsome face laughed as if it carried a profound meaning. His eyes that were like a deep lake twinkled with a wise and farsighted gaze.

"Interesting. Truly interesting. Don't you see?" He turned around to look at the person behind him. He then pointed downstairs and continued, "In that formation, I saw a few familiar faces! I have seen those two people at the left of the carriage inside the palace before. They are all high ranked warriors of the Imperial Guards!"

He laughed happily and said, "Don't you think that there are also interesting happenings here? My dear Old Mark..."

The man's face was finally revealed under the sun. This person was the missing and genuine heir of the Tulip Family, Seth.

The old man behind him was the two-hundred-years-old monster. Old Mark seemed to frown, then he said, "Young Master Seth, is your curiosity acting up again?"

"Why not?" Seth shrugged his shoulders and laughed happily. "I have a premonition. Old Mark, it seems like there are some very interesting things waiting for us!"

Old Mark had an expression as if he was having a toothache. He then bitterly muttered, "Interesting? Hmph. In your dictionary, the word 'interesting' means 'trouble'!"

...

Gasp!

Heavy breathing sounded in the hall as the Paladin knelt on the ground. He used his sword to support his body so that he did not fall over.

His hand, holding the sword, was red with blood. Blood flowed down along the sharp blade of his sword and onto the floor.

Augustine's face was pale but his eyes were firm.

At his shoulder, a pale and delicate small hand supported him. Crystal-like tears dripped onto his bloodstained golden Paladin armor.

The Black Veil Saint looked sorrowful and her beautiful eyes and face were covered in tears. She bit her lips so that she would not cry out loud.

"Augustine, you...Why did you do this?" She tightly held Augustine's body.

The Black Veil Saint shook.

She saw the Paladin she had respected since childhood stab himself with his own sword. Before she realized what just happened, Augustine's next action made her completely understand his intentions.

After he stabbed himself with his own sword, he exerted himself to pull out the sword. He then put his hand over his wound and used his fighting energy to break the wound open!

The fighting energy not only broke his golden armor but also badly mangled his wound. This action covered up the fact that it was a sword wound. The wound looked the same as if it was caused

by a sorcerer's attack.

After that, the Paladin squeezed out a smile. He looked at the Black Veil Saint and said, "This way, they would not be able to tell that I hurt myself."

The Black Veil Saint fully understood Augustine's intentions. She cried and hugged the person that was like a father to her. Her hand then raised a Light System sorcery spell to heal Augustine's wounds.

She did not expect Augustine to raise his hand and push her away. As the Black Veil Saint did not expect him to push so strongly, it made her fall down at the side.

Augustine gasped and said, "Don't. Do not treat my injuries! I was determined to stab myself. Do not let my efforts go to waste!" After that, he bit his lips and endured the pain. He stood up with difficulty and said in a hoarse voice, "Mouse! Go quickly! Do as you say you would. Leave this place. Leave the Temple. Leave the Roland Continent! Go to the Radiant Continent! That is the only way you can survive!"

The Black Veil Saint was distressed. She then stood up from the ground and approached Augustine, then grabbed his hand. Augustine wanted to push her away but he could barely stand because of his serious injury at his chest. The Black Veil Saint's pure and holy white sorcery light flowed from her hand into Augustine's body.

"You, what are you doing?" Augustine was bewildered.

The Black Veil Saint held him tightly with a determined expression. "Augustine, I cannot let you do such a thing! Definitely not!"

Being the Temple's strongest Saint, a Great Practitioner, her power was immense. Augustine's chest wound squirmed and then healed at an extremely fast pace. He painfully closed his eyes and

laughed bitterly. "In the end, what do you want? Don't you want to live?"

The Black Veil Saint did not speak. Cold sweat dripped from her face. It was obvious that even though she had the strength of a Great Practitioner, it would still cost her a lot of her power to heal such a serious wound within a short period of time.

"Augustine! I do not have a cold-blooded heart!" The Black Veil Saint spoke in a low voice, "If the price for it is your blood, I cannot do that!"

Augustine frowned and replied, "I will only lose some blood. That way, I can go back and report. Even if they blame me for being unsuccessful, they will not kill me."

The Black Veil Saint shook her head. "Augustine, you do not understand that Elder. If he is brave enough to antagonize the entire Roland Continent for the position of Pontiff, do you think he will care about your life? Don't you know? He had you dispatched here. If you do not kill me, you are dead! Have you not understood this? Killing me is a test for you. If you kill me, he would be assured of you!"

Without waiting for Augustine to reply, she laughed and said, "Alright."

She loosened her grip on Augustine. However, his face was still pale. Her body shook and she seemed to have trouble standing up.

Augustine's expression changed as he asked, "What kind of healing spell did you use on me? Is it 'Life Magic'? Why did you use such a demanding spell?"

The Black Veil Saint shook her head and smiled, "You are willing to bleed for me. In that case, I should also spend some energy for you!" She looked at Augustine's eyes. Her indifferent expression turned into a lukewarm smile. "Since the first day I entered the Temple, you have always been my closest friend. Amongst the

indifferent people of the Temple, you are the only one with a tender heart!"

Augustine laughed bitterly and said, "You have always been a willful person. Have you thought about what you are going to do next?"

The Black Veil Saint took a deep breath and suddenly said, "Even if you said I have changed, for you, I am willing to compromise once!" She then bitterly asked, "Do I just need to help you kill the Radiant Continent's envoy?"

Augustine frowned. "You..."

The Black Veil Saint shook her head and lightly said, "You do not have to say anything else! Acting as the Temple's knife to kill a person. Hmph. In the Temple, I would not be the first or the last one to do this."

Augustine tried to look at the Black Veil Saint's face to see what was on her mind. However, he only saw a cold and detached expression.

"Have you truly decided?"

The Black Veil Saint nodded and said, "Yes, I have decided to do it! I will help you once just so that I can protect you! Augustine..." She looked at the Paladin and said, "You may be the last pillar of the Temple! Even if it is for my conviction, I cannot let you be destroyed by the darkness!"

"As for me..." She smiled and said, "I will leave once you report back! Whether I can escape or not is my own fate."

Augustine saw distress and despair beneath her cold smile. This stubborn and willful fellow. Does she really like to hide behind her mask?

Without waiting for Augustine to speak, the Black Veil Saint asked, "Where is the Radiant Empire's envoy right now? What kind of person is he?"

"The news I received before coming here states that they would go ashore in that coastal city. They would then pass through the southern road on the way to the royal city. They would also be escorted by the Royal Knights."

The Black Veil Saint nodded her head and asked, "Who is that envoy?"

"He is an Earl. Supposedly, he is a youngster that the esteemed Emperor is recently fond of. He is the Commander of the Imperial Guards and also has a background as a military officer. Presumably, he is quite powerful."

The Black Veil Saint nodded with an indifferent expression. She could only use this masked expression to conceal her emotions. This would be the sad consequence of being another party's borrowed knife.

'Just kill one man?' Black Veil Saint seemed to ask herself. 'Just kill one man? Whatever it is, just killing one man would protect Augustine. This should be the right choice...'

However, Augustine's following words were like a heavy hammer smashing her heart.

Although he did not speak in a loud voice, each of his words were like thunder in her ears.

"That envoy's name is Rody!"

Rody...

Rody!

Rody?

She felt a severe pain in her head as if it was being torn apart. A piece of memory then became clearer in her mind.

'The youngster with a warm and brilliant smile who liked to call me an 'idiot', who looked at me and gently said on the wilderness in the Northwest ...'

"Remember, my name is Rody! Only people close to me know this name!"

Her indifferent mask instantly crumbled and her delicate body started to tremble violently.

'Could it be him? Or is it just someone who coincidentally have the same name?'

Chapter 226: The First Pontiff

'Where am I? Am I in a dream?'

Rody struggled to open his eyes, but he felt lost. It was total darkness in front of him.

Rody could help showing a wry smile. 'Since I cannot see anything, what is the difference between opening and closing my eyes?'

Rody was not just surrounded by darkness. He could not even hear a single sound. The darkness was quiet enough to drive people crazy. In that darkness, a person could not see anything nor hear any sound. He would not even know if he would tread on a flat surface or walk off a cliff on his next step. At that time, regardless what was on his mind, there was only one answer.

The answer was...don't know.

Perhaps the unknown was mankind's greatest fear. Some people might not fear death. However, it would be terrifying if they did not know how or when they would die.

Even if a person was prepared to die, the feeling he got when he closed his eyes and waited to be cut down only to find that the blade had yet to swing down could drive him crazy.

Rody sighed and was about to roar three times. Suddenly, he heard a heavy and hoarse voice slowly crooned.

"God said, 'Let there be light' and then there was light."

After those soft croons, the surroundings were filled with bright light. The white light was so bright that it forced Rody to close his eyes. When his eyes finally adapted to the dazzling brightness, he shouted, "Who is it? Who is speaking?"

The hoarse voice did not answer him but continued to softly croon, "God called brightness as day and darkness as night. He

then separated brightness and darkness."

When the sound faded, the strong light turned dim. In that primal chaos, there was a strange sight as the day and the night constantly alternated. The sun and the moon alternately rose and fell as brightness and darkness came and went.

"Who? Who is it?" Rody could not help but roared in surprise.

Rody's voice echoed in the space but that hoarse voice ignored him and continued to croon.

"God said, 'Let there be life'. So God created wild beasts, one from each kind; livestock, one from each kind and insects on the ground of different kinds. This world thus filled with life."

An illusion appeared together with apparently some kind of mysterious voices. The birds in the sky, the beasts on the ground, the winged insects and fishes in the rivers...

The illusion was like a spectacular light curtain appearing around Rody in segments. When one appeared, another one would disappear. The scenes slowly unfolded.

Rody calmed down and no longer shouted. He sat cross-legged as he quietly watched the illusions around him. Suddenly, his heart stirred and he loudly asked, "So, what else did God say?"

"God said, 'Let us create man in our image'. After that, there were humans in this world."

A gas-like substance suddenly appeared in front of Rody. That gas flickered alternately between black and white and between brightness and darkness. After that, as it churned it constantly changed shapes. In the beginning, it took on the form of birds and beasts, but with just a flash it would change into something else. After that, it slowly transformed into other shapes and then into a crude human shape. Finally, it stopped transforming. The crude human-shaped gas mass slowly became finer as the hands and feet gradually formed. That was followed by the body, head, hair...and

lastly the face!

The figure looked like a very old man and he wore a grey and tattered robe. His white beard almost reached his chest. He had a face full of wrinkles as he calmly smiled.

He looked at Rody who was sitting cross-legged in front of him. He then slowly spoke in that deep hoarse voice from earlier.

He slowly said, "God created mankind to manage the fishes in the sea, the birds in the sky, the animals on the ground and all the insects on the ground."

He then stared at Rody and slowly said, "Hence, this world was born and humans became the masters of this world!"

Both of them looked at each other for a while and then Rody suddenly laughed as if he had just seen something ridiculous. His laughter became louder. He laughed so hard that his tears almost flowed out.

"Nonsense!" Rody suddenly stopped laughing and angrily shouted, "Mankind became the masters of this world? Ridiculous! Absurd! If God had taken so much effort to create this world, why should he let mankind dominate it? Does God have a mental illness? Is God crazy? Why did he not become the master on his own? If he was going to give it to others, why did he bother creating this world?"

The eyes of the old man in front of him turned sharp, but his face revealed a praising smile. He then slowly said, "God said to the people in the world, 'Have faith in me and you shall have life. Have faith in me and you shall have health. Have faith in me and you shall have peace. Have faith in me and you shall have rest. Praise me in everything I have created!'"

"Hahaha..." Rody laughed. "Look! That is the price! What do you mean mankind are the masters of this world? In the end, it is something that is bartered! Mankind are just puppets! Mankind is

just God's puppets. They are actually slaves who are controlled by their master! When something becomes unsatisfactory, God will just take it all back, right?"

Rody sat on the floor and his laughter gradually stopped. He was contemplating as he touched his chin. Suddenly he looked bitter and said, "I suddenly remember about the people who raise pigs, horses, cattle, and sheep. They are fed and raised for one's own benefit." He raised his head to look at the old man and said, "The relationship between God and man is just like that."

The old man did not reply and continued in that melodious tone, "The world is corrupted in the presence of God, the land is filled with sins. God said, 'To those who rebel against God, I will take back what I bestowed'. Thereupon, it would rain heavily and the earth would be flooded for fifteen days. After that, there would be a drought for one hundred and fifty days. All people and living creatures on land would die, except the ones who receive God's favor would be protected and live."

Rody laughed again. He clapped his hands and shouted, "Good! Wonderful! There are no differences between God and the Emperor of mankind! When they see disobedient subjects, the subjects will be charged for rebellion and slaughtered, leaving behind only the obedient ones!"

The old man no longer spoke and smiled at Rody. Rody lowered his head as he thought to himself for a moment. He then said, "Hey, old man, all the stories you told me are nothing more than just the teachings of God. I have read those before. Who are you? Where is this place?" Rody furrowed his eyebrows and continued, "I remembered I was fighting with someone at sea. I was then smashed into the bottom of the sea. After that..."

After that, Rody slowly stood up and laughed, "Don't tell me that you are a sea monster."

The old man shook his head.

Rody sighed and said, "Well, I don't like to keep guessing."

The old man smiled and said, "According to God's teaching, page one hundred and seven: Those, in this world, who blaspheme and rebel against God will be deprived of his language. God said, 'If you want to speak, you must praise me'."

Rody facepalmed and smiled, "Ah, I understand now. You are one of those who blasphemed God and as a result became mute. If you want to speak, you can only praise God. Otherwise, you cannot speak at all. Am I right?" After that Rody shook his head and continued, "No wonder you were only repeating God's words." Rody found it more and more ridiculous and finally he laughed out loud. "That God is really despicable. Not allowing people to criticize him is one thing, but he actually thought of such a clever way to control us. He actually turned those who cursed him into mutes and then if they want to speak, they can only be allowed to praise God. Genius! What a genius! Such an interesting way to punish people!"

The old man was not angry. He just smiled and continued to watch Rody.

Rody laughed for a while and then sighed. "Well, old man. Where is this place? How did I come here?" Before the old man could speak, Rody facepalmed again and smiled, "I forgot, you cannot speak...Sigh. This is troublesome...Really!"

He then had a delighted expression and asked, "I suppose you know how to write? How about you write it out?"

The old man smiled and showed a helpless expression. He stretched out one of his hands and gently waved. A small patch of sand appeared on the ground in front of him. He then scribbled a few strokes on the sand with his foot. "Just ask."

Rody took a deep breath and asked, "Where is this place? How did I come here? Who are you?"

The old man looked at Rody and stretched out his foot to write on the ground. "Have you finished asking?"

Rody stared at him and replied, "For now, I will just ask this much."

Without saying anything, the old man then proceeded to write a few lines of words on the sand. As he wrote, Rody watched from the side and slowly read out the words. "The first question: the prison cell! The second question: too long...Hey, old man, what do you mean by too long? Is it too long that you cannot say it? Fine, then the third question: you are..."

Rody suddenly stopped reading. When the old man finished writing, Rody suddenly raised his head and stared at him with a surprised and unbelieving expression.

That was because the answer to the third question was clearly written on the ground.

"Moses, the first Pontiff of the Temple!"

...

"Stop the carriage, quickly!"

The carriages were moving quickly on the road. One of the escorts beside the carriages at the back suddenly shouted.

The Deputy Commander Bia of the Royal Knights of the Sauron Kingdom, who was in front, was impatient. However, he still ordered all his men to stop. After all, the King had ordered him to treat the guests from the Radiant Empire with respect.

"His Excellency the Earl seemed to have moved." The escorts around the carriage, dressed in the honorary guards' uniform, were the soldiers who had accompanied Rody to the Roland Continent.

Earlier, while guarding the carriage, they heard a burst of laughter from inside the carriage. That was His Excellency the Earl

laughing!

Two of the Imperial Guards immediately jumped off their horses and rushed to the side of the carriage. They pushed open the door to look inside.

They saw His Excellency, who was unconscious for the past few days, lying there. Although his eyes were closed, he was laughing gleefully. The two happily surprised soldiers entered and heavily shook Rody. They also loudly called out to him a few times. However, Rody only continued to laugh. Despite the shaking, they could not wake him up.

The way he laughed, it looked like he was having a sweet dream.

"Your Excellency, could...could it be that His Excellency's head was damaged during that battle that day..." One of the soldiers hesitated, then said.

...

"Haha haha..." Rody roared with laughter as he pointed at the old man and gasped for breath. "You are actually Moses? The most devout believer of God and the greatest leader in religious history, Pontiff Moses? You led your men across the Straits of Thunder and created the Miracle of Moses by splitting the sea?"

The old man did not get angry. He continued to smile as he looked at Rody and nodded his head. Rody finally could not laugh anymore and softly said, "Well, you are really not joking? Then, I find this really strange...If you are Moses, why did God punish you and turn you into a mute? Also, you said that this is a prison cell...Why did he imprison Moses here?"

"Blasphemed against God." The old man scribbled lightly on the sand.

"But...but aren't you the most devout believer? Weren't you the one who touched God with your devotion and was presented with a staff? Your staff is with me."

Moses shook his head and stretched out his foot to write again. "The staff is not with you. We are now inside the staff!"

Rody's body shook as he stared at Moses.

...

"What is the matter with His Excellency?" The soldier supporting Rody gave a bitter smile. "Why does His Excellency's expression keep changing. One minute he is laughing and the next minute he seems to be astonished. Is he having a dream?"

A more experienced person beside him thought to himself for a moment and softly said, "How would I know? I suggest that when we reach our destination, we get two sorcerers to take a look at him. We are helpless with this kind of thing. Let us not act recklessly."

Commander Bia was getting impatient. His Majesty the King had given the order to bring the envoy to the King as soon as possible. However, those people were discussing endlessly around the carriage and Commander Bia had no idea what they were up to.

Bia jumped off his horse and ran over. He then shouted, "Everyone, it is getting late. We must hurry. I..."

The moment he said that, he heard a 'whoosh' sound in the air!

Bia then cried out and fell backward as an arrow struck his shoulder. At the same time, he heard seven to eight miserable cries as several knights were also struck by arrows and fell off their horses.

"A surprise attack!" The surrounding knights shouted as they drew out their swords and gathered nearer.

A few archers appeared in the trees on both sides of the road. About ten black-robed men with masks jumped down from the trees. They held shining swords in their hands as they shouted, "God protect my people!" They then rushed towards the chaotic formation and instantly they were engaged in melee combat with

the Royal Knights of Sauron Kingdom.

"Shit!" Rody's Imperial Guards quickly surrounded and guarded the carriage. While closing the door of the carriage, they formed a defensive array.

A tall black-robed figure had already rushed towards them. One of Rody's subordinates roared loudly and raised his sword only to hear the crisp sound of metal colliding. The warrior flew away sideways and landed on the ground a distance away. He struggled for a while before losing consciousness.

The other warriors were also experienced soldiers. Although they were surprised to be unexpectedly confronted by their formidable enemy, they did not panic. One of them shouted, "Everyone! Let us work together to get rid of this guy first!"

With a single order, the warriors automatically split up into two groups. Five of them stayed behind to guard the carriage while the remaining dozen went forward and attacked together.

Those warriors were quite skillful. They were carefully selected from the Palace of the Radiant Empire. However, the black-robed figure had terrifying strength. He effortlessly cut down half of them. One of the warriors was even split into two!

The remaining warriors became enraged. They shouted and fought back fiercely. In the face of their opponent's attacks, they charged forward, even if it meant having to risk their lives to attack their opponents.

"Amu, looks like you are in trouble." A listless voice on a tree said as he looked at the tall figure surrounded by the enemy. That black figure was sitting on a tree branch. His legs swayed in the air as he mocked, "A few warriors are enough to tie you down! Haha haha."

"Shut up!" The surrounded tall figure cursed. His eyes flashed with an angry look and the sword in his hands suddenly burst out with a bright golden fighting energy. His body suddenly seemed to

rise. He swung his sword, immediately cutting two of the warriors surrounding him into two accompanied by two miserable brief cries!

As the blood sprayed out, the person sitting on the tree trunk suddenly laughed gloatingly and said, "Aha! Amu! You are finished! Boss told us not to use fighting energy! You actually dared defy the boss' orders! Hahahaha!"

The black-robed Amu became even angrier and cursed, "You don't help, but only know how to criticize! Not using fighting energy does not mean our secret is safe. However, if we kill all of them, then there won't be any leaks!"

He did not stop talking and neither did his sword stop slashing. Within the short time he took to say those words, he had already killed another four warriors.

The remaining warriors were terrified. One of them shouted, "Go and help His Excellency to retreat quickly! We will guard the rear!"

Just as he finished that sentence, a dazzling gleam flashed by in front of him and he felt a severe pain in his arm. The man screamed and found that the hand he used to hold the sword was cut off at the elbow. The warrior was naturally brave. He roared loudly and pounced to hold the black-robed figure tightly. He then shouted, "Quickly retreat!"

After a loud bang, his body was suddenly torn apart. His flesh and his blood splattered all over. A golden fighting energy rose up. As blood splashed on the black figure's clothes, he cried out angrily, "Damn it. He actually dirtied my noble body."

Chapter 227: Complete State

"Go!"

A warrior carried Rody on his shoulder, looked for the deepest woods and ran! The remaining five warriors stood in a row to block the way. Amu, the black-robed figure, sneered. He rushed forward with no fear of his opponents' swords. At the same time, he shouted, "You are still lazing around. That guy had run away! Be careful, His Excellency may cut off your head!"

The man on the tree still had a leisurely expression. "Don't have to be afraid! They cannot escape! First, kill these people!" The moment he said the word 'kill', his gentle facial expression suddenly turned murderous.

A light flashed as he shot out of the tree and immediately appeared in the middle of the battling crowd!

A cold air blew and the Imperial Guards were instantly frozen into ice.

The man stood still. He clapped his hands and smiled as he said, "Amu, look at this. This is the most graceful way of killing a person. Your bloody method of killing them is just like a butcher."

Amu had punched and shattered the last frozen warrior into pieces. His tall body then stood there as he said, "You fool!" He suddenly rushed forward and raised his hand to strike. Those frozen knights were immediately smashed into pieces. He then shouted, "You are a real idiot! Using your method, anyone could tell that you were the one who did this!"

The strengths of these two people were extremely terrifying. After that, the Royal Knights were completely annihilated very quickly. When there were no enemies left, Amu sneered and said, "Well, let's go and find that envoy."

The person next to him laughed and said, "Are you anxious?"

Don't worry. They probably have met the boss by now...Have you ever seen the boss lose control?"

Amu still seemed dissatisfied with this person and angrily said, "We better hurry and catch up. Otherwise, the boss would get angry..."

The other person finally changed his lazy attitude. The moment he thought of the angry appearance of his boss, he boldness disappeared and he shouted, "Chase!"

These black-robed figures immediately rushed into the woods to chase after their target.

...

The loyal warrior carrying Rody raced wildly into the woods. Fortunately, he was strong. His normal training was rigorous and he could still run quickly even though he was carrying a person on his back. The sound of the killings gradually grew further away, but none of his companions caught up. He knew that his companions were already out of luck. He bit his lips, knowing that protecting His Excellency the Earl was his duty. As it was extremely dangerous at that moment, he could only dash on wildly.

As he ran, he suddenly heard a cold voice. "Are you tired?"

That voice seemed to be just by his ears. He suddenly stopped and, holding his sword in one hand, he shouted, "Who?"

His Excellency the Earl, whom he was carrying on his back, was still unconscious. The warrior was immediately vigilant and shouted, "You are sneaky. I am not afraid of you!"

The voice then said, "Very good, you are a very brave warrior. However, bravery does not represent ability."

The warrior showed a complicated gaze. He gritted his teeth and ran again. However, the voice continued to ring in his ears. "Hmp, you are running the wrong way. You should have gone left. This

road leads to a dead end."

Nonsense!

The warrior cursed in his heart, 'You are bluffing!'

He ignored the mysterious voice and continued to run. However, after running for a while, he stopped. He had really run into a dead end!

There was a cliff in front of him. Unless he could grow wings and fly up, there was no other way.

"You see, I have already told you earlier that running left is the way out. However, you did not listen to me." The voice still sounded cold and cynical.

The warrior sighed and lay Rody down on the ground. He held his sword at his chest and readied his posture as he shouted, "Pesky! If you want to kill, come and do it! Warriors of the Empire do not fear death!"

The voice seemed to be silent for a moment. After a sigh, the voice said, "Yes, you are right. To me, the warriors of the Radiant Empire are worthy of respect compared to the Roland Knights."

There was a rustling sound of the leaves being stepped on. A tall figure slowly came out from the trees.

The figure was more than two meters tall. His black robe was similar to those people who had launched the surprise attack earlier. However, that figure did not wear a mask. Obviously, he felt such cowardly actions to be beneath himself. When the warrior saw his face, he could not help but look surprised!

The outlines of that person's face looked as if it was cut by a knife. His eyes were almost closed but revealed a sharp gaze. He had two dark red birthmarks on both sides of his face. The dark red patterns look like fire printed on his cheeks.

He quietly walked over without any fighting energy. However,

his fierce imposing manner, with a bone-chilling effect, made the warrior instinctively step back.

"You see, you are still afraid." The man had a mocking look. "It is human nature to feel fear when faced with a strong enemy. You are also the same. Even if you are braver, you cannot overcome this nature."

"Nonsense!" The warrior could not suppress the impulsive feeling in his heart. He growled and thrust his sword forward.

The black figure showed mercy in his eyes and only casually waved his hand. The warrior screamed miserably as he flew away and crashed into the cliff wall behind him. He fell heavily beside Rody and spat out blood. The warrior struggled but could not stand up.

"You don't have to be so anxious. I won't kill you immediately." The black figure sat down cross-legged. He gently picked up a withered branch on the ground and gave a light smile. "Can we chat? I have never seen people from the Radiant Empire before. Tell me, what is your continent like?"

The figure saw the warrior looking at him with hatred. He smiled and said, "Ah, I had almost forgotten. You still do not know my name. [My name is Ni Lin!](#)"

He held his hands behind his head and leaned on a tree as he smiled faintly and said, "I am not human. So, I have always been curious about mankind. You, for example...I can see that you are not afraid of death. You are very brave. Right now, you are not worried about your own life but the life of the person lying next to you. You are worried about his survival, am I right?"

The warrior gritted his teeth and spat. "Ptui! I am His Excellency's guard! My survival is not important! As long as His Excellency can wake up, he would be able to cut you down!"

"Oh?" Ni Lin exclaimed with curiosity. "Is Your Excellency really

so formidable? Is he really that powerful? However, I heard that the strongest person on your Radiant Continent is someone from the Tulip family."

When the warrior heard the name 'Tulip', his face immediately showed an expression full of reverence and pride. He then said, "What do you know? His Excellency the Duke of the Tulip Family is the world's most powerful warrior! He is the Empire's God of War!"

Ni Lin nodded and softly asked, "So who is more powerful...this man beside you or the Duke of the Tulip Family?"

The warrior was stunned for a moment and he instinctively wanted to blurt out, "Of course, the Duke of the Tulip Family!" However, when he recalled the magical scene at the sea that day, he hesitated. With a stern expression, he ferociously asked, "Why are you asking this?"

Ni Lin shook his head and replied, "I just want to know what the strongest human looks like. Once I know this, then things would become much simpler. Killing one person is simpler compared to killing two people. Don't you agree?"

Although the warrior felt pain in his chest, he still laughed loudly and said, "You? You think you can defeat Our Excellency the Duke on your own? Such arrogance! Even the Paladin of your Roland Continent was defeated by Our Excellency the Duke of the Tulip Family!"

Ni Lin did not get angry. He still smiled and said, "Haha, this is probably a type of human emotions: worship, am I right?"

The warrior's expression finally changed and asked, "You keep on saying that you are not human. What are you?"

Ni Lin shook his head and did not speak. However, an old voice suddenly came from the side. "He is not a human, he is a Dragon!"

Ni Lin laughed and showed an expression of ridicule. "Finally,

you lost your patience and revealed yourself?"

The old voice also laughed. "Your Excellency Paladin, haven't you been waiting for me to appear?"

An old man in a gray sorcerer robe and a pointed hat floated down from a tree. He stood between Ni Lin and the warrior. He nodded gently and said, "Your Excellency Paladin, I have appeared."

Ni Lin stood up and laughed. He said, "Very good, I was just thinking about how patient you would be, [Great Sorcerer Yin Xing](#)."

Yin Xing gently ran his fingers through his grizzle beard and sighed, "Your Excellency Paladin, I was ordered by His Excellency Sith to protect this man, so you cannot kill him."

Ni Lin smiled and replied, "You did not show yourself earlier. You only appear now when I am alone. Looks like you sorcerers are cowards."

Yin Xing shook his head and said, "His Excellency Sith's order was that I should not act unless there is an absolute necessity." He then said in a mocking tone, "But didn't you force me to come out? You followed them all the way here, but you did not attack. Instead, you chatted with him here. Weren't you just waiting for me to appear?"

Ni Lin nodded and replied, "Correct, my principle has always been, 'killing one is simpler than killing two but killing once is more convenient than killing twice'!" He held the sword at his waist and spoke in a cold tone, "So getting rid of all of you at once is much more convenient than fighting twice."

He stood at the same place. His body moved but at the same time, it seemed he did not move. However, an oppressive shadow instantly rushed to the front of Yin Xing. He then raised his hand and swung his sword down.

There was a loud noise as Yin Xing, the great sorcerer, stepped back. Ni Lin's sword was swung down onto his head but suddenly stopped just before it touched his head!

It was as if there was something invisible blocking the sword.

"[A boundary!](#)" Ni Lin raised his eyebrows and laughed, "Your Excellency Yin Xing, do you think a Great Sorcerer's boundary can stop me?"

Yin Xing admitted, "No, no matter how you see it, I am not your match." His mouth then turned up at the corner in a strange smile. "But...Your Excellency Paladin, have you forgotten that my name is Yin Xing?"

The old sorcerer raised his hand and a silver light appeared from his hand. The silver light wrapped around his body, Rody and the warrior, who were on the ground behind him. Instantly, the three of them disappeared at the same time.

Ni Lin suddenly opened up his narrowed eyes and laughed, "Well, I had expected you to do this!"

His eyes were wide open and the flame-like patterns on his face seem to flash with a strange light. He then shouted, "[Sa. Mo. Li. Ya!](#)"

Boom! There was a loud explosive sound as an abundant amount of a dragon's aura burst out from his body. After that, the surrounding area of more than twenty meters radius shined with a flame-like light.

The flame-like light suddenly revealed the hidden bodies of Yin Xing, Rody, and that warrior. Yin Xing's expression changed. "A dragon's boundary!"

"It is a dragon's boundary!" Ni Lin once again attacked like lightning. His sword suddenly struck out and severely slashed down.

Clang! There was a loud sound. Yin Xing's boundary shook

violently and his body also trembled. He then spat out a mouthful of blood and stained his grizzle beard.

"Old man, I wonder how many more of my slashes you can endure!" Ni Lin's calm expression disappeared and replaced with a murderous expression.

His sword slashed out.

Yin Xing hastily shouted, "Go!"

He raised a finger and a large tree next to him was suddenly uprooted and flew over to block Ni Lin's sword. Craaash! The tree that was so big it needed several people to hug it was cut into two by the sword. The two cut-off masses flew out. Yin Xing grabbed both men and retreated to the front of the cliff.

He quickly took out a white crystal and bit his finger before dropping a drop of blood onto the crystal. The crystal immediately broke into powder and dispersed. A holy light flashed and a huge hexagram appeared on the ground.

Ni Lin sneered and said, "A defensive boundary? Looks like you have some treasures with you."

The old sorcerer did not dare say anything. He just sat there with his eyes closed and continued to silently chant his spell.

Ni Lin suddenly removed his black robes and revealed the golden armor he wore beneath it. Golden fighting energy burst out from his stalwart body. The fighting energy on the sword in his hand also seemed to burn like a flame.

With the presence of the flame, Ni Lin's expression twisted as he shouted, "Do you think that your defensive boundary can stop me? Do you think you can stop the strongest warrior of the dragons?"

He grabbed his sword with both hands and suddenly his armor automatically fell off, bit by bit, to reveal his dragon muscles. A dark red pattern was printed on his chest. The pattern was that of a flying fire dragon.

"Cut!" With a shout, the Dragon warrior swung his sword down to cut the edge of the hexagram.

Two balls of light clashed. The upsurge of waves disintegrated the nearby trees. That sorcerer, Yin Xing, tightly closed his eyes as blood slowly flowed out of his mouth but the surrounding hexagram became even brighter.

...

Somewhere at a distance in the woods, Amu and the other Dragon soldier had almost caught up. There was a sudden quake ahead of them in the woods. Amu turned pale and asked, "The boss seemed to have gotten angry. Can you feel it?"

The lazy guy beside him also became solemn and said, "Ump, it is the boss' Sa. Mo. Li. Ya dragon boundary! Perhaps he had encountered a powerful opponent?"

Amu grinned and said, "Who else could it be? It must definitely be those guys from the Sorcerer's Association."

The two of them then hastened their pace forward.

...

They were all corpses on the ground outside the woods. Augustine abruptly reined in the horse. He then jumped off the horse as it neighed. After that, Augustine said, "We are late! Someone has already attacked the convoy!"

The Black Veil Saint was astride a red horse. She looked at the tragic scene, the aftermath of the fight, in front of her and sighed, "It definitely must have been the work of those people from the Dragon race."

Augustine became gloomy and said, "Dragon race? Didn't the Elder send me to carry out this task? Why are the Dragons here too?"

The Black Veil Saint shook her head and said, "Augustine, don't

you understand? The Elder had already expected that I would not compromise. They had already decided that both of us are traitors!"

Augustine was silent. He quickly searched around and found that the carriage was empty. He then turned around and shouted, "There is nobody in here! That envoy must have escaped!"

The Black Veil Saint frowned. "Escaped? How could a mere human escape from the Dragon warriors?"

Suddenly, they felt a strange aura coming from the woods. The two horses became frightened and neighed. The Black Veil Saint quickly jumped off her horse and said, "That is a Dragon's aura! They are inside the woods!"

"Let's go in!" Augustine added as he grabbed his sword.

...

Rody looked at the words written in the sand on the ground and cursed. "What? Old man Moses, you dragged me in here? Why did you bring me to this hell of a place?"

Moses continued to smile silently and wrote something on the ground with his foot.

"You are possessed!"

After Rody finished reading those words on the ground, he seemed dazed. Moses then stretched out one of his hands and waved it.

A picture emerged in front of Rody...That day at sea, Rody suddenly flew up from the surface of the sea. In that picture, Rody clearly saw 'himself' defeating that Paladin, Amore Hughes, until he was in a sorry state. After that, he saw himself using a terrifying Mystic Dragon Purge and how Amore Hughes resisted the attack. Finally, under the powerful Mystic Dragon Purge, the sea went through a tsunami-like scene and the Roland warships were annihilated...

Rody was stunned for a long while when he saw that. "I...I did this? Why can't I remember?" He suddenly exclaimed, "That's not right! That Mystic Dragon Purge should not have been so powerful! I had used it a few times in the past and it had never been this powerful!"

Moses gradually looked serious again. He slowly sketched a phrase on the ground.

"Complete state of Mystic Dragon Purge."

Rody frowned. "Complete state?"

Ni Lin '逆鳞' means inverted scale.

Yin Xing '隐星' means Hidden Star. Giving him an 'English' like name that sounds similar would destroy the meaning of the name and calling him Hidden Star is just weird. This is why I chose the name Yin Xing.

结界 'Jié jiè'. A sturdy boundary. It could mean a field inside a magical circle or even a magical barrier. However, the word 'boundary' was used instead of barrier.

'Sa. Mo. Li. Ya' A few words that don't make sense even when combined together. It is the name of the spell.

Chapter 228: Rupture!

"Don't speak. Can't you see that the boss is seriously angry?"

Amu quickly stopped and stood far away as he watched Ni Lin acting violently. The fighting energy was burning with a monstrous flame. Amu sighed and said, "Ah. Ice, why do you think the boss is always so easily angered?"

Ice laughed listlessly and whispered, "Did you forget? [Boss' name is 'Ni Lin'!](#)"

Dragons had inverted scales and would be angered when those scales were touched.

Ni Lin was now furious. He threw his sword aside and opened up both of his hands as he gave a deep shout.

Ice, who stood at the back, changed his expression and said, "Darn! Is the boss going to change into his complete state?"

Amu immediately retreated a few steps and was vigilant. "Don't even think of making me go there! At this point, I don't dare to stop him!"

"Get back!" Ice suddenly shouted. He raised his black robes to cover his body.

Boom! There was a huge explosion. The monstrous blast fell all the trees within ten meters, revealing an empty area.

Ice and Amu had worked together to create a barrier of qi in front of themselves and their troops behind them.

Ni Lin had sprouted long dragon wings behind his back. His body gradually rose up in the sky. The dark red dragon pattern on his chest grew and now covered his entire body. The wyvern pattern roared as if it wanted to fly.

Instead of picking up his sword, he punched with his bare fist, creating an explosion.

Yin Xing's face grew more and more wretched. The light hexagram around him flashed fiercely a bit before it became dimmer from the earth-shattering blow.

Ni Lin continued to roar. "A Patron Saint Boundary? Can it stop me?"

There was fierce shaking. Although Yin Xing and the warrior was protected by the defensive boundary, the entire boundary was trembling. At the same time, the two of them felt as if their bodies were squeezed by a violent pressure from the outside. They both felt as if they had been hit severely, and vomited blood.

...

"What happened?" Rody was startled. He felt as if his body was shaken and was surprised. "This aura seems powerful!"

Moses smiled and pointed up.

Rody understood and asked, "Is something happening outside? Old man Moses, how do I get out?"

Moses shook his head and pointed on the ground: "You are possessed!"

Rody shook his head. "What do you mean possessed?" He thought for a while and then said, "Are you saying that my body is taken over by the Mystic Dragon? If not, why do I not remember killing Amore Hughes? Could it be that I did not kill the Paladin, but it was the Mystic Dragon who borrowed my body to kill him?"

Moses nodded.

Rody then became impatient and said, "Enough! Talking to you is so tiring! You can't speak up and could only write in circles! It is annoying!"

He suddenly kicked the sand to mess it up and said, "No matter what, I am getting out of here! Old man Moses, you only need to tell me how to get out of here!"

Moses sighed and pointed at Rody's hand. He hinted for Rody to stretch out his hand.

Both of them stretched out their index fingers and their index fingers came into contact. Rody immediately felt a numbness in his finger, touching an illusory energy instead of a solid entity. It was as if he was in front of a mirror but when he walked up to the mirror, he only saw a virtual image.

While Rody was still surprised, a voice spoke in his head, "I have offended the Gods and have been imprisoned for a thousand years. If I escape from prison, my mind would be destroyed."

Rody opened up his mouth. He could not help but ask, "Old man Moses! You can speak?"

Moses shook his head with a serious expression, indicating for Rody not to distract him.

"Ignorant boy. You actually dared to house a dragon in your body! You did not realize that the Mystic Dragon has a soul created by God. The stronger you become, the stronger the Mystic Dragon would also become! Sooner or later, it will devour your consciousness! At that time, you will be the Mystic Dragon but the Mystic Dragon will not be you! The moment the Mystic Dragon escapes from its shackles, you will be lost forever!"

Rody was about to speak when he heard Moses's voice in his mind. "Shut up! Escaping from this place will cause me to lose my mind! Listen to me carefully!"

"The so-called Saint Moses, the first Pontiff, is nothing but a joke! In my early years, I served God in exchange for supreme power! God granted the staff and the waves receded. However, it was just God using me to dictate the people! Boy, I really admire the fact that you could see through this ultimate meaning of 'master'. This dictatorship is simply just an exchange. In the end, the relationship between God and humans is one of master and slave! The laughable Moses is recognized by the world for his great

wisdom, but he could not even compare with a boy like you who saw through it! In the early days, I caused two continents to plunge into misery. When I realized my error, God imprisoned me here!"

As the voice echoed in Rody's mind, Rody could clearly see Moses' body gradually grow dimmer. His body gradually turned into dusts of light, starting from his feet.

"You obtained God's staff, so I will give you a gift!" Moses showed a deep smile. "God created the Mystic Dragon. Inevitably, there are shackles to suppress it. Now, your body is a dragon's body. I will give you a set of shackles! The dragon has transformed seven times. Your body has now transformed four times. The shackles can still lock up the Mystic Dragon. However, the stronger you become, the stronger the Mystic Dragon would also become. One day, the Mystic Dragon would reach nine transformations. At that time, there is nothing that could lock up the Mystic Dragon. Remember my words. It can be eight. It cannot be nine!"

As the voice fell, the rest of Moses' body turned into a white light that gathered on Rody's finger. As the light scattered, Moses' body also disappeared, leaving behind a small silver ring on Rody's index finger.

...

"Something is strange!" Amu looked at Ice. Both of them had a surprised look in their eyes.

The "Protector God Boundary" had been deformed after being hit by Ni Lin and dented at the center of it. Suddenly, the Boundary flashed with a white light. It was the power of a pure and holy light. That power spread all over inside the Boundary and gradually strengthened it! The dimmed hexagram started to shine again.

Ni Lin detected this strange situation and shouted, "As expected of the Great Sorcerer Yin Xing! What else did you bring? What did that old fellow Sith give you?"

Yin Xing felt the heavy pressure on his body suddenly lifted. He gasped for breath and opened his eyes only to realize that the Patron Saint Boundary had automatically recovered. He also looked surprised.

The Patron Saint Boundary crystal was given to him by Sith. The Boundary was an extremely high ranked defensive spell. It was not a spell that Yin Xing, a Great Sorcerer, could use. That was why Sith had given him this precious crystal to use and save his life in a time of crisis. However, Ni Lin's burst-out power was astonishing. Even a spell like the defensive Boundary could not stop such a violent power.

However, even though Yin Xing was knowledgeable, he had never heard of the Patron Saint Boundary automatically restoring itself before.

Ni Lin suddenly had a weird expression and shouted, "Sith! Could it be that you have arrived?"

There was no reply.

However, Amu and Ice who were behind suddenly cried out, "Someone's here!"

Amu reacted the fastest. His body suddenly rushed to the back and his hand also drew his sword like lightning.

Clang! There was a loud sound as two swords clashed. The body of Amu and the other person shook. Both of them then stepped back.

Ice looked at the newcomer and coldly said, "So it was you, Paladin Augustine!"

Augustine took a deep breath and firmly stood as he said, "It's me!" He walked forward with large strides while the Black Veil Saint quietly followed from behind.

Ice and Amu saw the person behind Augustine and were stunned for a moment. They exchanged a glance and said, "I was wondering

who it was. Looks like it is Her Excellency, the Black Veil Saint."

The Black Veil Saint did not bother to look at the two. Her gaze fell onto Ni Lin and she said, "Paladin Ni Lin, please stop!"

Ni Lin turned his head around and sneered, "Mouse! What right do you have to give me orders? We are acting according to the orders of the Elders Council!"

Augustine sneered and said, "Is that so? But I have also received an order from the Elder! Let me handle this!"

Nilin then turned around to measure up Augustine as he sneered, "Augustine, the Elder told you to pacify the Black Veil Saint. Is she now willing to compromise and accept the orders of the Temple?"

Augustine gloomily replied, "Yes! The Black Veil Saint has accepted the orders to give me assistance here! Your job here is done. I will accomplish this order and then report back!"

Augustine fearlessly walked forward and looked at the "Protector God Boundary". He coldly said, "Your Excellency Yin Xing of the Sorcerer's Association. Is that you in there?"

Yin Xing had already given up all hope. He really regretted accepting this task. Just Ni Lin alone had almost taken his life. Now, there were four Paladins and also a Saint of the Temple that had cultivated until the level of a Great Practitioner.

"It is me. Is that you, Your Excellency Augustine?"

Augustine nodded and replied, "Yin Xing, please remove the Barrier. I am only ordered by the Temple to kill the heathen. It is best that you do not intervene!"

Yin Xing coldly replied, "Augustine, you are too simple! We are on different sides and the situation now is clear! Even if I pull back now, will you all let me leave? I understand the principle of silencing witnesses!"

Augustine looked at the three Dragon Paladins and said, "Ni Lin,

the Temple has ordered us to kill the envoy of the Radiant Empire. I believe it did not mention anything about killing anyone from the Sorcerer's Association?"

The three Dragon Paladins looked at each other. Ni Lin then coldly said, "Fine! I will not kill Yin Xing. However, he must follow us back to the Temple! He can go only if the Elders Council is willing to release him!"

Yin Xing started to hesitate. He was originally acting under orders. But now, completing his task would be a joke. Could a sorcerer like him fight against four Paladins and a Saint? It was impossible.

Why bother throwing away his life here?

It was not a big deal to follow them back to the Temple. Besides that, with his reputation, the Temple might also be ill at ease to publicly kill a high ranked sorcerer.

Another way of saying it was although he might die when he goes to the Temple, there was still a glimmer of hope. If he refused now, he would definitely die.

After thinking about this, Yin Xing could not help sighing and saying, "Alright! I will follow you to the Temple. My old friends at the Elders Council might not want my old life."

After that, he took a deep breath and slowly removed the Protector God Boundary around him. He then stood up and gently patted the dust off his robe. He then gave a wry smile and said, "Alright. Augustine, I hope you do not break your promise."

He did not direct his words to the other three Dragons but only to Augustine. This was because Augustine had always been trustworthy.

Rody's subordinate was still alive. He struggled to climb to Rody's side and supported Rody. He had a desperate look. Everybody else here had extraordinary strength. As a Grade 3

swordsman, trying to protect his lord was simply hopeless. But the stubborn man continued to hold his sword and viciously look at the powerful enemies surrounding him.

The three Dragon warriors stood together. Ni Lin had also retracted his wings and resumed his normal form.

Augustine looked at the two people on the floor. He then sighed and said, "Black Veil Saint, you do it! This is an order from the Temple!"

The Black Veil Saint looked at the warrior who was supporting the envoy. She was hesitant but still waved her sleeve lightly. The warrior felt a huge force pulling him that threw his body to the side.

The Black Veil Saint slowly walked up and carefully looked at the envoy's appearance.

The man lying on the ground was very young. He had a craggy face and seemed like a resolute man. The Black Veil Saint felt relieved when she saw this unfamiliar face.

"This Rody is not him."

Amu looked at Ice who was beside him. His eyes seemed to ask, "What do we do?"

Ice smiled. He looked at his sword and then brandished it to indicate 'Kill'.

Augustine was looking at the Black Veil Saint and did not see it.

The Black Veil Saint bent over and placed her palm over Rody's chest.

Augustine sighed and said, "Black Veil Saint, do it."

The Black Veil Saint closed her eyes and pressed her palm downwards.

'There is something hard!'

Her eyes suddenly opened and showed a strange expression.

Augustine frowned and said, "Black Veil Saint, what are you doing? You...you..."

The fingers of the Black Veil Saint moved like the wind and took off Rody's lapels to expose his chest.

On his sturdy chest was a silver chain with a black ring hanging on it.

Not only Augustine, but even the three Dragon Paladins noticed that the Black Veil Saint was acting strangely.

She slowly kneeled and trembled. Her shoulders trembled as if she was crying. She held the black ring with both hands as if she was spellbound.

"Black Veil Saint." Augustine's voice sank as he asked, "What's wrong?"

The Black Veil Saint took a deep breath. She slowly turned around with her cheeks stained with tears and softly said, "Augustine...I am sorry."

"What?"

The Black Veil Saint shook her head and replied, "I cannot kill this person!" Her eyes were firm. "I can kill anybody else in the world but I cannot kill him."

Augustine's expression changed. He stepped back and gritted his teeth. "Black Veil Saint, have you gone crazy?"

The three Dragon Paladins looked at each other. They even released their hold on their sword hilts. Ice suddenly burst into laughter. "Augustine, didn't you say that the Black Veil Saint will execute the orders? Are you telling lies?"

Amu grinned and said, "Fine! The Black Veil Saint is an apostate and must die!" After that, Amu stepped forward and was about to attack.

Augustine shouted, "Shut up! Who dares to attack?" He drew his sword and held it across in front as he shouted, "Stop right there!"

At that moment, Augustine burst out with golden fighting energy!

Ni Lin raised his eyebrows and coldly said, "Augustine, you have heard what the Black Veil Saint has said! She is openly disobeying the Temple's orders! Do you still intend to protect her?"

Augustine had a gloomy expression, but he did not step aside. He shouted towards the Black Veil Saint. "Black Veil Saint, what is the matter? Didn't you promise me earlier?"

The Black Veil Saint shook her head but she looked firm. She gritted her teeth and said, "Augustine, I am sorry! However, nobody is allowed to touch this person!"

Ni Lin laughed and loudly said, "Good! Good! Very good! The Black Veil Saint rebelled and must die! Killing people all the time is too troublesome. This is good! I feel happy that I can get rid of all of you at the same time!"

Ni Lin walked forward and raised his fist.

The three Paladins burst forth with golden fighting energy at the same time. The four Paladins of the Temple glared at each other. The four dazzling, golden fighting energy faced off.

Yin Xing was surprised but he quietly stepped back a few steps to stand at the side. It was an unexpected change of situation that he could not understand. However, when he saw the Saint and the Paladins have a falling out, he knew that the further he stood away, the better to avoid getting caught up in the crossfire.

"Kill!" Amu was the first to rush forward and slashed at the Black Veil Saint. Augustine stopped the attack with a backhand slash with nary a thought.

Clang! There was a loud clash. Amu then shouted, "Augustine! If you defend her, you will also be considered a rebel!"

Augustine had a complicated expression. He looked at the Black Veil Saint and softly asked, "Black Veil Saint, are you sure about this?"

The Black Veil Saint also has a complicated expression. Her facial expression looked calm, but her eyes revealed the upheaval in her heart.

Mouse slowly stood up with her face in tears. Her mouth curled into a smile.

She smiled as if the spring flowers were in full bloom and said, "In that case, from now on, the Black Veil Saint will be an apostate!"

Ni Lin 逆鳞 means 'inverse scale'. It is an idiom and it refers to the inverted scale of a dragon. It is similar to the English words 'rubbing people the wrong way'.

Chapter 229: Reptiles

"My dear Old Mark. What is going on down there?" Seth put down a gadget with a strange long cylindrical shape as he stood on top of the cliff. He looked at Old Mark beside him and asked, "Aren't you curious as well?"

Old Mark gave him a supercilious look and replied, "I know what you are thinking of! Don't even think I would go down there to save him!"

Seth laughed happily and asked, "What's wrong? An old monster like you is scared? That boy down there is our old friend."

Old Mark pursed his lips and replied, "Even if I am an idiot, I am not stupid enough to jump down from here. A single person jumping towards three Dragon Paladins! Who do you think I am? The God of War, Achilles?"

Seth shrugged his shoulders and no longer looked at Old Mark. He put the cylindrically shaped gadget at his eye and looked through it at a spot below the cliff as he muttered, "The situation below does not seem good. How interesting..."

In a clash of two powerful groups, the swords and blades face off.

Mouse was surrounded by powerful enemies and her face was pale, but she did not hesitate to say those words.

"Black Veil Apostate!"

She smiled brilliantly like the blooming flowers of spring and her beautiful eyes looked calmly at the Paladins.

...

"This voice...It's her!" Rody suddenly heard the determined voice in his ears. He suddenly raised his head and looked around the nebulous space as he loudly said, "It's her! It's the Black Veil Saint! It's Mouse!"

He immediately felt anxious. "Moses! Trouble is brewing outside! I need to get out right now!"

He was still surrounded by a white light and felt that his body was stiff and he could not move at all.

Moses replied in a hoarse and gloomy voice, "Boy, do you think these shackles are easy to cast? Patience! Don't think of so many things!"

Rody closed his eyes; his face distorted. He suddenly became excited and also angry when the voices outside gradually became more distinct and he heard every word...

...

Augustine and the three tyrannical Dragons were dumbfounded by the Black Veil Apostate's declaration. Amu then loudly shouted, "The Black Veil Saint rebelled against the religion and must die!" He was reckless and wanted to charge forward but Ice, who was beside him, pulled him back. Ice suddenly laughed and said, "Mouse has become an apostate but what about you, Augustine? What are you planning to do? I believe you still remember the Elder Council's secret order?"

Augustine's hand trembled as he looked at the Black Veil Saint inconceivably. His expression naturally turned even more unsightly. Before he could speak, Mouse smiled at Augustine and said, "You do not need to intervene in this matter, Augustine. I am an apostate. You do not need to show me mercy. Go ahead, attack me!"

Ni Lin shouted, "Augustine, why are you still hesitating?" He suddenly stepped forward and punched towards the Black Veil Saint.

Augustine was still struggling with his decision when he saw Ni Lin start to attack. His eyes flashed and his stalwart body moved forward. He raised his hand and blocked Ni Lin's fist as he said,

"Wait for a moment!"

Amu and Ice, who was behind, exchanged a glance and shouted in unison, "What else are you waiting for?"

They attacked at the same time from both sides.

Augustine gritted his teeth. He raised his sword in his right hand to block Amu's sword. However, he stretched out his left hand to grab Ice's sword blade!

Although he had the golden fighting energy to protect him, a Paladin's sword was no ordinary sword. His hand was immediately cut open. Blood flowed down the blade of the sword. Augustine's face was etched with pain. He was about to speak when Ni Lin sneered and punched him in the chest!

After the clash, Augustine was thrown back and crashed onto the ground. The golden armor was broken at the chest. Augustine knelt on one knee as he violently coughed out blood. He looked up and fiercely glared at Ni Lin as he said, "Despicable Dragon, you actually dared to attack me!"

Mouse had an ice-cold expression. She saw the attack on Augustine with agony in her face and coldly said, "Augustine, you no longer need to protect me. I have made up my mind! I will not change my decision!"

However, Augustine replied, "I will not watch you die!"

Ni Lin then shouted, "Amu! Stop him! Ice and I will deal with the Black Veil Saint!"

The three Dragons moved quickly. Amu blocked Augustine with his huge body and slashed downwards. Augustine was still kneeling and raised his sword over his head to block. Clang! When the swords connected, the overwhelming pressure caused a small crack to appear on the ground!

Resisting his opponent's sword, Augustine slowly stood up!

Amu suddenly shouted loudly. He raised his hand towards his chest and his palm quickly created a blade of wind. He then flicked his wrist and shot it towards Augustine. Augustine raised his arms to block but his body was still knocked back. His feet unexpectedly dug a deep pit in the ground!

"As expected of a Wind Dragon!" Augustine gritted his teeth and stood back up. He turned his body and attacked! His entire body was covered in a golden flame as he collided against Amu. The two Paladins' swords clashed again, creating earth-shatteringly loud explosions.

Ni Lin was pleased when he saw Amu block Augustine effectively. He laughed as he looked at the Black Veil Saint and softly said, "Your Excellency Mouse, let me see your strength! Show me what the strongest Saint of the Temple is like!"

Mouse showed a mocking gaze and said, "No wonder the others said that Dragons are a despicable race. You clearly knew that I am a sorcerer who is generally not good at melee combat. Yet you said these kinds of words to me! But if you wish to see it, I will show it to you!"

She put her palms together. Her two index fingers stretched out and quickly created a white ball of light. The ball of light was about the size of a fist and it instantly burst open.

Ni Lin's eyes flashed sternly and said, "Fight!"

Ice acted faster than Ni Lin. He raised his hand and shot out a cold fighting energy. Mouse smiled coldly. She maintained the ball of light with one hand and created a qi barrier with the other. Ni Lin then punched with his fist.

"Black Veil Saint!" Although Augustine was fighting fiercely with Amu, he suddenly roared loudly when he saw the urgency.

However, the Black Veil Saint was not hit by Ni Lin as Augustine had expected.

When Ni Lin's fist flew forward, the ball of light rapidly spread out and a crack opened up!

It was a crack!

The Black Veil Saint's sorcery had unexpectedly opened a crack in the air!

Ni Lin felt his fist tightened as a ghastly mucus like claw appeared and grabbed his wrist!

"What is this!" Ni Lin cried out in alarm and tried to pull back his hand. However, the claw held his hand very tightly. When Ni Lin retreated, the claw was pulled out instead!

The black crack became bigger. Suddenly, there was a roar and a huge monster stepped out from the crack!

The monster was twice as large as the Dragon warriors. It stood on the ground with its huge feet. Its body was totally covered in green mucus. It was extremely disgusting. It wore a set of tattered armor that exposed its broken body and muscles. Its head was like a wolf's head. It only wore half a helmet which exposed his long black hair.

The monster's hand grabbed Ni Lin's wrist. Its other hand was holding a double-edged battle-axe. It then raised the axe and swung it down on Ni Lin.

"Hmph!" Ni Lin coldly grunted and blocked the axe. Ni Lin took this opportunity to shake off the claw that was holding him and stepped back. They were shocked to see the monster in front of them.

"It is a War Spirit!" Ni Lin said in a deep voice, "Mouse! I didn't expect you to use summoning spells and even call out such a monster!"

Mouse ignored him. She slowly sat down and closed her eyes. She placed both hands on her chest while holding up her two index fingers.

A summoning spell could summon powerful creatures, but it also consumed a lot of magic power. The War Spirit was a powerful warrior but its every move in this world would consume Mouse's power!

The monstrous War Spirit roared to the skies and swung its axe, creating a swift and fierce wind. Ni Lin sneered. He jumped high up in the air and punched the monster's face. The War Spirit roared even more violently. It did not bother to dodge but instead swung its claw to catch Ni Lin's neck.

Ice took advantage of this moment to chop the monster's legs with his sword!

"Aouu!" The monster suddenly howled; the monster's legs and face were attacked at the same time. The monster's face had almost sunken in from the punch and its leg armor had been cut through by Ice. The sword had also cut off a piece of flesh but the War Spirit did not know pain. Ni Lin was hit in the chest by the monster and stumbled back a few steps as he coughed violently.

Ice was cunning. He realized that the War Spirit was not agile. He attacked the monster by dodging left and right most of the time and only thrusting his sword now and then to injure it!

The scene had started to turn chaotic. Two Paladins were locked in battle at one end. Another two more Paladins were also endlessly fighting against the War Spirit!

Originally, a single War Spirit would not be enough to ward off a Dragon Paladin. However, the Black Veil Saint was out of options as summoning the War Spirit was her limit based on her sorcery powers. The Black Veil Saint also understood that she was a sorcerer. If she were to engage in melee combat, she would be easily killed by the Paladins!

The spirit was able to stall the two Paladins but the Black Veil Saint knew that it would only be a short while before the two Paladins got rid of the War Spirit. The War Spirit was powerful as

it knew no pain and exhaustion. However, against the powerful Dragon Paladins, it could only stall them for a while at most.

Sure enough, Ni Lin suddenly cried out. The dragon aura in his body reached a peak state and he punched with his fist. He had condensed all his strength into this punch. Before the punch connected, a whirlwind of qi even appeared! That qi struck the War Spirit and tore apart its armor. The War Spirit cried out as its chest was punched through by the fist. The fighting energy in Ni Lin's arm suddenly swelled up. The War Spirit then roared before its upper body blew up!

"Let us see what else you've got!" Ni Lin grinned hideously as he stretched out his hand to grab the Black Veil Saint.

Augustine became anxious and roared loudly. He ignored Amu and tried to rush past him. Amu then slashed his left shoulder and drew out blood.

Augustine knocked away Ni Lin's hand with his fist and at the same time blocked Ice's sneak attack with his sword. After that, Augustine suddenly stumbled backward.

Ice grinned cynically. His ice-and-snow fighting energy flowed through the sword and shot out at Augustine! Augustine then felt half of his body go numb and suddenly roared loudly. The fighting energy in his body tripled. He slashed in an arc, forcing the other three to move back. After that, he could not hold on anymore and fell sitting down on the floor.

At that moment, half of his body was covered in blood. He looked at the three Dragons with a pale face and gritted his teeth. "The three of you intend to be ruthless today?"

The Black Veil Saint sighed and asked, "Augustine, is this worth the trouble?"

...

"Aiya, aiya...The battle down there is really intense." Seth smiled

and said, "Are those few people the so-called legendary Dragons? Old Mark, I am still curious. If you were to jump down right now, how long can you fight against them?"

Old Mark vigilantly stepped back and replied, "Don't even think about it!" Old Mark closed his eyes and thought about it for a moment before replying, "If it is one against one, I am confident that I can defeat a Dragon as our strength is about equal. But right now, there are three of them down there! My old bones won't be able to resist their attacks!"

Seth sneered and said, "Alright. Then let us continue and watch. But if it reaches a critical moment, I cannot stand here and watch... It would be a pity if I do not participate in something so interesting."

Old Mark glanced at him and said, "You better speak softly. Although I have created a boundary here, the people down there are monsters. There is a chance that they would notice it."

...

"Old man, are you still not done? The situation outside is turning bad!" Rody shouted from his heart. "Hurry! Hurry! Hurry!"

His body was wrapped in a strange qi mass. Meanwhile, the sounds from outside were streaming in nonstop; every word and every sentence was crystal clear!

The Black Veil Saint, Mouse, was outside! She was just by his side!

Although he did not know why she appeared, the words 'Black Veil Apostate' made Rody dumbfounded.

Black Veil Apostate!

Rody could only see darkness in front of him as he listened to the sounds of shouting and fighting outside. But he could not move a single finger!

Suddenly, he heard Moses speak in his ear, "The shackle is created. Be sure not to remove that ring!"

Rody finally felt relieved and asked, "Moses, is everything done?"

Moses' voice was filled with pride as he said, "Of course it is! It was actually done earlier, but I simply did not tell you!"

Rody cursed, "You have already completed it earlier?"

"Of course! It is more interesting if the hero appears at the most opportune moment!"

"Old...All of you who once believed in God's teachings are all crazy!" Rody could not help but angrily shout.

Moses' voice gradually became softer, "My desire is complete. You watch yourself." His voice then vanished completely and the surrounding space became quiet.

Rody opened his eyes as if he had just gone through many long, dark years.

Rody felt himself move as light fell into his eyes.

His body once again had a sense of perception, keenness, and alertness. His strength gradually returned and he had regained control of his body! His whole body was filled with energy and felt as if the energy was about to burst out of his body. Rody subconsciously stroked the ring on his finger.

Then, he moved!

The three Dragon Paladins were about to act when they looked astonishingly behind the Black Veil Saint!

Rody slowly sat up and he started to slowly stretched his body. The Black Veil Saint quickly turned around and looked surprised as she saw Rody got back up. Augustine's expression turned even more puzzled.

Rody stood up and patted the Black Veil Saint's shoulder gently. He softly said, "I heard everything." He gazed at her eyes and said

firmly, "If you do not forget me, I will not forget you!"

Tears flowed from the Black Veil Saint's eyes. Rody then gently reached out with his hand to wipe her tears. He then turned around and looked haughtily at the three Dragon warriors.

"Hmm. One Fire Dragon, one Snow Dragon and one Wind Dragon..." Rody looked at the three Dragon Paladins. He then shook his head, sighed, and touched his forehead. He gave a wry smile and said, "Why does my mind give me so much information as if I naturally knew what you are?"

Amu had an indignant expression and shouted, "Bastard. How dare you talk to us like that?" Ni Lin, however, felt that something was wrong and asked, "You...Are you the Radiant Empire's envoy?"

...

"Sigh. Look! That boy has woken up!" Seth seemed upset and said, "He has already snatched the interesting thing away. Old Mark, this is all your fault!"

Old Mark folded his arms, feeling too lazy to care about the unreasonable Young Master.

Seth continued to look at the figures below the cliff with that cylindrical gadget. He then gave a strange expression and said, "Strange. Something is not quite right about that boy..."

...

Rody suddenly revealed a mocking smile. He stretched out his hands as if he was stretching his waist lazily while looking at the three Dragon Paladins. He then loudly said, "I have slept for a very long time! You three reptiles, come and help me warm up!"

Chapter 230: Next

Silence...

Finally, Amu and Ice burst out laughing. Amu said, "Could it be that the person who came from the Radiant Continent is a madman?"

Ice said, "Did he damage his head?"

Ni Lin asked gloomily, "What did you say earlier?"

Rody shook his head and seemed to look at the sky, "Why? Why are people unable to accept things that are beyond them? Perhaps they do not believe in my words right from the beginning? Or perhaps they deliberately laugh to hide the uneasiness in their hearts?" Rody then gave a wry smile as he shook his head. He sighed and muttered, "Why did I suddenly say these strange words?"

"Old man Moses, these are the thoughts you have left behind for me..."

The Black Veil Saint was calm as she looked at the man in front of her. She did not look away and had resolute eyes.

Rody laughed and asked, "Do you believe my words?"

The Black Veil Saint nodded softly. Her beautiful hair fell to the side of her head. Rody resisted stretching out to her forehead to run his fingers through her hair. He whispered, "You have not changed. You are still a fool."

Rody slowly walked forward, beyond Augustine who was obstructing the three Dragon Paladins. He did not look back at the seriously injured Paladin but simply said, "Uncle, go and take a good rest."

"Un...Uncle1?"

Augustine did not collapse from all the injuries he sustained from

the three Paladins. However, Rody's words almost made him collapse from anger.

...

"Hahaha..." Seth laughed uncontrollably. "How funny. This boy has really changed. 'Uncle'?"

Old Mark frowned and asked, "What is so funny about it? Madman of the Tulip Family."

Seth sighed and softly said, "Don't you think that his tone and his infuriating manner is becoming more like me?"

Old Mark gave him a supercilious look.

...

Rody stood in front of the three Dragon Paladins and slowly drew out the Dragon Spell Scimitar from his waist. He gently drew a line across the ground. He then stood outside of the line and said, "Across this line here is my territory. You are all not allowed to cross it!"

The three Paladins were all much taller than Rody. Rody stood in front of the three of them and looked at them who were each enveloped with blazing golden fighting energy. He then said, "Come on. Will you all attack together? Or one at a time?"

Ni Lin sneered and said, "What a joke! Do you think we need three Dragon Paladins to deal with one madman of the Radiant Continent?"

Ice shook his head and said, "Amu, we will leave this to you."

The colossus-like Amu grinned cynically while he cracked his knuckles.

The people around them voluntarily made space for them. The Great Sorceror Yin Xing moved far away. Ni Lin and Ice had also moved back. They folded their hands and pondered while looking at the scene.

However, Ni Lin instinctively had a complicated expression...

"Kill!" Amu suddenly roared loudly. He curled up his huge body and shot towards Rody like a meteor. His huge fists were like the fists of the Gods, punching towards Rody's chest.

Rody was hit by this heavy blow and flew away into the sky!

Surprisingly, he did not even counter this first attack!

Amu laughed wildly as his huge body soared towards the sky. Although his body was huge, he was still very agile. He was so quick that he had already jumped above Rody's head!

The sword in his hands flashed coldly as he accurately slashed the crown of Rody's head.

The moment he slashed downwards, the sound of the thunderclap at the head shocked everyone!

Rody did not even groan as he fell back towards the ground. His fall was faster compared to the speed when he shot up!

Amu's body stopped moving for a short while. After that, his huge body moved quickly like a rabbit. He instantly twisted his body and dived down. He was still faster than Rody's falling speed. It was like his enemy was his shadow. Relentlessly, he entangled himself with Rody.

Then Amu punched him again!

The punch once again struck Rody's chest, causing his entire body to curl forward, with his back facing the ground. He then heavily crashed into the ground and created a large hole that was half a meter wide!

There was a muffled sound as Amu landed by his side with both huge legs slamming onto the ground, causing a few cracks to appear. He then shouted furiously and continuously attacked Rody who was on the ground like a violent storm.

It seemed Rody could not fight back at all. Rody's face, chest and

abdomen were pummeled continuously!

Each strike from Amu's fists or sword came together with a faint thunderous sound. There was a huge blast, forcing the others to move back even more. Dust flew into the sky. Amu's movements became faster and faster. Finally, only his blurred silhouette was visible but not his movements.

"This madman must have really made Amu angry! He actually used his Wind Dragon Twenty-Nine Strikes!" Ice took a deep breath and seemed surprised by Amu's imposing aura.

This guy from the Radiant Empire is finished! Augustine thought.

Even I would probably not be able to withstand against those storm-like attacks. On top of that, this fool did not parry a single strike! He was beaten up since the start and was now simply lying down there.

While everybody had their own thoughts, Amu suddenly gave an earthshaking dragon's cry.

A pair of dragon wings also appeared behind his back. As he cried out, he punched the ground beside Rody. The huge impact actually launched Rody up. Amu then kicked Rody's back and kicked it again when he flew to the skies with his wings flapping. He flew above Rody again as his fighting energy multiplied. He pointed his sword at Rody from a higher ground and chanted a few strange words slowly and clearly.

"Dragon language!"

Augustine, the Black Veil Saint, and even Seth, who was hiding at the clifftop, had the same thought.

Ice shouted, "Amu has gone mad!"

An apparition² instantly separated from Amu's huge body. The golden apparition was like his clone. The apparition then descended and hit Rody's body.

A huge blade of wind in a circular arc tore Rody's upper clothes into pieces. Amu then laughed wildly as the sword in his hands shot forward.

"Wind Dragon Slash!" Ice exclaimed. "Amu is crazy!"

The two of them spread out their dragon wings at the same time. They then firmly wrapped their wings around their bodies. Their dragon auras also formed a light around them.

Augustine shouted, "Shit!" He immediately took his sword and drew a circle around himself and the Black Veil Saint. Golden fighting energy came out from the circle the moment it was completed. The circular-shaped fighting energy seemed to form a wall and protect those behind it. After that, there was a loud explosion.

The huge blast caused Augustine's wall to shake. The golden fighting energy on his body grew even more intense as he tried to maintain the protective circle.

A huge crater appeared on the ground. There was a long crack that was one meter deep and ten meters long that extended to both sides of the crater and stretched into the woods.

It was as if the entire ground was cut into two by Amu's final attack.

Amu finally descended to Rody's side. He had launched a series of attacks and even used a lot of his energy to deploy his ultimate attack. At the moment, he was gasping for breath. He looked at his opponent lying at his feet. His opponent had taken all of his attacks with his body. However, the more Amu hit his opponent, the more uneasy he felt. The indescribable fear forced him to use his strongest attack.

The opponent I fought can't even strike back and yet I used my strongest attack?

Fortunately, nothing strange had happened. The battle had gone

very smoothly. The storm-like attack right from the beginning had subdued the enemy.

Amu breathed out. When the dust started to settle, he suddenly heard a sound. The gravel below him moved!

Immediately after that, he saw a figure slowly got up and stood right in front of him.

That face was very close to him. It was a face without any expression.

There was no expression of pain, anger or confusion. It only seemed to have a faint hint of mockery. After that, his opponent laughed a little.

He seemed to ask in a soft voice, "Are you done?"

At that moment, Amu turned stiff and cold. All of his cold sweat came out. His opponent's cold voice seemed to carry an irresistible charm. Amu instinctively answered in a trembling voice, "I...I am done."

Rody nodded indifferently. He then said in a cold voice, "Then, now it is my turn."

Amu suddenly felt his chest turn cold. Before he realized it, his opponent's palm had already been placed on his chest...

This feels cooling...

These were the Wind Dragon Warrior Amu's last thoughts!

Everyone, including Ni Lin and Ice, clearly saw the shockingly indescribable scene.

Rody's palm was placed lightly on Amu's chest. Immediately, a dazzling and brilliant light appeared at the place between Rody's palm and Amu's chest. The glaring light made everyone instinctively look away. The moment they looked back, Rody's attack was already over.

Blood burst out from the huge Wind Dragon Paladin Amu's body

starting from his chest. After that, there were more popping sounds as everything above his chest — including his arms, neck, and head — started to burst out blood.

The blood scattered in all directions as though it was a bloody fireworks display.

After the top half of his body had burst into a bloody mess and disappeared, the remaining lower half of his body fell to the ground.

...

Augustine could no longer stand. The Wind Dragon Amu that he was struggling against was instantly annihilated by Rody in just one strike!

This person...He is definitely not human!

He suddenly looked back at the Black Veil Saint and saw that she was also surprised. Augustine asked in a hoarse voice, "Black Veil Saint, who is this guy?"

The Black Veil Saint took a deep breath while trying to regain her composure. She smiled once more and replied, "His name is Rody. He is the Radiant Empire's Duke of the Tulip Family. He is also the man that I fell in love with."

'The Duke...of the Tulip Family?'

...

"He is not human. He is definitely not human!" It was as if Seth had been frozen for a long time before he recovered. He sighed and looked back at Old Mark. He saw that Old Mark had the same expression as him.

"Old Mark, did you know that this boy was so powerful?"

Old Mark shook his head and replied, "Of course not! Hell, last time, I could kill him easily but now..."

Seth laughed bitterly and said, "Now it looks like he can easily

kill you with one hand."

Old Mark was speechless.

Seth frowned for a moment and seemed to have made a resolution. After that, he said, "I have come to a decision!"

"What have you decided?" Old Mark frowned.

Seth took a deep breath and said with an unprecedented serious expression. "I have decided that from now on, I do not want to have any dealings with this boy ever again! I do not want to have any kind of relationship with him...These kinds of things are too dangerous!" Seth had a solemn expression, and with a voice totally devoid of any frivolous or mocking nature, he said, "This boy is simply a devil. He is not human!"

...

Half of Rody's body had been soiled red from the Wind Dragon's blood. His face and his hair were also soiled red. He then turned around to look at the other two dumbstruck and frightened Dragons.

"Looks like the blood of Dragons is also red. It is no different from humans." Rody sneered as he slowly wiped the blood from his face. He looked at the fresh blood on his hands and gave a mocking smile. "To kill a person, a single strike is enough!"

Rody then held his scimitar with one hand and slowly stepped forward. He looked at the two frightened Dragon Paladins—he had not drawn his scimitar at all in the earlier fight!

Rody stretched out his hand and, with his finger, beckoned the two Dragon Paladins. He then said in a low voice, "Next!"

Uncle. The Chinese call everybody who is much older than themselves 'uncle' as an honorific. It's the equivalent of 'Sir'.

The apparition here is 光影 Light shadow.

Chapter 231: Rules

"You are powerful!" Ni Lin trembled faintly. "You are the strongest opponent I have ever encountered! Can you tell me? What was the attack you used to kill Amu?"

Rody lowered his head and looked at Ni Lin from the corner of his eyes. "You noticed it?"

"Yes!" Ni Lin was frightened, but he still gritted his teeth and replied, "I can feel it very clearly! That was a genuine Dragon God's aura! It is the most primitive and pure dragon's aura!"

He had clenched his fists but they still trembled. "I cannot understand. You are obviously a human. Why do you have such a powerful dragon's aura?"

Ni Lin's trembling gradually became fiercer. The blazing golden flames of his fighting energy that enveloped his body gradually disappeared.

Ice immediately felt that something was different. He could not help but turn to the side and look at Ni Lin in surprise. They were near each other and they were both Dragons. He could feel his boss' body going through some changes.

A dragon has inverted scales. They become enraged when those scales are touched.

A fearsome pressure of the dragon's aura began to emerge from Ni Lin's body. The fierce dragon's aura even made Ice, who was also a Dragon, feel an indescribable fear in his heart. He began to step back and he spoke with a trembling voice, "Ni Lin, you!"

The long dragon wings on Ni Lin's back had disappeared. The eyes and long and thin pupils of his eyes turned black. His eyes no longer showed any emotion. "You may be very powerful! Perhaps you may be even more powerful than me. But as the strongest of the Dragon race, I still want to fight you to the death!"

Nilin opened his big hands and suddenly shouted, "Sa. Mo. Li. Ya!"

Countless rays of fierce aura shot out from his body. The dust and the leaves on the ground slowly floated into the air. The space within one hundred meters around him was shrouded by his aura.

"A dragon boundary." As a sorcerer, she could immediately tell that this was a dragon's most advanced and peculiar magical boundary.

According to the ancient legends, a powerful dragon can use their own aura to create something that was similar to a human sorcerer's boundary.

However, the dragon boundary was much more powerful. This was because the boundaries were created according to their own skill types and would be most suitable for them in battle!

Rody quietly watched Ni Lin slowly create his boundary. He simply stood there and did not stop Ni Lin.

Rody even gently rubbed his forehead. He smiled and said, "Hm. A dragon boundary. Looks like you are much more powerful than that big fellow earlier. But I wonder what kind of battlefield would suit you the most?"

It was fire!

Ni Lin did not need to give a reply as the air within his boundary instantly became hot. The floating leaves began to burn spontaneously and gradually turned into floating specks of fire.

Rody felt his skin burn. He even clearly felt his clothes gradually heat up. After that, there were faint warnings of spontaneous combustion.

The Black Veil Saint was the quickest to respond to the situation. She had already created a small boundary to protect herself and Augustine.

That Snow Dragon, Ice, also felt uncomfortable in the hot environment as his sweat poured down his face. He had long since retreated several steps away and covered himself inside walls of ice.

The Grand Sorcerer Yin Xing hesitated for a moment but he did not leave immediately. After heaving a sigh, he also created a sorcerer boundary.

"Oh. It seems that the Dragon race is quite powerful. At the very least, one would not need to fear the cold of winter with such a furnace." Seth laughed. He had put down the long cylindrical gadget and stretched out his hands to feel the heat as he smiled pleasantly.

Old Mark crossed his arms and coldly said, "A furnace? Only you can think of this. Try and stand closer. Then you will know how formidable that is! Just so you know, warming yourself by the furnace is totally different from burning like a charcoal in it!"

The air within the dragon boundary seemed to have started burning. Wave after wave of heat swept towards Rody and the ground beneath his feet started to emit black smoke. Even the flames could faintly be seen in the air.

However, the rising flames could not approach Rody's body. Whenever the flames got close to him, it would separate into two and go in different directions.

Ni Lin said in a low voice, "Just now when you fought against Amu, you did not strike back on purpose and merely tested him."

For a moment, Rody looked surprised and said, "You could also guess that?"

Ni Lin hmped and said, "I am not an idiot!" He grinned cynically and said, "I can feel it. Although you can use a powerful dragon's aura that is even more powerful than what I can imagine, it seems as though you do not dare to use it! You did not strike back against

Amu earlier and unwaveringly withstood his attacks. This was to test how much dragon aura your body could handle. Am I right?"

His eyes then flashed vigilantly as he continued, "That was why, after you finished testing it out, you killed Amu as quickly as possible so that you could reduce the amount of dragon aura you used!"

Rody raised his eyebrow and replied, "Looks like this reptile is not too stupid."

Ni Lin shouted, "Shut up! Don't even think of using these words to infuriate me! It will not do you any good!" He then pointed to himself with his thumb. "My name is Ni Lin! I was born more easily angered compared to the other dragons! Another difference is that my combat effectiveness would increase the angrier I become! At the same time, my mind would also remain sober when I am angry!"

"Oh?" Rody laughed. "That is unexpected," Rody said as he knocked his forehead. "I did not expect Dragons to also have multiple personality disorders..."

"Shut up!" Ni Lin's expression changed drastically. Crimson sheets of flames rose suddenly and violently from his body. He was like a demon standing inside the blazing flames of hell!

Rody suddenly stretched out his hand gently and looked at the drifting sparks gently falling onto his palm. Rody had a calm expression. He was calm and slowly spoke in a low tone, "Dragon boundary...It sounds good. It creates an environment that is best for the user and is an extremely useful sorcery! But it is a pity..."

"What is pitiful?"

Rody sighed, "It is a pity that the Dragon race is wrong." Gradually, Rody's expression changed. His eyes were gradually filled with the utmost reverence. "There was once a teacher that I respected. He told me that everything in this world has a rule! The

rotation of day and night, the movement of the stars, the changes of the four seasons. All of these are governed by rules! What we need to do is to comprehend these rules and master them!"

Rody's face seemed to have a kind of unusual radiance. The small sparks on his palm did not immediately disappear. Instead, it seemed to become alive and gently float up!

"That person told me that God was so powerful because they created the rules and all of the rules were under their control. As they could manipulate space, they can even make it snow in June. They can let thunder strike during winter. They can even stop time and distort space. This is why God is so powerful and can place themselves above all of creation."

The sparks in Rody's hands suddenly started to surge and burn fiercely. Suddenly, it grew and then shrank, moved right and then left, and then transformed into different shapes in Rody's palms!

Rody had a mocking sneer while looking at Ni Lin.

Ni Lin could no longer exercise patience. He suddenly roared. With both feet on the ground, he created a flaming whirlwind and shot at Rody!

The spiral-shaped flame ruthlessly flew forward. Rody did not even seem to spare it a glance and casually waved his hand to block it.

Boom! The spiral-shaped flames that shot towards Rody were blocked with a single hand! The flames then split apart and disintegrated. Ni Lin looked solemn. His attack had been blocked right in front. Despite Nilin's ferocious and frightening expression, he could not move an inch forward!

Rody sighed and said, "You are already very powerful. You know how to utilize the rules to obtain an advantage! Unfortunately, you do not know how to 'create' your own rules!"

Rody heaved a sigh and moved his hand outwards lightly.

Immediately, Ni Lin's huge body fell and flew backward. He rolled several times in the air before he landed on his feet. Two deep cavities appeared where he landed. Ni Lin looked surprised. He could feel a bone-piercing cold from his opponent's fist.

Cold? Hell! It was a cold feeling!

Rody looked at the jumping sparks in his palm with a dignified expression. He closed his eyes and softly said, "In this world, there is a type of humans who are closest to the Gods. This is because they could create their own space within God's world! They could break the old rules in their own domain and re-create their own new rules! These people, they are called..."

He suddenly opened his eyes and smiled lightly, "Domain Masters!"

Rody's eyes suddenly showed a strange vigor. He suddenly pointed the index finger of his other hand and drew a few strokes in the air!

The jumping sparks in the other hand instantly solidified into ice!

The sparkling clear ice crystal that appeared in his hand gave off a slight chill as it floated unhurriedly in the scorching hot dragon boundary.

The flames continued to rage all around, but the ice crystal did not melt at all.

Rody looked at the heat waves surrounding the gently floating ice crystal and tears started to flow from the corners of his eyes.

Master Autumn, I finally understand what you have told me!

The feeble chill from the ice crystal then exploded!

The icy-cold chill then grew and spread very quickly and the violent flame tongues surging in the heat waves instantly solidified and became ice!

The sounds of the ice condensing fizzed and hissed non-stop as the transformation continued to spread. Ni Lin's mouth gaped open as he watched the dragon boundary he created with his own dragon aura, instantly turned into a world of snow and ice!

The spreading chill had reached his body and he heard fizzing and hissing sounds. He then found his feet frozen to the ground!

"What is going on?" Ni Lin roared angrily.

Rody smiled as the ice crystal fell onto his palm. He then made a few light strokes with the index finger of his other hand and the ice flower disintegrated and disappeared.

"I broke your rules and created my own space! In this space, the rules must obey me! That is because this is my 'domain'!" Rody smiled happily and pointed to his own nose. "My place, my rules!"

...

Domain!

Domain power!

Ni Lin's roar seemed as though it was cut halfway by an invisible blade as he looked at his opponent with surprise. The Black Veil Saint was also surprised. She gazed at Rody's back, her face incredulous yet pleasantly surprised. Augustine was deathly pale as he dumbly looked at his own sword. He murmured the words Rody had said earlier. "Rules..."

Old Mark was standing on top of the cliff with his body halfway over it. He seemed to exhale after a long time and then looked back at Seth and said, "He really does have a strong domain power!"

Seth who had been laughing since earlier then fell into deep thought. "Rules...Rules..." He then raised his head and looked at Old Mark with a meaningful smile. "Rules. What an extremely marvelous name!"

...

"I...I don't believe this!" Ni Lin suddenly screamed. Blazing flames once again erupted from his body and the ice that froze his feet to the ground shattered. Once again, he shot towards Rody like a whirlwind.

The Fire Dragon's strength was really extraordinary. Like a shooting star, he reached in front of Rody in a single breath.

Time then stopped!

The entire space seemed to distort a little. Ni Lin's attack suddenly stopped, like pieces of ice, frozen in this space! His large body remained in an attacking posture but motionless in front of Rody.

Rody raised a single finger slowly and then placed it on Ni Lin's forehead...

Immediately, a blood arrow shot out from the back of his head. Blood and brain matter sprayed out and turned to ice!

Time continued to move again and Ni Lin's large body suddenly crashed onto the ground at Rody's feet. His corpse was just behind the line that Rody had drawn.

Rody shook his head and turned around to look at the kneeling and deathly pale Ice Dragon that was in a daze. He then softly said, "Looks like it is no longer necessary to fight."

Chapter 232: Shackles

"Looks like it is no longer necessary to fight." Rody stood in front of the Ice Dragon that had turned pale and looked at him in a commanding position.

Unexpectedly, the Ice Dragon suddenly laughed in despair and slowly shook his head. "Yes. It is really not necessary to fight anymore." He looked up at Rody and said, "First, you killed Amu. After that, you killed Ni Lin. Even if I challenge you, you will just send me to my death."

Rody coldly said, "Although I do not like indiscriminate killing, you all have just killed all my men. No matter what, you will not escape today!"

By the time Rody finished his sentence, he had already stretched out his hand and placed it on Ice's head.

The Ice Dragon smiled. He closed his eyes and waited for his death.

...

"Looks like he is still a stupid boy." Seth sighed. "If it was me, I would have spared the Dragon and take him in as a subordinate. It would be very interesting to have a Dragon as a pet. How could a dozen warriors be compared to a Dragon with the rank of a Paladin?"

Old Mark gave a bitter laugh and said, "Perhaps this is the biggest difference between you and him."

At that moment, a strange gloomy white light suddenly appeared at Rody's palm that was on Ice's head. The light looks white but yet was gloomy and cold.

Rody drew his scimitar. The scimitar flashed and after a grating sound, Ice's head shot to the sky. The strange thing was that not a single drop of blood came out. It was as if this Dragon did not have

blood. The moment the head separated from the body, the corpse fell to the ground. The light in Rody's hand then gradually dispersed.

Rody then flicked his wrist and retrieved the light, then held it in his hand. The light was kneaded into a ball. He then gently stroked the scimitar blade. Gradually, the light was pushed into the blade of the scimitar!

Seth had sharp eyes. He saw and then laughed, "Good! Good one! Swords and blades have souls too! He actually took the Dragon's soul to refine it as the blade's soul. Kill a Dragon and get an artifact! That Dragon's soul would live on forever in that blade. It has become the soul of the blade. This is truly a sinister method!"

Old Mark sighed. "That Dragon's soul is forever trapped in that blade! This is truly a cruel punishment."

Rody slowly looked at the blade as the light in it gradually subsided. Only the engraved dragon spell flashed with a strange light. Rody sheathed his sword. He then turned back to look at the Black Veil Saint and smiled, "Alright. It is done now."

The Black Veil Saint had long stood up and looked at Rody blankly. Rody had unexpectedly mastered domain power and instantly defeated three Dragons. His extraordinary strength not only shocked her, it made her feel confused as well. At that moment, Rody smiled gently at her, his face no longer the same as when she was in the Northwest. However, his warm eyes and sincere smile were the same as in the old days.

The Black Veil Saint suddenly called out softly and moved a few steps forward to hug Rody. Rody was astonished for a moment and did not know what to do. He instinctively held Mouse and whispered, "My body is all bloodied."

Mouse raised her head to see an embarrassed face in close proximity. She smiled sweetly and said, "I don't care."

The two of them hugged for a long time and their feelings surged. They thought back to the day they separated in the Northwest and also the day the Tulip flower bloomed in the night sky above the Thunder City. They embraced each other and forgot about their surroundings for a moment.

The sorcerer Yin Xing was in a dilemma. He had been watching the fight from a distance. What he initially thought of as a hopeless situation had suddenly turned around. The Radiant Empire's envoy unexpectedly had terrifying strength. The three Paladins from the Temple could not even parry one strike from him. However, as the situation turned optimistic, his position became more delicate.

He was initially dispatched to protect the envoy but in the end, the envoy protected him. He hesitated for a moment, not knowing if he should leave. After thinking for a moment, he walked forward and was about to say something when Augustine looked at him and shook his head. Augustine smiled and whispered, "Wait for a while."

Rody and Mouse finally stopped their embrace. Mouse turned around to see Augustine and Yin Xing looking at them with a weird stare. Even if she was the Black Veil Saint, she could not help blushing. Then she said, "Let go of me."

Rody was also a little embarrassed and gave a gentle cough. He then walked towards Augustine and softly asked, "Are you also a Paladin of the Temple?"

Augustine felt agonized and said, "I was a Paladin. Now..." He looked at the Black Veil Saint and sighed. "Now, it is hard to say..."

Mouse was apologetic as she said, "Augustine, if it was not because of me, you wouldn't have..."

Augustine shook his head and replied, "Words are useless!" His voice sounded lonely. "I will report today's matter back to the Elder in the Temple. How they decide to punish me is something I

will handle in the future."

Mouse frowned and asked, "Augustine, you still want to return to the Temple? Today, three Paladins have died. Do you think the Elder would spare you if you return to the Temple?"

Augustine looked perplexed. He hesitated for a moment and then said, "No matter what, I cannot become an apostate! Black Veil Saint...I envy the fact that you can leave! However, I grew up in the Temple. My entire life has already been given to the Temple. It is impossible for me to leave like you."

Before Mouse could say any more, Augustine waved his hand and stopped her. He then looked at Rody and took a deep breath. "[Your Excellency is so powerful that I am too far behind you!](#) Today, the Black Veil Saint has become an apostate for you. The Temple is now her enemy. I hope that you can protect her in the future so that she would no longer suffer! Du..."

Rody immediately interrupted Augustine the moment he realized that Augustine was about to complete saying the last word. "No need to say more! I love Mouse and will definitely protect her!" Rody looked at Augustine's face with a strange gaze.

Augustine was not a fool. After staring blankly a little, he realized that Rody did not want his identity to be revealed. He took a look at Rody, unable to understand why Rody wanted to hide his identity. However, Rody had saved both his and the Black Veil Saint's lives. Since Rody did not want to reveal his identity, Augustine would not speak a word.

Augustine pondered for a moment and quietly replied. "Don't worry. When I return to the Temple, I will not speak of things that I should not."

Rody was relieved. He said, "That would be best!" He then frowned, "Mister Augustine, if things do not work out, please remember that you have friends here!" He then went up to Augustine and softly said, "If it were not for you, something bad

would have happened to the Black Veil Saint. If things don't work out, I will be waiting for you in the South!"

The Black Veil Saint was smart too. She was watching the two men whispering to each other when she saw Rody stop Augustine from saying the word 'Duke'. She immediately knew that Rody was keeping his identity a secret. Although she did not understand why he changed his appearance and identity when he came to the Roland Continent, she did not ask. After all, it was not a good place to talk about such things when the Great Sorcerer Yin Xing was still around.

The three of them exchanged words for a while. After that, when Augustine was about to take his leave, the Black Veil Saint, with a complicated expression, seemed to advise him against it.

But he waved his hand and no longer spoke. Although Augustine had some injuries, he turned and walked unyieldingly. He only left behind deep footprints and faint bloodstains as his stubborn figure vanished into the woods.

The Grand Sorcerer Yin Xing then smiled and said, "Your humble servant was sent here by the Sorcerer's Association to meet the envoy. Now that the escorts and the Imperial Guards had all died, let me escort you to the royal city!"

Rody remained silent and walked up to the fallen warrior in front of the cliff. There were hints of anger and hatred in his eyes. The Black Veil Saint sighed. She knew Rody's temperament since their time in the Northwest. She gently pulled Rody's arm and then waved her hand. Some flames shot out from her hand and engulfed the corpse of the warrior. It gradually burned until there was nothing left.

Rody took a deep breath. He then looked at Mouse and forced a smile. "Thank you."

Rody gently released Mouse's hand. He suddenly looked up the cliff and shouted, "Seth, have you watched enough? If so, come on

down!"

Yin Xing and Mouse were astonished. Rody suddenly took out his scimitar and slashed across at the cliff...

Boom! A huge wind blade blasted out from his sword. The wind blade fiercely cut through the rocks of the cliff. The cliff face that was cut by Rody then tumbled down in a loud crash. Rody held the Black Veil Saint with one hand and quickly retreated. Yin Xing had naturally already fled to a side. They then saw the precipitous mountain split open. Rock fragments fell in succession and dust filled the sky...

In the dust-covered sky, two figures jumped down. It was an old man protecting another person with one hand. His fighting energy protected them from the falling rocks. Rody and Seth then landed with a crash in front of Rody.

The dust made Seth choke and cough a few times. He then pushed off Old Mark's protective hand and dusted his body. After that, Seth smiled wryly and asked, "Boy, when did you notice me?"

Rody did not give him an answer. Instead, he frowned at Seth and said, "I was wondering why you came to the Roland Continent."

At that moment, the dust gradually dispersed. Seth had wiped the dust from his face and revealed his distinct face. Yin Xing did not show any reaction but Mouse was astonished when she saw that face.

The young man was a dazzling blond. He had a pair of dark blue eyes and an extremely handsome face. This was remarkably like the appearance of the Duke of the Tulip Family that she saw in the Northwest.

Mouse was alarmed. She could not help but look towards Rody. Rody gently pulled her hand and whispered, "It is a long story. I will tell you about it later."

Old Mark stepped in front of Seth and frowned at Rody. "Boy, you forced us down here. What do you intend to do?"

The Black Veil Saint could not help but ask, "Rody, who is he?"

Yin Xing was the most astute. He could tell that the old man standing in front of the young man had extraordinary strength. He hid his hand back into his sleeves. The two newcomers had been hiding on the cliff. Only God would know if they were friends or foes!

Rody stared at Seth as if afraid that the moment he looked away, Seth would disappear again. Rody had an extremely complicated feeling about the person in front of him. On one hand, Seth created a huge plot in the Radiant Empire. Without his manipulation, Rody who was at the bottom of society would not get to where he was now. At the same time, Seth was also someone who infuriated him. Seth had almost subverted the entire Radiant Continent with his conspiracy. More importantly, there was a faint hatred in Rody's heart. When he saw Seth, he was reminded of the pitiful and detestable Empress and also...Master Autumn!

At the same time, this loathsome person was Nicole's younger brother. Nicole could already be considered his wife. No matter what, they already shared a relationship as relatives. No matter how much Rody hated him, he could not do much. Rody also understood how formidable the person in front of him was.

He remembered the books he read in the Duke's Mansion and Seth's notes in them. It could be said that all of Rody's wisdom and knowledge were obtained from those books and notes. This included all the treasonous ideas and thoughts.

Rody smiled with a complicated feeling and said, "This guy? He is a person who likes to manipulate people like puppets!"

Seth seemed to laugh bitterly and replied, "You praise me too much. If I like to manipulate people like puppets, what about you? Are you the one that cut off the puppet strings?"

Rody shook his head. When he looked at the person in front of him, he felt like he had a headache. "Seth, why are you here?"

Seth glanced at Rody and lightly replied, "I go where I want to go. Do I need a reason?"

Rody lightly smiled and said, "You don't? It seems like something big happens wherever you go." Rody then laughed and continued, "Old Mark, your duty is to ensure his safety. So, you will not interfere unless his safety is threatened?"

Old Mark gave him a supercilious look.

Seth then warily asked, "What are you planning to do?"

Rody sighed. "Nothing! Just that there was a woman back there crying day and night as she thought about her child's father. It was extremely troublesome. I suppose you will not run away and avoid taking responsibility! I just feel like dragging you back there."

Seth stepped back and smiled wryly. "Can I not go?"

Rody then laughed. He unexpectedly laughed cunningly like Seth and then asked, "What do you think?"

Old Mark spread out his hands and then stood at a side as if saying, 'I don't care. And I am not able to interfere anymore.'

Rody laughed happily and smiled towards Mouse. "If you are confronting a person that is cunning and causes trouble every single moment, would you have any way to make him obedient? I believe a sorcerer like you would know quite a lot of methods."

The Black Veil Saint was in a good mood. When Rody asked her, she pondered for a bit and showed a strange smile. "This? I have a lot of methods...We might as well try them all..."

She turned to look at Yin Xing and said, "Lord Yin Xing. Now, we just hope you can keep your mouth shut."

Yin Xing thought for a moment and then saw Rody's scimitar. Cold sweat appeared on his forehead. He then quickly nodded his

head.

...

Amongst the clouds, six tall and steep peaks of the mountains could faintly be seen. At these six peaks were artificially made suspension bridges. The six peaks were linked together by the suspension bridges and surprisingly formed a hexagram!

There was a towering and majestic palace at the summit of the tallest peak. On top of the tower built with large black rocks was a huge magic crystal. It illuminated the six mountain peaks throughout the day and night.

Outside the palace were stairs with hundreds of spacious steps. Hundreds of cultivators wearing black robes knelt on the stone floor facing the palace, mumbling incantations and kowtowing. Their faces looked extremely pious and solemn.

Next to the tallest mountain was a slightly shorter one. There was another tall building that was just slightly shorter than that black tower on this mountain; it had a pointed top. At the top of that building was a large crystal window with a semi-arch appearance. A slender figure was standing there looking at the crowd near the palace on the tallest peak.

The slender fair hands gently caressed the crystal window and sighed, "Religion! Religion! It is just a special method to secure a human's soul! It makes a person willing to put on the shackles! Humans are really funny! Look...look at these devout believers! They came here from thousands of miles away to worship in the Temple!"

The figure turned around and looked at the corner of the room. At the same time, light fell onto her face to reveal an extremely beautiful face. Her beautiful eyes looked attentively at the corner as she gave a shallow smile. Her long eyelashes seemed to cover her eyes. She laughed and asked, "What do you think?"

A black robed figure slowly emerged from the corner. The figure had been cleverly hidden in the black robe in the darkness of the corner. "The Temple was originally such a place. We Dragons and the Gods have been in contact for over a millennium. Have you still not understood this? [Your Excellency Ars.Lan?](#)"

"It is nothing more than making use of each other!" Ars.Lan laughed and revealed a gorgeous smile. Her smile seemed as though it cleared off the haze in the room and melted the unchanging snow on the mountain...

As she walked, the lower corners of her robes lifted to reveal a golden armor inside.

She gently looked at the huge stone round plate on the wall. It was also unknown as to what kind of stone the plate was made of. It glowed with a faint blue light. Symbols were engraved on it like a clock. Five symbols were engraved around the stone, forming a pattern as though a host of lesser lights were surrounding the leading one.

But it was truly unfortunate. There were five tranquil flames on it, but four of it were already extinguished. Only the largest flame at the middle remained, dancing in blue tongues of fire.

Ars.Lan lightly sighed. She then sneered and said, "Hm. Amore Hughes, Amu, Ice, and also Ni Lin. They have already died. Looks like the cost of the collaboration this time is not small."

At this moment, a respectful voice came from outside. "The Elder has summoned Your Excellency, Paladin Ars.Lan!"

The figure at the corner immediately replied loudly, "Understood! The Paladin will go over shortly!"

Ars.Lan sighed. "I need to go and see those despicable guys again? Every time I see them, I have this impulsive urge to crush them to death."

The woman named Ars.Lan then left the room. The person at the

corner of the room slowly came out.

He saw that there was nobody left in the room. He then slowly walked towards the crystal window and looked out quietly.

Through the crystal window, he could see Ars.Lan follow a priest out. They crossed the bridge and headed towards the palace on the tallest mountain. He then looked at the crowd below the palace in disappointment.

"It is obviously a shackle. Why are so many people willingly engrossed in it?" He wryly smiled and then said to himself, "Why am I thinking of such ridiculous things? Why am I showing compassion to the humans? They willingly put on shackles, but what does it matter to me?"

After pondering for a moment, he whispered to himself. "Perhaps we have the same dilemma? The humans have shackles. Can we say that we, the Dragons, don't have shackles?"

He slowly closed his eyes and then recalled that scene in the past.

The weather on that day was similar to the current weather. That person had unexpectedly crossed the Mythical Beast Forest and ended up in the Dragon race's territory. He was just a small human, but he dared to climb up the Dragon's mountains and asked to see the Dragon's Elder. An even more infuriating thing was that this person had the contract bestowed by the Gods from thousands of years ago!

That contract was the Dragons' shackle! By virtue of that contract, the Dragon warriors must spill their blood for this person!

He thought of this and then turned back to look at the stone plate on the wall. Four out of the five flames had been extinguished.

"Only Ars.Lan of the five Dragon warriors is left. That envoy of the Radiant Empire really has supernatural powers?"

难望项背,nán wàng xiàng bèi. Too much difference in

performance, quality, achievements.

There was a '.' in the name 'Ars.Lan'. The name used for this Dragon also changed from 'Ars.Lan' to just 'Lan' later on.

Chapter 233: “Love at First Sight”

"Rody! You brat!" Seth gnashed his teeth as he rode his horse. He was almost driven mad from the strange looks the surrounding people were giving him!

The even more infuriating thing was that Old Mark was acting indifferent. He rode at the furthestmost back and deliberately avoided Seth.

When Seth saw that the eyes around him looked like they were ready to devour him, he softly begged. "Rody, I give up. I admit defeat! I beg you to let me..."

"No!" Mouse coldly replied before Rody could say anything. However, it was obvious that Mouse's cold tone was not genuine. She deliberately put on a cold look to hold back her laughter.

Mouse and Seth were riding side by side. She was completely covered in a black veil. Even her beautiful face was also lightly covered with a black veil.

At that moment, all the surrounding gazes of admiration, infatuation, and jealousy were directed at Seth.

Seth was wearing a set of 'female' sorcerer's standard clothing. The black and beautiful long skirt wrapped Seth's original slender body inside, enhancing his small and supple waist!

His naturally handsome face transformed into a unique feminine beauty after Mouse gave him simple makeup.

His long golden hair, deftly arranged in a woman's hairstyle, hung loosely down his shoulders. It cleverly hid the masculinity of his face that came from his slightly angular lines. Mouse's touchups on Seth's eyebrows also made him look even more feminine.

The thing that made Seth very angry was that Mouse applied eyeshadows on him. The long eyelashes he was born with

shrouded his lake-blue eyes and made him look charming.

Right now, Seth looked almost as beautiful as Miss Nicole.

Seth felt helpless and his face was red with anger. In the eyes of the male crowd, he looked like he was 'blushing because she was shy'. He was simply a beauty that could drive men crazy!

Ever since entering the capital that morning, these horsemen and their followers have attracted the attention of most of the pedestrians in the main street. Almost all the men and women were attracted by the beauty in the long black dress riding atop the horse.

The men looked at her with admiration and infatuation, while the women had sour gazes of jealousy. Seth almost fainted in anger. Only God knew if the Black Veil Saint had cast any spell on him. He was riding on his horse, but he was feeling weak. He could not even lift his hands and could only rely on the strength of his legs to balance himself on the horse.

As a man, Seth naturally understood the gazes of men when they see a captivating beauty. 'Shit! They were fantasizing!'

In the past, when Seth saw a beauty, he also liked to fantasize. However, Seth was unhappy when the target of fantasizing was himself. On top of that, some of them had wretched and dirty gazes! Only God knew what was going through their minds...

At first, Seth could not help glaring back at them. He wanted to scare off their gazes. Unfortunately for him, Mouse's technique was brilliant...such that his glares ended up looking like flirtatious glances.

It was better not to glare at them. His glares instead attracted them to approach him...Since entering the capital, there were already three bold knights who blocked his way and loudly wooed him. There was also one even bolder knight following at the back of the group and sang love songs, with a rose in his mouth!

What the hell! Were the men of the Roland Continent really so thick-skinned?

What made Seth despair even more was what Mouse had told him. The makeup he was wearing was made with a special magic medicine. It could only be removed with Mouse's special liquid medicine. Otherwise, the makeup would last for at least two months.

Watching the delegation entering the palace, King Sauron was like the other common people. The first thing he saw was the second person in the delegation...that beautiful woman in a long black dress.

He was distracted for a while before he calmed down again.

The King recognized the Black Veil Saint who was standing at the back. Yin Xing had reported earlier that the Black Veil Saint and the envoy of the Radiant Empire had an intimate relationship. For Rody's sake, she publicly became an apostate.

It was a shocking and impossible to comprehend news for the King. The Black Veil Saint becoming an apostate was certainly a headache for the Temple. However, it was a good thing for him.

Rody gently coughed and then proudly said, "I am the Commander of the Imperial Guards, Earl of the Empire, Rody. By the order of His Majesty the Emperor, I present myself to Your Majesty, King Sauron."

After handing over the prepared documents, Rody stood there and waited for the King's reply.

The King read the documents submitted by Rody and frowned. He silently gave the documents to the Senior Prime Minister beside him. The Senior Prime Minister glanced at it and then gently coughed. He softly asked, "Your Excellency, are these the conditions set by your country's esteemed Emperor regarding the peace negotiations of our countries?"

Rody nodded and said, "Yes! Eight hundred warships in exchange for the immediate return of two hundred thousand of your distinguished country's elite soldiers!"

The corner of the eyes of the Senior Prime Minister trembled violently as he gasped, "Eight hundred warships! Do you know how many warships the Sauron Kingdom has in total? You actually want eight hundred warships? Our King is willing to pay a large amount of gold coins in exchange for the lives of our warriors!"

Rody had already prepared himself before arriving as Andy had already expected this response. Rody unhurriedly said, "Our Radiant Empire is rich throughout the whole continent. Do you think we are lacking gold coins? How much gold coins does Your Excellency think you would surrender to redeem those prisoners of war? Five million gold coins? Eight million gold coins? Or perhaps, ten million gold coins?"

The old Senior Prime Minister suddenly shouted, "Blackmail! This is simply extortion!" The calm Senior Prime Minister suddenly lost his cool. He shouted with an angry expression, "Ten million gold coins? A million soldiers can be recruited with that much money! The conditions given by your country is just adding insults to injuries!"

The King calmed down when he saw the Senior Prime Minister got angry. He smiled meaningfully and said, "Senior Prime Minister."

When the Senior Prime Minister heard the King call him, he slowly suppressed his anger and stepped back.

The King cleared his throat and loudly said, "Earl Rody, your esteemed Emperor's conditions are too difficult for us!" The smile on his face was calm as he continued, "Since the condition has already been stated, we might as well speak the truth! We, the Sauron Kingdom, are unable to provide you with eight hundred warships! Your country also understands how important these

warships are to the people of the Roland Continent...Let me speak the truth. Although we are now allies, without the protection of those warships, the Lightning God's Whip of your country would have already invaded the Roland Continent." The King laughed as if he was mocking himself and continued, "Even if we want to make friends, there is no need for us to cut off our own flesh to entertain our friends! Besides that, the condition stated here is not just asking us to cut our flesh. It is already asking for our lives!"

Rody loudly replied, "Your Majesty's words are wrong!" He took a step forward, smiled and continued, "Since we have negotiated for peace, we are now allies. Your Majesty's words about the Lightning God's Whip crossing the ocean is ridiculous! In the past two hundred years, the Lightning God's Whip has never set foot on the Roland Continent. Instead, it is the Roland army that had invaded the Radiant Continent!"

After that, Rody smiled and said, "Let us speak frankly! Who is responsible for starting this war! I don't think this needs clarification. Right now, the enemies Your Majesty needs to be most cautious of is also not the Lightning God's Whip!"

The King sneered. "However, if we were to give you warships, wouldn't you reign freely in the Straits of Thunder?"

Rody shook his head, "These words are also incorrect. The Roland Navy is unhindered in this world. This is common knowledge! Are the troops formidable only because of their equipment? I don't think this is likely. Even if we acquire the strong warships, we still cannot be compared to the powerful Roland Navy! Although the warships are powerful, they still need elite sailors! It would be impossible to fight cross the Straits of Thunder. Relying on a few excellent warships alone would not be enough to bring the war to Your Majesty!"

The Senior Prime Minister sneered and asked, "In that case, why do you only insist on warships?"

Rody stared at the Senior Prime Minister. His gaze was like electricity. He coldly looked at the Senior Prime Minister and said, "Self-protection!"

He loudly said, "The smokes of the war from the people of the Roland Continent has not dispersed yet! You have a powerful navy that can easily cross the ocean and bring the flames of war to our continent! Although we were victorious in this war, there is no guarantee that Your Majesty would not start another crusade after getting through this ordeal. With these warships, the Radiant Empire's navy would still not be able to defeat the Roland Continent's navy. However, it would prevent you all from crossing the ocean whenever you like! Since we are negotiating, then we should just lay our cards on the table! It would be meaningless to be evasive! Are you not letting go of the warships because you intend on invading the Radiant Empire again?"

At that moment, Seth was unable to help himself from giggling.

Rody had improved a lot. He now resorted to sophistry and inverted right and wrong. Instead of saying his reasons for wanting the warships, he accused the other party of keeping the warships and planning an invasion...

Although Seth's laughter was soft, the people in the hall heard it. The King looked at Seth and whispered, "Earl Rody, this person is..."

Rody moved his eyes and loudly said, "This person? She is the eldest daughter of the Radiant Empire's Tulip Family. She is the elder sister of the Duke of the Tulip Family, Miss Nicole!"

Those words shocked the King and the Senior Prime Minister!

The elder sister of the Duke of the Tulip Family!

That was a great personage from the Radiant Empire. Everybody knew that, right now, the Duke of the Tulip Family of the Radiant Empire could be considered someone unexcelled in the world. The

banners of the Tulip Family were everywhere and the Lightning God's Whip was invincible. In the Radiant Empire, he was only second to the Emperor.

The King immediately cursed his men in his heart. They had only reported the identity of the envoy but not a single word was said about the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family. However, the King felt skeptical. With such a personage like the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family, how come there was no mention of her at all? Why was there no news of her arriving here at all? Besides that, there was also no news of the envoy bringing along their womenfolk.

Rody noticed the King's doubts. He immediately gave Seth a meaningful glance, asking him to explain.

Seth pursed his lips and was thinking of ignoring Rody. However, when he saw Mouse's threatening glare, he finally sighed. As a playboy, he clearly understood that a woman would be willing to do all sorts of crazy things for the man she loves. Offending Rody was not a problem. However, he did not dare to provoke the Black Veil Saint.

He gently coughed. His voice had already been altered by Mouse's sorcery. He was not used to his own delicate voice. He slowly raised himself from his seat and said, "Your Majesty, I secretly followed His Excellency the Earl to come here. I have no intentions of disturbing others."

Both the King and the Senior Prime Minister frowned but since she said that she 'came secretly', then they had nothing to say. They could only inquire the details from the other related personnel, later.

However, they were not aware that the original envoy who brought Rody here had already become a lunatic after that battle at sea. In addition, the only person who saw Seth as a man, that Great Sorcerer Yin Xing, had already been completely subdued by the Black Veil Saint.

How could an insignificant Great Sorcerer be a match for the powerful Black Veil Saint?

Even if he was not afraid of the Black Veil Saint, but when he saw Rody, who could even instantly kill Paladin-level warriors, he felt threatened. Under such threats, Yin Xing would not dare let slip a single word.

The Senior Prime Minister cleared his throat and loudly said, "Earl Rody, I have a different opinion about the earlier words." The old fellow then loudly said, "Our sincerity in the alliance with your Majesty is evident! Your Excellency Earl had come all the way here and encountered...assassination attempts. In order to protect you, our brave knights of Sauron Kingdom actually spilled their own blood and even sacrificed their lives! As we treated you sincerely, you should also show us some good faith!"

The moment the Senior Prime Minister finished saying that, he suddenly smiled at Seth and asked, "Miss Nicole, what is your opinion?"

The King's eyes turned bright. If the Radiant Empire had dispatched the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family here, it is possible that she was not here just to look around. It was possible that the Earl was just for show while the real decision-maker was Miss Nicole.

Seth smiled lightly and said, "I have no opinion. His Excellency the Earl will decide on everything."

The Senior Prime Minister finally sighed and said, "Sauron Kingdom does not have too many warships. It is difficult to give you eight hundred warships. Earl Rody, is it not possible to change the conditions a little?"

Rody smiled lightly and looked up at the King. He then smiled and asked, "Your Majesty, what do you think?"

The King pondered for a moment and then suddenly said, "Six

hundred."

The King took a deep breath and continued, "The six hundred warships are not just to redeem the two hundred thousand soldiers, but also all of the prisoners of war."

Before Rody could say anything, the Senior Prime Minister was already in shock. Why did the King state these conditions without authorization?

"Your Majesty!" The old Senior Prime Minister could not help but cry out in alarm.

Without thinking, Rody replied, "Alright!"

He had promised so happily that the King was surprised. "Really?"

Rody smiled and replied, "Of course, it is true!"

The King looked at Rody coldly. He waved his hand and said, "Senior Prime Minister, I need to talk to the special envoy privately. Go and make arrangements for the envoy and his companions to settle down."

The Senior Prime Minister looked like he was suddenly slashed by a blade! A trace of anger flashed instantly in his eyes before he turned dejected and pale. He looked deeply at the King. After that, he nodded at Rody and strode out of the hall.

The King looked at the Senior Prime Minister's back as he left. He sneered in his heart. 'This old fellow must have been caught unprepared by my sudden action! Perhaps he didn't realize that I know he was having both ways! Perhaps he never expected that I would make a decision with another kingdom without discussing with him first...'

When Rody saw the King's astonished expression, he smiled and said, "Your Majesty sent away the Senior Prime Minister. I believe it must be because you did not discuss this matter with him earlier. If I am not wrong, these six hundred warships are gathered

together from all the kingdoms of the Roland Continent!"

The King thought for a moment. He then looked at the envoy in front of him and replied, "Very often, a sovereign would need to make his own decisions. It is not necessary to discuss everything with others!"

Rody nodded slightly.

At that moment, there was a racket outside the cordoned-off hall. A high-pitched voice shouted, "Are the people involved with the peace negotiations inside? Let me in!"

The faint voice of the guards obstructing the man then said, "Your Highness, don't!"

After some sounds of swords clashing, a man rammed open the door and strode in. That man looked like he was less than twenty years old. He was wearing the armor of a knight. He walked in with a sword in his hand. He had brown hair and a heroic face. As he walked into the hall, he shouted, "To negotiate for peace after being defeated! That is a disgrace to the country! How could the dignified Roland knights negotiate for peace?"

He immediately spotted Rody who was standing there and shouted, "The people of the Roland Continent would rather die than submit! Prepare to die!"

He rushed forward in big strides and slashed at Rody. Rody sneered but before he could do anything, Mouse's eyes flashed with a strange gaze. With a motionless expression, she suddenly reached out her hand to push Seth forward...

As Seth staggered forward, he saw the sword in front of him. He could not help but cry out in his 'delicate' voice, "Ah!"

That young man thrusting the sword reacted quickly. He saw the stunning beauty rushed in front of him and hurriedly withdrew his sword. Unfortunately, Seth had crashed into his arms. He instinctively wrapped his arm around Seth's waist. Seth lay in his

arms in an exaggerated posture. It was solely that man's arm holding Seth at the waist that prevented 'her' from falling...

The youngster's expression suddenly changed right after he looked at the 'beauty' in his arms from above. He saw 'her' catching 'her' breath and bashfully looking away. That young man gave birth to a tender feeling in his heart and his earlier murderous expression had already disappeared.

"Miss...are you alright?" That young man asked in his most gentle tone as he gazed at Seth as if he was his lover.

Seth's face turned red in anger and he almost fainted. However, in the eyes of the young man, the beauty in his arms looked like a frightened little deer which had attracted his affection...

Seth forcefully struggled away from his arms and used every ounce of his energy to resist the urge to puke. Seth quickly retreated a few steps and fiercely glared at Mouse.

The King shouted, "Aven, don't be rude! This is the special envoy of the Radiant Empire, Earl Rody, and the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family, Miss Nicole!"

The young man named Aven was startled as he finally remembered his reasons for coming. He was a stubborn man who admired the dignity and honor of the knights since his childhood. He was originally opposed to the King's decision in negotiating for peace. In his heart, the noble knights of the Roland Continent must not lower their heads to their conceited enemies.

He initially intended to rush in and disrupt the peace negotiations. He was determined, even if it meant that he would be severely punished by his King, to kill that special envoy negotiating for peace. But, just now...

The young man looked at Seth sentimentally and seemingly lost his soul. There was a clattering sound as the sword he held in his hand dropped to the ground.

He finally regained his senses. He looked at the sword on the ground and hesitated to pick it up. He wanted to pick up his sword and charge forward. However, that beautiful woman was also a member of the envoy delegation and he remembered the graceful embrace. He could no longer pick up his sword.

The King sighed. His eyes seemed helpless as he looked at Rody and Seth apologetically. He then said, "This is my nephew, Crown Prince Aven. He is the Regiment Commander of the Navy of Sauron Kingdom."

Chapter 234: Beauty Trap

Aven looked as if he was still at a loss. The King raised his eyebrows and shouted, "Aven! How dare you barge in here like that! How dare you draw your sword in front of the envoy of the Radiant Empire!"

At that moment, Aven was no longer belligerent. He unexpectedly paused for a while and grudgingly replied, "Your Majesty, I heard that you and the Radiant Empire bas..." He was about to say 'bastard' but when he glanced at the beautiful woman, he could not feel hatred. He also could not link such riveting beauty with the word 'bastard'. He paused for a moment and continued, "As knights of the Roland Continent, we cannot bow our heads to the enemy even if we were defeated! Therefore, I request Your Majesty to cancel the peace negotiations. True honor cannot be obtained with peace negotiations. It can only be obtained through the sword!"

Rody stood at a side. Although he did not say anything, he had a favorable impression of the young Crown Prince. Rody believed that he would be just as impulsive and hot-blooded if he had not had so much experience.

The King coldly grunted and said, "Aven, you are too impudent! Do you think you, a Crown Prince, can wantonly defy my orders? Do you know what the punishment for being rude to our honored guests is?"

Although the cunning King said the word 'punishment', he did not stop looking at Rody and Seth.

Seth suddenly laughed softly and whispered into Rody's ears. "Boy, he is giving you a hint. He is hinting you to help him out of this awkward situation. Do you really want him to punish the Crown Prince? Quickly beg for leniency so that the King has an excuse to get out of this awkward situation. Then you can take

advantage later."

Rody nodded. He was about to speak when suddenly Mouse gently pulled his sleeves to stop him. Rody then looked up at Mouse and saw her lips moved as he heard her say, "Don't say anything. Let Seth be the one to speak."

Seth rolled his eyes as Mouse coldly smiled at him. "Are you going to speak?"

Seth trembled deep in his heart and felt weak. He forced a smile and gave a gentle yet loud cough. "Your Majesty! His Highness is still young and impetuous. Besides that, he did not injure me. I suggest we just forget about it."

The King still looked enraged and replied, "How can this be alright? Right now, the Sauron Kingdom and the Radiant Empire are negotiating for peace. This means we are allies. Yet, this boy is rude to you..."

Seth felt helpless. He smiled and said, "Prince Aven is also loyal to his kingdom. If you punish him, wouldn't you dishearten the other warm-blooded knights?"

The King took his opportunity to laugh as he stared at Aven fiercely. He shouted, "If it was not because Miss Nicole pleaded for you...Hmph..." He sighed and then magnanimously waved his hand as he said, "Alright, the peace negotiation has concluded. You do not need to speak anymore! Just stand there and keep quiet!"

Aven felt anxious. He had rushed in with a sword in hand to kill the envoy and wreck the peace negotiations without thinking of the consequences. This young hot-blooded knight did not give much thought to how the King would have punished him. After all, he was the Crown Prince and the King had no son. The King would not have executed him.

When he heard that the King was determined to negotiate for peace without giving any room for further discussions, he wanted

to immediately stop it. However, that beautiful woman pleaded mercy for him. Her warm words and her sincere and touching appearance prevented Aven from picking up his sword to kill such a charming and likable envoy.

Aven was sweating profusely and was dumbfounded. He looked back and forth at the sword on the ground and 'Miss Nicole'. He struggled with his feelings as he felt murderous at one moment and warm and tender the next.

Seth felt extremely uncomfortable being gazed at by him. He felt goosebumps all over his body and could not help but shrink away to hide behind Rody. However, he ended up looking beautiful, shy, and captivating to Aven. He had a kind of fatal charm...

Aven simply stood there muddleheaded. He did not hear a single word of the conversation between Rody and the King. Finally, the King laughed and replied, "It is decided then!"

Rody also had a smile on his face, but his was a pretense. He sighed deeply in his heart as he felt that this task was tiring. He felt pretending to smile and negotiate was much more tiring than fighting and killing on the battlefield.

The King stood up and said, "Since there are no objections on both sides, the peace negotiation is settled. We would get the warships ready, but..." At that point, the King gave Rody a glance.

Rody understood his meaning and lightly replied, "Your Majesty, rest assured. Once you have sent the warships to the Radiant Empire, the prisoners of war would be immediately returned! We would remain here until the prisoners of war have returned to the Roland Continent."

The King nodded. No matter what, with the older sister of the Duke of the Tulip Family as a hostage, it is enough.

"Aven!" The King shouted and finally brought the confused prince out of his daze. "You are the Commander of the Navy. I

order you to quickly assemble two hundred warships from your Naval Forces!"

Aven immediately became anxious and replied, "Your Majesty, two hundred warships are too many. Besides..."

"No buts!" The King's face finally revealed a trace of genuine anger. "Shut up!" He then sighed and continued in a gentler tone. "Didn't we place an order of ironwood with the dwarfs? Just get the newly-made warships!"

When the King saw that Aven still had things to say, he squinted his eyes and coldly told Aven, "Listen carefully! I have already decided on this. I don't want to hear another word from you!"

After that, the King invited Rody and his team to stay in the Summer Palace in the Capital. In view of the assassination incident, the King also dispatched a thousand Royal Knights to protect them. Although a thousand knights were not too many, it was unlikely that the Temple would act publicly in a big way. After all, both sides had not yet openly declared hostility with each other.

Besides that, it was rumored that three Dragon Paladins did not succeed. Although Yin Xing had reported that Earl Rody was extraordinarily formidable, the King did not personally witness it and could not believe that Rody, alone, could kill three Paladins. After all, the so-called Domain Masters only existed in legends and myths. He believed that most of the credits in defeating the three Paladins were due to the Black Veil Saint and Paladin Augustine.

The King did not expect that the Black Veil Saint would betray the Temple and also caused the death of three Paladins. In addition, Paladin Augustine only seemed to be in harmony with the Temple on the surface. This time, the Temple's strength had suffered big losses.

'The result of this peace negotiation is extremely good!'

This left the Crown Prince Aven look as if the King was going to teach him a 'lesson'. As to how the King was going to persuade the youthful knight, it was not Rody's problem. The King had sent some palace officials to escort them to the Summer Palace.

When they entered the Summer Palace, they sent away the attendants. After that Rody and Mouse could no longer hold it in anymore and started to laugh. Cold sweat appeared on Seth's forehead as he angrily shouted, "Have you laughed enough?"

Old Mark who stayed away from being dragged into the matter, held in his laughter and said, "Err...Miss Nicole, it seems like the Crown Prince has fallen in love with you at first sight!"

"Shut up!" Seth listlessly shouted, "Quickly change my clothes and also...and also my face!"

Yin Xing felt worried. He was forced to cooperate with those people. He also did not dare expose Seth's male identity when they were in the hall. He was now also involved in this. It was tantamount to cooperating with others to deceive the King and was a very serious crime. He tried to suggest, "I think we should stop this here. Or..."

Mouse shook her head and lightly said, "No! Just now, he has already been given the identity of Miss Nicole inside the palace. The eldest daughter of the Tulip Family has visited the Roland Continent. If he were to transform back now, wouldn't the secret be exposed?"

Seth glared at her and asked, "Then what should I do? Do you want me to keep wearing this and pretend to be the damned, 'Miss Nicole'?"

Rody refrained from laughing. He walked over and patted Seth's shoulder. "Seth, when you are angry, your appearance is very charming."

As Seth was about to become angry, Mouse coldly said, "Mister

Seth, you better be obedient. My sorcery spell is already in your body. I am also a very petty person, so you better don't make me angry."

Everyone laughed for a while and then went to their respective rooms to rest, leaving behind only Rody and Mouse in that room. As for Seth, after he returned to his room, how he changed his clothes or how he desperately washed his face was another story...

Rody pondered for a moment and then asked, "Do you think King Sauron would really hand over six hundred warships? The six hundred warships are probably gathered from all the kingdoms on the continent. It is impossible that the Temple would sit idly on this issue."

Mouse thought for a moment and replied, "You do not need to worry about this. You are only responsible for the negotiations. The conditions are already agreed upon. Leave the rest of the things to the others. Whether they could successfully deliver the warships or not is something for the King to worry about. The thing I am worried about now is that the Temple might not let you go. Three Dragon Paladins died in this assassination attempt. It is unlikely that the Temple would give up so easily." She shook her head and looked a little anxious. "Rody, nobody knows how powerful the Dragons really are. You killed three of their Dragon warriors. I believe that this matter is not over yet."

Rody smiled and said, "Naturally, I am not afraid but..." He frowned and added, "But I am worried for Augustine. What would the Temple do to him when he returns?"

Mouse also showed an expression of concern and whispered, "Augustine is my only close friend in the Temple. Unfortunately, he is too stubborn and no matter what, he will not listen to me."

Rody walked to Mouse's side and gently held her shoulders as he softly said, "That day, when I was still unconscious, I heard you declare your apostasy...I..."

Mouse gently smiled hesitantly. She was unable to stop herself from leaning her head onto Rody's shoulder and she said, "No matter what, I will not regret this."

Rody took out the black ring on his chest and gently caressed it. He softly said, "That day at Thunder City, when I saw the Tulip fireworks in the sky, I guessed that it must be you. However, we were not able to meet..."

Mouse gently smiled like a blossoming spring flower. She also took out a small rolled cloth from her bosom and gently opened it. Inside the cloth was the lock of Rody's hair that he had cut off for her on that day when they parted in the Northwest. Mouse's eyes gradually turned moist as she whispered, "This has also always been by my side."

He looked at Mouse in his arms. She was blushing and looked extremely charming. Rody was excited and could no longer restrain himself. He lowered his head and gently kissed her...

...

In the evening, after everybody had rested, they had dinner together. After about half a day of rest, some of them were regained their spirit. Rody and Mouse had been separated for a long time and finally had half a day to spend with each other. Naturally, they were lost in love as they held each other's hands affectionately and walked into the hall, the tenderness reflected in Mouse's eyes.

The only people looking unpleasant were Seth and the Great Sorcerer, Yin Xing. He was dispatched by the Sorcerer's Association to accompany and 'protect' the envoy until the envoy left the Roland continent.

Only Yin Xing himself knew that his job of 'protecting' was a joke. He was by Rody's side and was forced to deceive the King. He was afraid that the fact that the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family was a fake might be exposed.

Besides Ying Xing's uneasiness, Seth also had an even more unpleasant expression.

Seth had already changed back into a man's clothing. Initially, he thought of escaping but thousands of Royal knights were 'protecting' them outside the Imperial residence, preventing him from escaping. Even though Old Mark had extraordinary strength, the Black Veil Saint had unusual sorcery. As long as Seth was a certain distance away from Mouse, she would immediately be alerted. She also did not need anybody to catch him. Mouse only needed to stay where she was and simply cast a little bit of sorcery and that would make Seth beg for mercy.

Along the way here, Seth had already tried to escape twice. He had experienced how formidable the Saint was. Therefore, the idea of escaping had already been removed from his mind.

Although he had put on some man's clothes, he looked neither fish nor fowl.

He did not know what sorcery Mouse had used, but his physical strength had been sealed. When he walked, he appeared listless, more inclined towards being delicate and lovable.

Seth also almost went crazy looking at his own face. Mouse had forced him to drink a magic potion such that Seth was unable to change his face back even after washing it with water several times. He even almost peeled off his skin and yet there was no effect. The makeup with eyeliner, blusher, and eyebrow-liner still looked extremely clear. That deliberately modified face fully showed a charming woman's atmosphere...

Even Mouse could not help but sigh when she looked at his face. 'You descendants of the Tulip Family are truly and naturally handsome and beautiful.'

With that disguise, the refined and elegant Seth had instantly looked like a sweet and beautiful woman. The current Seth, even if he were to wear a man's clothes, he would just look like a woman

disguising herself as a man!

Everybody could not help but tease Seth. When Seth calmed down and listened to a few words, he laughed back, "Rody, today, the Crown Prince has obviously fallen in love with 'Miss Nicole' at first sight! Aren't you jealous? The person whom he has fallen in love with is your 'Miss Nicole'!"

Although his words were directed at Rody, he deliberately looked at Mouse with the intention of sowing discord.

Mouse gave a faint smile. "Seth, you don't have to waste so much effort. Rody has already told me everything. It is futile to try and make me jealous!" She suddenly grinned with a smile. Her smile made Seth's hairs stood on ends. He then heard Mouse whispered, "Your words would only make me angrier at you!"

While they were talking, a loud voice reported from outside.

For the sake of hiding Seth's identity, Rody had earlier forbidden people from entering their residences without permission. The King also did not think of sending anyone to spy on them. With a Great Practitioner like Black Veil Saint there, dispatching people to spy on them would be asking for trouble. Which sorcerer or knight would have that kind of power?

As the entourage escort, Yin Xing went out to reply. A short while later, he returned with an awkward smile. "His Highness, Prince Aven invites Your Excellency and 'Miss Nicole' to attend his dinner banquet. He said he wanted to apologize for his rudeness earlier."

Rody frowned. "The Crown Prince? Why did he invite us?"

Mouse pursed her lips and smiled, "I am afraid he is not inviting you. His main purpose is to invite 'Miss Nicole'!"

Rody softly replied, "A joke is, after all, just a joke. If it is not necessary, we might as turn down the invitation and avoid complicating the issue."

Mouse lowered her head and pondered for a moment. She said, "The Crown Prince, Aven, is a Naval Regiment Commander and is also the leader of Sauron Kingdom's young men. Today, you saw how he tried to oppose the peace negotiations. Besides that, when it comes to warships, if he, the Commander of the Navy, were to obstruct in the course of things, it will bring you a lot of trouble...I think it is better to attend. At least you could figure out his intentions."

Rody pondered for a moment and suddenly said, "I have always been puzzled about something."

Rody tapped the table as he thought to himself and said, "Today, inside the palace, the King discussed the negotiation and was finally willing to accept our conditions. In the end, the Senior Prime Minister showed a surprised expression. It seemed that the King and the Senior Prime Minister did not share the same opinion. In other words, the Senior Prime Minister is not an absolutely loyal person and has other intentions! That was why he was very surprised when the King agreed to our conditions. The King's offer of six hundred warships was definitely obtained from the other kingdoms, but the Senior Prime Minister did not seem to know about it. Obviously, the King had bypassed him and had secretly contacted the other kingdoms."

Mouse's expression gradually sank as she softly replied, "Hmph, yes. Today, the Senior Prime Minister looked agitated. According to my knowledge, normally, the Senior Prime Minister is an experienced and astute person who does not show his emotions easily. Also, did you notice? The Crown Prince immediately came in soon after the Senior Prime Minister left. It was likely that the Senior Prime Minister deliberately influenced the prince to come in to destroy the peace negotiations!"

Rody sighed. "In other words, the Senior Prime Minister is colluding with the Temple?"

Mouse hesitated for a moment and said, "Rody, on your way

here, you met with assassins at sea and on land. This means that the Temple knew your whereabouts. There is no guarantee that there is no leak on your whereabouts."

Rody raised his eyebrows as his eyes flashed with a stern countenance. He then grunted and said, "It is possible!"

Rody then remembered his loyal subordinates who were killed in the battle and angrily shouted, "Damn Senior Prime Minister! If I do not kill him, I would not be worthy of my warriors who died for me!"

Mouse shook her head and said, "These are just guesses. You would need a good plan if you want to confirm it. However, the Senior Prime Minister is well known for his schemes and foresight in the Sauron Kingdom. He also used to be the King's teacher. Both of us will not be able to test him directly because we cannot compete with him in his plots and schemes." At this moment, she deliberately looked at Seth.

Seth coldly said, "Do not use these kinds of words to incite me."

Mouse smiled and ignored him. While facing Rody directly, she laughed, "Although the Senior Prime Minister is difficult to deal with, the Crown Prince is an impulsive young man. It would not be difficult to test him."

Rody immediately understood. He could not help but glance at Seth. He then faced Mouse and smiled, "Do you mean?"

Mouse deliberately sighed and said, "The so-called 'heroes would fall for the charms of a beauty'! I cannot say if Aven is really a hero, but we have a beauty here! Didn't you notice?" Mouse refrained from laughing and slowly said, "The way Prince Aven looked at this beauty here in the palace today seemed like he was about to devour her! If eyes could eat, I am afraid that this beauty would have already been gobbled up!"

Seth turned pale as he heard Mouse's words. He cursed the

woman that had a beautiful outer appearance with an ugly heart. He had always considered himself clever especially when it came to dealing with women. However, this time, when he came to the Roland Continent and met the Black Veil Saint, everything turned out otherwise.

In the face of absolute strength, even if Seth was full of wisdom, he could not do anything.

Before Seth could speak, Rody smiled, looked at the awkward-looking Yin Xing and said, "Please give a reply to the Crown Prince that Miss Nicole and I will definitely join him at the banquet tonight."

Chapter 235: Stunning Beauty – Seth

Seth completely regretted it.

He really did not expect that such a day would come. Seth Rudolph! The most famous playboy in the Imperial Capital, the master of love and the perfect lover to young women. Yet today, he had been forced to act as a woman to seduce a man!

His other regret was offending that woman named Mouse. However, he did not know when he had offended her!

What Seth did not know was that the majority of Mouse's actions was for Rody to vent his anger. Along the way here, Mouse had listened to Rody narrate his life experiences. Mouse felt resentment for Seth since he manipulated Rody like a puppet. This was a good opportunity to punish Seth!

Mouse did all she could to make Seth look like a beautiful and charming woman.

As they were in the Summer Palace of the King, there were naturally a lot of female clothes. Besides that, the King had also dispatched his men to deliver other stuff for women when he found out that the envoy had arrived with womenfolk.

Mouse carefully selected an evening dress that is most suitable in showing off a woman's charm. She then got started with Seth's 'painful' makeup!

The first was Seth's skin. As an elegant man, Seth actually had very fair skin. That being said, a man's skin, however fair, could never be compared to the delicate smoothness of a real beauty's skin. As far as that was concerned, Mouse had a solution too!

According to Mouse, after a bath, the skin of a person would be in a fair and tender state...so Seth was then forced into the bath for a round of scrubbing by Rody and Old Mark!

King Sauron apparently was a person who enjoyed life's

pleasures. That was why his temporary royal residence also had an exquisite bathroom with even a sauna. After washing and steaming a few times and after Seth passed out from the heat, Seth's skin completely revealed a fair, delicate and rosy complexion...

Mouse took almost two hours to do Seth's makeup!

The first was Seth's face. According to Mouse, a person's skin was at its most delicate state when they had just taken a bath. At that moment, the makeup lotions would be readily absorbed by the skin. Mouse prepared some unknown lotion and applied it on Seth's face and neck. That made Seth's face and neck display a genuine and feminine delicate fairness.

Next was Seth's eyebrows. Although he had already been dressed up as a female along the journey here, as he was going to attend a banquet, close observation would reveal the flaws. Therefore, Mouse was especially attentive.

Since Seth was a man, his eyebrows were naturally a little bit thicker. Mouse took out a small tweezers to pull out Seth's eyebrows, strand by strand. She then used a magical medicine to stick on a pair of fake eyebrows on him!

Now looking at them, Seth's eyebrows could be said to be beautifully curved like the moon. They were truly long and shapely feminine eyebrows!

Seth's eyes were relatively simple to deal with since he had natural long eyelashes. With the application of a magical medicine that lengthened eyebrows, Seth's slender eyes were shrouded under his long eyelashes. That gave his eyes a hazy look, making him charmingly seductive.

After using blusher to the rough corners of his face, the entire contour of his face became softer. Seth no longer looked masculine. A quiet and leisurely look came to life.

In all fairness, Seth was originally a rare beautiful man. He was

of a totally different category compared to Rody. Seth had a delicate handsome face with a little bit of femininity. After Mouse's meticulous makeup, his face had been cleverly transformed!

Mouse also put in a lot of thoughts to his hair. She spent a full hour to heat up his long golden hair into small curls. His whole head of long hair was curled up into spiral coils. The curly loose strands in front of his forehead draped down in waves. That gave the 'beauty' a strange attraction.

As for Seth's body, it was more difficult. After all, he was a man with a slim body and could not have the kind of nice curves like that of a female. However, Mouse had chosen an evening dress with loose style. Fortunately, Seth was naturally slim. His waist was deliberately bound with a belt that highlighted his waist, giving it a 'water snake' shape.

Finally, what was left was the way he walked. As a man, Seth's walk was naturally very different from that of a woman's. However, with Mouse's demonstration, Seth finally managed to walk a few steps.

Getting him to sway his hips was like asking for his life. Despite how Mouse threatened or cajoled Seth to gently sway his hips like a woman, Seth refused to, even if it meant killing him.

In fact, given Seth's intelligence and wisdom, if he had wished to, it would not be a problem. As a playboy, he had encountered countless women and his understanding of women might not necessarily be less than Mouse. However, Seth was embarrassed and could not let go of his pride to sway like that.

However, in the end, that problem was solved by Rody.

After Rody whispered something in Seth's ear, Seth turned pale and looked troubled. He was distressed! Finally, he sighed and obediently gave up. What followed next greatly exceeded Mouse's expectations.

Seth not only walked a few steps barefooted on the ground, he also swayed his waist like a woman. Even when he was wearing high heels, the way he walked was quite stylish. The way he walked and his lovely figure even made Mouse consider herself inferior. Although she was a woman, as the Black Veil Saint, she rarely had the opportunity to show her gentle and charming side. She had also never worn evening gowns and high heels before.

Mouse was very puzzled as to why Seth suddenly became so obedient. Feeling surprised, she asked Rody and Rody's answer was very simple.

Rody said, "I told Seth that I had brought the 'God's Smile' mask with me. I let him choose. He can refuse to let us dress him up, but I will make him wear 'God's Smile' and change his face. He can change his face, but he will have an additional pair of long donkey ears that cannot be removed.

Although Seth was red with shame as he spun in a circle in front of everyone, in the eyes of the men around, that blushing 'woman' looked even prettier especially when the evening dress accentuated his beauty and concealed his defects.

Mouse carefully examined Seth all over including his hands!

Fortunately, he was a pampered noble since young. He had slender fingers and a fair skin, not rough like those of an ordinary man. After Mouse ingeniously applied some flesh colored lotion, his hands became like a woman's 'lily-white' hands. His fingernails were also smeared with lotions, giving them a faint red color.

Everyone was stunned to look at the transformed Seth. Before Rody could speak, Old Mark had already sighed, "This is no longer Young Master Seth. This is obviously Miss Nicole!"

Without a doubt, the Seth in front of them looked very similar to Miss Nicole. As they were blood siblings, both Seth and Nicole resembled each other. Now, after the rigorous modification, the transformed Seth looked remarkably alike to Miss Nicole when he

stood in front of everyone.

Rody had no choice but to agree to Old Mark's words. He could not help but sigh and say, "Indeed, even for me, I also thought you were Nicole at first glance."

After hearing those words, Mouse looked at the radiant 'Miss Nicole' in front of her. She could not help revealing a bit of jealousy. She then smiled and suddenly clapped her hands as she laughed, "I almost forgot, there is one more thing left!"

Seth turned pale. "What else is there?"

Mouse had already turned around to take out a pair of shiny things from the cupboard. She smiled evilly and said, "Your ears are slightly bigger than a woman's. In order to cover that up, you will need to wear this."

She opened up her hand and on her palm was a pair of blue gem earrings.

Mouse then smiled and said, "Come over, I will help you pierce your earlobes!"

...

A pair of fully equipped elite soldiers of the Royal Knights were in front of a luxurious carriage. Sitting side by side in the carriage was Rody and Seth.

Although the seats were soft and velvety, Seth seemed to sit uncomfortably and squirmed restlessly. Rody had to warn him not to fidget around so much, so as not to mess up the disguise.

Seth hated it so much. He felt the two earrings on his ears uncomfortably heavy. Earlier, the process of having his earlobes pierced was simply a torture!

That Mouse did not know how to pierce earlobes! Seth secretly regretted. He should have realized that Mouse, who had been cultivating in the Temple, would not have known how to pierce

earlobes. He should have long realized that when Mouse clumsily held the earrings to his ears and pricked arbitrarily!

The result was, Seth gave a blood-curdling scream as two messy holes appeared in his earlobes. Fortunately, Mouse was amongst the best sorcerers and readily healed Seth's ears with her magic.

It was useless even if Seth struggled. Rody held Seth's head and Seth was unable to resist. He could only obediently surrender his ears to Mouse for her to prick arbitrarily...

He was afraid even just thinking about it!

Crown Prince Aven stood in front of his own palace and waited anxiously.

He looked like an innocent boy waiting for his first date. His eyes contained feelings of expectations, joy, nervousness, and worry.

He felt nervous that he could not help pulling the lower hem of his clothes. Just then, the carriage for the Special Envoy of the Radiant Empire finally arrived.

The attendant walked up and opened the door of the carriage. The first to get down the carriage was the special envoy, Earl Rody. After that, a foot wearing a black leather shoe appeared from the inside of the carriage...followed by a slim white hand holding onto the door of the carriage.

After that, Crown Prince Aven saw the face that made him yearn day and night.

Prince Aven almost pushed the attendant aside and strode over. In the most graceful and gentlemanly manner, he helped 'Miss Nicole' get off the carriage.

Looking at the beauty in front of him with endless admiration, he picked up his courage and said in his most sincere and tender voice, "Welcome, Miss Nicole of the Tulip Family. Your presence is my greatest honor!"

The ecstatic youngster could no longer wait. He pulled Seth's hand towards his lips and kissed his hand like a noble knight.

Prince Aven then faced Rody and nodded. After greeting him with a few words, the host, Prince Aven, led them into his palace.

What Aven did not see was that 'Miss Nicole', who was walking behind him, had goosebumps all over his face. He could not help but put the hand that Aven kissed at the back of his skirt and rigorously rub twice.

Aven led them through a big circular door and entered the banquet hall.

There were already several other invited guests in the hall. As the identity of the Radiant Empire's Special Envoy was not disclosed to the public, it was only a small private banquet.

The thick soft carpet was luxurious to walk on. The other invited guests were also people of status.

Rody was surprised and was not sure of the intention of Prince Aven. Surprisingly, he actually invited all the other kingdoms' diplomatic ambassadors who had been staying in the Sauron Kingdom.

Those ambassadors of the other kingdoms clearly knew Rody's identity as the Special Envoy of the Radiant Empire and were extremely deferential towards Rody and Seth. It was obvious that after the peace negotiation, hundreds of thousands of soldiers would be released and those kingdoms actually needed that urgently.

His Highness, Aven, had originally opposed the peace negotiations. Why would he organize the peace faction banquet?

Rody did not have time to think. His Highness Aven impatiently led Seth around and introduced him to the other guests. He even boldly but gently touched Seth's hands a few times. Seth had grown up in an aristocratic circle and was naturally very familiar

with the etiquette. So when faced with these noble smiling guests, Seth did not make any mistake that would give him away.

The only thing that made Seth feel cold was the way the Crown Prince looked at him. The gaze was filled with more and more affection...

Chapter 236: Legendary Master

It must be said that Crown Prince Aven was well brought up with royal noble manners. His every word and action was befitting of a noble. He had a refined and courteous appearance. He no longer looked like the murderous person, who drew his sword, ready to kill, in the palace today.

The peace negotiations involved almost all the kingdoms of the Roland Continent. Except for a few with intimate dealings with the Temple, almost all the kingdoms sent a diplomatic envoy to the Sauron Kingdom. The Sauron Kingdom was undoubtedly heading the peace negotiations. Although the negotiations had concluded, those people could not help but felt curious about Earl Rody, the Special Envoy of the Radiant Empire. Their conversations were rich with friendly overtones...

Seth was relentlessly pursued by the Crown Prince and could not get away from him. On the other hand, Rody had no choice but to concentrate and deal with the other diplomatic envoys of the various kingdoms of the Roland Continent.

Fortunately, Rody also had a lot of experience in dealing with this kind of occasions. From time to time, he would secretly observe the words and actions of that Crown Prince Aven.

That night, the Crown Prince Aven had an aloof appearance and did not mention anything about that day's peace negotiation. He casually talked to Seth about the Radiant Empire's sights and stories. Rody secretly frowned. He could not guess why the Crown Prince's attitude had changed so much.

While he was deep in his thoughts, he heard someone on the outside announce, "The Senior Prime Minister has arrived!"

Rody's eyes brightened. 'The Senior Prime Minister?'

That day, the Senior Prime Minister's attitude in the palace was

extremely ambiguous. Common sense dictated that the Senior Prime Minister should help the King to arrange the peace negotiations. However, his fierce and uncompromising attitude made him suspicious.

Besides that, after leaving the palace, everybody also suspected that the Senior Prime Minister was the one who had leaked his whereabouts in the Roland Continent. All the assassination attempts might also be related to him.

The aged Senior Prime Minister had his usual expression when he entered. The man who held a high post in the Sauron Kingdom for decades looked as if he did not take offense with what happened at the palace. He gently and politely greeted everyone and then walked towards Rody.

"Earl Rody, have you gotten accustomed to this place?" The old Senior Prime Minister smiled warmly. His smile actually did not have any trace of pretense. He looked extremely sincere and genuine. Rody sighed to himself. It's another Marquis Garoline!

Rody smiled and nodded. "His Highness is very hospitable. I am very happy to be here tonight." He paused for a moment and observed the old man's face. He did not see anything abnormal and then continued, "I did not expect to meet you here, Senior Prime Minister. Looks like you and His Highness are quite close to each other."

The Senior Prime Minister sighed and said, "I am His Majesty's trusted confidante and have also served as a teacher of the Crown Prince." As if he was not very willing to speak on this topic, he then asked, "If you need anything at the Summer Palace, as our guest, please don't hesitate to tell me directly."

Rody nodded. He hesitated for a moment and suddenly thought of an idea. He was resolved to speak straight to the point. He could not help provoking him. "Everything is fine. His Majesty has dispatched soldiers to protect us. At the very least, we would not

feel apprehensive here."

The Senior Prime Minister's expression did not change. He lightly replied, "It was just a small storm. Your Excellency the Earl has extraordinary strength. That was not worthy of your attention." He squinted his eyes and watched Rody as he laughed like an old fox. "I heard that Your Excellency the Earl killed three Dragon Paladins single-handedly. With that kind of strength, how could a few overconfident assassins hurt you?"

Rody immediately shook his head, smiled and replied, "I am afraid you only heard those exaggerated rumors. Those Paladins were dealt with by the Black Veil Saint and His Excellency Augustine. I would not have arrived here safely if it were not for them. Please do not say that again. I would feel very ashamed."

The Senior Prime Minister pondered. He looked carefully at Rody and noticed that Rody looked normal. Although the Senior Prime Minister had some doubts, he still believed him.

After all, for a person to defeat three Paladins on his own would only be possible for mythical people in the legends. The old Senior Prime Minister did not believe what was reported.

They continued to lightly inquire about each other. The Senior Prime Minister suddenly sighed. He deliberately looked at the Crown Prince, who was eagerly talking to Seth. He said softly, "Today at the palace, I saw His Highness rush into the hall the moment I left...This...Did this alarm Your Excellency?"

Rody smiled, "The Crown Prince is youthful and loyal to his country. I actually admire him very much."

The Senior Prime Minister sighed, "Youngsters are always impatient. I hope he will not cause any more trouble. Today, His Majesty the King retained him in the palace and reprimanded him the whole afternoon."

While listening to the Senior Prime Minister, Rody looked at

Seth, who was about to go crazy, with a smile. The Senior Prime Minister then looked towards where Rody was looking and muttered, "Earl Rody, honestly speaking. I heard that His Highness had invited you here. I was afraid that he might cause trouble, so I came to see. I did not expect to see him and Miss Nicole get along happily. Looks like...His Majesty's reprimand today was effective."

Hearing that Rody immediately thought to himself. What was he implying?

Is he trying to imply that His Majesty the King incited Prince Aven to deliberately approach 'Nicole'?

Hmmp, this seems to be logical. After all, making connections with the Tulip Family will also be beneficial in facing the Temple, who is currently an enemy of the Sauron Kingdom.

Everyone knows the power of the Tulip Family in the Radiant Empire. To create a connection with the Tulip Family was to obtain powerful assistance from the South.

Rody narrowed his eyes as he thought of that. He was not able to read Senior Prime Minister's intention.

'Whose side is this old guy with?'

'Is he with the Temple? Does not seem like it! After all, he is the Senior Prime Minister of the Sauron Kingdom. He also participated in the peace negotiations. However, he doesn't seem totally loyal to the King...'

When Crown Prince Aven saw Rody and the Senior Prime Minister talking to each other, he and Seth immediately walked over. Seth appeared to look relieved and was sweating on his forehead. He glared fiercely at Rody, then stood next to him.

"Senior Prime Minister, you have also arrived!" Aven seemed to be surprised to see the Senior Prime Minister's presence. He was wholeheartedly attending to 'Miss Nicole' that he did not notice the arrival of an important noble, even though he was the host.

The Senior Prime Minister narrowed his eyes and smiled, "Your Highness, tonight, your arrangements here are not bad. Are there any other programs later?"

Aven smiled and turned to Rody. He said, "I heard that Earl Rody is also a general in the Radiant Empire. Am I right?" His words sounded provocative.

Rody smiled and nodded. He deliberately said, "Yes, I had the honor of fighting alongside His Excellency the Duke of the Tulip Family at Thunderous City! Winning that great victory for the Empire was my life's honor!"

Those words immediately brought a sour look to the Crown Prince. After all, that war, the 'great victory' of the Radiant Empire was the defeat of the Roland people.

Aven gritted his teeth and laughed, "Your Excellency the Earl was under the command of the Duke of the Tulip Family?"

Rody nodded and replied, "I used to be the Captain of the Duke's bodyguards."

"Oh?" Aven's eyes lit up.

The Duke of the Tulip Family was famous even on the Roland Continent. As a warrior, Aven was also very curious about that famous and outstanding general.

"I have heard of the fame of the Duke of the Tulip Family on the Roland Continent. What kind of person is he?"

Rody hesitated a little as he did not know how to answer. As the Duke of the Tulip Family was actually himself, Rody was embarrassed to boast even though he was now more brazen than before. However, it would not be appropriate for him to say anything negative, as he was the Special Envoy of the Radiant Empire and also formerly under the command of the Duke of the Tulip Family.

While he was still hesitating, Seth unhappily snapped, "The Duke

of the Tulip Family? He is just a silly boy. Other than having a bit of skill with the sword, his brain is full of paste!"

Those words made the others laugh. They all accepted 'her' words as a joke. Only Rody understood that Seth was venting his anger for making fun of him. Seth was taking the opportunity to verbally abuse him.

Aven laughed and changed the topic. He looked at Rody and continued, "Your Excellency the Earl, what position are you holding now with the Imperial Guards of the Radiant Empire?"

Before Rody could speak, the Senior Prime Minister replied, "I heard that Earl Rody was originally with the Lightning God's Whip. He is now a Commander of the Imperial Guards. Your Highness, you were also originally from our Royal Knights. It is really fate that the two of you met."

Aven smiled, a little proud of himself. After all, he was someone with real talent and also had impressive achievements from the beginning as a knight. Unlike the other noble children, he was vain since he was young.

The Crown Prince was clearly very satisfied with the Senior Prime Minister's words. He deliberately and lightly said, "It is unfortunate that, under His Majesty's order, I am now in charge of the navy. I did not go to the front lines in the war and was not able to see your world-renowned Lightning God's Whip. It is truly a pity..." Aven said the word 'pity' but his face revealed a conceited expression.

He saw a small badge on Rody's costume. Prince Aven then asked, "Earl Rody, what is the significance of that badge?"

Rody frowned. He could tell that the young prince intentionally asked even though he knew the answer. Comparing his acting with that of the Senior Prime Minister, Prince Aven was too inexperienced. However, he still calmly replied, "This is the badge for warriors of the Empire. This badge symbolizes that I am lucky

enough to obtain the rank of a Grade 5 Swordsman."

The Crown Prince's eyes lit up. "Grade 5 Swordsman!" He suddenly waved his hand and called out for a subordinate [to come over](#).

As if it was already prearranged, a robust man stepped out from the back. That person looked like he was about thirty years old. He was sturdy and tall. Although he donned casual clothes, he walked forward firmly. From his steadfast expression and the way he walked, Rody could tell that he was a powerful and high ranked knight.

The man looked down at the ground as he walked over all the way. His hands were holding a long and narrow dark colored box.

Rody frowned. The other party had obviously prepared this, but he did not know what their intentions were.

'Is he looking for someone to fight me? Does he want me to be defeated and embarrassed in front of the diplomatic envoys of the different kingdoms on the Roland continent? It is possible...After all, this Crown Prince is from the anti-peace faction. He is young and impetuous. It is normal for him to take this opportunity to vent his anger.'

Aven deliberately laughed and loudly said, "Earl Rody, you are young and promising. You are also a warrior. I am filled with admiration. I am good at swordplay and normally love collecting weapons. This is a sword I found a month ago. It can cut and break any weapon, no matter how solid the other weapon is! Earl Rody, do you have any interest in trying it out with me?"

Although he asked insincerely, he had already opened the box and readily picked up the sword with his hand.

It was a standard traditional cross-shaped sword of a Roland Knight. The blade of the sword, from beginning to end, was in a shape of a sharp triangle. There was also a blood groove on the

sword. A few unknown gems that were embedded on the sword glimmered radiantly. With a single glance, Rody could see that those gems were shining very brightly. It was most probably enchanted with sorcery.

The sharp edge of the blade glowed with a pale green light, clearly showing that it was a thoroughly tempered weapon. Besides that, the sword had a primitive design. With a glance, one could easily tell that the sword definitely had an extraordinary history.

That was especially true for the hilt as it was pale yellow, making it look old. From Rody's experience, that pale yellow was not just color. It was bloodstains. The hilt had been immersed and soaked in blood. The blood could no longer be scrubbed off and had naturally changed the color.

It was obviously not an ordinary sword but a weapon that had seen life and death battles!

"Earl Rody, what do you think of this sword?" The Crown Prince deliberately gently flicked the sword which immediately issued a clear humming sound.

Rody sighed and replied, "Good sword!"

Aven was satisfied as he looked at Rody. He then showed a pleased expression and said, "In order to get this sword, I searched for three years and bought it from someone else for tens of thousands of gold coins! Speaking of this sword, there is a lot of interest!" At this juncture, he then deliberately stopped to look at Rody and Seth as if he was waiting for them to ask.

Unfortunately, he was showing off to the wrong targets.

Who was Rody? Which kind of weapons had he not seen before? He had seen legendary artifacts such as the Dracula's Spear and the God Slaying Bow. Even the Dragon Fang and the Dragon Spell Scimitar were one in a million treasures.

As for Seth, from an early age, he had never been interested in

swords. It did not matter to him if a sword was good or bad.

Aven felt embarrassed when he saw the two of them just nod and not ask anything. Fortunately, the Senior Prime Minister was perceptive and immediately helped the Crown Prince get out of this awkward predicament. He asked, "Your Highness, I wonder what the mystical origin of this sword is?"

The Senior Prime Minister's question had rescued the Crown Prince. Aven glanced gratefully at him and said, "In the history of the Roland Continent, the Temple had a total of ninety-six Paladins! All of these Paladins were like the masters of that era! In the history of the Roland Continent, this sword was the weapon used by the most legendary Paladin. He was the most powerful Paladin several hundred years ago!"

Aven deliberately showed a mysterious expression but, unfortunately, Rody still looked very calm. Paladin? I have already killed four of them. I don't see anything so formidable about them. What can be so terrific about their weapons?

Seth and Rody did not know the history of the Roland Continent, but the Senior Prime Minister did. The Senior Prime Minister showed a surprised expression and could not help himself from saying, "Your Highness, are you saying that the person is..."

Aven nodded his head and lowered his voice as he said, "It is that Paladin from several hundred years ago! He was known as the most powerful Paladin in hundreds of years. He was finally expelled from the Temple and then he personally defeated two other Paladins, who were dispatched to kill him. He was the guy who was known as the 'Temple's Disgrace'.

Rody finally showed some interest. "The Temple's Disgrace? Your Highness, the Paladin you spoke of seemed to be unusual!" Even Seth could not help but become curious.

Aven showed a serious expression as lowered his voice. He glanced at 'Miss Nicole' and whispered, "This is something that the

Temple forbid people from telling as it placed the Temple to shame! That Paladin was recognized as the strongest master on the Roland Continent hundreds of years ago! He once entered the Mythical Beast Forest alone to kill countless high ranked Mythical Beasts. He even entered the Dragon race's territory by himself and escaped unscathed! But later..." At this point, Aven's seemed a little ambiguous as he continued, "Later, because of something that happened, that Paladin and the Temple had a conflict. He rebelled against the Temple! The Elders Council of the Temple angrily declared him an apostate and ordered his execution. They also dispatched two other Paladins to kill him. However, the other two Paladins were defeated by him. Ever since then, that Paladin disappeared! That incident had a huge impact on the Temple. Of the three Paladins the Temple had, one rebelled and the other two were defeated. It made the Temple lose face! This is why this story was kept secret by the Temple!"

At this point, Crown Prince Aven sounded proud of himself and said, "This sword is the one that was used then by that master, the strongest Paladin. I had to go through numerous difficulties to get it"

Rody's curiosity was finally aroused. He could not help asking, "Your Highness, what is the name of that master Paladin?"

Crown Prince Aven took a deep breath as if showing respect. He then slowly said, "His name is Sky!"

"Cough! Cough! Cough" Rody choked the moment he heard that name and coughed violently.

Lai ren. 来人 Literally, it is 'Come people'. Usually used in calling a servant without specifying who. It sounds weird in English.

Chapter 237: Provocation

Sky?

That old fellow with fat all over his body? He was the strongest Paladin in the history of the Roland Continent?

Rody could not imagine what Sky would look like in Paladin armor...

Although there were a lot of people in this world with the same name, to have the ability to defeat two Paladins, there was unlikely anyone else other than Sky...

When the Crown Prince and the Senior Prime Minister saw the Special Envoy coughing violently with a strange expression, they could not understand why Rody reacted strangely.

Rody realized they were looking at him in a strange way. He pretended to clear his throat and smiled wryly, "It is nothing. I was just a bit too excited when I heard of this person's legendary exploits." He could not help but look again at the sword in the Crown Prince's hands and he thought to himself, 'To think that that fatty had such a marvelous story. Looks like I would need to ask him about it when I return.'

The Crown Prince gently caressed his sword. He then narrowed his eyes, revealing a sharp gaze as he said, "Your Excellency the Earl was originally from the Lightning God's Whip. I heard that in your country, there is a strong Wolf Fang army within the Lightning God's Whip. They are the elites and use a peculiar type of scimitar. Those scimitars were meticulously forged by the blacksmiths and are sharper than ordinary swords. Is that true?"

Rody nodded and replied, "The Wolf Fang is the cavalry regiment directly under the Duke of the Tulip Family. Naturally, their weapons would be special."

The Crown Prince then looked towards Rody's waist. He smiled

and said, "Your Excellency the Earl, the scimitar at your waist must be from the Lightning God's Whip? It looks unique."

Rody smiled as he thought to himself. He then nodded silently.

The Crown Prince gradually revealed his true intention as he said, "The scimitars of the Wolf Fang in your country are well known throughout the world. It is said to be better than the scimitars from the Northern Grasslands! Although the scimitars originated from the Great Moon Kingdom, their forging standards could not be as developed compared to the Empire. The scimitar that belongs to Your Excellency the Earl must be something unusual! Is it possible for us to have a look?"

Rody frowned since his scimitar was not the standard weapon of the Wolf Fang. It was the Dragon Spell Sword. Rody did not want to complicate matters. Since the Crown Prince had already raised the issue, Rody simply smiled and removed the sword from his waist. He handed it over and said, "Your Highness, please take a look. However, my scimitar is just an ordinary weapon. I do not dare to compare it with Your Highness' treasured sword."

Aven drew out the scimitar and looked at it for a while. He was amazed. Rody's scimitar originally had a unique shape. In addition to that, a few days earlier, it was refined with the Ice Dragon's soul. Unsheathed, it was exceptionally radiant and threateningly cold.

The Crown Prince asked, "What are the strange words on the sword?" He could not help but gently stroked the sword. His face clearly showed his fondness for it.

Rody looked at his expression and immediately became vigilant. The Crown Prince seemed to have a habit of collecting strange weapons. It would be difficult to refuse if he suddenly asked for it or wanted to buy it, so Rody said, "This scimitar was presented to me by His Majesty the Emperor. I, too, don't understand those words on it."

Sure enough, Aven's expression looked slightly more depressed the moment Rody said that the scimitar was presented to him by the Emperor. Although he really liked the scimitar, he also knew that an Emperor's gift could not easily be given away or sold.

Aven did not have good intentions when he gave the order to bring out his prized collection. He originally wanted to incite the Earl to outshine him and to compete in a duel with those weapons. As long as he could break the Earl's weapon, then he would have embarrassed the Earl and that would help him vent a little of his resentment.

However, when Aven saw that the Earl's scimitar was not an ordinary weapon, he hesitated a little. The scimitar looked very sharp. If they were to suggest a competition, it might be possible for his treasured sword to get damaged. Losing face was one thing. But he would be in distress as the sword was not easy to acquire.

Aven's expression immediately changed a few times. Suddenly, he recalled that the Earl's scimitar was a gift from the Emperor. He made a ruthless decision.

'Take the risk!'

Since the scimitar was a treasured gift from the Emperor, then if he could break the scimitar here, the Earl would get into big trouble! It would not be a minor offense if the treasured gift presented by the Emperor was damaged!

Thus, Aven secretly gritted his teeth and said, "Your Excellency the Earl, it looks like your scimitar is extraordinary. Why don't we test it out? It is rare to see two mysterious weapons together. Why don't we find out whose weapon is better?"

How could Rody agree to that kind of match? He naturally refused outright in all ways possible, and also pretended to be modest. "Your Highness' treasured sword is an unusual weapon. How could my scimitar compare? Let's forget it!"

When Aven saw Rody declined, he continued to insist. Rody simply shook his head and refused.

The Senior Prime Minister beside them did not say anything. He deliberately stepped back and quietly observed them with a smile. Seth smiled meaningfully and said, "Your Highness, I have an idea. Should I say it?"

Aven laughed and immediately replied, "Miss Nicole's ideas must definitely be good. Please go ahead!" He paused for a moment, then felt like he should encourage her more. He then added, "Please speak. I will definitely respect your idea."

Rody was stunned for a moment and then glared at Seth. He wondered what kind of trick Seth wanted to play.

Seth did not look at Rody. He gently smiled and said, "Earl Rody is our country's Grade 5 Swordsman. He is a warrior under the command of the Duke of the Tulip Family. As the Regiment Commander of the Navy for one of the kingdoms on the Roland Continent, Your Highness must definitely have powerful warriors reporting to you. What is the point of just comparing weapons? I suggest we might as well have Earl Rody compete against a warrior selected by Your Highness. Let's see who is the more powerful warrior. As the warriors spar, the advantages and disadvantages of the two weapons would be show up."

The moment those words were spoken, Rody's first reaction was to strangle the troublemaker to death.

He was trying to conceal his strength. His real purpose of coming here was to find out the actual situation of the other party. However, if he were to compete, he would end up revealing his strength.

Seth still did not look at Rody. He deliberately gave the Crown Prince a shallow smile and softly said, "Your Highness, what do you think of my suggestion?"

The Crown Prince was swept away by the gaze from 'Miss Nicole'. He felt dizzy and flushed as he said, "Good! Good idea!"

Rody frowned and he could only look at the Senior Prime Minister. He hoped the Senior Prime Minister would say something to stop it. However, the Senior Prime Minister silently stood there smiling. He looked at Rody's eyes meaningfully.

Rody was clear in his mind. The Senior Prime Minister's standpoint was strange. He believed that the Senior Prime Minister wanted to take this opportunity to gauge his strength.

Thinking of that, Rody shook his head and said, "Your Highness, I came to your country to negotiate for peace. It is not good for me to fight in a challenge."

"We are just learning from each other. It is unrelated to Your Excellency the Earl's mission. I have long heard that it is common for the people of your country to learn from each other in contests. Perhaps you are worried? Don't worry. My subordinates know their limits when they fight."

Rody smiled helplessly.

Rody was of course not afraid to fight. No matter how powerful the Crown Prince's subordinates were, they would not be as powerful as Paladins. However, hurting the Crown Prince's subordinates in a private contest would be bad. No matter what was said, he came here for peace negotiations. Besides that, the Senior Prime Minister was also not a simple person. He looked as if he could see through Rody.

That being said, the proposal was made by 'Miss Nicole'. Rody could not openly oppose the words of the 'eldest daughter of the Tulip Family'.

As he could not decline, everybody went outside the palace. After hearing what had transpired, the smarter diplomatic envoys from the other kingdoms immediately thought it strange. They were

worried that the Crown Prince, who had opposed the peace negotiations, had now come up with another trick. One by one, they went outside to spectate.

The Senior Prime Minister did not say anything from the start until the end. He simply stood on the sidelines, watching. However, when the Crown Prince suggested he personally compete, the Senior Prime Minister cautioned him and said, "Today, in the palace, Your Highness has just been reprimanded by His Majesty. I suggest you do not compete."

After what the Senior Prime Minister said, Aven hesitated for a moment before he gave up the idea of personally competing in the fight. After all, no matter what the result would be, His Majesty the King would definitely be angry if he were to go out and fight personally. That day, he had already angered His Majesty, so it was better for the Crown Prince to restrain himself. Moreover, Aven knew his own capability and he might not necessarily defeat a Grade 5 Swordsman. It would be even more unsightly if he were to lose.

The person who would fight in the contest was the sturdy warrior that brought the sword. His name was Leho. Aven had introduced him as one of the commanders of the Navy. Originally, Leho and Aven were part of the Royal Knights. Aven was extremely reverent when he talked about Leho; he was probably quite skillful.

Rody and Leho stood facing each other. Leho was holding the Crown Prince's treasured sword. His eyes were like lightning as he fixed his stare at Rody as if he was getting ready to strike.

Rody pretended to look tensed but at the same time was pondering over the matter.

'The Crown Prince is of the pro-war faction. Naturally, he does not know my strength. However, the Senior Prime Minister has heard the news that I have killed three Paladins. Although he does

not really believe the news, he will not be so naïve as to think that I am just a bungling oaf. What are his intentions by consenting to this competition?'

'Regardless of the outcome, the Crown Prince will certainly be reprimanded by the King. In other words, he is not on the Crown Prince's side.'

'Whose side is this old fellow with?'

'Perhaps he heard the news about me and doubted my strength? He also wanted to take this opportunity to find out how strong I am?'

Aven deliberately stood beside Seth. His words were filled with attempts to win her favor. He also faintly boasted to Seth that Leho was one of the greatest masters during his time in the Royal Knight. He was even selected to become a Paladin. However, he rejected the offer to become a Paladin because of his loyalty to the Crown Prince. He remained by Aven and followed him to join the Navy.

Aven then told Seth not to worry as Leho knew how to restrain himself and would not hurt the Earl.

Feeling tired of it all, Seth sighed. He looked at the Crown Prince with pity.

Rody was still thinking of something else when he heard Leho roar loudly. Leho raised the sword in his hands as he rushed forward and slashed down!

Rody was helpless. He only raised his hands holding his scimitar to block!

There was a loud clang as the swords struck each other. Rody deliberately moved back a few steps. On the last footstep, he also deliberately stomped forcefully on the ground, creating a hole in the stone slab on the ground. He then spat and loudly said, "Good!"

Leho's attack was blocked. However, he moved quickly and with

just a few steps, he was attacking furiously. He indeed had extraordinary strength. According to Rody's estimate, he had already achieved the rank of a Senior Knight. If Rody was a real Grade 5 Swordsman, against those series of attacks, he would have been battered a long time ago.

The two fought for a while, their swords clashing with loud clanging sounds. Rody deliberately concealed his own strength. He did not use any fighting energy and only defended passively. Blocking repeatedly from left and right with the scimitar in his hands, he took all the attacks from his opponent.

Those diplomatic envoys from the other kingdoms were knowledgeable. They saw that the Crown Prince's subordinate was powerful. His violent onslaught made them secretly fearful. They could not help but softly applaud. They dared not applaud loudly because of Rody's identity.

Seth watched the battle and yawned repeatedly. Although Leho was quite strong and his onslaught was imposing it could not be compared to the Wind Dragon Amu's earth-shattering attacks...

Rody pretended to look engrossed. Clang! Clang! Clang! They fought for a while but Rody had only defended since the beginning. He did not strike back at all. When he felt that the fight had gone on long enough, he blocked another attack from his opponent and jumped away. He then smiled and said, "Stop!"

Leho gasped for breath and asked, "What's wrong?"

Rody loudly said, "That's enough! I have great admiration for your strength. I think it is time to end this spar." He turned his scimitar, holding it so that the cutting edge was topside, ready to walk to the side.

Leho's eyes flashed. He rushed forward and shouted, "As a warrior, how could you so easily admit defeat?"

Rody frowned as he lightly dodged his strike and said, "We are

only sparring. Do we need to fight to the death?"

Leho held the sword with both his hands and slashed it down. When they got closer to each other, Leho whispered, "I can see that you are concealing your strength!"

Rody's eyes lit up. He narrowed his eyes and softly asked, "What do you want?"

"Show your true strength! Convince me by making me lose. Then I will let you go!"

As the two of them talked, the people around them gradually started to applaud.

Leho fought seriously during the time the two of them talked. As they exchanged those few words, Leho had slashed about eleven times. Each of those slashes faintly brought with it a strong gust of wind and the sword was covered with fighting energy!

Leho was very fast with his attacks. However, Rody dodged even faster. In his hand, Rody was still holding the scimitar in reverse. Although Leho's attacks were ferocious, they could not even touch Rody's clothes. Rody's figure was like a ghost in everybody's eyes. He was like a falling tree leaf that was constantly fluttering. No matter how fiercely Leho attacked, he could not do anything with that leaf!

Rody gradually got angry when he saw his opponent persistently attacking him. Since the start of his career, he had never gotten into a disadvantageous position in a contest. Although he was trying to hide his own strength, the arrogance in his heart was becoming agitated. Suddenly, the opponent's sword slashed down at him. Rody's eyes flashed with anger as he turned over his hand and raised his sword. Clang! There was a clashing sound as the weapons struck against each other. Leho grunted as he staggered back seven to eight steps. The hand holding the sword faintly trembled and his face turned red.

Rody saw that the Senior Prime Minister, who was at the side, was astonished, and he regretted not controlling himself better.

Seeing Leho gasping for his breath, Rody realized something. He recalled how Master Autumn confused the Church when he was in the Imperial Capital.

'Hmph! You all want to see my real strength? In that case, I will show you my "real" strength!'

"Do we really need to determine the victor?" Rody narrowed his eyes.

Leho did not speak. Silver fighting energy burst out from his sword. He suddenly took a deep breath and slashed his sword downwards and a blade of wind shot towards Rody. He also instantly scuttled out and stabbed forth from the left!

Rody sneered and stretched out a hand. He gently touched the space above with his left hand and a golden light shield immediately emerged in front of him!

Leho's wind blade smashed into Rody's shield which instantly broke. Rody's action was even faster. The moment he saw Leho's sword in front of him, instead of blocking with his sword, he readily caught it with two fingers!

Leho had put in all his strength into that attack, but it just did not have any effect! He had thrust with his sword but could not move it forward an inch!

Rody lightly held the sharp end of the blade with his two fingers and said, "Let go!"

Leho's face had turned purple. He was stubborn by nature. Not only did he refuse to let go, instead he suddenly clenched the fist of his other hand and swung it towards Rody. Rody coldly looked at his opponent and he then forcefully twisted the sword blade of his opponent with his fingers ...

Halfway through swinging his fist, Leho felt a strong, inexorable

turning spiral force on the other hand. He could not counter that force. He quickly rotated his body in the air like a gyroscope to follow that rotation of his sword before crashing to the ground!

However, Leho was a valiant man. Although he was lying down on the ground, he still held on tightly to the sword. Rody sighed and loosened his fingers. He was about to withdraw when Leho roared loudly and attacked again!

Rody was really angry now. He suddenly slashed with his scimitar, creating a loud crisp sound.

Ting!

The precious sword in Leho's hands was broken into two by Rody. Half of the broken sword flew up into the sky and spun a few times before it fell and stabbed into the ground.

It had fallen right in front of Crown Prince Aven's feet!

He looked at the pale Leho, the surprised and frightened Crown Prince, the strange gazes of the surrounding people and the Senior Prime Minister with his thoughtful eyes.

Rody did not care about all that anymore. He looked at the broken sword in Leho's hands and thought to himself. 'Shit, I broke fatty's sword into two. Will he come after me?'

Chapter 238: Freak

Condensation of energy into shape!

The audience exclaimed in admiration. Crown Prince Aven looked reverently and unwaveringly looked at Rody. The surrounding diplomatic envoys of the various kingdoms also had reverent expressions. Only the Senior Prime Minister narrowed his eyes. No one could tell what was on his mind.

"Condensation of energy into shape!" The Crown Prince was the first person to shout loudly, "Earl Rody, I did not expect you to have already reached the level of a Paladin! Err..." He immediately remembered and corrected himself. "I think it is called Sacred Swordsman in your distinguished country."

Aven had forgotten that his own men had lost the fight. With large strides, he walked up to Rody. He looked at Rody with eyes full of respect and almost rushed to Rody to hold his hands!

Rody kept his scimitar. He frowned as he looked at the broken sword and with a wry smile said, "I have broken Your Highness' treasured sword. I am sorry!"

Aven waved his hand and said, "Never mind, never mind! It is just a sword. I did not expect Your Excellency the Earl to have such excellent strength! If you do not mind, please give me some pointers!"

He was truly a youngster with a passion for martial arts. He did not feel depressed or frustrated even after defeat.

On the Roland Continent, all the strongest masters were from the Temple. Although the Sauron Kingdom was strong, they did not have any knight that had reached the level of Paladin. The person whom Rody fought with, Leho, was already an extremely rare master. The Crown Prince immediately thought of seeking advice the moment he saw a Sacred Swordsman standing in front of him.

While Rody was feeling embarrassed, the Senior Prime Minister finally walked over. Seth followed behind him. He whispered, "Your Highness, I suggest we go in first. Everyone is looking over here."

Aven ordered a few people to take Leho away for him to rest. Leho was now fully convinced, especially from Rody's last strike which did not give him a chance to resist. He deeply understood that the disparity between himself and his opponent was too big. He bowed to Rody as he was being supported out by others.

Aven no longer had the mood to continue the banquet and the diplomatic envoys, with various thoughts in mind, gradually left.

The dinner banquet ended in a hurry. Ironically, everyone left even before the main course was served. Only Rody and the Crown Prince remained in the palace. The Senior Prime Minister seemed to leave deliberately. Just before he left, he deliberately whispered into Rody's ears, "Your Excellency the Earl, you are indeed very powerful."

Before Rody could comprehend the meaning of the Senior Prime Minister's words, he had already left with a smile.

The Crown Prince was struggling in his heart. As someone from the pro-war faction, he naturally had opposed the peace negotiations. He had already been reprimanded by the King that day, but he still felt that the peace negotiation was a disgrace. However, as a warrior, he revered powerful people like Rody. Aven never had the opportunity to seek advice from a master on the level of a Paladin. Now, there was such a great master in front of him. If he did not ask for advice, he would not feel at ease for the rest of his life.

His fixation on martial arts had made him temporarily forget about Seth. Totally unlike his cold attitude earlier, he enthusiastically and respectfully sent Rody off. Rody made a small request to take the broken sword away. The Crown Prince quickly

agreed in exchange for a promise that Rody would teach him sword fighting skills during his stay at the palace when it was convenient.

"What were you trying to do just now?" Rody immediately turned to look at Seth the moment he closed the windows of the carriage.

Seth leisurely sighed. He did not directly reply Rody and whispered, "Didn't you notice?"

"What?"

Seth then replied, "That Senior Prime Minister, he has been observing you the whole night."

Rody nodded, "I certainly noticed that. However, I would like to ask you why you proposed that I fight with the subordinate of the Crown Prince?"

Seth smiled gently as if in disdain. "So what's wrong with having a duel? I know that you are afraid of showing your strength. However, did you think the Senior Prime Minister would not suspect you just because you do not fight? After all, three Dragon Paladins have failed to kill you. Although Mouse and Augustine acted as your cover, do you think the old Senior Prime Minister would not be curious about you?"

Rody was silent.

Seth continued, "Either way, we have made some gains tonight."

Rody thought for a moment and whispered, "That's right. The Crown Prince is not in collaboration with the Senior Prime Minister. I believe he was just being used by the Senior Prime Minister. Tonight, when you suggested the spar, the Senior Prime Minister did not object. In any case, if the Senior Prime Minister and the Crown Prince were working together, he would be afraid of my strength and would not so easily agree to it. Since he did not object, then he did not care whether the Crown Prince would lose face or not. What he was truly concerned was to test my strength."

"You can see things clearly but not deep enough!" Seth smiled.

His gaze turned very strange. "While everybody was watching you during the match, I was observing the Senior Prime Minister. He... was a little bit strange."

"Oh?" Rody's eyes lit up. He was certain that Seth was better to him when it comes to comparing wisdom. Since Seth could see something was wrong, then it must be very important.

Seth lowered his voice and slowly asked, "Let me first ask, how strong is Leho?"

Rody thought for a moment and replied, "He is not bad!" He paused for a while and then added, "According to normal standards, he is very good! He has already reached the level of a high ranked knight. In a kingdom, with this kind of strength, he can be the leader of an army. He can even be a senior commander in the Holy Knights!"

Seth smiled and looked at Rody. "I noticed that when you finally started to fight back, the Senior Prime Minister's eyes lit up as if he was feeling pleased. However, when you repelled the opponent, you did not attack him but only broke his sword, the Senior Prime Minister looked disappointed."

"Disappointed?" Rody sat up straight. He showed a pensive expression and frowned, "Why is he disappointed?"

Seth gently stretched out two fingers and said, "There are two possible reasons for his disappointment. The first one is because Leho could not force you to show your true strength and easily lost to you. The result was that he could not thoroughly see your capabilities."

Rody nodded. "According to the normal train of thought, it could be explained that way. What about the second reason?"

Seth sighed and gave a wry smile. "The second possibility for his disappointment is that you did not seriously injure that Leho!"

"Why?" Rody frowned.

Seth shook his head and said, "You all have been wondering whether the Senior Prime Minister and the Crown Prince were collaborating. However, have you ever considered the possibility that they might also be enemies to each other?" He then sneered and asked, "Won't you feel happy if you see your opponent lose a competent commander?"

Before Rody could speak, Seth's eyes flashed as he continued, "In my opinion, this Senior Prime Minister must definitely be with the Temple."

Rody thought for a moment and then shook his head, "I have also thought of this possibility, but I think it does not make sense! Just think about it. He participated in the peace negotiations. He has also contributed a lot towards the peace negotiations. At first, I thought he was loyal to the King. There was one thing that can prove this...When I met Mouse in the Northwest, the Temple and the Sauron Kingdom were already at odds with each other! When Mouse was betrayed by his subordinates, that Royal Knight who plotted against her said that he was ordered by the King and the Senior Prime Minister."

Seth sighed and smiled, "What is it that you cannot understand? The Senior Prime Minister is, after all, just a Senior Prime Minister. He is not a King! If the King wants to deal with the Temple and Mouse, how could the Senior Prime Minister object? Even if he is with the Temple, he could only accept and carry out the King's orders. Otherwise, he would expose himself."

Seth seemed to sneer and said, "Rody, your thinking is still too simple when it comes to politics! What kind of position do you think the Sauron Kingdom has on the Roland Continent? It is the strongest nation on the Roland Continent. The land area covers nearly half the continent. They have a large and formidable army and a strong national strength. If the Temple wants to maintain their prestige in the Roland Continent, then they must find a way to control the Sauron Kingdom by getting to the core of the

sovereignty of the Sauron Kingdom.

He then closed his eyes and lightly said, "I know that in order to control the various kingdoms, the Temple's usual method was to station the Holy Knights at various places then dispatch a Saint from the Temple. However, this method is workable on the small kingdoms and not workable when used on a strong and large kingdom like the Sauron Kingdom."

Rody was lost for words and was deep in thought.

Seth smiled. His tone was filled with a praise as he said, "This Senior Prime Minister is old and presumably, his power has been at the core of the kingdom for many years. His position as a Senior Prime Minister is an extremely high position. It could be said that he is subordinate only to the king. He has a say in all the large and small policy matters in the Kingdom. If the Temple can control this position, then they can easily control the rest of the Kingdom. It could be said that there are no better choices."

Rody heaved a sigh and said, "If your assumption is correct, then the Senior Prime Minister would not be easy to deal with. Looks like the peace negotiations may not be successful."

Seth smiled and listlessly leaned on the cushion as he said, "That's good! The more formidable the opponent, the happier I will be!"

Rody glanced at Seth and suddenly asked, "We turned you into this appearance to punish you, aren't you angry with us?"

Unexpectedly, Seth did not show any anger on his face. He stayed silent for a moment before he looked at Rody. He had a strange expression as he said, " Rody, let me tell you a secret."

"What is it?"

Seth smiled and whispered, "I do not have human emotions."

Looking at Rody's blank expression, he continued, "It doesn't matter whether it is anger, happiness, fear or admiration. All of

these human emotions that I should have, I do not have any at all."

"I... don't understand."

Seth shook his head and said, "Of course, you will not understand. Nobody can understand this kind of feeling if they have never experienced this before."

Seth smiled calmly and said, "Ever since I started to understand things as a child, I have never felt any emotion at all...Not even towards my father, my sister, my family, my lover nor my friends. My heart does not have any emotion! I was born an unfeeling person!"

"I have caused all sorts of trouble since childhood. My father would scold me, my sister would become angry at me, and our family guards would be disgusted with me. That was because I wanted to test out how I would feel when they treated me this way. The result was, I never felt anything. Whether I was confronted with my father's scolding, my sister's anger, or the guards' contempt, my heart remained calm. All the external factors could not affect my mood."

At that juncture, Seth put his hands behind his head and leaned back in a comfortable posture against the back of the cushion. He gave a long sigh and smiled, "After that, I started to try out the so-called love. As you know I have many lovers in the Empire. Many, many lovers! I tried to see if my heart could show love for others but after trying so many times, no matter what kind of woman, I could not feel love!"

"It is true. Perhaps I may smile to others and usually may also have different expressions on my face. Depending on the situation, I can respond with different emotions and reactions...I laugh, I cry, I get angry or sad. I can show affection to lovers and contempt to enemies. Even when you dressed me up as a woman in the past two days, I could also show helplessness and anger. Haha..."

Seth laughed loudly but his eyes were not laughing at all. "But do

you know? Right here..." He pointed at his own heart and said, "It is empty, here!"

"You..." Rody was a little surprised.

Seth shook his head. "I just do not want to be seen as a monster by others! I am always calculating in my mind. I am always thinking about what kind of response I should give during different scenarios. After that, I would act out these emotions during the actual situations. However, my heart only calculates and does not have any real emotions!

"I do not even have the so-called self-esteem! I react this way so that I am not seen as a monster by others. This is also not because I will be unhappy if I am seen as a monster. I don't even know what anger was. My common sense simply tells me that if I were to be seen as a monster, I would encounter a lot of troubles and inconveniences."

Rody looked at Seth in surprise. He was shocked when he continued listening to Seth's words.

No human emotions? Rody could faintly feel that this was a misfortune...

Seth gently smiled and said, "You see, I can see from your eyes that you pity me. Someone like me should feel sad, am I right?"

His voice gradually became softer as he said, "Unfortunately, I do not even know what sadness is."

Chapter 239: Female Paladin's Visit

Rody was deeply shocked by Seth's words.

For the first time in his life, he actually felt fearful of a person.

The scenario where Seth pointed to his heart and calmly said, "It is empty here!" kept repeating itself in Rody's mind.

As a normal person, Rody really could not imagine how horrifying it would be if a human were to entirely lose the ability to feel emotions.

They no longer talked on the way back. After returning to the Summer Palace, they gave a simple narration of what had happened at the banquet. When everybody joked again about Seth dressing up as a woman, Rody no longer laughed together with them like he used to.

Instinctively, he observed Seth's reaction. Sure enough, when Mouse said she would continue to apply makeup for Seth, Seth showed an expression of anger. And when everybody was making fun of him, Seth displayed a helpless expression right on time.

'Are all his reactions really acted out? Are they all just fake?'

'It would be frightening if such a person is my enemy...'

Perhaps only Seth, who was born extremely cold-blooded and logical, could plot such a large conspiracy. He seemed to have considered everyone in his plot. If it was not because he had 'accidentally' miscalculated, the Radiant Empire would have become Seth's world!

It was difficult to imagine that Seth, who plotted that large 'wild' scheme, did not have any 'wild ambition'. It was simply his rationality telling him what to do...

With such a complicated mood, Rody was naturally taciturn. Mouse noticed that Rody was acting strangely. However, Rody

hesitated and did not tell Mouse about what Seth had told him in the carriage.

At night, just before bedtime, Rody gently hugged Mouse and smelled the fragrance of her hair. He could not help but think, 'We could feel each other's love like this. We are truly blessed.'

Rody's room was on the top floor of the Summer Palace. The room was very spacious and was constructed according to the architectural style of the Sauron Kingdom. It had a rugged style with a thick, red carpet, causing the room to have metallic ambience.

Rody was in low spirits when he recalled Seth's words. He drew open the curtains completely at the windows and the balcony to let the cool breeze blow into all the corners of the room.

As it gradually got later into the night, Rody continued to lie down on the bed, unable to sleep. The curtains were blown by the wind and its shadows fell onto the wall. Rody's body suddenly felt cold.

A trace of distinct and fierce murderous aura entered the room from the outside. That murderous aura was like an actual entity lightly pricking Rody's back!

Rody became tense and suddenly jumped up from the bed. He stood on the carpet barefooted and looked seriously at the balcony outside.

There was a large balcony outside the Summer Palace. Rody grabbed his scimitar from the bed and quickly walked out.

It was a dark night and almost no star was visible in the sky. Rody stood there only to see a tall and slender figure standing on the railings of the balcony. The figure's black cloak and long hair fluttered in the dark of the night.

The figure stood quietly on one of the handles of the railing. Underneath that person's feet was the sculpture of a tiger head.

Her arms were folded at her chest.

Rody immediately felt the murderous aura emitted from the figure become sharper. He was surprised. Although he did not know where that person came from, for a person to have such a condensed murderous aura, she was definitely very strong.

"Who are you?" Rody whispered.

The silhouette smiled. The night wind blew her hair away and revealed her face. She had a very seductive face with prominent features. Her face was full of a wild woman's charm. Generally speaking, a woman with that kind of face was peerlessly enchanting. However, her eyes were icy cold as if it was devoid of human emotions. It was sharp and piercing. That unique contrast gave Rody a weird feeling. It was obviously a face that could make men go crazy, but looking at them also gave people an intimidating feeling.

"Who are you, actually?" Rody asked again when the figure did not reply.

Rody suddenly felt the fierce murderous aura beside him and dodged instinctively. He could see from the corners of his eyes a brilliant ray of light appeared in the space at the side. It moved at a speed that Rody was unable to completely dodge. Rody swung with a backhand strike to block the attack. There was a clashing sound. The huge impact caused Rody to step forward. When he looked at the railings again, the figure had gradually become obscured.

"Shit, it's an afterimage!" Rody cursed himself for being careless.

A cold voice then came from behind Rody. "Does the person who killed Ni Lin only have such degree of strength?"

Rody then heard a cleaving sound come from behind him. Rody reacted extremely fast. As soon as he slipped out, he saw a cold blade slash the empty space near his ribs. The chill from the sharp sword gave Rody goose pimples.

"Are you also an Snow Dragon?" Rody sneered as he gave a backhand slash. His body bent in an arch as he slashed. There was the sound of an explosion as his bed was cut into two. Somehow, his mysterious opponent had dodged his strike.

So fast!

Rody was shocked. Relying on his aura, he could tell that his opponent had already moved to the right the moment he swung his sword. Without having the time to think, Rody immediately turned around and brandished his scimitar in a circle. A cold laughter then came from the room. Rody's scimitar once again slashed at nothing. The swift and fierce wind created a deep cut in the wall as the broken stones fell to the ground.

Rody's opponent had already returned to the balcony and stood on the railings. Her slender sword was pointing towards the ground. Her elegant face exposed a mocking smile.

At that moment, Rody had completely calmed down. He took a deep breath and asked, "Who are you actually? Did you come here to kill me?"

"I..." The moment the figure started to speak, Rody had already rushed forward.

Rody was no longer careless this time. He instantly moved to the front of the figure and directly slashed down. Rody could clearly see the surprised expression on that person's face. It seemed like the figure did not expect Rody to move so quickly. The figure had only lifted her sword halfway when Rody's sword had already cut down from above her head.

There was a muffled cutting sound. Rody immediately felt something strange. The scimitar seemed to cut through easily as if there was no resistance at all. With that slash, the silhouette in front of him immediately separated into two halves. However, he noticed the thing that was cut into two was the black cloak. The torn cloak fluttered in the wind like a butterfly but the figure was

not there.

"Hmph, Split Body Technique!" Rody sneered. "I wondered why you were quick. Well, it was Split Body Technique!"

A grim laughter came from behind Rody. "You only just noticed?"

Rody turned around and this time he could see the opponent clearly in front of him.

She was slender and almost as tall as Rody. Rody had never met such a tall woman before. Her black cloak had already been cut and at the moment, she could be seen wearing a set of skintight golden armor. Its style was similar to a Paladin's and yet it was slightly different.

As if it was a piece of shoddy work, the armor only covered the important parts of her body. As if it was intentional, her slender waist and half of her well-endowed chest were exposed. Only one-third of her legs were covered with the calves exposed.

"Are you a Paladin? Are you also a Dragon?" Rody narrowed his eyes and coldly looked at the woman in front of him. "You just used the afterimage of the Split Body Technique. Are you a Wind Dragon?"

"My name is Ars.Lan! I am a Paladin of the Temple. You have guessed correctly. I really am a Dragon," she smiled calmly and added, "or rather, I should say that I am also a Dragon like you!"

Rody coldly said, "Paladin of the Temple, why did you look for me in the middle of the night? Are you here to assassinate me?"

Rody smiled wryly as he looked at the scimitar in his hand. A thin layer of frozen ice could be seen on his scimitar. Rody frowned and said, "Could it be you are not a Wind Dragon? Are you a Snow Dragon?"

Ars.Lan smiled with ridicule and slowly took a few steps back. "Come and try out for yourself."

"Fine!" Rody answered in a simple manner and attacked in an even more straightforward manner.

Rody opened up his domain without any hesitation. The entire room became a world of flames. The surrounding furniture, curtains and tattered bed sheets all started to burn. As the sparks danced in the air and the flame tongues waved, Rody pointed his scimitar at his opponent and said, "I would like to see your capability!"

Unexpectedly, the woman, whom Rody thought to be an Snow Dragon, gave a relaxed smile. It seemed as though the flames around her did not make her feel uncomfortable. As she laughed, she burst into a reddish flame!

Both Rody and his opponent stood to face each other as if they were two balls of fire in the burning domain created by Rody

"You are not an Snow Dragon? Are you a Fire Dragon?" Rody was really surprised. This woman actually had the ability to have two attributes at the same time.

No, she actually used wind-based Split Body Technique earlier...This meant that she had wind, fire and snow attributes—three attributes!

Ars.Lan showed a cold and arrogant expression as she spoke, "I initially wanted to cross swords with you. I wanted to know how strong the man who could kill three Dragon warriors is. However, I did not come here for this today."

Rody asked, "What other reasons could there be for a person from the Temple to look for me?"

Ars.Lan coldly looked at Rody and lightly asked, "Is this how a renowned Domain Master treat his guest? I only came here to convey a few important messages. Is the Earl interested in listening?"

Rody gave a faint smile and instantly removed his domain. He

then said, "Speak!"

Ars.Lan gently smiled and said, "The Pontiff told me to tell you that he really admires you and hopes to have the opportunity to meet and talk with you."

"What does that mean?" Rody showed an expression of disdain.

Ars.Lan shook her head and replied, "Idiot, what are the benefits for the Radiant Empire to help these Kingdoms? The Pontiff means that there are no permanent enemies or friends in this world!" She looked into Rody's eyes and coldly said, "Your friends could become your enemies at any time. Your enemies could also become your friends at any time."

Rody then asked, "So what about it?"

Ars.Lan smiled and softly said, "The Pontiff sincerely invites Your Excellency the Earl to go to the Temple when it is convenient for you."

Rody's gaze suddenly shrunk. Unable to figure out the other party's real intention, he said, "Between the Temple and us..."

At that juncture, a loud noise came from outside. Ars.Lan then coldly said, "Today is not a good time to talk. Rody, I will come and see you again! Do not tell anyone else about this!"

After she had finished, her figure transformed into a lightning and quickly flew away from Rody's room, disappearing into the night.

Rody had the opportunity to stop her when she was leaving the room but for some reason, he did not do so. He frowned as he recalled the woman's words. "There are no permanent enemies..."

Bang! There was a loud sound as the door crashed down and Mouse had already rushed in. The room was a mess and everything inside were burnt into ruins. Rody stood there, holding his scimitar. He seemed to be lost in thought.

"What's wrong?" Mouse walked in with large strides. She grabbed Rody's hand and asked, "What happened just now?"

After that, old Mark and the others arrived. Rody hesitated for a moment and did not offer any more details. He just said, "Just now, somebody came to assassinate me. It was one of the Paladins of the Temple!"

Mouse was startled. "A Paladin? Who is it? Is it..."

Rody gently hugged Mouse and whispered, "Don't worry, it was not Augustine or Fielding. She is of the Dragon race."

"Where is the assassin?" Old Mark frowned as he looked at the room. There were obvious traces of a battle.

Rody shook his head and lightly replied, "She escaped."

Old Mark frowned but he did not say anything. He simply gave Rody a profound look before turning around to leave. Seth was standing in the doorway and looked at Rody as he smiled. His smile was a little strange. He then looked at Mouse, shook his head and left.

Rody saw that Mouse seemed worried. He felt apologetic so he reassured her. "Don't worry, I am fine. She cannot hurt me."

Mouse became angry and said, "The Elder Council still would not give up?"

Rody shook his head and softly said, "The guards outside would arrive soon. This room cannot be used anymore. Let us change rooms first. I have something to tell you."

Mouse looked at Rody and suddenly blushed. They then left for Mouse's room.

"That Pontiff, what kind of person is he?" The moment they entered the room, Rody immediately closed the door behind him and asked.

Ever since Mouse led Rody into her room, her face was red.

However, when Rody suddenly asked that question, she became startled. She then thought for a moment and replied, "I guess you are asking about the Chief Elder of the Elders Council. He..." She frowned and thought before replying, "He is a complicated man."

"Complicated?" Rody looked puzzled as he pulled Mouse's hands and sat down. He instinctively sat down on Mouse's bed. He then froze for a moment and blushed. After that, he stood up and looked at Mouse in embarrassment.

Since the reunion of the two, although the love in their hearts deepened, their intimate actions were limited to hugging and kissing only. Besides that, there were also others around. Mouse had grown up in the Temple and was conservative and shy. As a result, they did not have gone deeper in their relationship.

At that moment, the two of them were on their own in the room. As they were both sitting on Mouse's bed at the same time, he felt somewhat nervous.

Mouse noticed Rody's predicament and she turned so red as if her face was bleeding. She bit her lips and said in a voice so soft that it was almost inaudible, "You...Come and sit down."

Rody sighed and sat down again beside Mouse. He pulled her into his arms and softly said, "Idiot, I do not have other thoughts. I just have something to ask."

Mouse hung her head and softly replied, "I...I know."

When Rody saw Mouse hung down her head, his heart was filled with tenderness. He could not hold himself back from touching her face with his hands and lightly kissing her lips before softly saying, "That's enough. Why should both of us be embarrassed? It is already destined. Yet we seem to be surreptitious."

Mouse giggled. "Your words are too offensive. What do you mean surreptitious?"

Rody laughed happily. He wrapped one arm around Mouse's

waist and whispered, "The question I asked earlier. That Chief Elder, what kind of person is he?"

Mouse finally calmed down and said, "He is a very complicated man! Although I do not have a good opinion of him, I must admit that he is really amazing!"

Chapter 240: God's Chosen One

The Chief Elder of the Roland Temple had an extremely marvelous legendary name—Prometheus!

That name was the same as one of the Gods of legends who gave the gift of fire to man.

In reality, that Chief Elder of the Roland Temple also had some colorful legendary exploits.

Prometheus was born in a noble family. However, he could not receive the family's recognition since he was an illegitimate child! He grew up in the Temple from a young age. As he was poor, he entered the monastery at the age of seven. He became a small monk in the Temple of Sauron Kingdom.

Then, Prometheus immediately displayed talents which were different from normal people.

After two years of cultivation, the nine-year-old Prometheus was chosen in an annual selection to become a member of the practitioners in the Temple.

What was worth mentioning was that after a period of time, Prometheus trained as a warrior. He then became the disciple of a retired Paladin who took a fancy to him.

At the age of fourteen, Prometheus became a member of the Holy Knights, the strongest army of the Temple. At that time, there was an armed rebellion at the Gordon Kingdom of the Roland Continent. The reason for that rebellion was because the late King did not appoint his next heir. His three sons then started an endless civil war.

In order to maintain the peace, the Holy Knights were ordered to quell the civil unrest in the Gordon Kingdom.

The fifteen-year-old Prometheus took part in the war and was awarded an honorary medal because of his outstanding

performance. After that war, he performed well again in a surprise attack and killed one of the King's three sons who had rebelled against the Temple.

Because of that meritorious service, he was promoted to the Captain of the Holy Knights Regiment. He was only sixteen years old when he became a Grade 3 Knight in the Holy Knights.

At that time, he was also the youngest amongst the Grade 3 Knights of the Holy Knights.

After that, things developed completely differently.

Had things proceeded normally, the genius, Prometheus, would have continued to receive the old Paladin's teachings. His future would be limitless. Even the others believed that the young Prometheus was likely to become another Paladin.

However, Prometheus decided to withdraw from the Holy Knights. He gave up his identity as a knight to become a religious practitioner.

Two years later, Gordon Kingdom experienced a drought. They did not get even a single drop of rain for ten consecutive months.

But then, Prometheus did something ridiculous. From the Temple, he set out alone for the Gordon Kingdom. He kowtowed once every ten steps all along the way, piously praying to God. The journey was undoubtedly very long.

At that time, everybody laughed at the seventeen-year-old Prometheus, thinking that he was crazy. Even the Elders of the Temple and the other important people were at a loss. They believed that Prometheus was too naïve and innocent to think that he would be able to move the heavens despite only being a young and insignificant practitioner.

Praying all the way from the Temple was very difficult. In the beginning, everybody could see the young man covered with dust and carrying a heavy bag as he journeyed towards the Gordon

Kingdom. He kowtowed once every ten steps and had fainted many times at the roadside.

With the passage of time, people gradually stopped laughing at him. After all, even though it was a crazy move, it was worthy of respect.

The slow prayer journey lasted for two months before he reached the Gordon Kingdom's capital.

In those two months, Prometheus had won the hearts of countless people and was admired by many.

An even more amazing thing happened. After traveling for thousands of miles, the moment he reached the Gordon Kingdom's capital, black clouds immediately appeared over the original hot sky and a downpour started.

Since then, the name 'Prometheus' spread throughout the entire Roland Continent. The people even called him the 'God's Chosen One'.

When he was twenty-four years old, the Teuton Kingdom was faced with a plague. As a practitioner, Prometheus followed the people of the Temple to the Teuton Kingdom. During the plague, countless priests and pastors died from illnesses. At that time, Prometheus used too much of his sorcerer's magical power to heal the people. As a result, he caused great harm to his own body. His right eye was permanently blinded.

After going through that experience, the Teuton Kingdom gave him a legendary nickname, the 'One-Eyed Saint'.

Later that same year, Prometheus was chosen by one of the Elders of the Temple to be his disciple.

During a conference, conducted once every ten years, attention was once again focused on Prometheus when he was able to identify that a hundred-year-old Temple script was a fake. After the conference, Prometheus, at the age of thirty-four, was

appointed by his teacher, the Chief Elder, to be his successor!

After waiting for a decade, Prometheus became an Elder of the Temple at the age of forty-four. He was also the youngest Elder in the history of the Temple.

From whichever perspective you looked at it, his personal experiences were full of exalted achievements.

Prometheus himself had personally accomplished them to the extreme.

After he withdrew from the Holy Knights and became a practitioner, he spent almost all of his time cultivating. He shut himself away for eleven months out of every twelve months, just to cultivate. Nobody knew how far he had progressed in his cultivation.

"Wait..." Right then, Rody frowned and interrupted Mouse, "Are you saying that he is possibly a sorcerer who is more powerful than you?"

Mouse shook her head and replied, "No, this is not what I mean. The cultivation of the Temple is not just sorcery practice. The cultivation of a practitioner can be the study of theology, the study of life, God and even study of your minds."

"What happened after that?"

Mouse sighed and continued, "After that..."

"No matter from which point of view, Prometheus was seen as the Temple's most hardworking practitioner. He continued to be like that even after he became an Elder.

"That young and solemn Elder was barely seen on normal days. He only appeared during major events of the Temple.

"However, after that, Prometheus began to accept disciples. He accepted a total of three disciples and they all achieved great success!

"All his three disciples had chosen to cultivate along the path of sorcerers. They received high evaluations and finally, all three of his disciples became Saints, which they well deserved. They were then dispatched to the various kingdoms on the Roland Continent to administer the authority of the religion."

Mouse suddenly smiled and said, "When I was young, I worshipped Prometheus like an idol. At that time, my only desire was to be accepted as his disciple. Unfortunately, he later announced that he was no longer accepting disciples. I was totally devastated."

"No longer accepting disciples?" Rody frowned. "Why?"

Mouse sighed and said, "It was said that he wanted to devote himself to researching theology and was afraid that teaching others would distract him. After cultivating for a long time behind closed doors, he wrote a book <Prometheus Gospel>. After going through the appraisal process by the Elders, the book was then added into the Temple's teachings. It is the only book included into the religious teachings in the past two hundred years!"

Rody could not help but sigh as he said, "In other words, this person is really formidable! It is as if he knows everything. He is a knight, a practitioner, a philosopher and also a great teacher!"

Mouse hesitated for a moment and then added, "He is also a politician!"

"A politician?"

"Yes." Mouse sighed and then her tone became serious again.

"At that time, the Temple was divided into two factions. One of the factions was the 'Hard Cultivation' faction. Advocates control their human desires to wholeheartedly and selflessly cultivate. Prometheus was the representative of that faction.

"The other faction was the 'Cloud' faction. The standpoint of that faction was that people living in this world should go with the

flow. A person's life and fate have already been arranged by God. There is no need to deliberately do anything. They just needed to do things as arranged by fate and it would be according to God's will.

"During a debate in the General Conference, which is held once every ten years, Prometheus made the representative of the 'Cloud' faction speechless with his rebuttal. The 'Cloud' faction was then defeated that year."

"This doesn't seem like anything. It was a victory in just one debate." Rody frowned.

Mouse gave a faint smile and replied, "Perhaps there was nothing. However, the Elder representative of the 'Cloud' faction committed suicide behind closed doors because of the shame of being defeated in the debate. It was only because his decomposed body emitted a stench that his corpse was found..."

"Suicide?" Rody sneered. "Did he really commit suicide?"

Mouse nodded. "I understand what you mean, but it was really suicide! Prometheus was completely unrelated to this matter. The Temple had investigated that incident for a long time. Besides that, Prometheus continued to cultivate in his room after the debate. He did not step out of the door at all."

"What happened after that?"

Mouse wryly smiled. "What happened after is worth thinking about. As the Elder of the 'Cloud' faction was dead, a Saint was immediately chosen to replace him as Elder. Who do you think was chosen?"

Rody's eyes lit up as he replied, "Was it one of Prometheus' disciples?"

Mouse sighed. "Yes, it was one of his disciples!"

Rody frowned. "Did the people from the 'Cloud' faction agree to let one of Prometheus' disciples become their Elder?"

Mouse replied, "Of course! That was because that Prometheus' disciple was unexpectedly a believer of the 'Cloud' faction! Many years ago, he was already a disciple of the 'Cloud' faction! In addition, Prometheus proposed that to let his disciple become the Elder of the 'Cloud' faction and in exchange fill the position vacated by that disciple with a Saint from the 'Cloud' faction. The people from the 'Cloud' faction would naturally agree to such conditions."

Rody was so surprised that his mouth hung open. After some time, he gave a long sigh and said, "Amazing, he actually had thought of this earlier and had already allowed his disciples to believe in the 'Cloud' faction years ago."

Mouse nodded and said, "The Saint who was promoted to Elder then used his power to slowly collapse the 'Cloud' faction. Later, the 'Cloud' faction declined and was no longer able to confront the 'Hard Cultivation' faction. They gradually lost their authority and became an antithesis within the Elder Council.

"After that, Prometheus's authority in the Elder Council was at the peak. The Temple's army and the Holy Knights also preferred Prometheus.

"Because Prometheus was once a Holy Knight and a disciple of a veteran Paladin, almost all the Holy Knights were his comrades or his fellow disciples. Since he was a Holy Knight before, it was easier for him to win the goodwill of the Holy Knights. The Holy Knights naturally supported him compared to the other Elders."

At this point, Mouse suddenly frowned. "There was also Fielding! During our time in the Temple, Fielding liked...liked me very much."

Rody then said, "So, in order to win over the Paladin Fielding, Prometheus deliberately drew the two of you together?"

Mouse sighed and said, "My teacher was also an Elder of the 'Hard Cultivation' faction. Prometheus was the one who

recommended me to become my teacher's disciple."

Mouse slowly told the story of the Chief Elder. After listening to the tale, Rody was silent for a long time. He could not help but sigh. "Formidable! Truly formidable! In just a few decades, he slowly eroded the Temple and spread his influence throughout the Roland Continent! This Prometheus is frightening...Could it be that he started planning this from a very long time ago?"

Mouse smiled wryly and said, "To be honest, I even suspect that he has started planning since the time he gave up his status as a Holy Knight to become a practitioner." She suddenly said in a strange tone, "Do you know who Prometheus admires the most?"

Before Rody could reply, Mouse gave the answer, "It's Moses, the first and only Pontiff in the history of the Temple! Moses!"

Rody was unable to help himself from smiling wryly. "Now, it looks like he is about to reach his idol's status. Looks like he is about to become the second Pontiff in the history of the Temple!"

Rody's eyes then showed a confused expression and said, "Mouse, do you know the Paladin who came tonight was not really here to assassinate me? In fact, she was here to convey a message. Prometheus wants to see me. Prometheus also wants me to know that in this world, there are no permanent friends nor enemies!" Rody then smiled wryly. "Is Prometheus really God's Chosen One? Hmph..."

Chapter 241: The King's Ambition

In the morning, Seth and Old Mark saw that both Rody and Mouse looked infatuated. They knew Rody went to Mouse's room the previous night, which was why their eyes were filled with various conjectures.

Mouse looked embarrassed while Rody was calm. Rody had talked with Mouse until it was almost daybreak. As the conversation weighed heavily in his mind, he was not bothered by the dubious thoughts of others.

That day, the only important thing was to go to the Palace and officially sign the peace treaty.

Since the peace negotiations involved a vast majority of the other kingdoms on the Roland Continent, the cost of the peace negotiations was also shared. As a result, the signing ceremony was conducted on a large scale.

Including King Sauron, a total of ten representatives signed the peace treaty. The contents of the treaty mainly had two points. The first point was that the ten kingdoms would provide six hundred warships in exchange for the several hundred thousand prisoners of war. The second point was to maintain a ceasefire.

Those diplomatic envoys of the other kingdoms all had different intentions. Although they definitely wanted the peace treaty, they harbored shady intentions when it came to the conditions for the peace treaty.

After all, everyone had expected that the Radiant Empire would definitely demand a large price for peace. As the cost of it was to be shared, almost every kingdom hoped they could pay less.

Similarly, there were also a few kingdoms that took the stance of acting according to the situation. They thought that they might be lucky and wanted to see the situation first before deciding.

However, after witnessing the competition between Rody and Leho at the Crown Prince's Palace, a few of those whose hearts were still uncertain made up their minds.

'Even their Earl is already so powerful. Needless to say, there is also their legendary Duke of the Tulip Family whose strength is incomparably tough! Right now, we are facing the crisis of being annexed by the Temple. It will definitely be a great advantage to court such a powerful foreign ally.'

The peace negotiations went well and the distribution of the six hundred warships was soon settled. The Sauron Kingdom became the leader of the Roland Continent for the peace negotiations and it alone provided two hundred ships. Such a resolution was likely to make the Crown Prince, the Regiment Commander of the Navy, unhappy.

The old Senior Prime Minister also attended the signing of the agreement. When Rody, on behalf of the Radiant Empire, signed his own name in the papers, everybody raised their glasses to a toast in accordance with the established practice. The Senior Prime Minister, who was standing quietly at Rody's side, softly said, "Congratulations, Your Excellency the Earl for fulfilling the mission."

Rody was already cautious of the Senior Prime Minister. He lightly answered, "The strength of the nation is the one that guaranteed the success of this diplomatic mission. I really do not deserve your praise."

It should be noted that out of the thirteen kingdoms on the Roland Continent, only ten kingdoms participated in the peace negotiations. The remaining three kingdoms did not participate in the peace negotiations.

The three kingdoms were Gordon Kingdom, Teuton Kingdom and also the dwarves' Hakone Kingdoms.

The Gordon Kingdom and the Teuton Kingdom had always been

firm supporters of the Temple, especially since Prometheus was the Chief Elder.

When the Gordon Kingdom was experiencing drought, it was Prometheus who prayed while he traveled for thousands of kilometers. Finally, his actions touched the Gods and it started to rain. Since then, he was called 'God's Chosen One'.

As for the Teuton Kingdom, when it was experiencing a plague, Prometheus had also given his aid and ended up going blind in one eye. In return, he received the title of 'One-Eyed Saint' in the Teuton Kingdom.

The Temple had the most authority in these two kingdoms. As a result, they had always sided with the Temple, or rather, they were always on Prometheus' side.

As for the dwarves' kingdoms, the position was somewhat ambiguous.

As everyone knew, the Roland Continent had a huge inland sea in the middle of the continent as if it was a large hole in the middle of a paper. A river flowed from that sea to the Straits of Thunder.

The dwarves' kingdom was on a huge island in the middle of that sea. Perhaps it could also be considered as a small continent.

As they were of a different race, the dwarves seldom came into contact with the other kingdoms on the Roland Continent. The dwarves had fought against the other kingdoms several times in the history of the Roland Continent. Later, the dwarves pledged allegiance with the Temple and expressed their willingness to believe in God. The Temple then officially accepted the dwarves' kingdom as a legitimate kingdom on the Roland Continent.

More importantly, the dwarves' Hakone Kingdom controlled the production of a very important strategic raw material...

Ironwood.

Ironwood, the material required for building the sturdy Roland

warships!

Perhaps because of the special climate which resulted from the special terrain, the ironwood that grew in the dwarves' kingdom was extremely lush. The vast majority of ironwood from the Roland Continent came from the dwarf kingdom. Ironwood was an essential material for the Roland Continent. Without ironwood, solid Roland warships could not be constructed. Without solid Roland warships, they would not be able to defend the Straits of Thunder . Without a strong navy, the Radiant Empire would have already invaded the Roland Continent hundreds of years ago.

For these reasons, the dwarves' kingdom had always had a special status among the kingdoms of the Roland Continent. On one hand, the people of the Roland Continent did not like that strange race. On the other, they could not avoid the fact that they needed their ironwood.

After signing the contract, Rody stayed back at the palace. He raised the issue about the three kingdoms who did not participate in the peace negotiation. "They are just waiting for the best offer!" the King answered.

Because that day was the formal signing of the treaty, Rody came alone. He did not bring along Mouse or 'Miss Nicole'. After all, they lived in a world that regarded men as superior to women. Although the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family might garner a lot of respect, a formal signing of a national contract was not a place for women.

Rody pondered slightly for a while and asked, "Your Majesty, are you troubled by how to win over the dwarves?"

The King shook his head and replied, "No, I do not want to win them over."

At that moment, only the King and Rody remained in the hall. Even the Senior Prime Minister was not allowed to participate in the conversation.

The King lightly clapped his hands and a few servants immediately entered from a side entrance. They lifted up a large roll of cloth and then spread it out on the ground.

That was the topographic map of the Roland Continent. Different colors were used on the map to mark the territories of the Roland kingdoms, mountains, rivers, and seas.

Rody looked at the map as it was slowly rolled open. His eyes lit up.

The King got off his throne. He then walked over to Rody and stood beside him. "Earl Rody, please look. This is a treasured object I spent several years to obtain."

Rody squinted his eyes and probed, "This is a priceless treasure that can turn the tides of war. Your Majesty, I am a soldier of the Radiant Empire. Are you not afraid of showing me this?"

The King laughed as he gently patted Rody's shoulder. He then walked on top of the map.

The map, which was over ten square meters in size, was spread on the floor. The King stood in the middle of the map. He was obviously standing above the territory of the dwarves' kingdom which was located in the inland sea.

"This is where the Roland Continent's valuable resources are. The land where ironwood flourishes." The King was solemn as he added, "Needless to say, I believe Your Excellency the Earl also understands the importance of ironwood to the people of the Roland Continent."

The King then pointed his scepter on the map and said, "The dwarf kingdom is not large. The Hakone Kingdom only has three cities. They are located at the top, the middle and the bottom of the island. The other areas are forests and mountains dotted with hamlets and small towns. Hundreds of years ago, during the war between the dwarves and the other people of the Roland

Continent, the dwarves relied on this favorable terrain as well as the natural mountain passes to fight against us."

Rody realized something. He noticed that the King used the word 'us'.

"The dwarves controlled two-thirds of the ironwood production on the Roland Continent. Another way of saying it is that the dwarves controlled the lifeline of the Roland people!" The King sighed, "The Sauron Kingdom may be the most powerful kingdom on the Roland Continent, but even then, we do not dare to offend the dwarves! This is because if we offend the dwarves, we would not be able to obtain ironwood! The ridiculous thing is that our territory is in the southernmost part of the Roland Continent. We almost bear the threat from the Radiant Continent alone! We need a strong navy to protect ourselves, therefore we are even more afraid of offending the dwarves!"

Rody coldly said, "Have the Roland people ever thought of subjugating the dwarves and firmly seize the natural resources in their hands?"

The King shook his head and replied, "We have already missed the best time!" He slowly said, "During the war hundreds of years ago, the Roland people had the opportunity to do so. However, the dwarves surrendered to the Temple and were then recognized by the Temple. With that, the war was forcefully stopped and the dwarves promised to trade with the Roland people. All the various kingdoms on the Roland Continent can buy ironwood from the dwarves."

Rody frowned. "Isn't using money to buy ironwood still leaving fate in hands of others?"

The King sighed, "The funny thing was, our predecessors actually agreed to this. In their eyes, they only saw the problem temporarily resolved. However, they did not see what would happen in the long term!" He paused for a while before he

continued, "The dwarves, because of their unique resources and after hundreds of years of development, have gathered a lot of money from their trade of ironwood! I can say without exaggerating that although the dwarves' kingdom is the smallest, it is also the richest!"

Rody gave a deep sigh. Allowing the enemy to develop and letting them grow so powerful was really too stupid!

"The gold coins from the Roland Continent continue to flow into the pockets of the dwarves. They have enough money to build solid city walls and fully equip their elite soldiers. I can say that right now, it is no longer possible for any other kingdom to subjugate the dwarves on their own except for my Sauron Kingdom."

The King used his scepter to dexterously draw a circle around the dwarf kingdom. He then smiled and said, "All of us understand that this is a huge cake! If we were to conquer this land, we would have the dreamed resources that we have been yearning for. We would then be able to control the lifeline of the Roland Continent!"

Rody smiled, "Has Your Majesty ever thought of eating this cake? Other kingdoms may not have the strength to do so, but shouldn't the Sauron Kingdom be able to?"

"I have thought of it! I have thought of it many times!" The King sighed. "In fact, I already had this idea even before I inherited the throne!"

"Then why..."

The King laughed bitterly. "It is because I did not dare to!"

"You did not dare to?"

The King sighed. "This is certainly a captivating cake but at the same time, it is also a rope! The other end of this rope is connected to the nerves of the other kingdoms!" His scepter stopped moving for a while as he continued, "Everyone wants a piece of the cake, but they do not want to see anyone have the whole cake alone!"

Besides that, the dwarves have been trading in the Roland Continent for hundreds of years. Naturally, there would be a few very close customers."

"I understand." Rody nodded. "If the Sauron Kingdom takes this cake, then it would become the common enemy of other kingdoms on the Roland Continent! After all, other kingdoms could only reluctantly accept the dwarves holding on to those resources since they are not strong enough to threaten their positions. However, if the strongest kingdom on the Roland Continent takes this cake, the kings of the other kingdoms would not even be able to sleep at night."

The King laughed awkwardly.

Rody narrowed his eyes. He stared at the ambitious King and asked, "Your Majesty, today, you show me this map and tell me a lot of things, what are your intentions? I am someone slow and stupid. I cannot guess subtle ideas. It is better for Your Majesty to be more direct."

The King took a deep breath. His eyes flashed with ambition and he said, "Now is the best time for my Sauron Kingdom to take this cake!"

"Oh?" Rody's eyes lit up.

"Prometheus' ambition has tightly brought the ten kingdoms together. Whether we are willing or not, we are now all in the same boat. If I were to reach out to take this cake now, even if the other kingdoms are unhappy, I believe they would not turn on me!" The King laughed cunningly. "After all, the threat of the Temple is the most critical!"

Rody still did not speak and silently looked at the King.

The King's face seemed to light up as he gently pointed at a spot on the map with his scepter. "After this peace negotiation, we will send your distinguished country several hundred warships from

this harbor. It will sail from the internal sea and down the great river. It would then sail through the Straits of Thunder and go towards the Radiant Empire."

The King's scepter moved down the map. However, Rody's eyes lit up after he immediately understood the King's intention.

The King smiled insidiously. "After leaving the harbor, our fleet would be divided into three. One hundred of the Sauron Kingdom's warships would sail last and..." He pointed at the map. "Its route would pass through about fifteen nautical miles off the dwarf kingdom."

Rody then said, "The main army will then turn around and launch a surprise attack on the dwarf kingdom. They would subjugate the dwarves within the shortest time possible...Is that Your Majesty's intention?" Rody suddenly glanced at the King and said, "Surprise attack...haha, attack a king and then conquer all its territory within a short time. Is this possible? Is Your Majesty certain? If the war does not proceed smoothly and turns into a stalemate, it will become dangerous."

The King looked dignified as he said, "I have three reasons! The first is that I have this map. It clearly records most of the Eight Branch Kingdom's military positions and distributions! If the Commander leading the troops makes use of this properly, it is possible to defeat the enemy army within the shortest possible time! The second reason is the timing! All this while, nobody has touched the dwarves because the other kingdoms subtly put on a psychological pressure. Everyone deliberately protected the dwarves from the violations of the other kingdoms. The current situation is already different! My army will take advantage of the fact that they are delivering warships to the Radiant Empire and then start a war so that the others do not have enough time to react! There is no better time than now. Lastly..."

The King looked at Rody and said in an unusually strange tone. "I happen to have a great general with me. I believe that this plan can

be successfully carried out under the leadership of this peerless general!"

Rody frowned. "A peerless general? Are you talking about General Tiger who fought in the crusade? I have heard of General Tiger's abilities, but I do not expect you to trust him so..."

The King interrupted Rody and said, "No, I am not talking about General Tiger. It is another person! I believe that Commander's ability is ten times better than General Tiger! This is because, according to my understanding, that person has never lost any war! He has incomparable courage and formidable strength. He is also an outstanding military strategist...These advantages made him triumph in every battle since he entered the battlefield. He is invincible! His attacks never fail!"

Rody gradually felt that something was not right. He pretended to ask, "Your Majesty, this person is..."

"It's you, Your Excellency, the Earl!" The King flashed a smile. His eyes were like blades and seemed like he could see through Rody. He added slowly in a low voice, "Or perhaps I should call you...the respectable Duke of the Tulip Family?"

Chapter 242: The Curse of 'God's Record'

The King's last sentence was like roaring thunder to Rody. Before his words sank in, the King had already fixed his gaze at Rody.

"Hahaha..." Rody suddenly laughed. He did not show a shocked expression. With a calm demeanor, he slowly spoke, "Your Majesty must have mistaken my identity. I am a Commander of the Empire's Imperial Guards, an Earl of the Empire, Rody. I am not a Duke."

The King sighed and softly said, "Duke, why are you still hiding the truth? I have already seen through your identity."

Rody smiled, "Your Majesty must have mistaken. His Excellency the Duke of the Tulip Family is well known in the Imperial Capital of the Radiant Empire. Many people have seen his appearance. How could you mistake me as the Duke?"

The King squinted his eyes, making it impossible for others to guess his thoughts. He then slowly said, "Although I am not in a harmonious relationship with the Temple, I still receive some information from the Temple. The Black Veil Saint began to reject her engagement to Paladin Fielding when she returned from the Great Moon Kingdom. There was news from the Temple that this matter has something to do with the Duke of the Tulip Family. Hundreds of thousands of people also witnessed Paladin Fielding challenge the Duke of the Tulip Family to a duel at Thunder City! Isn't this enough of a proof? Yesterday, at the palace, the Black Veil Saint was by your side. Judging by the way she looked at you, I already knew why she became an apostate!"

Rody smiled and casually gave the King a glance. "Is it just from this speculation that Your Majesty believes I am the Duke of the Tulip Family? This is too..."

The King laughed loudly. His laughter interrupted Rody's words. "Hahaha...Although based on that I would have some doubts, I

would not think in that line of thought. However, I received two pieces of news last night. These two pieces of information made me suspect your identity."

Rody quietly looked at the King. He was shocked, but he continued to pretend to look calm as he waited for the King to continue.

"Earl Rody, I have heard of your battle last night at the Crown Prince's palace! Others may not know Leho's strength, but I certainly do! As Leho was originally a Royal Knight, I have a clear understanding of his strength! You can easily defeat Leho and your last move of condensed aura has clearly reached the level of a Sacred Swordsman!" The King gradually spoke slower. "Earl Rody, although I am from the distant Roland Continent, due to the previous relationship between our countries, I am not ignorant of the internal affairs of your distinguished country! A Sacred Swordsman is extremely rare in the Radiant Empire! However, I have never heard of your name before even though you are a master."

Rody still shook his head and replied, "This is merely hearsay. The Radiant Empire is vast and there are plenty of masters living as hermits. Not all of the powerful people are renowned!"

The King's expression remained unchanged as he coldly added, "Coincidentally, I received a secret letter from your distinguished country last night. It is said that the Duke of the Tulip Family is using the excuse of nursing his injuries and has not appeared in public for a very long time! Earl Rody, is this also a coincidence?"

Rody could not help but frown secretly. He was not actually worried about it. However, the King had obtained this secret info from the Empire extremely quick. Because Nicole was still in the Empire, Seth's identity might be questioned.

Sure enough, the King smiled and said, "The more puzzling thing was, the report said that Miss Nicole was still in the country. At the

moment, she is at the fief of the Tulip Family! I certainly wonder, if the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family is still in the Empire, then who is the 'Miss Nicole' you brought here? The more puzzling thing is that the 'Miss Nicole' you brought here and the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family look very alike!"

The King sighed. When he saw that Rody still did not say anything, he deliberately laughed and continued, "Since there are two 'Miss Nicole' at the same time, then for the Duke of the Tulip Family to disguise as Earl Rody and secretly bring your sister to the Roland Continent to investigate...Wouldn't that make sense?"

Having said all that, the King seemed to exclaim in admiration. "You brought your sister out to attract the attention of others while you disguise as an Earl. Duke of the Tulip Family, your trick is truly brilliant! Unfortunately, you did not expect me to receive this information so quickly!" The King's tone gradually became dignified. "I will also not hide from you. Your distinguished country is powerful and has always been the thorn in the eyes of the Sauron Kingdom! How can I not pay close attention to the movements of your country? News from the Empire can be sent across the Straits of Thunder to me within four days using messenger eagles!"

After that, the King finally stopped speaking. He looked at Rody quietly and expectantly.

Rody took a deep breath and then slowly spat out. Rody suddenly burst into laughter when he looked at the expression in the King's eyes. His long laughter filled every corner of the hall as he shook his head helplessly.

"Wonderful! Truly wonderful!" Rody's laughter slowly stopped. "Your Majesty, I have no choice but to admit that I admire your sense of conjecture! If it is really according to what you said, even I cannot help but think I am the Duke of the Tulip Family. Unfortunately..." Rody pointed at his own nose and shook his head. "I am not."

The King coldly looked at Rody and asked, "Duke, you still refuse to admit it?"

Rody deliberately gave a bitter laugh and said, "The Duke of the Tulip Family is world-famous and has the attention of many! To tell you the truth, I, too, hope that I am him. However, the fact is that I am not him!" He gave a ridiculous smile and added, "Your Majesty, I advise you to severely punish your spies in our country!"

"Oh, why?"

Rody pretended a sigh and said, "Although what he reported to you about His Highness the Duke of the Tulip recuperating behind closed door is true, he seems to have forgotten to report one thing!"

Rody slowly added when he saw the King's puzzled face. "Of course, your spies cannot be blamed. After all, they were following your orders. They only focused on important trends and will not care about insignificant people like me. However, if you were to order them to make inquiries, you will receive the news that would clear away your doubts!"

Rody pointed to himself and then said, "I, the Commander of the Imperial Guards and an Earl, am Miss Nicole's lover and fiancé! Although not many people know about this, if you were to order an investigation, the information should not be too difficult to obtain!" Rody then laughed happily. "If I was the Duke of the Tulip Family, how could I become a couple with my sister?"

The King finally looked serious and he frowned. "The fiancé of the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family? This...I really did not receive this information...but..." The King suddenly looked at Rody coldly. "Then how do you explain there being two Miss Nicole?"

Rody lightly said, "Your Majesty, this matter may not have anything to do with you, but I have no choice but to tell you to dispel the doubts in your heart. Miss Nicole coming here with me is a secret! In fact, it is not appropriate for her to come to the Roland Continent with her identity. After all, both sides have just

experienced a war against each other. The noble Miss Nicole could not have come over here. His Majesty the Emperor has also rejected her request, but she insisted on coming with me. The Duke of the Tulip Family has always listened to his sister from an early age. In other words, even the Duke cannot object to her words. That is why we had to find a substitute to deceive the public and avoid being punished by the Emperor."

The King frowned with a peculiar face as he thought about Rody's words.

In the King's heart, Rody's explanation seemed very reasonable. However, he still felt that something was wrong.

Rody then bowed and said, "Your Majesty, the situation now is pressing. Your Majesty took pains to trace my identity and look for minor issues, but is overlooking the important matter at hand!"

The King thought for a moment. He then squinted to look at Rody and whispered, "I still believe that I am not wrong!" He then shook his head and smiled, "It doesn't matter if you are a Duke or an Earl. If Rody is unwilling to get to the bottom of this, then we should just leave it aside!"

The King still insisted on his speculation. According to his observation, the 'Earl Rody' has extraordinary bearing and was like a senior general. This kind of talented person could not be an unknown person in the Empire. However, Rody's explanation had shaken the King's heart.

On top of that, even if Rody was the Duke of the Tulip Family, there was no need to tear away the disguise he had painstakingly tried to hide.

There are things that would be better kept in the heart and not mentioned at all.

The King laughed when he thought of this and loudly said, "The Earl's words are rational." He paused for a moment and looked

back to the map on the ground. He lightly said, "Since the Earl seems to have some difficulties, let us continue our talk from earlier. This dwarf race's cake..."

Rody forced a smile when he heard the word 'difficulties'. He understood that King Sauron was still suspicious of him. As a result, a few words would be impossible to dispel the King's doubts. However, with the King being willing to skip this topic, Rody could not have asked for more.

"Alright. Let us put aside the earlier conversation. I only need to ask you one question!" The King was really a veteran in politics. His expression changed quickly and his calm expression was restored. "Rody, are you willing to help me obtain this piece of cake?" The King asked and then pointed his scepter onto the ground, pressing it on top of the dwarf kingdom at the center of the map.

Rody did not immediately give an answer. He carefully looked at the King for a moment, sizing up the situation, then asked, "Your Majesty, do you think I should help you?" He stared fixedly at the King's face. The Sauron Kingdom would obtain endless profit from acquiring this piece of cake. But it would be meaningless for the Empire.

The King gently smiled. His smile was like a cold hidden knife. "If I am not wrong, the Empire's purpose in the peace negotiations is also not a noble one. The Empire simply does not want the Temple to unite the entire Roland Continent! A fragmented Roland Continent is less threatening than a Roland Empire. The promise of sending back the prisoners is nothing more than wanting us and the Temple to fight each other."

Rody looked at the King's sharp gaze and unyieldingly said, "So what?" He then sneered and added, "I recently learned something. There are no permanent friends or permanent enemies in this world. Your Majesty, right now, our peace negotiation is just something both sides require. We just need to accommodate each

other's interest, there is no meaning in speaking more beyond that." Rody gradually spoke in a mocking tone. "If we follow Your Majesty's argument, it is also not noble to have secretly funded the Great Moon Kingdom to fight against my country."

"Hahaha." The King suddenly laughed and shouted, "Well said! There are no permanent friends or enemies! I only ask of you, are you willing to help me?"

Rody simply smiled silently. The King then gathered his thoughts and said, "The peace negotiation has already concluded. The confrontation with the Temple is about to begin! The dwarf kingdom does not only have control over most of the ironwood. After hundreds of years, they have accumulated a lot of wealth! Obtaining this wealth would be a great help in our next confrontation with the Temple..." The King then smiled and looked at Rody meaningfully. "A person who has fought many battles like you would understand that war consumes money!"

Rody nodded.

The King continued as he loudly said, "I do not know how that old fellow, Prometheus, managed to get the help of the Dragon race! The Dragons have never involved themselves in the affairs of the Roland Continent before this but now, they are willing to help the Temple. This matter constantly makes me uneasy. The stronger the enemy becomes, the greater the threat we will face. When the Sauron Kingdom obtains this cake, the other kingdoms would not have any choice but to obey me! We would need to join our forces together to fight against the Temple's annexation! In the current situation, it is one of the only things that could give us an advantage. Is there any other reason to hesitate?"

Rody was secretly shocked at the King's bold ambition. He could not help but say, "Eating this piece of cake may certainly help the Sauron Kingdom's leadership position on the Roland Continent. However, Your Majesty did not seem to consider the other possibility..." Rody looked into the King's eyes and slowly said,

"The Sauron Kingdom might provoke the anger of the other kingdoms and become everyone's common enemy! At that point in time, rather than join forces, there would be an internal strife."

The King did not mind Rody's mocking words and lightly said, "I am unable to care about that much!" He showed a very confident smile and continued, "I do not believe that there is an absolutely perfect plan in this world! Everything depends on human effort! The current situation gives me no choice but to gamble! If I obtain the cake, I would acquire and control the strength of the other kingdoms by alternating coercion and inducement, thus combining disparate forces into one powerful force! How can I not be attracted to such temptation?"

Gamble!

Rody's eyes suddenly shrank. He looked at King Sauron with a complicated feeling.

This person was ambitious and had drawn up a bold stratagem! It was an all-or-nothing gamble!

He was an ambitious gambler!

Rody felt a sense of admiration. He gave out a long breath before he smiled and said, "In that case, what else can I say? However, Your Majesty insists that I help, but I am unable to figure out where I can give my assistance!"

The King smiled and said, "In this surprise attack, I will personally command the army! I hope that you, Rody, will follow me out to the ocean...Oh...Naturally, you will be my advisor! I hope you can give my army brilliant commands and lead them to victory!" The King smiled cunningly. "I believe that this would benefit both our sides. I am sure you will not oppose this suggestion."

Rody frowned. "You trust me that much give me the command of your army?"

The King shook his head. "Naturally, I cannot give it to you. After all, you are not from the Sauron Kingdom. This time, I will personally command the soldiers! Your orders will be conveyed through me." The King seemed to notice Rody's concerns. He then gave a shallow smile, "I believe that with your brilliant successes and my great expectations of you, you will not disappoint me."

Rody knew that nothing would change no matter what he said now. He looked at the King, then he bowed and left.

The King watched Rody leave. When the door to the main hall slowly closed, the King suddenly stopped holding his breath. He looked tired as he slowly walked back to his throne. After thinking for a while, he suddenly whispered, "What do you think?"

From the dark corner, the voice of Master Sith could be heard. "Suspicious! This Rody is definitely suspicious!" The head of the Sorcerer's Association of the Roland Continent sighed. "I have carefully observed him, but I cannot see through him even with my strength! My Appraisal Technique was completely ineffective!"

The King shook his head. "That means he is definitely that person!"

After a moment of silence, Master Sith suddenly asked, "Are you sure you want to gamble?"

"Yes!" the King immediately replied. "If I miss this opportunity, I will definitely regret it later!"

Master Sith suddenly laughed. His old voice seemed to carry a sharp mocking tone, "You so strongly insist on fighting the dwarves...Is it for the ironwood resources, wealth, or..." His voice gradually became faintly discernible as he continued, "...is it to obtain the hundreds-of-years-old legendary 'God's Record' that is in the dwarves' possession."

The King suddenly stood up and turned pale. "Master Sith, you have also heard of the 'God's Record'?"

Sith coldly said, "The Sorcerer's Association has been around for several hundred years. We always knew about things like that..." His tone gradually became sharp as he asked, "Are you not concerned about the curse of the 'God's Record' in order to deal with the Temple? Even the Temple was afraid of the curse and had no choice but to stop the war against the dwarves! Let me warn you. The 'God's Record' absolutely must not appear on the continent. Otherwise, there would not be just disaster!"

The King laughed arrogantly and said, "Did you mean disaster or destruction? If the Temple succeeds, the first one to be destroyed is me! If I am going to be destroyed, I will not mind dragging everything down with me!"

Sith looked at the King laughing wildly. With a complicated expression and as if talking to himself, Sith lowered his voice and said, "The 'God's Record' must be kept away from the heaven, the earth, and the people...Sigh. Many years ago, the dwarves threatened to destroy 'God's Record', forcing the Temple to be afraid of making rash decisions. I think you are really crazy!"

...

"The King has intentions to kill you!" Seth faintly said after he heard what transpired in the palace between the King and Rody.

Looking puzzled, Mouse frowned. "Intentions to kill? Even if the King suspected Rody's identity, he would not be so foolish to become hostile to the Radiant Empire."

Seth shook his head and calmly said, "If what Rody said is true, then King Sauron is a person who likes extreme risks! Even a three-year-old child knows that the Duke of the Tulip Family is an important figure in the Radiant Empire! Is there a better opportunity than this for the Sauron Kingdom to kill the Duke of the Tulip Family?"

Mouse still did not believe. "Although the temptation is great, the Sauron Kingdom now needs the cooperation of the Radiant

Empire! He will not be so foolish as to offend such a big enemy from the South while facing against the Temple at the same time!"

Seth glanced at Mouse and coldly said, "A woman is a woman. You will never understand the beauty of politics!" Seth hastily continued when he noticed Mouse's glare. "Since Rody insisted that he is not the Duke of the Tulip Family, then the King will just act dumb. Then, if Rody is really killed, it is just the death of an 'Earl'. He could simply claim that Rody was assassinated by the Temple. Even if the Empire does not believe, there is no evidence! Besides that, even if there is a falling-out with the Empire, will the Sauron Kingdom be afraid?" He smiled and said, "The Sauron Kingdom only needs the hundreds of thousands of prisoners of war! Once they receive their prisoners of war, even if they have a falling-out with the Empire, the Empire cannot do anything. With the Straits of Thunder as a buffer, the Empire cannot cross over. Even if they can, the current Empire does not have the strength to launch another large-scale war!"

Mouse coldly said, "Let them try! With our strength, do you think the King would be able to kill us even if he wants to?"

Seth did not get angry. Instead, he laughed and said, "I know both of you are powerful. One of you is a Great Practitioner while the other is a Domain Master. However, even if you are powerful, you are still humans! As long as you are a human, there must be weaknesses! A Domain Master is not an immortal!" Seth suddenly sighed. "Everyone has a weakness. Even powerful people cannot escape this fact! Knowing that he cannot fight you directly, can he not think of other ways? Deep inside politics, even the most shameful and despicable acts can be done."

He suddenly looked at Rody and frowned. "Did you tell the King that you are 'Miss Nicole's fiancé'?"

Rody hesitated for a moment. He then nodded and said, "Yes, I did use that as an explanation to him."

"Good explanation! However, I am afraid I will end up in misery!" Seth sighed. He showed a strange expression and smiled wryly. "Listen carefully! From now on, you all would need to wholeheartedly protect me! If the King cannot kill you, a Domain Master, won't he find a different place to strike? You fool! Right now, my identity is your fiancé, Miss Nicole!"

Old Mark and Mouse gave a supercilious look at the same time. Both of them had the same thought. 'You even need others to protect you? It is already a thankful thing if you do not go and harm others!'

Rody, who had been pondering, suddenly showed a strange expression. "Seth, your words earlier reminded me of something."

"What?"

Rody suddenly laughed as he gently touched his chin. He then smiled and said, "Earlier, didn't you say that the Radiant Empire cannot cross over with the Straits of Thunder barring the path?"

Seth nodded. "That's right. What about it?"

Rody stood up and smiled. "Crossing the ocean... This is not impossible."

Chapter 243: The Sauron Royal Family's Secret

The next day, the King once again dispatched someone to invite Rody to the palace.

The carriage, escorted by the Royal Knights, journeyed directly to the Royal Palace. However, the carriage did not go straight to the audience hall like previously.

They changed into an even smaller carriage in the Royal Palace. The Royal Knight escorts did not follow them after that. Only two officers from the Royal Knights accompanied Rody. The humble carriage left, coming from the side door of the Palace, then journeyed to a higher ground at the back of the capital.

The capital of the Sauron Kingdom was oval-shaped. In the middle of the city was the Royal Palace. At the back of the Royal Palace was a high ground. In fact, it was a low hillslope.

For some reason, during the construction of the capital, the hillslope was already surrounded by the city walls. The woods behind the hillslope had naturally become the Royal Garden.

Changing carriages within the palace was probably to deceive the public. As the carriage Rody was riding in had entered the palace grandly, nobody would suspect that the dignified envoy of the Radiant Empire would leave from another side of the palace, unguarded, inside a humble carriage.

Not taking any guards with him was also the King's intention. He was aware of Rody's strength and being accompanied by guards was simply just for show!

The carriage that left the Royal Palace went towards the Royal Garden. The surrounding environment was similar to the hunting ground of the Tulip Family. There were fences around the Royal Garden and cavalries patrolling the garden to protect and to ensure

the safety around it.

Rody questioned the two Royal Knight escorts but they refused to reply to him. They only said, "We are under orders from His Majesty to only escort you!"

When he gradually entered the garden, there was a small open space. In the middle of this space was a simple Imperial Residence. Four sentry posts protected the Imperial Residence in the middle. A pair of soldiers wearing the armor of the Royal Knights patrolled back and forth.

The carriage stopped there. Rody questioningly followed the two Royal Knights as they led him towards the Imperial Residence.

The Imperial Residence was not much of a palace. It would be better to classify it as a large house instead.

Although the occupied area was quite large, it only had three floors. It looked exquisite and elaborate unlike the other buildings of Sauron Kingdom that looked rugged and chunky.

However, when Rody entered the building, he discovered that the fixtures inside the building were like the standard style of Sauron Kingdom's buildings: strong and robust!

It had metallic candlesticks, black ironwood furniture such as tables and chairs, dark-colored fireplace at the side, as well as the bright red carpet at his feet. All of them had a 'strong and robust' feeling.

Rody had already gone through three inspections before he entered the room.

The two escorting officers did not follow Rody in. The King was sitting alone in the room, on a chair, near the fireplace. His back was facing Rody.

"How is it? This place is not too bad, right? Earl Rody, how is this compared to your family's garden?" The King's voice came from behind the chair.

Rody laughed in his heart. 'This King is still trying to find out my identity. Otherwise, why is he using the term "family's garden"?'

Rody deliberately laughed. "Your Majesty, you are jesting. I am just an insignificant Earl. How could I have my own garden? However, the setup of this place is similar to the hunting ground at the Tulip Family's fief."

The King stood up. It was then that Rody noticed that the King was not wearing the exquisite robe like the previous day. Instead, he was wearing a martial attire. A set of gold colored armor was covering his body while he had a bright red cloak worn on his back.

The King stood there playing with a small and exquisite dagger as he smiled at Rody.

"Earl Rody, do you know why I invited you here today?"

Rody shrugged his shoulder. "Your Majesty, do you want me to go hunting with you? However, this does not seem to be the right season for hunting."

The King laughed. However, Rody could not hear any pleasure in his laughter. On the contrary, the King seemed to use his laughter to cover up his nervousness.

"Earl Rody!" The King had a serious look. "I invite you here today to show you, the several hundred years old biggest secret of the Royal Family of the Sauron Kingdom. Are you interested?"

Rody instinctively frowned.

'Secret? Hmph, what is this guy planning?'

There must be a reason if someone told another their own secret. Rody did not believe that the King would disclose a secret to him without a reason. Only God knows what the King wanted to obtain from Rody.

Rody narrowed his eyes and whispered, "Your Majesty, I hope

you are not showing me something too shocking. I am not so brave."

The King softly replied, "Are you not courageous? Doesn't seem like it."

Rody leisurely smiled and said, "I am not afraid of anything. However, knowing someone's secret will require me to keep that secret. I am afraid I may accidentally expose the secret. These kinds of things are too troublesome."

The King laughed again. He then walked to the front of the fireplace. He slotted the dagger into the mouth of a wild-beast relief on the wall, then twisted it.

A faint clunking sound came from behind the wall. Following a series of sounds, the wall above the fireplace began to move.

The whole wall slowly turned over revealing a pitch-dark space. Behind the dark channel was a spiral staircase that went all the way down.

Rody was surprised. "This is..."

The King laughed and said, "Earl Rody, this is the biggest secret of the Royal Family of the Sauron Kingdom that has lasted for centuries! You are the first outsider to learn of this secret!"

Rody took a deep breath and endured the curiosity in his heart. He calmly said, "Your Majesty, you suddenly brought me here and showed me such a scene. What is your intention..."

The King raised his hand and gently stroked the dagger in the mouth of the wild-beast relief. He did not answer Rody's question. Instead, he suddenly asked, "Rody, do you know the history of the Royal Family of the Sauron Kingdom?"

Rody was startled and then replied, "Is Your Majesty testing me? You will be disappointed. After all, the two continents are far apart and both countries have little relationship with each other. I am not clear about the history of your distinguished country...I only

know that amongst all the kingdoms on the Roland Continent, the Sauron Kingdom is the most powerful kingdom. Your kingdom owns half the land on the Roland Continent, has the most powerful army, and... "At this point, Rody deliberately looked at the King.

The King sighed and continued in Rody's stead. "and... the Sauron Kingdom has also been the one who dares to secretly oppose the Temple, right?"

Rody did not speak but from the expression on his face, it was clear that he had tacitly agreed.

The King nodded his head and gently caressed the dagger as he said, "What you said is correct. Presently, the Sauron Kingdom can be said to be the only kingdom on the Roland Continent that has the ability to oppose the Temple. All this time, the Saints who were dispatched by the Temple to the Sauron Kingdom are not able to completely gain authority. The situation is completely different from the other kingdoms. In the other kingdoms, the authorities of the Saints are even higher than the Kings! It is only in the Sauron Kingdom that the highest authority remains with the Royal Family!"

At this juncture, the King seemed agitated. However, soon he was aware that his emotions were going out of control. He took a deep breath to maintain his calm and slowly said, "This is not only because the Royal Family of the Sauron Kingdom dares to oppose the Temple. More importantly, it is because the Royal Family of the Sauron Kingdom is qualified to oppose the Temple!"

"Oh?" Rody started to show some interest.

The King's voice gradually subsided as his tone sounded as if he was speaking of a cherished memory. "In your opinion, the Radiant Empire is undoubtedly the world's largest empire! You all possess an entire continent and the imperial authority is absolute! A powerful empire that can unyieldingly confront the challenge of

any enemy! But do you know? The Radiant Empire is not the only big empire that has existed in this world. Once upon a time, there was an ancient empire in this world!

"According to the teachings of God, people originally came from the Roland Continent. The written record of the teachings of God started recounting from the time when there were many small kingdoms...Haha haha...That is just preposterous!" The King's eyes were like lightning. There were anger and sorrow in his voice as he clenched his fist and softly said, "As early as several hundred years before the teachings of God, the Roland Continent was a complete country. It was a huge empire!"

"Oh?" Rody's eyes lit up. This was something he had never heard of before.

Whether it was the Radiant Continent or the Roland Continent, their Church and their Temple were hostile to each other, but these religious bodies' 'history' started at about the same era. Both their historical records also started during the 'dark ages', about a thousand years ago.

From the Temple's records, the Roland Continent originally consisted of several small kingdoms and tribes. Humans were not united, and they constantly fought each other. After fighting for a long time, the first Pontiff, Moses, was born. He led the humans through the Straits of Thunder and subjugated the Kara tribe at the Radiant Continent in the south. It was followed by the occupation of the Radiant Continent by the humans and the extinction of the Kara tribe. The teachings of God then split into two, the North and the South.

Numerous small kingdoms existed in the North and the South and continued to be in chaos.

It was thanks to the emergence of the Great Emperor, Abbas the Great, the invincible Duke of the Tulip Family and Dandong, the person good at creating miracles that the Radiant Empire united

the southern continent and became a great empire. That was what Rody knew from history. The only huge empire that could possess the entire continent.

Could it be that the Radiant Empire was not the first empire in history?

The King gradually revealed a tragic smile. "The teachings of Gods are splendid! Splendid!" His tone sounded deep and forceful. "How much evil has been carried out in this world in the name of the 'truth'?"

Rody was smart. He did not speak but quietly awaited. He knew that the King's story was far from over.

The King's cherishing gaze became more intense. "The ancient records have all been destroyed during the 'dark ages'! The teachings of Gods are just lies with a distorted history! It can actually deceive the entire world! Earl Rody, let me tell you! During the ancient times, there was a great empire that existed right under your feet! This Empire had tens of millions of hardworking subjects! It had an army with millions of soldiers! It even controlled the entire Roland Continent! All the races, whether it was human, the dragon tribe, the vampires, the legendary elves and the dwarves were all under the rule of that great empire! The name of that empire is called the Shaka Empire!"

"Shaka Empire?" Rody was truly astonished. It was an unfamiliar name but to be able to possess an entire continent, this name should not be unfamiliar.

"Yes!" The King gave a shallow smile. "Where you are standing on right now is once the capital of the Shaka Empire during the ancient times. Long before, a thousand years ago, this garden on this hillslope was the Imperial Palace of the Shaka Empire!"

Several thoughts flashed in Rody's mind. He could not help blurting out a question. "So, what has this got to do with the Royal Family of Sauron Kingdom...ah! I understand now!"

The King nodded and earnestly said, "The Royal Family of the Sauron Kingdom are the descendants of the Emperor of the ancient Shaka Empire!" He sighed. "Nobody knows this secret. Even the Temple believes that the Imperial Family of the Shaka Empire had long gone extinct! Hmph!"

The King looked up at Rody, then slowly said in a low voice, "Earl Rody, I have told you this secret today and have already regarded you as an ally whom I can trust! Therefore, shouldn't you show a little sincerity? Or rather, there is no need for you to continue keeping your secret from me."

Rody was indifferent. He clearly understood that the King told him this big secret to win him over and gain his trust. The King wanted Rody to admit that he was the Duke of the Tulip Family in exchange.

The King noticed that Rody did not speak but he did not mind. He slowly said, "In the ancient language of the Roland Continent, 'Sauron' means revival! The mission of Royal Family of Sauron Kingdom is revival...Revive the great empire of our ancestors!"

The King's face was contorted in excitement. He seemed to unable to suppress the excitement in his heart. His hand also trembled, still holding the dagger.

"Duke of the Tulip Family!" The King slowly uttered as he glanced at Rody. Seeing that Rody did not object to the way he was addressed this time, he felt satisfied and continued, "Are you interested in heading down there with me to take a look at the greatest relics of the Imperial Family of the Shaka Empire? Look at the secrets left behind by the people of that era?"

After that, he faced the flight of steps behind the fireplace and slowly stretched out his hand to signal. He gently smiled and said, "Please."

Chapter 244: The Person Standing Outside the Circle

The spiral flight of steps led directly underground.

The width of the steps was just enough for two people to walk side by side. Rody and the King slowly walked down. Although there was no lighting from torches along the way, the design of the place seemed worthy of being the biggest secret of the Royal Family of the Sauron Kingdom. From the first step down the spiral staircase, the gems on both sides of the handrail lit up with a gentle radiance.

Rody immediately realized that that was a kind of illuminating sorcery array.

The flight of steps continued downwards. Based on Rody's mental calculation, they had been walking down for quite some time—at their walking speed, the depth of that secret underground place must be amazing.

In fact, all the way down, Rody was counting the number of steps in his heart. When he had secretly counted up until three hundred and thirty-three, he finally saw the ground below...and the end of the flight of steps.

The King smiled and opened up his hands proudly. He then said, "Welcome to the Palace Hall of the Sage King!"

In front of them was a big round vault-shaped door. The King suddenly laughed and said, "Earl Rody, please knock on the door."

Rody frowned but he still stretched out his hand to knock on the door twice...

The huge stone gate slowly opened from both sides. Rody was surprised to find two rows of fully armored warriors inside the room.

Although there were only a few of them, they were all wearing armors that made Rody felt strange. Its style was about thirty percent similar to the armors of the Roland knights. However, it only covered the critical parts...

Rody realized that these armors looked similar to the armor worn by that female Dragon Paladin that night. The only difference was that these people had helmets that covered their faces.

The King was forthright. He was the first to walk in, with big strides.

The moment Rody walked past the stone door, he felt like he had entered an amazing world.

This was absolutely a miracle!

The end of the space could not be seen with a single glance. All kinds of sculpture were in front of him. Each of those huge stone sculptures was about ten meters tall. They were a variety of shapes, wearing ancient armors and looked dignified.

"These were the ancestors of the Shaka Imperial Family!" The King solemnly introduced. He then slightly lowered his head and slowly walked by.

In the vicinity was a place that looked like a huge underground fortress. There was also a city wall that was seven to eight meters high in front of him. Under the city wall was a 'moat'.

When Rody walked across the bridge, he could not help but look down at the moat. He saw a bright silver 'river'.

"This is a moat. Our ancestors dug up this trench and put in mercury!" The King proudly said, "This strange silver liquid can actually kill a human! As long as someone were to fall into the moat and accidentally choke a little on the silver liquid, he would be dead!"

After passing through the city walls, Rody was surprised to find that it was a military fortress. The secret underground remains

still had about a dozen fully armored warriors on the walls. Although the number was not big, it was enough for the wall that was only a few meters long.

Such an amazing heavenly place was found deep in the ground about a hundred meters beneath. Even Rody could not help looking surprised.

The King looked at the warriors on the wall and sighed. "These warriors are carefully selected elites from the Royal household of the Sauron Kingdom. Each and every one of them is as strong as a Paladin! They are all loyal to the Royal Family of the Sauron Kingdom as they were sent to this dark place since childhood. They accepted the education of the Royal Family and would die for the Royal Family!" After saying all that, the King sighed. "Unfortunately, these kinds of people are now difficult to find. In the entire 'Sage King Hall Royal Knights', there are only three thousand knights. These are the last people the Royal Family of the Sauron Kingdom could place their trust in."

Rody also gave a sigh. There was actually an army in such an underground world. One could only imagine how they were selected and trained...

From inside the wall, Rody could not help but look up at the sky. He was surprised to see stars and moon instead of a rock surface. That sky was so real to the extent that Rody almost believed that he was outdoors.

The King then explained. "The sky above is an illusion created by sorcery. It rotates between day and night."

Rody sighed. "This is indeed a major piece of art!"

The King smiled and said, "The Shaka Royal Family took a few hundred years to create this place!"

The buildings around them were constructed with stones and were entirely in accordance with the structure of the military

fortress. Rody could clearly feel that if the outside walls were broken, the defenders could still use these stone structures as layer upon layer of defense.

At the innermost area, there was a smallish palace.

The palace was constructed with large black stones. There were no warriors guarding the place. Rody and the King went straight in but Rody was not naïve to think that there was no defense here. With his strength, he could clearly feel a faint murderous aura coming from all directions.

The King lightly said, "If I did not lead the way and if a person were to break in here, he would already be shot down by arrows before he reached this door. The Guardian Knights of the Palace of the Sage King do not only have warriors. They also have sorcerers. Although the sorcerers' strengths were not prominent individually, a long time ago, the Shaka Royal Family had discovered a way to combine the sorcerers' powers, substantially increasing the lethality of their sorcery. According to the ancient legends, they could even kill Paladins!" After saying that, the King looked at Rody.

Rody understood. Combining the sorcerers' powers...Isn't that the legendary combined sorcery?

After entering that small palace, Rody discovered that the doors of the rooms were closed.

"This is where the high ranked Guardian Knights and sorcerers live. The sorcerers are eccentric and are usually unwilling to meet people." The King smiled.

Rody sighed. "With this force, you are able to subjugate the dwarves with the planned sneak attack. Your Majesty, why do you still require my assistance?"

The King smiled and continued to lead Rody in.

In the main hall of the palace, the whole lobby was bright. There

were a variety of strange gems of different sizes mounted on the wall. The various colors and types of lights mixed together and lit up the whole hall as though it was daytime.

Inside the hall, on both sides, were several human shaped stone carvings. The sculptures had different postures. Some of them were sitting while some of them were standing. The facial expressions of the sculptures were also different. Some were happy, some were sad. Some were laughing, some were angry. They were all wearing similar robes and clothes. Their clothes were strange and did not have any additional adornment. Almost everyone was wearing a robe with a simple belt and also a strange 'hat'.

Rody could only describe it as a 'hat' simply because he did not know what plant was used to weave into something like a floral hoop and then worn on the head.

"That is something called an 'olive leaf'! That kind of plant cannot be found anymore!" The King smiled and said. "These here were our great ancestors, the Royal Family of the Shaka Empire! In the ancient era of the Shaka Empire, the Emperor had no crown! The olive branches wreathed into hoops was the crown! According to the ancient legends, the olive leaf signifies peace."

The King smiled solemnly and pointed in front of him, at the largest statue in the hall. It was an old man with fluttering long hair and a dignified face. His upper body was naked, and his robes were tied around his waist. The muscles on his chest were well-defined. His eyes were looking in front. Perhaps, it was just an illusion, but Rody could not help but think that the man's eyes looked sad...

The King sighed. "That was the first Emperor of the Shaka Empire! He was also my great ancestor!"

After saying that, the King slowly walked to the stone throne under the statue. He sat down and then said in a low voice, "In my

name, summon my subjects!"

"Shaka!" Low echoes appeared from both sides of the hall, in unison.

Rody was astonished and he could faintly feel the fluctuations of sorcery. He understood that the echoes were the work of sorcery.

Immediately, an old man completely covered in robes walked into the hall.

"Your Majesty!" That old man lowered his head.

The King looked at Rody. He smiled and said, "This is the leader of the Guardian Knights of the Royal Family of Shaka Empire. He is also my most trusted person!" The King then gave a strange smile and sounded a little pleased with himself as he said, "He has another identity that nobody else other than me knows about...He is the leader of the Sorcerer's Association of the Roland Continent, Master Sith."

Rody looked down at the quiet old man who kept his head low with a changed expression.

The leader of the Sorcerer's Association!

'The Sauron Royal Family member...No, should be, this descendant of the Royal Family of the Shaka Empire. How powerful is he?'

Rody smiled coldly. "Your Majesty, it looks like the Sauron Kingdom has already obtained a lot of power. Do you still need me under such a situation?"

The King frowned but he did not speak. The one who replied was Sith. "Mister Rody, the Sorcerer's Association looks powerful, but it is actually a loose organization. Even the president of the Sorcerer's Association is just a distinguished name only. I am unable to direct all the powers of the Sorcerer's Association. The best I can do is to foster more talents for His Majesty..."

The King sighed and then softly said, "Master Sith, Mister Rody is the first guest to come in here! I believe you have already arranged the first welcoming program for him?"

Sith replied expressionlessly, "It has already been arranged according to your orders."

...

"What is that kid, Rody, doing right now?" Sky lazily leaned against a long chair and stretched his lazy waist. He was actually lying down on the Emperor's throne!

Andy sat cross-legged on the floor. His eyes were closed as he asked, "Are you worried about him?"

Sky gave Andy a glance. "Worried about him? Even if everybody in this world died, he probably would still be alive!"

Andy finally opened his eyes but gave a supercilious look. "Then what are you worried about?"

Sky did not seem to care and softly said, "I think the people at the Roland Temple must have already given him trouble."

Andy suddenly laughed. "What's wrong?"

Sky shook his stout head. His whole body jumped out from the chair like a potato. "Old skeleton, aren't you worried? It is not so easy to deal with the Roland Temple. In any case, there are a few Paladins...and also..."

Andy sighed. "When have you become so long winded? What are you trying to say? You better quickly say it all out."

Sky had a strange expression as he said, "The Roland Continent is not as simple as we imagined...The Temple may be nothing... However, that place was where humans originated from. There will definitely be a lot of strange secrets."

Andy smiled, "For example?"

Sky closed his eyes and said, "God's Record."

He suddenly smiled as the fats on his face squeezed together. "I remember those days...I...Because of the God's Record..."

Andy frowned. "God's Record? Are you talking about that nonsense 'cannot see heaven, cannot see earth and cannot see people'? You have told me about this last time, but I do not believe in that nonsense...God's teachings itself is a big lie...Hmph."

Sky sighed. "Yes, those really are lies...However, there are some things that cannot be explained."

Andy suddenly stood up and frowned. "Sky, what else have you not told me?"

Sky shook his head and said, "Nothing...Really nothing else to tell you...except...except for that one thing."

"What?"

Sky seemed to recall his memories as he said, "That year, I found an ancient record in the Roland Temple archives...It was regarding God's Record! In addition, there was a forgotten secret..." He suddenly laughed and loudly said, "However, those are no longer important. Those are things that had been submerged for thousands of years. Now, we just need to pray that Rody does not get into trouble on the Roland Continent."

Andy frowned. "What records? You have never mentioned this to me before!"

Sky thought for a moment and said, "Sigh...It is alright not to talk about that record. Even if you were to look at it, it's useless... This is because the record is not complete! Nobody can understand it but..."

Andy asked, "But what?"

Sky laughed and approached Andy. He stretched out his hand to pat Andy's shoulder and whispered, "The moment I read the record, I became inspired enough to come up with a preposterous idea."

"What?"

Sky heaved a sigh and said, "I have been thinking...If...I just say if...if this world was not created by God...God is not a creator but only a conqueror...Haha...Do you understand what I mean? If this world originally belonged to humans and God only conquered the humans. After that, God lied to the future generations claiming that the world and humans were created by God."

Andy froze for a moment and then laughed. "Interesting, interesting! Fatty, you are truly interesting!" His expression suddenly changed as he said, "Damn Fatty, quickly tell me, what did you see on that record?"

Sky closed his eyes and muttered, "Nothing...Just the war..."

"War?"

Sky nodded. "This is just an assumption. The Roland Temple concealed an ancient record. There was a passage in it that puzzled me. However, it has been a few hundred years. I cannot remember it very clearly...The sentence was like this: If there was a war again between humans and Gods... "

"Wait!" Andy suddenly shouted, "What did you say? What do you mean by there was a war 'again'?"

Fatty spread out his hands and said, "I do not know! I really do not know! That is what was written in the record! This is why I was confused. Would humans have fought a war against God, the creator of the world? That is just ridiculous. That is why I guess, unless...God is not the creator of this world!"

"What a joke..." Andy seemed to smile but there was a little bit of sadness in his smile. "What a joke...In this world, many truths are regarded as jokes before they are affirmed as true?"

Andy's eyes suddenly lit up as he asked, "You said that the records you saw in the Roland Temple mentioned about God's Record? It also mentioned that 'if there was a war again'?"

Sky nodded.

Andy suddenly had an odd smile. "So, I guess that this so-called 'God's Record' could have records of that war between humans and God?"

The war between humans and God?

If God created the world and humans, then why was there a war between God and the humans?

Sky thought about it and then laughed as he pointed to Andy. "I already thought I was a heretic, but you are even crazier than me!"

Andy did not laugh. There was no smile on his face as he looked at Sky. "In fact, this is very simple. No matter what you say, you are still human! So quite often you cannot think outside of this world! You cannot think out of this circle. However, I am different. I can think of more things than you." He then faintly said, "This is because I am not human!"

He looked at Sky, then he smiled and said, "I am a spectator who observes from outside the circle!"

Chapter 245: Underground Cave

"Isn't this a chariot?" Rody narrowed his eyes and looked at the King.

At that moment, Rody, the King, and Master Sith were standing inside the military training grounds at the palace in the underground cave.

The circular training grounds had a concave appearance. It was like an ancient wrestling ring. They were standing on a several-meters-high stone platform.

A stone gate at the side of the training grounds had slowly opened and a Sauron Army chariot had charged out. That chariot looked like the ones Rody had seen during the last war. Two tall horses covered with a thin layer of armor dragged a two-wheeled carriage made of ironwood. There were long sharp blades on both wheels of the carriage. When the wheels rolled, the blades would spin rapidly and kill the enemies close to it. There were three soldiers riding the carriage. One drove the carriage, the second held a shield and the third held a long battle-axe.

"Earl Rody must have already witnessed the power of a chariot?" The King smiled, seemingly proud of himself.

Rody looked at the King and whispered, "The chariot is outstanding, but the weakness is also apparent. It may successfully demonstrate its strength in an open field, but it is not invincible! This flashy chariot team can easily be beaten by well-trained infantries using proper methods!"

"Oh?" The King leisurely smiled.

Rody sighed. "The first one is the speed of the charge. The carriage has three fully armored soldiers with weapons and shields, along with armored horses. Such weight is a burden for the horses. As a result, the speed of the chariot's charge is slower

than a heavy cavalry! If I were the commander, I would use a light bow cavalry. Avoid direct assaults and alternately attack while retreating using their speed to maintain a distance to prevent close fights. At the same time, use the bow to kill the enemy..."

The King faintly said, "That is different! Your country's Lightning God's Whip is the most powerful and naturally takes pride in their own cavalry! However, my chariot is used to deal with the dwarfs! The dwarfs are short and are unsuitable to be cavaliers! In addition, as they are located in the inner sea, they lack horses. Even if they have the money to buy horses, it could not be raised in large numbers on the island. That is why your assumptions cannot be applied to the dwarfs!"

Rody frowned and continued, "Even if the dwarfs do not have excellent cavalries, their infantries will not have a hard time defeating the chariot if they have mastered the correct method of dealing with it."

The King gave an enigmatic smile as looked at Rody.

Rody pondered for a moment and whispered, "If I am the commander, I would order the soldiers to stick to the walls and defend it from the chariot. Naturally, this is not skill. Just give me a well-trained elite infantry and I would still be able to defeat the chariot!" He slowly said, "The chariot's power relies on the sprint of the horses! I only need a team of excellent archers backing-up from behind with a round of arrows, shooting the horses instead of the soldiers. When one of the two horses pulling the chariot, is injured, the chariot will overturn. The chariot will be destroyed and the soldiers on it will perish." Rody paused for a moment and then he continued, "During an attack, even if you loosen your chariots' formation, but as long as the horses of the front chariot are hit, the chariot will lose its power and block the chariots at the back. The whole formation will then crumble" After saying that, Rody sighed. "I do not need to let the soldiers die in vain. The archers will shoot the horses from afar. After killing the horses,

the infantries will rush to the fallen chariot that can only wait to be slaughtered."

The King smiled. "In that case, Rody, why don't you try?"

The King clapped his hands. A Guardian Knight appeared from the door behind him and immediately handed over a set of bow and arrows.

The King then stepped forward and waved his hand at the chariot below. The soldier shouted and swung his whip, initiating the chariot to run quickly on the training grounds.

Rody looked at the bow and arrow in his hands and looked startled. He then heard the King speak softly, "Why don't you try it? Shoot the horse that is pulling the chariot."

Since the King requested him to shoot, Rody no longer hesitated and immediately shot an arrow at the horse. Rody's archery was quite good. The power and accuracy of his arrow had achieved a certain level. Although he did not use any fighting energy, as soon as this arrow was shot out, a wind piercing sound was heard. The arrow had already pierced the back of the horse. The arrow had pierced the horse's armor and stuck on its back in an askew position.

Rody was surprised that the horse he had shot did not whinny in pain. It continued to dash forward and ignore the injury in its body.

"You can continue to shoot!" The King's eyes flashed with a trace of unusual brilliance.

Rody took a deep breath and took out four sharp arrows from the pouch at once. After that, his movements were like the wind as he shot the four arrows successively and all the shots accurately hit the horse.

The horse only neighed but did not fall. It did not even stagger as it continued to run forward at high speed.

"Preposterous!" Rody was surprised. When he saw the King's mocking eyes, he quickly took out another sharp arrow.

Although Rody's archery was not as good as Darke's, he had similarly undergone meticulous training. This time, Rody aimed at the head of the horse. The arrow flew out and struck its target. Finally, the horse could no longer endure. It staggered a few steps forward before it fell.

With the fall of one horse, the other horse could no longer pull the chariot. The fast-moving chariot then staggered as the wheels were lifted on one side. Fortunately, the soldier who was driving the chariot was prepared and the chariot did not overturn.

"How is it?" Although Rody had finally shot down the horse, the King smiled at Rody without any irritation.

Rody did not even feel the slightest joy of victory. He looked down for a moment and sighed. He then said, "I have lost!"

His last arrow had shot the horse in the head. During a high-speed charge, it would be difficult even for elite archers to shoot the horse in the head. Majority of archers would not have such skill.

Ordinary archers could only, at most, hit the body of the horse. However, that horse continued to run even after being hit by five arrows.

"This kind of horse is weird!" Rody thought. "If an ordinary army were to meet this group of chariots, the chariots will have long reached them even before the archers can shoot down the horses."

The King nodded as he looked at Sith, who gave a faint smile then said, "This kind of horse is different from the ordinary battle horse! Our sorcerers prepared a peculiar drug. This drug is mixed with the horses' feed and over long periods of time, these horses could no longer feel pain! They have a strong ability to resist attacks and can continue running even when they are struck by

several arrows. The only drawback is that these specially bred horses can only live up to two years. We have already tested it many times!"

Rody closed his eyes, thinking for a moment before saying, "These special battle horses are really powerful. Perhaps only these battle horses could maximize the power of the chariots. However, even if the archers are unable to take down the chariots, there are still other ways."

Rody opened his eyes and looked at the drilling ground below. He then waved his hand and loudly said, "If a troop of high morale heavy infantry displays a dense battle formation and at the same time, the front row soldiers have the determination and are willing to die, then with the front row infantries holding shields while the row of soldiers behind them holding a special spear that is three to four meters in length, they can confront the charge of the chariots. Even if the chariots are able to break through the shield wall and the horses are not afraid of weapons, it does not mean that they cannot die. The spears can kill many of the horses. As long as the soldiers at the front are prepared to be killed or wounded, the chariots' assault can be resisted!" Rody then slowly said, "As long as the chariots in front are blocked, the chariots at the back will not be able to proceed. Without the ability to charge, the chariots are just as useful as rotten wood."

"Well trained, high morale, faithful and willing-to-die soldiers..." the King muttered. He suddenly looked at Rody and smiled. "This kind of army which you just mentioned might exist in your country...but are there such army on the Roland Continent?"

Rody was at a loss for words...He had seen the strength of the coalition armies of the Roland Continent at the battlefields of Thunderous City and the Empire's northwest Pamir Plateau.

Truthfully speaking, other than the elite Holy Knights and the average Royal Knights of the Sauron Kingdom, Rody did not expect the armies of the other kingdoms of the Roland Continent to be

well trained and to have high morale. Those who have a willing-to-die attitude would be even more unlikely.

The King happily looked at Rody's reaction and said, "That's right! If our chariot teams meet your distinguished country's elite infantries or cavalries, we may not be able to win. However, it is strong enough to go win some in the Roland Continent." He then smiled and said, "I am very clear that this chariot team is not able to win against the Holy Knights. However, my objective is not to deal with the Holy Knights! My hypothetical enemy is the army of the dwarf kingdom!"

"Oh?" Rody frowned. He had never seen a dwarf before and was ignorant of their army.

The King smiled and said, "I can at least guarantee that the army of the dwarf kingdom may merely be well-trained and have high morale, but they absolutely will not be able to be like what you said 'willing-to-die'!"

Rody's eyes shined as he asked, "Why?"

The King lightly said, "That is because they are too rich!"

The King looked at the chariot below him as if spellbound then he continued, "The dwarfs have been trading ironwood for several hundred years and have earned a fortune! Hundreds of years ago, the dwarfs were very strong, and they dared to fight against the coalition armies of the Roland Continent. But now, their guts have been replaced by their heavy purse. A rich man will not dare to risk his life fighting with others!" The King, seemingly smiling, said, "The army of the dwarf kingdom is well equipped. The salaries of their soldiers are high and amongst the most well paid in the Roland Continent! However, an army recruited with money would not have strong combat effectiveness! Earl Rody, I am sure you understand what I am saying!"

The King suddenly smiled and pulled Rody's hand as he said, "Well, there is nothing left to see here. I will take you to see

something else."

The two of them then left using the door behind them. They were only followed by Sith. The three of them re-entered the palace.

After walking through several arched doorways, the three of them stood in front of the two closed slabs of the huge stone door.

It was silent around the palace and there was no human voice at all. Everyone seemed to move around quietly in that place. Without the King's order, it seemed like everyone would be invisible.

"Where is this place?" Rody asked as he looked at the stone door in front of him. There was a relief at the door. The relief was carved in the shape of a long sword with an olive leaf beside it.

The King seemed to notice Rody's astonishment, so he laughingly said, "This relief is the symbol of the Royal Family of Shaka. It means, 'the ultimate purpose of the sword is to bring peace'!"

Rody sighed and said, "There is some truth in this sentence."

The King then said, "This stone door has been here since the beginning of the construction of this place. Behind this stone door are the records left behind by the Royal Family of Shaka Empire. Only members of the Royal Family can enter this place. Even Sith has never been in there! I can tell you that behind this stone door is the recorded history of the rise and the fall of the Shaka Empire!"

Rody's heart throbbed eagerly. The rise and fall of the Shaka Empire?

Was that truly the truth of the obliterated history?

The King nodded with a serious expression and earnestly looked at Rody. He said, "Originally, in accordance with the rule of the ancient Royal Family, outsiders are not allowed in here! However, the situation now is different! The Temple persistently pressured us and has pushed the entire Roland Continent into a dangerous

situation. If the Sauron Kingdom fails, then the last spark of the Shaka Empire will be completely extinguished! So today, I would like to invite Earl Rody to join me and witness the 'real history'!

Rody could clearly feel Sith's expression change. However, the King sternly shook his head at him.

"So, Earl Rody, I welcome you as the first guest of the Royal Family of Shaka Empire for the first time in a thousand of years!" The King then made a gesture.

Rody took a deep breath. With some expectations, he stretched out his hands to push the two doors in front of him...

While Rody nervously pushed open the door that concealed the real history, at the surface of the earth one hundred meters above him, a light carriage passed through the city gate and slowly entered the city.

The soldiers guarding the gate checked the other party according to the customary clearing procedure and collected a certain amount of tax based on the common standards of Sauron Kingdom before they allowed the carriage to enter the city.

The carriage followed the wide streets as it headed straight towards the palace.

It was daytime, and the streets were full of pedestrians. The carriage was moving along the busiest street. The window of the carriage was then pushed open and a rather sweet and charming voice came from within the carriage.

The owner of the voice sighed and said, "I did not expect this place to be busier than last time. King Sauron is really not an ordinary person. All along the journey, it seems the Royal Family of the Sauron Kingdom is very popular with the people.

There seemed to be another person inside the carriage. A rough voice then responded, "How come I cannot see anything different?"

The flirtatious voice seemed to laugh and whispered, "You have

never come to the Roland Continent before. Naturally, you will not understand." She then sighed and said, "Right now, war may break out anytime between the Temple and the other kingdoms. The tax for entering the city just now is much higher compared to the tax I paid last time. Obviously, Sauron Kingdom has raised the taxes to accumulate wealth in preparation for war! Under such circumstances, can you feel the prelude of war? Even after increasing the taxes, did you hear any dissatisfaction with the Royal Family all along our way here? In such a situation, King Sauron can still have popular support for his people shows that King Sauron is not a simple man."

The carriage gradually passed through the long road to approach the palace. However, it then turned into a fork road and so it went towards a solitary Summer Palace next to the Palace.

Before the carriage reached the door of the Summer Palace, a group of Royal Knights approached the carriage. The leading officer of the group shouted at the carriage to stop. He then knocked on the window and exchanged a few words with the people inside the carriage. After that, the officer immediately showed a respectful expression and took his subordinates to lead the carriage towards the door of the Summer Palace.

Moments after that, the main door of the Summer Palace opened. The Crown Prince of Sauron Kingdom, Aven, walked out wearing a shining knight's armor. There was sweat on his forehead and his face was red as if he had just had intense exercises. A few soldiers beside him dressed in an officer's uniform also had a similar appearance and sweating face. It was obvious that they had been training together.

The servant bowed and opened the door of the carriage. Instantly, a pair of white legs stepped out from the door of the carriage, followed by an impressive figure. That woman had curly hair. Her proud figure stuck out through her thin tight-fitting dress. The hems of her skirt were much shorter than the average

ceremonial dress exposing her pair of slender thighs. She smiled at the Crown Prince as she got down the carriage. Her skirt gave a very captivating sight with every step she took.

"Miss Nedis!" The Crown Prince did not seem to show much reaction to her charm. He still maintained a friendly smile. "I did not expect a noble guest like you to visit me today!"

Nedis gave a shallow smile. However, her fluttering eyes seemed to steal the soul of all the nearby men. She smiled with pursed lips and whispered, "Your Highness, I have come bringing you a few good gifts. I got some good wine from the southern continent. Besides dealing with some business matters, I have come to the Sauron Kingdom this time to bring you these gifts."

At that moment, another person walked out of the carriage. The face of this tall and sturdy person was full of beard. His pair of eyes were like lightning. He wore a simple attire. It was Darke!

However, Darke did not carry his signature longbow behind him.

Nedis smiled and said, "Your Highness, I also brought you a noble guest...This is my good friend, Mister Darke. I know that Your Highness is interested in martial arts. This person, Mister Darke, is a master of archery!"

Chapter 246: Mural

"Here...

"Here is where the true history lies!" The King's voice sounded rather bleak.

After the stone gate was a space with a ten meters radius. Gems were mounted on the walls which gave off a gentle light under the effect of sorcery. There were also extraordinary bright murals on the wall.

The ceiling of the entire space was dome-shaped, at the center of which was a hexagonal sorcery array—Rody could clearly feel a gentle fluctuating wave from the sorcery array. What surprised Rody was the floor of the room...that was like a pool.

From the moment he first walked past the stone door, he could see silvery light flickering on the floor and the water was calm... The floor was actually filled with mercury!

There was a slate pontoon bridge in the middle. The slate pieces seemed to float on the mercury.

When the King and Rody stepped onto the slate pontoon bridge, the mercury on both sides of the pontoon bridge fluctuated a little. Rody could feel the place he was standing on was unstable. Obviously, those slates were suspended on the mercury by using some kind of unknown method.

Standing on the slate pontoon bridge, he was unable to come into contact with the murals on the wall. However, the murals could still be seen clearly.

The King sighed. "Rody, take a good look at the murals. You only have an hour! This place has been preserved for a thousand years using a sorcery array! It can only be opened for an hour per day. Once the time is up, we must leave to avoid the destruction of the sorcery array!"

Rody did not seem to have noticed the King's words. He had already focused his whole attention on the first mural from the entrance.

The pattern on the first mural was very simple. Even the engraving skills used were relatively crude. It appeared to be the oldest. The pattern on the mural showed a picture that made completely piqued Rody's interest.

At the bottom of the picture were differently dressed humans, men and women. All of them had respectful and devoted expressions facing the top of the picture as if they were worshipping—at the top was a white building. The building had a simple distant scene as the background. It looked like a sacred high-rise building and on top of the high-rise building was a small man.

That man was covered in a long white robe and naturally, his face was not clear. He opened up his hands as if he was embracing the whole world in his arms. Only his long hair was flying giving him a majestic look.

"What is this? Is he the God that those people were worshipping? Is that man standing in the building really God?" Rody asked with a frown.

"No!" The King sighed. "That man who was worshipped was not God!"

"Oh?" Rody was a little bit surprised.

The King then softly said as he sighed, "The man whom they worshipped was the founder and the first Emperor of the Shaka Empire, Julian!"

The King's voice slowly echoed in that space. "This is the first mural, narrating the founding of the Shaka Empire! Now, the exact year of that time could no longer be found. This picture shows the first day the Shaka Empire was created and my ancestor Julian

giving a speech to the people. His speech at that time was passed down!"

"What did he say?"

The King laughed bitterly and said, "He said that mankind should be united. Everyone should be free from birth and our souls should not be shackled or imprisoned! We should doubt everything and not blindly worship. Mankind should have an independent personality and soul...and not become slaves to God!"

Rody opened his mouth wide as he felt a little surprised. After a long time, he could not help but sigh. "Now I somewhat understand why Shaka Empire was destroyed. That was because your first Emperor had spoken such blasphemous words."

He then looked at the second mural.

The mural showed a large room. The entire room was circular and looked like a theater. It was surrounded by a lot of seats filled with people of different demeanor. Some of them were in luxurious attires and some in simple attire. However, everyone's expression was pious and solemn. In the middle was a small and tall platform. A white-robed man stood on the platform. The man was elegant and held his scepter high.

What surprised Rody was that there was a sentence written at the bottom of the mural.

"What do those words mean?" Rody frowned.

The King narrowed his eyes and slowly said in a low voice, "Matters related to mankind should be decided by mankind."

Looking at Rody's astonished gaze, the King smiled and explained, "In fact, this mural's main point is that it recorded one of the very important historical events of the Shaka Empire. That is, the formation of a Political Council. The Political Council was a special political system of Shaka Empire! In Shaka Empire, the Emperor was a dictator! The Council represents the people

regardless of whether they were nobles, civilians or even knights. Every class had their own representative participating in the Council. The man in the middle of the picture was the Emperor of the Shaka Empire at that time. He was listening to the opinions of the representatives from various classes and made decisions based on their opinions."

Rody gave a long sigh and replied, "This was really a strange political system!"

The King lightly said, "It was not strange at all! The founder of the Shaka Empire said that freedom and power belong to everyone. The Emperor was not an autocrat but rather a guide."

Rody glanced at the King. He then earnestly said in a serious tone. "Your Majesty's ancestors have my highest respect!"

Unexpectedly, the King did not look proud at all but was somewhat sad instead. He just shook his head and did not respond to Rody's words.

The two of them continued to look at the following murals.

The third and fourth mural recorded more of the history of the Shaka Empire. There was nothing strange about it. The only thing that amazed Rody was the existence of the ancient Shaka Empire. The strange thing was that these murals did not mention anything about theology. Could it be that, at that time, God's teachings have not existed yet?

The style of the fifth mural was totally different.

The first four murals showed harmony and peace and perhaps, a bit of prosperity. That was in accordance with the key ideas of freedom and equality of the Shaka Empire.

However, the style used on the fifth mural had undergone tremendous changes.

On the mural were a row of gallows. Black-robed men were seen hanging on the gallows...and at their feet were corpses.

The surrounding crowd that was obviously civilians were cheering.

What surprised Rody was that he found what the hanged men were wearing very familiar clothing.

Those black-robed men who were hanged on the gallows were clearly in the attires of priests.

What the hell! Rody was shocked. Did they really publicly hang the people from the Temple?

In Rody's life, during the present era God's teachings were the most divine authority. Only they could publicly hang people. The world had never heard of priests being publicly hanged in great numbers.

Below the mural was another line of text.

The King did not wait for Rody to ask. He had already started reading out the texts: "Mankind does not need the shackles to their souls! Anyone who tries to give our souls shackles should be prepared to be punished with death."

Rody listened to the King's words. The shock he felt could not be described in words.

From the pictures and the texts, the Shaka Empire was obviously against the existence of God's teachings. It could even be said that they regard God's teaching and theology as an evil and heretical religion as ...

Perhaps, it could be said that the Shaka Empire was simply an empire that does not believe in God's teachings. They do not believe in Gods.

"Shocked?" The King gave a wry smile as he looked at Rody and said, "Frankly speaking, I was also shocked when I first came here and saw these things."

Rody took a deep breath and then he forcefully exhaled. He still

had a peculiar expression as he said, "During the era of the Shaka Empire, God's teachings were the target of oppression, right?"

"Yes!" The King softly replied, "My ancestors believed that mankind was born free and that our spirits and souls should not be imprisoned by Gods. Although Gods were of a higher existence, they had no right to interfere with our world. That was why..." The King looked at the mural and continued, "God's teachings were declared illegal during the era of the Shaka Empire. The Empire had a law that forbade it and all these fraudsters were hanged!"

Rody was silent for a moment and then he suddenly smiled.

His smile was malicious as he muttered. "That was a wonderful era."

...

"Oh? Is this your request?" The Crown Prince looked at Nedis who was smiling sweetly. He frowned. "Miss Nedis, you truly know how to give me trouble."

Nedis still smiled charmingly and softly said, "Your Highness, this matter should be something easy for you. Would you refuse to help your friend?"

Aven stood up and walked back and forth for a few steps and then stopped. He then stared at Nedis and said, "Is it so simple as to just carry some merchandise to the Radiant Continent?"

Nedis sighed. "Your Majesty, you also know that I have a lot of businesses at Roland Continent. However, the current situation at Roland Continent makes me worry. If war begins, the first to suffer would be business people without powers or rights like us. That is why I have no choice but to make this decision. I came here this time to wind up the businesses on the Roland Continent and then temporarily send stuff back to the Radiant Continent. However, with so many goods and properties, I can't send them all

back by myself. Besides that, the King has issued a naval restriction. My ship will not be able to sail. Fortunately, you are the Commander of the Navy. If I don't ask for your help, who else can I ask?"

Aven still frowned and replied, "However, I cannot disobey the King's orders! Miss Nedis, your plan to move your properties to the Radiant Empire, this decision...Hmph!"

"Your Highness!" Nedis became unhappy and said, "Are you doubting our friendship? Although I do not have big businesses on the Roland Continent, I have never paid less than one gold coin in annual taxes. Now that threat of war is looming, do you want to see your good friend suffer major losses?"

"Alright!" Aven hesitated for a moment and finally sighed. He then said, "I suppose you will soon hear the news. We have already reached a peace agreement with your country. There will be a large number of ships going to the Radiant Empire in the near future. At that time, there will also be a naval escort...I can only help you a little. When the time comes, you can send your stuff onto my fleet and they will then successfully reach the Radiant Empire...Miss Nedis, I am only helping you because of our many years of friendship."

Nedis gave a satisfied smile. She then said, "Your Highness, thank you for your generosity. In addition, I know that because of the current situation your country is preparing war funds. I, as a friend, am willing to personally contribute five hundred thousand gold coins! Please accept this small gift from your friend."

Aven looked at Nedis and suddenly said, "Five hundred thousand gold coins? Hey...Miss Nedis, I am now getting curious. How much are your properties worth on the Roland Continent?"

Nedis just smiled and did not give a reply.

The Crown Prince then shook his head. He smiled and said, "Alright! Since I have already given my promise, I will not break it."

Miss Nedis, we have not met for a long time. Please stay in the capital for the next few days and let me fulfill my duty as a host. Also, Mister Darke, Miss Nedis said that you are a master in archery. I must definitely ask you for advice."

Nedis and Darke looked at each other for a moment. Nedis immediately smiled then said, "Of course! Your Highness Aven, I don't mind staying here for an additional few days. Anyway, I also do not have any intentions of going back immediately."

"Oh?" Aven smiled.

"That's right!" Nedis pretended to sigh. She then loudly said in a joking tone. "You do not know. Currently, my enemies on the Radiant Continent are after me...Right now, I dare not hurry back."

Aven thought she was joking. He only gave a light smile without saying anything.

Darke glanced at Nedis helplessly—only he and Nedis herself knew that her words were not a joke.

Because of Nedis' identity, the vampires of Radiant Continent were hunting her. This time, the purposes of Darke coming to the Roland continent were to accompany Nedis to deal with some of her business matters and also to avoid the vampires.

Chapter 247: True History

The sixth mural caused Rody to be somewhat shocked.

The five previous murals showed Rody a vibrant Shaka Empire.

In the legendary ancient kingdom, the people had the right to freedom and equality. One could sit with the nobles and knights to decide their own destinies. There were no shackles from God's teachings and there was no blind worshipping of Gods or consecration...

However, the scene of the sixth mural made Rody extremely surprised.

What Rody originally thought of as a fascinating Empire had suddenly changed its appearance.

At the top corner of that mural was like an illusory background. It seemed to depict the reflection of the ordinary life of the people from Shaka Empire. However, it was not as calm, abundant and equitable as Rody expected...

In the picture were farmers wearing tattered clothes while nobles in luxurious carriages ran over the barren land. The gallows were also in the picture. However, the people being hanged were no longer the priests but people in simple civilian clothes. The anger of the spectators and the pain of those hanged depicted in the murals were so realistic!

At the bottom of the picture was still the 'Political Council'.

However, the Council was not as united and equal like what Rody saw in the previous murals. Everyone seemed to be squabbling with anger, greed, evil and many more. A variety of expressions were painted on the faces of the people there. The man standing on the tall platform in the middle obviously should be the Emperor of the Shaka Empire. The Emperor looked helpless and sad.

The King sighed. "Do you remember that I did not say anything

when said that you admire my ancestor that founded the Shaka Empire?"

Rody nodded with a depressed expression. "I truly admire your ancestor! He dared give the power to others so that each layer of society could have equality and freedom. I cannot help but admire his boldness!"

The King shook his head and sighed. "Unfortunately, he was wrong!"

Without waiting for Rody to speak, the King indifferently said, "According to the historical records of the Shaka Empire, the existence of the Council lasted for less than a century. In the later part of the existence of the Council, such a political system not only did not bring any benefit to the empire but instead became the cause of the empire's decline!"

"Why?" Rody shockingly asked.

The King gave a wry smile. His smile seemed mocking as he said, "Rody, don't you understand? Power can only exist in the hands of a few people! It is absolutely impossible for it to be evenly distributed!"

After giving a sigh, the King continued, "In the beginning, the Council did give people equal freedom and power. However, the Council later became a place where people from all classes competed for power! During the early days of the Shaka Empire, the Emperor did not successfully establish his own absolute authority! Although the Council had given the people freedom, it had also seriously undermined the prestige of the imperial authority! Look at this picture!" The King pointed at a mural on the wall. "The Council became a noisy place. At that time, in order to pass a small decree, the Council would debate for three days and three nights! Every decree of the empire could touch the interests of every class. For the sake of their own interests, they argued in the Council and fought each other! In the Shaka Empire, there was

a famous joke about the Council. In one of the springs, in order to pass a decree involving the spring plowing, the farmers could refuse any labor to ensure the normal development of the agriculture of the empire. However, they quarreled at the Council for the entire year to pass that decree. By the time that decree was passed, winter had arrived, and the spring plowing was long gone...Haha haha."

Rody thought for a moment and suddenly asked, "Shouldn't there be a representative for the civilians at the Council?"

"What is the use of that?" The King lightly replied, "A lot of things are not so simple when it comes to governing a country! For example, during spring plowing periods, farmers want to stay and work at home. However, nobles need manpower to build their manors. The armies need to replenish their military strength to defend against the threat of the other races. The King needs manpower to build walls and repair roads. Can you tell me who is right and who is wrong?"

Before Rody could reply, the King lightly continued, "Even the representative of the civilians in the Council was no longer a real civilian once they gained rights."

Rody was silent.

These things were too complicated and the young Rody could not fully understand these things.

After a while, he suddenly thought of something and asked, "What about the teachings of Gods at the time?"

The King nodded his head and lightly said, "When an empire started to become unstable, it was inevitable for outside influence to enter!" He pointed at the picture with the scene of the endless arguing at the Council and lightly said, "Do you see those people? When the rule became unstable, then the shackles of the spirits became necessary!"

Rody's eyes looked sad as he agreed. "Yes! Although religion is a spiritual shackle, in a sense, it is also a spiritual poison! The people in pain especially needs this anesthesia!"

The King sighed. "Unfortunately, my ancestors did not see this! In my opinion, at that time, what the Shaka Empire needed most was a powerful centralized authority. It required a powerful imperial authority that all other forces would submit to! The Council that emphasized equal rights turned the internal affairs of the empire into a state of disunity. With the fierce feuding, the Emperor could only stand at the side and watched helplessly."

"What happened then?" Rody frowned.

The King sighed. "The Emperor then ordered to disband the Council, ending the Council that symbolized freedom and equality of the Shaka Empire!"

Rody's expression changed. "Really? That was not a good thing!"

If it was simply understood that the Emperor abolished the council to cease the endless struggling, then that understanding was wrong!

Sure enough, the King noticed Rody's eyes revealed admiration and asked, "Earl Rody, can you understand the crucial point?"

Rody sighed. "If things were as how Your Majesty presented them to be, this abnormal council should really be abolished. It was not necessary to withdraw their powers. However, it was not so easy to take back the power that had been given out! According to Your Majesty, the Emperor of the Shaka did not firmly establish his own absolute powers then. Could he suppress the representatives of the various classes after abolishing the Council? If that was not properly handled, I am afraid it would invite more trouble!"

The King nodded. "You really understood it..."

"What does this mean?" Rody pointed at the seventh mural on the wall.

The seventh mural showed a scene full of activities.

Countless people were carrying woods and stones with various methods. They gathered together as if they were in the process of building a huge building.

In the background of the picture was a tall mountain. There was a spiral mountain path that led from the bottom of the mountain to the top. Countless people were hard at work, transporting the construction materials to the mountaintop.

The mountain seemed to pierce through the clouds. It was surrounded by fog, making it faintly discernible. At the top of the mountain were craftsmen busy working with a variety of tools. Rody was surprised that there was actually a tall tower being built on top of the hill.

The tall tower had a unique cone shape. From the progress of the work so far, the tower looked alarmingly tall.

The King sighed. "Do you see those words down there? Those words say, '[The construction of the Sky Tower!](#)' The start of the blasphemy to God!"

The King sighed when he saw Rody's puzzled expression and explained. "In the history of the Shaka Empire, the teachings of Gods were forbidden. However, after many years of development, teachings of Gods had become very influential!"

Rody nodded. "But what does this have to do with the Sky Tower?"

"There was a huge connection!" The King sighed. "The teachings of Gods in the Shaka Empire was becoming more influential. The controversy over the existence of Gods had always been constantly debated and thus created a fuss. There were even calls for the abolishment of the law prohibiting the teachings of Gods. It was at that time that the Emperor of the Shaka Empire suddenly gave an order to build the Sky Tower. That tall tower was supposed to

directly reach heaven in order to prove that God did not exist in the sky and that the teachings of Gods were just lies."

"What?" Rody was stunned. He showed an unimaginably disbelieving expression as he said, "He spent countless manpower and resources to build a tower just for this reason?"

The King gave a wry smile. "We will never completely know what truly happened. Now, we could only find whatever little that remains."

Rody looked dumbly at the mural on the wall and sighed. "No matter what, if God truly exists...then the tower certainly could not have been successfully built!" He then secretly thought. At the very least, right now, I have never heard of the existence of Sky Tower in the Roland Continent!

"That's right!" The King sighed. "From the start, the powers that believed in God strongly opposed the construction of Sky Tower. There were already many people from all classes who had believed in the teachings of Gods and fiercely opposed to the Emperor's methods! They believed that that was a blasphemy against Gods! They declared that the sky was God's territory. Anyone attempting to reach the sky was a blasphemous sinner and would be punished by God."

"So did God carry out the punishments?" Rody had a complicated expression.

The King smiled bitterly and replied, "At the very least, the Shaka Empire was destroyed."

Rody shook his head. He no longer talked as he continued to the next mural.

The next mural was relatively simpler. It was also a scene that Rody was most familiar with—war!

Swords, surging smokes, and powerful armies...And entangled in the warfare were not just the humans!

There were the legendary dragons that resembled the Mystic Dragon that Rody met at the cave of the southern mountains of the Radiant Continent. There were also the legendary Elves. Those Elves looked similar to humans except they had a sharper face and longer ears.

The picture did not explain who was fighting against who. Instead, it showed that several forces were fighting endlessly.

The King sighed. "That was the first large-scale war recorded by the Shaka Empire! A civil strife broke out in the empire and several races began to fight. That war lasted for almost a hundred years!"

"Who won?" Rody asked abruptly.

"Humans!" The King replied quickly. He then laughed as if there was a deep meaning. "Humans has always been the leader of all races. Although humans did not have strong bodies like the Dragons or magical talent like the Elves, they have something that the other races do not have. That was wisdom!"

Rody sneered. "Isn't it stated in the teachings of Gods that humans were created in accordance with Gods' own image before Gods created the other races in the world. Humans then became the masters of the world." Rody paused for a moment and then asked, "How did that war break out?"

"Only God knows!" The King's tone did not sound good.

Rody did not frown nor did he have any dissatisfaction with the King's vague answer. He simply said, "I am afraid that God is the really the only one who knows."

The two of them looked at each other and laughed knowingly.

Rody continued to look at the next mural and suddenly asked, "What does this mean?"

The next mural showed a ruin. The building was burning in the fire as the smoke rose towards the distant bloody sun. Although it was a simple picture, it gave off a sad feeling.

"The remains of the empire!" The King lightly said, "The sentence below means 'the remains of the empire'!"

Looking at Rody's puzzled demeanor, the King continued, "After that war, the Elves' nation was completely annihilated! The Dragons also entrenched themselves at the northernmost part of the Roland Continent!"

"I already understand..." Rody's said in a pondering tone. "Although humans won the war, the Shaka Empire had completely collapsed from the war...An empire that originally possessed the entire continent was almost dead."

The King smiled and said in a sad tone. "Sky Tower was destroyed before it was completed. At the same time, the brilliant culture and civilization of the Shaka Empire were also destroyed."

"What about the empire? Did it still exist then?"

"It existed! But at the same time, it didn't exist!" The King laughed bitterly. "After the war, it could be said that the empire was on the verge of collapsing! At that time, if God's religion was the only influence that the Emperor could rely on, then it was not for anything else but because God's religion could paralyze human minds and make them endure the hardships and poverty. They would willingly put on the shackles of slavery. It was also during that era the teachings of Gods openly became a religious belief!"

Rody suddenly laughed. His laughter was filled with mockery. The more he laughed, the louder it became. Finally, his eyes unexpectedly shed tears!

Finally, he could not help but shout, "What kind of bullshit theory was that? Freedom and equality brought poverty, hunger, and war, while peace and tranquility were obtained from shackling the souls! Why did those people willingly enslave themselves to God? Why were those Gods, high and almighty, receive human worship?"

The King lightly replied, "That was because the Gods were 'benevolent' and 'great'. Gods said that humans were evil from birth. Thus, suffering in the world was inevitable. Those who want peace needed to worship Gods. Devotions were required to exchange for peaceful souls. The price for 'peaceful souls' was not expensive...The blessings of the priest and also 'peace after death' could be obtained with a bit of 'atonement tax'."

"But why? Why do people blindly believe those lies?"

"Because of despair!" the King answered. "People would believe all kinds of lies when the world was in darkness and when sufferings had become norms."

Rody closed his eyes and frowned for a moment. He suddenly opened his eyes and said, "Let us get out of here!"

The King smiled and asked, "What's wrong? Are you not going to see the murals behind here?"

Rody shook his head. "No, I don't want to see anymore. It is not necessary to continue looking at the murals. Those murals would simply recount the fall of the Shaka Empire and the rise of the God's religion. After that, it would be about how history was tampered with and how lies were used to hide...Those things are not worth looking at!"

The King softly asked, "Rody, do you know why I brought you here to see these?"

Rody's eyes flashed. He suddenly narrowed his eyes to look at the King in front of him.

Rody was very clear that the things he saw that day were not something that could be revealed. The historical existence of the Shaka Empire was already covered up by the teachings of Gods. And this place had already become 'non-existent'. If Gods learned about this secret, Sauron Kingdom would suffer severe disaster.

The King then whispered, "Rody, if it was only to deal with the

dwarfs, I would not bring you here today...However, in order to deal with the Gods religion or those influential people behind the Gods religion..."

The King then lowered his voice and said, "I have never believed in God, more so those lies in the teachings of Gods. I do not agree with the other thoughts of my ancestors except for one thing which I am certain of. Mankind's destiny should be decided by mankind! To deal with the Temple, the Sauron Kingdom has joined forces with the other kingdoms on the Roland continent. Even though we may not win, but at least we are not afraid of them. My only worry is..."

At that moment, the King looked back at the murals on the wall.

"Even such a powerful empire like the Shaka Empire was toppled. What can a small kingdom like the Sauron Kingdom do?" The King showed a fearful expression as he asked, "Do you know how the Shaka Empire finally fell?"

Rody shook his head.

The King sighed. "If you do not want to see the other murals, then perhaps you can just skip to the last one!"

"The last one?"

The King nodded and suddenly pointed down. "Take a slow look and pay attention. In a short while, the picture will appear!"

Rody was aroused and he lowered his head to look at where the King was pointing.

The mercury below seemed to move...

Waves gradually appeared from the calm surface of the water. A picture then appeared from the ripples...

There were a few humans with spears, swords, and shields. Despair, anger, and sorrow could be seen on their faces. Standing in front of them was a man with white robes. With a single glance,

it could be seen from that person's clothing that he was the Emperor of the Shaka Empire.

Their anger were directed towards the sky.

In the sky, amongst the clouds, was a faint silhouette. The face and shape of the silhouette could not be seen clearly.

At the background of the scene was the half-built tower.

The Sky Tower!

After that, the picture started to change.!

A strange scene appeared in the world in the picture. One moment there was luxuriant snowfall and the next moment there was howling wind with torrential rain. It was then followed by raging fire for a while and moments later, clear blue skies. The body of the Emperor of Shaka Empire seemed to shine.

Rody's heart stirred as he strongly suppressed his inner shock.

That was because he was surprised to see the shocking truth from that constantly changing space.

Domain!

To be able to change the rules willfully is the sign of a Domain Master!

What really shocked Rody was that although the picture was very simple, it obviously showed a war!

Mankind once had a war against God?

A war had broken out before between mankind and the creator of this world, God?

Rody's mouth turned dry as he could not help but wait for the picture to change...

Immediately, the whole surface of the water shook and the ripple gradually dispersed. The water became calm again and the picture disappeared.

"What happened?" Rody looked up and hurriedly asked.

"That is the end!" The King lightly said, "Don't you know about the teachings of Gods?" The King sighed. "Although the teachings of Gods are lies, among the lies will occasionally be some truths."

"What did you see?" The King asked.

"Just the surface of the water." Rody closed his eyes and pondered with an astounded expression. He then said, "The world was corrupted in the presence of God and the earth was full of sins. God said, 'For rebelling against God, I will take back what I have bestowed! So, it will rain continuously for fifteen days and the earth will be flooded'."

Rody then dryly said, "I originally thought that that was just a myth of the legend, but it looked like the world being flooded was true."

The King then lightly said, "I have always thought it strange that the followers of Gods would leave behind the legend of the flood after erasing the history of the Shaka Empire. Now, I realize that it is a warning."

"Perhaps it is." Rody nodded. "It is warning for mankind that if we once again rebel against God, he will destroy the world again."

The King sighed. "God wanted to destroy the world, but the Shaka Empire had definitely not acquiesced. They had resisted. There were also some quite powerful humans...It was said that during the ancient times, there were some humans who were very powerful...Yet, they were still exterminated by God. The earth was flooded, and the culture of the Shaka Empire was completely destroyed. The splendid cultures of humans were erased, and the history of the Shaka Empire was completely erased! So, in the history of this world, the word 'Shaka' never existed."

Rody thought for a moment and suddenly asked, "How was that last mural left behind? If the earlier murals were left behind by

Your Majesty's ancestors, then the last mural must be a kind of sorcery. Besides that, according to your words, the world was flooded. How was this place preserved?"

The King sighed. "Did you see the Emperor of the Shaka Empire in that picture? He was the last Emperor of the Shaka Empire. He was the one who left behind that last picture. He did not die in the war against God. He was also the one who preserved this place."

The King paused for a moment and then said something that shocked Rody. "My ancestor, the last Emperor of the Shaka Empire was a Domain Master!" The King looked at Rody and continued, "At the time, if the records were correct, he was also mankind's first Domain Master!"

The King continued to speak. "The flood could submerge the earth and destroy civilization. However, it would never be able to destroy mankind. God also did not have any intentions of annihilating mankind. Next came the 'dark ages'. Mankind once again went through muddled warfare and developments. The teachings of Gods became a common religious belief on the continent...You already know what happened next. The rest of it could be learned from the existing books."

Rody did not care about the King's last words as he was still engrossed in the King's earlier words.

The first Domain Master!

Earlier Rody had already got a little bit of hint from the picture. He had already guessed that the fluctuating space represented a 'domain'.

"Your Majesty, what else did that ancestor leave behind?"

The King looked at Rody with a strange expression. "Rody, he did leave behind something. However, before I answer your question, you have to answer mine first!"

"Alright!" Rody did not hesitate to agree.

The King stared at Rody and asked, "My question is, are the rumors true? Did you really kill three Dragon Paladins? In that case, if I did not guess it wrong you have already reached the realm of a Domain Master, right?"

"Yes." Rody nodded. There was no meaning in hiding this from the King anymore.

The King nodded in satisfaction. He looked at Rody's eyes and said, "Well, my ancestors left behind a guide...but it only has two phrases."

Rody's heart began to beat faster as he waited for the King to reveal the answer.

The King suddenly gave a bitter smile and said, "However, I cannot understand the meaning of those two phrases."

"The first phrase is: Domain Power is the Greatest Path."

"The second phrase is: Does God really exist?"

Rody was stunned.

If the first phrase was a little strange, then the second phrase was ridiculous.

'Does God really exist?'

It would be a different story if someone else had said those words. However, the one who left behind those words was the last Emperor of Shaka. He was personally involved in the war between mankind and God. He had personally fought against God but finally he actually asked whether 'God really exists'.

'If God does not exist, then what was he fighting against? Was it air?'

Rody suddenly felt exceptionally peeved and could not help but started cursing.

The King also had a helpless expression. "Do you know where my ancestor went after leaving behind those two phrases?"

Before Rody could ask, the King pointed at a mural on the wall.

He pointed at the picture with the Sky Tower and said, "My ancestor went there!"

"The Sky Tower?" Rody frowned.

"Yes!" The King smiled with a profound meaning. "I forgot to tell you. The Sky Tower can still be found but..."

"But what?"

The King looked somewhat perplexed as he replied, "But that place now goes by a different name."

The King looked at Rody's eyes and opened his mouth to say a single word.

"Temple!"

Rody was silent since he left the cave. He seemed to be busy thinking of something.

The King sighed and gently patted Rody's shoulder as he whispered, "I understand your current feelings...I also felt this way for many days after seeing that. No matter who, he would have such a reaction after seeing that."

After leaving the cave, the King immediately brought Rody outside to the Royal Garden.

At present, both of them needed to take a good breather.

The King sighed and said, "Rody, you absolutely cannot tell anyone about what you saw here today! This includes Miss Nicole. I mean anybody!"

The King dispatched someone to escort Rody back to the Summer Palace. Everyone noticed Rody's silence. When faced with Mouse's questioning looks, Rody just barely smiled and gently embraced her without saying anything. He then walked back to his room.

Rody immediately noticed something wrong the moment he

closed the door. He heard a sound coming from behind him. He immediately sneered and turned around as he gently stretched out two fingers in a pinching motion.

His fingertips caught a thin blade. In front of him was the mysterious female Dragon Paladin, [Arslan](#).

"It's you again!" Rody let go of the blade and coldly said, "I let you go that day. Why are you here again? What is your purpose this time?"

As if ignoring the strength of the mysterious enemy, Rody slowly walked to his bedside and lazily lied down. He lightly said, "You better have something to impress me. Otherwise, I will not let you go this time."

Arslan smiled and playfully flicked the blade of her sword in her hand. She narrowed her seductive eyes to look at Rody and said, "Have you thought about my proposal that day? Prometheus is waiting for your answer. Are you going to be his ally or enemy? What is your answer?"

Rody coldly replied, "Ally or enemy? Hmph, do you have the ability to threaten me?"

Arslan's eyes flashed with a trace of anger. She slashed and shot out a blade of wind towards Rody. Rody who was lying down on the bed suddenly flashed and instantly disappeared.

With a loud crash, that big bed Rody was lying on was split into pieces by Arslan's blade of wind.

Rody's voice suddenly came from behind Arslan. At some point in time, his hand had already gently gripped Arslan's neck. He coldly asked, "Why must you always damage my bed every time you are here?"

Arslan instantly turned stiff as she felt her neck gripped by the cold hand of the other person.

Suddenly, Arslan issued a series of frivolous laughter and put

down her sword. "Well, kill me! But will you?"

Rody raised his eyebrows and gripped harder a little as he asked, "You think I wouldn't?"

Arslan coldly said, "As a Domain Master, you naturally have this ability, so why are you still talking nonsense? Just do it!" After that, she even deliberately leaned back onto Rody's body.

Rody was silent for a moment before he suddenly let go of his hand. He then slowly went to the front of Arslan and stared at that female Dragon Paladin with strange bright eyes.

"Today, your arrival is timely!" Rody slowly said, "I do not have the mood to kill anyone today."

Arslan smiled scornfully and asked, "Will you give me your answer now?"

Rody sighed and suddenly asked, "Can you tell me why the Dragons are cooperating with the Temple? All this while, I thought that dragons do not have any dealings with humans. Why do the Dragons want to intervene in human affairs?"

Arslan showed a complicated gaze and fiercely looked at Rody. "This is none of your business!"

"It is my business!" Rody sighed. "But we can discuss this later. Now, you can help me to convey a message to Your Excellency Prometheus."

Rody hesitated for a moment as he looked at Arslan. He then slowly said, "I am willing to go to the Temple to meet him!"

Arslan did not look surprised. She simply looked at Rody and coldly smiled, "As expected, Prometheus said you will not refuse."

Rody had a strange feeling and he said, "Oh? He anticipated this? Is he not afraid that I will refuse and then kill you, a Paladin of the Temple?"

Arslan gently smiled and replied, "If you want to kill me, you

would have done so last time!" Having said that, she raised her cloak and instantly disappeared.

"Another illusion!" Rody muttered. "These people really love trickery."

Rody looked at the damaged bed and shook his head. He lied down on the ground and looked at the ceiling.

The place where Sky Tower was had become the Temple. There was also 'Domain is the Greatest Path'.

This mystery is getting weirder.

Sky Tower. Literally, 'exceedingly high tower'.

During the last few chapters, in the raws Ars.Lan's name had a dot in the middle. However, it was missing in this chapter. And so, I decided to use Arslan instead.

Chapter 248: Mouse's New Clothes

The next day. Mouse was still asleep when she suddenly heard a soft voice calling out. "Hey!"

She suddenly opened her eyes in shock and shot out a magic light ball. She heard a familiar voice cry out in alarm and then she saw a big hand catch the ball of light. The sparkling ball of light gradually disappeared. Mouse then saw Rody's familiar face smiling wryly at her. "Idiot. Do you always indiscriminately attack people?"

Mouse then cried out in alarm and her face instantly turned bright red. She instinctively cried out as she retreated into the snow-white blanket. She then angrily asked, "Why are you in my room?"

Rody hurriedly covered her mouth and spoke in a soft voice, "Hush! Don't be so loud! Do you want others to hear you?"

Mouse blushed and started to think before she said, "You, why did you come into my room at this early hour? You...what do you want to do?" Her last few words were so soft that it could not be heard. Her heart was jumping wildly as she saw her lover enter her room early in the morning. She did not know if she was afraid or feeling expectant.

Rody felt charmed when he looked at Mouse's bashful eyes. He then whispered, "Alright. Quickly get up. Why don't we secretly get out and go for a walk?"

Mouse bit her lips feeling disappointed. She then whispered, "What did you say? Go out?"

Rody nodded. He saw Mouse's change in expression. Rody was panic-stricken but then guessed that it was a woman's psychology. His heart also warmed up and he lowered his head. He ignored the struggling Mouse and kissed her lips. He then gave a faint smile

"Alright. Idiot. I do not have any bad intentions. Quickly get up. Just be careful not to let anyone else find out. How about we climb over the walls?"

Mouse was surprised and whispered, "Secretly climb over the walls?"

Rody smiled. "Of course. The King has dispatched so many Royal Knights outside to protect us, but I am afraid it is mostly to monitor us. What would be the point if we get followed by a group of people after getting out?"

Mouse hesitated for a moment before she replied. "Alright." She wanted to get up but before she could do so, she realized that she was still wearing pajamas under the bed. Her face turned red as she said to Rody, "You go out first!"

Rody sighed and gave a wry smile. "I am unable to leave. I came in through the window. Am I supposed to jump out of the window? I suppose turning around is enough?" Rody then turned around and softly said, "Alright, hurry up."

Mouse bit her lips feeling irritated and affectionate. She finally jumped out of bed and ran barefooted to the clothes stand to take her black gown. But then she suddenly noticed something and did not put them on immediately.

Rody stood there and heard the sound of Mouse wearing clothes behind her. Although he pretended to be calm, his heart was also jumping wildly. He originally did not have any ulterior motives when he sneaked into Mouse's room. But now that he was standing there, he thought of Mouse changing her clothes and he could not help but imagine a few erotic images. After all, he was a young man with his lover behind him. Besides that, after having spent some good time with Nicole, he was no longer an ignorant and silly boy. He could not help but have such beautiful thoughts.

As his mind struggled, he heard Mouse speak, "Alright. You can turn around now."

Rody turned around to see Mouse who was beautifully and cunningly smiling at him. His eyes shone, and he could not help becoming muddleheaded.

Mouse was not wearing her usual set of black robes. At that moment, she was wearing a young girl's simple long flax-colored dress. The skirt also had a fold sewn into the hemline which made it look lovely. Her black and long satin-like hair was tied with a cord at the back of her head. She had a shy and joyous expression with a red face. She no longer looked like the cold and elegant Black Veil Saint. It was clearly the expression of a girl on a first date with her lover.

Rody looked at Mouse's face and was speechless. Mouse laughed. "What's wrong? Is it not nice?"

Rody took a deep breath and honestly replied, "It suits you!" He paused and added. "It looks really nice. I did not expect you to look so beautiful not wearing the black veil. Where did you get these clothes?"

Mouse smiled cunningly. "I found it here in the Summer Palace. Initially, I thought of making Seth wear it, but I ended up wearing it first."

The two of them looked at each other and laughed unknown to them that someone sleeping in another room, far away, sneezed.

Rody was a Domain Master and Mouse was the Black Veil Saint. Naturally, none of the Royal Knights would notice that both of them had sneaked out. Rody made Mouse wait outside while he went back to the Royal Knight's stables and stole two horses.

Mouse saw Rody gently leading two horses from afar. He waved his hand and ran over. Unable to stop herself from smiling, she said, "You have become a horse thief again."

Rody approached and helped Mouse up one horse. He then got on the other horse and softly replied, "I only stole horses twice in my

whole life. Both times were for you."

Mouse was startled and immediately remembered that Rody had stolen a horse from a tribal herdsman during her unfortunate time at the Great Moon Kingdom. When she remembered how both of them had to depend on each other to survive, she felt happy and her face turned warm and tender.

They both had the same feelings and they did not speak much. They rode together to the main street in the early, crisp morning. Along the way, there were a few pedestrians. They looked at the two horses and saw a well-dressed young robust man in uniform with a young and beautiful woman. They could not help but sigh secretly. With a single look, they could tell that it was a royal horse. They believed it was a young couple from the royal family going for a ride early in the morning.

The two of them traveled slowly. Although the buildings of the Sauron Kingdom were not as towering as the Imperial Capital of the Radiant Empire, they were quite unique. Almost all the buildings presented a rugged and bold feeling. There was no unnecessary flashy decoration. Even the prosperous nobles' buildings were just 'big and tall' only. It did not have exquisite, delicate architecture like those in the Radiant Empire. As Rody continued along the way, he suddenly sighed. He thought of how, right at this place, the civilization of the Shaka Empire was extinguished and forgotten. Who amongst the pedestrians here would know that they were standing on the land that once was an empire that promulgated freedom and equality?

Although Rody did not know the way, Mouse had long stayed in the Sauron Kingdom and was familiar with the roads. However, as the Saint of the Temple, she never had the opportunity to dress up like a normal girl and wander around the streets. Now, she looked at the pedestrians and the shops around her and felt that everything was interesting and fascinating. She was in high spirits. Looking at her, one would never be able to imagine her as a

powerful saint of the Temple.

Rody was moved as he looked at Mouse's soft and beautiful face. He grabbed a bunch of flowers from a florist and rummaged his pocket, but then immediately looked embarrassed.

His basic necessities had been provided by the King ever since he came to the Roland Continent. He did not have the common gold coins of the Roland Continent. He took out the Radiant Empire's gold coins and then pinched it into a lump before handing it over.

The merchant had never seen such a wealthy person before. Even in the capital of the Sauron Kingdom where a lot of influential nobles gather, he had never seen a person throw a piece of gold to buy a bunch of flowers.

Rody did not mind at all. He turned away after leaving the gold behind. He then gave Mouse the bunch of flowers and said, "It's for you."

Mouse blushed and quietly laughed. "I didn't expect you to know this."

Rody was embarrassed but he still quietly replied, "I have never given flowers to a girl before. This is my first time."

Mouse looked at the flowers in her hands and sighed. "Unfortunately, these are not tulips. It is hard to find the tulip flower in the southern part of the Roland continent so there is probably none here."

Mouse then laughed and asked, "Rody, do you know what flower this is?"

She saw Rody feeling at a loss and laughed. She let go of the reins and gently pulled Rody's hand before whispering. "This flower is the Sauron Kingdom's specialty. [It is called a 'Bloody Datu'](#)."

"Oh? I have never heard this name before." Rody, who thought it was strange, asked. "It is such a beautiful flower. Why does its name have the dreadful word 'bloody'?"

Mouse gave a wry smile and looked at the rising sun in the sky. She had a sad expression as she replied, "The name of this flower has an origin. In the legends, there was once a hero on the Roland Continent who went to the frontlines of an expedition in a certain war. Before leaving, he promised his lover that he would come back alive. Unfortunately, as the war went on year after year, she who was waiting at home did not hear a single news about her lover. Finally, the war was won, and the hero returned triumphantly only to find that his lover had fallen ill from fear and died. The hero knelt in front of the grave of his lover and cried. His tears fell to the ground and these beautiful flowers immediately grew out of it..."

Mouse then sighed and said, "That is why this flower is also called 'Hero's Tears'."

Rody took a deep breath. He smiled and said, "This is a very sad and beautiful story. Unfortunately, I have never heard of it before. Otherwise, I would not have bought you such a tragic flower."

"No!" Mouse smiled sweetly and replied, "I feel happy that you gave me flowers."

Rody laughed and gently held Mouse's hands. Mouse then laughed and suddenly said, "I told you such a nice story. You must also tell me a story."

Rody froze for a moment and smiled wryly. "I don't know how to tell stories..."

Mouse laughed. "How could that be? Didn't you hear any stories when you were younger?"

"When I was young..." Rody seemed to stare blankly for a moment.

At that moment, the two of them had arrived at the capital square. As it was morning, the square seemed desolate. Rody kept the horses at the side. He then pulled Mouse into the square and

looked for stone steps to sit on.

After a moment of silence, Rody sighed. "There is nothing to tell about when I was younger. It is very simple..." Rody pointed at the crowds at the streets and said, "I was just like them."

Mouse pulled at the corners of Rody's clothes and said, "No! I want to hear it!"

Rody recalled his memories and slowly said, "I...I have never seen my mother's face. Ah, maybe I have seen it before, but I have completely forgotten it as I was too young. My father was a warrior. He was a very low ranked warrior. There was also no money at home. On normal days, my father was a bodyguard to a wealthy person or [a hired person](#) to make money. As his swordsmanship was not too good, he could not earn a lot of money."

After sighing, Rody laughed. "After that, my father brought me to the Imperial Capital hoping to earn more money. When I was young, my father hoped that I would become a powerful warrior. At a young age, I followed my father to practice swordsmanship. Although now that I think about it, my father was not too good with swordsmanship. However, I truly worshipped him when I was young and felt that he was very powerful. That is why I trained very hard to become as powerful as my father."

Mouse gently sighed and smiled. She slowly leaned her head on Rody's shoulders and whispered, "Right now, you are very powerful. Domain Master. It would be hard to find a person more powerful than you."

Rody thought of Sky when he heard this. Although both of them had strong domain powers, Sky had been a Domain Master for many years and would be superior to Rody in understanding and experience. After that, another figure that Rody could not beat flashed in his mind.

That figure was the Pope Corsica VI.

During the turmoil at the palace, the Pope and had used the 'God's Vanquish'. This scenario and the power of the spell was vivid in Rody's memories. Even Master Autumn that was a Domain Master could not oppose the Pope and the 'God's Vanquish'. It was likely that Rody himself would be unable to defeat the Pope.

Mouse was a smart woman. She noticed that Rody's demeanor had changed and immediately guessed that she had caused Rody to have some unpleasant thoughts. She immediately laughed and changed the topic. "What happened then?"

"After that?" Rody gave a bitter smile. "My father had a tough time in the Imperial Capital. The Imperial Capital was the center of the Empire and there were many more stronger warriors. My father's swordsmanship could still make a little bit of money in our hometown. but it is not worth anything in the Imperial Capital that was full of masters. That was why we had difficult lives."

Although Rody's tone was plain, Mouse could feel he was not very calm. An unlucky warrior without a source of income with a young child struggling at the bottom of the society in the Imperial Capital. That kind of life was not something Mouse could imagine. However, Mouse was holding Rody's hand and could feel that his fingers trembled a little.

She immediately clenched Rody's hand tightly and said, "Your father would be proud of you."

Rody sighed and replied. "Hopefully..." Suddenly, Rody turned around to look at Mouse and said, "Did you know? My father was a devout believer."

"Oh?" Mouse could not help but feel strange.

Since she got acquainted with Rody, she could see that he did not think highly of God's teachings. His actions were all outrageous and blasphemous. This person grew up in a devout family?

"Yes!" Rody whispered. His voice trembled as he replied, "My

father would go and pray every few days. Even though life was not too good, he would still donate a little bit of money for 'atonement tax'. He hoped to exchange it for God's blessings. However, God did not seem to have heard his prayers."

Mouse started to regret leading Rody to talk about that. She avoided looking into his eyes and hugged his neck, oblivious to the stares around them. She softly said, "It's alright. That has already passed."

Rody shook his head. "I was fourteen years old when my father died. He was a very good and kind person. He had never committed any crime and was generous. He died of illness; we did not have money to cure his illness. He could only go to the church and ask the priest for some holy water. But then...hmph, did you know? The holy water needs to be bought. Although my father was devout and had constantly paid the atonement tax, God did not open up his arms when my father needed it the most."

"That is why you don't believe in God." Mouse sighed.

"I don't believe in it." Rody lightly said, "I have never believed in God's teachings and I despise the priests! Hmph! They wear robes made from exquisite cloth, live in large spacious homes and eat exquisite dishes! They then tell the suffering people to endure the suffering for it is the fate given by God!"

Mouse remained silent. Although Rody's voice was not loud, she could feel the deep hatred from his voice.

Rody gave out a long sigh and suddenly laughed. "I am so stupid. Why am I telling you this? I just wanted to spend a quiet day with you, but I have destroyed the atmosphere."

"No." Mouse's voice sounded faint as she whispered into Rody's ears. "I am willing to listen."

Rody laughed and kissed Mouse on the cheek. He then softly said, "Alright, then I will continue the story for you to listen."

After clearing his throat, Rody continued, "When I was fourteen, my father passed away leaving me alone. The things he left behind for me was not much. He only left behind a sword, a worn-out house, and a wooden trunk. I sold everything and only earned four gold coins. In accordance with father's wishes, I looked for a way to enter the Imperial Academy. I wanted to become a warrior. A superb warrior! That was because it was the hope my father placed in me. I was lucky that my father taught me swordsmanship since my childhood. Although the lessons were not too deep, it gave me a good foundation. Besides that, the teacher at the academy said that I was very talented. So, I successfully passed the assessment and became a civilian student using the four gold coins as the tuition fees."

At that moment, Mouse suddenly whispered. "But you would not have any more money. How did you survive?"

Rody laughed proudly and replied, "Thanks to the Great Sage Dandong of our Radiant Empire, he had set the rules when he was the principal of the Imperial Academy. All of us civilians would be provided housing to live in. Although the house was worn-out, in my opinion, it was already very good. As for food, I have a different way."

At this moment, the haziness on Rody's face disappeared as he proudly said, "Our Radiant Empire had an abundance of a type of fish! This fish was called a pufferfish! It had a large body and a small tail with a colorful and beautiful body. However, nobody dared to eat this fish as it was poisonous! Those that eat it would die from the poison!" After pausing for a moment, Rody proudly said, "Even the bravest people did not dare to eat pufferfish. However, I dared to eat it!"

"What?" Mouse turned pale. Although the person that ate it was in front of her, Mouse had heard of the poison in a pufferfish. A young boy had unexpectedly dared to do the thing that others would turn pale just talking about it.

Rody laughed seemingly pleased with himself and said, "Others do not know but I do. When I was young, I learned that pufferfish could be eaten but they must be cooked longer. The poison of the fish would only disappear after cooking it for a long time. [When the poison is gone, you would be able to eat it.](#)"

Rody then smiled and softly continued, "Because I know this secret, I seldom go hungry. There are a lot of pufferfish in the rivers of the Imperial Capital. Nobody dares to eat it, but I dare to. Nobody would fight with me for it and it is free. It is just that others thought of me as a monster when they found out. However, it did not matter. I grew up looking ugly. I originally had a large birthmark on my face and I was already used to being treated like a monster."

Mouse did not laugh. It was as if she could see an ugly youth fishing alone at the riverbank and then eating the lethally poisonous fish in front of the disgusted and horrified gaze of others.

She was in a daze as she looked at the strong man in front of her and tears welled in her eyes. Mouse had been chosen by the Temple when she was young. She showed remarkable talent after entering the Temple and became a favored disciple. When she first met with misfortune in the Northwest, she was terrified. However, the man at her side had remained calm and took care of her. It probably was related to how he suffered during his childhood.

Rody gently held Mouse's hand and softly said, "Ah, although the puffer fish was delicious, it was still extremely poisonous. It could not always be so smooth sailing. One day, I was finally poisoned. Fortunately, I had a good friend. His name was Star." Rody sighed. "He was a very good person. He did not have any money, but he was a magician. He stole some holy water from a magician teacher in the academy to save me. He was then punished by the teacher. Now that I think about it, he was my only friend in the Imperial Academy. Unfortunately, he was probably still at the academy.

When he graduates, I must properly reward him. Right now, I do not want to look for him. That is because I now realized that having that kind of peaceful life is a kind of happiness."

Rody then gave a wry smile and said, "For example, right now I have a lot of authority and earned a lot of attention. However, I am burdened with more and more trouble. There are times I wish I could go back to becoming a small warrior that need not be concerned about anything."

"Rody...you..." Mouse finally noticed something wrong.

Today, Rody had secretly brought Mouse out. Mouse had already thought it was strange. Rody's words and actions also felt weird. Another thing that made Mouse had a peculiar feeling was her instinct. It was as if she was faintly aware that something was wrong.

Rody shook his head indicating for Mouse not to speak. He stretched out his hand to hold Mouse's face, touching her tousled hair. He suddenly said, "Mouse, I still remembered that at the Northwest grasslands you told me something about the Domain Masters. You said these people have achieved the highest level of existence that is almost like God. Am I right?"

Mouse was startled. "Yes. What...what about it?"

Rody's eyes looked perplexed as he said, "In that case, how long can a person with strong domain powers live. Do you know?"

Mouse was speechless and silent for a while. She then said, "I do not know. That is because a person with strong domain power only exists in legends. I have reached the level of a Great Practitioner and is still one step away from obtaining a domain. However, I know that this one step is a huge gap! At the Roland Continent, there were many that had reached the level of a Great Practitioner, but I have never heard of any that became a Domain Master. Even if there was one, it only exists in the legends."

Rody faintly smiled and replied, "I know the answer to this question! That is because I know a Domain Master who has lived for hundreds of years!"

"Oh?" Mouse exclaimed.

Rody becoming a Domain Master was already a miracle to Mouse. For something that had existed only in legends to happen in front of her was already something unbelievable to Mouse. However, Rody said that he knew another Domain Master. Did that mean that, in this era, there were two people with strong domain powers? Had Mouse known of the existence of Master Autumn, she would have been even more surprised.

Rody nodded and told the story about the fatty Sky. He then laughed and said, "If I am not wrong, that fatty must be the Paladin that defected from the Roland Temple hundreds of years ago!"

"Sky..." Mouse was extremely shocked and had to try very hard to suppress the shock in his heart. She swallowed her saliva and asked, "Paladin Sky...he is still alive?"

Rody endured laughing and replied, "He is alive. It could even be said that he is living happily."

Mouse was speechless for a long time—immortality. This miracle was unimaginable even for Mouse who stood at the peak of the sorcerers' realm.

Suddenly Mouse thought of an important question and asked, "Are you saying Domain Masters would not die from age?"

Rody sighed. Mouse was truly herself; she could immediately see the crux of the problem.

He nodded and replied, "Yes. If I am not wrong, as long as you have acquired domain powers, you can break the rules of the world, including the rules of life!"

He suddenly looked up. The sky was sunny and had white clouds. A hazy look covered Rody's face. "What I find strange was that

even if it was just a legend, Domain Masters have appeared in history. If Domains Masters are immortal, then..." He turned to look at Mouse with a questioning look. "Why did all these ancient Domain Masters not appear in the present? Where did they go? Have they all died?"

Mouse thought for a bit and then shook her head and said, "That should not be right. As people with domain powers, who could have the ability to kill them? As they are immortal, it is also unlikely they'd die from old age."

"That was what I was thinking about the entire time last night." Rody smiled bitterly. "Where have they gone then?"

Mouse suddenly had a strong sense of unease. Although there were no signs and evidence, she started to feel panicked as if Rody would suddenly leave her.

She almost instinctively hugged Rody's arm.

Rody froze for a moment. He gently held Mouse and murmured.

"Domain is the Greatest Path."

As if confirming the uneasiness in Mouse's heart, Rody suddenly looked into Mouse's eyes and gently asked. "Mouse...do you think there is a day we would have to separate?"

"What did you say?" Mouse turned pale.

Rody shook his head. His heart turned soft as he saw Mouse's panicked expression and kissed her on her cheek. He lightly said, "Don't be like that. I am simply feeling uncertain. I can't help thinking about this problem." He sighed and calmly said, "Did you know? I have thought of a lot of things last night. The more I thought about it, the more terrified I became. Domain Master. It is such a proud name. However, why have all the people in history who mastered domain powers disappeared? Had Sky not hidden himself in a cave on a remote mountain where the Mystic Dragon was sealed, it may also happen to him. Hmph. What is the

significance of a domain?"

As if he felt Mouse's trembling, Rody held her tighter and whispered, "Mouse, I have a lot of doubts. Right now, I could only voice them to you. I am not sure who else I could discuss this with except you. I...I have an absurd thought. Perhaps this thought could help explain my earlier questions of where all the Domain Masters have gone to."

"Hm?"

Rody gave a bitter smile and asked. "Have you ever seen a farmer's pig? A farmer would raise a lot of pigs. They would carefully feed and fatten the pig. After a period of time, there would be one or two particularly larger and fatter ones. The fatter ones would then be next to be slaughtered." Rody paused for a moment and laughed mockingly. He then said, "I was wondering if a person with a strong domain power would be similar. The Domain Masters compared with the normal humans are just the fatter pigs. As for the pig farmers..." Rody looked up and pointed to the sky. "That would be those people from heaven."

"No!" Mouse suddenly screamed as her expression changed. She pulled Rody's hand and said, "You...why are you telling me this today? Did you take me out today just to tell me this?" A hint of anger flashed through her eyes.

Rody shook his head. His eyes were gentle like water as he hugged Mouse and said, "No! I have no intentions of leaving you, Mouse. In fact, I am more afraid of separation compared to you! However, I cannot ignore this matter."

"I...I do not want to hear you talk about these terrible speculations!" Mouse bit her lips.

Rody felt touched. He suddenly said, "Alright. Even if I do not mention these things, you must remember that Domain Masters are immortal but...you cannot...in the future..."

Mouse suddenly broke free from Rody's embrace and looked at him earnestly. She had a determined expression and then said, "Even for a meteor, it dies after striking but that glittering instant itself is happiness."

The beautiful female sorcerer moved over and kissed Rody on the lips. She then laughed and said, "If love is a poison, you and I are pufferfishes."

On that sunny morning, a young man and a young woman were embracing and kissing each other in the square of the Sauron Kingdom's capital city...

血色曼陀. 'Xuese mantuo'. '血色' is 'blood or bloody'. 曼陀草 (草 means 'grass or herb') is actually datura stramonium (commonly called the thornapple or the moon flower). Hence, 血色曼陀 can be translated as 'Bloody Datura' or 'Bloody Stramonim'.

A legal 'thug'/handyman like the guards at Nedis' pub. Beating people within the law.

I did some research on pufferfish. Whatever you do, do not try what Rody did. You would die even if you have cooked it a long time. The FDA says that cooking or freezing would not destroy the poison.

Chapter 249: Swine

The two of them were sitting in the square enjoying a rare leisure and intimate moment.

Suddenly, Rody heard loud noises coming from a distant corner of the square. He saw a few Royal Knights arrive looking vigilant. They were looking around carefully as if they were searching for something.

"Look." Rody gave an eye signal to Mouse.

Mouse smiled gently and covered her mouth. "They probably noticed that their horses had gone missing and had come out to look for the horse thief." She paused for a moment then explained, "There is a horse market in the vicinity of the capital. Quite often, there are some horse thieves selling the stolen horses. Those knights who have lost their horses probably are heading there now."

Rody laughed and pulled Mouse along. They went to their horses and quietly left the square in the opposite direction.

With their identities, it was naturally not necessary to stealthily run away. However, the two of them felt that it was more interesting to do so. They giggled all the way as they fled on their horses, leaving behind a series of cheerful laughter on the streets. The two of them were having fun and were not prepared when a carriage dashed out obliquely from the corner of a crossroad.

Rody's horse was frightened when both sides almost crashed into each other. Fortunately, Rody had good riding skills. He forcefully pulled the reins of his horse. The horse reared on its hind legs and neighed.

Rody had just stopped their horses while the driver of the carriage was seized with terror. Fortunately, he hurriedly stopped the carriage. However, the inertia caused the carriage to be thrown

off. It swept sideways on the ground and almost turned over.

When both sides finally stopped, a voice immediately shouted in rage, "Bastard! How do you ride your horse?"

Before his voice stopped, a whip had already been lashed towards Rody.

Rody frowned slightly and moved to one side. The whip missed him. Rody did not want to stir up trouble. Besides that, he and Mouse had been running away wildly and carelessly. Because of that, he had almost caused an accident.

However, the other party was not forgiving. When he saw that Rody was 'bold' enough to escape, he shouted loudly. A few knights in bright armors quickly caught up from behind the carriage. They immediately surrounded Rody and Mouse as they lifted their spears.

"What happened? Are you trying to kill me?" A sharp and harsh roar came from the carriage. The driver immediately rushed to the side of the carriage and respectfully trembled. "Mi—Miss...It's two 'blind' fellows blocking the way."

"Hmph!" With a deep, cold harrumph, the voice of that 'Miss' from inside the carriage said, "Give each person twenty whips. I still need to hurry back."

The driver immediately turned to look at the surrounded Rody and shouted, "The two of you, listen carefully! Stand there obediently and do not move! Our Miss said to let you go after twenty whips each."

The driver flipped the whip twice. He sneered and walked towards Rody and Mouse. When he approached, he was startled by Mouse's appearance. He had never seen such a beautiful woman before. He involuntarily showed an infatuated gaze and gave a strange smile. "That...it is not good to whip such a beautiful young girl. You, boy over there, just you alone will be whipped."

On both sides, the guards who looked like knights moved aside to open up a path. When the driver went up to the front of Rody and saw that Rody was still on his horse, he asked, "What's the matter? Do you need me to drag you off the horse?"

Mouse's expression had long sunken. She had always been a proud and indifferent person. Her warm feelings were only towards Rody. She had never shown a nice mien to anyone else. When she saw that the other party was being unreasonable, her eyes had already revealed a little bit of anger. Rody understood that if Mouse really became angry, not just these few Royal Knights but those in the whole capital city would not be able to stop her. He immediately gently grasped Mouse's hand and shook his head. He then loudly said, "Just now was our fault. We almost overturned your carriage. We apologize. What else can we do? Besides that, your carriage was also rushing on the main street. Otherwise, we would not have crashed into you. If you really want to point fingers, it is not just our fault only."

"What impudence!" The driver had an arrogant expression. "From your accent, I believe you are not a local! Don't you even recognize the Senior Prime Minister's carriage? There is nobody in this whole city who would dare to block this carriage!" After he finished speaking, he impatiently took his whip and lashed out.

A tragic cry was heard. Nobody saw how Rody moved but they saw the driver crash to one side. He fell to the ground and rolled a few rounds. After that, he cried loudly as he held his head.

"Audacious!" This time, the one who shouted was a middle-aged knight amongst the few guards. With a gloomy expression, he shouted, "Seize him!"

The knights thrust their spears forward. They did not really want to kill Rody but only wanted to use their spears to force Rody not to move. Rody narrowed his eyes as they became stern.

Immediately, there was the continuous sound of metal clashing.

One by one, the knights cried out in pain. Their spears had broken into two and fell to the ground. Their hands were bleeding. They also did not know what strange method that young Rody was using, as all of their spears were instantly broken and fell on the ground. Those knights only felt a large force come from the spear. Their muscles felt painful, causing them to involuntarily loosen their grip and drop their spears.

Rody gently clapped his hands and lightly said, "Just now, our horses were too fast and collided with you. We have already apologized. Let's forget it. We are also in a hurry!" He had earlier heard the other party say something about the 'Senior Prime Minister' and assumed those people to be the Senior Prime Minister's family members. He allowed some leeway and did not force the issue.

Otherwise, with Rody's identity and strength, for them to have actually attacked him, it would not have just ended up with broken weapons only.

"Hey! That is a good trick!" An angry voice came from the carriage. The door was then heavily pushed open and that 'Miss' jumped out from inside the carriage.

When Rody looked at that 'Miss' in front of him, he was rendered speechless from shock.

It was nothing, but the appearance of that 'Miss' was weird. She was not dressed in a noblewoman's clothing but a mighty armor. She also carried a sword.

Besides that, it was not a slender decorative sword used by nobles. Instead, it was a standard double-edged sword.

He looked at that 'Miss' again and could not help but wanted to laugh.

That was not because the woman was ugly. In all fairness, she had fair skin, bright piercing eyes, white teeth and red lips. Her

long hair fluttered in the wind.

However...however, she was too 'well developed'.

Her original pair of bright shining eyes were squeezed on her face into two thin lines. If a person did not look at them carefully, they would not realize that the two thin lines were her eyes. Her straight nose was also squeezed by her fat cheeks until it looked like the bulb of a garlic.

Her two lips were also bright red and alluring. However, they were somewhat too fat and thick. It was fine if she did not laugh but at that moment, she was sneering...Her smile was terrible. No matter how, it looked like a bloody basin.

As for her body...one could reluctantly regard it as a body with curves. Unfortunately, it was seven to eight times larger compared to an average woman's body. If her body were to be divided into seven or eight parts, each separate part could be regarded as graceful.

As for her waist ... In all fairness, she had no waist. It could be regarded as three or four pails.

That lady stood in front of Rody's horse like a mountain of meat. It could not be said that she was too fat. She was barely the size of four to five pigs only.

As for her age...She was not very old. She was only old enough to be Rody's mother.

Looking at the mountain of meat in front of him, Rody could not help but sigh. He suddenly admired the carriage driver.

The carriage was carrying this big 'Miss' and yet he could actually move it so quickly...with only a few horses. Looks like the strength of the ironwood of Roland Continents truly well deserved its reputation.

As if she felt Rody's gaze, that 'Miss' shouted, "What are you looking at?" She then intimidated Rody by ruthlessly slashing with

the broadsword in her hand.

That sword was not small nor light. At the very least, Rody remembered that among those he knew only the former robust guard of the Tulip Family, Randt, used such a large and heavy broadsword.

However, such a large broadsword when placed in the hand of that burly 'Miss' was only as small as an embroidery needle.

Rody immediately looked away. Because of his former appearance, Rody would never mock another person for their peculiar appearance. He cleared his throat and nodded his head from on top of his horse. "We were in a hurry and accidentally crashed into your carriage. Let me apologize first. Everybody is busy. I hope Miss will not pursue this anymore...As for your men's broken weapons, I am willing to compensate." After that, Rody's hand reached into his bosom.

However, he did not get anything. He did not have any gold coins with him. He had already used the few gold coins from the Empire to buy the flowers that morning. Right now, he was also unable to secretly pinch a few gold pieces out of the gold coins.

That 'Miss' saw Rody's awkward expression and immediately knew his thoughts. She then laughed. Rody smiled wryly and said, "I did not bring any money with me. Are you from the Senior Prime Minister's home? I will send the money there later."

"State your name! Sire! You have wounded my men! I challenge you in accordance with the tradition of the Roland knights!" The woman's voice was low, but it could not conceal her arrogance. "I am the daughter of the Prime Minister of Sauron Kingdom. My name is Rulan."

Rulan?

With great effort, Rody suppressed the urge to laugh.

A large and rough murderous woman of over forty years of age

holding a broadsword that was only used by robust men said her name was Rulan...

Rody frowned and softly said, "Miss Rulan, we have accidentally collided with you. I suggest we forget about it...His Excellency the Senior Prime Minister and I..."

Mouse had become impatient. With her identity, she was not bothered even if they were the Senior or Junior Prime Minister. Even the King had to be polite to her. When had she ever have to accept such annoying people? She groaned with annoyance and coldly said, "It is just an accident. You all were being unreasonable first! Are the people from the Sauron Kingdom capital so bossy?"

The moment Mouse spoke, she immediately attracted the attention of Rulan. Rulan was dazzled for a moment. She looked at the charming woman who was somewhat angry in front of her. However, Mouse's anger could not conceal her beauty.

Miss Rulan's eyes lit up. Her eyes showed that she was clearly bewitched. Her expression became somewhat wretched and looked like a pig's.

With her beauty Mouse was used to this kind of look from men who saw her. However, at that moment, these eyes and expressions came from a woman. For some reason, Mouse suddenly felt chilly.

Sure enough, Rulan did not even conceal the swallowing of her saliva as she glared at Mouse. She took a deep breath and gave a strange smile. "I did not expect that the capital still has such a woman...Hmph, how about this, if you were to give me this woman, I will spare you your life."

Those words made Rody dumbstruck. If it were an ordinary noble having such wicked thoughts after seeing a beautiful woman, it would still be considered normal. However, that 'Miss' seemed to be fond of women.

Mouse's eyes quivered in anger and she had already clenched her fist. From Rody's understanding of her that the Black Veiled Saint was on the verge of throwing a fireball and blast away the lascivious woman.

Rody coldly shouted, "Senseless!"

Rody no longer wanted to bother with the other party. He coldly looked at Rulan and pulled the reins of his horse to leave. With his strength, she would not be able to stop him.

"Stop!" Rulan shouted. She looked at Rody and Mouse with her squinted eyes then looked at the horses that they were riding. Suddenly, her eyes lit up and she smiled. "From your accent, you are not locals. However, your horses are clearly the Royal Knight's warhorses! Speak quickly, where did these horses come from? The law of the Sauron Kingdom states that only royalty and the Royal Knights are allowed to ride on these horses. You are probably not from the Royal Family! Otherwise, I would have recognized you!" She then laughed coldly and said, "Just now, I saw the Royal Knights in front doing a search. Is it related to you?"

At that moment, about ten cavalymen wearing the armor of the Royal Knights rode quickly towards them and neatly jumped off their horses.

Rody felt awkward. That was because he thought that the other party was looking for the horse thieves...Although he was not afraid of them, he would still lose face if they found out that the dignified envoy of the Empire had stolen their horses.

However, the knights did not even spare Rody a glance. The leader of those knights bowed to Rulan and respectfully said, "Your Royal Highness the Consort, His Majesty has ordered for you to return quickly. Tonight, there will be a banquet at the palace to entertain some honored guests. You must be present."

Consort?

Rody's eyes opened wide.

Was she the daughter of the Senior Prime Minister, the Consort?

Was she really the King's wife?

For the first time in his life, Rody finally felt admiration and sympathy for the King.

Chapter 250: Enemies are Destined to Meet

Miss Rulan had that impatient look on her face, she frowned, curled her lips and replied coldly, "Got it!"

Though the Royal Knights behaved in a respectful manner, they did not move a single step, standing there stiff as ramrods. Rulan froze for a moment and fumed. "Why are you still standing here! Are you trying to tell me that I should follow you back now?"

The Royal Knights dared not to reply, but their facial expression was clear that the answer was yes. Rulan raised her eyebrows, bursting with anger. "Go away! I will go back when it is time, so keep your noses out of my business!"

The Royal Knights exchanged glances and knelt down on their knees. Their leader spoke respectfully, "Your Highness, His Majesty has ordered us to bring you back immediately lest we be punished if we failed to do so. Please have mercy on us..."

"Exactly!" A smart-looking fellow standing next to him chipped in. "His Majesty said, although the Princess has a fiery temper, she certainly would not make things hard for her servants. After all, we are just following orders."

Rulan had an unpleasant look on her face as these knights were kneeling all around her blocking off her way. She was thinking of whipping her way through, but as more and more onlookers gathered, she decided that she did not want to embarrass herself in front of a crowd.

She cleared her throat and said haughtily, "That being the case, I shall go back with you lest you get scolded." Having said that, she glared at the leader of the Royal Knights. "Get my carriage ready!"

A few men immediately went to get her carriage. Rulan gave Rody and Mouse a hard stare, suddenly she raised her hand and called out to the lead officer of the Royal Knights. She whispered to

him, "The horses they are riding belong to the Royal Knights Army, you should interrogate and investigate them properly! Arrest them and guard them well, report back to me when there's an update."

She took another good look at Mouse without any attempt to conceal the admiration in her eyes. She then lowered her head and boarded the carriage.

Soon after Rulan's carriage left, the Royal Knights surrounded Rody. Rody frowned and was about to speak when the leading officer barked at his men, "Idiots! How dare you treat this man with such disrespect! Disperse immediately!"

The officer split up his men and stood before Rody, his attitude was respectful as he spoke to him in a low voice. "My Lord, I apologize as these men do not recognize you. You may leave as you wish, we will definitely not stop you."

Rody and Mouse were stunned, he looked at the officer and asked. "You know who I am?"

The officer chuckled. "Of course I do, My Lord. I am the Deputy Regimental Commander of the Royal Knights Regiment. I was present during the peace treaty signing ceremony. However, the Princess was not aware of your identity, hence causing such a scene."

Rody 'ah-ed' and smiled. "Good to hear that." He did some quick thinking and asked again. "That lady just now, is she the King's consort? The Senior Prime Minister's daughter?"

The officer gave him a wry smile. "Yes, Her Highness has an unpredictable temper, please do not be offended. "

Rody nodded. "The Princess wants us arrested, but you are letting us go. What would you do if she finds fault with you?"

The officer's lips curled into an odd smile. "You are a Special Envoy, we wouldn't have the nerves to detain you. Even if the

Princess gets mad, she would not put the blame on us. Just now I did not disclose your identity because I feared that the Princess would lose her temper, causing an awkward situation, hehe...Certain troubles should be avoided whenever possible...."

Rody stole a glance at this officer thinking to himself. What a smart man. He did not reveal my identity so as to avoid putting himself in a difficult situation!

The officer was indeed smart, he immediately knew what Rody was thinking from his facial expression. He smiled awkwardly and said. "Our Princess tends to forget things very quickly. One moment she will be thinking of a matter, but the next moment she would have totally forgotten about it. Furthermore...when we are on duty in the Imperial Palace, we would avoid Her Highness at all cost. It just happened that we are on duty today otherwise we don't get to meet Her Highness that often, hardly once every half year. When she finally recalls this matter, it would have long past."

When he finished, he led Rody's horse over with a smile on his face. "My Lord, please mount your horse. Would you like us to escort you back?"

Rody pondered for a moment before replying. "Never mind, we will go back on our own."

The officer replied with a smile. "My Lord, I suggest you return to the Summer Palace as soon as possible. We passed by that place on our way here, it seemed like there's some chaos going on in there. Moreover, His Majesty will be holding a banquet in the Imperial Palace tonight. There is a high chance that you will be summoned to an audience. "

Rody nodded and bade goodbye to this smart officer. He then went back to the Summer Palace with Mouse.

Sure enough, the Royal Knights guarding the Summer Palace were already aware of the stolen horses and were conducting a strict search in the compound. Their task was to guard the

Summer Palace, so when such an incident occurred, the first thing that came to their mind was to go check on the Special Envoy's safety. When they could not find Rody, chaos broke out.

The higher-ranking officials were aware of the several attempted assassinations of the Special Envoy. Now, not only the horses were stolen but the Special Envoy too went missing. They immediately dispatched their men to search for the missing Special Envoy.

When Rody and Mouse returned, the leader of the knights was already bathed in sweat. Rody was apologetic for causing him such distress, so he lowered his voice and said to him, "I forgot to tell you and your men that I was going out for a walk early in the morning."

Ignoring the officer who shook his head sighing and giving thanks to God for his return, Rody and Mouse entered the Summer Palace. Old Mark and Seth were not worried at all about Rody's disappearance, and when they saw both Rody and Mouse came in together, they gave the couple an 'I-knew-it' look.

Rody ignored them, but Mouse blushed and silently withdrew her hands from Rody's grip.

Moments later, a royal servant of the Imperial Palace came forth to seek Rody as anticipated. He was here to inform that the Earl was invited by the King to participate in the Imperial Palace's banquet tonight. In short, it was a farewell banquet for the ambassadors of the various kingdoms as they would be leaving for their home kingdoms soon.

Looking back at how he extorted hundreds of warships from these people on the day the truce pact was signed, Rody thought he should at least bid farewell to them. Hence, he agreed to attend the banquet.

As the Special Envoy of the Radiant Empire, Earl Rody's attendance at the banquet was inevitable and ultimately 'Miss Nicole' would be attending the banquet too as his companion.

Mouse cheered up and went on to torment Seth for the afternoon.

When the night came, Rody and the 'glamorous Miss Nicole' arrived side by side at the Sauron Kingdom's Imperial Palace for the night banquet.

This time around, the night banquet was held in the Imperial Palace's largest hall. A group of royal servants led the way to the hall, and as Rody and Seth entered, they came upon a boisterous crowd.

At a corner in the hall, a group of women in white gowns was gently playing harps as one of them sang softly. The hall echoed with her melodious singing but none of the guests were paying attention to it. As Rody walked through the door, he immediately caught everybody's attention.

Rody's eyes swept around the hall. Just a few steps away, nearest to him, were His Royal Highness the Crown Prince Aven and the Senior Prime Minister, whispering in low voices.

Other than that, the rest of the guests were ambassadors from the various kingdoms of the Roland Continent.

Aven's eyes lit up when he saw Seth. He took a big step forward and laughed aloud. "Miss Nicole, Lord Rody, I've been waiting for your arrival for quite some time."

Rody glanced at the overzealous Crown Prince and thought to himself, "It is true that he was waiting for Seth but definitely not for me."

He happily left Seth to be with the Crown Prince. Rody caught sight of the Senior Prime Minister who was squinting and smiling at him. He nodded at him out of courtesy.

"My Lord, we were talking about you just now." The Senior Prime Minister's lips curled slightly. "You definitely scared the hell out of the Royal Knights earlier today."

Rody gave him a weak smile. "I was fascinated by the scenery in

the Imperial City of Sauron, so I went out for a walk."

The Senior Prime Minister kept his voice low as he asked. "I heard that you had a slight conflict with my daughter?"

Rody frowned but quickly put on a smile. "It was just a small misunderstanding, the horse I was riding accidentally collided with Her Highness' carriage."

The Senior Prime Minister nodded his head and ended the conversation. Though he was smiling, he had a profound aura around him. Rody felt very uncomfortable being stared at by him, but he could not find a suitable topic to talk about.

Tonight's banquet was very grand indeed. Groups of royal servants brought out an array of exquisite food, and the tableware too was extravagant. Rody reached for the silver wineglass and noticed the liquid inside it glittered like gold with a rich scent.

The Crown Prince sitting next to him smiled and explained. "I specially brought this wine here today, it's very precious and you don't normally get to drink this anywhere else. His Majesty got hold of the news that I acquired some stocks yesterday and ordered me to send some over for the banquet. Please try it, Lord Rody. If you like it, I'll have my men send some over to you later."

Rody smiled and took a sip. His face immediately had a weird look on it. At the same time, a seductive voice came from behind, asking. "My Lord, how was the wine?"

Upon hearing this familiar voice, Rody's face twitched. He turned around and saw that coquettish Nedis standing behind him, looking at him with a wide grin.

This seductive woman was acting unusual today by being clothed conservatively—though one could not help but notice the gown was a bit too tight, and the thin fabric could not conceal her curves. Even though not an inch of her skin was exposed, it still managed to arouse desire by just one glance.

Rody's eyes were wide in shock. "Miss Nedis...why are you here?"

In fact, Nedis came together with The Crown Prince tonight, and she was surprised too when she saw Rody come in. How could she not know Rody! She especially could not forget that day when Rody lifted up her skirt and spanked her backside. Every single time she recalled that event, she still bore a grudge and would fume in rage, but deep inside there was also this weird fantasy creeping...

Later, Rody came to the rescue of Nedis and Darke when they were in danger, and since then her feelings for this strange young man deepened. However, Rody then left the Westwood Province and went back to the Imperial City not long after that, so she had no idea of him being appointed as Envoy to the Roland Continent.

It was an unforeseen surprise to meet her enemy here today, but when she saw Seth, the surprise on her face vanished and was replaced with a strange look.

The Crown Prince was surprised too. "Miss Nedis, do you know each other?"

Nedis blushed and clenched her teeth, snarling. "Of course I do! He had left a very deep impression on me!"

Rody naturally knew what she meant. He knew he was being rude that time, but he just wanted to give her a small punishment, he swore nothing erotic came across his mind back then. He could not help but felt awkward when he saw her acting shy, her face turning red as she looked at him.

The Crown Prince laughed in relief. "Since you already know each other, there is no need for me to introduce you then."

Nedis was her normal self again. She slowly walked up to Rody and smiled. "I did not expect Mr. Rody to actually come to the Roland Continent. You must be that Special Envoy His Royal Highness the Crown Prince keeps talking about. Congratulations to

Mr. Rody for having been bestowed the title of Earl!"

Seeing the smile on Rody's face, Nedis could not help but ask on purpose, "Why, this must be Miss Nicole? Aren't you...."

Immediately when Nedis' wandering gaze came up to Seth, Rody had a bad feeling in his stomach. Nobody else in here had seen the real Nicole, except for Nedis. Although Seth resembled Nicole after makeup, there were still some differences between the two.

Rody promptly cleared his throat to stop Nedis from going on further. He said in a loud voice. "This is Her Excellency, the Duke of the Tulip family's elder sister, Miss Nicole! Miss Nedis, I'm sure you've heard of her." When he was done, he winked his eyes at Nedis.

Nedis had a slight smile as she tried to keep a straight face and nodded at Seth. "Oh, so you are the eldest daughter of the Tulip family! I have businesses on the Tulip family's lands in the empire's Westwood Province. I've heard a lot about you."

Seth looked at Nedis and something flickered in his gaze. He came over and held Nedis' hands in his, chuckling as he asked, "Really? Miss Nedis, how did you get to know Rody?"

All of a sudden, Rody's face changed.

Rody could sense danger in the way Seth looked at Nedis.

This guy, Seth, was a well-known playboy, one lustful pervert!

What Seth did next almost caused Rody to pass out.

Seth gently lifted Nedis' chin with a finger and smiled, 'tenderly' saying, "Miss Nedis, your gown is so beautiful!"

Chapter 251: Fielding's Transformation

Seth's tone, the look in his eyes, and the smile on his face were clearly the standard characteristics of a womanizer flirting with a woman!

Rody was already on the verge of fainting.

His Royal Highness Aven, who was standing nearby, had that ghastly look on his face as if someone just slashed him with a knife! The light in his eyes faded, and he was near to tears. He mumbled to himself in utter despair, "Surely she...she doesn't have the same interests as the Consort...does she?"

The Senior Prime Minister sighed and gave Aven a small pat. He turned to Seth, the look in his eyes seemingly saying, 'Ah, I see...'

Nedis subconsciously took a step back and turned her head away to avoid Seth's hands. There was an odd look on her face. She forced a smile and said, "Miss Nicole..."

Rody immediately grabbed Seth and spoke with his teeth clenched, "Miss Nicole, I would like to have a few words with Miss Nedis."

Seth's eyes flashed with mockery, he was about to say something when he felt a sharp pain in his arm. He quickly replied, "Okay, got it." Rody was pleased, but he wickedly said, "Well then, please have a chat with His Royal Highness the Crown Prince while Miss Nedis and I excuse ourselves for a moment."

The Crown Prince must have had been so devastated. He now looked at Seth with a sober gaze, there was even a hint of horror in his eyes.

Rody led Nedis aside and asked in a low voice, "Why are you here on the Roland Continent?"

Nedis gave Rody a resentful look. "Why can't I come here?" She then added, "I've come here to hide from my enemies."

Rody nodded. "Those vampires?"

"They're called the Vampire Tribe!" Her face was serious. "The Vampire Tribe is not as evil as you thought! At least I'm not!"

Rody decided to put an end to this topic. He sighed and said, "Thank you for not exposing us just now."

Nedis smiled, "You mean that 'Miss Nicole'? She sure does look like Nicole, but what are you guys up to?"

"It's a bit complicated." Rody hesitated for a while and decided not to tell her. He changed the topic again, "What's the current situation in the Empire? Did you come from the West Hill City? Uhm...well...."

Nedis asked coldly, "Are you trying to ask about the Tulip's mansion? It's extremely safe under tight security! Besides, the Vampire Tribe did not know that the real culprit who killed Lulu was you! They thought it was me, so they will not bother you and Miss Nicole!"

Nedis paused as she realized her tone was too harsh. She sighed, then continued in a soft voice, "Darke is here with me, but he's not around tonight. As the Temple of Roland Continent is very powerful, the Vampire Tribe is not that active here, so I'm quite safe for now. But you, why have you been sent here?"

Their brief conversation ended when a royal chamberlain's loud clear voice announced, "The arrival of His Majesty the King and Her Highness Consort Rulan!"

The noises in the hall stopped abruptly. The performers stopped playing music and stood up, hands placed by their sides. Instantly, a group of servants clad in bright uniforms appeared through the door. Right behind them, King Sauron and Consort Rulan strode into the hall with their heads held high.

This was the second time Rody had met the Consort.

Although he had mentally prepared himself for this, as soon as

his gaze fell on her, he almost burst out into laughter again.

The Consort was wearing a black gown—Rody could not help but wonder how much fabric would be required to sew such a huge gown?

Physically the King was not short in stature, but when he stood beside his oversized Consort, he looked like a small kid. The Consort held the King's arm, trying to put up a pretense of being 'gentle' and 'quiet'.

Everyone else in the hall did not look surprised at all. They seemed perfectly used to seeing this, though the corners of their mouth twitched as they tried to suppress their smiles. The King, however, was calm and steady. There were no flaws in his expression as if nothing was amiss at all. Rody definitely had to admire him for this.

Rody sighed and whispered to Nedis, "I suggest you stay away from the Consort tonight. Please make sure she doesn't see you. "

"Why?"

Rody smiled wryly and replied, "If you do not wish to be hit on twice by women in one night, you should listen to me."

Everybody in the hall had been standing solemnly for quite some time now. The King took a silver wineglass from the servants, raised it in the air and gave a short speech, "My dear guests, I thank you all for your presence tonight. Special thanks to Earl Rody from the Empire of Radiant! To the future of the Roland Continent! Cheers!"

"Cheers!" Together, the guests replied to the toast and finished their wine in one gulp.

As the banquet continued, the King caught sight of Rody and strode in his direction. When Rody saw Consort Rulan walking by the King's side, he quickly signaled to Nedis.

Nedis took a glance at the Consort's appearance, Rody's warning

about being hit on by women popped back into her mind. Although she herself was extremely coquettish, she still shuddered at the thought. In haste, she told him, "I'll wait for you in the garden." And she scurried away.

Before Rody could answer, the King had called out to him, "Lord Rody."

"Your Majesty!" Rody nodded in response. He could immediately sense a surprised gaze from the Consort.

"So it's you? You're Earl Rody, the Special Envoy from Radiant Empire?" Rulan squinted her eyes—her eyes were in fact just two crevices, one could not tell much difference when she squinted.

"Your Highness, please accept my apology once again. I certainly did not mean to offend you earlier this morning." Rody bowed slightly.

Consort Rulan snorted, not wanting to accept his apology, but she could not resist asking, "Did you come alone?" Her eyes swept around, obviously looking for Mouse whom she was obsessed with.

The King was a bit awkward as he spoke in a subdued tone, "Rody, I've heard about what happened in the morning. Please do not take it personally."

When Rulan's search for Mouse failed, she turned her head and asked, "Lord Rody, where is your female companion? Is it the girl who was with you this morning?"

"No." Rody smiled slyly, "I brought Miss Nicole here tonight. She is chatting with His Royal Highness the Crown Prince."

"Oh..." Rulan could not hide her disappointment. But when she saw Seth who was talking with Aven, her eyes instantly lit up!

When Aven noticed the King's presence, he came over together with Seth. Before the King could properly introduce them, Rulan already had her eyes fixed on Seth, shamelessly gawking and drooling.

The King sighed and pointed at Seth, a hint of bitterness in his smile. "This is Miss Nicole, the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family of the Radiant Empire." Seth was aghast at the sight of Rulan, but he managed to plaster a smile on his face, " This must be Her Highness Consort Rulan."

The Consort' mouth widened into a huge creepy smile, and she tried to hold Seth's hands as a gesture of 'friendliness'. Seth shivered and stepped back silently, hiding behind the Crown Prince. If it was that charming and sweet Miss Nedis, he would be more than happy to flirt with her, but Consort Rulan...it would be better to flee.

The King seemed to be used to Rulan acting in such manner, his expression slightly hardened but his tone was calm, "Miss Nicole is an honored guest from the Radiant Empire. Please watch your manners!"

In other words, you could flirt with anyone else as you wish except for this lady, as she was no ordinary person. We could not afford to offend her.

Rulan pouted and stared at her husband icily. She was about to say something when she suddenly noticed the Senior Prime Minister quietly shaking his head at her. Rulan dared not disobey her father, so she glared at Seth and kept quiet.

Rody sighed, he studied the King curiously—why would a King with a sound mind have such a consort?

In Rody's opinion, perhaps there was not a single man on earth who was 'worthy' of Miss Rulan.

Hmm...except maybe for one person.

A big and plump face appeared in his mind...

"Rody, can I have a word with you?" The King signaled to Rody, and they stepped away from the others. The King then whispered to him, "A situation may arise in a while, and when that happens, I

hope you can cooperate with me."

"What is it?" Rody's brows drew together.

The King continued without any change in his expression, "I've actually invited two special guests tonight. Something interesting will be happening here. You will see that soon...just that..." The King suddenly laughed out loud. "Whatever happens later, if you see me nodding at you, please do not refuse!"

Rody wanted to know more but was interrupted by the voice of the royal chamberlain making an announcement.

"The arrival of Elder Gu Ming, the Elders Council of the Temple, and His Excellency Paladin Fielding!"

This immediately caused an uproar in the noisy great hall!

Rody's eyes narrowed as he looked at the King.

The Temple Elder? Paladin?

The King smiled and boomed, "Welcome, Elder Gu Ming and Paladin Fielding!"

The hall quieted down. The envoys from the various Roland kingdoms gradually made way for the special guests, their eyes all on the entrance of the hall.

Sure enough, two figures came in through the door. Walking at the front was an elder wearing a long white robe, a pair of white brows perched on his emaciated face. There was an air of tranquility around him, and he was nonchalant about the presence of others in the hall.

Behind him, the tall and heavily built man in golden armor was no other than Paladin Fielding, whom Rody had met before outside Thunder City.

Fielding looked somewhat different from the time Rody met him outside Thunder City. His long brown hair was now cut short, which made him look cleaner and tougher, but with his majestic

beard gone as well, his face looked dull. He was oblivious to the gazes of the crowd, his expression calm but cold.

Rody's heart thumped.

Fielding had a totally different aura surrounding him now!

He was once a man with high spirits—he was arrogant, strong and confident, a true warrior of indomitable spirit.

However, these had all faded away. He was now as lifeless as a pool of stagnant water.

That Fielding who fought Rody outside the Thunder City was a brilliant and ferocious man, like a sword drawn from its sheath; but now, he was merely a sheathed sword which had lost all its radiance.

Rody had a strange feeling deep inside his heart—by looking at the all-new Fielding, it reminded Rody of the same feeling he had when he first met Master Autumn!

Deep and reserved!

Mouse once told him, after Fielding lost the battle, he locked himself up for some hard training. Rody took one glance and he could tell that Fielding's strength had certainly made a great breakthrough!

Maybe losing the battle, especially to his rival in love, was a heavy blow to him which ultimately became his driving force for the breakthrough.

That indomitable warrior who held on to his dignity even when he lost in battles, had vanished. The Fielding before his eyes, the aura he emitted seemed...gloomy!

After a brief moment of silence in the hall, the guests resumed conversation with an air of uneasiness. Nobody expected the people from the Temple to turn up at the banquet tonight.

To make it simple, all the guests attending the banquet tonight

were Special Envoys from the various kingdoms of the Roland Continent. The main reason they gathered in the capital of the Sauron was to form an alliance against the Temple. Who would have expected the King to invite the people from the Temple! Some of the furious guests started shooting daggers at the King.

Rody's eyebrows snapped together, he asked in a low voice, "Your Majesty, did you invite them here?"

"Yes." The King smiled and patted Rody on the shoulder, "Did you see those glares? How interesting..."

Elder Gu Ming and Fielding walked straight towards the King, and everyone retreated to make way for them. The King repeated in a low voice, "Remember what I said just now!"

He then smiled and moved forward to receive them, saying in a loud voice, "Elder Gu Ming, Lord Fielding, you are late!"

"Your Majesty, I came to Sauron at the orders of the Elders Council to deliver a letter from the council." Gu Ming was the first to speak. In contrary to his appearance, he had a soft soothing voice. "In regard to the apostasy of Saint Muse from the Temple of Sauron Kingdom, I will now carry out the Elders Council's order to take over religious affairs within the Sauron Kingdom!"

Rody noticed that when Gu Ming said, 'apostasy of Saint Muse', Fielding remained calm as still water, except for a slight twitch of muscles at the corner of his eyes.

Chapter 252: Estrangement

Elder Gu Ming's voice echoed through the great hall, but Rody's mind was spinning.

The King invited Elder Gu Ming and Fielding tonight on purpose!

What exactly was the King trying to do?

To be exact, tonight's gathering was actually aimed at uniting everyone against the Temple! What was the King up to, by inviting the Temple followers to such a gathering?

"Puzzled?" Seth's voice rang out beside him.

Everybody stopped talking the moment the Temple people entered, and Rody was not sure when Seth had moved to his side. But the Senior Prime Minister and the Crown Prince were not concerned with Seth. They exchanged a few glances; nobody could tell what they were thinking.

Rody silently stepped back and stood next to Seth, asking in a low voice, "You know what's going on?"

Seth's lips curled into a slight smile. He grabbed Rody's hand and drew a few strokes.

Rody immediately realized that Seth was writing something on his palm. There were only two simple words he wrote...

"Compulsion!"

Looking at the smile on the King's face, it suddenly dawned on Rody!

The King was forcing everybody to take a clear-cut stand!

All the while, the Temple knew that the kingdoms of the Roland Continent had peace negotiations with the Radiant Empire to form an alliance against the Temple. However, they dared not do this openly and everything was carried out under the table.

They had not shed all pretense of cordiality since nobody dared to pierce the veil.

These people in the hall were ambassadors from the various kingdoms. Even though they were here to have a peace talk with Rody and had formed an alliance among themselves, who knew what else were they secretly doing? Perhaps today they were all sitting here talking about how to fight the Temple but at the same time, their Kings had some secret dealings with the Temple as well!

In politics, who could be certain? One would do whatever is required to safeguard one's own interest!

Those glaring furiously at the King—hmph, why were they so mad? Most probably the rage was out of humiliation!

The King's move was to force everyone to lay their cards on the table. To put it plainly, by inviting the Temple representatives, it was like saying to their face, these people had united against you! We were in this together!

By doing this, those kingdoms which were still sitting on the fence were forced to take a stand—nobody should have a foot in both camps!

Let them have no chance to switch their allegiance in secret!

No one could escape today! Those who attended the banquet tonight, all the ambassadors from various Roland Kingdoms, they were all against the Temple! Everyone here was co-conspirators!

"How brilliant!" Rody could not help but sigh.

When he finally figured this out, Rody sighed again. He smiled bitterly and thought, 'If this was the case, then the King's next step would be to set me up.'

Sure enough, just as he was thinking to himself, he heard the King calling his name, "Your Excellency Rody, let me introduce you."

The King seemed to be very happy. He had a friendly look on his face, beaming. "This is the Earl of the Radiant Empire, Rody!" The King then smiled to Rody. "These men are from the Roland Temple, Elder Gu Ming from the Elders Council, and Paladin Fielding."

The King paused, as if the situation was not complicated enough, he deliberately added, "Elder Gu Ming is also the teacher of the Black Veil Saint!"

Fielding, who was standing beside him, went stiff for a moment.

Gu Ming squinted his eyes and studied Rody for a while before he turned his head to the King and asked in a deep voice, "Your Majesty, before I came here, I've heard rumors that the Sauron Kingdom had some connections with infidels from the southern continent. Is this true?"

There was a dead silence in the great hall. Everyone heard Gu Ming's accusation loud and clear.

His words had made the positions of both sides clear. If the King answered 'Yes!', then everyone here, as well as the powers behind them, were involved in the crime of 'colluding secretly with infidels' and 'conspiring against the Temple'!

Rody sighed silently. This was the King's ultimate plan, to put everyone in the same boat!

Sure enough, the King smiled and replied lightly, "Yes, we are having a peace talk with the Radiant Empire. In accordance with the agreement we have reached, hundreds of thousands of loyal warriors from the Roland Continent can now come home!"

Everyone held their breath and nervously studied the expression on Elder Gu Ming's face.

They were now mentally prepared for Elder Gu Ming to turn against them. It was not at all surprising if he angrily criticized the King aloud, or roar with rage...

But Gu Ming suddenly smiled!

A smile crept on his thin, aged face. He then sighed and turned, his eyes slowly scanning the hall, saying in a profound manner, "God is merciful, may He pardon the lost sheep."

The smile on the King's face faded slowly.

Gu Ming was indeed a smart man. He understood very well that if he flew into a rage or stormed off in a huff, this would immediately push those sitting on the fence to the King's side.

He seemed like just quoting a sentence from the Temple's Classic, but on the other hand, it gave a slight hope to those powers which were still wavering ...

Everybody in the hall had different expressions on their faces. Some had a complicated look as they scanned others around them, but nobody was willing to speak.

The King thought to himself sneeringly, 'I have seen this coming! Tonight, if I do not openly defy the Temple, how do I force you all to resolve to align with me?'

With this decision in mind, the King cast a profound glance at Gu Ming, sighing deliberately, "Elder Gu Ming is indeed a kindhearted man...I intentionally invited you here tonight because I wanted to introduce you to this special guest from the Radiant Continent."

He pointed at Rody and said softly, "This is Earl Rody, the Commander of the Imperial Guards of Radiant Empire. He is one of the warriors of the famous 'Lightning God's Whip'..." The King stopped and turned his gaze to Fielding. He purposely spoke in a slow, deep voice, sounding each and every word clearly, "He is the bravest warrior under the command of the Duke of the Tulip Family!"

It was as if a bolt of lightning flashed through the silent night sky, or a drop of water falling into a pot of boiling oil!

When the King mentioned about 'Duke of the Tulip Family',

Rody could vividly feel the spitting flames from Fielding's originally calm eyes.

Gu Ming was startled. He took a quick glance at the King and thought to himself, 'Oh no!'

Sure enough, Fielding who had his head bowed and remained silent all the while suddenly looked up, his icy gaze locked onto Rody. He slowly opened his mouth and asked, "Duke of the Tulip Family's subordinate?"

Gu Ming sighed silently. Obviously, this cunning King invited him here tonight so that he could force those present to declare their hostility, but he did not foresee that the King would take aim at Fielding's weakness!

He came to the Sauron Kingdom in the name of the Temple to deal with Black Veil Saint's matter, but Fielding insisted on tagging along. A few Paladins, as well as Augustine, were already imprisoned for helping Black Veil Saint. Moreover, several guys from the Dragon Tribe had disappeared although he never liked those from the Dragon Tribe.

It was precisely because this matter involved Black Veil Saint that Fielding immediately halted his training and was determined to come along.

Gu Ming knew Fielding very well, so he was deeply aware of Fielding's tremendous change. The ardent man who once valued dearly the pride of a knight had changed, and this was all because of Black Veil Saint.

The person Fielding hated the most right now was undoubtedly the Duke of the Tulip Family!

Sure enough, the King's remark successfully caused Fielding to lose his cool!

"You are a subordinate of Duke of the Tulip Family?" Fielding took a deep breath and asked again.

Rody sighed. He knew that the King plotted this intentionally. There was nothing else he could do but nod, "Yes, I am."

Fielding's expression dulled, but he suddenly asked, "The Duke of the Tulip Family, is he alright? I heard he was injured."

"He is fine."

Fielding nodded, his eyes locked on Rody's face, "You're out of luck. If you're merely an infidel, I may have let you go today, but since you're the Duke of the Tulip Family's subordinate..."

"Fielding!" The color on Gu Ming's face drained. This was definitely not the time to turn against them! By doing so, it will only strengthen the opposite party's power! He tried to stop him.

Right now, Gu Ming deeply regretted bringing Fielding along.

"Elder Gu Ming!" Fielding's voice was calm but cold. "Do not stop me. In fact, you can't stop me at all."

"Your Majesty!" Gu Ming sighed and shot the King an angry look, "As one of the kingdoms under the Temple of Roland Continent, how dare you..."

The King stated calmly, "Of course I honor the Temple, but there are some with wild ambitions who seem to not respect the sovereignty of the Roland Continent!"

He stepped a few steps back. His eyes ran down the hall and declared loudly, "The kingdoms of Roland Continent reject those with evil intentions and wild ambitions!"

Gu Ming sneered, "It seems like I came to Sauron walking right into the trap? All of you are gathered here to conspire against the Temple!"

The King sighed, "Elder Gu Ming, I have always respected you. Besides, with the presence of Paladin Fielding, who would dare to disrespect you?"

All this while Fielding's eyes remained on Rody's face. He

suddenly asked in a low voice, "Have I met you before?"

"..." Rody replied after a moment of silence, "No!"

Fielding continued coldly, "I can tell that you're not weak, yet why have I not seen you in the battle of Thunder City?"

When Rody did not answer him, Fielding slowly stepped back and gave Gu Ming an icy look, "Elder Gu Ming, please step aside."

Although he was speaking to Gu Ming, those who heard his words retreated as well.

All of them knew the Paladin was going to start an attack.

A person with the rank of a Paladin was going to launch an attack, of course they would have to move out of the way as fast as they could! What if he accidentally hit them? They would have been seriously wounded or even die!

"Fielding!" Gu Ming could not hold in his anger any longer, "You! Are you not going to listen to me?"

Seeing that Gu Ming would not move aside, Fielding turned away from him and shouted at Rody, "You! Come with me!"

He strode towards the middle of the great hall.

Rody glanced at the King, and the King smilingly nodded at him.

"Bloody old fox!" Rody sighed silently. He then strode up the hall along with Fielding.

This was indeed the biggest hall in Sauron Palace. The great hall could easily accommodate up to thousands of people. At this point, everyone had retreated to the edge of the hall, leaving a huge space in the middle, except for Gu Ming who stood nearby, his face gloomy.

"I hope you do your best! Do not hold back in the duel!" Fielding said coldly, "If you lose, I will cut off your arms! But I will not kill you because I want you to go back to the Radiant Empire and pass a message to the Duke of Tulip Family! You tell him, if Black Veil

Saint ever goes to the Radiant Continent to find him, I hope he will treat her well!"

Rody sighed.

Fielding continued, "If I lose...." He suddenly laughed apathetically and mumbled, "If I lose, then nothing matters anymore!"

Rody took a deep breath and fixed his gaze on Fielding, asking in a deep voice, "Where's your sword?"

Though Fielding was wearing an armor, he did not carry any weapons when entering the palace as this was the normal etiquette.

Fielding seemingly laughed when he heard Rody's question. He raised one hand and waved lightly, and one of the decorative battle axes originally hanging on the side of the walls flew right off into his hands.

"Alright, I have my weapon now. What about you?" Fielding smiled.

Rody was slightly taken aback, "You're not going to use a sword?"

In his memory, that Fielding outside Thunder City had an excellent swordsmanship! In fact, on their first battle, Rody stood no chance against Fielding. Though at that time Rody had already achieved the level of Sacred Swordsman, he was still slightly inferior to Fielding in regard to strength, experience, or in the comprehension of martial arts. He had completely relied on the Mythical Dragon-fortified strength in his body to trump Fielding.

At that time, Fielding's extraordinary sword skills left a very deep impression on Rody.

"No, I'm not using a sword." Fielding smiled and looked at the short battle-axe in his hand, "This will do."

Fielding noticed the surprised look on Rody's face, and he said

lightly, "When you go back, please help me thank the Duke of the Tulip Family. His advice regarding strength after the Thunder City battle was a great inspiration to me."

He stopped for a moment and suddenly gave the axe a light flick. He then mumbled to himself, "Why is it necessary to use a sword? Now any weapon can become my sword in my hands!"

Nobody knew how Fielding did it but inadvertently, a fierce murderous aura radiated from his body.

Once Fielding had gathered his momentum, the dullness surrounding him finally dissipated. Now, he looked like the Excalibur unsheathed!

Chapter 253: Break!

"He has achieved a great breakthrough indeed." Rody sighed silently. The Fielding he met outside Thunder City was merely a man who possessed great strength, but the present Fielding seemed to have comprehended some 'rules'!

"Where's your weapon!" Fielding let out a breath and growled.

Rody smiled. He did not bring his Dragon Spell Scimitar to the banquet tonight. He nonchalantly stretched out his palms...

A wisp of golden fighting energy appeared on the previously empty palm. As the spiritual energy gathered, it formed the appearance of a sword which shone brightly. Shadows flickered on Rody's face under the glowing light of the golden fighting energy. Fielding's eyes glinted ruthlessly, "Condensing energy to form an object? Good! I did not expect that you're a Sacred Swordsman! The subordinate of Duke of the Tulip Family is indeed incredible!"

Fielding pointed at Rody with the short battle-axe in his hands and asked loudly, "Are you sure you're not going to use any weapon?"

"Yes!"

Fielding no longer asked any questions. He suddenly shouted, "Kill!"

His loud voice was earth-shattering, and everyone there felt as though a clap of thunder exploded right beside their ears. All of them thought the Paladin's first strike would be so powerful and devastating, but Fielding's figure flashed unexpectedly and disappeared in front of their eyes, and then reappeared in front of Rody!

A chilling light struck down from his hands!

That was the difference!

When Fielding fought against Rody outside Thunder City, every blow was violent and powerful. But now when he struck his axe, the force was plain and simple without any overflow of extra energy. Immediately, Rody's pupil constricted. Fielding's blow carried a strange force. Before the axe struck down, it was as though an invisible energy had already locked down his opponent's entire body!

Everyone gasped as they saw Rody's figure instantly split into two after being struck by Fielding's axe!

Before they could actually cry out in alarm, they noticed that Rody's figure, which had split into two halves by Fielding's axe, started to fade away slowly.

Residual image!

Among them, only Fielding saw Rody's movements clearly. When he brought down his axe, he could immediately feel the force he exerted struck on nothing. At that moment, it was as if the enemy had managed to escape his energy lockdown and vanished completely in front of his eyes!

Nobody could make out Rody's moves, but Fielding saw it clearly...What Rody did to avoid his first strike was merely taking one step aside!

It missed by a width of one step!

Pow! There was a dull noise of something cracking apart. It turned out to be the King's throne which was sitting far above, just a few meters from where Rody had stood, split into small fragments!

"Wonderful!" Rody's voice rang out beside Fielding. As he was avoiding Fielding's blow, he was surprised that the blow was no longer the type of uncontrollable violent force which the Paladin used to display when he struck.

In other words, Fielding had already reached the state where he

could completely control his force. With each blow he delivered, he could now focus all his strength in a linear motion preventing any wastage of energy! Although Rody managed to avoid his blow, due to the force being directed in a straight line it smashed the King's throne into pieces, but those standing on either side of the throne were not harmed at all!

Rody's voice struck Fielding's ears like a thunderbolt. He flipped his axe and pulled it back for a second attack.

In the eyes of the onlookers, Fielding's blow was extremely dangerous. If he did not control his force well, even though it could kill Rody, he could also accidentally cut himself at the waist!

Rody's body immediately spun violently on the spot. His actions were slick as though his whole body was covered in oil. When Fielding's axe swept across his direction, Rody's body seemed to have gently bounced off as soon as the axe struck. Without much effort, he swerved behind Fielding.

"Hmph! Trying to hide?" Fielding snorted. He suddenly bent over, sliding his other hand under his arm to the back and shoved his palm.

A strong blast of energy suddenly fired from Fielding's palm, forming a fan-shaped wave!

Boom! A bolt of golden light emitted from his palms and swept across the floor, causing the hard stone floor to crack. Behind Fielding, a four-to-five-meters-wide and several meters deep pit was plowed out of the ground.

One of the onlookers standing several meters away yelped when he saw the light blade emitted from the Paladin's palm coming straight at him.

In that brief moment of shock, the light blade coming in his direction abruptly halted. One step in front of his feet was a deep pit, formed as a result of this blow, but surprisingly, the person

standing at the edge was unharmed!

Fielding was already capable of controlling his force to such precise level!

Following the light blade hurled by Fielding, Rody could not dodge so he leaped into the air! Everyone followed his movements and looked into the air.

Thoughts flashed in Fielding's mind like bolts of lightning. Seeing that Rody was so agile, he decided to deliver a massive blow across the floor, so that Rody had no room to dodge except to leap into the air!

Right now, Rody's body was still in midair but Fielding had already turned around. He crouched down all of a sudden, shrinking himself into a mass and shot into the air towards Rody!

Fielding went all-out in this strike!

Fielding thought to himself, Rody would not be able to exert any force in midair so it was impossible for him to dodge this blow now!

Rody knew very well in his heart that if he was merely a Sacred Swordsman, it would be definitely impossible to dodge this blow. But as one of the strongest in this field, flying in the air was not a problem to him at all. Though he could fly at will in midair, Fielding's blow was really fast. Rody sighed. He did not have the heart to deliver a killing blow, so he merely warded off the attack with the light sword formed from gathered fighting energy.

"Clang!"

A sharp, ear-piercing noise of metals clashing together.

Everyone could see clearly the two men colliding in midair. The battle-axe in Fielding's hand clashed with Rody's light sword. The light sword in Rody's hands was after all formed from gathered fighting energy. This simple type of weapon formed from gathered fighting energy could never really fend against real weapons,

especially against a Paladin who also had golden fighting energy surrounding him.

After the violent collision, Rody bounced far away. The light sword in his hand shattered into tiny pieces and vanished.

Both of them bounced off after the collision, their bodies shooting up high in the air before they landed on the ground.

It was just a brief moment from the start of their fight till now, and their movements were fast as lightning. After several strikes and dodges, they had finally collided with each other!

Though their stands were somewhat complicated, being able to witness the duel between the two masters was too wonderful even if it had been just the blink of an eye. After a moment of silence, the crowd burst into cheers! Crown Prince Aven who was obsessed with martial arts was so enthralled, his eyes glittered as he watched the fight.

"You are very powerful!" Fielding did not move but his eyes narrowed as he gazed at Rody standing at a distance, "I have fought the Duke of the Tulip Family at Thunder City. Your power is not any weaker than him!"

Rody sighed and did not utter a word.

Fielding had indeed achieved great advancements. During the battle of Thunder City, Rody only managed to defeat Fielding after a spiritual Dragon Transformation. At that crucial moment, Rody suddenly realized how to control one's strength. Which was why though both of them, a Sacred Swordsman and a Paladin, were of equal strength, Rody's comprehension of strength control had enabled him to triumph over Fielding.

But now, Fielding had improved by leaps and bounds. He had already attained the same level as Rody had in Thunder City. It was unclear how he managed to do that, but it must have been the stress from losing the battle at Thunder City, as well as Rody's

words regarding strength which gave him a huge inspiration.

Rody had already encountered the power of all Paladins in the Roland Continent.

The Paladin from Dragon Tribe who died at the sea was not even worth mentioning. Before Rody had a breakthrough in his original power, he was already able to suppress him. Though his opponent later recited the Dragon Spell to awaken the Mystic Dragon Power in his body and threw Rody into the sea, it was not because Rody's power was inferior to him. In fact, when both were compared in accordance with their powers, the Dragon Paladin at the sea was weaker than Rody at that time.

The other three Dragon Paladins he met later on, Wind Dragon Amu, Snow Dragon Ice, as well as Fire Dragon Ni Lin, their powers were slightly greater.

Especially that Fire Dragon Ni Lin who had already comprehended the 'Rules'. He could use the Rules to carry out his own Dragon Enchantment, but he had not yet achieved the level of 'inventing new rules' in the field. Ni Lin was by far the most powerful amongst the Paladins Rody came across, even more powerful than Augustine who was well known as the greatest Paladin in the Roland Continent!

But Fielding's power had already surpassed Ni Lin just by the fact that he could completely grasp the rules of strength. After all, when Ni Lin fought Rody, each of his blow seemingly shook the heaven and earth.

Little did he know that such moves, though extremely powerful, three out of ten of the force would have leaked away following each strike. One's power was not determined solely by the magnitude of his strength but the manipulation of strength! That Fielding standing before him, his manipulation of strength had reached its peak among those at the ranks of Paladin!

"I find it strange." Fielding said coldly, "If I'm not mistaken, your

understanding of the skills regarding strength is very high. But during my first encounter with the Duke of the Tulip Family at Thunder City, he had not attained such a state yet. It was only in the middle of our battle that his skills were suddenly enhanced...but as the subordinate of the Duke, you already possess such power!"

Rody smiled, "What's so strange about this? Similarly, before I came here, I heard that Augustine was the strongest Paladin of the Roland Continent. But now it seems that your power is perhaps above Augustine!"

The muscles at the corner of Fielding's eyes twitched. He answered in a deep voice, "Good! Let me see how powerful you are then!"

Rody bowed his head silently. After a while, he suddenly looked up in the King's direction and saw the King nodding at him. Rody knew he had no choice. He could not hide his power now and he must defeat Fielding neatly. If he loses this battle, it would leave a bad impression with the ambassadors from the various kingdoms of the Roland Continent present tonight. It would be a terrible blow to the confidence of their alliance.

"Okay." Rody seemed to smile at him, "Are you sure you want to see that?"

Fielding had an icy look on his face as he stood there holding the short axe in his hands. Everyone in the hall had a weird feeling as though the whole space was contracting, with Fielding acting as the core of contraction. It felt like the surrounding air and force were all sucked in by Fielding, who stood there like a lifeless vacuum.

Unlike the other Paladins who would radiate raging flames of fighting energy during battles, Fielding completely concealed all his energy. If not seeing with their own eyes that a person was standing there, the crowd would have thought it was just an

illusion. Fielding seemed to have assimilated his energy field with his surrounding! But at the same time, another invisible energy field spread out, giving chills to everyone.

"Rody, is he capable of winning?" the Crown Prince asked worryingly.

Seth yawned and replied lightly, "Your Royal Highness, you should pray for Fielding instead..."

Fielding finally raised his axe once again. He pointed its spike at Rody and bellowed, "Use a weapon! My next attack will not be as easily ward off as the previous one!"

The Crown Prince suddenly yelled, "Earl Rody, take this sword!"

Right now in this hall, he, as the Crown Prince, was the only one eligible to bring in a sword. He waved his hand and swung his sword towards Rody, but Rody did not even bother to give it a glance. He held out his hand and waved it slightly. Following a ringing buzz, Rody had flicked off the sword flung by the Crown Prince, and it flew across the air before thrusting into the ground.

Rody gazed at Fielding standing before him, and spoke in a strange tone, "Fielding, do you think that you have ascended the highest realm by training to the level of being able to use anything as your sword?"

He held out a straight finger and continued softly, "You are wrong! You said you have achieved the state where you can use anything as a sword, but no matter which weapon you use as the sword substitute, you still remain in the realm of 'form'! But for me, I do not need a sword anymore!"

Rody moved in an instant, seemingly taking a step forward. His voice echoed in the great hall, "Because I am the sword!"

"Because my sword is formless!" He suddenly did a downward stroke with his finger. Fielding who was standing far away could sense a fierce murderous aura though he did not physically see a

light cut of any sort. He instinctively held up his short axe to fend himself.

After a crisp cracking sound, the short axe in Fielding's hand suddenly broke into two. He then felt a cold sensation on his face. A fine cut was drawn horizontally across his cheek, little by little blood slowly trickled from the wound...

The blow caused Fielding to retreat three steps before he could actually regain his balance. He looked blankly at the short axe that had broken into two, his hands slightly trembling.

"Impossible!" Fielding whispered, "How did you ascend to such a realm?"

A murderous look flashed in his eye. He then gave out a long howl and raised his hand. All of a sudden, the Crown Prince's sword which was originally planted in the ground raised up and flew into his hands!

Fielding finally raised the sword and charged at Rody!

Nobody saw how Fielding initiated his moves. All they felt was the intense sword energy emitted by the sword in Fielding's hands which seemed to have pierced the air even before he took a step forward.

They could even make out the waves of the air before him splitting apart. Fielding's body and the sword integrated as one, charging towards Rody!

A soft sigh fell on everyone's ears.

"Fielding, you still don't understand, do you?" Rody's eyes flashed with pity, "I fought against form with formlessness. You have already lost!"

Originally, at that speed Fielding would have come up close to Rody in the blink of an eye. But after Rody completed one whole sentence, Fielding was only able to take seven steps forward!

In the beginning, nobody was able to see his movements clearly as his speed was extremely fast, like the speed of a lightning. But after a few meters, his movements abruptly slowed down.

As Rody drew a horizontal line with a slight stroke of his finger, an invisible sword energy immediately formed in front of Fielding. Though he tried hard to breakthrough Rody's invisible sword energy with his sword, it was as if he required to exert all the force in his body to move each step.

If Fielding's speed was like lightning and gale at the start of the few meters, then now Fielding was like an old ox pushing a cart, each step forward required extreme effort.

Rody moved a step forward. Although it was just one step, he had already come in front of Fielding instantly. Fielding was still struggling with the sword energy in front of him. The sword in his hands gradually buzzed in distress as it could not withstand the stress any further. The sword vibrated slightly then it slowly bent, losing its straight form!

Rody was just standing half a meter away from Fielding, but Fielding's sword could not move forward anymore, not even an inch!

Rody looked at Fielding with some sorrow in his eyes. He did not hate Fielding. In fact, he even sort of pitied him but at the same time had some respect for him.

Fielding was just a pitiful man. He pursued his love but was rejected. On the other hand, the pride of a knight which he valued so dearly was crushed when he was defeated in battle. However, the failure did not devour him. It instead became a driving force that pushed him forward on the road of improving his martial arts. And he did achieve a breakthrough!

The only pathetic thing was his encounter with Rody!

Rody gritted his teeth and he slowly held out a finger, placing it

lightly on the tip of Fielding's sword. A deep, low note slowly came out from his mouth...

"Break!"

Chapter 254: Nebulous

"Break!"

A low, deep note rang through the great hall, and a miraculous scene unfolded in front of everyone's eyes.

Rody's fingertip touched lightly on the tip of Fielding's sword, and immediately a dazzling light exploded from the sword. The light was so bright that it hurt the eyes of the onlookers, forcing them to look away. Fielding suddenly growled; his body seemed like it was struck by lightning. Veins became visible on his forehead, but he could not resist the ray of light which flowed down from the tip of his sword.

A series of subtle but dense noise of metal breaking apart was heard. The set of armor on Fielding's hands and arms, followed by those on his body, suddenly exploded into pieces! However, the broken pieces did not fly around haphazardly. Instead, the pieces floated around, as if a vacuum space with a radius of about two to three meters had formed, and the center was where the two of them stood!

At that moment, it seemed like the majestic God of Time had vanished! The rules of time had been tampered by Rody, and everybody's movements became extremely slow in one's eyes—this included the crowd's gasps! The supposedly short gasp was dragged into a long, strange sound. The fine details on the broken pieces of Fielding's armor became so clearly visible!

A flick of the finger was equivalent to [50 ksanas](#). In this flick of the finger, the originally solid, magnificent golden armor worn on the Paladin's body shattered into infinite golden pieces which then turned into dust. Fielding was now half-naked; his firm muscles, as well as the wounds on his skin, were completely exposed. Shock and anger were written all over his face. When Rody finished his long chant, the rule of space immediately went back to its original

state. Fielding finally felt relieved from head to toe as the pressure locking his whole body vanished abruptly. He then felt a turbid energy rising from his chest, and he gently let out a breath—but as soon as his mouth opened, a mouthful of blood spurted out!

In everyone's eyes, it looked as though Rody was just tapping lightly on the tip of Fielding's sword, which then caused Fielding's armor to shatter. Fielding was then seriously wounded, spurting blood, and his whole body fell backward.

Wham! As Fielding collapsed, his grip loosened and 'Whoosh!', the sword flew out from his hand. To everyone's horror, the sword flew across the hall, aiming directly at the King standing far away!

The collision of power between a Domain Master and a Paladin caused the sword to fly out, hence its strength was no trivial matter! The sword flying at high speed was similar to a lightning flash. Before the King could cry out in alarm, it had already arrived right in front of him!

Right at this moment, a large figure suddenly moved forward and stood in front of the King. A huge palm raised and waved in the direction of the oncoming sword.

It was Consort Rulan!

Her sleeves fluttered, and the thin fabric instantly formed a thick solid wall blocking in front of the King—fighting energy! The Consort could manipulate fighting energy, which was a technique exclusive to Senior Warriors and Senior Knights!

Everything happened too fast; the crowd was bewildered.

When they first started to gasp, there were so many changes happening on the scene before their gasps ended—when Fielding's armor shattered and flew off, their gasps were full of shock and sighs. But when the sword flew towards the King, the surprised gasps had an added tone of terror in it. Finally, when the Consort manipulated fighting energy to block off the sword, their gasps

were then full of surprise again!

It must have been tough for these people, for them to express so many emotions in just one gasp.

But this was still not the end!

As the sword was about to thrust into the Consort's sleeves surging with fighting energy, it suddenly radiated a dazzling light. Boom! A bright light flashed, and the metal sword shattered into pieces! It exploded like fireworks, turning into glittering sparks of light before fading away.

The Consort was shocked, and her gaze fell on Rody who stood arrogantly at a distance—this fellow, such tremendous power with just a flick of his finger?

Pity these people who witnessed so many things happening in such a short time frame. The prolonged gasp almost suffocated them, but in the end as the danger defused as the sword turned into ashes, the hall went silent!

Dead silence!

Rody stood quietly in the middle. His face was calm except for his eyes which flickered mockingly as he gazed at the king.

The King's heart pounded. He knew the sword flying towards him was done by Rody on purpose. Perhaps it was to show discontent for being used tonight. When he recalled the mighty power of Rody's finger, the King could feel cold sweat dripping at his back. If Rody had truly intended to fire the sword at him, nobody would have been able to ward it off.

Provoking a Domain Master was no joke!

Fielding was lying face up under Rody's feet. He had stopped struggling and stared quietly at the great hall's ceiling instead, his eyes as dead as ashes.

Right now, Fielding's heart was filled with despair. He could not

accept the fact that after training so hard, thinking that he had achieved a great breakthrough, in the end, he could not even fight against his opponent's one finger!

"Get up," Rody shouted coldly.

A wry smile with hints of despair appeared on Fielding's pale face. He turned himself over and sat on the ground. He then looked up at Rody and asked quietly, "What did you say?"

"I said, get up!" Rody lowered his head to look at Fielding who was sitting on the floor, saying coldly, "Are you going to give up all hope now?"

Fielding lowered his eyelids and said softly, "I've lost, and I sincerely accept my defeat! Your strength was way beyond me, there was nothing else to say."

Rody was a little apologetic when he saw the eyes of the once stubborn Paladin was now as dead as ashes. He pondered for a moment and bent down, whispering into Fielding's ears.

"Fielding, do you know the reason for your defeat?"

Fielding closed his eyes and took a few seconds to think about his question. His brows then drew together, "Your last strike with your finger ..."

Rody smiled, "It's the Rules!"

Seeing the blank look on Fielding's face, Rody elaborated further, "You have already ascended the realm where your techniques of strength manipulation have reached its peak! For a Paladin to ascend such realm, you are already considered one of the best among other Paladins. You are now standing in front of a door but unfortunately, you haven't been able to push this door open."

Fielding's eyes suddenly opened. A strange glow flickered in his eyes. "A door?"

Rody sighed. "No matter how great your skills are in

manipulating strength. It is unfortunate that you ran into me. I was able to make it impossible for you to display your skills at my hands, do you know why?" This time around, Rody did not wait for Fielding to reply and gave the answer softly, "Because I have changed the 'Rules' of strength!"

Fielding stood up slowly and mumbled to himself, "Changed the Rules..."

Rody smiled and replied, "If you wish to defeat me, you will need to think of a way to open up that door in front of you!"

Fielding stared hard at Rody for a long time. Suddenly, a smile appeared on his face. There was a profound meaning hidden behind his smile as he whispered into Rody's ears, "I can't believe I have been defeated by you twice!"

Rody's body jolted, and he looked at Fielding in surprise.

Fielding sighed and looked into Rody's eyes, speaking in a deep voice, "The sword in my hand transformed into rage and penetrating energy, which pierced through the warmth of spring, the boldness of summer, the charm of autumn and the icy elegance of winter..."

At this point, Fielding's smile deepened, and he asked in a low voice, "These were the words you said to me when you first defeated me outside Thunder City, weren't they?"

He recognized me?

Rody was shocked at first but immediately let it go. With the experience of their previous battle outside Thunder City, it was normal for Fielding, who was a Paladin, to find some clues in his moves during the duel just now.

Fielding let out a long breath before turning to the King and Elder Gu Ming, announcing loudly, "I've lost!" He then turned his gaze to Elder Gu Ming, "My mind is in a turmoil now. I can't stay here any longer to assist you, my Teacher. Please take care of

yourself in the Sauron Kingdom, Teacher!"

When he finished, he ignored everybody's gaze and strode towards the entrance of the great hall. As he reached the entrance, he halted for a while. He then said loudly without looking back, "Rody, remember my words!"

Rody knew in his heart that Fielding was referring to the phrase 'take good care of her'. He smiled and replied loudly, "I will!"

Without any more worries in his heart, Fielding left the hall with a dignified gait.

Gu Ming had a dark look on his face. He narrowed his eyes and turned his gaze to the King, and then to Rody. He then said through gritted teeth, "Your Majesty, that was such an impressive move!"

The King smiled but did not speak. He knew he had already achieved his goal.

After the duel, not only the conflict between the kingdoms and the Temple had intensified with a clear line drawn between both parties, Rody's power had also given a great shock and deterrence to the ambassadors of the various Roland Kingdoms present, as he had easily defeated the highly respected Paladin of the Roland Continent with his amazing power.

Gu Ming naturally knew what the King had in plan. He swept his eyes across the crowd and snorted coldly before he bellowed, "Those who blaspheme against God will face God's judgment!"

Having said this, the Temple Elder stormed out in a rage.

The night wind blew on Fielding's body which was half naked, bringing away with it the gloom of defeat in his heart. He was oblivious to the coldness on his body. He braved the night wind and strode out of the palace. The palace guard who saw him recognized him as the Paladin. Though they could not understand why he was in such a wretched state, they did not stop him.

Fielding walked out of the palace onto the streets in a dignified gait. He walked alone on the deserted streets, his expression looked somewhat grave as Rody's words echoed repeatedly in his head.

Although the city gate was already shut at night, it was not a hindrance to the Paladin. Fielding got out of the city easily, and he turned back to take a look at the magnificent city wall under the night sky.

Hmm, if he's here, Mouse would definitely be in the city too...

Fielding stopped at this thought and shook his head, he smiled wryly and sighed, "Fielding oh Fielding, you are being so irresolute and hesitant. How stupid is that? With him around, what is there for you to worry about Mouse?"

When he thought of this, Fielding burst out into laughter. There was no joy at all in his laughter but traces of sorrow. He was about to stride away.

But then he heard a brisk voice chuckling by the roadside, "Why is the formidable Paladin Fielding in such wretchedness, walking half naked on the streets in the middle of the night?"

Fielding's eyebrows raised, and he glanced coldly at the direction of the voice. He saw a slender figure standing by the roadside, covered in a black cloak, but a golden armor was visible under the cloak.

"Ars.Lan, why are you standing here sneakily in the middle of the night? Were you especially waiting for me? "

Fielding had always disliked those from the Dragon Tribe. All the while the Dragons were considered as an 'alien race' by the people in the Roland Continent. Besides that, for over hundreds and thousands of years, the Dragon Tribe was generally labeled as heretics. He was not sure how, but His Lordship Prometheus had managed to make the Dragon Tribe bow in submission to the Temple. But the Dragon Tribe Paladins had always been too

arrogant, so Fielding did not like them.

"Your Excellency Fielding, you look as if someone just bashed you up." Naturally, Ars.Lan would never give up such an opportunity to attack Fielding. Although they were all Paladins, the two human Paladins and the Dragon Tribe Paladins were always on bad terms in the Temple as well as the Holy Knight Regiment.

Out of Ars.Lan's expectation, the usually stubborn Fielding did not rebut her statement. Instead, he replied softly, "You are right, I was defeated by a man in a duel just now."

Ars.Lan smiled, "Oh? If I'm not mistaken, it must be the Special Envoy of Radiant Empire?"

Fielding squinted his eyes, "Since you knew this, I assume you must be following us around secretly? Hmph, heretics will be heretics; always doing things in a sneaky manner!"

Ars.Lan suddenly laughed, the look in her eyes was as sharp as needles. She sneeringly said, "Fielding, were you not a Paladin of the Temple, I would have slain you because of what you just said! But I did not tail after you, I was just carrying out His Lordship Prometheus' orders to get in touch with the Radiant Empire's Special Envoy. I saw you coming out from the palace just now, so I followed you here, that's all." Her gaze deliberately swept up and down across Fielding's body and sneered. "It looks like you have lost really badly!"

Fielding snorted and replied loudly, "Yes! I've lost, so what?"

Ars.Lan slowly took a few steps forward and said, "How can one be so arrogant even after being defeated?"

Fielding was silent for a moment, then his lips suddenly curved into a smile, "Ars.Lan, I know you have always defied me and Augustine. If so, you can go challenge that Radiant Empire's Special Envoy as you wished! I would like to see if you will end up wretched like me!"

Ars.Lan shook her head, "I'm not going to do such a frivolous thing. Today I'm here to..." At this point, she intentionally lowered her voice.

Fielding frowned. "What is it?"

"To..." Ars.Lan's voice deepened and blurred. She silently moved a few steps closer, a murderous look flickered in her eyes, "To kill you!"

ksanas: There are two measurements of time found in Buddhist scripture: the ksana and the kalpa. Ksana is equivalent to one seventy-fifth of a second. A kalpa is an aeon. It is said there are 900 arisings and ceasings within each ksana. Probably the number 900 is not meant to be precise but rather is a poetic way of saying "a lot." So 50 ksanas will mean even more things can happen.

Chapter 255: A Night Perfect for Assassin

"To kill you!"

Ars.Lan's eyes flickered, and Fielding saw a flash of chilling light. His heart sank, and his body instinctively dodged backward.

Fielding landed a few meters away, and he felt a sudden pain at his chest. As he lowered his head he saw a bloody wound across his chest, the wound cut a half inch deep into his flesh, and blood was gushing from it. If Fielding had not reacted faster earlier, Ars.Lan would have cut him right across his waist.

"You want to kill me?" Fielding pressed hard on his wound and asked, feeling shocked and outraged.

Ars.Lan had a slender sword in her hand, and blood trickled from the sword's tip, "Are you very surprised, Fielding? You did not expect me to kill you?"

Fielding snorted.

Indeed, he did not expect Ars.Lan to want to kill him. Though they did not get along well, they were after all Paladins of the Temple. It did not make sense at all for Ars.Lan to kill him. He was not prepared for Ars.Lan's surprise attack. Otherwise, with his strength, he would not have been injured by his opponent's sword with just one strike.

Unless...

Fielding's face suddenly changed...unless she was ordered to do so!

Ars.Lan studied the changes on Fielding's face and sneeringly asked, "Why? Have you figured out?"

Fielding clenched his teeth, "Who the hell asked you to do so? Who? Prometheus?"

Ars.Lan pointed her long sword to the ground and slowly closed

in on Fielding. There was a slight smile on her beautiful face, but her eyes were cold and murderous, "What do you think?"

Fielding growled, "I don't believe it! I don't believe Prometheus would do this! I'm a Paladin of the Temple. Even if I have sinned, I can only be executed after an open trial by the Elders Council!"

"Tsk tsk tsk tsk..." Ars.Lan mocked in disdain. "Poor fellow! Why are you human Paladins so stubborn? Augustine was like that, so are you...fools!"

Fielding's eyes were burning with rage, "Ars.Lan, aren't you afraid of the Temple's prosecution for doing so? In consideration of my status, do you think you can cover it up if something bad happened to me?"

Ars.Lan chuckled and replied softly, "Why is there a need to cover up? After you die, Prometheus will publicize the matter as widely as possible!"

Fielding's heart immediately sank. He pondered for a moment before smiling bitterly, "I understand now! Prometheus has always wanted to be a Pontiff, but the various Roland kings have objected. Even though Prometheus was extremely powerful in the Temple's Elders Council, he feared that the Elders Council would sway in the face of the rage of the various Roland kingdoms. If...if a Paladin was found dead in the Sauron Kingdom...Hmph! You would have the pretext to declare war! A Paladin who has come officially to the Sauron Kingdom to handle religious affairs gets assassinated! Once this happened, the Temple and the various Roland kingdoms would be completely estranged!"

"You've finally figured it out!" Ars.Lan gently shook the long sword in her hands. The slender blade writhed supplely like a python.

"Hahahahaha!" Fielding tossed his head back and laughed, his laughter filled with rage. He stared at Ars.Lan and bellowed, "Despicable! Did Prometheus go berserk thinking of becoming the

Pontiff! He would stoop so low and carry out such despicable deeds! You and Prometheus are unworthy of the Temple! You two are the true culprits plotting against the Temple!"

Ars.Lan did not get mad at Fielding's accusation. She sighed and mocked in reply, "You are still so stubborn! Right from the start, I'm from the Dragon Tribe, not a member of the Temple! I was only following orders to assist Prometheus...As for Prometheus, as long as he successfully becomes the Pontiff, who cares whether or not he is a sinner?"

Fielding flared in anger. He pressed one hand on the wound across his chest, and the other clenched tight into a fist. Right now, with no weapons in his hands, his armor gone and an injury on his chest, it was not the best time to have a duel with a Paladin who was just as powerful as himself.

"What are you thinking?" Ars.Lan smiled. "Don't think of escaping, Fielding. Did you not realize something weird?" She held out a finger and pointed at the wound on Fielding's chest. She then smiled and continued, "With your power, you would have had some knowledge in the Light Series Spells. The reason you are talking to me for so long is to stop the bleeding from your wound using fighting energy...but after trying for quite some time, has the bleeding stopped? Haha...."

The expression on Fielding's face changed slightly. Indeed, he was secretly using fighting energy to heal the wound since just now. Though he was a Paladin, as a man of that rank he roughly knew how to perform the healing Light Series Spell. But after trying secretly for so long, not only the wound on his chest did not heal, it was bleeding faster than before.

"Your...your sword!" Fielding gritted his teeth.

"Not bad, Your Excellency Fielding..." Ars.Lan seemed not in a hurry to attack, "I knew you have been training hard behind closed doors in the Temple, and your power has greatly increased. How

could I easily risk my life to fight against you? So to save some effort, I had no choice but to apply some special materials from the Dragon Tribe on the sword..."

Fielding sneered, "Hmph! Those from the Dragon Tribe are indeed despicable heretics!"

Ars.Lan pursed her lips and smile, her gaze taunting, "Don't worry. Considering your power, I know it is impossible to kill you directly with poison. Moreover, if you died from poisoning, it will inevitably leave behind some evidence. So, I only applied some Dragon Saliva on the sword! This thing will only cause your wound to bleed continuously. It's nothing precious but being a Paladin, you will not be able to save yourself with that meager low-level healing spell unless a senior magician comes to your help!"

Thoughts flashed in Fielding's head like lightning. He abruptly dropped the hand pressing on the wound. Since the bleeding could not be stopped, there was no use covering the wound with his hand. It would be better to fight with both hands!

"Ars.Lan, it's not that easy to kill me! But you can give it a try!" Fielding clenched his fists and locked his gaze on the female Dragon Tribe Paladin, a murderous look in his eyes. He was finally able to completely open up his energy field, unlike just now when he was in the great hall. Due to the restriction of space in the great hall, it was impossible for him to completely release the flames of his fighting energy. But now, out in the open and wounded, he had to fight and win this battle speedily. A burst of fighting energy exploded from Fielding's body like a burning flame. He roared, "Come on!"

"Very well!" Ars.Lan thrust her sword forward without hesitation.

The strike of her sword glimmered chillingly like a shooting star. Fielding was defenseless with his bare hands, so he immediately hurled a light sword formed from gathered fighting energy to ward

off the attack. Boom! The light sword shattered, and Fielding instantly retreated. He spread his other hand and a light wave shot toward Ars.Lan's direction.

Ars.Lan sneered and held out one hand. Immediately, a wall of ice appeared in front of her.

A loud bang was heard. Fielding seized the moment and continued moving backward. Ars.Lan roared, "Trying to flee?" Her figure shot forward at high speed.

If the competition between them was solely based on speed, Ars.Lan, who also possessed the characteristics of a Wind Dragon, was slightly above Fielding, especially when Fielding was already wounded. In a haste, Ars.Lan pierced Fielding's shoulder with her sword, but she saw the deadly look in Fielding's eyes, "You've taken the bait!"

Suddenly, a fist struck her in the abdomen. The pain was so intense that she started seeing stars. She bent over and moved backward in a flash. Fielding, who was pierced in the shoulder, became even more dauntless, clenching his teeth as he struck his fist once again. Ars.Lan had no choice but to counter his blow with her palm.

Following a loud bang, intense energy exploded and both of them separated once again. Ars.Lan's arms were trembling slightly. That blow just now, Fielding, whom already achieved the peak in strength manipulation at a Paladin's level, had the upper hand. But after the impact, the wound on Fielding's chest was bleeding more profusely.

Both of them stared at each other and was cautious about launching a second attack. Earlier Fielding had intentionally lured his opponent to stab his shoulder, but now the wound was bleeding profusely. Being stabbed by a Paladin was no trivial matter. He was not invulnerable to swords like Rody. Besides, not only did Ars.Lan's sword pierce through his shoulder, the

shattered fighting energy further mutilated his wound. Right now, there was an unbearable pain at his shoulder, and it felt like he could not even raise that arm anymore. On the other hand, Ars.Lan was not any better. After that blow right in the abdomen, the pain was so terrible it felt like a storm was churning up the seas in her stomach.

Fielding had no choice but to strike again immediately. Right now, there were two wounds on his body, both bleeding profusely. The longer he dragged on, the more disadvantageous it would be for him, so he had to take the risk and attack forcefully.

Ars.Lan understood Fielding's intentions, but she did not want to continue the fight with force. Their strength was almost equal so if she were to put up a fierce fight, even if she successfully killed Fielding in the end, she herself would definitely sustain serious injuries too. Ars.Lan was not willing to pay such a high price...Moreover, she had other plans in mind!

The two of them engaged in another fierce battle. Ars.Lan, who possessed all three characteristics of snow, flame, and wind, decided to use the entanglement tactic. She avoided direct combat with Fielding but utilized her speed to dodge here and there, and occasionally sneaked a few attacks with her sword.

Two shadowy figures surrounded by golden fighting energy engaging in a fierce battle was clearly visible in the darkness of the night. The sounds of fighting energy exploding could be heard frequently and the intense energy emitted smashed deep pits on the ground.

Fielding roared repeatedly but the wounds on his chest and shoulder kept spurting blood. His upper body was already covered in blots of blood. Ars.Lan was extremely cunning. During the battle, she had no intention at all to fight directly with him. The sword in her hand was like a venomous snake striking at Fielding from time to time, causing him to dodge frantically. If Fielding had a sword in his hand, he would not have been afraid of her but now

that he was barehanded, he could not be using his body to ward off her sword, could he?

"Go to hell!" Fielding bellowed and pushed both of his hands forward. An enormous golden light ball suddenly formed between his palms, and a wave of light shot towards Ars.Lan. Ars.Lan's face changed. She dared not take the blow directly but instead, she tapped her feet lightly on the ground and leaped into the air! Fielding's light wave missed, passing right beneath Ars.Lan's feet. The continuous howling sounded like fierce wind and thunder, and a deep pit was blasted out on the street within twenty meters in front of him.

Ars.Lan smiled coldly, she then struck a blow with her sword while still in mid-air.

At this point, Fielding had already lost too much blood; his body was starting to feel cold and flaccid. He saw the sword coming down. If it was under normal circumstances, there were naturally lots of ways to ward it off or dodge but now that he could not even heave a breath from his chest, all he could do was to clasp his palms together.

Fielding drew his palms together and clamped Ars.Lan's sword between his palm. The sharp blade of the sword sliced through Fielding's palms, and blood trickled from his hands. If it were not because of the protection provided by the Paladin's fighting energy, his hands would have been disabled by now.

Both of them had exerted their maximum force. They were deadlocked for a moment, their bodies trembling slightly.

Ars.Lan suddenly sneered and twisted the sword with one hand. The sword's blade originally clamped between Fielding's palms suddenly turned horizontally. Fielding felt a sharp pain in his palms. He grunted and finally let go of both his hands, staggering backward. Ars.Lan seized the opportunity and delivered a blow to Fielding's chest using her palm!

Wham! Her palm, carrying the golden fighting energy of a Dragon Tribe Paladin, landed solidly on Fielding's chest. Though Fielding had the protection of fighting energy, he could not withstand the blow. He grunted as his body was thrown out from the impact, a few chest ribs fractured, and he collapsed on the floor.

Ars.Lan was panting heavily. During the fight, she too received a few blows from Fielding, especially one which landed on her arm shattering the armor. If Fielding had not been seriously wounded and weakened due to loss of blood, that arm would have been broken.

By now, they had been fighting fiercely for more than half an hour. Fielding's chest, shoulders, and arms sustained several cuts from Ars.Lan's sword. He was already bathed in blood.

Ars.Lan watched as Fielding struggled to get up from the ground. She sneered and asked, "Fielding, are you still not giving up? You can go on and use fighting energy! The more you try to use it, the more you will bleed! Let's see how much more blood you have left!"

Fielding seemed like he could barely stand. He had always been stubborn and arrogant, so one could imagine his wrath as he was brought to this state by an ambush. He coughed violently, and blood was coughed out from his mouth. The fractured ribs in his chest must have injured his lungs. He was breathing heavily as he said, "Ars.Lan, why aren't you attacking anymore? Come again! Let's see if you can successfully assassinate me today or it will be me, Fielding, who slays the dragon!"

Ars.Lan's gaze was gloomy. She did not expect Fielding, who had no weapons at all, could be so powerful even after her ambush. She had already gone all out just now but she too sustained some serious injuries.

It seemed like his power could not be underestimated as he was a

Paladin after all. If she really wanted to kill him, she would need to pay a great price.

Fielding sneered, "Are you going to stop now? Or is it because you are exhausted?"

"Pooh!" Ars.Lan wiped off the blood at the corner of her mouth. The blood was the result of several heavy blows she had received earlier.

"If you're not going to attack, then it's my turn now!" Fielding's eyes glowed with a strange light. Ars.Lan had a bad feeling when she saw Fielding's eyes.

Sure enough, balls of light suddenly appeared on the floor around the place where Ars.Lan was standing. The light balls then floated from the surface of the floor, each about the size of a fist!

Fielding struggled to raise his hands. Without warning he pressed his hands together, making a squeezing motion, and shouted, "Explode!"

The light balls, each the size of a fist, surrounding Ars.Lan suddenly shot towards her! Dozens of light balls exploded all at once!

In the midst of the explosions, Ars.Lan held her hands in front of her body, her head bowed and her back arched. The fighting energy surrounding her body immediately expanded!

As the sound of explosions gradually diminished and the ashes around her dispersed, she noticed that Fielding who was previously standing before her had already escaped!

Ars.Lan looked at the armor covering her body. It had been damaged beyond recognition following the explosions just now. She snorted in anger and struggled to support her body with her sword as she stood up. She said through clenched teeth, "Damn you, Fielding. I did not expect you to carry out such a cunning act!"

Ars.Lan was far too intelligent to not figure out Fielding's cheap

tricks!

It dawned on her that when they were engaged in the fight, Fielding had secretly split his fighting energy into dozens of fist-sized light balls and scattered them around Ars.Lan. With his extraordinary ability to control strength, the split external fighting energy did not explode immediately. Instead, they lingered around remaining dormant, in a calm static state! Ars.Lan did not even notice their presence! The light balls lingered quietly until Fielding triggered them from afar, finally igniting them!

He already had this all planned out! No wonder during their fight just now, when she thrust her sword at him, he would sometimes pretend to be unable to dodge when he could have actually evaded the attack—he must have been secretly laying out the traps!

He was definitely worthy of his reputation as a prestigious Paladin of the continent!

Ars.Lan rested for a short while and her breath slowly calmed down. She looked at the direction where Fielding disappeared. The gloom on her face suddenly disappeared and was replaced by a faintly discernible smile.

'Fielding, oh Fielding, you think you have won? Hmph...'

'It is a pity that you think you are smart. Did you really think that I was here to kill you? With your power as a Paladin, even if I managed to ambush you, it is not an easy task to kill you. Do you think I, Ars.Lan, would do things that I had no certainty of? Hmph...'

'Besides, did you really think what happened tonight was Prometheus' orders? Although he is arrogant and has wild ambitions, how would he dare to simply assassinate the Temple's Paladin? Hahahaha...you humans have always liked to act smart!'

'You would never have expected that I was here to merely hold you back, not to kill you!'

'Naturally, someone would die tonight! But that person would not be you....'

'Hmph! There is another person who came with you to the Sauron Kingdom...He is my actual target!'

'I assumed that now, at that place...they have already succeeded...You and that man are equally important in the Temple. No matter which one of you dies, the results will be the same for my plan, just that the process will be much easier.'

Killing an Elder of the Temple would definitely be much easier than killing a Paladin!

As she was thinking, Ars.Lan coughed a few times. She wiped off the bloodstains at the corner of her mouth and looked up into the sky.

Tonight, the sky was dark without the moon and stars. Ars.Lan mumbled to herself, "Tonight is definitely perfect for doing something sneaky!"

In the dark of the night, the sound of her weak breathing and coughing could be heard, mingled with the sound of her self-satisfied laugh.

Chapter 256: Aliens will not be Loyal

It was close to midnight now and a carriage was moving slowly on the streets of the Imperial City.

"You were in the limelight tonight." Seth, who had been enjoying the view by the window, suddenly said.

Rody sighed. "So what? In the end, I was used by that old fox, the King." His smile was somewhat bitter. "I had no choice. After all, I have come to Roland Continent with the aim of causing both sides to fight against each other. The greater the scale of the conflict, the better it will be for us. The King obviously knew our intentions, so we are just using each other."

Rody felt a bit frustrated. He had defeated a prestigious Paladin of the Roland Continent without much effort in tonight's banquet—although before this Rody had also defeated several other Paladins, this was the first time that he had done so in public. The duel tonight was significant in the sense that it not only forced those Roland Kingdoms to draw a clear line between themselves and the Temple, and it also showcased his power.

After all, the Radiant Empire already had peace talks with the Roland kingdoms, so they were allies from now on. The fact that Rody as the Special Envoy of the Empire had such extraordinary power definitely gave the Roland people a firm determination. These thoughts must be in the King's mind as well.

Besides, after the duel just now, the banquet continued even though the Paladin and Elder Gu Ming left one after another. The ambassadors from the various Roland kingdoms were obviously more hospitable to Rody, coming up to him one after another to show friendliness and court for his support. Once the war began, it would be a great advantage to have the support from a powerful foreign ally like the Radiant Empire—even though the Radiant Empire could not directly send armies across the Thunder Straits

to assist and fight the war, as long as they sent senior warriors like Rody, it would have a tremendous effect on the battlefield! Right now, there were no warriors among the Roland kingdoms who could match the Paladins!

Seth was silent for a moment, then he suddenly laughed, "You are indeed unsuitable to deal with such matters. You seemed a bit clumsy when faced with such situations filled with conspiracy and deceit."

Rody rolled his eyes but he nodded in agreement. "You're right! I suppose you are more suitable than me."

Suddenly, Seth asked, "Have you ever thought about what you will do with me when the matters in the Roland Continent come to an end?"

Rody laughed and leaned back in the chair lazily. "Bring you back, and let Nicole decide what to do with you."

Seth pouted. "Is there any room for discussion?"

"No!" Rody replied flatly.

Seth scorned. "I'm afraid it's for your own sake that you want me to go back. In order to be together with my sister, you can no longer pretend to be the Duke of the Tulip Family, am I right?"

Rody replied in a deep voice, "And also to let you shoulder the responsibilities that you are supposed to bear! The child in the queen's womb! As well as your family's burden..."

"And Myka, too?" Seth asked Rody sarcastically.

Rody paused for a while before he looked up and stared at Seth, saying in a cold voice, "It's better that you never bring up anything about Myka in front of me ever again! You've hurt her once, I absolutely will not allow you to hurt her for the second time! She's my woman now."

Seth looked like he wanted to laugh, but Rody added coldly, "In

this world, there are some words that should not be said! And there are some things that should not be done! Once you've done it, you will have to bear the necessary responsibilities! Don't think that you can challenge the rules of this world!"

Seth seemed to be unmoved, "Don't worry, I have no intentions towards Myka..."

Rody suddenly smiled, but his smile was as cold as ice, "It's best that you do not, if you do ..." His gaze was fixed on Seth's face as he continued in a cold tone, "I will not hesitate to kill you. I definitely will."

Though Seth did not usually have much feelings, what Rody said managed to send chills down his spine.

Seth burst into laughter in an attempt to hide his true thoughts. He pointed at Rody's nose and laughed loudly, "Surprise! Surprise! You silly boy have learned to fight over women, hahahaha..."

Rody did not get mad. Instead, he asked softly, "You don't believe me?"

Seth halted his laughter. He took a deep breath and smiled wryly, "I do believe. You aren't the silly little boy whom I've chosen anymore."

They sat in silence again but not for long, as Seth suddenly asked another question, "That Paladin Fielding, you said he has recognized you?"

Rody nodded. "I think so. It's just that I'm not sure if he will tell the Temple about this. I guess ..."

As he was saying this, Rody suddenly stopped and the expression on his face changed. He suddenly squeezed towards Seth and opened the carriage's window, saying in a deep voice, "Something is going on out there!"

"What?" Seth asked curiously.

Rody fixed his gaze outside the window, and then he closed his eyes, seemingly listening to something, but there was only silence in the surroundings except for the sound of hooves and wheels rolling.

"What are you looking at?"

"There!" Rody pointed to a direction outside the window and said in a grave manner, "There's somebody fighting over there! And both are masters! I can feel the fluctuations of energy!"

"Oh?" Seth suddenly became interested.

Rody closed his eyes, seemingly trying to sense something. His brows suddenly drew together, "Hmm? It seems like...one of them is Fielding! The other one...is a bit strange..."

Seth's eyes lit up. "Fielding? For one to fight with a Paladin, his or her strength must be quite good too!"

Rody suddenly yelled, "Stop the carriage!"

The carriage came to an abrupt stop, and two guards from the Royal Knights came by the window.

"Your Excellency Special Envoy, what are your orders?"

Rody pushed open the door and hopped down the carriage without saying a word. He seemed to look far away with an astonished look on his face.

Seth followed Rody closely and hopped down from the carriage, smiling. "Since it's strange, we might as well go have a look?"

"Okay!" Rody was about to leave, and Seth hurriedly said, "I'll go with you!"

Rody shot a glance at Seth, but Seth smiled, "What if someone comes with intentions to harm me, do you think I, a weak lady, can fight them off? There is still a long distance to the Summer Palace from here!"

Rody pondered for a moment. 'Right now, Seth's identity is Miss

Nicole, if the Temple actually comes after him, these Royal Knights would not have the ability to ensure his safety.'

Rody nodded. The Royal Knights then watched in shock as he held out a hand and grabbed Seth's collar, lifting him up by the collar and leaped forward with a huge step. In just the blink of an eye, they had already gone more than ten meters away!

Rody ignored Seth's cries, and he had already run past a few streets in just a few moments. Seth was cursing angrily as he could only hear the wind whistling past his ears, and the houses on both sides moving backward rapidly.

Rody ran for some time, gradually nearing the city gate. As he was hurrying towards that direction, he suddenly heard a few cries coming from the side.

Rody abruptly stopped, and a brief cry could be heard coming from an alley behind the piazza on the left. According to Rody's experience, it was a cry from a person who was seriously wounded!

"Somebody's there...." Without waiting for Seth's reply, Rody put him down and shouted, "You stay here and don't come near!" He then ran towards the direction of the cry.

This place seemed a bit remote. Rody had just run two steps forward when he saw several patrol soldiers of the Imperial City lying on their stomachs with their bodies scattered around haphazardly on the floor, obviously been knocked out by their attackers. Rody frowned and quickened his pace.

The person in the alley seemed to have heard someone approaching and gave another cry of help. Rody saw a bright white light flashed in the originally dark alley, and as he came closer he saw a person lying on the floor!

To be exact, it was a corpse!

The corpse on the ground was wearing a white robe belonging to the clergy of the Temple. The body laid crookedly on the floor, half

of it was covered with fresh red blood, and a standard cross-shaped sword belonging to a knight was impaled on his chest. When Rody came closer, he noticed that this person was someone he was familiar with! It was the Temple's Elder Gu Ming, whom he had met in the palace earlier tonight!

Rody's face immediately changed.

The elder of the Temple had just died here!

The cry must have been from Gu Ming as there was no one else here, and the assailants must be still nearby! Struck with such thought, he leaped onto the roof and gazed into the distance. Under the night sky, he could vaguely make out a few figures fleeing far away. Rody frowned, and as he was about to go after them, he heard a slight noise from the corpse beneath.

Rody immediately jumped down from the roof and saw the supposedly dead Gu Ming opened his eyes suddenly.

Rody bent down and frowned, "Elder Gu Ming?"

Gu Ming seemed to be in a delirious state. He could sense somebody in front of him but in haste, he must have thought it was the assailants who ambushed him. He suddenly growled and raised his hands, a light ball shot towards Rody without warning. They were at such a close distance, and Rody did not expect Gu Ming to suddenly attack him.

On top of that, the power of the Temple's Elder was not weak. The light ball, seemingly a Fire Faction sorcery, hit Rody on the chest. Rody's body jolted, the huge shock forced him a few steps backward. Although he was unharmed, the clothes covering his chest was already charred.

Rody yelled, "Elder Gu Ming, it's me..."

Gu Ming's eyes were wide open but suddenly, his body stiffened, his hands dropped, and he was dead.

Rody was shocked. He raised Gu Ming's body and examined it

carefully, and found that he was really dead. He then looked around and noticed that there were traces of a fight, but not much. Obviously, it was just a brief fight. Since the power of a Temple's Elder was not weak, it would take more than one person to kill him, and he was most probably ambushed.

"How is it?" Seth's voice rang from behind.

Rody placed down Gu Ming and sighed, "Have a look!"

Seth glanced at Gu Ming on the floor, his facial expression became weird, "Hmm, it's him?"

Rody smiled wryly, "Seems like another conspiracy. An Elder of the Temple dying here..."

Seth's eyes flickered as his thoughts raced. "You're right! He just made an appearance at the palace, and he and the various Roland kingdoms have publicly turned against each other. Then not long after that, he is found dead here! There's a huge problem in this!"

Rody replied in a deep voice, "I don't think it's the King. He has no reasons to do this!"

Seth was deep in thought, "Hmm, you said you could sense that Fielding is battling with someone outside the city...Gu Ming is dead here...Oh no!"

He suddenly yelled, "We need to leave here fast!"

"What?"

Seth looked somewhat panicked, "Idiot! Leave now!"

He ran towards Rody, trying to pull his hands and leave. Sure enough, they heard a loud roar from the intersection, "What have you done!"

Fielding had suddenly appeared at the intersection. He was half-naked, and his body was covered in blood. There were several wounds on his chest, shoulders, and arms. The ones on his chest and shoulder were especially bad, with blood gushing out

profusely.

He immediately saw Gu Ming on the floor with a sword impaled in his body, and also Rody who was standing beside with bloodstains on him. He suddenly snarled and struck his fist at Rody. Rody frowned and pulled Seth aside. Fielding did not pursue to attack but knelt down on the floor and lifted Gu Ming, roaring in rage, "Did you kill him?"

He dropped Gu Ming and stood up, glaring angrily at Rody, "Tulip! Why did you do this?"

Rody sighed, "It wasn't me, I was just passing by."

"Do you think I'm blind!" Fielding's mind was in chaos now. A moment ago, he was ambushed by Ars.Lan and poisoned by Dragon Saliva, causing him to bleed profusely. Even though he was powerful, as a Paladin he was not skilled in sorcery, so he had to turn back to seek help from Gu Ming who was an expert in sorcery. And then he saw this scene before his eyes.

"There's blood on your body! And the clothes on your chest were charred! Isn't this due to attacks by Gu Ming using sorcery!" Fielding looked as if he could not even stand properly. He had just gone through a fierce battle and was injured badly. On top of that, he had shed too much blood, so he was very weak. He clenched his fists and glared at Rody, "Why did you do this? Did the Sauron King order you to do so? You've killed Gu Ming to defy the Temple! Am I right!"

Rody was not good at handling such situations. He indeed had blood on his body, but this could be easily explained. The problem was with the blow that Gu Ming gave him before he died, thinking that Rody was one of the assailants. This had made things a bit hard to be explained.

When Fielding saw that Rody did not answer immediately, he growled and lunged at Rody with golden fighting energy radiating from his body.

Right now, Fielding was surging with emotions and was completely controlled by rage. Though the blow was powerful, it did not hit Rody. As Rody dodged, he heard a big boom and behind him, a large hole was blasted out of the wall of one of the houses by Fielding.

"Fielding, listen to me!" Rody sighed. As he was about to speak, Fielding struggled up from the ruins, roared and charged at Rody once again. Rody had no choice but to dodge again. A thundering boom was heard as Fielding's fist landed on the floor where Rody was previously standing, and a deep pit appeared on the stone floor.

"I'll kill you!" Fielding's eyes were red with anger. He suddenly pressed his palms together; his aura rapidly intensified. Between his palms, a huge light ball was forming at high speed.

Rody's face changed slightly, "Do you want to destroy this place!?"

Just as Rody finished his sentence, a huge light ball already shot out from Fielding's hands. The energy ball gathered all of Fielding's power, and Rody knew he could not dodge this time because if he did, the street behind him would probably be destroyed by Fielding.

His eyes flickered with anger. In the face of Fielding's indiscriminate attacks, his temper started to flare up as well. As the energy ball approached, Rody's eyes glinted and he suddenly waved his hand.

After a dull thud, the blow delivered by Fielding using all his strength was deflected away by Rody without much effort. The energy ball then soared into the sky and disappeared quickly like a meteor in the night sky.

Fielding refused to let it off easily and tried to charge at Rody again. Rody grabbed Fielding's fist and twisted it hard. Fielding howled in pain and collapsed on the floor.

He struggled for a few while but in the end, he did not have the energy to move anymore. Rody said coldly, "Fielding, I did not kill Gu Ming!"

Fielding did not seem to believe him. Seth who was standing at the side suddenly spoke; his voice too was cold, "Idiot, if he was the culprit, with his power he could have easily killed you too right now. Why would he need to talk so much nonsense with you?"

Seth's words were more useful than anything else. Fielding was stunned for a moment after he heard this, and he actually stopped struggling.

Rody gave Seth a grateful look and sighed, "I was passing by this place just now when I saw Gu Ming being ambushed. I wanted to go after the assailants, but then I noticed Gu Ming wasn't dead yet, so I had to delay the chase, but then..." He pointed at his chest where the fireball spell had left its mark, smiling bitterly, "Gu Ming must have been in a delirious state and thought of me as his assailants, so he gave me a blow."

He then recounted in detail about what had happened. He told him about how he ended up here to check things out due to curiosity after he sensed that there was a fight outside the city and the energy waves that were emitted were similar to Fielding's.

Rody held out his hands and pulled Fielding up. His expression was serious as he said, "This was what happened. If you don't believe me, you should consider this properly. I'm from the Radiant Empire, what good does it do to me if I kill Gu Ming? Today at the palace, the King's side and the Temple's side have already turned against each other. If I kill Gu Ming at this time, it serves no purpose at all! Besides, I already know that Gu Ming is Mouse's teacher, why would I do such a thing?"

Fielding was silent for some time, and finally some trust appeared in his expression, "Okay, I got it."

His body was still trembling slightly as he walked back to Gu

Ming and knelt down on both knees. There was sorrow on his face, "Elder Gu Ming...Elder Gu Ming..." A murderous look suddenly flashed in his eyes, "It must be her! That bitch! And also, Prometheus! It must be them! She ambushed me on the way and at the same time sent someone else to ambush Gu Ming!"

Fielding paused here and tossed his head back in a wild laugh, "Prometheus! Have you become heartless and barbaric just for the sake of becoming the Pontiff? How could you so ruthlessly kill Elder Gu Ming!"

As he was speaking, his breath seemed to get caught in his throat, and his body was swaying dangerously. Rody saw this and held out his hand to support Fielding. He frowned and asked, "How did you end up with so many wounds on your body?"

Fielding gasped for breath and his voice was a bit weak, "I was ambushed by another Dragon Tribe Paladin of the Temple! Prometheus wanted to kill me! The reason is because not everyone in the Temple supports the move to declare war on the various Roland kingdoms. If we died here, this would successfully incite hatred in the Temple towards the Roland kingdoms! When they are united with hatred, they can...can...." Before he could finish, Fielding was too exhausted, and his body quivered, and he fainted.

He had lost too much energy tonight and was seriously wounded. Most importantly, he was poisoned by Ars.Lan's Dragon Saliva so the wounds on his body could not heal, causing him to shed too much blood. No matter how tough a Paladin was, he was after all just a human made of flesh and blood. After losing so much blood, he finally could not cope and passed out.

Rody sighed. He shook Fielding a few times, but Fielding's eyes remained tightly shut. He frowned and said, "It seems like he is seriously wounded."

Seth smiled, the expression on his face was as sly as a fox, "Why don't you just kill him? Isn't he your rival in love? Are you going to

bring him back and let Mouse see him? For all I know, women tend to have a very sympathetic heart..."

Seth noticed Rody's glare and immediately clarified, "I'm just joking."

He finally stopped smiling and asked in a serious manner, "You can bring Fielding back, but what about this guy?" He pointed at Gu Ming on the ground, "Are you going to bring this corpse back too?"

Rody crouched down to examine Gu Ming's wounds and frowned, "It must be a sorcerer who ambushed him! When I came in just now, I saw a flash of bright light which belongs to sorcery. But they intentionally impaled a knight's sword in Gu Ming's chest...Obviously, they are trying to frame the Sauron Kingdom..."

Seth smiled bitterly, "Don't tell me you're really planning to bring this corpse back!"

Rody frowned, "If not, what should I do?"

Seth sighed and gave Rody a pitying look, "You really are incompetent when it comes to political matters! Didn't you hear what Fielding said just now? Not all within the Temple supports the declaration of war with the Roland kingdoms! Now, with Gu Ming dead, this will incite hatred within the Temple towards the Roland kingdoms! Prometheus can proceed to eliminate the objections within the Temple, and both parties can then battle against each other!" He suddenly looked at Rody with a sneer on his face, "The purpose of you coming to Roland continent, isn't it to start a war between both parties?"

Rody's expression was far from friendly, "You mean we should just dump the body here?"

Seth asked in reply, "Do you have better suggestions?"

Rody sighed, "I can't do that!" He gazed at Seth, "No matter what, he is Mouse's teacher. I cannot leave his body here like that!"

Moreover..." He suddenly smiled, "I've heard of a saying: All that are opposed by the enemy, we shall support! All that is supported by the enemy, we shall oppose! So, I cannot leave Gu Ming's body here! Although I don't have any other reasons, my intuition is telling me that it would be useful by doing so!"

Rody ignored the look on Seth's face and lifted Fielding. He then held out one palm...

A black flame suddenly rose from his palm. The flame fell on Gu Ming's body and rapidly set it on fire, causing it to melt. Not only Gu Ming's body but also the cross-shaped sword impaled on his body too gradually vanished into the flames. In the end, not even a speck of dust was left!

Seth watched Rody's actions in shock. He suddenly gasped, "You...are you using the 'Hellfire'?"

He looked at Rody with a serious expression, "How did you know how to use this?" His expression was rarely so grave. "I've read about it in some legends. 'Hellfire' is not something ordinary! Even if you're a Domain Master, according to legends, 'Hellfire' can only be performed by Gods! As a human, even after achieving domain power, it is still impossible to perform the 'Hellfire'!"

Seth looked into Rody's eyes and asked in a strange tone, "You're not a human?"

His tone was very strange, but he did not seem like he was joking.

...

The Temple, atop a misty mountain peak.

Beside the main peak on a slightly lower peak, there was a black building. Inside the building, a large Hexagram Sorcerer Array suddenly flashed, and a person walked out from the sorcerer array.

It was Ars.Lan.

Ars.Lan's face was pale. The armor she was wearing was

damaged in several places and there were also holes in her cloak.

"Are you injured?" A cold voice rang from the side. A figure cloaked in black emerged slowly from the corner. He was cleverly hidden in the dark recess of the corner by the black cloak.

Even though he was asking 'are you injured?', his tone did not sound like he was deeply concerned.

Ars.Lan's face was as cold as his, "Are you hoping that I'm dead as well?"

That person did not refute her. Instead, he continued calmly, "After you left, I've been watching the life clock on the walls. The flames on Ni Lin's and the others have already extinguished, yours is the only one still burning now. I was waiting to see when will that blow out too."

Ars.Lan gave a small laugh. The laughter was tinged with a sense of anger.

The person asked flatly, "Are you angry? Absolutely unnecessary. Although we are both from the Dragon Tribe, I abide by the agreement. I'm just giving you an advice, don't think that your little trick could fool Prometheus. He's not a person who can be easily dealt with! Though your intentions of planning for the Dragon Tribe are good...from what I see, you're playing with fire!"

Ars.Lan's tone was sarcastic, "So you willingly abide by the agreement and willingly work for Prometheus? Even after you watch Ni Lin and the others die, you are still willing to continue to work for Prometheus?"

"Yes," the person replied lightly. "At least I know that by doing this, it will not bring catastrophe to the Dragon Tribe! A few dead are better than many dead! But I need to correct you a bit...I did not 'willingly' work for him."

Ars.Lan sneered. "Whatever! But I'm telling you, things had been successful for this trip to the Imperial City of the Sauron Kingdom!

That person seemed to sigh and shook his head. He did not continue to refute her but asked softly instead, "So are you preparing to go meet Prometheus right now?"

"Yes!" Ars.Lan moved to the side of the room and started to remove her armor. Even though there was another person in the room, her actions did not slow down.

First, she removed her armor, and then her underclothes. Within moments, she was already completely naked!

This Dragon Tribe female Paladin not only had a beautiful face, after her armor was removed, a body so perfect that even the Creator would gasp in admiration was revealed.

She had a slender figure. Her shoulders looked as though it was carved out with a knife. Her torso was tall and straight, and her skeletal framework was evenly structured. She held her plumpy chest up high, without the slightest care about the mocking gaze cast from beside. Her legs were straight and thin, buttocks round and firm and the skin over her whole body was fine and smooth without any flaws.

Ars.Lan gazed coldly at the person beside her, "Are you done with the gawking? If yes, then bring me my armor now!"

The person's gaze slowly turned from cold to passionate, there was some obsession in the way he looked at her. He seemingly chuckled when he heard Ars.Lan's icy voice. He walked towards her and tried to place his hand on Ars.Lan's shoulder. Ars.Lan frowned and moved away, and she warned him coldly, "If you touch me again, I will kill you immediately!"

That person took a step back. Though his body and face were hidden beneath a black veil, his eyes could be seen flickering with deep hatred. Finally, he let out a long breath and slowly waved his hands. After a flash of bright light, a set of clothes appeared on

Ars.Lan's body, followed by a golden armor...

There were no changes on Ars.Lan's expression after she was covered in clothes, but the look in that person's eyes seemed relieved.

Ars.Lan drew her brows together and looked at him, saying sneeringly, "I'm going to meet Prometheus!" She turned and was about to leave, but she suddenly added icily, "You'd better not look at me like that next time! It makes me feel so disgusted! If you like it so much, you should take off your own clothes and look at yourself!"

That person seemingly chuckled and said suddenly, "Be careful when you meet Prometheus! Something happened when you were not around these two days."

"Oh?" Ars.Lan halted her steps.

That person continued softly, "It's Augustine! It seems Prometheus wanted to release him! Although this suggestion has not been passed by the Elders Council, I think it's just a matter of time before they do."

Ars.Lan frowned, "Are they willing to forgive Augustine even though he had committed such a serious crime?"

That person laughed disdainfully and said in a light voice, "Augustine is a Paladin after all! They are in need of people now. Although your power is not bad, and Prometheus requires the help of us Dragon Tribe, but they humans cannot possibly trust the Dragon Tribe entirely! I heard that the humans have a saying which goes like this, 'Those from an alien race will not have a loyal heart'!"

He paused and looked at Ars.Lan smilingly, "Although these words sound mean, I think they fit you perfectly. You indeed have ill intentions towards Prometheus..."

Chapter 257: Prometheus

The main building of the Temple was situated at the peak of the highest mountain. The whole building was built with slabs of huge square stones. The style of the architecture was somewhat similar to those in Sauron.

Ars.Lan walked across the suspension bridge between the mountains. As she glanced at the hundreds of devoted practitioners and pilgrims down on all fours beneath the flight of stairs, she had a weird feeling creeping in her heart. To her, these poor fellows were as pitiful as ants—perhaps in the eyes of the gods, they were indeed just ants.

The people who were praying on all fours saw Ars.Lan and recognized her as a noble Paladin of the Temple through her clothing. They chanted loudly pious praises, keeping their heads bowed as they dared not to look at Ars.Lan directly.

Even though she had seen this scene many times, Ars.Lan still could not help but look up at the Temple erected at the top of the stairs when she passed by these people as she walked up the steps...

Perhaps the feeling of being worshipped by millions of people was not bad after all...And Prometheus who stood in the Temple above every day overlooking all these beneath...this must be how it felt like to be a god!

After climbing a total of one hundred steps, there was a huge platform. Across the platform, further up was the restricted area of the Temple. During normal days, unless the Chief Elder called for a meeting, only the top-level clergies like members of the Elders Council, Saints and Paladins could go up there. Although there were no guards around when Ars.Lan passed by this place, she absolutely did not think that the Temple's restricted area had no defenses as it seemed.

Despite not sensing any murderous aura and fluctuations of

sorcery energy, every time Ars.Lan walked past this place, she could intuitively sense some danger. She quickened her pace and walked across the platform, continuing up the steps.

The main building of the Temple had several levels. The first level was a very magnificent great hall. The great hall was supported by twenty-four huge, beautifully carved pillars. The carvings on the pillars were from an unknown age, the designs and characters on it were beyond recognition. There were also some strange symbols which seemed like a kind of writing.

Below each huge pillar was a two-meter-high bronze stand which held candles made from butter. Though the flames were kept burning throughout the year, the overly spacious hall still looked somewhat dim.

At the center of the great hall was a thirteen-step staircase. On top of the stairs was a faintly visible lone figure. The figure was not tall but in the eyes of many, he was too superior beyond reach. His white robe seemed a bit worn out, but it still looked luxurious and sacred on him, emitting a dignified aura. His long black hair was simply tied at the back of his head with a silk ribbon...and his face...

His face was covered with a mask made of pure silver from the nose upwards; only his mouth was revealed. The two lips were gently pursed together and slightly curved upwards which made him look like he was forever smiling.

As Ars.Lan was studying him, she could sense a solemn glare from above. She immediately bowed her head and said loudly, "Your Excellency Prometheus, did you summon me?"

"Yes, Ars.Lan." Although Prometheus seemed like he was already sixty or seventy years old, his voice did not sound old but was instead gentle and pleasant to the ear. His tone was calm but grave, "I suppose you've brought me some extraordinary news. Am I right?"

The gaze came from behind the mask and lightly swept across Ars.Lan and she immediately felt a heavy sense of pressure. Although this was not the first time she met Prometheus, every time she met this mysterious legendary 'man chosen by the gods', she would always feel as though she was being crushed by a mountain. Prometheus' eyes seemed like he could look through everything. For a fleeting moment, Ars.Lan actually felt panic rising in her heart.

"Yes, Your Excellency!" Ars.Lan dared not raise her head. She could still feel his gaze lingering on her, so she bowed and continued, "I acted under your orders to go to Sauron's Imperial City. I've met the Special Envoy from the Radiant Empire and he was willing to accept your summon. He will come to the Temple to meet you when the time is suitable."

Prometheus' figure flickered under the dim lights of the great hall. His voice then came lightly from above. "The Special Envoy of the Radiant Empire, what is he like? "

Ars.Lan sighed, "Your Excellency, I can only say that he is very powerful! His power was so strong that I'm not his match! If you're really curious about his power, I think His Excellency Augustine knows better than me."

Prometheus seemingly chuckled. His tone, though calm, had a hint of warning in it. "You don't have to remind me about Augustine's issues. The Elders Council will make a fair decision..."

Ars.Lan frowned. "Your Excellency, when I was coming back, something else happened..."

She seemed like she could not withstand Prometheus' imposing manner and kept her head bowed, continuing in a deep voice, "At the Sauron Palace, His Excellency Paladin Fielding had a duel with that Special Envoy from Radiant Light Empire. Unfortunately, Fielding was defeated in the end. The King of Sauron has wild ambitions, and the other Roland kings too seem ready for

actions...I was thinking..."

"Enough." Prometheus calmly stopped Ars.Lan and said in a light voice, "I'm not concerned about those things."

The expression on Ars.Lan's face was hesitant. She deliberately sighed and said, "It's a pity that His Excellency Fielding was defeated by the Radiant Empire's Special Envoy. The Roland kingdoms are now more determined to rebel. And I'm afraid it won't be easy for Elder Gu Ming and His Excellency Fielding to deal with matters regarding Black Veil's apostasy in the Sauron Kingdom."

Prometheus was silent for a moment. Ars.Lan stood there with her head bowed, waiting for the voice above. But after a while, Prometheus suddenly said softly, "Ars.Lan, you're one of the few clever ones I've met in the Dragon Tribe." He sighed suddenly, "This was why I've chosen you among others of the Dragon Tribe to come with me to the Temple. It's a pity that..."

His tone gradually became gloomy, "You've never really understood my intentions."

Ars.Lan's heart pounded, but she remained silent.

Prometheus continued lightly, "Use your intelligence in the right place. Ars.Lan, do not try to provoke me...I think the chief of your Dragon Tribe must have warned you before regarding this."

"Your Excellency, I don't understand what you mean! " Ars.Lan felt uneasy, but she replied humbly.

Prometheus gave out a soft sigh, "I hope you will remember this. I'm a man of my word. Because of the agreement, you and your people from the Dragon Tribe were forced to support me, but I will keep my promise. When this matter comes to an end, the agreement which was chained to the heads of the Dragon Tribe for thousands of years, I will seal it up forever!"

Ars.Lan's lips curled into a sneer, but she bowed her head low, so

it was impossible for Prometheus, who was standing above, to see her expression. She spoke in a solemn and respectful tone, "Thank you for your kindness."

"Kindness?" All of a sudden, Prometheus laughed; his laughter was filled with mockery. "You're wrong, I'm not a kind person...Although I've decided to forgive your sin this time, I will not allow this to happen again."

"Your Excellency, I still don't understand what you mean!" Ars.Lan frowned.

Prometheus seemed like he did not want to continue any further. He stated lightly, "All you have to do is remember what I said."

Ars.Lan stood for a while and realized that Prometheus did not seem interested to continue the conversation. She felt a growing sense of oppression under his gaze. This pressure made Ars.Lan feel icy cold from head to toe, and deep in her heart, she had a strong urge to run. She could not help but raise her head and glanced at Prometheus who was standing high above.

The figure up there stood in loneliness, and it was empty in here without another person in sight...Under the ominous pressure, Ars.Lan panicked and a thought which frightened herself popped up in her mind, 'He is now less than twenty steps away from me. If I go all out and strike him with my sword, I might be able to kill him!'

When this ruthless thought came to her mind, Ars.Lan herself was terrified. But deep inside her heart, there was a faintly discernible voice which enticed her telling her to give in to the temptation of this thought...She had the power of a Paladin. If she suddenly attacked now...

But then Ars.Lan felt chills running down her back, and she immediately forced herself to dismiss this tempting idea.

Prometheus' voice came from above, "Ars.Lan, next time after

you've killed someone, remember to remove the traces completely. If you can't even learn this, I will be very disappointed with your intelligence."

Ars.Lan suddenly froze. A frightening thought came up in her mind, 'Does he know already?'

"Hehe..." Prometheus' smile looked somewhat warm, "You don't have to be afraid, I've already decided to forgive you for acting without authorization."

Ars.Lan bit her lower lip subconsciously. She then made up her mind and asked, "Your Excellency, what are you trying to say exactly? If you're doubtful about my actions, please send His Excellency Augustine or His Excellency Fielding to complete the task in place of me instead!"

Prometheus seemingly smiled, and he spoke with a mocking tone, "Augustine? Do you really wish for him to be released from confinement? As for Fielding...Ars.Lan, do you think Fielding will still come back after what you've done in Sauron's Imperial City?"

Ars.Lan was immediately lost for words and cold sweat broke out from her forehead. She gritted her teeth and looked up but as she was about to say something, Prometheus waved his hand and spoke again. There were no traces of anger in his voice, "I just want you to understand that Paladins are valuable assets of the Temple! I've already lost Augustine, and your stupid move caused the loss of another trustworthy warrior of the Temple...although..." He seemed to have thought of something, "Although your actions did have some effects, if only such a meager result was obtained in exchange of a Paladin's loyalty, it makes me feel very dissatisfied."

His words struck Ars.Lan hard like a hammer hitting on her heart. Her body involuntarily trembled, and she asked in a hoarse voice, "Your Excellency, you already knew?"

Prometheus sighed, "The relationship between me and Gu Ming is not as simple as you think. Before he died, he sent me a magical

seal!" The pair of eyes behind the mask stared at Ars.Lan intensely — Although there were rumors saying that one of his eyes was blind, his gaze was as sharp as a blade, "If it was not because I need your ability now, the Dragon Tribe will suffer a great calamity due to your foolishness!"

Ars.Lan plucked up her courage and asked, "Is that so? Your Excellency! But what I did will undoubtedly be of great benefit to you! Some in the Elders Council has always been against war, and now with this incident as a trigger, the opposing voices will soon vanish...Isn't this what you're hoping for?"

Prometheus was silent for a moment before he continued slowly, "You are well aware of this which was why you dared to do so? You knew that even if I find out what you did, I will not punish you severely, isn't that so?"

Ars.Lan did not say anything because she knew Prometheus was not finished yet. Sure enough, Prometheus continued, "I did hope that the opposing voices will vanish, but if the price of that is losing a trustworthy great warrior, then I will not be happy about that! And you, Ars.Lan, after Augustine was imprisoned and now if Fielding is also forced to apostatize, I'm afraid this is the situation you're hoping to see! Do you really think that, by getting rid of the two human Paladins, this will be of great benefit to your Dragon Tribe? Or do you think that after losing the only two human Paladins, I will have no other choice but to depend on you?"

Ars.Lan remained silent—she had no idea what to say now! Prometheus had completely spoken out her true thoughts with such a casual tone!

Yes! Augustine was already imprisoned for committing a great sin, and after Gu Ming's death, Fielding would have believed what she said, thinking that Prometheus wanted to get rid of him. If so, Fielding would have apostatized just like Black Veil Saint!

The only two human Paladins had collapsed, so the only person

Prometheus could rely on from now on, was her, Ars.Lan!

The Dragon Tribe and the Temple were never true friends—Strictly speaking, the relationship between Dragon Tribe and the Temple should be enemies! Thousands of years ago, during the era of war between Gods and Demons, the Dragon Tribe had betrayed the Gods. They were subdued after being defeated, and an agreement between the Dragon Tribe and the Gods had been passed down since ancient times! The terms of the agreement were very simple: firstly, the Dragon Tribe must stay in their own territory and never ever step out from their territory!

Secondly, whoever possessed this agreement could request the Dragon Tribe to do anything! Nobody knew how Prometheus got ahold of this agreement, but one day he came to the Dragon Tribe's territory alone bringing with him this agreement and from then on, he got the support of the Dragon Tribe!

Putting the agreement aside, the Dragon Tribe and the Temple were archenemies!

"You are indeed intelligent, Ars.Lan." Prometheus sighed. "How smart of you to be able to think of using this opportunity to weaken the Temple's strength. You caused me to lose an Elder and a Paladin at once! But too bad you're not a human after all so no matter how hard you learn, you won't be able to master the scheming and conspiracy tactics of the humans!"

Prometheus paused and gave out a light laugh, "Ars.Lan, you should feel lucky! You are a Paladin, so I will not punish you for now as I still need to utilize your ability! But just this once! If next time I find you doing something 'smart' again, I will let you experience a special emotion of the human beings: regret!"

Ars.Lan knew it was useless to say anything now, so she bowed and waited for Prometheus' final decision on her punishment. It suddenly occurred to her that, perhaps what that guy said just now did make some sense. Prometheus was definitely a person whom

she could not easily deal with!

"Your Excellency, what's your decision?" Ars.Lan's voice was deep and heavy.

Prometheus replied lightly, "Now that you've done it, regardless of it being right or wrong, at least reduce its negative effects to the minimum! If Fielding truly apostatizes due to your presumptuous act, well, I hope that you will be fully responsible for this matter..."

"What do you mean?"

"Kill him!" Prometheus' voice was emotionless, "If Fielding apostatizes and joins our enemies, then kill him! Since his ability cannot be of use to us anymore, then we must not let our enemies have his assistance too!"

"Okay, I will take care of this matter." Ars.Lan seemingly heaved a sigh of relief.

"Meanwhile..." Prometheus' voice gradually became cold, "Although I will not condemn you for your actions, in order to express my discontent, a little punishment for you is necessary."

As he was saying, he slowly held out his palm.

A greenish flame suddenly appeared on his palm, and the flame shot towards Ars.Lan at high speed! Ars.Lan clenched her teeth and forced herself to refrain from dodging or resisting. She knew Prometheus only wanted to deter her and did not intend to take her life.

The green flame went straight at Ars.Lan's face. Immediately, she grunted, and her body trembled. Obviously, the pain on her face was excruciating, but she endured it with her strong willpower.

The green flame shot by Prometheus came and went quickly. It retracted after brushing slightly on Ars.Lan's face.

Ars.Lan's face was disfigured. Her lips turned purple from biting,

but she dared not make a single sound. Her originally beautiful face now had a deep burn mark on the left cheek! The burnt flesh was gnarled, and it looked extremely ugly and scary.

"I know that with your ability, this kind of scar might be painful, but your face will return to its normal appearance within less than half a day...but my punishment for you is not only this!" Prometheus said coldly, "I order you to not heal your face using any method within a month! I want you to carry this scar on your face and work for me! At the same time, this scar will remind you what are the things that you can do, and what are the things that you should not even think about!"

Ars.Lan trembled in pain. She had no idea what kind of sorcery Prometheus used to produce the green flame. Though it just brushed slightly on her face, the excruciating pain was as if the flame was not only burning her flesh but also vigorously burning her soul! The pain did not only come from her body, but it was the pain of the soul burning in a conflagration! The pain went deep into her bones!

She knelt down on one knee and clenched her teeth, "I will bear in mind every single word you said today...Your Excellency!" She paused, and her voice trembled as she continued, "I will bring you Fielding's head within a month!"

Prometheus seemed tired, he waved his hand carelessly, signaling that Ars.Lan could leave now.

After the injured female Paladin walked out from the great hall, Prometheus was still standing there alone.

He glanced at the empty great hall and mumbled, "Why is it that in this world, there are so many seemingly intelligent people who always do stupid things?"

He slowly turned and walked towards the door at the back. Behind the door was a spiral staircase, and his lonely figure went up the stairs. After walking for some time, he finally reached the

top of the stairs.

This was an open-air round shaped rooftop. It seemed to be the highest point of the Temple's whole building.

His hair was blown up high by the strong, cold wind at the peak. He stood beside the rooftop's golden rail, and let his long robe flutter in the wind.

Looking beneath, he could see the scattered devoted practitioners on all fours below the Temple's steps, looking up and praying to the Temple. Though they were so far away, Prometheus was certain that right now, they must be muttering words of praises to the gods...

"Pathetic and naive people..." The supreme leader of the Temple at present, the authority figure of the divine religion of the whole Roland Continent, was currently sighing and speaking in a strange tone, "Do you all think that God will truly pity you?"

Chapter 258: Seth's Fear

"I'll kill you! Kill you! Kill you!" Fielding, who was currently in a coma, yelled in a hoarse, stifled voice. He suddenly shouted, "Ahhh!" and sat up on the bed. His forehead was covered with sweat, and his previously naked upper body was wrapped in bandages.

He just woke up from a nightmare, sitting up abruptly and violently. This abrupt action caused him to feel extreme pain all over his body as if his bones were falling apart. He grunted; everything went black and he collapsed again.

It then came to his realization that he was lying on a soft, large bed in a clean and comfortable room. The bloodstains on his body were already cleaned up. The wounds on his chest, shoulder, and arm too had been dressed. The wounds which were poisoned by Ars.Lan using Dragon Saliva had stopped bleeding.

"Fielding, how do you feel?" Rody's voice came from the bedside. Fielding struggled to turn his head and he immediately saw Rody sitting at the bedside, his expression gloomy.

"...Thank you." Fielding felt bitterness in his mouth, and he gave Rody a wry smile. "Thank you for rescuing and bringing me back."

Rody sighed, "Don't talk too much. Your wounds seem a bit strange, so it took us a great deal of efforts to finally take care of it."

Fielding smiled bitterly, "Was it...her who treated me? Is she here?"

Rody was silent for a moment, a smile then spread across his face, "Yes. Mouse commented that your wounds are somewhat odd. A strange force was stopping it from healing and at the same time accelerating the bleeding. Initially, we tried several healing spells, but they were not effective. Luckily Mouse was here."

Fielding lay there, his eyes stared at the ceiling and mumbled, "Yes, Ars.Lan said that only those with advanced sorcery skills can handle this Dragon Saliva. My original plan was to go back and seek Gu Ming's help..." He stopped here, and there was sorrow on his face.

Fielding glanced at Rody and explained, "Gu Ming was not only a person whom I respected. At the same time, he was also my Godfather."

Fielding paused and sighed, "Mouse, does she know already?"

Rody looked grave. He nodded and sighed, "She's probably hiding in her room crying now. I think we should leave her alone for now."

Fielding shook his head helplessly. "Yes, Mouse was apprenticed to Gu Ming since young, I guess her mood now must be..."

Suddenly, a cold voice came from the door, "What about my mood?"

As soon as the voice rang, Mouse already appeared through the door and walked towards them. She was again wearing her iconic black veil. Her expression was cold, and she was once again the powerful, cold and arrogant Black Veil Saint. She was holding a silver bottle in her hands, and she walked up to Fielding saying coldly, "This is the Holy Water. Now that you are awake, drink it."

She paused, and then added coldly, "Your external injuries are healing well but if you do not wish to become crippled, you better don't move and lie here for these two days."

When she finished speaking, Mouse placed the bottle at the bedside and turned around to leave without saying another word. Fielding suddenly shouted, "Mouse, sorry!"

Mouse trembled, and she turned to look at Fielding with a complicated expression. A painful look set across Fielding's face. "It was all my fault! I should have been at Gu Ming's side...If it was

not because I left in anger after the duel, Gu Ming would not have been left alone. I came to Sauron with Gu Ming to protect him, but...but..." Tears trickled down from the eyes of this strong, tough man, and he suddenly tugged his hair forcefully.

Mouse's expression changed. She glared at Fielding and spoke through gritted teeth, "Fielding, you should know how tense the situation is in the whole Roland Continent! The relationship between the Temple and the kingdoms is like a timebomb! In this situation, a small spark is enough to bring about a huge explosion! But you..."

"Mouse! " Rody abruptly stopped her in a low voice, his expression grave as he said, "Enough." Mouse looked at Rody with deep sorrow. The expression on her face made Rody's heart ache. He sighed and held Mouse's hands, saying softly, "Now is not the time to talk about this. Why don't you go out first? I need to talk to Fielding."

After Mouse left, it was only Fielding and Rody again in the room.

"Tulip, what do you want to talk to me about?" Fielding was slightly calmer now.

Rody pondered for a moment before he grabbed a chair and sat at the bedside. He looked into Fielding's eyes and said in a serious manner, "What are you going to do right now?"

Fielding's gaze seemed confused. He then closed his eyes and shook his head lightly, "I don't know."

Rody sighed, "You haven't thought about it yet, but I have some ideas."

Rody paused and continued in a low voice, "Since Prometheus is now trying to get rid of you to come up with an excuse for war, you certainly can't go back to the Temple anymore. Even if you go back, do you think you can testify against him? Although you're a

Paladin, to be honest, I think that you're far behind Prometheus at plotting and scheming tactics! If you go back, you will die! I can even guess that if you go back, you won't live long enough to the day of testifying against him publicly at the Elders Council! Moreover, even if you tell the truth, will they believe you?"

After a long silence, Fielding replied bitterly, "No, they will not believe me..." He shook his head, "Not only would no one believe this, even I myself did not believe that he would be so ruthless!"

As he was saying this, Fielding suddenly looked curiously at Rody and said in an unfriendly tone. "Why? Are you trying to draw me over to your side? Who are you representing? Sauron King or your Radiant Empire? " There was a slight hostility in his tone.

Rody immediately shook his head and denied, "Of course not. I know you are not a person with wavering faith. Even though you are estranged from Prometheus now, I believe you will not betray the Temple."

Fielding replied with silence—he was admitting it.

After a long pause, Fielding slowly replied, "Prometheus is Prometheus, the Temple is the Temple! I, Fielding, as a Paladin, will never ever betray the Temple! I've already made up my mind, no matter if it's to avenge Gu Ming's death or for the Temple's safety, I must think of a way to get rid of Prometheus!"

His tone was calm, but Rody could clearly feel the cold, murderous intentions hidden in his words.

Rody suddenly laughed. In fact, he felt strange about his reaction. At this moment, how could he still laugh?

Or maybe, Rody had changed slightly.

"Fielding, I admire you very much but at the same time I sympathize with you." Rody's tone was somewhat somber.

There was some self-mockery in the way Rody spoke. "A long time ago I was a fool who knew nothing and understood nothing.

In my heart, I thought that everything in this world could be simply distinguished as 'good and evil'! I had always strictly abided by the so-called 'principles' in my heart, but now I don't think like this anymore."

He suddenly stood up and looked at Fielding lying on the bed, slowly asking, "Have you ever thought that in this world, there are many things that cannot be so easily differentiated? What is evil? What is good? What is right? And what is wrong? These things cannot be simply measured according to the standards in your heart."

He smiled faintly and continued, "At first I didn't understand any of these, but when I first fought on the battlefield, I was a passionate young man. I naively thought that I can use my sword and my burning passion to defend my empire's dignity! But, the first thing I was forced to do on the battlefield, was to kill the defenseless civilians of my empire with a sword in my hands!"

Rody's expression was a bit sad, "If according to the original standards in my heart, I will definitely not do such things! Those civilians were forced by the Great Moon Kingdom to be their spies. From the point of view of the Empire's law, they had committed treason, so they were evil! But according to their own standards, they were just trying to survive! At that time, I thought that as a proud warrior, my sword was supposed to kill ferocious enemies, not to be used against defenseless civilians!"

Fielding's expression slightly changed, "So what did you do?"

"I ordered the killing of those civilians who committed treason! Although I pitied them in my heart, although I knew that they did this to save their loved ones who were kidnapped by the Great Moon Kingdom, I had no choice but to give my first killing order in my life!" Rody's expression was calm—Fielding suddenly felt that the Duke of the Tulip Family who was standing in front of him right now, was so calm that it seemed somewhat terrifying.

Rody suddenly laughed. "Because I knew that if I don't kill these civilians, the morale of my army will collapse! Lax military rules, irregular orders, how is this kind of army capable of fighting against the coyote in the battlefields? If the army collapsed, then more people will die!"

Rody sighed, "Executing civilians, if according to the standards of a warrior, it is wrong to do so, but as a commander, this act is inevitable! Can you say clearly whether what I did was right or wrong?" Rody glanced at Fielding.

Fielding was silent for a moment. He then sighed and replied, "I don't know."

Rody smiled lightly, "That's right, till now I myself don't know if what I did was right or wrong, but the outcome was pretty good. I stabilized my army's morale, and the empire won the war at the Northwest battlefield, saving the losing situation at the Northwest..." Rody's gaze fell on Fielding's face. "Similarly, this principle can be used on Prometheus...According to your standards, it is wrong for him to kill you and Gu Ming. It is a despicable act to achieve his goal by all means! But if according to Prometheus' standards, he is doing this to unite the Temple against the enemy and to unify the voices of the Elders Council. If he succeeded, then he will probably become the second Pontiff in the Temple's history! He could even build the first empire with a unified religion! If he really succeeded, people will only remember his great achievements. Who would remember the unscrupulous tactics he used to achieve this?"

Fielding's face slightly changed. "You mean you hope that I will not go find Prometheus for revenge?"

"No. This is not what I meant." Rody shook his head and smiled helplessly, "To be honest, the person who wants Prometheus dead the most right now, is me!"

His tone gradually became serious and his expression grim, "The

more I deal with this Chief Elder of the Elders Council, the more I feel that this person is terrifying ... Mouse has told me before about some of his experiences. I have to admit that he's the most terrifying opponent I've ever met in my whole life! No matter when it comes to scheming, strategies, or his measures and wisdom, he is the best of the best!" He smiled bitterly. "I even have a weird feeling that, as long as this person is still alive, even if all the Roland kingdoms form a union, they are still no match for the Temple!" He suddenly mumbled to himself, "Although the Sauron King too has great talents and bold visions, compared to the mysterious Prometheus, he is nevertheless not his match."

"Isn't that what you're hoping for?" Fielding could not help but reply to Rody sarcastically, "Isn't Radiant Empire hoping that we Roland kingdoms fight against each other; the bigger the fight, the better it is?"

Rody actually nodded, "You're right! This is exactly the reason I came to Roland. According to our empire's standards, internal strife in the Roland Continent will only bring benefits to us, but what we hope more is that the losing side in this internal strife is not the Sauron Kingdom! Because if the Roland kingdoms lose, with Prometheus' ability, he might be able to truly unify the Roland Continent in just a few years' time!"

"So you wish that the Temple will lose?" Fielding asked coldly.

"No." Rody suddenly smiled, "I do not wish for the Temple to lose...I hope that Prometheus will lose! You yourself said just now, the Temple is the Temple, Prometheus is Prometheus!"

Fielding was a bit nervous when he saw the smile on Rody's face. He asked in a hoarse voice, "Okay, you've told me a lot but what exactly do you want to say?"

"You're really stubborn." Rody sighed. "You're as persistent and stubborn as I used to be! And refuse to be flexible." He smiled. "Maybe it's because of this that I like you."

"So now you've become despicable and shameless? " Fielding asked angrily.

"No." Rody's face was a bit sad, "I indeed have changed, but...this is because I've seen too much death! Seen too many close comrades dying in front of me!"

Both were silent for a moment; a strange atmosphere pervaded the air. The two, who originally had different stands, suddenly felt a sense of appreciation for each other. Fielding sighed and his expression softened a little. "Okay! Duke of the Tulip Family, tell me your true intentions."

"Go back to the Temple! " Fielding was shocked by what Rody said.

"Go back to the Temple? Do you really think so? Didn't you just say that it's dangerous for me to go back now? In order to silence me, Prometheus will definitely find a way to kill me."

"Exactly, because of this, you have to go back to the Temple." Rody said lightly, "Of course if you stay here, I can confirm that you will be very safe, but I don't think you would like to stay here in any way, isn't that so?"

Fielding was silent.

Indeed, Rody was correct. No matter what, Fielding would not want to stay here with the Duke of the Tulip Family. Fielding was very loyal to the Temple, so he was not willing to betray the Temple and stay with an infidel. At the same time...because Mouse was also here, Fielding who was proud and arrogant, would definitely not want to stay here.

"You go on." Fielding sighed.

Rody nodded, "You must go back to the Temple...Because if Prometheus wants to get rid of you, he has to assassinate you in secret because you're a Paladin of the Temple! After killing you, he will then put the blame on King Sauron, just like Gu Ming's death.

This is the only way for him to kill you. As such, you have to go back and stay at the Temple. Prometheus will not have any chance to do anything to you under the scrutiny of so many people in the Temple!"

"Also, you have to keep silent! You cannot publicly fall out with Prometheus, nor can you testify against his crime! " Rody sighed, "I know it is hard for you to do so, but if you want to avenge Gu Ming's death, this is the only way."

Fielding was quiet; obviously, he was struggling deep inside his heart.

"And then...when the opportunity comes, you get rid of Prometheus!" Rody's tone was murderous. "Regardless whether it's a public duel or murder, assassination...use whichever method you like! You have the power of a Paladin, no matter how powerful is Prometheus, he is only a sorcerer...As the Chief Elder of the Elders Council, it is impossible for him to kill you himself. The remaining strength he could use now, one is Augustine, but he definitely will not carry out this kind of deed, so the remaining one will be Ars.Lan. I believe with your power, as long as you're careful to avoid being ambushed by her, it should not be a problem."

"Kill him..." Fielding's eyes flashed. "It shouldn't be impossible to find the opportunity since both of us are in the Temple, and during internal senior meetings, there are usually no guards around...If I suddenly attack, it's not impossible at all...but...if I suddenly kill him before exposing his true colors, then wouldn't I become a sinner?"

"Do you care about this reputation?" Rody sneered, "This is what I was discussing with you just now. Your measuring standards! You said, sinner? What is a sinner? Compared to Prometheus, who among you two is a sinner? Yes, if you suddenly kill Prometheus, in the eyes of others, you, Fielding is a sinner who betrays the Temple! But in the long run, you've gotten rid of a person with wild ambitions who will endanger the Temple!" Rody paused and

gave Fielding a meaningful look. "The key lies in which standards you use to measure this in your heart."

Rody looked at Fielding, who was silent, and added coldly, "I do not want to hide from you. The reason I wish that you would do this is because it's in the interest of our Radiant Empire! You are free to think that I have no good intentions! So, Fielding, tell me your answer now!"

His eyes bored into Fielding's, as sharp as a blade, and there was only silence in the room...

...

In the garden of the Summer Palace, flowers bloomed. Although now it was not spring when all flowers bloomed, as the King's Summer Palace, flowers which bloomed during this season were planted in the garden.

The fragrance of flowers floated in the air, and clothing fluttered. A slender figure gently walked past the bundles of purple and red. This person was wearing an extravagant imperial dress, and her blonde hair was tied up at the back of her head, revealing her beautiful face. Her gaze swept around lightly, she looked peaceful with a faint smile on her face, casually taking in the beauty of the garden.

She held out her slender fingers and plucked a flower, playing it with her fingertips. Her smile deepened, and the colors of the flowers in this garden paled in comparison to her enchanting smile...

But, in contrast to this scene of beauty and flowers, a hoarse voice speaking in a strange tone rang, "Seth, is this plan your idea?" Old Mark strode forward from behind. He took a glance at a window on a distant pavilion and laughed softly, "That fellow must be persuading Fielding now following your suggestions."

The stunning beauty suddenly sighed. 'She' turned around and

looked at Old Mark, shaking her head and sighing. "My dear Old Mark, you are such an unromantic person. Discussing plots and schemes in such a beautiful environment, don't you think you're spoiling the atmosphere?"

Old Mark dismissed his words. He then imitated Seth by plucking a flower and sniffed it hard with his nose, smiling wryly, "Hell, the fragrance here is so strong. I don't understand why the Sauron royals love this kind of garden! Is there some problem with their noses?"

He paused for a while and laughed, ignoring Seth who was rolling his eyes. "Do you think that fellow can persuade Fielding?"

Seth was stunned for a moment, twisting a flower petal between his fingers. He then replied lightly, "Who knows? This is not what I should be concerned about. I'm just in charge of giving him ideas, whether or not he could realize my plan is not my problem."

Old Mark suddenly laughed, "To be honest, I'm curious about one thing...According to the kind of person you are, the plan you have in mind is somewhat unpresentable, even a bit despicable...You are duping Fielding to work for you! How did you persuade that silly lad to agree with this kind of plan? This doesn't seem to fit his behavior! According to his character, he wouldn't have agreed to do so."

Seth's expression froze for a moment, then he smiled and said, "I didn't put much effort into persuading Rody. In fact, we just had a discussion last night. I told him about my plan but at that time he left without saying a word. And then this morning, he suddenly agreed."

Old Mark seemed a bit surprised, "Oh? Seems like our silly lad finally understands the true meaning of 'those who wish to accomplish great things should not be restricted by trivial matters'."

Seth suddenly glanced at Old Mark, "My dear Old Mark, I think

from now on, we should not call him silly lad anymore...At least from what I see now, he is not that naive young man that he was before!"

He suddenly lowered his voice, as though mumbling to himself, "I don't know why but recently the more I get in contact with him, the more I have a growing fear of him...This is really strange...I feel that this guy, Rody, seems somewhat dangerous..."

"Oh?" Old Mark immediately became interested, "You're feeling scared? There's finally human emotion inside you? This is good news!"

Seth did not answer. The scene in which a black flame appeared on Rody's palm the other night suddenly popped back in his mind. The legendary 'hellfire' which could burn and devour everything in this world! A tinge of uneasiness flashed across his face.

And he remembered himself unconsciously commented 'not human'.

Seth's feelings were complicated. He could not help but said, "Good news? Not necessarily..."

There was a sudden hubbub of noises outside the garden. In the midst of the noises were the anxious voices of the Royal Knights guarding outside, "Your Highness...you...you... According to the orders of His Excellency the Special Envoy, no one is allowed into the Summer Palace without his permission. His Majesty the King has also agreed with his request, you..."

A majestic bellow was then heard, "Get out of the way!"

Immediately, a 'burly' figure appeared at the entrance of the garden; the expressions of the two Royal Knights at the side were awkward and anxious.

A figure who was one head taller than Seth stood in between the two knights. She was wearing an extravagant long robe, her hair hanging loosely at the back of her head and a ribbon was tied

around her forehead. The size of the robe was obviously tailored to fit her large size, but it still seemed a bit too tight for her.

Even more astonishing was that this woman was wearing at her waist a huge sword which only the most ferocious warrior would use! However, this large weapon worn on her looked like a tiny toy when compared to the size of her body...

Royal Consort Rulan?

Rulan immediately saw Seth among the flowering shrubs. Her eyes, which were squeezed into two slits by the flesh on her face, glittered brightly. She gave out a few sharp giggles and 'charged' forward zealously.

Seth's originally tranquil expression immediately looked as if he was slashed by a knife.

When compared to the 'not human' Rody, this Royal Consort was way more terrifying than Rody!

Rulan already came in front of Seth and she totally ignored Old Mark standing at the back. She looked as if she was preparing to give Seth a 'bearhug', but luckily Seth managed to take a step back, forcing the Royal Consort to give up this rare opportunity to 'kiss the beauty'.

She held out a huge palm and held Seth's hands, ignoring the expression on Seth's face. She then made an effort to make her rough voice sounded more feminine, laughing 'charmingly' and saying, "Miss Nicole, are you enjoying the flowers here alone? Why don't you let me join you...?"

Chapter 259: Garden Encounter

Seth was startled. He pulled his hand from her gigantic palm with great difficulty. Retreating two steps, he said with a forced smile, "Your Highness, why are you free to come here today?" An evil thought popped up in his mind, 'Both being the wives of their country's leader, why is it that our Empire's queen is so beautiful and charming, but the Royal Consort here is so scary?'

Or perhaps, by marrying such a daughter to the King, the Senior Prime Minister had ill intentions towards him—wasn't it obvious that he wanted the Sauron Royal Family to have no offspring? Was it because with such a Royal Consort the King did not have any son till now, so he made his nephew Aven as the Crown Prince?

As these thoughts ran through his head, he continued retreating. Rulan's smile became more sinister as she closed in step by step. "I was so impressed with Miss Nicole's elegant demeanor during the night banquet, so I've especially come to pay you a visit today. Since both of us are in such a good mood now, I wonder if Miss Nicole is willing to tell me about the views and sceneries of your empire? I'm very interested..." When she was done, she looked at Seth up and down. Obviously, her 'interest' was not about whatever views or sceneries.

No matter how smart Seth was, he was totally helpless right now when met with such a sex maniac. She was the honorable Royal Consort, he could not hit her or scold her, nor show her discontent. Even if he fought with her, could he, Seth, win the fight? What annoyed Seth more was, previously it was him who flirted with girls, but today he was the target of others' flirting. Nobody could understand his feeling right now.

Rulan roared with laughter and held Seth's hands once again. This time, no matter how hard Seth tried, she refused to let go of his hands. She pulled Seth and walked deeper into the garden, laughing as she walked. "Although now is not the right season, the

Summer Palace still has lots of exotic flowers and plants. I can see that Miss Nicole has a great interest in flowers, so let me bring you around and appreciate them closely."

As she was saying this, she turned around and roared, "Me and Miss Nicole are going to walk around. You all are not allowed to follow!" She glared threateningly at the two Royal Knights, and then she glared at Old Mark, which meant, 'You too!'

Old Mark sighed. He looked teasingly at Seth who was already panicking and stood where he was.

Rulan gave another roar of laughter, and her moves became more daring. She placed her hands on Seth's waist and pulled him along as she walked down the path deep into the garden.

In order to properly host Rody, the Special Envoy from the Radiant Empire, the Summer Palace that was used by the King to settle them was quite big, and even the scale of the garden was relatively big. Both of them slowly walked into the flowering shrubs, and after a few turns, the people behind them were gradually lost in sight. Looking that there was no one around, Rulan's expression and actions became more and more daring. She held Seth tightly close to her and chuckled, "Miss Nicole, you smell so sweet, I wonder what kind of perfume you are using? Is it a special product of your Empire?"

She looked as if she was going to come closer and sniff.

Seeing that she was wrinkling her nose and moving closer, Seth almost fainted when he saw the grisly sight of long black nasal hair in her huge nostrils. He forced himself to remain calm and tilted his head backward, saying through clenched teeth, "Your Highness must be joking. There are flowers everywhere here, the fragrance must be from the pollens smeared on my body."

"Oh?" Rulan's eyes lit up, "What shall we do? If the pollens are not cleaned off immediately, it will dirty Miss Nicole's clothes." She held out her hand seemingly trying to help Seth brush his

clothes but in actual fact, she was seizing the opportunity to molest him.

Seth could not take it anymore. He suddenly struggled and broke free, saying in a low voice, "Your Highness, uhm...I heard that you are a great female warrior with excellent skills, I wonder if this rumor is true?"

Rulan grinned widely and gave out a laugh, and she stopped intimidating Seth. She suddenly raised her hand and withdrew the huge sword at her waist. She certainly looked a little majestic when she held the sword in her hand. She said haughtily, "I've been trained in swordsmanship since young, and my teacher was once Sauron Kingdom's most famous old master in swordsmanship." The Royal Consort paused and glanced at Seth, smirking as she said, "Why? Is Miss Nicole interested in swordsmanship, too? Hmm, yes, I almost forgot that you're born in a family of warriors." As she was saying this, she switched to a teasing tone, "But I'm surprised that your Empire's family of the Army God could raise such an exquisite beauty like you."

Seth smiled bitterly. "Your Highness sure loves to joke...I..."

Rulan suddenly smiled mysteriously. Her fingers gently waved a few times, and the huge sword spun vigorously in her hand like an embroidery needle. After several flashes of the cold blade, Seth was greeted by a puff of fragrance...

A delicate flower which was sliced off by Rulan just now sat quietly on the tip of her sword. Rulan pushed the flower in front of Seth and bowed slightly, acting like an elegant knight and said, "A blossom as a gift for the beauty."

Seth did not know if he should cry or laugh. In the end, he held out his hand and took the flower on the tip of the blade. A cunning smile suddenly flashed across Rulan's face. Without warning, she grabbed Seth's waist and pulled hard...

The following scene unfolded in the garden:

A charming beauty fell into the arms of a tall and burly figure. A sword-wielding hero and a beauty holding flowers, both complementing each other. How romantic...

Seth was so mad that he almost fainted. This trick that Rulan was using, he had used this many times on numerous noble young ladies in his Empire a long time ago. If Seth used his true identity to play that trick of gifting flowers to beauties used by Rulan just now, he could do it more fluently and skillfully. Not only that, his techniques would be even better...

Ironically, he had flirted with so many girls for his whole life, but today this old trick was used on him by someone else to hold him in her arms...

Rulan held Seth by the waist and intentionally pinned him underneath. Hence, Seth lay face up in her arms, and right now his face was reddened due to anger, but Rulan assumed that he was just being shy.

The Royal Consort squeezed an affectionate look on her fleshy face, and eagerness filled her tiny eyes. She deliberately lowered her voice and whispered, "Miss Nicole..."

If Seth held a girl in his arms as a man, his handsome face would be a deadly charm to the girl. Right now, if she heard him whispering to her so affectionately, she would definitely be immensely intoxicated.

But now, Seth was extremely mad. The Royal Consort's 'sexy' voice which was deliberately produced by suppressing her voice rang in Seth's ears, and the way she looked at him seemed familiar—those were the usual tricks he used to play!

Oh no... did she want to...

An alarm just sounded off in Seth's mind, and sure enough, the Royal Consort was pressing down gently...

Before he could react, Rulan's lips already pressed down hard on

Seth's...Seth's eyes were wide open from shock. He could not believe that...this just ridiculously happened!

He did not expect that Royal Consort Rulan was an expert in flirting with girls—for an outstanding playboy, even if one managed to kiss a girl at this time, victory was still not guaranteed. He would need to make some other moves...

Sure enough, Rulan was not greedy. She backed off after kissing Seth lightly on the lips, but she still held Seth tightly in her arms. She put on a guilty but affectionate expression on her face, and said lovingly, "I'm sorry...you're too beautiful so I couldn't control myself just now..."

From beginning till end, Rulan's every move completely followed the 'classic steps' of a standard playboy flirting with young girls. The expression on Seth's face now was not shock anymore, but...disgust!

Seth had kissed an unknown number of women in his life, but today faced with such a sentimental Royal Consort, this was the first time. The expression on his face kept changing, and a thought flashed through his mind:

I was kissed by a pig!

But this was still not the end.

After Rulan's affectionate confession, according to the usual flow, a second kiss would follow next. According to the usual steps of a playboy seducing young girls, the first kiss was a sneak attack to stir up uneasiness and restlessness in the girl's mind. With the help of an affectionate confession, the girl would be swept off her feet and during this time if one seized the opportunity and kissed her for the second time, he could then easily get her heart.

It seemed like Rulan was prepared to follow these steps. She had already lowered her head, aiming at Seth's lips for another kiss...

"Ahhhhh!" Seth could not endure this anymore when he saw her

face getting closer and closer. He let out a tragic shriek.

"What are you doing!" A cold voice rang from the front.

Rulan immediately let go of Seth. She turned and looked at the direction of the voice, and Seth quickly took a few steps back to escape from her. He then subconsciously wiped his mouth vigorously...Damn it, I need to brush my teeth a hundred times when I go back!

When Rulan's eyes fell on the person who interrupted her, the anger in her eyes immediately vanished and was replaced by amazement!

It was Mouse. She was dressed in black, her long hair fluttered as she stood among the flowering shrubs, and she looked somewhat celestial. There was some sorrow on her extremely beautiful face. Her eyes were a bit red and puffy. Apparently, she had just cried.

After Mouse came out from Fielding's room, she came to the depths of the garden alone. When she thought of the death of her teacher, her heart ached so she hid there and cried but she did not expect to meet Rulan and Seth here.

Right now, there were traces of tears on Mouse's delicate face, and there was a slight bitterness and grieve in her expression. The black robe she wore made her look very weak and fragile. She was originally very beautiful, and now, she looked so pitiful that those who looked at her would feel heartbroken.

Rulan's eyes remained glued on Mouse, and she seemed so obsessed. She suddenly came to her senses and said, "It's you!" She took a deep breath and continued, "I've finally found you!"

Mouse glanced at Rulan coldly, and when she saw the horrified expression on Seth's face, it reminded her of the Royal Consort's weird behavior during their previous encounter. She immediately understood what was happening and frowned, saying softly, "Miss Nicole, it's windy outside, you better go inside."

Upon hearing that, Seth was so relieved, and he hastily ran away. Before he left, he cast a hateful glance at Rulan—it was however unknown how this schemer would find a way to avenge his humiliation today.

Rulan did not stop Seth from leaving. She was entranced by Mouse, and the amazement and obsession in her gaze could not be concealed. She forced a smile and said, "Miss, I've been searching for you since our last encounter on the streets. I knew you are here together with Earl Rody, so I came here today hoping that I can see you. Thanks to the blessings of the gods, I finally found you."

Mouse's gaze became even colder, "Your Highness, the King had granted this residence to His Excellency Earl Rody, and the King had also promised that without the Earl's permission, no one is allowed to enter!"

When Rulan heard the word 'King', there was disdain in her eyes as if she did not care at all. She took a few steps forward and whispered, "I don't care about that. As long as I can see you, who cares about the King's orders!"

There was a trace of anger in Mouse's eyes, and she said flatly, "If there's nothing else, please leave."

She turned and was about to leave, but Rulan suddenly went forward and stopped her hurriedly, "Wait!"

Mouse's gaze was icy cold, "Why? Is there anything else, Your Highness?"

"Uhhh...well..." Rulan was entranced by the look of the angry beauty in front of her. She was lost for words, even though she had prepared them in her mind so well beforehand for flirting. She looked at Mouse affectionately and mumbled, "Beautiful, you're too beautiful..."

Mouse was in a bad mood right now. She snorted coldly and turned to leave. Rulan immediately panicked and held out her

arms. Her stature was bigger and taller than Mouse, and now that she opened her arms wide, she immediately blocked the path completely.

"Your Highness, what else do you want!" Mouse tightened her fists under her sleeves. Since young no man had dared to flirt with her, let alone women!

Rulan looked at the girl standing in front of her whom she missed day and night—ever since she caught a glimpse of her on the streets that day, she was totally stunned by Mouse. When she saw Rody at the night banquet, she immediately tried to ask about Mouse, but because Mouse was the apostate Black Veil Saint, her identity was kept secret so naturally ordinary people did not know about her. The King knew his Royal Consort's character very well, so he did not dare to tell her the truth. He needed the alliance of Rody at this moment, and he was afraid that his Royal Consort would stir up troubles. Hence, not only did he not tell her, he also warned Rulan sternly against it.

But Rulan had no fears, so she dismissed the King's warning. Today, she finally could not wait anymore and came to look for her. When she saw Seth just now, she could not resist the urge to deploy her skills, but when Mouse appeared, her lust towards 'Miss Nicole' immediately disappeared. Right now, there was only this beautiful girl in black in her heart and her mind.

Seeing that Mouse was about to leave, Rulan panicked and wanted to hug Mouse. However, when she saw the stern look on Mouse's face, and the air of holiness surrounding her, she felt a sense of guilt which stopped her from really hugging Mouse.

It was lucky that Rulan did not make any real moves, or else, with the power of this Black Veil Saint, if Rulan dared to molest her, according to her mood right now and her usual character, she would not care if it's Her Highness the Royal Consort or His Majesty the King, she would have thrown a Thunder God Forbidden Spell at her...

Mouse snorted and squeezed through from Rulan's side. Seeing that she was really leaving, Rulan could not help but press her hand on Mouse's shoulder.

Anger flashed in Mouse's eyes. She was noble and pure, and she never had any bodily contact with anyone else except Rody. She was burning with rage inside and immediately a red flaming electrical bolt radiated from her body.

Rulan groaned as she felt a sharp pain from the palm holding on Mouse's shoulder. She could feel that it was burning, and she immediately withdrew her hand. Her palm was burning with pain, and the hollow of her palm was charred.

Mouse did not want to continue talking with Rulan, so she glanced at her and said coldly, "Your Highness, please watch how you conduct yourself! His Excellency the Earl has orders, please do not go in any further. Otherwise, you will violate the Empire's dignity and cause displeasure among both countries. I'm afraid this is not what the King wishes to see."

After saying this, Mouse refused to look at Rulan anymore. She quickened her pace and vanished among the flowering shrubs.

Rulan who remained standing on the spot looked obsessively in the direction her figure disappeared. She then lowered her head and looked at her burnt palm. She felt sweetness as well as anger in her heart. She stroked the injured hand gently and muttered, "I've finally touched her, sigh...Why have I not met such a beauty before this?"

Her gaze swept across the beautiful garden and was suddenly irritated, "So many flowers but none could match her beauty. What's the use of keeping you here!" She snorted in displeasure and drew her sword. Her gloomy mood soothed a little after she struck at the surrounding flowering shrubs, causing a hideous mess.

She stroked her injured palm with the other hand and looked

deeply at the direction where Mouse vanished. She wanted to chase after her, but she was afraid she might anger the beauty she adored so much. As for the King's order, she naturally would not pay any attention to it.

She heaved a long sigh, "Surprisingly she's a sorceror...sigh...Although I still do not know your name, I, Rulan, will make this woman mine!"

The Royal Consort, with various thoughts in mind, turned around and strode along the path she came just now.

Among the flowering shrubs not far away, Seth was there as he did not go far just now. He saw everything that had happened. All of a sudden, he held his stomach and laughed uncontrollably. "There are perverts every year, but this year there are especially many!"

After laughing for a while, he mumbled to himself, "How can I not participate in such an interesting matter?"

He pondered for a moment and suddenly a disgusted look appeared on his face. He stomped his feet and said, "Go back and brush my teeth first!"

Chapter 260: Departure

The sky was clear.

At a desolate harbor that was less than a hundred miles away from the capital city of Sauron Kingdom.

The banks of the inland sea of the Roland Continent were shaped like an inverted crescent forming a natural pier. In fact, that was the main naval base for the Royal Navy of Sauron Kingdom.

Fourteen huge premier Roland warships were lined up at the docks. At the moment, the pier was full of large and small warships. Those warships had already undergone a simple refurbishing. All its weapons had been disassembled. Its flags and banners had been exchanged for the Sauron Kingdom's banners on one side and banners with a thorny golden flower on the other—those were, the banners of the Radiant Empire.

A total of a hundred ships had already lined up awaiting orders.

After a few days of waiting at the Sauron Kingdom's capital city, the first batch of ships from the various kingdoms on the Roland continent had been mobilized. According to the agreement, the first batch of one hundred warships would depart from the port and sail to the Radiant Continent on that day.

The King and Rody were standing, side by side, on a simple and high platform built on the pier. They were smiling and looking at the fleet at the pier below. Rody sighed. The navy of the Roland Continent was really powerful, especially the fourteen largest premier warships. Those warships were so large that they could accommodate more than two thousand soldiers each. The Radiant Empire did not even have one such special warship, but these kingdoms could easily give away fourteen!

King Sauron had dispatched a special envoy with a copy of the signed peace agreement to the Radiant Empire. In accordance with

the agreement, the first batch of released war prisoners would be shipped back when the first batch of warships arrived in the Radiant Empire.

He was not worried that the Radiant Empire would take the warships and not release the prisoners. After all, the Duke of the Tulip Family and Miss Nicole were still on the Roland Continent. The two of them were worth more than a hundred warships. According to the conditions stated, Rody would remain on the Roland Continent until the transaction was complete. That was also a form of disguised collateral.

After the roar of gun salutes, a signalman standing at the tower at the pier vigorously waved the colored flags in his hands. The largest warship in the fleet then hanged up the flagship's banner. After that, the signalmen at the watchtower waved their flags. The fleet then started to line up and depart from the port majestically.

The sun shone brilliantly illuminating the surface of the sea. The ripples glowed like golden scales. Feeling proud of himself, the King smiled and asked, "Earl Rody, what do you think of the fleet in front of you?"

Rody gave a simple reply. "Very good! This fleet is invincible in the ocean!"

Suddenly a person groaned coldly from a side. His voice seemed somewhat dissatisfied. That person was the Crown Prince, Aven. As the Commander of the Navy, he was naturally unwilling to see the sturdy warships being sent to the enemy.

The King was not concerned about Aven's mood. He smiled and said, "Aven, it is getting late. You should also board the ship."

As that was the first batch of warships and it concerned the good faith of the two nations, the Sauron Kingdom needed to dispatch an important person with high enough status to show their sincerity. Therefore, the Crown Prince, Aven, was selected to be dispatched to the Radiant Empire.

Although Aven was from the pro-war faction, the King had made great efforts to persuade him to agree to this request. When Aven saw his men got onto the flagship at the shore, he finally sighed. He then faced the King and Rody as he saluted and said, "Your Majesty, I am leaving."

After that, the proud young man walked away in large strides without sparing a glance at Rody.

The King looked at the Crown Prince's back and suddenly sighed. "Youngsters are too rash. This is not a good thing." The King then deliberately or otherwise looked at Rody.

Rody kept quiet and remained silent. 'This is your family matter. Why are you telling me this?'

Now that there were no other people around them and the guards were standing at a distance, the King suddenly lowered his voice and asked. "Rody, are these warships good?"

Rody was startled and then replied, "Of course, it is good! It is much better compared to the warships from our Radiant Empire."

The King suddenly sighed and softly said, "Yes, the other kingdoms unexpectedly abided to the rules. They did not send us trash to fool us. After all, with hundreds and thousands of prisoners in your hands, they do not dare substitute with shoddy goods. But..." He suddenly pointed on the largest flagship, that Aven was on, and said, "Do you see that ship? That is our Roland Continent's first-class warship! It is made from ironwood and is incomparably sturdy. The warship is 100 meters long and can accommodate three thousand people! There are less than one hundred of such warships in the entire Roland Continent."

"Oh?" Rody's eyes turned bright. 'Less than one hundred? That means giving away fourteen is an excessive amount.'

The King smiled and said, "Although the coalition armies of Roland Continent are known to be invincible at sea, only we know

that the real overlord of the sea is not us who live on the mainland but the navy of the dwarf kingdom."

After pausing for a moment, the King sternly said, "Although the dwarfs have a small population and could not have a large army, they have an abundance of ironwood in their territory. This natural advantage allows them to build a navy more formidable than ours."

The King took out a thin roll of paper and then slowly spread it out in front of Rody.

"Look, this is the main warship of the dwarfs' navy! Although the size of the warships is different, it is made in accordance to design of this model...The bow of the warship is tall and sharp, making it more advantageous in braving the waves. It has three masts with a total of five sails. It is known as a five-sail warship. The mast uses a special method to rotate itself with abnormal flexibility giving it the warship fanatic speeds."

The King gently pointed at the picture of the warship on that piece of paper and continued, "The hull of the ship is very high. The largest five-sail warship is four storeys high with railings and arrowslits.

"Arrowslits?" Rody froze for a moment. "Is using bows and arrows useful in naval battles?"

The King laughed. "Have you forgotten that the dwarfs have an abundance of ironwood?" He smiled helplessly and said, "Even though the Roland Continent also has ironwood, we do not have the luxury of using ironwood to make arrows! However, these damn dwarfs even use ironwood to make arrows! The speed of these arrows is extremely fast, and it could fly fifty percent further compared to ordinary bows and arrows. In a naval battle, we would already have a headache before the ships even got close. Its range is even farther compared to a sorcerer's spell attack. If the two parties were to go into battle, our sorcerers would not be able

to fly up and attack within the range of their bows and arrows."

"Besides that, the dwarfs are born as good artisans and they are good at making fine weapons. When they are still far away, they will use their bows and arrows to fight with us. When both parties get closer, they will use another weapon to fight."

The King's eyes flashed as he pointed at the drawing. There were thin tubes stretching out on both sides of the hull of the ship. He then said, "This is a kind of nozzle. Once the enemy ship is within a certain distance, black oil will be sprayed from the nozzle. Once the enemy ship is covered in that oil, their archers will launch fire arrows. Just a drop of the oil is enough to ignite. The more water is poured onto this oil, the stronger the fire will be. Although the Roland warships are made of ironwood and are more resistant to fire than other ships, ironwood is still wood."

Rody was lost in thought as the King continued, "According to the information I received, the dwarfs have a total of two hundred and fifty warships. One of their largest five-sail warships can accommodate one thousand five hundred people. Its combat effectiveness is definitely not lower than our Roland Continent's first-class warship. Besides that..." The King showed a helpless smile and said, "... more than half of our fleet are of this kind of large ships. The other smaller ships are just used for patrolling and scouting."

Rody closed his eyes and muttered, "In other words, we lose out in speed. We also do not have an advantage in long distance and also close distance battles. Your Majesty, you certainly have given me a difficult problem."

The King smiled as he rolled up the drawing in his hands. He then gave the drawing to Rody and smiled as he said, "Naturally, we do not intend to fight directly with their navy. The price of doing that is too big and it will be disastrous even if we win."

After saying that, the King took out another thin roll of paper

from his sleeve like a magic trick. When spread out, it was the map of the sea.

"We plan to attack in half a month's time! We will move normally as if we are delivering the last batch of warships in exchange for the prisoners of war!" He then pointed to the map and slowly said, "Look here, this is their island. Our fleet will pass by their left, all the way south, out of the sea and continue south towards the Radiant Empire. These dwarfs are not very courageous. They are also afraid of being attacked by us. This is why when the earlier fleets pass by, they will dispatch their navy to patrol the left side of their island! What we need to do is to take full advantage of this." The King smiled and continued, "You will take the last batch of fleets which is a total of two hundred and fifty warships. I will also gather the best of Sauron Kingdom's navy to follow you. After leaving the port and traveling for a day, the ships will suddenly turn to the north!"

"North!" Rody's eyes lit up. He meaningfully looked at the King.

The King smiled and said, "Looks like you also understand. Our fleet would turn to the North. After five days, we would be able to reach the back of their island. After that..." The King suddenly waved his hand and clenched his fist resolutely said, "We will disembark and attack!"

Rody thought for a moment and then said, "This plan sounds pretty good, but I do not understand matters related to the sea. Your Majesty is telling me this..."

The King smiled and replied, "My naval commanders will naturally be responsible for matters at the sea. However, the responsibility falls on you once we disembark! I know that your distinguished country is invincible on land. I hope you do not mind assisting me." He then smiled and said, "I will give you the intelligence describing the distribution of the dwarf army on the island in two days."

Rody sighed. "It is most important to keep such a big plan a secret. After all, I am just an outsider. Your Majesty still needs to carry out these plans."

The King smiled and said, "Of course, only four people know of this right now. Even the soldiers who are setting off in half a month's time do not know where we will go. I will issue a declaration of war at sea. Until that time, this information absolutely would stay a secret."

At that moment, the fleet had gradually left the pier. The last one to leave was the flagship.

Aven stood on the bow deck of the flagship. His eyes were closed as he enjoyed the sunlight and the sea breeze. He made great efforts to calm himself.

Hmph, the purpose of His Majesty dispatching me to the Radiant Empire was to get me out of his way. Otherwise, I might affect the peace treaty. Sigh...

Aven shook his head and the image of that exceedingly beautiful woman appeared in his mind. He smiled bitterly. "Forget it, she likes women just like Her Highness. Why must I keep thinking about it?" He then opened his eyes and struggled to breathe as he called one of his trusted subordinates. He then softly asked, "Where are those things that we brought onto the ship?"

"They are all in the cabin."

"Good." Aven sighed in relief. As requested by Nedis, Aven secretly made use of his position to help Nedis move her property to the Radiant Empire. At that moment, all the goods had long been sneaked onto the flagship's cabin before the journey.

That could be regarded as smuggling. However, Aven would not think so. He was simply using his position to help a friend.

"Alright. Now that the ship has departed, invite my friends out of the cabin. I presume they are already very uncomfortable hiding

there for such a long time." Aven smiled lightly.

That subordinate immediately accepted the order and went in. After a while, with a tense expression, that subordinate came out with a middle-aged man.

The middle-aged man wore simple clothes. He respectfully bowed the moment he saw the Crown Prince and greeted, "Your Highness."

Aven frowned and asked, "Who are you? Where is Miss Nedis?"

With an even more respectful expression, the middle-aged man smiled apologetically and said, "Our master is not on board. She asked me to convey a message to Your Highness. She said that she still has some unfinished private matters to take care of in the capital and would not board the ship back. Anyway, I will be responsible for dealing with the people collecting the merchandise at the Radiant Continent. Master also said that Your Highness is hospitable and keeps his promises. She said that you would definitely not disappoint your friends."

Aven was shocked and became a little unhappy. "She did not board the ship? Hmph, this woman actually dared to trick me." He then smiled and said, "Alright. Since I have already promised Miss Nedis, I would definitely help until the end...Ah, what other matters does your master still have in the capital?"

The middle-aged man smiled and replied, "I am not too sure but apparently someone has promised to meet the master. That person made the master wait for an entire night, so the master intends to go and find this person to understand what actually happened."

Chapter 261: Unexpected Follower

"What is this?" Seth asked one night, a few days later. Rody was invited to the palace by the King that day. After an entire day of discussion, when Rody returned that evening he remained inside the study room of the Summer Palace. Soon after that, he called for Seth and showed Seth the map.

"This looks like a map." Seth narrowed his eyes as he carefully looked at it for a moment. He then smiled and said, "It looks like a military map."

"This is the map of the military base of the dwarfs' Hakone Kingdom and the placement of its soldiers." Rody looked serious. "The King gave this to me today. I brought it back to study."

Seth gently drummed the table with his fingers. His expression did not reveal his swinging innermost feelings. He then casually asked, "Have you decided to help the King?"

Rody did not give an answer. He lightly said, "This morning, the last batch of the fleet has departed for the Radiant Empire. According to the King's intelligence, the dwarfs' naval fleet was busy patrolling the left side of their island territory! If nothing goes wrong, the Sauron Kingdom's army will board the ships within two days and will be ready for war."

Seth remained silent for a while. The air in the room was a little depressing. Seth suddenly showed a strange expression and said, "Rody, I think that there is something strange about this. Are there really no other motives for King Sauron to eagerly fight the dwarfs?"

"He said he is dispatching all the Royal Knights and his secretly trained army..." Rody suddenly remembered what he saw in the underground palace that day. He had not told anyone about that place.

Seth suddenly smiled and asked, "Well, you asked me to come here. What do you want to tell me?"

Rody closed his eyes and muttered, "I do not know...I have an ominous premonition that something is waiting for me on the island of the dwarf kingdom. This feeling is very strong."

Seth narrowed his eyes and looked at Rody. He then stretched out his hands and pushed the map as he said, "I am not an expert in matters of war. If you want to listen to my opinion, then I will tell you..." He glared at Rody's eyes and continued, "I have the same feeling as you! I feel like there is something in there!"

Without waiting for Rody's reply, Seth said, "The King is very eager to subjugate the dwarfs, what does he want to achieve? Is it for wealth? Is it for the ironwood? Or is it like what the King claimed, he would be able to suppress the other kingdoms of Roland Continent after conquering the islands. However, I feel that these reasons are not sufficient!" Seth seemed to smile and said, "I think that just these reasons are not enough for the King to take such a big risk to carry out this crazy plan!"

After that, Seth gave a wry smile and said, "Unfortunately, I am equally unfamiliar with the dwarfs as you. I have never seen a dwarf before and I do not know what kind of race they are. I do not want to comment on things I am uncertain in."

Rody suddenly felt agitated and smiled wryly as he said, "Then let us wait for time to make a decision."

Seth smiled and replied, "What are you worried about? With your strength, I do not think that there isn't anyone on this continent who can threaten your safety."

Suddenly there was a knock on the door. After that, Mouse entered the room. She looked at the two people in the room blankly. She hesitated for a moment and then said, "Fielding is gone! I just found out that he is not in his room!"

"Oh." Rody nodded. He looked at Seth who was also not surprised. After telling Fielding that plan the other day, the Paladin became silent for the following two days as if he was thinking about it. It seemed like he had finally made up his mind to return to the Temple and carry out the plan.

Mouse suddenly opened her mouth and said in a strange tone. "He left a note for you."

"What?"

"He said to thank you." Mouse seemed a little sad. "He decided to go and find his own 'standard'."

It was unknown how King Sauron obtained the information. The information was passed back from the sea one by one. The last batch of fleets with two hundred and fifty warships had passed through the dwarf kingdom after departing. This situation made the dwarfs nervous. According to the news, the dwarfs' fleet was following from the back and keeping watch. It seemed like the dwarfs were very vigilant.

In light of this situation, the King and Rody discussed for a day and decided to set the troops off earlier.

Three days later, one hundred and fifty fully armed warships were ready at the same harbor. The King and Rody took many people to the pier.

"Didn't you say the navy attacking would have two hundred and fifty warships? Why are there so few now?" Rody frowned.

The King sighed. "There is no choice. The change was too fast. The dwarf navy closely followed our previous fleet of ships, further and further away. It will be silly not to take this good opportunity. So, I decided to bring forward the attack. However, we have too little time and can only gather this much power." The King then smiled wryly and continued, "Although the Sauron Kingdom may be the strongest on the Roland continent, our

warships do not fall from the sky."

A large, splendid golden-wall warship docked at the side of the pier. That warship was a full ten meters high. Its huge hulls were completely made of ironwood, reflecting dark light. A group of silent soldiers nervously and orderly lined up on board the ship. There were also chariots, and horses being pulled into the cabin from the distant part of the pier.

The whole pier was shrouded in a tense atmosphere. In fact, martial law had been imposed within a fifty kilometers radius around the neighborhood from three days ago. A large number of Royal Knights loyal to the Royal Family had blocked the roads to the pier. Nobody could leave or enter without an order.

"According to our plan, you will command this army. I am just here for show only." The King smiled and said, "Rody, I believe you will not disappoint me. Have you studied the register and the designations of the military? Just before the war, I will summon the middle-ranked officers and give out the commands. Now, let us board the ship!"

Rody sighed. He was feeling calm. He who had experienced many battles and killings had already grown accustomed to the atmosphere of the pre-war period.

The only concern would be Mouse and the others who were left behind in the Summer Palace in the capital. Originally, Mouse wanted to follow Rody. However, Rody took Seth's identity into consideration. After all, Seth was then 'Miss Nicole'. On top of that, the situation at the Roland Continent was complicated. Precautions must be taken in case the Temple targeted the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family of the Radiant Continent. There was also a need to take precaution against any other schemes of the King. That was why Mouse and Old Mark were left behind to protect Seth.

Even if a problem were to arise, presumably nobody, in the whole

of Roland Continent, would be able to compete against the combination of the powerful Old Mark and the top-notch Black Veil Saint's sorcery. There would be nothing to fear even if a Paladin were to attack.

The vast and mighty fleet left the harbor and quietly set off on their journey.

It was not the first time Rody went to sea. He stood on the bow deck of the largest flagship. He tried to remain calm as he felt the sea breeze blowing on his face.

That warship was the flagship of the fleet. Rody and the King were on top of the flagship. One thing that Rody found ridiculous after boarding the ship was that the King immediately ran into the cabin to rest and refused to step out again.

After inquiring in detail, Rody then received an answer that made him laugh.

The revered leader who possessed the most formidable navy on the Roland continent was actually seasick!

Rody looked around after standing on top of the deck for a moment. The Roland navy truly deserved to be elites of the sea. The entire fleet maintained a defensive formation as they sailed quickly along the planned route. Rody suddenly felt lofty sentiments when he looked at numerous warships in the distance.

He did not know what he, who has found fame as undefeated on land, would encounter at sea.

He went to look at the King. The King did not look well. Even in the dark cabin, the King's face looked pale. The King's voice also sounded different and weak.

After listening to a brief report from an officer, the King waved his hand signaling the others to leave. He then smiled wryly at Rody and said, "Look, I am not suitable for the sea."

Rody left without a word.

Under the guidance of the officers, Rody arrived at his own cabin.

The cabin allocated to him was large. It seemed to be furnished in the same way as the King's room. Rody closed the cabin door as he decided to take a good rest. After all, the journey at sea would last for several days.

The cabin had a size of thirty square meters. Besides that, there was also a small room partitioned out and it seemed like it was used for sleeping. Rody took off his coat and the Dragon Spells Scimitar from his waist. He then held the Dragon Spells Scimitar in his hand. He walked towards the door of the small room in large strides and pushed the door open.

The moment he opened the door, he instinctively felt uneasy as if there was someone secretly spying on him.

His eyes instantly flashed. He then rushed into the room like lightning and stayed near to the wall. He immediately felt a swift and cold wind blow past his ear. Rody sneered as he immediately stretched out his hand to pull.

There was a delicate and muffled voice that sounded in anguish. A figure appeared in the room. One of her wrists was tightly clutched by Rody. She had already lost her balance and fell to the ground.

Rody moved as quickly as lightning. He had already pulled out his scimitar and placed it on the other person's neck. He coldly shouted, "Who is it?"

A pair of eyes shot out a bitter and agonizing glare. Rody saw the person on the ground and could not help but blurt out. "It's you!"

The person with a painful expression on the ground in front of Rody was Nedis.

Rody's face instantly sank as he asked, "How come you are here?"

Nedis replied in a trembling voice, "Quickly, let go! You are

breaking my wrist."

Rody released her with a solemn expression. He quietly watched Nedis got up from the ground and coldly asked, "How come you are here?"

Nedis fiercely glared at Rody. The anger on her face suddenly turned into a bewitching smile as she softly said, "I had guessed that you all have some sort of plan. Sure enough, it is just like what I expected."

She saw Rody's impatient look and quickly said, "I secretly came on board. Using my vampire's 'Blood Escape', nobody would discover me."

Rody was not pleased as he asked, "Why did you follow me?"

Nedis loudly replied. "Naturally is to demand payment from you!" She angrily looked at Rody. She bit her lips and said, "I said something to you before departing after the dinner banquet at the palace, that night. Do you still remember what I said?"

"What?" Rody was at a loss. Many things had happened at the dinner banquet that night. Nedis had also left in a haste and Rody actually did not care.

"I said that I will wait for you in the garden!" Nedis faintly said, "I waited until dawn but even then, you did not appear!"

Rody was startled. He faintly remembered that Nedis had said such words before leaving that night. However, after that, he had a duel against Fielding and was busy dealing with the special envoys of the other Roland kingdoms. He had long ago placed Nedis' words at the back of his mind. And then later, someone had plotted to assassinate Fielding and Gu Ming. Fielding was seriously injured, and Gu Ming was killed.

Those minor matters involving Nedis was naturally forgotten by Rody.

The moment he thought of that, he understood that Nedis did

not harbor any evil intentions. Rody sighed in relief. His expression eased up as he asked, "Then why did you come all the way here? Following me here is simply causing trouble!"

Rody did not particularly dislike the charming woman in front of him. However, he extremely detested vampires as a result of his past experiences.

Nedis seemingly did not care and faintly smiled, "I spied from outside your residence for a few days and guessed that there is definitely something interesting you are going to do. How could I miss such an interesting thing? Naturally, I secretly followed you to take a look."

Rody felt helpless. He felt that this woman's actions were absurd. However, now that the ship had departed, it was impossible to send her back.

Nedis casually sat on the bed and smiled. "Alright, stop showing me that stiff face. It seems like you were never happy every time you see me."

Rody sighed and put the scimitar on the table. He was thinking of how to deal with that bold woman in his heart and casually asked, "In what way was I not happy?"

"Hmph, you are either angry or annoyed every time you see me... Especially when I first met you, you were even more..." Nedis suddenly blushed and gritted her teeth, "Even ruder!"

Rody felt awkward and gave a faint smile. He did not continue this topic. The first time he met her was in a truly alluring situation.

The dim cabin lounge was not large. It was filled with a faintly sweet aroma. Presumably, it was the perfume Nedis used on her body. Rody seemingly felt uncomfortable and lightly said, "Since you have come here secretly, then stay right here. Do not run around. Let me think of a way to send you back."

Nedis' expression remained the same as she asked, "Where is this fleet going to?"

Rody hesitated for a moment and then replied, "The dwarfs' territory."

"Oh?" Nedis looked interested and said, "I saw a lot of troops on board. What are you all planning to do? Are you going to war?"

Rody coldly replied, "Why are you asking so much? Just quietly stay here. When the matter has concluded, I will send you back safely."

Nedis instantly jumped off the bed and to the front of Rody. A meaningful smile could be seen on her face. "If...if you are really going to war at the Hakone Kingdom, you will probably need me!" She seemed rather proud of herself as she continued, "Do you have any subordinate who knows about the dwarfs? The people of Sauron Kingdom are not your confidants. Besides that, their scouts do not necessarily know the dwarfs well."

Rody did not say anything. He just stared at Nedis.

Nedis smiled and said, "But now it is going to be fine. You already have an assistant who knows the dwarfs very well."

"Who?"

"Me!" Nedis pointed at herself. "I dare say that there is nobody on this ship who knows more about the dwarfs than I! When I was young, I once lived in the dwarf kingdom for four years to avoid being killed by the vampires!"

"Oh?" Rody's eyes finally lit up as he looked at Nedis.

Rody had always lacked information about the mysterious dwarfs. That was because the dwarfs only lived in their island country and did not have any relation with the other kingdoms on the continent aside from trading ironwood. It was practically an independent existence of the world.

When Nedis saw that Rody's heart seemed to stir, she softly laughed. Suddenly, she pulled Rody's arm and snuggled into him as she whispered, "How about it? Your Excellency Earl Rody, do you still anxiously want to chase me away?"

Her body tightly attached to Rody's side as she hugged his arm in her bosom. The sweet fragrance of her body drifted into Rody's nose...

Chapter 262: Nuisance, Nuisance

"You are really not going to eat?" Nedis looked relaxed as she sat on a chair. In front of her was the dinner sent by an officer. She held a grilled fish in her hand and smiled, "Do you have a habit of watching people eat?"

Rody just frowned and did not reply.

It had been two full days. Nedis, this stowaway, remained in Rody's room and did not go outside. Rody did not allow anyone to enter his room without permission. Someone would send three meals, every day.

For some psychological reason, Rody did not want others to know of the presence of Nedis.

Nedis elegantly raised her cup and drank the milk in it down to the last drop. She then leaned back satisfied and smiled, "Well, I have finished eating."

Rody coldly looked at her. He walked over and finished off the rest of the food. He then lightly said, "Alright, go back and sleep!"

Nedis sighed. "Don't you know any courtesy? You are always so cold and unreasonable."

Rody finally gazed at Nedis for a while and then indifferently said, "In that case, tell me about the dwarfs."

Nedis smiled cunningly and replied, "I have already said. You must promise to take me ashore once you reach your destination. Otherwise, don't expect me to tell you anything!"

Rody frowned and his expression sank. "You have already guessed correctly that we are going to war, yet you still want to follow! When the time comes, you better stay on this ship! Don't even think of going anywhere!"

Irritated, Nedis asked, "Do you think I will listen?"

Rody shrugged his shoulder. "If you won't listen, then I will knock you out when the time comes."

The two of them glared at each other for a long time as if unwilling to give way. Finally, Nedis smiled and softly said, "Well, I won't argue with you. Hmph...I want to take a bath! Get me some water!"

"What do you want?" Rody seemed shocked.

"Take a bath!" Nedis boldly repeated. "I have been shut in here for two days without taking a bath! Have you never taken a bath before?"

That time, Rody really laughed. However, it was a bitter laughter. "Take a bath... You really know how to cause trouble...Don't you know that every drop of fresh water is valuable on a ship at sea? On top of that, we are currently going to war. Having hot meals to eat is already good..."

Nedi glared at Rody and said, "In your capacity, you can live in such a large room and eat such good food. Yet you don't have water to take a bath?"

They once again glared at each other for a long time. Rody finally sighed and said, "Well, I will arrange for you."

As he turned to walk out, Nedis once again shouted, "Wait!"

Rody impatiently asked. "What is it?"

"I also need clothes!" Nedis' face seemed to turn crimson red. "I have worn this for two to three days now."

Rody was speechless. He then slammed the door as he left.

It seemed like the King thought highly of Rody. The people on the ship all complied with his requests. For a short while, there were several officers carrying a few barrels of hot water to Rody's room. However, they had difficulty getting him the clothes. There were no women clothes on the ship. Rody also did not dare say that

he wanted women's clothes. They only sent him a set of ordinary uniform.

A few barrels of hot steaming water were placed in the outer room. After those officers went out, Nedis then came out from the inner room.

The room was misty with the steam. Nedis seemed shy as she said, "You... what are you doing here? Quickly, go out!"

Rody laughed bitterly. "Go out? I just only asked for hot water to bath. How am I supposed to leave now?" He lightly said, "You bathe here. I will withdraw into the inner room."

"No way!" Nedis' face turned redder. She forcefully pushed Rody out of the room as she shouted, "You are not allowed to be in here!"

Rody felt helpless. With Nedis' strength, she would not be able to push Rody, but it was not nice to forcefully stay when a woman wanted to take a bath.

Rody sighed once he was out of the cabin door. He looked around and saw that there was no one near the room and sighed again. After thinking for a while, he decided to go and see the King.

The King's face was paler, and his breath was weak. A few guards outside allowed Rody in. Rody then said, "According to our travel itinerary, we should arrive there by tomorrow, right? I believe we will be able to see the land before dawn tomorrow."

Rody waited for a moment. When he saw that the King did not respond, he frowned and said, "Shouldn't you be gathering your officers to give them orders now?"

The King's eyes had a profound look as he whispered, "It is not the time yet."

Rody pondered for a moment and softly said, "According to the map on the distribution of the dwarf soldiers that I saw, there will be a valley fifteen miles inwards from our pre-selected landing site. After passing through that valley is their medium sized city. There

are about fifteen thousand soldiers stationed there. I guess they will have small groups of cavalries patrolling around town. After landing, I suggest that I personally lead a team of cavalry to rapidly assault them. We will quickly capture that base and at the same time get some supplies there..."

Rody gave a detailed account of his opinion but he saw that the King was squinting and looked as though he was not listening carefully.

"Your Majesty, are you listening to me?" Rody felt rather odd.

The King stood up and looked at the hourglass at the side. Suddenly, he smiled mysteriously and said, "Well, we will discuss this later. Three hours from now, I will give the order for the fleet to stop. I will then assemble all the officers here. We will talk about your opinion then."

Rody was startled and felt that the King's attitude was suspicious. He could not help but ask, "Talk about it then?" Rody tried hard to suppress his anger and said, "If you want the battle to go smoothly, it is better to determine the advancement plans now."

The King seemed to ponder as he looked at the hourglass at the side. After a quarter hour, the King finally asked, "Rody, have you seen a spirit fox before?"

Rody frowned.

The King continued as he smiled, "The spirit fox is a wild animal with precious furs. It is very small and very beautiful but also very cunning. Many noble ladies from the Roland Continent like to keep this animal as a pet."

Rody's calmed his heart. He knew that the King's words would definitely have a purpose. So, he simply sat down and quietly listened until he finished.

"Unfortunately, the natural disposition of this kind of animal is extremely strange. An adult spirit fox cannot be tamed! Even if you

capture an adult spirit fox, it will struggle until it dies. This is why only the young spirit foxes will be caught and tamed to become pets."

The King did not speak hurriedly, nor did he speak slowly. He said, "However, this spirit fox has another peculiar aspect. A spirit fox's nest will only have two baby foxes at most. Besides that, if the hunter were to touch the nest and try to catch them, the adult spirit fox would immediately bite his baby foxes until they die! It would rather they die than to let them get caught! These foxes are really strange creatures.

"On top of that, the spirit foxes are really cunning and clever. They rarely leave their nests." The King smiled. "Fortunately, they still have to hunt for food. When an experienced hunter finds a fox's nest, he will first place a hare in the surroundings to lure the adult spirit fox to come out. After that...Haha..."

Rody's heart sank. His expression changed as he asked, "What do you mean by that?"

The King stopped smiling and softly said, "The dwarfs are suspicious and cunning. Do you really think we can deceive them with our plan? Although this plan seems feasible, there are still flaws! Right now, we can only succeed and must not fail. That is why we must think of ways to make up for these flaws..."

The King raised a few fingers and said, "First of all, with such a large-scale mobilization of the army, even if we tried to keep this a secret it would inevitably leak! Second, our internal section is not secure! For example, the Senior Prime Minister's position has been very subtle the entire time...Someone smart like you should be able to see this, right? With his identity and position, do you think we can conceal the mobilization of our army from him?"

The King sighed and continued, "The Temple will naturally not stand idly if we fight against the dwarfs. If the Senior Prime Minister really collaborates with the Temple..." The King's voice

gradually became gloomy. "Then, it was not even necessary for the Temple to appear. They will only need to just send the information to the dwarfs...then our surprise attack will be known, and we will lose our advantage."

Rody suppressed his anger then said, "Carry on."

"This is why..." The King smiled and continued, "This is why our original plan will not work...In that case, we must adapt. If...if the dwarfs are the spirit foxes and their country is the nest, then in order to touch the spirit fox's nest, we must lure their army...or rather, the adult spirit fox to come out."

"So, in fact, our ship here is the hare, the bait!" Rody coldly said, "Our fleet does not intend to attack. We are only luring the enemy's fleet over, right?"

The King did not refute Rody's words and calmly said, "Yes! Even the Senior Prime Minister believes that our fleet is the real offensive force! We must not take this risk! Do you remember, a few days before our departure, the last batch of the fleet setting off for the Radiant Empire..."

Rody coldly joined in, "That fleet is the real offensive force, am I right? We only hold out here to attract the dwarfs over. And then, the fleet that had set off earlier can land successfully!" Rody's eyes were filled with anger. His glare was sharp and penetrating as it focused on the King's face.

The King sighed as if he could feel Rody's anger. He gently coughed a few times and said, "According to the intelligence obtained, the dwarfs have received information about us and seemed to be aware of our original plan. Their navy did not track our last fleet all the way. They had already returned to their port on the day we set out...If the Senior Prime Minister was really collaborating with the Temple and had revealed the news, then if my guess is correct, the naval fleet of the dwarfs would not be very far away from our vicinity."

"Haha haha..." Rody suddenly burst out laughing. His laughter was filled with anger. He suddenly stood up and said, "It's a good plan! It is really a good plan! In order to attract the dwarf's navy over here, you had actually sent out so many warships and soldiers...no, not right." Rody raised his head and coldly glared at the King. "Since it is a bait, then there is no need to have so many soldiers! If I am right, the fleet that we brought does not have many soldiers!"

"Yes." The King admitted. "There are not more than twenty thousand soldiers on board these one hundred and fifty warships."

The King sighed when he saw that Rody was not surprised. He then said, "I know you must be very angry right now. However, as an experienced commander of the army, I believe you will be able to understand our predicament. His Majesty also said he believed that Your Excellency will understand our approach."

"What did you say? His Majesty..." The muscles at the corners of Rody's eyes suddenly twitched.

The King sighed. Suddenly, a white light emerged from his body. Under that light, his facial muscles gradually transformed. His body also seemed to be wrapped in that light which instantly changed his appearance.

"You are..." Rody gritted his teeth. "You are the leader of the Sorcerer's Association, Master Sith! I have met you before!"

Sith's aged face was somewhat apologetic. "I am sorry. In order to make others believe that this is the real offensive force, I needed to disguise as the King and board the ship with you. So, I had no choice but to use a transformation spell to change into the King's appearance."

Rody sneered. "Very good!" He stared at Sith and hatefully said, "So why did you involve me? Since our fleet is just bait, then why must I be involved in this plan?"

Sith's expression turned serious and said, "This is because we really need you. In fact, our operation cannot be carried out without you."

He then showed a strange expression and said, "Rody, do you really think that the Sauron Kingdom cared a lot about the natural resources of ironwood that belongs to the dwarfs? That's true. After conquering the dwarf territory, we perhaps will be able to control this precious resource of ironwood and command the other kingdoms on the Roland continent. However, is this reason alone enough for us to take the risk and start this war?"

Rody's heart stirred as he suddenly remembered the conversation he had with Seth a few days before departing.

Chapter 263: The Enlightened Bait

Although Rody was very angry, because of his many past trials, he forced himself to calm down. His rationale told him there was no point in getting angry. It would better to wait for the other person to finish talking.

With that thought in mind, Rody sat down again and calmly looked at the Grand Sorcerer of Roland Continent and said, "Continue to speak."

The wrinkles on Sith's face were like dried orange peels. His eyes revealed a complicated gaze as he slowly said, "In the history of the Roland Continent, there was once because of the resource of ironwood, a war broke out between the various kingdoms on the Roland Continent and the dwarfs...The King has mentioned this to you before."

"Yes." Rody nodded calmly.

"During the beginning of that war, the Temple secretly supported the many kingdoms of the Roland Continent. It could even be said that the Temple was the one who instigated the war. In the eyes of the Temple, the dwarfs were, after all, a different race. They could not rest easy having a different race control the essential resources of the Roland Continent."

"Although the dwarfs were quite strong, they were unable to fight against the united armies of the numerous kingdoms. But just when they were about to be defeated, news came from the Temple..." Sith looked at the ceiling and expressionlessly said, "The Temple called for an immediate cessation of hostilities!"

"What's the reason?" Rody frowned.

"Don't know!" Sith's facial muscles seemed to tremble the moment he said that. He then sighed and continued, "At that time, nobody knew the reason. However, later...later, after a long time

and going through a variety of channels, we managed to receive a bit of news...The dwarfs seemed to have something important and the Temple seemed to be very fearful of that thing. At that time, the dwarfs issued a warning. If they were defeated, they would find a way to put that thing..."

"Destroy?" Rody laughed bitterly.

"I really don't know this one." Sith sighed. "We did not know what the Temple was afraid of. Was the Temple afraid that the dwarfs would destroy that thing or would take it out to use? Anyway, nobody knew the answer to this. That was a really big secret of the Temple. We, the survivors of the Shaka Empire, have been trying hard to restore the empire. This is why we tried every possible way to obtain more information. Yet, we could only obtain this much." He paused and then slowly said, "However, there is one thing that is definitely unmistakable! That is, the Temple is extremely terrified of that thing!"

"I understand now. You attack the dwarfs, not because you want to subjugate them but because you want to obtain that thing!" Rody looked with a little ridicule.

"Yes!" Sith sighed. "So we need you for this matter. Once our army disembarks, we will attack all the way. When we reach a crucial moment, it would be inevitable for the dwarfs to have a life and death struggle. This is why we request you, Earl Rody, or rather the Duke of the Tulip Family, a Domain Master to help..."

This time, Rody did not wait for Sith to finish speaking. He stood up and waved his hand as he said, "Enough!"

He mockingly looked at Sith and said, "So one of the reasons of this fleet is to attract the dwarfs' navy and allow the main offensive force to disembark safely...The other reason is to send me here because you believe that even if we were to encounter the dwarf's fleet, we will be able to safely disembark with my strength. After that, I would help you obtain that thing by sneaking in. After

all, a single person entering is much easier and more secretive than sending an entire army in. Am I right?"

Sith nodded his head.

"In other words, these hundreds of warships are, firstly, to act as bait and secondly, to send me here...You are really very magnanimous!"

"For the end result, it is acceptable to pay a price." Sith sighed. "My task is to sneak into the dwarf's territory with you. Under my guidance..."

Rody lightly said, "There is no need to say anymore!"

"What?" Sith became slightly angry.

"I said, you do not have to say anymore!" Rody's had a cold expression. "No matter what you ask of me, I can clearly tell you..." Rody stared at Sith's eyes and slowly said, "I refuse!"

"You..." Sith frowned. "Are you still angry about this matter? I believe you can understand..."

"Yes, I can understand." Rody calmly replied. "I can understand this diversion plan as a commander of an army. However, I can understand that this does not necessarily mean that I can calmly accept being deceived by you all."

Rody looked at the speechless Sith and coldly said, "I only do things based on my own beliefs. If you had told me this earlier, perhaps I would have agreed to help you. But the way you did it..." Rody suddenly smiled. Even a blind could see that his smile did not have the slightest feeling of pleasure. "...makes me really angry!"

He turned around and walked towards the door. At the door, he suddenly and coldly said, "Tell His Majesty that those who have deceived me have paid the price! However, as we currently are allies, I will not immediately cause him trouble! However, it is better not to use these similar methods on me again!"

Leaving the stunned Sith behind, Rody went to the deck above and saw the soldiers respectfully salute him. Rody sighed in his heart. These poor guys still did not know that the King had sold them out!

That night, the strong sea breeze blew across Rody's face. Rody exhaled deeply, throwing out all the depression in his heart. He then gently shook his head as if he was trying to shake the confusion out of his head.

'What should I do next?'

Rody looked at the tranquil surface of the distant sea. He could faintly see the land at a distance. That must be the island country of the dwarfs.

Rody then pondered.

If this fleet is a bait, then the dwarf's fleet must be in the vicinity. They will soon attack and swallow the bait!

When will the fighting start?

Rody looked up at the sky. It should probably be before dawn.

If Rody were the commander, he would choose to attack at night.

Rody was not worried about himself. With his strength, he wouldn't get injured even in the boundless sea...The moment he thought about this, he suddenly smiled wryly...There is still a problem in the cabin!

He subconsciously walked towards his own cabin. When he reached the door, he suddenly remembered that Nedis was still bathing.

Rody smiled helplessly as he suddenly felt less disgusted with the problematic woman. At the very least, she was more likable than King Sauron.

As he thought of these complicated things, he suddenly heard a sailor at the observatory platform above shout out, "There is

something going on!"

There were two sailors at the observatory platform. One of them nervously looked at a distance. The other one slipped down the mast and strode towards the cabin. Rody pulled him and asked, "What happened?"

"There is a fleet approaching! They are dwarf warships!" The sailor nervously gasped for breath. He then broke away from Rody's grip and ran in.

"They are coming!" Rody raised his eyebrow. He had already gotten up from the deck and jumped onto the observatory platform. He glared at the panic-stricken sailor and lightly asked, "Where?"

"There!" The sailor forcefully calmed himself and then pointed towards a direction.

Rody concentrated in that direction. His eyesight was better than ordinary people. He faintly saw the shadow of a sail approaching on the right side of their fleet. It was extremely fast.

At that moment, there were voices on the deck below Rody. The sailors and the soldiers had received the news and begun to assemble.

After the horn was sounded, the sailor on the observatory platform immediately took out a small torch. He gently shook it and the torch immediately gave out a dazzling light.

That small torch was so dazzling that Rody was surprised.

The strength of the Royal Navy of Sauron Kingdom was truly extraordinary. As soon as the torch on the flagship was lit, the other surrounding ships immediately responded similarly by lighting up torches. Within a short while, countless spots of light twinkled on the surface of the sea. Even the stars in the sky seemed to dim.

Based on some understanding of the navy of the Sauron

Kingdom, Rody knew that the torch was meant to alert the whole fleet.

It could not be said that the Royal Navy of the Sauron Kingdom had not reacted fast enough. However, nevertheless, they had fallen behind.

That was because those on that fleet did not know that they would be fighting against the dwarfs. They only acted according to normal practice and became alert when they saw a large fleet approaching.

However, the dwarfs were already, aggressively, prepared for combat.

The dwarfs launched the first attack.

As it was dark and too far away, Rody could not see what the dwarfs' attack was like. In fact, the unluckiest ones were the vessels on the periphery of the fleet of Sauron Kingdom.

They could only hear a faint thunderous roar. One of the smaller warships of the Sauron Kingdom in the distance suddenly burst into flames. Fire arrows then flew over like locusts.

Within a short few minutes, that warship had already turned into a large ball of fire...burning. Rody did not even understand what kind of attack the dwarf warships had used.

Fighting had started at the periphery and the tranquility of the sea was broken. Sounds of whistling and explosions continued endlessly. There were also blood-curdling screams from the soldiers and sailors.

Rody understood clearly that this round, the fleet of Sauron Kingdom would definitely lose the battle.

Perhaps this was an enlightened bait.

The Sauron Kingdom fleet was immediately dispersed.

The dwarfs' five-sail warships were truly powerful. Numerous

warships immediately advanced and rushed into the midst of the Sauron Kingdom's fleet. They launched a concentrated attack as they crossed each other. Although the Sauron Kingdom's fleet did their best to resist, their surrounding warships, one by one, started to burn.

The nearest of the dwarfs' five-sail warships finally came into Rody's view.

The soldiers on the deck had picked up their weapons and their gunmen had begun firing back. A large number of soldiers shouted, 'Protect His Majesty!' as they advanced towards the King's cabin.

Rody frowned and suddenly kicked open the door to his cabin as he rushed in.

The room was steaming. Nedis uttered a scream. Rody faintly saw a white figure quickly squatted down inside a large barrel.

"Get...get out!" Nedis' voice was shrill and alarmed.

Rody simply asked, "You have not finished bathing?"

"You...I told you to get out!" Nedis was anxious but she did not forget to argue back at Rody. "Don't you know that girls bathe slowly?"

Rody picked up the military uniform from the shelf and threw it at Nedis. He then coldly said, "Now you have finished bathing! Quickly, wear your clothes!" He then turned around.

Nedis heard the screams outside and realized that something had happened. She quickly put on her clothes.

There was a thunderous roar as the hull of the ship shook violently. Nedis was caught off-guard. She staggered and crashed towards Rody. Rody frowned and held her.

Nedis was tense as she asked, "What is going on outside?"

"Put on your clothes properly first!" Rody coldly looked at her.

In her haste, Nedis did not button her clothes at her chest. She was only wearing a shirt. Fortunately, the person who provided the clothes thought that it was for Rody and the clothes given was according to Rody's size. The large military uniform that Nedis wore had already covered the lower part of her body down to just above her knees. However, half her snow-white chest was [exposed at the placket.](#)

With a red face, Nedis quickly buttoned up. Suddenly, there was a loud roar from outside. Immediately, the hull of the ship shook violently, once again. Rody could even hear cracking sounds in the ship.

"It's too late!" Rody said, "Follow me!"

Rody quickly pulled a woolen blanket from the side. Not allowing Nedis to resist, Rody wrapped her body with the blanket. He then took her hand and ran out the door of the room.

There were lots of voices on the deck outside the cabin. Countless archers were desperately shooting arrows. Rody could only hear the whistling sounds of the arrows flying back and forth. Rody hugged Nedis with one hand and deflected the arrows that were occasionally flying towards him with the other.

The 'middle' where you button your shirt.

Chapter 264: Another Use for Fighting Energy

Rody was shocked upon realizing that a large five-sail warship had already charged to the side of the flagship.

The sharp protruding bow of the ship was already nudging into the side of the flagship. The side of the deck was completely broken, and the five-sail warship was ruthlessly stuck in the smaller half of the hull. The huge roar and the shaking of the hull earlier were evidently caused by that.

Obviously, the dwarfs' warships were extremely strong, and ramming was one of their effective means of attack. At least, based on Rody's view, that huge impact had tilted the hull of the flagship. The sea water rushed in from the broken parts of the hull and numerous sailors howled miserably.

At that moment, the soldiers on two ships nearby were still busy shooting at each other with bows and arrows.

Suddenly, a row of small tubes appeared from the bow of the five-sail warship.

Rody felt startled when he recalled the King's explanation of the dwarfs' warships. Now he understood what that was.

As soon as he thought of that, that row of tubes suddenly sprayed out some blackish liquid. The black liquid looked sticky and silky.

Rody pulled Nedis and quickly retreated to the other side of the ship. Suddenly, fire arrows were shot out from the dwarfs' five-sail warships and they flew towards where the oil was sprayed. Rody heard a loud bang as a huge heat wave surged from behind him.

Immediately, the front half of the hull was enveloped by a raging fire.

Many of Sauron Kingdom's soldiers and sailors were screaming

in the fire. Some of them were engulfed in the flames as they ran out from inside the ship struggling. However, most of them immediately jumped into the sea.

Many of the sorcerers aboard the Sauron Kingdom's warships flew up into the sky. Numerous fireballs were shot back and forth. Obviously, those sorcerers were trying to resist. However, the dwarfs' navy fleet was too fast and had already rushed in and was among the Sauron Kingdom's fleet. The warships from both sides were scattered among each other. As a result, those sorcerers who flew up into the sky could not accurately aim at their targets. In addition to that, most of them were shot down one after another by the archers from the dwarfs. The sorcerers screamed miserably from the sky as they fell to the ground looking like hedgehogs.

Rody could not care less about all these. Sauron Kingdom had lost the battle even before it began. The resistance then was merely last-ditch struggles.

Rody could not bear looking at the sailors and the soldiers getting killed tragically by the arrows. He pushed Nedis into a corner and shouted, "Stay here and do not move!"

His body suddenly burst out with a golden flame fighting energy. His whole body was like a huge comet as he shot over towards the five-sail warship that had hit the flagship of Sauron Kingdom.

With the loud sound of an explosion, a large hole immediately appeared on the sturdy dwarf warship made of high-quality ironwood. Rody immediately shot towards the other side of the warship and pierced through it.

Rody's body skyrocketed and suddenly landed on the bow of the other party's ship. There was a succession of loud cries by many of the dwarfs in the dark. However, Rody could not understand their language. He looked around in the dark and saw that the dwarf soldiers below were wearing very eccentric armors. Those armors completely covered their bodies. Many dwarfs picked up their

bows and arrows and shot at Rody who was standing at the bow of the ship.

Rody could not be bothered with the arrows. Suddenly, he punched the deck.

There was an earthshaking sound and then a rumbling sound came from the hull of the ship. The deck of the ship began to crack under Rody's fist. A huge crack then opened up and immediately the entire bow of the ship broke off.

The five-sail warship that had lost its balance quickly tilted up. Ignoring the various screams from those people, Rody quickly rushed back to be beside Nedis. He also ignored Nedis' surprised exclamation. Rody pulled Nedis and then quickly jumped up to the high observatory platform. That sailor actually did not die. He was squatting behind the fencing wall of the observatory deck, hiding himself from the flying arrows.

Rody pulled him up and shouted, "You, send a signal for me!"

"Wh...What?" The sailor was trembling in fear.

"Order all the ships to surrender immediately." Rody anxiously said.

Even though Rody was powerful and had domain powers, it was impossible for him alone to defeat a powerful naval fleet of nearly two hundred warships.

After all, a Domain Master was still human and not God.

"I said, send a signal! Give the order to surrender!" Rody roared.

Although the sailor was timid, he was still loyal to his duty and refused, "No!" He even regarded Rody as an enemy. The sailor's first reaction was to pull out a dagger and thrust it at Rody.

Rody did not have time to waste with the sailor. He instantly knocked the sailor out and took out a few torches of different colors from his arms.

He hastily looked at them. He knew that the green torch was used to declare surrender.

Rody easily conjured up a sorcery flame and a huge green flame was lighted up at the observatory deck.

Rody immediately threw the flaming torch onto the observatory platform and then jumped down together with Nedis.

Only by surrendering would the pitiful fleet and soldiers of Sauron Kingdom avoid being slaughtered.

That was a battle that could not be won. The opponent has brought in their most powerful navy while the Sauron Kingdom's fleet was only strong in appearance. Although the fleet had many ships, they were mostly empty. It was just a bunch of pitiful bait who got betrayed.

If they continued to fight, only the bait would get slaughtered.

The other Sauron Kingdom's warships were very surprised to see the green flame, the symbol of surrender, above their flagship. Rody was not sure whether it would succeed or not, but when he saw another Sauron Kingdom's warship also light up the green flame, he felt relieved.

Rody felt unwilling as this was the first time he surrendered on the battlefield. Since it was the Sauron people who would just get slaughtered, perhaps it would be better to surrender and survive.

Nedis was standing by Rody's side. The series of events earlier terrified her, and she gasped as she shrank back into Rody. She asked, "Why did you surrender? Aren't you very powerful? Aren't you on Sauron Kingdom's side?"

Rody coldly looked at the woman in his arms and lightly said, "I am not on their side! I am not anymore!"

On the noisy deck of the ship, a captain roared. "Who lit the torch? Who is it?"

Many people had already rushed towards Rody. Rody kicked the angry captain in front of him. He then grabbed the commander of the ship and coldly said, "I am the one who gave the order! If you don't want to die, go and ask your King!"

He threw that pitiful commander aside and took Nedis to the side of the ship. At that time, Sith, disguised as the King, ran out from the cabin. At his side was a group of Royal Knights. Sith saw Rody with a single glance and immediately shouted, "Rody, what are you doing?"

Rody pointed at him and shouted, "If you do not want to watch these loyal soldiers get slaughtered, immediately order them to give up! They do not deserve this!"

Sith was anxious. He seemed like he wanted to push away those Royal Knights in front of him who regarded and protected him as the King and moved towards Rody. He shouted, "Rody, you...I..."

"Don't blabber...I am not with you!" Rody said with a faint smile. He simply ignored Sith and then said to Nedis, who was in his arms. "Are you ready?"

"Ready for what?" Nedis suddenly had an uneasy feeling.

"Of course, it is jumping into the sea!" Rody had a mocking look.

Nedis screamed as she felt a huge force pulling her. Both of them had already jumped off the edge of the deck. With a splash, the two of them had fallen deep into the abyss of the sea.

Sith immediately rushed to the edge of the deck. He saw Rody jump off the ship. He was extremely furious, but he could not do anything.

Although it was not the cold season, to jump into the sea in the middle of the night completely submerged and surrounded by the cold seawater instantly made all the sounds of the explosions, cries and screaming from the battle disappeared. The piercing cold water made Nedis very frightened.

In the midst of it, she swallowed a few mouthfuls of the salty and astringent seawater. She instantly coughed out violently and her body involuntarily struggled fiercely.

However, Rody continued to pull her deeper into the sea.

When the two of them had sunken to almost the bottom of the sea, suddenly a streak of milky white light appeared at Rody's index finger. That light grew bigger and bigger and finally, it completely wrapped Rody and Nedis inside.

The even more strange thing was that the light actually forced away the water, bit by bit. Immediately, a few cubic meters of a waterless space was formed around the two of them!

Nedis coughed violently in Rody's arms. She coughed out big mouthfuls of the seawater, and felt weak as well. When her breathing finally calmed down, she immediately roared at Rody. "Are you trying to kill me?"

Rody smiled calmly and used his eyes to signal her to look around.

The anger in Nedis' face immediately disappeared. She was surprised as she looked at the waterless space surrounding them. She exclaimed, "This is...You...how did you do this?"

"It is sorcery." Rody simply answered.

Obviously, Rody could not tell Nedis directly that the old man, Moses, had transformed the legendary Staff of Moses into the ring on his finger.

The Staff of Moses could even split the entire sea; therefore, it was naturally very easy to create a waterless space in the sea.

Nedis looked surprised and curious as she and Rody stood at the bottom of the sea with the rocks and the aquatic plants. They were surrounded by the underwater world, but it looked as if the water was blocked by something and could not flow in. Nedis curiously stretched out one of her fingers to touch the edge of the waterless

space. Her finger easily entered the sea.

It was wet and cold.

Nedis suddenly trembled and forcefully held Rody. "Very cold!"

Her clothes had been soaked wet the moment she fell into the sea. She was actually still bathing when she was interrupted by Rody and she had hastily put on the military uniform. Besides that, she had only taken the shirt.

Although the loose uniform was large enough to cover her from above her knees, she was naked below that. Even though Nedis liked to seduce people, she felt tense when she actually stood in front of others, especially Rody. That was especially so since her clothes were wet and had tightly stuck to her body, completely showing off the curves of her body...

Her spotless white legs were exposed. As Rody seemed to be looking at her, Nedis screamed, "What are you looking at?"

Rody lightly replied, "Nothing."

Nedis was angry until her face was flushed. "You...this is all your fault! I was still bathing, but you..."

Rody coldly replied, "What do you mean, my fault? I was saving you! If I had not pulled you out, you would have been shot dead!" Rody suddenly laughed. Watching the charming woman get angry vented his frustration at being pestered by her in the past few days. Feeling somewhat happy, Rody smiled and asked, "Are you cold?"

He then burst into flames with his fighting energy. The warm fighting energy wrapped around the two of them. With Rody's powerful fighting energy, their drenched clothes quickly dried up.

Rody sighed and retrieved his fighting energy. He then pulled Nedis and walked forward.

"Hey! You used fighting energy earlier, didn't you? Why did you stop using it?" Nedis seemed dissatisfied.

Rody frowned and stared at the pestering woman. "Aren't your clothes dry already?"

"But..." Nedis thought for a moment and then confidently said, "But your fighting energy kept me very warm! Right now, I am wearing very little and it is very cold in the sea!"

As Rody listened to these words, he swore to Gods that his first thought was to strangle this woman, in front of him.

Nedis actually wanted to use the golden fighting energy from a Domain Master which terrified Rody's powerful enemies to keep herself warm!

"Let's go!" Rody pulled Nedis moved forward again.

"Where are we going?" Nedis frowned. It was dark at the bottom of the sea.

"We are going to the dwarfs' island country." Rody seemed to smile. "First, we will find some clothes for you to wear. Are we going to return to the Roland Continent, like this? Although I can fly, I cannot fly for a few days across the straits. If you want to go back using the bottom of the sea, at least, we will need to get clothes and food..." He seemed to be mocking at Nedis. "Otherwise, we will be starved to death before we reach it."

"Hmph, looks like you are not always cold. You actually know how to joke a little!" Nedis then hatefully said, "Based on what you said, we should to find a way to get a ship. I do not want to go back by walking under the sea!"

"Besides that..." Nedis had not finished talking. "Right now, I am wearing very little. You better not have any vile thoughts!"

As soon as Nedis finished, she put on a very frightened expression.

Rody was angry. He turned pale and diligently pulled Nedis forward. He was afraid that he might throw that woman out in his anger.

Chapter 265: Arrival at the Border

Seth leaned both his legs on the chair grossly. He did not care about his manners or being graceful as long as he could sit comfortably. He held a golden cup of wine. It was a first-class wine presented by His Highness the Crown Prince.

Old Mark lowered his head to look at the chessboard as he pondered. Just now Seth's move had immediately put Old Mark in a dangerous situation.

That chess was unique to the Roland Continent and was different from the popular chess game of the Radiant Empire. The rules on the movements of the pieces had some warlike implication. One was a well-learned playboy and the other was Dandong's disciple. They were naturally well matched.

Mouse was standing at the side. She was not in the mood to watch the match between the two.

In fact, Mouse felt resentful. Her resentment was mainly because she was unhappy with the playboy who had the 'couldn't care less' attitude.

In order to protect the playboy, Mouse could not follow Rody out to the sea. Besides that, Seth had been very relaxed for the past few days at the Summer Palace. Every day, he played chess, read books, drank wine, admired the flowers and watched the moon. He was having an exceptionally satisfactory time, while Mouse had to stay at his side as his bodyguard.

In fact, Rody had another reason for leaving Mouse behind. That playboy might run away at any time. If Mouse were to follow Rody out to the sea, perhaps by the time they returned, he would have disappeared!

As it was difficult to meet Seth, Rody did not want to let him run away. He wanted to bring Seth back home to be dealt with by

Nicole at all costs.

Mouse could not help sighing when she saw Seth not concerned about his image as he raised his legs.

In the past few days, the Consort had been coming quite often and Mouse could not endure her pestering. In order to keep up the deception, Seth simply had to continue his disguise as a woman. At that moment, Seth had the appearance of a well-bred noble lady. However, he carefreely spread out his legs and leaned back in the chair.

Mouse could not help but coldly say, "That's enough! Seth, sit properly!"

Seth gave her a supercilious look and asked, "What's wrong? Are you starting to become impatient?"

Mouse remained silent, but her hands had already withdrawn back into the sleeve.

Seth did not dare to make Mouse angry. With his good understanding of women, Seth knew that a woman would do anything once angered.

He calmly sat up straight but deliberately sighed and said, "Miss Mouse, to tell you the truth, I actually felt sorry...I know myself. In fact, when I was still at home, I would always drive those guards around me insane."

After Seth spoke, Old Mark had already made his move on the chessboard. He looked up and said, "Seth, concentrate on the game. If you were to anger the Black Veiled Saint, I will not protect you. We can eat after this game."

Seth deliberately sighed as glanced at Mouse. He loudly said, "Unfortunately, someone may not have the appetite to eat."

Mouse narrowed her eyes and coldly asked, "What did you say?"

Seth had probably felt Mouse's anger and the dangerous

atmosphere. He immediately laughed and said, "Nothing! I didn't say anything! I said Rody is very safe. With his strength, there are probably none on this continent who could threaten him. I believe all of us can eat and sleep in peace without thinking of anything. Perhaps he is currently eating a lavish meal. What is there to be worried about?"

Mouse finally could not take it anymore. She raised her hand and threw out a fireball. Fortunately, Old Mark was skillful. He hastily grabbed Seth's collar and pulled him to one side. There was an explosion as the chessboard and the two chairs were smashed into pieces by the fireball.

Mouse's eyes flickered with anger. However, she suddenly had a thought. She forcefully suppressed her anger and coldly said, "Well, now you should learn how to speak! Go and eat! After the meal...I will do your make-up for you!"

Seth stared at the chessboard that was smashed to pieces. He suddenly smiled and said, "Very good! Old Mark, let us eat! Today, I have an extremely good appetite and must eat more. Haha, the worse the appetite of others, the better my mood."

Old Mark helplessly shook his head and sighed. "Rody, I hope you can come back quickly. These two youngsters are driving me crazy!"

...

While the three of them were making a ruckus at the capital of Sauron Kingdom, Rody was sitting on the beach of the dwarfs' island eating grilled fish.

He dug a hole at the sandy beach and lit a bonfire. He then made a frame with a few branches. Several fishes were caught from the sea and cleaned before sticking them on the branches. They were grilled by the bonfire under them and a fragrant aroma soon wafts through the air.

The fishes were caught by Rody but Nedis was the one who cooked the meal. The thing that surprised Rody was that Nedis was very skilled at that despite her pampered look.

Rody bit lightly on a fish that Nedis handed to him. He immediately thought that it was delicious and praised Nedis. She charmingly smiled at him and said, "Do you think I am a woman who does not know how to do anything? I grew up alone and I must learn how to take care of myself."

Rody sighed and did not say anything.

Nedis' words were simple but Rody faintly remembered in his heart that he himself became an orphan since his teens. He had also been taking care of himself before he met Nicole and Seth. Although Nedis' words sounded simple, she probably went through a lot of hardships in the process. This was something others could not understand. Besides that, her identity and Rody's identity were different. Although Rody lived a hard life, it was at the very least a safe life. On the other hand, Nedis seemed to have some enmity with the vampires. It was more difficult for her since she had to survive while avoiding her killers. Her simple words had unintentionally given Rody such impressions.

It was already morning. The sea breeze was blowing gently. There was a faint light shining on the surface of the distant sea. As they were hungry, they no longer spoke and quickly ate their food.

Rody had a big appetite. He looked as if he had not eaten enough even after he finished eating. Nedis looked at him and gave a slight smile. She then took out a raw fish from behind.

Nedis had cleaned the fish earlier and had stealthily hidden it at some point in time. She then smiled and borrowed Rody's scimitar to cut the fish.

The scimitar moved swiftly in Nedis' hands and over ten thin slices of fishes were cut. She then placed the fish slices on a kelp she found from the sea and gave it to Rody.

Rody, who seemed curious, laughed. "What? Can I eat this just as it is?"

Nedis smiled and replied, "It is simple and does not have spices, but it can be eaten."

Rody gently picked up a slice of the fish and put it into his mouth. The raw fish was unusually tasty. He could not help but exclaim in surprise.

Nedis laughed. "How is it? This is something I learned from the dwarfs. Although it is not as authentic, it should be passable."

Rody enjoyed eating the first slice and he could not help but put another two more slices in his mouth. Although they had the smell of raw fish, the smell was concealed by their delicious taste. He ate happily, and the dozen slices were soon finished.

Noticing that Nedis had not eaten any, Rody blushed. He then asked, "What is this? I never expected raw fish to taste this good."

Nedis lightly smiled and replied, "Just now, when you caught the fishes, did you not notice that there were different types? The fish I grilled earlier were ordinary fish. However, the one I deliberately left behind was different. If I remember correctly, it is a kind of flatfish that is used to make the sashimi."

Rody gave a bitter smile and replied, "I did not notice any dissimilarities among the fishes."

Rody paused for a while and then smiled again. "You have not eaten yet. Give me the scimitar. Let me try to cut."

Nedis did not object and handed over the fish and the scimitar to Rody. Rody recalled Nedis' movements when cutting the fish and then went ahead to cut it into a dozen pieces within a short moment.

Nedis looked at Rody with a pair of smiling eyes but she did not eat the fish.

Rody was startled. "What's wrong? Did I cut it wrong?"

Nedis shook her head and replied, "You cut it right. With your ability, you could clearly remember the method of cutting the fish...However, if you could learn it so easily, then the dwarfs' special delicacy would not be so rare."

Nedis stretched out two of her finger and twisted a thin slice of fish as she smiled. "Look, even though you cut well, but the sizes of the slices are different. There are many ways of cutting the fishes. The method I used earlier was a thin slice method. In addition, there are also many other methods, like flat cutting, peeling, line cutting and 'snake belly' cutting...You are skillful enough to fight against Paladins, but you are still far from cutting out authentic sashimi."

Rody did not believe her and put a slice of the fish in his mouth. However, he spat it out after two bites. Nedis laughed. "Don't you know fishes have bones? The slices that I cut out for you earlier was done with special attention. Your haphazard way of cutting actually pushed all the fish bones into the flesh..."

The two of them laughed together for a while and the original distance between them gradually faded.

After resting on the beach for a while, the two of them finally went inland.

Although the sea battle was at a distance from the coast, the sounds of explosions at the sea could be heard clearly in the quiet of the night. There were some small dwarf villages near the sea, but the residents had already fled when they heard the sounds of battle.

After walking for some time, the two of them found an abandoned village. They looked for a household and took a few pieces of clothing. Nedis no longer needed to expose her seductive legs.

Nedis only felt relieved after putting on these clothes. Although she did not mind exposing her body in front of Rody, it was very cold by the beach, both day and night. She was thinly dressed and although she did not complain she felt so cold that she could hardly stand it anymore.

Both of them were not in a hurry and rested at the village for half a day. In the evening, those who ran away, because they were frightened of the war, had returned.

That was the first time Rody saw the legendary dwarfs.

The dwarfs were not much different from the other races. The majority of them looked just like normal people.

According to legend, the dwarfs were short and sturdy. They had long beards regardless whether they were men or women, old or young. They had deep, resonant voices and were irascible and queer.

However, those dwarfs looked just like ordinary humans. The only difference was that they were shorter than ordinary humans.

Most of the men here were much shorter than Rody. Rody was considered tall among the ordinary people while the tallest dwarf here only reached Rody's chest. The majority of the men here were only about one and a half meters tall.

The dwarfs saw that Rody and Nedis were alone, and were not at all friendly with them in the beginning. Those men, especially, looked at Nedis with a shine in their eyes. It looked like they did not have good intentions.

When Rody saw a crowd gradually gathering, he initially wanted to communicate with them. However, Nedis gently pulled Rody and whispered, "Don't say too much. You do not know their language. Besides that, the dwarfs are naturally fierce and greedy. They like to bully the weak. If you are fierce, they will be afraid. If you are polite, they will bully you."

At first, Rody did not believe. However, he saw a few dwarfs pick up their knives and other weapons and surround him. Some of them also started to shout. Rody felt helpless and could only sigh.

Rody suddenly moved like lightning towards the crowd. A few dwarfs immediately screamed and their weapons all flew into the air. After that, Rody grabbed two dwarfs and returned to Nedis' side. Based on his size, holding the two dwarfs in his hand was just like carrying two little chicks.

Nedis put on a fierce expression and spoke some gibberish loudly in a language that Rody could not understand. She then pointed at Rody.

Rody saw Nedis wink at him. He understood and made a fierce expression. Although his acting was not too good, his fighting skills earlier were too amazing. He had hit seven to eight people in an instant. On top of that, he was tall. That made the dwarfs more fearful and could not help but step back.

Nedis muttered a few words again and then she pointed at the two dwarfs held by Rody. She then forcefully moved her hand across her throat.

Those surrounding dwarfs screamed in fear, one after another. They then came crashing down on their knees on the ground.

At night, the villagers gave up the largest house in the village for Rody and Nedis to stay. The dwarfs, one by one, sent food over from their homes.

They also sent two women with delicate features to serve Rody. The two women had flattering smiles and were obedient. They did not look as though they were coerced. A slightly older male dwarf stood in front of Rody and spoke. Rody could not understand a word he said while Nedis constantly conversed with the man.

The dwarf's face became more and more respectful but Rody could faintly sense a strange feeling from his expression. It was as

if a ferocious and malicious expression was concealed beneath the respectful expression.

When Nedis saw Rody looking impatient, she waved for the dwarf to leave. The two women fanning Rody and massaging his legs were also asked to leave.

"What's wrong? Why do you have such a cold expression?" Nedis seemed to smile.

Rody sighed. "I just thought that the dwarfs have no backbones. I only beat up a few of them and they already became so cowardly. Men and even women are the same. They are too submissive and did not even show the slightest bit of resistance. How can a race without a backbone survive until now?"

Nedis smiled and lightly said, "You only saw them like this, but you did not see them from another angle."

She sighed and continued, "The dwarfs are naturally cunning. In the face of a strong enemy that they themselves know they cannot win, they will become meek like slaves. They will even be willing to sacrifice their own women in order to survive! However, their hearts will never have true submission and will always watch you like a wolf. Once they find an opportunity, they will suddenly bite you! They are respectful and submissive to us now. This is because they simply have not found a way to deal with us yet."

"Oh?" Rody felt a little strange.

"Of course!" Nedis grunted and then continued, "Talking about being savage, there are no races more savage than the dwarfs. If it was not because you showed impressive strength and shook them, I am afraid both of us would...You would be killed cruelly, and as for me...Well, just by looking at the gazes of those men, you will understand."

Nedis blushed as she said the last few words. She then coughed gently before continuing, "Do not doubt it. The savagery of the

dwarfs is well-known. The Gordon Kingdom had suffered a lot of that. The location of Gordon Kingdom meant they had to constantly pass through the dwarf's territorial seas. They are often robbed with nothing left. Most pirates would rob the ship, but they would not kill. However, if they were to encounter a dwarf's warship, not only would they be robbed, the people would also not be spared. The men would be killed and the women...

"This kind of enemy can only be dealt with by suppressing them with absolute strength. Otherwise, you can only wait to be oppressed!" Nedis sighed. "I lived with the dwarfs for a few years and can understand them a little. Their rule of survival is to oppress enemies weaker than themselves. As for enemies stronger than themselves, they will obediently comply and silently endure! They would secretly look for a chance at all times. If you were deceived by their appearance, you must be prepared to be bitten by them!"

Rody frowned. "It seems that this race is really terrifying."

Nedis sighed. "Isn't it true? When the dwarfs went to war with the Roland Continent, the Teuton Kingdom of the Roland Continent had conquered one of the dwarf cities. At that time, the entire city completely surrendered. They even went to the extent of offering their wives and women so that they could be spared! The entire army of Teuton Kingdom believed that such submissive people would be of no threat. The Teuton Kingdom was known as the knight's birthplace and was where the Knight's Spirit originated from. The soldiers also kept the Knight's Spirit and did not abuse the local dwarfs. However, with the truce that was sent out by the Temple, they were ordered to withdraw their troop and no longer allowed to attack the dwarfs anymore. However, when the army Teuton Kingdom was withdrawing from the dwarfs' island nation, they were ambushed by the dwarfs."

Rody frowned. "An ambush after the truce? Were the dwarfs not afraid of starting another war?"

"Hmph, the dwarfs naturally were confident. I heard that they had something that the Temple was very afraid of." Nedis sneered and lightly said, "Teuton army did not expect the seemingly submissive dwarfs to suddenly turn hostile, overnight. Five thousand soldiers were killed in the ambush and three thousand soldiers were captured. After that, the prisoners were all cruelly killed by the dwarfs and Teuton Kingdom was not even given a chance to redeem the prisoners of war. The Teuton Kingdom was also the only landlocked kingdom on the Roland Continent. Their lands were not near the sea and they did not have a navy. So, the dwarfs were not afraid that the Teuton Kingdom would retaliate!"

Rody sighed. "What happened after that? Did the Temple come forward to help the Teuton Kingdom? I heard that the Teuton Kingdom is the Temple's strongest supporter. Even this time, when the Temple turned hostile against the numerous kingdoms of Roland Continent, Teuton Kingdom did not participate in our alliance. They continued to support the Temple."

Nedis smiled. "So what? The dwarfs are weak when they should be weak and unyielding when it is time for them to be unyielding. They were certain that the other party could not do anything to them and naturally would not apologize. Therefore, that matter was left unsettled."

When Nedis saw Rody was silent, she smiled, "The most interesting thing was not that...The dwarfs later declared that they were the victorious nation. According to the dwarfs record on history, the dwarfs won that war. After a bloody and tenacious struggle by the army of the dwarfs, the coalition armies of the Roland Continent were finally defeated and chased out of their territory...As for the fact that they had to compromise and how they later launched ambushes after the truce, these were naturally not mentioned at all."

The next day, Rody and Nedis had a brief discussion. Rody wanted to find a ship and return to the Sauron Kingdom directly.

Although they were surrounded by the coast, he could only find a few small fishing boats. If such small fishing boats were to encounter a big storm, they would not be able to sail. Besides that, Rody was also not an expert at sea.

With his strength, although he was able to fly, a Domain Master was, after all, not God. Flying across the entire Straits with his own power was impossible for him. Even if with the Staff of Moses, he could only walk freely inside the sea...

Nedis suddenly smiled. "You have listed so many reasons but in actual fact, you are just looking for excuses!"

"What?" Rody froze for a moment.

Nedis smiled, "With your strength, you have hundreds of ways you can use to go back. But right now, you are just looking for an excuse. Is it because deep down in your heart you do not want to immediately return?"

Rody stayed silent.

Nedis' eyes suddenly shined as she whispered, "You said that King Sauron wanted you to help take something from the dwarfs. I can see that although you are not willing to help them, you are still curious about this thing. I guess you are extremely interested in this thing that could coerce the Temple and want to have a look...am I right?"

Rody thought for a while then laughed, "You are really smart. You can accurately guess my thoughts. Yes, I am really curious. What magical thing do the dwarfs have that the Temple is so afraid of?"

Nedis rolled her eyes and continued to smile. "Oh, right. You are not just curious. You are also thinking about the benefits of obtaining this thing. Perhaps you can threaten the Temple with it. After all, the Temple will still be an enemy in the future and it will be better to have an additional chip in hand." Nedis then smiled as

she looked at Rody.

Rody sighed and said, "Alright, alright. [You are the worm in my stomach](#), satisfied?"

Feeling dissatisfied, Nedis wrinkled her eyebrows and said, "Don't describe me with such a dreadful thing!"

Since they had made up their minds, they were no longer anxious to go back immediately. They were determined to go deeper inland into the dwarfs' territory.

However, a small incident happened before leaving.

In the morning, a group of dwarfs brought a prisoner back to the village.

That old man looked exhausted and the clothes on his entire body were soaked. His beard and hair looked plastered on his face. Rody was surprised when he looked at him.

That person was actually Master Sith.

The dignified and highest ranked sorcerer amongst the sorcerers of the Sorcerer Association of Roland Continent was actually being tied up like a dog. Besides that, he looked as though he had been robbed. Sith initially had a few magic rings on his fingers, but now the rings were on the fingers of two dwarfs. Even the staff, which was mounted with magical gems, was also taken by one of the dwarfs.

Some of the other dwarfs also showed greedy and satisfied smiles. Apparently, they had reaped good benefits. That was not strange as a sorcerer would definitely carry with him a lot of magic gems. To a sorcerer, those gems were valuable materials for magic. However, to an ordinary person, it was just tempting wealth and money.

Sith wearily drooped his eyelids. Rody looked at that old man in that sorry situation and could not help but sigh. He told Nedis to ask the dwarfs to stop and release Sith.

Rody supported the sorcerer up and sighed, "Master Sith, why are you here?"

Sith finally opened his eyes and looked at Rody. He then smiled bitterly and slowly said, "I have exhausted my magic power in the battle and then the ship sank. I then drifted ashore. When I saw some people, I wanted to ask for help, but I ended up getting caught and brought here without reason."

Rody held back his laughter and said, "You are about as powerful as a Paladin. How did you end up like that?"

The old sorcerer became angry and replied, "Kid, we took a lot of trouble to plan this. Although we had not been entirely honest with you, we had never treated you unfairly. Yet you actually just walked away! I may be powerful, but do you think I could win against a fleet? Those dwarfs saw the King's banner on the flagship and converged on us. If I had not jumped into the sea in time, I am afraid I would have been captured by now!"

After saying all that, the old sorcerer sighed. "I was seasick on the ship for the past few days. After tossing about for so many days, I was already not feeling good. Hmph, if only it had happened on normal days..."

Rody sighed. Although he did not know how dreadful seasickness was, he had witnessed it in his first sea trip to the Roland Continent. Some of his subordinates were quite powerful warriors. However, they were seasick and vomited every day. On top of that, he had no appetite. After a few days, even those strong men were finally unable to withstand it. Despite having the strength of powerful warriors, some of them could not even hold their swords.

At that moment, the old sorcerer was obviously severely weakened.

Nedis told the dwarfs to release Sith and also ordered them to return his things. They were not willing because Sith, who was the dignified top sorcerer of the Roland Continent, had a lot of good

stuff. However, with the presence of such a strong Rody, they could only obediently return everything.

After changing his clothes and resting for half a day, Sith finally regained a little bit of his strength. He had also long vomited out the seawater he drank earlier. Sith became excited when he heard that Rody had decided to go deeper into the dwarfs' territory. However, Rody's following sentence stifled him, "I am just curious and want to see that thing. Don't expect me to help you get it!"

The three of them stayed at the village for another day. After that day, they continued journeying on the road.

There were no horses in the village and the three of them could only walk. Fortunately, Rody had looked at the map when he was at the sea. He knew that there would be a slightly larger town after walking for about half a day. It would not be too late to look for horses then.

However, after less than an hour on the road, the three of them encountered a group of dwarf cavalry patrol. Those soldiers actually came looking for Rody and the others.

Although the dwarfs at the earlier village looked submissive on the surface, they had already secretly sent a messenger deeper inland. Those soldiers came here to capture Rody and the others.

They were confronted by about thirty cavalymen. Rody easily defeated them all and took a few horses. The three of them were thus spared the hardships of walking.

After journeying for half a day, they finally reached that slightly larger town.

There were not much different between dwarf towns and the towns Rody had seen on the Roland Continent. The only difference was that the tradition of the excellent weapon forging skills of the dwarfs was true. Even a small town like that also had a few weapon shops. Rody casually strolled around and found a few good swords.

It seemed like the dwarfs really deserved their reputation in forging weapons.

The three of them walked on the streets for a while. As the three of them looked very different from the dwarfs, they attracted the attention of many. Besides that, the army of Sauron Kingdom had landed in the south. News of war had already spread to them. Rody and the others did not look like dwarfs and therefore attracted a lot of unfriendly gazes.

Sith was already prepared. Before coming, in accordance with the plan of moving around the dwarf island while cooperating with Rody, a few things had already been prepared by Sith.

He took out two magic gems and gave it to Rody and Nedis. After chanting an incantation, their appearances changed.

These were two transformation magic gems. In order to conserve the usage of sorcery power, Sith did not change too much the appearances of Rody and Nedis. Sith just shortened their heights and then after some simple make-up, they looked like a dwarf couple.

On the other hand, Sith had powerful sorcery and could just transform himself, solving his own appearance problem.

The only problem was that Sith did not account for an additional person, Nedis. He had originally prepared the two magic gems for Rody and himself. Now, one gem had already been given to Nedis. As a result, he could only rely on his own sorcery to change his appearance and more magic manna was consumed.

They spent money to buy a carriage and hired two dwarf coachmen. The three of them then went deeper inland.

Originally the three of them had jumped into the sea before coming ashore. They did not carry any money with them, so Rody naturally had none and Nedis was the same as she barely even managed to put on her clothes before being pulled into the sea by

Rody. On the other hand, the old sorcerer had originally prepared some money for expenses. However, he did not take it along in his haste.

Finally, they obtained an idea. They sold a few of Sith's magic gems at the small town for a few of the dwarf gold coins. As the magic gems were of high quality and precious, the old sorcerer felt hurt selling them. However, this did not cross Rody's mind at all.

The destination for the three of them was a medium sized city known as Home River. That was the second largest town in the dwarfs' Hakone Kingdom. As the place was located in a basin between two mountains, it was known as the Mountain Gateway.

Along the way, they met a lot of mobilized soldiers. Those soldiers went towards the south. Apparently, Sauron Kingdom's attacks gave the dwarfs a lot of pressure. The news that came was that the Sauron Kingdom had driven straight in for a past few days. As King Sauron had a good intelligence knowledge of the situation and he also took advantage to launch a surprise attack, they did not encounter any significant resistance and several of the dwarfs' armed forces were defeated.

However, that gave Rody a certain degree of trouble. The deeper they went, the tighter the security and investigation. It seemed this was a precaution against enemy spies.

They bribed the officers guarding at the city gate of the Home River city and successfully entered the city.

The dwarfs' second largest city was indeed very prosperous. There were pedestrians on the streets but the tensions before a war could be felt. Many of the pedestrians were carrying large bags of daily necessities. The streets were also frequently patrolled by the soldiers.

Rody was extremely relaxed as he looked at the scenery. The dwarfs' architectural style was completely different from the Roland Continent. Perhaps because they lived on the island and

were often harassed by typhoons, their buildings were mostly short and low-rise. Most of the dwarf pedestrians were men wearing swords at their waists. These men deliberately opened up their shirts at the chests and they looked aggressive. They shoved around in the streets and some of them were carrying jugs of wine looking drunk.

Some of these people tended to walk in groups. Others would keep themselves at a distance and even the patrol soldiers did not provoke them.

Nedis explained that those people were a unique type of warriors of the dwarf kingdom. As the dwarfs had great talent in manufacturing weapons, there were many weapons in circulation amongst the people. Those warriors were often skillful desperados. Some powerful nobles would hire them as private thugs. There was a great honor for these nobles to have such warriors. The moment a war started, those people could immediately complement the army as a combat force. Besides that, the hierarchy of dwarf warriors was very complicated. There were many escaped criminals amongst them. As long as they could become a warrior for an influential master, even all their past crimes would be forgiven.

So, those warriors became one such unique class of the dwarfs. They were equivalent to the knights of the Roland Continent. They had their own masters to support them and did not have to worry about food. They even often provoked trouble in the streets. As long as the trouble caused was not too major, the patrol soldiers would just ignore them as they would be afraid of offending their masters.

"Then...what about them?" Rody pointed to a few people squatting on the ground at the side of the street. Those people had weapons and were also dressed like warriors. However, their attires and expressions made them look as though they were in dire straits.

"Those are fallen warriors." Nedis sighed. "They are also known as vagrant warriors. They are warriors who had lost their masters after the collapse of the noble houses or the demise of their masters. They have no choice but to look for another buyer. They may seem dejected now, but when they find a new master, they will immediately become arrogant and malicious."

Rody suddenly rolled his eyes a few times. He looked at the old sorcerer and whispered, "How much money do you still have?"

Sith's heart trembled and immediately became alert. "What do you want to do?"

Rody smiled and replied, "I am thinking of buying a few warriors. It must be very interesting..."

Knowing everything about a person.

Chapter 266: Second Robbery

Nedis frowned. "How many warriors do you want to buy? What is your purpose?"

Rody sighed and whispered, "Didn't you notice that security is getting tighter along the way? Since we are going to the capital of the dwarf kingdom, the journey later will probably be even more difficult. We need to find a way and get an identity. Otherwise, I am afraid we may give our disguises away...Even if we are not afraid, we will not be able to change anything once we start our journey to the capital. Getting a few warriors as followers and posing as nobles will naturally be different."

Sith had already covered his wallet and refuted, "Stop dreaming! Do you think the warriors will just offer their services to anyone? They will not even bother to look at you unless you are a really influential noble. Did you see those impressive warriors on the street? [All of them are wearing waistplates](#). Those are the symbols of identities. Do we look like influential nobles? Do you think those warriors will come just by offering some money? Besides that, hiring warriors are not cheap! We do not have enough money now. You...Don't think of taking advantage of me again!"

The facial muscles of the old sorcerer trembled as he finished his last sentence. Evidently, his heart ached from having to sell those precious magic gems.

Nedis smiled and softly said, "It is simple if you want to acquire an identity. This is the second largest city in the Hakone Kingdom. There are many people coming in and out. We only need to hide on one of the smaller streets and look for a noble carriage. We then knock out the people in it and then grab their clothes and the carriage."

Rody frowned. "What about the followers accompanying them? A dignified noble is unlikely to go out with just two or three people

only. There will definitely be a group of people following him."

Nedis glanced at the end of the main street with a smile and said, "This is also not difficult. This is River Home. There is naturally a place that sells slaves. We can buy a few obedient slaves and dress them up as warriors. Besides that, buying slaves is cheaper than buying warriors.

The old sorcerer immediately nodded and agreed the moment he heard that it would be cheaper.

Rody was helpless and could only heed Nedis' words.

Hence, after a lapse of more than a year, Rody became a robber again.

Just like the time he hid to rob Nicole's carriage, Rody and his friends went to a remote road outside the city and hid at the roadside. They quietly waited for an unlucky victim.

The difference was that last time, Rody was just a small Grade 1 Swordsman. His companions were also just a disorderly mob. However, Rody was now an almost invincible warrior with strong domain powers. His companions were a master amongst the vampires and the top-ranked Master Sorcerer of the Roland Continent.

It seemed like Rody was naturally lucky at robbing. They had originally intended to wait till nightfall, but they did not even need to wait for two hours before a suitable target appeared.

The carriage gradually approached from a distance. The four dwarfs in front clearly had the expressions on their faces that said, 'I am very arrogant'.

The carriage behind them was also very beautifully decorated. The four-wheeled carriage was made of higher quality wood and was exceptionally refined. It was as though it was a work of art instead of something used to transport people.

Regrettably, the driver's outrageously gorgeous clothes had

completely destroyed the artistic design. Even the driver's horsewhip was made of gold. It clearly emphasized to others the message, 'I am very wealthy'.

Warhorses were not raised in the Hakone Kingdom. Hence, the carriages here usually did not have cavalrymen as guards. However, that carriage was different. There were six white horses on both sides of the carriage and full-armored warriors sat on those horses.

To Rody, that was definitely a very suitable target to rob.

"How about this?" Rody softly asked Nedis as he watched them approach from a distance.

Nedis smiled. "They definitely look like very influential nobles...However, I am afraid that after robbing them, we will have troubles."

Rody shook his head. "Who cares? After robbing them, we can just knock them out and throw them into a mountain cave. They will not be discovered for three to five days. By then, we will already have reached the capital."

Sith shook his head. He sighed and said, "I do not think it is appropriate. Our original intention is to conceal our identities. However, if we're to rob them, we will end up attracting more trouble."

Rody coldly replied, "It is simple. Sell off another few of your magic stones and they will probably be enough to buy a luxurious carriage and also some clothes of superior quality. The remaining money will be enough to buy a few warriors."

Sith immediately shook his head as if he was a rattle drum and said, "Alright. If you insist on robbing them, then let's do it. I am already old. Might as well let you youngsters decide."

After that, Sith tightly covered his pocket with his hand. Inside his pocket were two precious magic gems that could replenish his

sorcery power.

Nedis pursed her lips and smiled, "I think you have lustful thoughts. With a look, you can see that this carriage belongs to an extremely wealthy person. Maybe the person sitting inside is a princess."

Rody sighed and just stared at the people until they arrived right in front of him. He then gave a loud cough and jumped out from the roadside.

Nedis also walked out with a smile. Only Sith looked unwilling. As the dignified leader of the Sorcerer's Association of Roland Continent, he did not expect that he would, one day, do something so preposterous.

Three people. One was a heroic youngster, one was a stunning beauty, and one was a highly respected old man. The travelers were shocked when these three people suddenly jumped into the middle of the road. However, none of them had expected them to be robbers.

One of the warriors immediately shouted loudly, "Who are you? How dare you block our way! Quickly move aside!" Although the warrior was usually arrogant, he saw that these three were no ordinary people. Hence, his tone did not have the usual arrogance.

Rody naturally could not understand a single word uttered by that warrior. Sith and Nedis understood the dwarf language but they remained silent.

After a few seconds of silence, Rody became impatient and whispered, "Say something."

"Say what?" Nedis and Sith were stunned for a moment.

The two of them had never robbed before and had less experience than Rody who had robbed once. They could not even say the simplest opening remarks of a robber, 'This road belongs to me and a fee must be paid to cross it.'

While the three of them were stunned on the spot, the other side was not pleased. Besides that, they were quite influential. The warrior shouted, "Quickly, move aside! Do you want to die?" The warrior pulled out his sword as he finished speaking. The three other warriors, at the side, also showed their intimidating expressions.

The cavalrymen also rushed up with their horses.

Rody sighed. He no longer cared about the rules of robbing and directly attacked.

They only saw his figure flashed and he disappeared from his original spot. Before they could understand what happened, the four warriors, almost at the same time, each felt a heavy blow on their heads and they all fainted.

The cavalrymen were quite skillful. They reacted quickly and had already pulled out their swords. However, Sith had started chanting and threw a sleeping spell at them. The cavalrymen then fell off their horses.

Fortunately, Rody also needed their clothes and horses. Therefore, he had not acted ruthlessly as he was afraid that he would ruin those things.

Within a short moment, the robbery was over. Such misfortune had befallen them, but the target of the robbery still could not understand why the three well-dressed people, with extraordinary appearances, attacked them.

The driver was so afraid that he fell from the carriage. Rody casually kicked and knocked him out. He then went to pull the carriage door open.

The furnishings inside the carriage were very beautiful. There was even a small wine cabinet inside the spacious carriage. A person in a snow-white robe looked at Rody and Nedis in fear.

The person had pale white skin and [a pair of slender eyes like the](#)

[legendary red phoenix's](#). She had faint eyebrows and straight nose. At that moment, she could not help but bit her lip out of fear and reveal a row of white teeth. It could be regarded as 'white teeth, red lips'. She had long, bright and black hair hanging loosely at the back of her head. Her slender white hands tightly held onto a short and narrow warrior sword. However, due to her fear, she did not dare to draw the sword.

Before Rody could speak, Nedis had sighed and smiled bitterly, "Looks like I really should change my occupation into a language expert. We had really robbed a princess. Judging from her appearance, even if she is not a princess, her identity will not be far off from one."

Rody was a little surprised. He sighed and said to Nedis, "It is unfortunate. Looks like we need to trouble you and change you into her clothes. If we were to encounter something, you will have to deal with it while Sith and I will be your followers."

Rody then stepped aside and let Nedis walk in front. Nedis took a deep breath and smiled at the person in the carriage. "Well, you do not need to be afraid. We will not kill you. We just want to borrow your carriage and clothes. Obediently take off your clothes and we will not touch you. You are lucky that we will only rob your wealth and not your chastity."

Nedis spoke in the dwarf language. The person in the carriage seemed to become even more frightened and began to tremble.

Nedis then turned back to look at Rody and whispered, "What are you still doing here? Do you want to watch the lady undress?"

Sith came to the side of the carriage and loudly said, "Hurry up. This is the main road and others may come by here soon."

Nedis smiled and replied, "Well, take off their outer clothes and let them keep their inner clothes. In the past two days, you have been exploited by Rody. I am sure that these people have quite influential identities and they probably have a lot of valuables on

them. You can keep them."

The old sorcerer glared and mumbled, "I am not a greedy man. How could you compare my precious sorcery gems with money?"

Nedis ignored the words uttered by that old sorcerer. She turned around and gently smiled at the person in the carriage. "Well, put down your weapon. We will not hurt you. Besides that, your weapon will also be useless. Your guards have already been defeated. Do you think you can still resist?"

After saying that, Nedis smiled with her pursed lips and said, "You can take off your outer clothes here. I promise that nobody would peek at you..." She then pointed at Rody, who was behind her, and said, "Although this guy looks ferocious, he is not a lascivious person."

Rody stared at Nedis and said coldly, "Quickly exchange clothes with her. I am going to help Sith."

As Rody was about to leave, the person in the carriage suddenly spoke.

Although she looked very frightened and her voice seemed to tremble, she managed to calmly say, "Wait!"

What surprised both Rody and Nedis was that this person did not speak in the dwarf language.

That person looked helpless. She was still fearful in front of the surprised Rody and Nedis. However, she boldly said, "I can see from your words and actions that you are not robbers. Why did you stop me? If it is for money, I can give you much more!"

Her voice was somewhat soft and sharp, possibly from fear.

Rody was impatient and lightly replied, "We want money, clothes and the carriage. Be obedient and nothing will happen."

That person bravely maintained a calm look and wryly smiled, "I see that you are not ordinary people. If you are willing, you can be

my subordinates. I can give you the best treatment! The fact that you can defeat my guards so quickly proves this point. Regardless of who sent you here, I can pay you twice...no, five times..." At that moment, she noticed that Rody and Nedis did not seem interested. She then gritted her teeth and continued, "Ten times! I can pay you ten times more!"

Rody admired that woman's courage for being able to say those words in such a situation.

Giving each other a meaningful glance, Rody then said, "Nobody sent us. We simply want to borrow your clothes and carriage. You do not need to think of ways to bribe us."

That person finally smiled bitterly and said, "Alright, I will cooperate with you! But...if you really want my clothes, can you not let this woman be the one removing it? I want you to be the one removing it." She stretched out her finger and pointed at Rody.

When Rody and Nedis showed a surprised expression, that person smiled bitterly and explained. "This is because...I am a man."

It was really a day filled with surprises.

腰牌 yaopai, waistplate. They are like medals worn at waists to show their identity.

丹凤眼 dan feng yan. Literally red phoenix eyes.

Chapter 267: Kikukawa Yukinari

"You all don't look like you are from the Hakone Kingdom. I am simply dressed elegantly. This is our Hakone Kingdom's standard clothes for noble male scholars." That beautiful man inside the carriage gently smiled. He showed a sly expression and said, "In Hakone Kingdom, nobody would dare to rob me after seeing my carriage! It is even more impossible for a person not to know my identity after seeing this carriage!"

"My name is Kikukawa Yukinari. I am the youngest son of the family of the current Kikukawa general."

Sith stopped his actions as he stood near the carriage in shock when he heard this.

After a long silence, Sith gave a long sigh and patted Rody's shoulder. "Looks like our luck is really good..."

Rody faintly smiled. Suddenly, he raised his hand and swung at Yukinari's neck. When Yukinari fainted, Rody turned around and asked, "Is this person very influential?"

Sith did not speak. Nedis was the one who replied, "His identity is just acceptable. However, his father is really not so simple. It could be said that there are not many dwarfs who have a more influential identity than him."

After that, Nedis and Sith explained the situation in the dwarfs' kingdom to Rody.

Although the dwarfs also have an Emperor, their Emperor did not have much power. Respectable the name was, yet it was actually but an empty frame. The real power of the dwarfs' kingdom belonged to the generals.

The generals had their own political organization that controlled the country. It was called a 'shogunate'. Worse of all, the position of general was hereditary. When the father dies, the son would

take over.

"Why don't they just abolish the position of Emperor? Why are they still keeping it?" Rody was confused.

Nedis and Sith looked at each other with a bitter smile. They felt that this was a question difficult to answer. However, Nedis continued, "Naturally, there is a reason why an Emperor is an Emperor. There is probably a secret behind the existence of the royal family. Even if the Emperor is just an empty name, the generals of the shogunate will not dare to do anything to the Emperor."

Rody thought for a moment and suddenly said, "Then what should we do about this Yukinari? We need an identity to enter their capital. How about..."

Nedis giggled and said, "This is simple. We might as well dress you up as Yukinari. We then go back to Home River and get a few people to dress up as your warrior escorts. Nobody will dare to block you along the way.

Rody immediately refused. It was fine if he were to disguise as somebody else but Yukinari looked like a woman. Making Rody dress up like him was something Rody could not do.

Sith sighed and suddenly said, "In this case, we will take him along. With us accompanying him, it is unlikely that he will dare to do anything."

Rody nodded. "This seems feasible...but now there is another problem...I do not understand the dwarf language. If we were to pose as the Kikukawa family's entourage, I will expose my identity the moment I speak."

Sith smiled and took out a sparkling gem. He gently pinched and broke it, revealing a green colored pearl. "I had prepared this earlier. Eat this and your problem will be solved."

Rody took over the green pearl as he frowned at Sith.

Sith explained, "This is a pill I magically compounded. The main ingredient is cloverleaf. Once you eat it, you will be able to speak the dwarf language."

"Is it really so miraculous?" Rody swallowed the pill. It tasted bitter and after swallowing, he felt a violent burning sensation bubbled up his head. It was as if he had a fever...His face felt hot and his ears turned red.

Sith suddenly smiled. "Now, there will be some discomfort. However, the discomfort will be over after a while. The effectiveness of this pill can last for ten days. Now, I will speak in the dwarf language. See whether you can understand it."

Sith coughed gently and stepped back. He then said, "@\$^!@@"

After listening to this sentence, Rody's expression immediately changed. First, he was shocked. After that, he showed a pained expression. He suddenly grunted softly and ran to the side of the carriage before vomiting violently.

Sith squinted his eyes and smiled, "It seems to be effective. He can now understand."

Many years later, there would be a time when Nicole would ask for the meaning of the words that made Rody vomit at the dwarf kingdom. Smiling, Nedis would reply, "The old sorcerer said that the main ingredient of the pill, cloverleaf, was not expensive. However, the other ingredients were very rare. One of the ingredients used was the tongue cut off of a live dwarf!"

And so, Rody's second robbery finally ended in success.

In his first robbery, he had robbed the daughter of the Radiant Empire's most prominent family. In his second robbery, he robbed the son of the dwarf kingdom's most prominent family.

"Are you thinking of going to the capital?" Kikukawa Yukinari woke up and asked. The three robbers intimidated him after he woke up. That beautiful man seemed a little surprised. "What is

your purpose of going to the capital?"

The moment he asked, Yukinari realized that his question was inappropriate and immediately added, "Right now, there is a war in the south. The security at the capital is more stringent. If you were to go..."

The dwarf meant that the public security at the capital was most stringent now. For these few robbers to go to the capital now would be suicidal.

Nedis coldly replied, "You do not need to worry about this. You only need to be obedient and cooperate with us."

At a side, Rody had already tied up the group of Yukinari's warriors and threw them into a low-lying place away from the roadside.

After that, with Sith looking after those people, Rody and Nedis got onto the carriage. They threatened Yukinari to leave for Home River.

They wanted to buy a few people in the slave market to act as entourages, but they could not find any suitable candidates.

Home River was the second largest city of the dwarfs' Hakone Kingdom. The slave market in that city was quite large and there were many kinds of slaves...Men and women, young and old. However, after looking around, although there were some physically strong slaves, most of them looked dispirited and shrank with fear. Even if he were to buy them, dress them up and give them warrior swords, they would still not look like warriors.

Finally, Yukinari could not help but ask, "If you want to find a few entourage warriors, then why don't you just go and buy a few vagrant warriors? Home River is my Hakone Kingdom's second largest city. There are a lot of vagrant warriors here."

Rody frowned. "If we have money to buy warriors, we would not have robbed you in the first place!"

Yukinari's widely opened his mouth as he stared at Rody, looking surprised. He no longer dared to mock the others as he cautiously said, "Let us go and take a look first. When the time comes, we will certainly find some people."

In the vicinity of the slave market, there was a side street where the vagrant warriors gathered. There were pubs on both sides of the street. Drunken shouts could be heard from the pubs when the doors were opened. There were also faint noises of chaos. Obviously, someone had caused trouble after drinking.

It seemed like the dwarfs were naturally irritable and their love for wine was just like what the legend said.

Rody acted as a driver of the carriage and entered the street. He immediately felt numerous gazes shot over towards him. Their gazes were full of surprise and reverence. However, after taking a glance, they bowed their heads and no longer dared to look. Even the arrogant and obstinate warriors carefully stepped aside and no longer dared to be presumptuous on the street.

They looked for a pub. Rody and Nedis then moved, one to the left and the other to the right as they supported Yukinari down the middle of the carriage. Rody softly and coldly warned, "You better be careful not to say anything unnecessary."

Yukinari smiled, "I dare not. My original warriors were masters, yet you easily defeated them. How would I dare act presumptuously? Ah...lighten your grip. My arm is going to break."

The moment the three of them entered the pub, the noisy room immediately turned silent as everyone immediately looked towards them.

A person who looked like the shopkeeper frantically ran over. He then threw himself on the ground and he uttered something out loud. Yukinari's face looked calm but his eyes were full of haughtiness.

When Rody and Nedis did not say anything, Yukinari could not help but whisper to Nedis, "Speak up. According to custom, I am not supposed to speak to these untouchables, on such occasions."

Immediately, Nedis deliberately and loudly said, "The Young Master of Kikukawa family is here to recruit a few warriors. Who is willing to come?"

There was a moment of silence and then there was an uproar.

'The Kikukawa family is recruiting?' The vagrant warriors shouted and rushed forward. There were also those that ran into each other and started cursing each other.

The Kikukawa family was the most prominent family of the dwarfs. Those who were recruited would receive a lifetime of glory and wealth. Those vagrant warriors in dire straits immediately became excited. They all kept their heads high and shouted loudly.

When the irritable ones saw that they were blocked by others in front of them, they pulled out their katanas as they mutually glared at each other.

"Keep quiet!" Rody shouted, "Everyone, keep quiet!"

A sturdy warrior at the side also roared, "Everyone, keep quiet! You are all making too much noise! It is rude!"

That warrior seemed authoritative at that place. His voice was also loud. Within a short moment, the pub quietened down.

The warrior sounded pleased with himself as he loudly said, "The Kikukawa family is obviously looking for the most excellent warrior. What is the point of being so noisy! Whoever considers himself the bravest warrior, then speak with his katana!"

He then pulled out his long and thin katana, swung a few times in the air and said, "Let the best man win."

That person was probably skillful as nobody else said anything after he spoke. He was obviously satisfied with everybody's

reaction. He then turned around and looked at Yukinari and the others. He then said, "My name is Kazakiri Hideyoshi. Do I have the honor of serving the Kikukawa family?"

Rody narrowed his eyes to look at the man. Judging from his appearance, he seemed quite skillful. He nodded and said, "Well, we only need six people. You count yourself as one and you help us to pick the remaining five."

The moment Rody said those words, the audience immediately started boiling. Some cursed Hideyoshi for being shameless while some angry ones pulled out their weapons. There were even more who began currying favor with Hideyoshi, hoping to be selected.

Yukinari seemed to be accustomed to that scene. He took a white jade plate from his pocket and threw it on the floor. He then said to Hideyoshi, "When you are done here, go outside the city and find us."

Hideyoshi respectfully picked up the white jade plate. He wiped it with the corner of his clothes, before carefully putting it away.

The three of them then left the noisy pub filled with dispute. They saw that Hideyoshi had quite a bit of ability and was sure that he would be able to deal with it.

Rody smiled. "Looks like having an influential identity is really useful. If we were to look for people on our own, most probably they would not even look at us."

Yukinari seemed proud as he deliberately said, "This is not surprising. To be in service of the Kikukawa family is a supreme honor in the Hakone Kingdom. When our family goes out, even the local officials must be courteous to us."

Nedis gave a faint smile and unintentionally said, "Do you think it is something to be proud of? This is nothing. They are behaving like this because of your family's influence. Your family's influence is not your own."

Those words made Yukinari startled. He looked at Nedis with a complicated gaze as if he had countless thoughts.

On the way back, Yukinari stopped being haughty and became quiet.

Hideyoshi was really skillful. Before Rody's carriage left the city, six warriors had started to catch up from behind. The one leading them was Hideyoshi.

Rody stopped the carriage. Several people then rushed to the front of the carriage and fell on their knees. After that, they automatically stood up and divided themselves into two groups. They moved in front of the carriage to lead the way.

They then joined up with the old sorcerer outside of the city. Yukinari's original warriors had already been thrown into an unknown place by the old sorcerer. Rody gave the horses that belonged to those warriors to the new warriors. He then gave the horsewhip to Hideyoshi for him to drive the carriage. Hideyoshi felt angry as it was outrageous for a warrior to drive the carriage. However, when he saw that Yukinari did not say anything, he quietly picked up the whip.

Rody smiled coldly and exerted a little bit of force to pinch the horsewhip. His fingerprints could clearly be seen on the whipstock of the golden horsewhip where he had pinched. When Hideyoshi looked at the horsewhip in his hand, he immediately turned pale. He opened his mouth wide as he looked at Rody but remained speechless. Hideyoshi naturally did not have such shocking abilities. He then saw Rody enter the carriage that belonged to the Kikukawa family and became unsure of Rody's identity.

That woman could be assumed as Yukinari's woman. Yukinari seemed respectful of that old man and he could be assumed as his teacher. However, he could not figure out that young man's identity. Rody had such ability that Hideyoshi did not have and also had never seen before. After all sorts of speculation, he

guessed that Rody must be a bigshot of the Kikukawa family.

Yukinari was not a person who did not care about the life and death of his subordinates. When Rody got onto the carriage, he immediately whispered, "What have you done to my men..."

Sith lightly replied, "Do not worry. They did not die. However, they will not wake up for the next few days. I have put them somewhere in the wilderness and they will wake up in three days' time. I think there are no wolves nearby and I suppose there is nothing life threatening there."

They did not expect Yukinari to suddenly become stern and grunt, "They were responsible for protecting me. Now it is considered a dereliction of duty. Even if they survived, when they return, [I will order them to commit seppuku.](#)"

His tone was cold as if he felt some bitterness.

Nedis smiled. She knew that Yukinari was helpless and forced to cooperate with them. That was because he was held under duress. With his identity and status, he felt angry. She smiled and said, "This is simple. We can go and kill them now. It is not a difficult thing to do."

Rody leaned back and looked at Yukinari. He said, "You are lucky. I am in a good mood today and do not want to kill."

Rody's words sounded like an understatement but Yukinari felt a chill when he heard those words. Rody's words contained a murderous aura that could not be hidden. It was an aura that only those who had been covered in blood would have.

Yukinari's expression changed as if he was struggling with his doubts. He suddenly became determined and sat up straight. He rolled up his sleeves and put both his hands at his chest. He fixed his gaze on Rody and said, "Your Excellency, may I have a serious conversation with you?"

Cutting off one's own stomach, done to protect/restore honor.

Chapter 268: Restricted Area

"Discuss what?" Rody laughed faintly.

Kikukawa Yukinari's eyes were sharp as he stared at Rody. "I believe that my eyes are not wrong. Amongst the three of you, you are the real leader!"

Rody smiled and did not comment.

Yukinari became more confident of his thoughts and sternly asked, "I would like to ask you. Is your robbery instigated by my brother Kikukawa Koichi? In the end, what is your purpose?"

Before Rody could reply, Nedis asked, "Why did you think it to be like this?"

Yukinari coldly laughed, "Only he would be anxious for me to die. Once I am dead, there would be nobody to compete for the inheritance of that position! Hmph!"

Rody, Nedis, and Sith looked at each other. Nedis laughed without confirming or denying his suspicions. She lightly said, "What are your intentions by telling us this?"

"I want to buy you over," Yukinari said in a straightforward manner. "How much is my brother giving you? I can give you ten times that amount as long as you are willing to cooperate with me!"

Rody secretly sighed. Yukinari looked quite smart but when he spoke, he could not avoid revealing the bungling oaf in himself. Even if he wanted to do so, buying others so openly was inappropriate.

Rody was not a cunning man but he had become quite knowledgeable in the past few days. He was no longer the soft-spoken and timid youth. Sith, the old sorcerer, was also a crafty scoundrel and Nedis was even worse than him.

With these three around, Yukinari did not have any chance at all.

Nedis easily made Yukinari reveal everything.

They found out that Yukinari was the youngest son of the Hakone Kingdom's Shogun. He had one elder brother, Koichi. Their ages differed by three years.

However, they did not have the same mother. This generation's Shogun, Ieyasu Kikukawa, had two wives. However, Koichi's mother had already died from illness.

Yukinari was fair skinned and handsome. He was considerably well liked by the old Shogun. Besides that, his mother had always bragged about him to the Shogun. This made the Shogun, Kikukawa Ieyasu, favor the younger son more.

Besides that, Yukinari's brother, Koichi, was no ordinary man. If it was said that Yukinari had inherited his mother's beauty, then Koichi was the one who had inherited the Shogun's bravery. The twenty-five-year-old Koichi was tall and robust. He was a very rare warrior amongst the dwarves. On top of that, he was resolute and decisive. This natural born warrior received the support of the old Shogun's retainers. That was why the elder son was much more powerful than the Yukinari that only knew literary works.

In the competition for the inheritance, the officials of the shogunate supported Koichi. They did not say anything even though the old Shogun preferred the sensible and intelligent younger son.

On top of that, as speculated by Rody and the others, even though the old Shogun loved his younger son, he seemed to be very clear that his youngest son was not leader material. One way of saying it was that Yukinari and Seth were similar.

They were both playboys. He might be proficient in poetry, but his real ability was one level lower than Koichi.

On the other hand, Koichi had already been the Commander of an army at a young age. This was why Yukinari went to River

Home and ended up meeting Rody. His mother was anxious about her treasured son when she saw that Koichi had already taken control of the military power. She then encouraged him to do something decent.

Yukinari's purpose at River Home was for the inspection of the town and the supplies being delivered to the frontlines. This was something simple and could be done by a lower ranked person. The Young Master only needed to take a look and then go back home. This was enough to give him, in name at least, a little bit of ability and experience on the field.

However, Rody and the others were not interested in this.

Their purpose was to find out what the thing the dwarfs had that could threaten the Temple. But no matter how Nedis probed, Yukinari did not seem to know anything about it.

The three of them then looked at each other helplessly. This was not something common; it was an important secret. Being only a local official's son, the Young Master presumably did not know anything about it.

Yukinari had already said everything but the three of them still did not want to declare their identities. He felt a little bit anxious. Although Yukinari was not too capable, he grew up in the shogunate and could at the very least see the sinister gaze of others.

He could feel with his intuition that the three people in front of him were not common but were all top-grade people. The beautiful woman had cunning eyes and was very smart. Although the old man was quiet, his speech was imposing. Besides that, his hand was always placed on top of a stick when he walked even though he walked normally and did not need crutches. This would not be a problem if it happened to normal people. However, Yukinari was not a common person. Although there were no sorcerers in the Hakone Kingdom, he had seen a sorcerer before. The old man was

not holding a crutch but a sorcerer's staff.

As for this young man, Yukinari felt he was extremely mysterious.

Sitting beside the youth constantly made him feel uneasy. It was like the murderous aura of his father, a brave warrior and a leader that commands a mighty army. However, the young man's aura was even more intense than his father's. When the youth's expression sank as he spoke, Yukinari could feel cold sweat coming out of his pores. It was a very realistic feeling of oppression.

"The three of you. Are you interested in my proposal?" Yukinari asked carefully.

"No," Rody replied in an extremely simple manner. "I have no interest in your proposal."

Yukinari became anxious. "Are you not satisfied with my conditions? What did my brother promise you? Just say it, I will give you ten times more than him"

Nedis suddenly smiled and said, "Your brother promised us that once he becomes the Shogun, he would give us the authority to monopolize the ironwood business. Could you do that?"

When Nedis said that, Yukinari did not show any reactions. Rody and the old sorcerer was surprised. Rody even called out, "Nedis!"

Nedis ignored Rody and repeated, "Can you accept this condition?"

Yukinari immediately said without hesitation, "Of course! This is nothing! When I become the Shogun in the future, I can promise you anything you want!"

Rody sighed in his heart. Although he did not know Nedis' intentions, Yukinari's reply made him laugh bitterly. This guy was really not a leader. No wonder he was unable to compete against his brother Koichi.

Ironwood was fundamental to the dwarfs' survival. Yet, he had sold it out without even any thought.

Nedis signaled for Rody not to speak. She whispered and continued, "Alright, young master. The three of us are not from your country. We are from the Roland Continent's Mercenary Association. We are also experts in that association! My name is Blood Fox Nedis. The old man is Evil Star Sith and he..." Nedis pointed to Rody and slowly said with a calm tone, "He is the leader of the famous Black Mercenaries, Lone Wolf Rody."

It was not just Yukinari. Even Rody and Sith's mouths were hung open.

This woman was too frightening. She said so many lies without even blinking.

Nedis gently coughed. Rody and Sith immediately closed their mouth and kept quiet. Although they did not understand her intentions, they did not refute her words. If there was anything, they could ask her later.

Yukinari had a complicated expression but he quickly pretended to look respectful. He then said words like "I have heard about you" and so on.

Nedis was calm as she continued, "We came to you, naturally it is from your brother's instructions. Do you know why your brother wants us to kidnap you but not kill you?"

Yukinari shook his head and replied, "I do not know."

Rody laughed bitterly in his heart. 'It is not just you. I also do not know!'

Nedis' eyes flickered with wisdom as she said, "Your brother wants us to kidnap you and pretend to be your follower. After that, we will assassinate your father, the Shogun."

"Huh?" Yukinari and the old sorcerer exclaimed.

When the old sorcerer exclaimed, he immediately and instinctively covered his mouth. Nedis secretly glared at Sith. She then casually looked back at Yukinari.

Yukinari had an angry expression and did not notice the old sorcerer losing control of himself. He hatefully said, "He! He is actually doing such things! Is he not afraid? Does he think he can escape from the criminal charge?"

Nedis showed a compassionate expression and said, "Sigh, young master. You still have not understood it! We are ordered to pretend as your followers! After killing the Shogun, we would naturally run away. Who do you think would take the blame? When your father is dead, you would be accused of killing him and you could no longer compete for the inheritance then." She then purposely looked at him with thoughtful eyes.

Yukinari broke out in cold sweat. He was silent for some time before saying, "Too despicable! Too shameless!"

Rody glared at Nedis. His eyes seemed to say, "You are also despicable and shameless."

Nedis quickly shot Rody a disdainful look. She looked at the distracted Yukinari and asked, "What are you going to do next?"

Yukinari suddenly stood up forgetting he was inside a carriage. His head slammed into the ceiling of the carriage causing him to cry out in pain. He then grasped his head and sat down. He then angrily said, "I want to immediately return to the capital and tell my father! I want to expose my brother's trick. Hmph! He is not my brother. He is just a bastard!"

Nedis shook her head. She sighed and said, "Your thoughts are too simple. Koichi has planned this for a long time. What makes you think you can just report it? Think for a moment. He would deny it, and you have no evidence!"

Yukinari looked into Nedis' eyes. She immediately said, "We

obviously cannot testify for you! Even if we went, he can completely feign ignorance. At that time, will you be able to explain things clearly when he accuses you of defaming him?"

When Yukinari looked as though he does not believe it, Nedis rolled his eyes and coldly said, "You don't believe me? Alright. Then let me ask you. Do you know about the war in the South?"

"I know." Yukinari replied, "I went to the River Home to..."

Nedis waved her hand, indicating that Yukinari did not need to continue. She coldly asked, "The Roland Continent has not fought against the Hakone Kingdom for many years. Do you know why they chose to attack now?"

Nedis deliberately stared at Yukinari. Without waiting for him to reply, she said, "The Roland army has invaded the territory and now they have easily conquered the South. Do you know why?"

Yukinari's expression changed a few times. He then asked, "What does this have to do with my brother?"

Nedis coldly grunted and then said, "I am asking you what benefits your brother will gain in this war? Is he assigned with military powers?"

"Yes." Yukinari nodded. "My father has appointed him..."

"Good," Nedis replied as she once again stopped Yukinari. She then quickly said, "During peacetime, your father would naturally not give the military power to others so easily. However, when the war begins, even if he has to give away military power, he would prioritize his son! That is the only way he could be assured! So, let me ask you again. Does this really have nothing to do with your brother?"

Yukinari's mouth opened wide. He took a deep breath and asked, "Could it be that my brother is colluding with the enemy?"

"Yes!" Nedis nodded and also looked at Yukinari with eyes of sympathy. "I know you don't believe it, but the truth is right in

front of you..." The woman said as if she was presenting conclusive evidence. "Your brother gains the most benefits! He is not only taking this opportunity to obtain military power. Hmph. On top of that, the war right now is unfavorable to you as your brother sold the military intelligence. Let me tell you. In a few days, your brother will ask to take the initiative and lead on the frontlines! At that time, the enemy would deliberately lose according to the agreement and withdraw the troops! As a result, your brother would not only obtain military power but also gain prestige. At that time, no matter what your father does, he would already be the successor!"

Yukinari became dejected and became weak in his chair. He dispiritedly and helplessly said, "Then...I have no way left?"

Nedis immediately showed a gentle smile. It was the smile of a big bad wolf looking at a little rabbit. She said, "Young Master Yukinari, since I have told you about this, it naturally means that I have decided to help you. I also think that your brother's way of doing things is too ruthless. Working with him makes me feel worried...We work for profit. I can see you are not so bad which is why I told you about this. If you want to challenge your brother, we must first see how you are superior to your brother."

Without batting an eyelid, Nedis said 'we' and thus had made themselves the same side as Yukinari's.

Yukinari was not a complete idiot. After thinking for a moment, he opened his mouth and said, "Yes. My brother is more superior than me in many places. He also has the support of the shogunate. The commanders all like him! With their support, he is definitely very influential in the military. His fighting skills are also superior!"

When Nedis saw Yukinari becoming even more depressed, she quickly waved and hurriedly said, "We already know about this. It is better to think about places where you have an advantage."

Yukinari became more spirited and quickly said, "This? My mother is still alive. Because of this, my brother rarely appears at home and as a result, he is not too close to Father. Father likes me more!"

"Hm. What else?" Nedis continued to ask.

"There is even more...I..." His face suddenly turned red as he said, "My relationship with the Imperial Family is also good. Although the shogunate is independent of the Imperial Family, it is still necessary to have a good relationship with them. My brother is too arrogant so his relationship with the Imperial Family is not harmonious. The Emperor's young daughter is my lover."

"Oh?" Nedis glanced at Rody and immediately asked, "The Imperial Family? This is a very favorable condition! Do you know much about the Imperial Family?"

Yukinari sighed and closed his eyes. He had an expression as if he recalled some tender memories. "Her Imperial Highness and I met during childhood. We have strong feelings for each other. In fact, my desire to become Shogun, half of it is because of her!"

Yukinari sighed again. He opened his eyes and gave a wry smile as he said, "I know my own ability. I am definitely not Shogun material. My ability is far worse than my brother. I admit that if he is a Shogun, he would be much stronger than I would be. But...I have no choice but to fight against him!" Yukinari clenched his fist and hatefully said, "I heard my father said that he wants to tie a marriage with the Imperial Family. He had reached an agreement with His Majesty to marry the successor to the Emperor's daughter! If my brother becomes the successor, then he..."

Nedis showed a rare expression of sincerity in her eyes. She now felt bad for cheating him. She sighed and said, "Are you sure you want to fight against your brother for this? With your current situation, is the Emperor willing to marry off his daughter to you?"

Yukinari shook his head and said, "At first he was willing. His

Majesty seemed to prefer me as my brother is arrogant. He was once rude to the Emperor at a wine reception. Although he was later scolded by my father, his relationship with the Imperial Family did not improve. I believe that if we really competed, His Majesty would support me."

Rody sighed in his heart. With a Shogun, the seat of Emperor is just an empty position. His support would not have meant much. Besides that, the Emperor would have a motive for giving you support. As opposed to having a strong Shogun, the Royal Family would prefer an incompetent Shogun so that they would have an easier time.

"But..." Yukinari suddenly frowned and his eyebrows wrinkled. "His Majesty's attitude became weird. Initially, he consented to my relationship with the princess. That was until last month..."

At first, Rody and the others had no interest in Yukinari's private life. But his next words suddenly made their ears perk up.

"Last month, I secretly met up with the princess. Our private place was a very secret place. Ah, it was truly hard for her to follow me for the past few years. There was a forbidden place in the palace where nobody is allowed to approach. However, nobody knew that we rendezvous near that place! Following His Majesty's orders, nobody is allowed to go there and so that place has very little visitors. That was where we could meet..."

Nedis' heart seemed to jump. She could not help but ask, "A forbidden place? You all went in?"

"Of course not!" Yukinari shook his head. "Even if we want to go in, we would not be able to. It is a cave with a lot of warriors guarding the entrance. There are even royal mages. It is not possible for anyone to go in there. I and the princess only dared to stroll around the back of the nearby mountain. The cave was guarded but because His Majesty did not allow anyone to approach, there was nobody even around the neighborhood. It was a good

spot for us to have secret rendezvous...sigh..." Yukinari sighed again. "Unfortunately, His Majesty found out last month. He scolded us bitterly and no longer allowed us to meet."

Yukinari grumbled in regret. The other three could no longer listen anymore. Nedis was pleased with herself and looked at Rody. She seemed to say, "How's that? Didn't I get that information?"

Although the word used 将军 jiangjun is general, they also have 将领 jiangling, which stands for high ranking military officer/general. In ancient Japan, the Shoguns are the 'true' military rulers. Their rankings are the equivalent of Generalissimo (Italian word), the highest ranking generale (general). Meanwhile, the jiangling here seems to serve as a simple general like General Reuben that got sacked. As the dwarves are obviously Japanese, the jiangjun referring to dwarves are Shoguns while the jiangling are just generals. The reason why these 'generals' are not Daimyo or Samurais is because they are not given provinces or not 'elite warriors' in a literal sense.

Chapter 269: Thousand Rider General

After a few days, a legendary day in the history of the Hakone Kingdom would arrive.

On this day, the kingdom's most famous Shogun would work together with his competent aides, the mysterious visitors from the Roland Continent. They were Blood Fox Nedis, Evil Star Sith, and Lone Wolf Rody. They would have had all journeyed to the capital.

There would be a lot of dispute about the origins of the three visitors amongst the scholars studying this in the later generations. This was because the Shogun Yukinari would reveal that these three people had come from the Roland Continent's famous Dark Mercenaries. Besides that, the beautiful Blood Fox Nedis had said that the Dark Mercenaries had many masters spread all over the Roland and Radiant Continents. It could be regarded as a great power in the underground world.

However, the countless scholars that would be studying this would all feel like pulling out their hairs as they would be unable to find out anything about the Dark Mercenaries.

At present time, Nedis was currently dozing off in the carriage. She leaned on the back of the chair and her head tilted onto Rody's shoulders. She had an expression of a lazy kitten. The Blood Fox Nedis absolutely did not know that her nonsensical words would create a difficult problem for the scholars in the future.

Rody pulled back the curtains of the carriage and looked into the distance. After a few days of rushing, they were already in front of the capital of the Hakone Kingdom.

The architectural style of the city was similar to Home River. However, the buildings were taller. The buildings at the roadside were low-rise buildings. There were more army patrols. A heavily armed group of soldiers was walking towards the South.

The main road at the capital was very wide. The trees on the road were not the well-known ironwood but willow trees that were grown with effort.

At the moment under the breeze, the willow trees and the golden armored warriors enhanced each other's beauty. It showed a somewhat tender feeling.

"Looks like the war at the South is reaching a critical point." Sith was sitting opposite Rody. He was also looking out the window and could not help but whisper these words.

Rody smiled and nodded. 'Looks like the King is giving the dwarfs a lot of pressure.'

Once they entered the capital, Rody found out that there was an inner city with another city wall. Most of the people living in the area after entering the outer city walls were civilians and merchants. The streets appeared to be in a disorderly mess.

The inner city walls were taller than the outer city walls. A number of armored warriors were stationed on the walls. They wore a strange helmet with two horns and a long and narrow katana on their waists. Evidently, they had a military air.

Yukinari had already become clear-headed at that moment. Although tired from the hurried journey, he became enthusiastic when he returned to the capital and introduced it to Rody and the others.

Only people with status or the rich and powerful lived in the inner city. The streets were also wider compared to the outer city. People were coming and going quietly. Their heads hung down with a serious demeanor. There were even more carriages coming and going.

"We are now taking this road that is known as the Cherry Blossom Road. On the left are the homes and territories of the officers, generals, and henchmen. On the right are homes of

members of the royalty." Yukinari smiled and said, "Going along this road, you would be able to see the distant mountains." Yukinari then became serious and said, "That is our Hakone Kingdom's tallest mountain, the Sacred Mountain. Some people also call it the Rich Mountain. This is the symbol of our race's Hakone Kingdom. From a distance, you can see the heavy snow. However, this is the Sacred Mountain! Every hundred years or so, the mountain will start shooting out fire."

Rody's mind stirred. A mountain that shoots out fire? Isn't that a 'volcano' described in the Sunflower Treasure left behind by the Grand Master Dandong?

Nedis sighed as if she already knew about this. She showed a fascinated expression and laughed, "That mountain seems to be the restricted area of the Royal Family. Outsiders are not allowed to go in. I really want to go in and see what kind of mystical place it is."

Sith also seemed fascinated and sighed, "Will it really spit out fire? How does the capital get through this all these years as it is so close to the mountain?"

"Well, in fact, the territory around the mountain belongs to the Royal Family. Their palace is underneath the mountain. Although flames will erupt every hundred years, there is a large lake about ten meters in the vicinity of the mountain. Every time the mountains erupts, the flames would flow down the mountain into the lake where it is blocked. As a result, it would not endanger the capital or the palace at the foot of the mountain." Yukinari then laughed and said, "The last time it erupted was fifty years ago so for the time being, there is no need to worry about this. Ah, if you are interested, we can go and take a look another day. Although the mountain is the Royal Family's territory and you are not allowed there, the lake at the foot of the mountain should still be close enough."

Rody hung his head and thought for a while. Suddenly, he said, "You said the mountain would erupt into flames. So presumably

the earth shakes every time it happens?

Yukinari exclaimed in surprise. He then asked, "Mister Rody, how did you know this? The earth shakes every time the mountain spits out fire. Supposedly it is because God is enraged. However, this is something only we dwarves know. How do you know about this?"

Rody shook his head and did not answer. He looked at the tall mountain at the distance in a trance.

Suddenly, they heard loud sounds of gongs outside. Yukinari raised his eyebrows and loudly said, "This is my father's order to gather and discuss official business. Let us go to the shogunate so that I can report the matters at Home River to my father."

He then looked at the three with inquiring eyes.

Nedis laughed and replied, "Young Master Yukinari, you do not need to worry. We will naturally accompany you. You just need to pretend like nothing has happened. We will naturally help you according to the way we discussed earlier."

Yukinari became happy and he emphatically nodded his head.

The shogunate on the left side of the Cherry Blossom Road was different from what Rody had imagined.

In his imagination, the places with supreme power in the Hakone Kingdom should be filled with glorious golden walls and huge but heavily guarded buildings. However, when he arrived, all he saw was a large area of dwarven buildings.

The place was surrounded by rows of lush green trees except for the entrance which was guarded by warriors. They did not see the soldiers coming back from inspection.

The door in front had a very simple and elegant style of architecture. It looked less like a general's residence and more like a scholar's library.

Outside, Hideyoshi and the few other warriors had stopped the carriage. They then stood on both sides. Hideyoshi was nervous as he pulled the door open for the few people to get down the carriage. The guards at the entrance saw that the carriage belonged to Kikukawa Yukinari and one of them immediately ran in to notify the others. The remaining ones stood on both sides and greeted.

Yukinari returned to his territory looking arrogant. He wanted to loudly say a few words when the rapid steps of the horses could be heard from behind him. Several horses sped through the streets like a whirlwind. They rode quickly until they were near Yukinari's carriage and then stopped suddenly. One of the horses stood up and neighed but the knight remained calm and steady.

Yukinari had a fright when the charging horse had almost crashed into him.

The knight on the horse immediately showed a smile of disdain. He turned and jumped off the horse. He then stood in front of Yukinari and said, "Yukinari, you have returned!"

Rody carefully looked at this person.

This person was taller than the average dwarf. He had a sturdy figure and wore warrior's clothes made from cloth. The coarse cloth he wore over his body did not make him look unrefined. On the contrary, it even highlighted his magnificent appearance. He looked as though he was about thirty. His long hair was tied up behind his back. On top of that, his eyes seemed to show how refined he looked.

Could this be Kikukawa Koichi, the other son?

Rody and the others did not recognize Koichi. At that moment, they hesitated to walk up and put on an act.

The young warrior then looked at Rody and the others. When he saw Nedis, his eyes turned aggressive. He looked all over Nedis and

licked his lips. When he looked at Rody, his eyes flashed and then he looked back at Yukinari. He then laughed, "Looks like Yukinari brought back a few masters with him this time!"

Yukinari suppressed his anger and calmly replied, "Nobunaga, you jest. These are my new retainers."

He then looked at Rody and the others and said, "This is the number one warrior under my father's command. He is the Thousand Rider General, Oda Nobunaga!"

Chapter 270: Sudden Change (1)

'Thousand Rider General?'

Rody might not understand the official posts of the dwarfs but when he heard the name, he could understand that Nobunaga was a commander of the cavalry. The dwarfs did not have many horses. They did not raise horses as the region was too small. As a result, most of the army were infantries. Cavalries were extremely precious.

As a person who commanded the rare and precious cavalry, this person must have a high position in the shogunate. Yukinari's comment of Nobunaga being the number one warrior of the Shogun was definitely credible.

Nedis had different thoughts. She felt relieved that she had not mistaken this person as Koichi. If she had recognized the wrong person, Yukinari would become suspicious even if he was a fool. It would be a joke to mistake the wrong guy to be Koichi after claiming to be following Koichi's instructions.

Besides that, Nedis also had deeper thoughts.

Oda Nobunaga was a powerful figure. Nedis had not expected the shogunate to have such people. 'Could Koichi be more powerful than Nobunaga?'

Nobunaga glanced at the others and coldly said, "The Shogun has rung the bell to summon us. I will go on ahead!"

After that, he walked in with large strides without even turning his head around. The others that came with him on horses also followed as they walked in orderly. They had an arrogant demeanor and did not even look at the Shogun's son.

Yukinari secretly clenched his fist. His eyes revealed a little bit of hatred.

Rody patted his shoulder and said, "This Nobunaga is not on good

terms with you."

Yukinari nodded as he gritted his teeth, "He is father's Thousand Rider General. Our Hakone Kingdom's cavalry is all under his command. He is always haughty. He also flies his own colors in the army and does not listen to anyone except my father. He does not even listen to my brother."

Rody laughed and secretly thought to himself. A commander of the cavalry? Haha...

Rody himself was a commander of a cavalry. His 'Lightning God's Whip' was the invincible cavalry. Even the Holy Knights were inferior to the Lightning God's Whip. Although Oda Nobunaga had quite an imposing momentum and his cavalrymen were strong and vigorous, their level was only normal to Rody. He had too many of such people in the Lightning God's Whip, so he was not impressed.

Nedis sighed and lightly said, "Young Master Yukinari, since Nobunaga and your brother are at odds, you should not be hostile to him! If you want to be successful, you must remember that the enemy of your enemy is your friend! If I were you, I would try and win him over instead of being hostile to him!"

Yukinari showed a surprised expression. He then bowed his head and said, "Yukinari has received your teachings!"

He cheered up and followed everybody into the shogunate.

Rody was interested in the Thousand Rider General and asked a lot of questions along the way. Yukinari was very dependent on the three at that point in time and told them everything.

Originally, there was a geographical problem. The dwarfs were also short and not good at riding horses. As a result, there were not many cavalrymen. In the entire army, there was only a single cavalry group.

There were only ten thousand cavaliers. Nobunaga was known as the Thousand Rider General because he commanded a cavalry with

ten thousand people. If he was not included, there would be nine thousand nine hundred and ninety-nine. As it was still in the thousands, he became the Thousand Rider General.

They originally thought that the shogunate meeting would be very strict. Rody and the other two were just Yukinari's retainers and therefore could not participate. However, the old Shogun was very fond of his son, so he allowed Rody and the others to enter.

It was a spacious room. A dozen people, both old and young, sat on both sides. It was a dwarven custom that there were no chairs in the room. Instead, there was a soft footrest. The dwarfs kneeled and sat on their heels on the footrest. This habit made Rody feel uncomfortable. Fortunately, as there were not enough places, Rody and the other two simply stood behind Yukinari.

There was a platform in the middle. Naturally, it was the Shogun's seat. The first seat on the left was occupied by a youth that seemed keen-witted and capable. He wore a warrior's armor and seemed to be in high spirits. He also looked proud. His lips were tightly curled and the lines on his face were clear. He was obviously resolute and steadfast person.

This person was larger than Yukinari and looked somewhat similar. The youth was naturally Yukinari's older brother, Kikukawa Koichi.

After Koichi was a middle-aged man in a warrior's clothes. He looked fierce and had a thin scar on his face. His eyes had the ferocity of a beast but looked respectful and deferential when looking at Koichi.

On the other hand, Yukinari seemed to sit far away. It was clear that the Shogun's youngest son did not have a high position. The people by his side also did not speak with him much and looked isolated.

Everyone had arrived before the Shogun appeared and whispered to each other. Koichi really looked popular. He seemed really

intimate with the old officials of the shogunate. Yukinari saw this and his expression became even more unsightly. Nedis stood behind him and whispered, "Don't talk. Watch and listen more. Speak less!"

Rody looked around and saw that the Thousand Rider General, Nobunaga, was not in the room.

A sliding door behind the room was pulled open. A majestic voice coughed lightly, and the room immediately became quiet. Two people then came out from the back.

The first one was an old man with grey hair. He looked similar to Koichi. His eyes were slightly closed but turned sharp when he looked around occasionally. He wore a bright and beautiful robe that was wrapped around his body in a simple manner. This person was the Shogun, the old Kikukawa.

Following this person was the Thousand Rider General, Nobunaga. With a respectful expression, he nodded at the crowd. He then walked over and sat on the first seat at the right.

When the Shogun sat down, everybody raised their heads to look at the real ruler of the Hakone Kingdom. Only Rody continued to be interested in the Thousand Rider General. But he then found that Nobunaga and Koichi had looked meaningfully at each other. Koichi looked at Nobunaga for a while. Nobunaga then nodded slightly.

'Are the rumors of them not getting along fake?'

The Shogun gently coughed and said, "Today, I have gathered you here because the frontline is hard pressed! Kumu Yu has continuously asked for emergency help! I am afraid that the enemies would reach Home River in less than five days."

Koichi responded quickly. While the others cried out in alarm, he loudly shouted, "Father, please allow me to take the men out to battle! I shall take the Demon Circle with me to drive the Roland

people out of our territory!"

He already stood up and held his katana in front of him on the tabletop. He had a resolute expression.

On the other hand, Yukinari had a complicated expression. He seemed to hesitate and lowered his head. Rody sighed. 'This Young Master is so weak. Even I would not have chosen him to be the successor.'

Sure enough, the moment Koichi had finished speaking, [the generals sitting in the lower priority seats at his row gave their support.](#)

"Hmph!" There was a cold and impassionate groan that sounded extremely unconventional. Nobunaga had groaned. He then stood up and shouted, "Shogun, I think we first need to pursue Kumu Yu's dereliction of duty for being defeated! He had fought headlong with fifty thousand soldiers, yet he lost four military fortresses. It allowed the enemy to go straight in! If he is not punished, the warriors may not be satisfied!"

The Shogun nodded and said, "I have decided to choose someone to bring the Demon Circle and the Thousand Rider to the South as reinforcements. But, I want to hear everyone's opinion on who to send! I will also not pardon Kumu Yu. Once I have sent reinforcements and incorporated them with Kumu Yu's troops, I will have him commit seppuku! Everybody, who is the one going South?"

Koichi responded the fastest. He walked forward in large strides and then threw himself onto the ground. He loudly said, "I am willing to go for Father!"

Nobunaga laughed coldly. He then stood up and loudly said, "The older prince is more suitable for the capital's defense. Leave the South to me!"

Both of them knelt in the middle but fiercely glared at each

other. They looked angrily at each other. This made Rody feel suspicious. It was as if these two had an agreement.

The Thousand Rider General also seemed to have popular trust. When he started to compete, Koichi's supporters immediately became quieter and many of them immediately kept quiet. They carefully observed the direction of the wind.

Nedis who was standing behind Yukinari poked him. She said, "You should say something!"

"Hm?" Yukinari was stunned for a moment. He then whispered back, "Say what?"

"Idiot!" Nedis scolded and gnashed her teeth. "If you want an accomplishment, this is a good opportunity to be in the limelight!"

"But..." Yukinari seemed awkward. Nedis laughed and said, "No need to panic. We will support you at the back. Aren't you supposed to be skilled at poetry? Just think of this as poetry instead of an official meeting."

"But I..." Yukinari still wanted to say something but Nedis became impatient and forcefully pushed Yukinari out.

While the two in front were arguing, they heard a sharp voice. "Ah!"

Yukinari felt the back of his body ache as he staggered out. He fell down just behind the two in front.

"Hm? Yukinari?" The Shogun saw the person kneeling in front and was pleasantly surprised. He did not expect his favorite youngest son to finally start moving.

He gently coughed and said, "Yukinari, why did you come out? Have you managed the things at Home River properly?"

Sweat flowed out of Yukinari's forehead as he replied, "Yes, it has been properly handled."

The Shogun suppressed his inner surprise. However, he

pretended to lower his face and said, "Since it has been properly handled, why have you not come back and tell me? You have dawdled until now! Don't you know how urgent this is right now?"

"I...I..." Yukinari became nervous. However, he suddenly remembered Nedis' words and calmed down.

He slowly raised his head and smiled calmly. His demeanor looked as though he had a plan and was perfectly calm.

"Father...I apologize for being late." Yukinari's eyes glinted with wisdom. He gently exhaled and said, "That is because, I have lost my way in life."

There was silence.

They had initially thought that the mentally deranged Young Master had finally straightened out. However, he unexpectedly and deliberately said such 'philosophical' words in a serious discussion. Everyone looked at each other dumbfounded.

Even Koichi could not help but think to himself. 'Has my little brother really gone mad? Although this is good news...'

Yukinari was no longer nervous at all. With amazing eloquence, he calmly said, "Father, I went to Home River and felt surprised about the Hakone Kingdom's situation. In the face of such situation, I can no longer tolerate my previous conduct!"

The Shogun was silent for a moment and then he nodded and said, "Ah, you have finally straightened out. That is a good thing. However, this is not the time to discuss this. Let me ask you. Do you have any opinion on who to send to the South?"

Yukinari gave a cough and showed an even more respectful expression. He replied, "I have no right to speak about such important military matters..." The moment he said these words, everybody thought that although the Young Master was not much, he still had self-awareness. However, Yukinari's speech changed as he said, "But I believe that no matter who is in command, we must

first fully understand the situation at the South! I have a few questions in my mind. I believe that whoever can answer these questions would seize victory!"

The ones sitting nearer the Shogun is higher ranked/ higher priority. In this case, the two people in front were Koichi and Nobunaga. They both sat in different rows. The generals in Koichi's row gave their support.

Chapter 271: Sudden Change (2)

Rody sighed and looked towards Nedis. "Did you teach him that?"

Nedis gave Rody a stare and replied, "Of course. Look, the Thousand Rider General and Koichi are arguing endlessly. If Yukinari can help the Thousand Rider General get the rights to command, he could definitely win him over and earn his respect. How could he let go of such an opportunity to win favors?"

Rody was silent for a few seconds. He then said, "Not necessarily."

Yukinari said in a clear and loud voice, "My questions are very simple. First of all, the people on the Roland Continent may not be harmonious with us. However, we have had peace for hundreds of years! Why did they suddenly attack us? If we do not even know their purpose, the war is simply not worthwhile."

"Hm..." Everybody nodded.

"Second..." Yukinari became calmer and his voice became louder. "We have fifty thousand soldiers stationed in the South. Kumu Yu is also one of Father's generals that are experienced in war. Why did he keep losing to the Roland people? From the start of the battle until now, his troops were almost utterly routed! It was as if the Roland people know our military situations! Father. Don't you find this strange?"

These two problems were the words Nedis used to bluff him a few days ago. However, at that moment, these same questions made everyone fall into deep thought.

Koichi looked at his little brother with a complicated gaze. He could not figure out how his brother completely changed after going to Home River. Although Yukinari's words were said in general terms, it was not groundless. In fact, these thoughts had long since existed in everyone's minds.

"Young Master Yukinari's words truly makes sense!" Nobunaga suddenly said in a loud voice. He gave Yukinari a glance. His tone suddenly changed as he said, "However, these two questions are too complicated. A lot of time may be needed to investigate these one by one! Right now, the situation is tense. The troops need to be dispatched immediately! The more time we spend discussing these, the more hard-pressed the situation in the South would become!" He looked steadfast at the Shogun then said, "Shogun, please transmit your order!"

Koichi then loudly said, "Father, I think it is necessary to take a good consideration of younger brother's words!" He turned to look at Yukinari and then said, "In particular, the reason why the Roland army could defeat our troops so easily. If we cannot understand this, I believe that even if we change the person in charge, we would still meet with failure."

As soon as he said that, he suddenly clapped his hands without waiting for Nobunaga to speak.

There were loud footsteps from outside. The door to the meeting room was then opened as two guards from the shogunate brought in a bloody soldier.

The soldier's armor was broken. His bloodstained face blurred his facial features. His wounds were already treated but without the two guards supporting him, he would not be able to walk and would have already fallen down.

"Everyone!" Koichi stood up and spoke in a loud voice, "This is a soldier that has returned from the frontlines. He can explain to you why Kumu Yu is in such a miserable state!"

Nedis sighed. "Looks like I have made a wrong guess. Yukinari's move is now entirely in vain."

Koichi had unexpectedly already prepared a defeated soldier from the frontlines.

If one were to think deeper, the Shogun had earlier already made up his mind of selecting Koichi as the commander for the soldiers.

Otherwise, there would have been no need to prepare a wounded soldier to wait at the door. After all, they were at the meeting hall of the shogunate. Nobody could just wait there without the Shogun's permission.

The father and son had already arranged this in advance.

Their act was complete. The wounded soldier's disguise was also at a professional level. But, if it was a real wounded soldier, they would have changed their clothes and cleaned themselves before coming.

"You!" Koichi pointed at the wounded soldier and said, "Tell us the situation at the frontlines!"

"Yes!" The wounded man knelt and started to narrate in a loud voice.

"Six days ago, the Roland army came from the ocean. They captured two military towns at the Southern coast, Divine River and Longwood. As we did not receive a warning from the navy, our garrison was attacked and defeated! Kumu Yu had hastily organized a resistance, but the enemy seemed to know our gathering location and time. We were defeated before we had the chance to regroup! Kumu Yu could only withdraw and lead us back to the mouth of the mountains south of Home River to block the enemy!" The soldier said all that in one breath. He took some time to breathe and then continued, "On the first day of the war, we stubbornly held our ground. However, the next day, the Roland army suddenly sent out a strange unit."

"What kind of unit is it? Let everyone hear it!" Nobunaga suddenly coldly said.

"Chariots!" The soldier showed an expression of fear. "It was a monster. Our bows, arrows and shields could not stop them..."

Rody sighed. He had already experienced how formidable the chariots were at the Sauron Kingdom. A common soldier was definitely not a match for the monstrous chariot. It was no wonder the dwarfs were defeated so miserably.

There was no suspense after that. Koichi already had a plan. After the soldier had described how they were defeated, he then demonstrated how he now fully comprehended the situation in the South.

He no longer needed to speak. Everybody already knew that the commanding position would go to him.

Besides that, these people were not stupid. How could there be a wounded soldier waiting without the Shogun's permission? Since this was the Shogun's intentions, the rest no longer needed to say anything.

Rody suddenly narrowed his eyes as he noticed something wrong.

Nobunaga loudly said, "Young Master Koichi may have thought this thoroughly. But do you have a plan for winning the South?"
%%

Koichi nodded and replied, "Of course there is. But..." He looked at the Thousand Rider General and said, "To win, I need the cooperation of the Thousand Rider General."

As soon as he said that, Yukinari turned pale. He was sure that his brother wanted to take this opportunity to obtain military power. If the brother obtained the cavalry, Yukinari would no longer have any more ideas.

Nedis suddenly pulled Rody and said, "Looks like we have wasted our effort to help this guy."

Rody glanced at Nedis and replied, "Let us wait and see first."

Nobunaga gave Koichi a glance. He suddenly and loudly said, "Shogun, I strongly request that you dispatch me to the South!"

Everybody felt as though the Thousand Rider General lacked judgment. Koichi turned to Nobunaga and coldly asked, "What makes you worthy of raising such a rude request?"

Nobunaga pulled out his katana halfway and shouted, "Based on my [Murasame](#) and my Wind Cross Slash!" He eyes glinted as he looked around and loudly said, "I am the eternal warrior of the Hakone Kingdom! The battlefield requires military skills, courage, and resolution. Can the Young Master Koichi admit that he can defeat my sword? If not, can you confidently request for the enemy to leave in comfort? On the battlefield, only the sword speaks!"

He then pulled out a thin katana and held it with both hands as he said, "May God Bless the Hakone warriors!"

The Shogun's expression sank, and he looked unhappy. He was about to speak when Koichi stood up with his chest held high. Koichi looked at the Thousand Rider General's face and said, "Nobunaga, do you truly insist on doing this?"

Nobunaga remained silent and solemnly nodded.

"Good!" Koichi loudly shouted. He turned around to look at the Shogun and said, "Father, since the Thousand Rider General has said this, I am willing to accept this condition! We will duel. The winner will go to the South!"

The audience was in an uproar.

Rody saw everyone's reaction and was certain that Koichi was definitely not at Nobunaga's level. Everybody's astonished reaction has already demonstrated this point.

Nedis also frowned, "I am a bit confused. Isn't Koichi already the commander?"

Rody narrowed his eyes as he looked at Koichi. He then looked at Nobunaga. He had always felt like the two of them had a secret agreement. He then moved over to Nedis' ears and whispered, "Quiet! Looks like we are going to see a good show here today!" He

paused and then looked at Yukinari. He then quietly said, "If something happens, protect the younger Kikukawa. Make sure he is safe."

"What about you?" Nedis could not comprehend.

Rody shook his head and no longer said anything.

Nobunaga looked at Koichi and loudly said, "Young Master Koichi, I am not bullying you. Your military might is weaker compared to mine. This is something everybody here knows. Even if I win, there is no glory!" He had a hideous expression as he coldly said, "Why don't you pick someone in your command to fight against me? If one of your people can defeat me, I will absolutely no longer compete for the position of commander with you."

Rody gently smiled, "Look, the play has started!"

Nedis secretly pulled Yukinari to her side feeling puzzled. What kind of trick were Koichi and Nobunaga doing?

Koichi had seemingly not wanted the position of commander. He insistently promised Nobunaga a duel.

However, Nobunaga had acted even stranger. He would have obviously won but he rejected his advantage and insisted for Koichi to send out a warrior to fight him. The Shogun frowned. It was obvious that things were out of his control. It had also gone far beyond his expectations.

"In that case, let me replace Young Master Koichi to duel with the Thousand Rider General!" A majestic voice suddenly came from the side.

It was the middle-aged warrior that sat one position below Koichi. This person looked sturdy and valiant. There was also a faintly discernable scar on his face. He has large arms with bulky joints. One look was enough to tell that he was a strong person.

Nobunaga looked at him. His eyes became stern as he ferociously said, "Good! You! You are strong enough to be my opponent!" He

then looked at Koichi and asked, "What is your decision?"

Koichi stood there perfectly calm and lightly said, "I approve!"

The Shogun looked imposing and loudly said, "Have you really decided to gamble the position of commander?"

The three of them nodded at the same time.

The Shogun grunted, apparently feeling dissatisfied. However, everybody was looking at him. He could only grit his teeth and said, "Then, I shall promise to grant your request. May God bless the Hakone warriors!"

Everybody then left their seats and moved back. A large space was opened up in the middle. Koichi calmly leaned against the door. His expression was unreadable.

In the middle, the middle-aged warrior and Nobunaga stood against each other. They slowly drew out their katanas.

Nobunaga gently stroked his blade and said, "My Murasame is a gift from His Majesty! It has drunk the blood of countless warriors. You'd best be careful."

The other warrior looked indifferent and clenched his own weapon. However, when Rody looked at his frozen expression, it was as if he could feel a solemn and stirring implication.

A thought suddenly flashed through Rody's mind. Could it be...

The Thousand Rider General raised his weapon and shouted, "I, Oda Nobunaga, will have no regrets if I were to die by your blade today!"

"I am the same!" The middle-aged warrior coldly said, "I am Shinyu! As for the rest, please."

With a sudden and violent shout, the two warriors rushed at each other. Their katanas clashed, causing sparks to appear.

雨村 Rain Village. Turn it around and you get Village Rain, the literal name for Murasame.

Chapter 272: Guileless Manipulator (1)

The battle was fierce. The two well-known dwarven warriors continued to fight. Their blades flew and clashed endlessly.

Both of them were at the level of a higher ranked knight from the Roland Continent. Nobunaga was slightly stronger, but he was only at the rank of a Great Knight at most. Rody was not interested in a battle of that level. However, he looked at the two fighting warriors with a complicated gaze.

After clashing for the fourteenth time, their real levels were revealed.

Nobunaga's blade started to faintly emit a cold blue air. Shinyu's katana seemed to whistle like the wind. It carried a wild white air. The people nearby felt the pain when the strong wind blew at their faces.

"Die!" Shinyu suddenly roared loudly. He grabbed his katana and suddenly slashed horizontally. Nobunaga dodged to the side.

To Rody, Nobunaga's dodge was subtle. If he had dodged and struck back, he would have been able to injure his opponent. Nobunaga was stronger than Shinyu but they had fought for so long and neither of them seemed to have the advantage.

It was as if...

It was as if Nobunaga was just accompanying his opponent! As the battle progressed, Shinyu's fighting energy gradually rose to its peak.

The change was here!

Nobunaga suddenly stepped sideways to avoid Shinyu's blade but did not take the opportunity to counterattack. Instead, he pretended to be unable to withstand the attack and staggered backwards. Shinyu then showed a swift and fierce killing intent.

The killing intent flashed in his eyes, and was noticed by Rody's sharp eyes. Besides that, the killing intent was not directed at Nobunaga. Instead, it was directed at the Shogun.

Irritate a village, kill a tiger!

A phrase stated in Dandong's notes crossed Rody's mind.

He saw Shinyu reach in front of the Shogun. While the Shogun was still surprised, Shinyu had already slashed downwards with his wild fighting energy.

Nobody cried out in alarm. It had happened so suddenly that nobody even had the time to cry out in alarm.

Shinyu also felt as though his attack would not be fruitless. He could already imagine the Shogun's head rolling on the floor and spraying out blood.

At this moment, Rody moved.

The entire space in the room distorted as if everything stopped for a moment.

That one moment was enough.

While everything stopped moving, Rody did not stop. His body flashed and immediately appeared by Shinyu's side. Like a ghost, his Dragon Spell Scimitar was swung without any aura.

Clang!

A clear sound resounded. It was not a loud sound, but it caused a sharp and piercing pain in the ears of those that heard it.

Shinyu roared loudly as his body flew away sideways and fell to the ground. Blood sprayed out from his mouth and nose. The katana in his hand had broken into fragments.

Rody's sword was drawn as he coldly looked at Nobunaga.

The Shogun had finally become aware and shouted loudly, "Bastard! Seize him!"

Koichi's expression had instantly changed. His originally gloomy expression crumbled and looked inconceivably at Rody. It was as though he could not believe the reality in front of him.

This had all been properly planned by Koichi.

With the cooperation of Nobunaga, they would both fake a duel.

Shinyu was the sacrifice. Koichi had promised to take care of Shinyu's family and convinced Shinyu to pledge allegiance and act as an assassin.

Koichi himself would stand at the door. Once Shinyu succeeded, Koichi would personally kill him and justifiably take over the position as Shogun.

However, things had suddenly changed instantly.

Shinyu's foolproof attack was actually knocked down by a strange guy.

In a panic-stricken state, Koichi instinctively looked at Nobunaga. His own ally also seemed astonished. However, Nobunaga's bearings immediately recovered. He immediately stepped forward and shouted, "Kikukawa Koichi is conspiring with his subordinates to assassinate the Shogun! Arrest them all!"

Koichi's heart sank to the bottom the moment he heard Nobunaga's roar.

Nobunaga pointed at Koichi and shouted, "What are you guys dumbfounded for? Arrest him!"

Before the Shogun spoke, Koichi's heart was a mess. If he had calmed down and pushed all the responsibility to Shinyu, he might have had the chance to stand back up. However, the situation had changed. His ally suddenly betrayed him. He had already stopped thinking. He could not help but roar loudly as he suddenly pulled out his katana. He pushed the guy at his side away and ran out.

The moment he started running was the moment it ended.

The Shogun finally reacted and shouted, "Grab him!"

Rody had already grabbed Shinyu and threw him to Yukinari's feet. He then coldly told Nedis, "Watch this guy carefully. Be careful of people silencing him." As if by accident, Rody then looked at Nobunaga.

Rody no longer spoke after that and ran out to chase Koichi.

Although there were bodyguards surrounding him outside, how could they stop Rody? He easily rushed out and chased Koichi.

After all, Koichi was the Shogun's son and a warrior.

Although the room was in chaos, the news had not yet spread outside. Although there were many guards, they did not dare to stop the Young Master that looked as though he was in a hurry. They only heard the racket in the meeting room and ran towards it.

Just like this, Koichi had taken the opportunity to run far away. He would already be very far away by the time the other warriors received the order from the Shogun to chase him.

Koichi was someone with some skill. Although he panicked, he knew to first get his horse the moment he left the shogunate. He understood that he would not be able to escape on foot. The most important thing right now was to leave the capital while the news had not spread.

The only way to live was to run south.

Rody had already caught up with him earlier but he was not in a hurry to get to work. He simply stayed at the back of Koichi and followed him out of the capital.

Koichi rushed out of the city in a frightened state. He slowly calmed down when he did not hear any pursuing troops. He held the reins as he thought about the current situation when he suddenly heard a cold voice that shouted, "Dismount the horse!"

Koichi broke out in a cold sweat. He turned around to see the youth that knocked away Shinyu behind him. His eyes turned blood red. He suddenly roared loudly and slashed at Rody.

Rody's body seemed to flash and left behind a blur. As Koichi's blade was swung down, the blur split into two.

He then suddenly heard the horse neigh. A huge force had struck the horse's legs. The horse suddenly fell to its knees, causing Koichi to fall off and roll on the ground.

His face was covered in dust and looked inconsolably frightened. He spat out the dust mixed with his saliva. Just as he was about to stand, he saw the two legs of the person standing in front of him.

He looked up to see a young man coldly standing in front of him, looking at him condescendingly.

"I told you to dismount. Did you not hear me?" Rody coldly said, "Remember, you better listen to my words. Do not let me repeat myself."

Koichi got up from the ground, but his weapon had dropped to the side. He trembled and asked, "Who are you? Are you one of Yukinari's men?"

Rody shook his head and grabbed Koichi's collar as he moved. Koichi felt as though he was flying backwards with trees passing him on both sides. As he was being manhandled, he had no choice but to speak.

After some time, Rody stopped and threw Koichi heavily onto the ground. "Get up! I have things to ask you!"

After this immediate experience, Koichi understood that he had no way of resisting. He obediently got up feeling pain all over his body. He then asked in a hoarse voice, "Who are you?"

Rody looked at the young man in front of him and felt an indiscernible sense of disgust. He then asked in an even more indifferent tone, "I am the one asking questions right now. You are

going to answer all my questions."

He paused for a moment and then lightly asked, "Just now in the meeting hall. Was that planned by you and Nobunaga?"

Koichi grunted and angrily replied, "You know about it already? Then why are you asking me? If you want to drag me back, go ahead!"

Rody laughed coldly and replied, "If I wanted to drag you back, I would not have waited until now."

Koichi heard this and immediately felt a glimmer of hope. He could not help but ask, "Who are you? Are you Yukinari's henchmen? How much did he give you? I will give you ten times more!"

Rody shook his head and replied, "I am not your little brother's subordinate. In fact, your plan today has got nothing to do with me."

"Hahaha..." Koichi laughed bitterly. He pointed to Rody and shouted, "But you have personally destroyed my plan!"

He suddenly stopped laughing and looked at Rody vigilantly. He asked, "Why did you come and chase me then? You want to use me and threaten Nobunaga? Hm...I know. You want to help my brother become the successor!"

Rody looked at the crazy fellow in pity and lightly said, "If I really want your brother to become the successor, I wouldn't be wasting time here. With my ability, killing all of you is not much effort."

"Then why did you intervene?" Koichi was going mad.

Rody coldly looked at the person in front of him with an indescribable disgust. "To even kill the father for personal gain. You dwarfs really are animals!"

He suddenly heard a looming voice. "Well said!"

The voice sounded light but could not conceal its hoarseness. The

voice seemed to come from thin air. Rody was not able to find out where the voice came from.

Rody's expression changed as he held the Dragon Spell Scimitar at his waist and shouted, "Who?"

For Rody, it was unthinkable to have someone undetected near his side.

The voice seemed to sigh and replied, "I also thought it was strange. Why did you intervene in dwarven matters? I followed you out of the city to see how miraculous a person with strong domain power is."

The voice seemed to come from all directions at the same time.

Rody had an imposing expression and closed his eyes to listen.

When the voice stopped, Rody calmed down and slowly said, "Whoever it is, I am sure this matter must have something to do with you!"

There was a sigh and then a white light flashed. A sharp blade of wind flew towards the dim-witted Koichi. Rody's eyes flashed a stern countenance and swung his sword. His golden fighting energy caused the wind blade flying towards Koichi to disperse. He coldly asked, "Why? Are you trying to silence the witness?"

"Eh?" The voice seemed confused and replied, "Didn't you call the dwarfs animals? In that case, why did you save him? Do you want to use him to threaten Nobunaga?"

Rody laughed coldly and slowly said, "I do not need him to deal with Nobunaga. But I felt that something is suspicious. With his current position, he did not need to execute such a plan. If he were to do things conventionally, the weak Yukinari would not have surpassed him. He would naturally become the Shogun in the future. Why would he need to do such things? In that case, it means that someone is instructing or forcing him to do such actions from behind the scenes!"

Chapter 273: Guileless Manipulator (2)

The air was calm and peaceful. It was as if the other person did not refute those words.

Rody was on alert and taking precautions. He could tell that the other person was using a high ranked stealth sorcery that was similar to the vampires' Blood Escape. It was something that even Sky, who was a powerful Domain Master, was unable to analyze. It was also like the stealth technique used by Diane.

Rody remained motionless and slowly expanded his domain. He held the handle of his sword and coldly laughed, "Why have you stopped speaking? Am I right? You don't want me to speak anymore?"

His tone changed and he started to speak faster, "I was wondering why the dwarfs became everybody's target. Right now, the Roland Continent is in a state of unrest. However, everybody is so anxious in fighting the dwarfs. Naturally, it must be for that thing that could threaten the Temple. Am I right? The Sauron Kingdom wants it. The Temple also wants it! So..."

Before Rody finished, the voice finally replied, "So you believe the Temple is secretly manipulating this fool?"

Rody coldly said, "It feels like this is the only explanation. The reason is simple. After all, the Temple wants this thing. I don't think the Temple doesn't want it."

The voice sighed and lightly said, "Not bad. Sounds reasonable. If it was on normal days, that thing could be left with the dwarfs. But the situation right now is tense. It is not reassuring to leave such things in someone else's hands."

Rody laughed and replied, "Yes. When I came to the Hakone Kingdom and found out about the existence of this thing, I have already started to feel puzzled. I felt like this is a matter the

Temple would not ignore. When I saw Nobunaga and Koichi at the shogunate's meeting hall, I understood this."

The voice sounded surprised, "You understood at that moment? How did you find out at that point in time?"

"Murderous aura!" Rody lightly replied, "Only those experienced on the battlefield has this kind of murderous aura. A warrior's body cannot control their aura emanating when preparing to kill. Hmph. It is a gathering for a discussion but they carried murderous aura with them. I would obviously feel skeptical."

After a long silence, the voice sighed, "I have learned a lot! The next time I do this, I will remember your warning." The voice laughed and said, "It is best to just avoid you."

Rody moved to Koichi's side and vigilantly looked around. He said, "I am done speaking nonsense. I am going to take this person back with me! If you have any ability, you better come out!"

The voice still sounded very gentle and somewhat regretful, "How unfortunate. You are the strongest human I have ever met. I do not want to be enemies with you right now...However, since I know you are taking him back, I will not let him open his mouth for you. No matter what, the Temple is a symbol of light. I cannot allow this animal tarnish that light."

Rody slashed an empty space as he sternly said, "What do you mean light? If you keep doing such dark things, no matter how much you flaunt the light, it is just a lie!"

There was silence.

Rody suddenly raised his sword and knocked Koichi on the head. Koichi fainted without even groaning. Rody then gritted his teeth and carried him up. He then rushed towards the capital.

At that moment, the air changed.

A large spiral blade of light appeared and flew towards Rody. It whistled as it moved towards Rody's chest. Rody sneered. He did

not bother to raise his sword and coldly said, "Break!"

The space around Rody suddenly distorted and the large spiral blade of light dissipated. However, a net made out of light suddenly appeared from the sky.

As the strange net fell onto Rody, he quickly slashed out a cross. A vertical and a horizontal light were shot towards the sky.

With a loud noise, the net also disappeared.

"Still being sneaky!" Rody shouted. The domain shrank vigorously, forming a cyclone. As expected, a groan came from within the cyclone. Rody raised his eyebrow and slashed.

A rainbow Half Moon Slash flew out whistling. It created a white wall, Guardian Boundary, cast from the Light Series Sorcery.

"You won't be able to stop it!" Rody sneered and slashed several more times. Like lightning, the blades of light struck the Guardian Boundary at the same time.

The space distorted again and Rody's blades of light vanished at the same time. Rody was startled. "How is this possible!?"

"Of course it is possible!" The voice appeared beside Rody and quickly said, "This is because I am also a Domain Master!"

Rody felt an ice-cold palm on his back behind his heart. A cold force then pierced through him.

Rody did not have the chance to groan as his body violently shook and flew away. Koichi had also been grabbed away by his opponent.

Although Rody flew away after he was hit, he managed to restore his balance in the air. His knees fell to the ground and he spat out blood.

This was the first injury Rody had received since getting Domain Powers.

His eyes suddenly burst into a dazzling light as he swung his

sword horizontally.

Fast!

This was the only word that could be used to describe it.

When looked at, the bright light did not look dazzling as if it was not there. However, at that moment, the entire space was locked by Rody's aura. A circular slash flew towards the opponent. After that, there was a groan.

For a split second, Rody saw the figure of his opponent. A slender figure had flashed at a distance. From a distance, it could be seen that he was tall and he wore an ordinary white robe from the Temple. The white robe looked old but on him, it looked luxurious, sacred and impressive. His long black hair was tied behind his head with a silk sash.

The thing that gave Rody a profound impression was his face. He wore a silver mask that covered his face and his nose, exposing only his mouth. His lips seemed to be raised as if he was always smiling.

In that split second, that figure was forever engraved in Rody's mind.

That person's expression did not change but blood flowed out of the corners of his mouth. After that, Rody's blade of light dispersed and the figure disappeared.

Rody vigilantly stood up. He carefully determined that there were no enemies around him before walking over.

There were bloodstains on the ground where the figure was standing earlier. His blood had already mixed with the dust.

It seemed that mysterious person had not done well either and was even injured by Rody.

The voice appeared again. But this time, the voice sounded far away and barely audible. "Domain Master, if you want to get that

thing, you better think twice. It cannot meet the sky, it cannot meet the earth, and it cannot meet people. These words...Cough...Cough..."

After the voice coughed a little, it disappeared. It would seem that the injury caused by Rody was not light.

Once Rody had determined that the other person was gone, he staggered and almost fell. He could feel a burning pain in his back. A strange power in his body surged back and forth. His stomach boiled as if it was about to explode. Half of his body felt cold, the other half felt hot.

He bit his lip and tried to manage the pain. At the same time, when he looked at Koichi slumped on the ground, he found Koichi already dead.

Koichi's eyes were wide open. His eyes were dull and lifeless.

Rody sighed and used hellfire to burn the body, not even leaving dust behind.

Rody wiped the blood from his mouth. He had exerted too much energy earlier and spat out another mouthful of blood.

Rody then sat on the ground and bitterly laughed, "This is a huge tumble. I don't even know what he did and I received such a serious injury. Hmph. Looks like having domain powers doesn't make a person invincible."

He then lay down. His hands held his head as he looked up.

'It seems like that guy's injuries are as bad as mine. However, I did not expect that there was someone in the Temple more powerful than the Paladins. Then who could it be?'

A name immediately appeared in Rody's mind.

'Prometheus!'

'Hmph...Cannot meet the sky, earth, and people. What does it mean?'

Rody lied down for a while until his body recovered a little. He then cursed softly and, with difficulty, returned to the capital.

It was already dark by the time Rody reached the capital.

After all, he was still healthy and powerful when he left the capital and had run very far away from the capital. However, when he returned he was severely injured and walked slowly without hurrying. If it was not because he could still manage to jump over walls, he would not even be able to enter the capital.

He would definitely not need to return to the shogunate's meeting hall. By that time, it was likely that the discussions had ended. Rody casually asked someone for the location of Kikukawa Yukinari's residence. However, that person only looked at him coldly and ignored him.

Rody became angry. He made a vicious expression and pulled a person over. That person saw his ferocious expression and honestly answered.

It did seem that the dwarfs really only respected fierce people. It was a preposterous nation.

Yukinari's residence was far away from the shogunate. It could be seen from afar and was an elegant place. It occupied quite a large place. The green walls were also surrounded by rows of trees.

At that moment, there was a group of soldiers walking back and forth outside, looking extremely busy.

From afar, Rody could see Nedis waiting and he immediately walked over.

Nedis was feeling anxious. When she saw Rody finally return, Rody had an awkward expression. Rody was staggering and his body was unstable. His body was also covered in dust, his face was pale, and traces of blood could be seen at the corners of his mouth.

Nedis had always considered Rody invincible since she knew him. She had never seen him in a difficult position before. She

walked over and supported Rody. She asked in surprise, "What happened to you?"

Rody sighed and replied, "Let's speak after going in."

Nedis nodded and whispered, "After you left, at the shogunate, the Shogun announced that the reason for these events is to be investigated by Yukinari. Yukinari has never received such an important position before. The Shogun also gave the command of the capital's guards to Yukinari. Look at all the soldiers going in and out. Yukinari has already dispatched people to check Koichi's residence."

When she saw Rody's inquiring eyes, Nedis hurried added, "The old sorcerer is following him. You do not need to worry."

After that, Nedis whispered, "They are expected to return soon. Let me help you in to rest. The Shogun will summon us later!" When she saw Rody's expression, she continued, "You have ward off an attack earlier. It is possible that he wants to thank you for saving him."

Rody was escorted by Nedis into Yukinari's residence. The arrangement in the residence was very refined. It was obvious the owner was a refined man of letters. However, Rody was not interested in that right now.

He was helped into a clean room and immediately fell onto a soft couch. He took a while to catch his breath and then laughed bitterly. "We lost big today. I ended up fighting with someone and was not able to capture Koichi."

Nedis made sure there was nobody and then closed the doors. She then asked, "So what happened? How did you get so severely injured? Is there anyone who could harm you in the Hakone Kingdom?"

"Even if the Hakone Kingdom does not have anyone that could, there is always someone in the world that could." Rody laughed

and then softly said, "If I am not wrong, the person who injured me was Prometheus!"

"Ah!" Nedis turned pale.

Rody waved his hand and lightly said, "Things are not so simple. If the person who injured me was Prometheus, I am more worried about the safety of another person."

"Who?"

Rody showed a strange expression and lightly said, "One of my friends...Paladin Fielding!"

Chapter 274: Treasure Hunters I

Yukinari returned very late. He looked very excited. This was presumably because Koichi, who had suppressed him for many years, had finally fallen from power. One of the biggest worries in his heart had disappeared. He could even personally make a show of his strength by having people investigate Koichi's residence. His many years of frustration had been vented off. He was so proud of himself that even Rody and the other two could not see the former Yukinari in this man.

Rody did not let on that he was injured. However, Nedis was unhappy at Yukinari feeling proud. She could not help but sneer, "Young master, do you think you can feel proud now? Did you think you have already obtained your succession rights? Do you think you are a Shogun now?"

Yukinari was stunned and replied, "Even if I am not right now, I am already almost one. Right?" He moved his eyes and said, "You all said that my brother is colluding with the people from the Roland Continent but now my brother has fallen from power. Wouldn't the people from the Roland Continent retreat?"

Nedis coldly said, "What are you getting excited for? Do you think you can sleep without worry now?"

She saw that Yukinari was at a loss and sighed. "Have you not thought about why your brother did such a stupid thing today?"

"..." Yukinari finally calmed down and thought about it. He then asked, "Isn't it for the right of succession?" He then shook his head. "That can't be right. If it was for that, he would just need to wait for a few years. In his eyes, I am not something to worry about."

Nedis snorted at him and coldly said, "There is more. Have you not understood after you saw what happened earlier? Do you think your brother would dare to do this on his own? Besides that, why did the Shogun give you the responsibility of investigating this

instead of Nobunaga?"

"Are you saying that the Thousand Rider General..." Yukinari's expression changed as he exclaimed.

Nedis saw his expression change and patted Yukinari's shoulder. She warmly said, "Well, you just need to obediently listen to me. I promise that you will become Shogun!"

After sending off the fidgety Yukinari, Nedis also told him not to reveal his suspicion to Nobunaga.

Rody, who had a gloomy expression, said, "You still want to help this person gain his position?"

Nedis shrugged and gave a cunning smile, "Of course! He promised to give me the managerial authority for ironwood! If he doesn't become Shogun, who am I going to ask for payment?"

Rody sighed and ignored Nedis' nonsense. He closed his eyes and carefully checked his body.

The attack used by that guy from the Temple had a strange energy. Rody could feel the strange energy in his body. Besides that, this energy seemed to be incompatible with his own. It was fine if Rody just lay down. However, if he tried to use his fighting energy, he could feel the strange energy stirring together like boiling water. It felt like a violent energy was going to burst out of his body.

"Strange." Rody sighed. However, he was pressed for time. Rody then said, "Get ready. Tonight, we will go and look at the forbidden area of the palace."

"What? We are going now?" Nedis disapproved as she looked at Rody with doubt. She frowned and said, "But right now, you..."

"Hmph. I won't die!" Rody proudly replied. His face then showed a frustrated expression as he said, "That guy from the Temple is also looking for that thing. We have to act early if we do not want to return empty-handed."

Nedis suddenly laughed. "You are exaggerating again. I am not going to follow you. Obediently stay here for the night. When you recover tomorrow, you can go wherever you want."

Rody replied with a wry smile. "It is your choice if you do not want to go. However, I will go." He got off the couch and stretched his body. He then walked in large strides to depart.

Nedis stopped him by leaning in front of the door and softly said, "Stop!"

She lifted her head and looked at Rody with concern. She gritted her teeth and said, "You are really a crazy person. You got yourself seriously injured today. If it was anyone else, they would save their strength and find their opponent's weakness. They would then go and find a way to take revenge. However, you keep hurrying onward. Are you trying to court death?"

Rody pushed her away and lightly said, "It is not necessarily courting death. There may not be anybody in this world who can kill me."

As Rody walked out, Nedis bitterly stomped her feet and followed.

Rody then went to Sith who was lying down. Although he did not like to be used by Sith to obtain that thing, his strength was compromised. On the other hand, his opponent was a person with strong domain powers. Having a Master following him would be more reassuring.

Sith heard about going into the forbidden area of the Royal Palace and obviously did not decline. He had already prepared a lot of things for this. He took out two blue gems like a magic trick and gave it to Rody and Nedis. He then whispered, "Take this. During a crucial moment, you can hide yourselves using this."

Nedis looked at the sorcerer with disdain. Without a word, she returned the gem to Sith and walked towards the mountain.

Although the three of them had never been to the palace, it was easy to find the palace in the Hakone Kingdom. They simply needed to go towards the mountain.

The three of them were very skilled. Although Nedis was the weakest, she had the vampire's Blood Escape and was the most skilled in hiding. They easily sneaked into the palace. The palace was not too big. Perhaps this was because the Hakone Kingdom's Royal Family did not have too much power and influence. It was just a small building with a simple yet elegant feeling. Around it was pavilion-like structures that Rody had never seen or heard of before.

There were a few attendants carrying silk lanterns. They were all solemn and dressed in black clothing. They walked cautiously as if they were afraid of trampling over ants.

Rody held the old sorcerer's stealth gem in his hand and they progressed until they arrived at the lake of the palace.

Looking up at the snow on the mountain they could feel the cold in their faces despite standing at the foot of the mountain.

"The cave Yukinari spoke of should be right ahead. We just need to cross this lake..."

Nedis sighed as she looked at the lake that was a dozen meters in radius. She could not help but laugh bitterly and say, "This Yukinari is really a strange person. I listened about his rendezvous with the princess and thought that the forbidden area was in their palace's backyard. I did not expect it to be so far away."

There were a few boats on the lake that were small and exquisite. The ends of the boats curved up like a crescent moon on the surface of the water.

Rody pointed to the boats and whispered, "Looks like we can only row ourselves across."

Nedis raised her eyebrow and said, "Why do you need a boat?"

Can't you..."

Rody stared at Nedis, stopping her from speaking and lightly said, "Look around carefully. We may have the stealth spell. However, when people see an empty boat moving at night, they would be frightened to death."

Nedis obediently untied the ropes to a boat with Rody. The three of them then jumped onto a boat and left the shore. However, the clever woman had different thoughts

'Looks like he does not want others to know he could walk underwater. This is something I can exploit. Since I know this secret, he must give me something for keeping it secret.'

It was late at night when an empty boat could be seen on the lake. The sky had no moon that night and only had dim stars. The cold wind from the distant mountain made Nedis shiver.

The quiet surroundings made people uneasy. It was reasonable to say that small creatures would come out at that location during that time. However, when Nedis listened carefully, she could not hear any movement. Even the cries of the birds at night were missing. They could only hear the sound of rowing.

Rody also felt that something was not right but at the same time, he felt that it was alright.

Suddenly, he remembered that the lake at the Tulip Family's hunting grounds and the lake monster there. At that time, there was also nobody there besides Darke, Diane, and himself.

The atmosphere here was similar to that day.

Rody became vigilant as he remembered that night.

When the boat reached the middle, they heard a splashing sound. A few black figures appeared from the water on both sides of the boat. The figures came out without warning. Their bodies flew about four meters into the sky and they waved their arms. Rody heard the whistling sound of the wind and responded quickly. He

raised the oar in his hand and waved it around like a whirlwind. There were many clashing sounds as countless metal objects struck the oar.

The figures retreated after their attacks failed.

Before the three of them could speak, they heard an ear-piercing sound. Nedis exclaimed and jumped up as she hugged Rody's neck. A sharp blade emerged from the bottom of the boat. The blade was fiercely thrust through the bottom of the boat. After that, several more blades struck as well.

Rody grunted and loudly shouted, "Continue with the plan. Do not stop!" He then gently bent his body over and lightly touched the surface of the water. He lightly said, "Break!"

Large waves appeared at the water and the people in the water were revealed.

Rody used his domain powers to control the water and made it fluctuate rapidly. Although the water looked calm on the surface, he had created several whirlpools underneath. The attackers hidden in the water were immediately sucked in.

By the time Rody's boat had moved some distance, several still figures could be seen floating on the water. They had all died.

Rody's expression remained unchanged. He was aware that with his power, the formation of such a whirlpool would create a strong pressure that could even deform steel. It was not something a mortal body could endure.

There were another two splashes as two more figures jumped out of the water. However, these guys were different from the black figures earlier. These two wore white clothing. They somersaulted and landed firmly on the boat.

Rody looked at the appearance of the attackers.

The attackers wore white clothes that looked similar to a warrior's clothes. However, they wrapped the clothes around their

body without exposing any skin. They even wore leather gloves. They wrapped a white scarf tightly around their head to cover their face. Only their eyes were exposed.

Both of them took out their long and thin katanas at the same time. Without making a single sound, both of them attacked Rody at the same time.

What made Rody surprised was that these two were extremely quick. Their movements seemed inhuman and quick like cats.

At that moment, Rody's chest was still boiling and he did not dare to use fighting energy. Instead, he skillfully caught his opponent's sword. His movements were faster than his opponents.

Like lightning, he seized one of their swords and twisted to take the sword. Taking advantage of that moment, he kicked behind him without even looking.

The person attacking from behind could not dodge and was kicked in the chest. There was a cracking sound, signifying that the attacker's bones were broken. The attacker's body flew away and into the water.

Rody did not let go of the blade he caught. He held the bladed end of the katana and then hit the head of the other attacker.

The attackers had never seen a person fight like that before. They cried out in alarm and retreated. After that, they disappeared into a mass of white smoke.

Rody could not help but comment, "Strange warriors!"

Nedis gritted her teeth and said, "These people are ninjas! They are a group of mysterious soldiers that protect the Royal Family."

Sith was sweating. Sorcerers were not known for their physical strength. Sith had been rowing the boat for a while and was now already tired. He then said, "Alright, come and row the boat. I will deal with them!"

Rody and Nedis took the oars in their hands. He then saw the sorcerer raising up his hands and chanting silently.

The moment Sith chanted the first part of the spell, Rody gave a surprised cry. Evidently, Rody could understand what kind of spell Sith was about to use.

"Do you know what he is doing?" Nedis asked.

"Yes," Rody replied. "It is a summoning spell."

Sith condensed two black balls into his hands. The two black balls squirmed in his hands. It suddenly transformed into a black liquid and flowed into the lake on both sides of the boat.

The waves started to surge. There were two sharp roars as two large pythons appeared.

The large bodies of the pythons on both sides of the lake caused the waves to surge back and forth. Many hidden ninjas surfaced and swam away. A few unlucky ones were bitten and swung a few times before flung away.

The two pythons were like pathbreakers. One stayed at the right and one stayed at the left of the boat, escorting it.

Sith stood at the bow of the boat with his hands raised as he mumbled something to control the pythons.

Suddenly, the python on the left violently tossed about. Its large action caused a huge wave that almost overturned Rody's boat. After that, a rainbow-like blade flashed. There was a slash and a dark burst of blood splashed out. The python's head was cut off. The rest of its body weakly twisted a bit and finally sank to the bottom of the lake.

A dazzling ninja in golden skintight clothes sprang out from the water. He slowly floated down like a feather and pointed his katana at Rody. "Stop immediately!"

Rody coldly grunted and swung the oar. The oar struck the man

but Rody felt as though he did not hit anything.

It is just an image! Rody immediately thought to himself.

Sure enough, Rody immediately felt a cold chill as his clothes were cut.

The Hakone Kingdom's ninjas were strange. They were not powerful but they were very skillful at sneak attacks. Rody was also unable to see through his earlier deception. Of course, Rody was also preserving his strength and did not expand his domain.

Rody felt strange but the golden ninja felt even more strange.

The ninja had slashed his opponent but the blade only cut the clothes. It could not cut the person at all.

'Is that person's body invulnerable?'

The golden ninja was already a master ninja. However, he had never met an opponent whose body could directly endure his attack.

Rody recovered and grabbed the ninja's neck as he coldly said, "You want to kill me? Then I will kill you!"

Pressing hard with his hands, he stopped the ninja's breathing.

Rody looked into the man's eyes but he did not see a single trace of fear. The person's eyes looked dead and gloomy.

"Let me ask you. Is the forbidden area in front?"

The golden ninja remained silent. He did not even look at Rody. His hands continued to struggle. Rody loosened his grip and then asked again.

The ninja suddenly bit down hard. He then tilted his head and stopped breathing.

Rody froze for a moment as he saw blood flowed out from the mouth and ears of the ninja. He frowned and then threw the ninja's body into the lake.

The journey after that became quiet. Nobody jumped out of the lake to attack anymore. Sith also retrieved and put away his python. He then slowly sat down to meditate and restore his magic power.

When the boat docked, Rody pulled Nedis and jumped off. Sith then took out a boundary talisman into his hand and said, "There is something strange here. Do not stray too far from me."

"What?" Rody and Nedis asked.

Sith gave an extremely solemn expression and said, "I know I cannot be compared to you in strength. However, I am definitely more sensitive to sorcery to you."

Sith took out a chain and tied it around his neck. There was a small silver cross under it and in the middle of the cross was a strange gem. The gem was very strange. Its light kept fluctuating, emitting a colorful luster.

"This is my Sorcery Appraisal gem," Sith said. "This is something I have carefully made. It is able to detect the fluctuation of magic." He then spoke slowly and said, "If it is bluish, it would mean the fluctuation of magic is weak. If it is yellow, the fluctuation is slightly stronger. If it is red, the fluctuation is strong..."

Rody looked at the gem in Sith's hands. It glowed in a variety of colors. Rody then asked, "That...It has become like that. What does it mean?"

Sith showed an uneasy expression but smiled, "I don't know. This is the first time I have seen this strange reaction."

Chapter 275: Treasure Hunters (2)

"Strange..." Sith felt something strange and smiled wryly. "According to this gem, there is magic fluctuating from all over. The strong and weak fluctuation is mixing."

Rody then said, "Let us go in first before bothering with all that!"

After distinguishing the circumstances, the three of them walked towards the foot of the mountain from the shore. The strange thing was that the journey was smooth and nobody appeared to stop them. It was as if the ninjas at the lake were the only guards.

The rumored forbidden area was not difficult to find.

The trees separated on both sides, forming a passage in the middle. The passage went all the way until the cave at the foot of the mountain.

"Why are there no guards?" Nedis frowned.

The night was so quiet that they could hear their own heartbeats.

"This is the place!" Sith was extremely excited. He held the Magic Appraisal gem and excitedly exclaimed. "The magic is fluctuating here the most!"

The magic gem in his hands become more and more dazzling. The red light from the gem suddenly burst out. Gradually, the strong light made the others unable to look at it directly. The three could not help but look away from the cross.

"Let's go in!" Nedis exclaimed and took a large step forward. Rody then pulled her hand and laughed, "Don't you find it strange?"

"Strange?" Nedis was stunned for a moment.

Rody replied, "This is probably the Royal Family's forbidden area. How could such a secret and important place have no guards? Do you think they only relied on the ninjas to stop everyone from entering? If it was so simple..."

Rody suddenly went to the side of the road and held a thick tree. Using brute force, he managed to uproot the tree.

He carried the tree as easily as he carried a chopstick. He then signaled Nedis and Sith to step back. Rody lightly spat and then threw the tree into the cave.

There was a sudden change.

The entrance of the dark cave seemed to twist. As if a vegetable was being blended, a frightening rustling sound continued endlessly. The tree was crushed by an invincible force at the entrance, leaving only debris.

Nedis turned pale. The tree that Rody threw was the ironwood that belonged to the dwarves. Yet, it was instantly crushed. If she had really rushed in front earlier, the same would have happened to her.

Nedis became more frightened the more she thought about it and shuddered.

Rody did not seem surprised and sighed. "I knew it was not that simple."

He patted and comforted the frightened Nedis and then said, "That thing that the dwarves hid here is a thorn to the Temple. The Temple had so many masters in the past few hundred years and even Paladins. How could they stop the Paladins just based on those ninjas earlier."

Sith sighed and said, "If we can't even get past this, there is nothing left to discuss! Let us try it!"

He then started to cast a spell. Black fireballs appeared and revolved around him, suspended in mid-air. The air faintly fluttered. Sith finally opened his eyes and shouted, "Go!"

A dozen black fireballs shot towards the entrance of the cave. However, the fireballs simply exploded and disappeared before it reached the entrance. It was as if a strange unseen force caused the

fireballs to explode and scatter as sparks.

"If fire does not work, how about water?" Sith waved his hands to summon water.

As they were near a lake, there was an abundance of water elements. The sorcerer lifted his hand a little and waterballs of different sizes came out from the lake.

The dozen waterballs floated in the air and coalesced. It squirmed as if it had a life of its own and finally transformed into a white dragon.

The water dragon was lifelike. It roared earthshakingly loud into the sky a few times, and shot towards the entrance.

Rody was watching at the side when he suddenly thought of something and shouted, "Not good!"

Without having any time to explain, he grabbed Nedis and moved to her front. He then shielded her with his large body.

There was a loud roar along with a sound similar to beans being fried. The water dragon disintegrated the moment it got near the entrance. It transformed into a storm that shot back towards the three people.

The water that was reflected was extremely fast. The water droplets cut through the air like arrows.

Sith had already begun setting up a protective enhancement. The water droplets struck his protective enhancement with loud and crisp sounds, causing the enhancement to tremble.

The trees on both sides of the road were also damaged. Countless leaves and branches were pierced by the powerful water droplets. Even the tree trunks were pierced by the water droplets. It went to show how powerful the water was.

Rody held Nedis to his chest and felt as though his back was slashed by hundreds and thousands of warriors. Fortunately, his

body was strengthened by the Mystic Dragon's blood. Otherwise, the powerful attack would have torn his body apart.

After that was over, the expression of the three changed. Rody let go of the frightened Nedis. Nedis lifelessly looked at the surrounding trees. She was speechless.

Rody took off his shirt and saw that the back of his shirt had hundreds of small holes. It was already extremely tattered.

He laughed bitterly and looked at Sith as he said, "You better not try any other spells. It does not seem to be effective. I guess that there is a Sorcery array here that stops people from entering. It would be useless no matter what spell you use."

Sith looked bitter as Rody's eyes suddenly gave a swift and sharp gaze. He then said, "Let me try." He paused for a moment and added, "It is best for the rest of you to stand further away."

This time, Nedis did not bother arguing with him. She and Sith retreated a few dozen steps away. Rody frowned and shouted, "Go further!"

Rody saw Nedis and Sith retreat back to the lake. He then took a deep breath.

Although he could feel a burning pain in his stomach when he used his energy, Rody could only grit his teeth and endure it.

He slowly opened and expanded his domain. His aura spread out and wrapped the space around him.

Rody's eyes flashed with a golden light. He slowly exhaled and said, "Appear."

Everything within Rody's domain, such as the trees, flowers and stones, started to become transparent.

They turned into an illusory image as if they had never existed.

It was seemingly made by all the energies in the world. Rody looked into the cave and saw that the entrance of the cave looked

different.

There were dark rotating discs at the entrance of the cave like cyclones. It blocked the entire cave behind it.

The rotating discs was not joined together. It rotates quickly at different directions.

Some of it spinned clockwise while others spinned counter-clockwise.

The discs rotated quickly like gears. The ironwood Rody threw had been crushed from the friction caused by the principles of these force.

On the other hand, Sith's water dragon was created from condensing the water. As water did not have a fixed shape, it was broken apart before it was reflected.

Nedis and Sith looked at the wonders in front of them with surprise. They had opened their eyes so wide that their eyes could fall out.

Rody lowered his head and thought for a moment. He then had an idea.

He waved his hand and fighting energy emerged from his palms.

The golden fighting energy condensed into a large disc. It was larger than the other discs. However, the disc created by the fighting energy also glowed with a golden light like a smooth reflection. It was as if it was a mirror.

With two hands, Rody moved the huge disc towards the entrance of the cave.

As he continued to step forward, he could feel the air in front resisting. It was as if he was walking into an invisible wall. A lot of strength was needed for each step. Gradually, his footsteps became slow and made a chattering sound when it stepped onto the ground. That was how strong the resistance Rody felt as he

walked.

The disc continued to spin and there was a cyclone in front of him. Rody suddenly exhaled his breath. To Nedis and Sith, it was as if the entire place instantly shined. They could then hear Rody shout, "Stop!"

Sith's eyes lit.

This was a power to stop space! Only a person with strong domain powers could do this!

Inside Rody's domain, the wind stopped. The branches no longer moved. The clothes no longer fluttered and the tree leaves no longer swayed.

It was as if he was the only person left in that space. Everything else became motionless.

The only exception was the rotating cyclone.

However, the cyclone seemed to have slowed down. Earlier, it had rotated so quickly that a person could not feel anything. However, it had slowed down and now, a faint humming could be heard from the friction in the air.

Rody looked at the slow cyclone and did not dare to hesitate. Although he had strong domain power and could stop space, he was not able to maintain it forever.

Rody then covered the cyclone with the disc in his hand.

There was a loud screeching sound.

It was similar to the ear grating sound of a person scratching the bottom of a plate with a knife during mealtime.

However, this sound was ten times louder and a hundred times even more ear grating.

Even though Nedis and Sith stood far away, they were not able to endure it. They screamed painfully and covered their ears. Their bodies were curled up like shrimps.

Sith's expression changed. He bit his lips and stopped covering his ears for a moment. In that moment, he suddenly crushed the gem on the cross at his chest. A milky white and pure light covered Nedis and Sith, making the two of them feel much better.

If there was someone else present, that person would have been surprised. The leader of the Sorcerers was forced to use the most powerful Guardian Boundary.

Naturally, Sith's actions were sensible.

The harsh sound became even more terrifying and eventually took shape as a sound wave. Only Rody was able to withstand the sound wave. The branches and leaves broke apart and even the rocks started to crack from the sound wave.

Rody felt that the disc he was holding was unable to endure much longer. A faint creaking sound could be heard. It rotates powerfully as though it wanted to place pressure on the cyclone. Rody growled. The flames from his fighting energy suddenly rose, making him shine like the sun.

The rotating cyclone and the disc caused friction, making the disc even more fiery. Red flames started to appear at the edge of the disc. Even the air could not withstand the violent friction and started to burn.

Rody's eyes flashed, and then he roared! He suddenly grew to several times his normal size. The shape shifting sorcery spell that he had used to disguise himself broke down. His body then reassumed his real physique. His muscular arms held on desperately to the faintly screeching light disc

If there was a top spinning extremely quickly on the ground, it could easily be stopped by gently pressing the head of the top with a finger.

However, the thing that was spinning quickly was not a top but a disc. More than ten times the strength is needed if a person wants

to stop it.

Besides that, the cyclone could easily mince ironwood. It was much more powerful than a millstone.

That was why Rody still needed to use all his strength despite having strong domain powers.

Dust gradually built up to his heel. He stood there and persisted, moving forward one step at a time.

After that, there was a loud sound.

The whole mountain trembled. Rody felt as though the incomparably powerful force in front of him disappeared. His hands loosened as he staggered forward a little. The cyclones had vanished.

There was another cracking sound. The disc made out of Rody's fighting energy could no longer endure it and broke into fragments like glass. It disintegrated and dispersed like golden stars.

Rody was already sweating and his face was soaked. The hair on his forehead stuck to his face and he looked as though he was just fished out of the water. He looked extremely tired and was more exhausted than when he fought against ten Paladins.

Nedis and Sith were tensed. The sharp and harsh sound earlier had almost pierced their eardrums. Despite the fact that they covered their ears, the noise seemed to penetrate everything and drilled its way into their ears. If it was not because Sith had desperately used a Guardian Boundary, it was possible that even their bodies could have been torn apart by the sound.

Nedis quickly ran over to support Rody. She then asked, "How are you?"

Rody sighed and released himself from Nedis' arms as he replied, "I am fine." Rody then showed a rare lifeless smile. "However, it feels like I have aggravated my earlier injuries."

Sith seemed to have recovered from the shock and gave a long sigh. "I finally understand how these dwarves keep this thing safe for hundreds of years! This sorcery array was something that could not have been broken by people. Without a strong domain power, the Temple would also not be able to do anything even if they had dispatched ten Paladins."

Sith gave an uneasy expression and added, "I have dabbled in sorcery for many years. Despite that, I have never even heard of such a powerful and terrifying sorcery array before." He then paused and gave a wry smile. "This is not something that could be made by mankind! Only the Gods and Devils in the God and Devil war could have created such a terrifying sorcery array."

"I just hope there is nothing else like this inside!" Rody laughed bitterly. "Let us go in!"

Rody walked ahead and took his first step into the dark cave.

"Strange..." Sith felt something strange and he smiled wryly." According to this gem, there is magic fluctuating from all over. The strong and weak fluctuation is mixing."

Rody then said, "Let us go in first before bothering with all that!"

After distinguishing the circumstances, the three of them walked towards the foot of the mountain from the shore. The strange thing was that the journey was smooth and nobody appeared to stop them. It was as if the ninjas at the lake were the only guards.

The rumored forbidden area was not difficult to find.

The trees separated on both sides, forming a passage in the middle. The passage went all the way to the cave at the foot of the mountain.

"Why are there no guards?" Nedis frowned.

The night was so quiet that they could hear their own heartbeats.

"This is the place!" Sith was extremely excited. He held the Magic

Appraisal gem and excitedly exclaimed. "The magic is fluctuating here the most!"

The magic gem in his hands become more and more dazzling. The red light from the gem suddenly burst out. Gradually, the strong light made the others unable to look at it directly. The three could not help but look away from the cross.

"Let's go in!" Nedis exclaimed and took a large step forward. Rody then pulled her hand and laughed, "Don't you find it strange?"

"Strange?" Nedis was stunned for a moment.

Rody replied, "This is probably the Royal Family's forbidden area. How could such a secret and important place have no guards? Do you think they only relied on the ninjas to stop everyone from entering? If it was so simple..."

Rody suddenly went to the side of the road and held a thick tree. Using brute force, he managed to uproot the tree.

He carried the tree as easily as he would a chopstick. He then signaled Nedis and Sith to step back. Rody lightly spat and then threw the tree into the cave.

There was a sudden change.

The entrance of the dark cave seemed to twist. As if a vegetable was being blended, a frightening rustling sound continued endlessly. The tree was crushed by an invincible force at the entrance, leaving only debris.

Nedis turned pale. The tree that Rody threw was the ironwood that belonged to the dwarfs. Yet, it was instantly crushed. If she had really rushed ahead earlier, the same would have happened to her.

Nedis became more frightened the more she thought about it and shuddered.

Rody did not seem surprised and he sighed. "I knew it was not

that simple."

He patted and comforted the frightened Nedis and then said, "That thing that the dwarves hid here is a thorn to the Temple. The Temple had so many masters in the past few hundred years and even Paladins. How could they stop the Paladins just based on those ninjas earlier."

Sith sighed and said, "If we can't even get past this, there is nothing left to discuss! Let us try it!"

He then started to cast a spell. Black fireballs appeared and revolved around him, suspended in mid-air. The air faintly fluttered. Sith finally opened his eyes and shouted, "Go!"

A dozen black fireballs shot towards the entrance of the cave. However, the fireballs simply exploded and disappeared before it reached the entrance. It was as if a strange unseen force caused the fireballs to explode and scatter as sparks.

"If fire does not work, how about water?" Sith waved his hands to summon water.

As they were near a lake, there was an abundance of water elements. The sorcerer lifted his hand a little and waterballs of different sizes came out from the lake.

The dozen waterballs floated in the air and coalesced. It squirmed as if it had a life of its own and finally transformed into a white dragon.

The water dragon was lifelike. It roared earthshakingly loud into the sky a few times and shot towards the entrance.

Rody was watching at the side when he suddenly thought of something and shouted, "Not good!"

Without having any time to explain, he grabbed Nedis and moved to her front. He then shielded her with his large body.

There was a loud roar along with a sound similar to beans being

fried. The water dragon disintegrated the moment it got near the entrance. It transformed into a storm that shot back towards the three people.

The water that was reflected was extremely fast. The water droplets cut through the air like arrows.

Sith had already begun setting up a protective enhancement. The water droplets struck his protective enhancement with loud and crisp sounds, causing the enhancement to tremble.

The trees on both sides of the road were also damaged. Countless leaves and branches were pierced by the powerful water droplets. Even the tree trunks were pierced by the water droplets. It went to show how powerful the water was.

Rody held Nedis to his chest and felt as though his back was slashed by hundreds and thousands of warriors. Fortunately, his body was strengthened by the Mystic Dragon's blood. Otherwise, the powerful attack would have torn his body apart.

After that was over, the expression of the three changed. Rody let go of the frightened Nedis. Nedis lifelessly looked at the surrounding trees. She was speechless.

Rody took off his shirt and saw that the back of his shirt had hundreds of small holes. It was already extremely tattered.

He laughed bitterly and looked at Sith as he said, "You better not try any other spells. It does not seem to be effective. I guess that there is a Sorcery array here that stops people from entering. It would be useless no matter what spell you use."

Sith looked bitter as Rody's eyes suddenly gave a swift and sharp gaze. He then said, "Let me try." He paused for a moment and added, "It is best for the rest of you to stand further away."

This time, Nedis did not bother arguing with him. She and Sith retreated a few dozen steps away. Rody frowned and shouted, "Go further!"

Rody saw Nedis and Sith retreat back to the lake. He then took a deep breath.

Although he could feel a burning pain in his stomach when he used his energy, Rody could only grit his teeth and endure it.

He slowly opened and expanded his domain. His aura spread out and wrapped the space around him.

Rody's eyes flashed with a golden light. He slowly exhaled and said, "Appear."

Everything within Rody's domain, such as the trees, flowers, and stones, started to become transparent.

They turned into an illusory image as if they had never existed.

It was seemingly made by all the energies in the world. Rody looked into the cave and saw that the entrance of the cave looked different.

There were dark rotating discs at the entrance of the cave like cyclones. It blocked the entire cave behind it.

The rotating discs were not joined together. It rotates quickly in different directions.

Some of it spun clockwise while others spun counter-clockwise.

The discs rotated quickly like gears. The ironwood Rody threw had been crushed from the friction caused by the principles of these force.

On the other hand, Sith's water dragon was created by condensing the water. As water did not have a fixed shape, it was broken apart before it was reflected.

Nedis and Sith looked at the wonders in front of them with surprise. They had opened their eyes so wide that their eyes could fall out.

Rody lowered his head and thought for a moment. He then had an idea.

He waved his hand and fighting energy emerged from his palms.

The golden fighting energy condensed into a disc larger than the other discs. However, the disc created by the fighting energy also glowed with a golden light like a smooth reflection. It was as if it was a mirror.

With two hands, Rody moved the huge disc towards the entrance of the cave.

As he continued to step forward, he could feel the air in front resisting. It was as if he was walking into an invisible wall. A lot of strength was needed for each step. Gradually, his footsteps became slow and made a chattering sound when it stepped onto the ground. That was how strong the resistance Rody felt as he walked.

The disc continued to spin and there was a cyclone in front of him. Rody suddenly exhaled his breath. To Nedis and Sith, it was as if the entire place instantly shined. They could then hear Rody shout, "Stop!"

Sith's eyes lit.

This was a power to stop space! Only a person with strong domain powers could do this!

Inside Rody's domain, the wind stopped. The branches no longer moved. The clothes no longer fluttered and the tree leaves no longer swayed.

It was as if he was the only person left in that space. Everything else became motionless.

The only exception was the rotating cyclone.

However, the cyclone seemed to have slowed down. Earlier, it had rotated so quickly that a person could not feel anything. However, it had slowed down and now, a faint humming could be heard from the friction in the air.

Rody looked at the slow cyclone and did not dare to hesitate. Although he had strong domain power and could stop space, he was not able to maintain it forever.

Rody then covered the cyclone with the disc in his hand.

There was a loud screeching sound.

It was similar to the ear-grating sound of a person scratching the bottom of a plate with a knife during mealtime.

However, this sound was ten times louder and a hundred times even more ear-grating.

Even though Nedis and Sith stood far away, they were not able to endure it. They screamed painfully and covered their ears. Their bodies were curled up like shrimps.

Sith's expression changed. He bit his lips and stopped covering his ears for a moment. In that moment, he suddenly crushed the gem on the cross at his chest. A milky white and pure light covered Nedis and Sith, making the two of them feel much better.

If there was someone else present, that person would have been surprised. The leader of the Sorcerers was forced to use the most powerful Guardian Boundary.

Naturally, Sith's actions were sensible.

The harsh sound became even more terrifying and eventually took shape as a sound wave. Only Rody was able to withstand the sound wave. The branches and leaves broke apart and even the rocks started to crack from the sound wave.

Rody felt that the disc he was holding was unable to endure much longer. A faint creaking sound could be heard. It rotates powerfully as though it wanted to place pressure on the

cyclone. Rody growled. The flames from his fighting energy suddenly rose, making him shine like the sun.

The rotating cyclone and the disc caused friction, making the disc

even fierier. Red flames started to appear at the edge of the disc. Even the air could not withstand the violent friction and started to burn.

Rody's eyes flashed, then he roared! He suddenly grew several times his normal size. The shape-shifting sorcery spell that he had used to disguise himself broke down. His body then reassumed his real physique. His muscular arms held on desperately to the faintly screeching light disc.

If there was a top spinning extremely quickly on the ground, it could easily be stopped by gently pressing the head of the top with a finger.

However, the thing that was spinning quickly was not a top but a disc. More than ten times the strength is needed if a person wants to stop it.

Besides that, the cyclone could easily mince ironwood. It was much more powerful than a millstone.

That was why Rody still needed to use all his strength despite having strong domain powers.

Dust gradually built up to his heel. He stood there and persisted, moving forward one step at a time.

After that, there was a loud sound.

The whole mountain trembled. Rody felt as though the incomparably powerful force in front of him disappeared. His hands loosened as he staggered forward a little. The cyclones had vanished.

There was another cracking sound. The disc made out of Rody's fighting energy could no longer endure it and broke into fragments like glass. It disintegrated and dispersed like golden stars.

Rody was already sweating and his face was soaked. The hair on his forehead stuck to his face and he looked as though he was just fished out of the water. He looked extremely tired and was far

exhausted than when he fought against ten Paladins.

Nedis and Sith were tense. The sharp and harsh sound earlier had almost pierced their eardrums. Despite the fact that they covered their ears, the noise seemed to penetrate everything and drilled its way into their ears. If it was not because Sith had desperately used a Guardian Boundary, it was possible that even their bodies could have been torn apart by the sound.

Chapter 276: Can't See Sky, Can't See Earth, Can't See People (1)

Every step was earthshaking!

The dark cave looked very deep from the outside. It seemed the depth was endless. However, Rody immediately felt something extremely strange the moment he walked into the cave.

Every step was earthshaking!

The entrance of the cave was just a camouflage. It was not a mountain cave. It was a door!

If it was not because Rody was fully aware that he was not dreaming, he would have believed that he was dreaming about going to heaven.

Even though Rody had experienced a lot of things that were frightening to the common people, he could feel a shuddering agitation in his heart the moment he walked through the door. His normal steadfast confidence was immediately shaken!

"Is...is this an illusion?"

Rody bit his lips and looked at the unimaginable scene that appeared in front of him.

At this moment, Rody told himself...

'I just entered a mountain cave. Even though it is a really large sacred mountain...Even if you emptied out this mountain, it is impossible for there to be a vast sea of clouds!'

When he stepped forward, the dark walls of the mountain vanished. There were clouds all around him. The clouds flashed with a golden light as if the mist curled up and appeared in front of Rody.

What made Rody surprised was that he was supposed to be

standing on the ground. However, when he looked down, he only saw an endless sea of clouds!

It was as if they were standing and walking in the sky!

"This is definitely an illusion!" Rody suddenly turned to look behind him. He saw a circular hole behind him.

"Ah!"

The person who shouted was Nedis. After all, she was a girl. The moment she saw such a strange scene when she entered the cave, she could not help but cry out.

Sith was also stunned. He looked around as though his eyeballs were going to fall out. A frenzied excitement could be seen in his eyes.

The three of them were speechless as they looked at each other with extremely astonished expressions.

They had not expected to see something so beautiful, like in a fairytale, after entering the cave.

"Are..." Nedis' voice was hoarse from surprise. "Are we walking on the clouds?"

Her voice trembled in trepidation. She did not dare to take another step, fearing that she would fall down. The sea of clouds below them looked endless.

Rody was the first to calm down. He lowered his voice and said, "This place is weird!"

He looked around vigilantly and continued, "Even if you fumble around, you would not know how big this place is. If we walk around too far, we would not be able to find this exit."

Sith also gradually calmed down. He narrowed his eyes and looked around.

Rody held Nedis, trying to calm her down. He pointed to the distance and said, "Do you see those clouds of light?"

The light-clouds seemed to fluctuate. A light-mist flickering with splendor seemed to spread into a vast distant space. It looked beautiful like a silk painting but it was actually moving. At the moment, there was nothing fixed that could be used as a reference. Some clouds moved quickly and some moved slowly. The clouds also gradually changed shape. If one were to look at it for a long time, they would become intoxicated by the sight and gradually forget where they were standing.

It could be imagined that if they were to leave the entrance, they would not be able to find a way back when the cloud changed.

Sith sighed. "This is a really fascinating trap."

Rody laughed. However, his laugh seemed to have a profound meaning. He suddenly asked, "Is this trap really so simple?"

He narrowed his eyes and glared at Sith. He then slowly said, "Master Sith, have you heard of this?"

"What?"

Rody looked at his eyes and said, "It cannot see the sky. It cannot see the earth. It cannot see people."

Sith's expression froze. His eyes showed his surprised expression. Trembling, he asked, "You...you know about that?"

Rody slowly said, "You have never told me what the dwarfs are keeping here. Now that we are standing at this secret place, I believe it is time you told me the truth?"

Sith took a deep breath and gave a wry smile. "You...Tell me first. Where did you hear those words? Who was the one who told you?"

Rody did not reply. Instead, he lowered his head as if lost in thought.

After a while, Rody raised his head and mumbled. "Ah, this place is inside the mountain. Naturally, it cannot see the sky. Besides that, there is a large illusion here, surrounding the entire place

with clouds. This must be referring to the 'cannot see earth'. Hmph. Now, I am wondering what 'cannot see people' means."

Rody looked up again and stared at Sith as he said, "This place is very scary. We do not even know what other strange things we would encounter. It may be extremely dangerous. Master Sith. Do you still think you need to hide things from me?"

Sith sighed. He then became resolute and said, "Alright. I will tell you. The dwarfs from long ago left something at this place. It is..."

At that moment, a gentle and pleasant voice was heard from outside.

"It is something that makes the Temple uneasy!"

A single person then came in from outside the entrance.

That person was slender and his white robes fluttered. The man looked dusty as he walked in. However, when one looked past him, they could feel a spring breeze. When one looked at his eyes, they would feel respectful. His gaze made him look holy and dignified. He had long black hair that was tied up with a silk sash at the back of his head. He wore a silver mask on his face.

The mask covered most of his face and only exposed the mouth. His lips seemed to curve upwards as if he was always smiling.

He casually walked in and ignored the surprised expression of the other three. He walked inside the mysterious illusion as if it was his own backyard.

Rody looked at the person that just came in and narrowed his eyes. "You!"

The man's lips raised as if he was smiling and replied, "You don't have to glare at me like this. I did not come here to fight you."

He paused for a while, then he laughed bitterly. "I am quite badly injured from the battle with you earlier today. My injury has not healed."

He then casually walked in between the three of them without taking any precautions. It was as if Rody and the other two were his companions.

He was immediately bewildered by the surroundings and sighed.

Rody stared at this person. He understood that this person also has domain powers and was as powerful as him. The battle outside that day had caused both of them to suffer.

"You have been following us?" Rody narrowed his eyes as his eyes turned cold.

Nedis asked in an even more straightforward manner. "Who are you?"

Sith had already begun preparing a spell. He and Nedis stood on both sides with that man in the middle.

That person did not seem to care. He looked at Rody and said, "I truly did not misjudge you. You have really lived up to my expectations by removing the sorcery array outside."

Rody coldly replied, "Today, you have told me that it cannot see the sky, it cannot see the earth and it cannot see people. Did you tell me that deliberately? Or..." Rody's tone became awe-inspiring as he added, "Did you deliberately lure me here so that I could help you remove that sorcery array and act as your pioneer?"

"Hahaha..." The man was startled and then laughed. He lightly said, "Do you really think that? Then let me tell you. First of all, I really did deliberately lure you here. However, I had no intention of using you to open the way for me. Just think for a moment. I may not be able to defeat you on my own. However, you have another two companions now. Do you think I would lure you here? What would the purpose be? Do you think I could even be a threat?"

That person seemed calm and indifferent as he continued, "Second, I did not see what you did to that array. [However, it is](#)

[just a God-ranked lethal trap array.](#) I have already, once, destroyed that one ten years ago."

"What did you say?" Rody was surprised.

That person smiled behind the mask as he looked at Rody. He slowly said, "You did not hear me wrong. That sorcery array, has been destroyed by me ten years ago. I have also entered this dream-like place ten years ago!"

绞杀 jiao sha. Individually it means twist/entangle, kill. Joined together, it means strangle. A literal translation of that trap would be 'God ranked strangling array.'

Chapter 277: Can't See Sky, Can't See Earth, Can't See People (2)

"But..." Nedis, unable to remain calm, could not help but exclaim.

The man gently waved his hand. He had strong and slender fingers but his skin looked pale. He then faced Nedis and smiled, "I did not lie. I have broken through that array before. You would not know but after that array was broken, it would disappear...but..."

He deliberately paused for a moment and then continued, "It would reappear at the entrance after ten hours!"

His voice then turned to disdain as he lightly said, "Did you really think that a God-ranked lethal trap array would be so easily broken?"

Sith seemed fascinated when he heard of the God-ranked lethal trap array. He frowned and silently repeated the words as if he tried to remember the name.

Suddenly, he cried out in alarm and said, "Could it be...that sorcery array is...."

That person smiled a bit. He looked at the old sorcerer and gently replied, "Yes, you guessed right. That is the one!"

"What is it?" Nedis could not help but ask.

Sith had a complicated gaze in his eyes. He hesitated a little and then murmured in a hollow voice. "The Roland Continent sorcery was thriving during the God and Devil war. It was said that during the war with the Kara people in the South, God appeared and made a terrifying array. This array had destroyed the Kara race's powerful army of two hundred and sixty thousand. [This included one-third of their evil wizards!](#)"

"You are wrong!" That man suddenly said, "They were not evil wizards. The Kara race called them White Wizards."

Rody did not care about all these and coldly said, "Alright. You told me those words earlier today and also followed me here. What do you want to do?"

That person did not seem worried at all as he replied, "Don't you find anything strange? Special envoy of the Roland Continent... Hahaha. Do not be suspicious. I know your identity."

He simply smiled and continued, "Since I have the ability to come in here ten years ago, why did I not take the thing here?"

These words made Rody ponder.

True. This person with strong domain powers had the ability to come in here ten years ago. Why had he not taken that thing?

Rody's mind immediately realized something. Cannot see the sky, cannot see the earth, cannot see people.

"Could it be..." Rody said, "Could it be it is because it cannot see people?"

This time, that person did not speak immediately. He was silent for a while as if weighed down with anxiety. Finally, he sighed and nodded his head. "Yes. It is because of those last few words!"

That man saw that the three looked like they still had questions. He raised his head and looked at the distant clouds. He then gave a mysterious smile and said, "Alright. If you all have questions, leave it for later. Right now, let's all sit down and appreciate the strange scene that is about to take place." He paused for a while and then added. "I promise you that this would be the most interesting thing you have ever seen in your lives!"

That man always spoke casually without anger. It was as if he had a strange intoxicating charm. After he finished speaking, he sat crossing his legs on the clouds and no longer spoke.

Rody and the other two looked at each other before sitting down with him.

That man smiled when he saw Rody and the others sitting down with him. He pointed at a direction and slowly said, "Look there! That would appear when the sorcery array is broken!"

The three look at the direction the man was pointing. The clouds at that location gradually changed.

The clouds suddenly shook. It split and separated into four directions. A blood-red ray of light shined through from the clouds.

It was the sun.

However, the light from the sun was red and was frightening. Its blood red color also made people feel restless.

The blood-red light even made the other white clouds look red.

Immediately after that, a huge golden light shined from above.

The light beam illuminated the red-white clouds. There was the sound of the ocean waves. Like snow being warmed by the sun, the clouds gradually moved to both sides and disappeared.

Wherever the golden light fell, the red-white clouds would suddenly dissipate. It was as if the evil atmosphere from the blood red clouds would gradually dissipate.

Nedis and Sith were in a trance as they watched the magnificent sight. Only Rody who had a strong domain power felt something from the evil atmosphere of the red-white clouds.

Suddenly there was a roar from under the blood red light.

It was an inhumane roar that was filled with anger and resentment. The roar was loud and endless. Finally, it was as if the sky had scattered. It was as if there was a thunderclap.

That person seemed to be very relaxed and was listening attentively. He then sighed and said, "How many years have I not heard it roar? Unexpectedly, it is still pleasant to the ears."

Sith turned pale and seemingly realized something. He suddenly

recalled the myths and legends.

He then shouted, "This world has two suns. The blood-red sun symbolizes evil and the golden sun symbolizes light! Is the blood red sunlight that evil symbol? In that case...that roar must be the legendary devil watching the...the..."

As if his tongue was tied, Sith was unable to continue speaking. Nedis who was listening could not help but ask, "The what?"

"The Hakone Serpent." The mysterious masked person was the one who replied Nedis. He seemed to smile a little and explained, "The dwarfs worship Totem Gods. However, no matter what Totem God they worship or what Master Sith say about the myths and legends, they are all false! The Hakone Serpent is not any of these. It is..."

"It's coming out!" The one who shouted was Rody. He shouted as he looked at the blood red sun.

Under the red lights, the clouds suddenly and gradually scattered and spread out. Amongst the mist of the clouds was another large and unparalleled figure.

"So big?" Nedis could not help but take in a deep breath.

However, she soon found out that she was wrong.

On top of that, she was extremely wrong.

When the huge shadow behind the mist gradually revealed its vile visage, the terrified Nedis realized that the large figure was only the head of a snake. Two lights pierced through the mist. On both sides of the large triangular head was a pair of amber eyes. When it opened its eyes,

the snake's pupils shrank into two fine lines. These eyes showed anger and resentment, making people tremble in fear.

Nedis was the first to fall. She shrank into a ball as an instinctive reaction to a frightening enemy. The snake's eyes were also

peerlessly murderous and not that different from a person with domain powers.

Its huge head slowly surfaced from the clouds. The snake suddenly opened its mouth. The red crown of its head split into two. The top and bottom had sharp fangs as thick as ironwood.

"Cover your ears!" the masked man suddenly warned. He then waved and instantly created a Guardian Boundary surrounding everyone.

The snake opened its mouth and roared at the golden light in the clouds.

Nedis felt as though her soul was almost torn apart by the monster's roar. It was like the Gods in heaven caused thunder to strike in her ears. She was the weakest in the group. Even though she had prepared herself and there was the Guardian Boundary around her, she could not endure it and almost fainted.

"Alright." The mysterious person sighed. He stretched his hand to comfort Nedis. He then smiled and said, "He would roar once only each time. Withstanding its roar would be beneficial to your strength."

He then clapped his hands and stood up.

Nedis was still scared out of her wits as she murmured, "I have never seen such a large snake before...Its head is so big...Its body must be..." Nedis thought for a moment and could not imagine how long the body of the snake would be. She laughed bitterly and said, "I think it would not be a problem for it to swallow a few of us at the same time."

The snake's head had retreated back into the clouds and no longer reappeared.

Rody turned to look at the mysterious man and softly asked, "What is your objective?"

The man sighed as he looked at the cloud where the snake was

and whispered, "You saw it? That was what the last words meant! That thing has this snake as a guardian! Unless there was a person that meets that last condition, we would not be able to obtain that thing from that! This was why I left empty-handed ten years ago even though I managed to get past the sorcery array."

Rody coldly said, "What does this have to do with us?"

"Because you are someone that meets the conditions of those last words!" The man finally said the most important words.

"What?" Before Rody could even speak, Nedis could not help but speak out, "What are you talking about? The last words said that it cannot see people! Although Rody does not perform like a person sometimes, he is still just a human."

The man ignored Nedis' words and looked straight at Rody. He said, "I have a proposal. Would you be willing to accept it?"

Rody looked at the man and sneered. "I listened to you talk so much. Naturally, I am waiting for you to finish!"

"Good." He pointed at the exit and said, "Have your two friends wait outside. The two of us will stay here. I will tell you something interesting."

"Don't promise him that!" Nedis was the first to shout. "Rody, he is a sneaky person. He wants you to stay in here. What if he closes the exit and stops you from leaving?"

Rody thought for a moment. He then smiled and said, "Can you give me a convincing reason?"

The man laughed.

Although he wore a silver mask, Rody could completely feel his amusement. He suddenly leaned towards Rody and whispered.

"The Hakone Serpent has a connection to the Mystic Dragon."

Rody was startled and he looked at the guy in surprise.

What did he mean?

Did he already feel the Mystic Dragon's power in my body?

Could it be?

Rody thought of countless possibilities. He then gritted his teeth as he looked at the man and said, "I promise you."

Nedis wanted to say something else but Rody waved his hand and stopped her. He did not look at Nedis but at Sith. He then said, "You all leave first..." He then added, "Once you are outside, if you see any changes, immediately leave this place."

Sith sighed and softly replied, "You have made your decision? This fellow..."

Rody shook his head. "Just leave."

Nedis still had a terrified look. Rody simply said, "Don't worry. Nothing will happen to me. There is still nothing in this world that can kill me."

Once Rody saw Sith and Nedis leave, he turned back to the masked person and said, "Now, only the two of us are left. If you have anything to say, you might as well say it now."

The mysterious person laughed softly. His tone was filled with mockery. "We are not in a hurry. We have been around each other for a while and yet we have not yet formally introduced ourselves. I believe you have guessed that I am Prometheus, the Chief Elder of the Temple."

Rody coldly replied. "That's right. I have certainly guessed that."

The man shook his head and sighed.

He stared at Rody and said something that shocked Rody.

"I have one more identity. I believe you have heard this name before..." The man said in a calm and terrifying tone, "My other name is Kara! The True God Kara!"

巫师 wushi. Refers to wizard or sorcerer. It is not sushi/mofashi. Since I already used the terms "magicians" and "sorcerers", I am

using "wizards" now.

Chapter 278: Divine Primordial Spirit

Prometheus, or rather, Kara, stared at Rody's expected astonished expression.

Rody's expression seemed as though it solidified. He continued to stare at the other person and his slow mind made him speechless.

'Kara?'

'True God Kara?'

'The original God of the Radiant Continent! The person the Church calls a devil? It is the devil destroyed by God in the God and Devil war thousands of years ago?'

'According to legend, Kara was very powerful and was born from the blood from Heaven. He was able to destroy heaven and earth. He could move mountains and fill up the oceans. The lightning in the sky was his servant and the flames of hell was his slave.'

'This person stands in front of me and just told me his identity with a smile.'

'But! This person is the leader of the Temple? The True God Kara became the leader of the worshippers of God?'

"I know that you are surprised." Kara laughed. "I also know of the description the Church has given me."

He laughed with ridicule and said, "Hmph...The Radiant God killed the Devil, turning his flesh and blood to dust. The Devil's heart was confined to the flames of hell. God's teachings itself is an outright lie but there was no point lying about this."

"But..." Rody gulped. He felt as though he did not have enough brain cells. The person standing in front of him was the God, Kara. Rody thought for a long time and then slowly said, "But how come you are here?"

Actually, Rody's doubts were not just limited to this. His mind

was jam-packed with a lot of questions.

'Are you really Kara?'

'How could you be Kara?'

'Why is Kara also Prometheus?'

'Why is Kara, the enemy of God, at the Temple? On top of that, why is he the leader of the Temple?'

Kara laughed and slowly said, "You are a wise person. I reincarnated as Prometheus to hide at the Temple. Naturally, it is to settle my thousand-year-hatred with those fellows in heaven!"

Kara pointed up as he said, 'those fellows in heaven'. His tone also sounded cold when he said 'hatred'. Even Rody could not help but feel cold.

"Those fellows destroyed my body, took my territory and killed my people. They even imprisoned my heart. Hahaha..." Kara laughed wildly and then shouted, "We are all Gods. They could not kill me and could only imprison my consciousness. This was so that they could wear off my heart after thousands of years. But how could I, Kara, die so easily?"

He opened his arms and proudly stood in front of Rody. Rody could feel Kara's aura become more powerful as though he could embrace the whole world.

"Those fellows did not know that I have returned!" Kara raised his chin and slowly said, "I came back a few decades ago! My thousand years of sleep was just like a snap of the finger to me. However, the few decades I was awake was, in fact, an endless torment."

Rody shook his head in anguish and smiled wryly. "You...how did you come back?"

Kara looked back at Rody. He did not answer Rody's question immediately. Instead, he asked something strange. "Do you know

how this life was made?"

Rody was unable to answer this question. Fortunately, Kara never meant for Rody to answer this question as he continued, "It is of the flesh and the spirit. When I say spirit, I also mean consciousness!"

"I know that with your current education, it would be difficult to understand this concept...Let me simplify it..." Kara slowly explained. "Thousands of years ago, I was really defeated. Perhaps it went according to what that despicable guy had planned but I did not really die. This was because I have surpassed the rank of God. With Divine Primordial Spirit, there is nothing in the world that can kill me! That despicable guy only destroyed my body and imprisoned my Divine Primordial Spirit. However, my consciousness or thoughts was not destroyed alongside my body! My remaining consciousness...Hmph. Probably because of resentment, I drifted and slept for a thousand years. That is until one day, an intense voice woke me up!"

"Woke up?" Rody was stunned.

"Yes." Kara's voice was filled with emotion. "The voice sounded weak, but it contained strong resentment and perseverance. It resonated with me who was also full of resentment. So...I woke up!" He then looked at Rody and lightly said, "That person whose voice woke me up was Prometheus, a young man that was seventeen years old!"

Kara seemed remorseful as he said, "Do you know what I ... about Prometheus' story? I believe that because we were enemies, you must have made inquiries. Mouse must have also told you this. Do you still remember what happened to the seventeen-year-old Prometheus?"

Rody thought about it and remembered the story of the 'God's Chosen One' told by Mouse.

'The seventeen years old Prometheus.'

That year, there was a drought in the Gordon Kingdom. There was not a single drop of rain for ten consecutive months. Prometheus that had just given up knighthood became a devout priest. According to the stories, during that year, the low-ranked Prometheus was laughed at by everyone as he kowtowed every ten steps from the Temple all the way to the Gordon Kingdom. He piously prayed to God the entire way.

Rody had slowly said what he knew.

"Yes," Kara replied mockingly. "At that time, Prometheus was a true human. He was a young fanatic who had faith in God. He gave up being a knight also because he was very kind. After seeing the brutal and bloody battlefield, he was determined to stay away from it. He wholeheartedly served the Gods in his heart. He hoped for their guidance so that he could bring light to the world. Hahaha... How ridiculous. He can only be considered a stupid and silly boy!"

Although Kara was laughing, his tone was filled with sincere respect.

"In other words, before the age of seventeen, Prometheus was not you?" Rody asked.

"No!" Kara's voice became cold again. "When he was seventeen, he was a devout fanatic of God. Fortunately, his fanaticism gave me the first valuable opportunity in a thousand years!"

"When he departed from the Temple and went to the Gordon Kingdom, kowtowing and praying to God all the way, he was ridiculed by others. To ridicule a person praying to God would provoke an intense rage. To Prometheus, who treated the prayers as sacred, their actions were blasphemy!" Kara slowly narrated. "However, when he saw what was behind him, his resolve was shaken."

"What did he see?" Rody frowned.

"Do you want to know?" Kara looked at Rody. "Close your eyes. I

will show it to you."

Rody did not hesitate to close his eyes. Kara then stretched out his hand and pressed Rody's eyes.

Rody's vision suddenly turned bright.

'Disaster victims everywhere!'

Rody saw an illusory image. Although it was just an image, Rody could see the starving people at the roadside and even hear their miserable cries. These people were haggard and miserable. They had looks of despair, seemingly with their arms torn apart.

Rody could not help but sigh as his heart sank.

Another image then appeared to him.

Outside of the places of prayers were lean, haggard people standing opposite to clean but nauseating clergymen. The starving people gave their last copper coins away to the representatives of worship. That was the atonement tax.

The sad and pitiful laymen still believed that the disaster was a punishment from heaven. It was because they had sinned. After giving away their last belongings, they asked for God to bless them and protect them from suffering.

The image changed again.

Inside a holy and radiant temple, there was a white tablecloth with silver candlesticks. There were also golden wine cups filled with bright red wine. On silver plates were foie gras with thick sauce and fat juicy steaks. A group of people wearing clothes of high priests were sitting at the table with unbridled smiles as they engaged in casual conversation.

The three scenes began to change quickly. It entangled together and then rotated quickly. It continued to change over and over again. It made Rody feel dizzy. However, there was a faint cry of anger.

The cry was not clear but Rody could understand the anger, disappointment, and distortion.

The cry seemed to shout, "Why!"

Rody could feel a powerful pressure twist in his heart. His breath quickened, and he suddenly opened his eyes as he stepped back. His chest heaved up and down and his forehead was pouring with sweat.

"You understand now?" Kara's voice was gentle. "It was at that moment the devout fanatic Prometheus had doubts about his faith and despaired. He completely abandoned his faith...That cry was the one that woke up my drifting soul.

"Prometheus was a fanatic. Otherwise, he would not have done that crazy action. It could be imagined that only someone with such strong spirit could gather that much resentment...and awaken the Devil Kara!

"So when I woke up, he carried the weight of my consciousness while I obtained his body." Kara smiled. "A young man in despair had questioned his faith and his soul was filled with doubt. When he unexpectedly woke up, we had a talk. The result of the conversation was that he would exchange souls with me. I would obtain his body!"

Rody gave a long sigh and looked at Kara. Rody seemed as though he could not say a single word.

"I came back." Kara faintly said, "My first wish was naturally to take revenge on those guys up there. However, looking at this world makes me sad and in despair. The world worships those despicable fellows and has been conquered by them! A steady stream of prayers flooded the world. With the strength of a young man that was seventeen years old, I am unable to do anything. Although I, the True God Kara, had revived, I was still just a young man that was seventeen years old. All I had was some elementary Light Series spells."

"So you decided to hide in the Temple...After that..." Rody spoke until 'that' then he sighed. He slowly added, "I understand."

He looked at Kara and said, "You used the identity of Prometheus to climb the ranks of the Temple. You wanted to obtain the position of the leader. However, your real intention was to overturn the Temple."

"Yes." Kara laughed. "I often thought to myself, 'What kind of wonderful expressions would those guys up there make when they see their teachings overturned?' I want to take my things back. All I need to do is to overturn the religious tool used by them to control the world."

"What then?" Rody could not help asking.

"Are you interested?" Kara laughed. "However, this is not the time to discuss this. We have more important things to do. In fact, I need your help!"

"Oh?"

Kara nodded and spoke in a serious tone. "Although I have returned, I have become an ordinary mortal. Although I have a God's soul, I cannot think of any method to be used in this weak body. The funny thing is that I, the True God Kara, is building up my foundation step by step. Prometheus' body is too weak." He could not help but look at Rody as he suddenly laughed, "If the body I took those years was your current body, I would not even need a year to master domain powers. However, with this body, I could not master domain powers until ten years ago."

He then laughed and said, "I, the True God Kara, needed to go back and train. What a joke.

"As I have told you earlier, I was here ten years ago. I removed that sorcery array outside to look for this thing." Kara glanced at Rody and said, "I have spoken so much. I believe you are also anxious to know what this thing is? Let me tell you. The Temple is

afraid of the thing in here. However, there is one other thing that only I know. That is, there is another thing in this place. You all do not know about it, but this thing can give those guys up there a headache!"

Kara paused for a while and then slowly laughed, "That thing is my Divine Primordial Spirit. Once I retrieve that, I would become a real God."

"Divine Primordial Spirit?" Rody could not understand.

"That Divine Primordial Spirit is the foundation of God's power! Hmph...Once you can break through God rank, you will have your own Divine Primordial Spirit!" Kara felt as though he was going out of topic and then continued, "When I was defeated, they deprived me of my Divine Primordial Spirit and imprisoned me here. They wanted to slowly wear it away after thousands of years. Ten years ago, I searched here...Unfortunately, those guys were very careful despite being despicable. They would not let it be taken away so easily."

Rody shook his head. He was silent for a moment as if he was still digesting Kara's words. He then asked, "What does this have to do with me? Is there some kind of difficulty here that you need me to get back your Divine Primordial Spirit?"

Kara smiled. "That is the last part of those words. It cannot see people! Although I am the True God Kara, right now, I am still human. I cannot deal with the guardian here and have no other way forward!"

"Guardian?" Rody laughed bitterly. "You are making me confused."

"You already saw the guardian...That is the Hakone Serpent."

Rody frowned. "That snake appear tough...But can't you kill it with your strength as someone with domain powers?"

"That big snake?" Kara suddenly laughed. "If it was just a snake, I

can deal with hundreds of them. However, let me tell you this. I tried to fight it ten years ago. Right now, my current strength is not enough to win."

"Alright. You want to persuade me to help you deal with that monster..." Rody shrugged his shoulders. "Then where is your Divine Primordial Spirit?"

Kara laughed. "Didn't you see it earlier?"

He suddenly stretched out his finger and pointed to the distance.

He pointed at the blood red area where the red light shined through with an evil atmosphere. It was shining down high in the clouds.

"That is the thing?" Rody exclaimed.

Chapter 279: Not Human

"It is that." Kara sighed. "Unfortunately, when I came in here ten years ago, I did not expect those despicable guys to place such a guardian here."

Rody had been looking blankly at the red sun high in the clouds. He breathed out and laughed bitterly, "Is the Hakone Serpent really so powerful?"

"I am sure you know about the Mystic Dragon..." Kara narrowed his eyes and looked at Rody. "You don't have to deny it. I can feel the Mystic Dragon's aura in your body...Hmph. There is nobody in this world that knows about the Mystic Dragon more than me! I have fought countless fierce battles against the Mystic Dragon. I am already familiar with his aura."

Rody laughed bitterly. "Looks like I can't hide anything from you."

"I do not want to ask why you have the Mystic Dragon's aura in you...Right now, I do not care about these." Kara smiled. "Don't you want to know how powerful the Hakone Serpent is? Let me tell you. The Mystic Dragon was created by the Gods to deal with me! However, it was not easy to create such a creature. This despicable act was done twice! The first one was a failure. The second one was a success!

"The Gods were not satisfied with the failure. That failure was the Hakone Serpent!"

"So it was a defective product..." Rody smiled coldly.

"It was." Kara nodded. "However, this defective product is not something we could deal with right now. This guy was created in the same image as the Mystic Dragon. It has at least half of the Mystic Dragon's power! I could barely deal with the Mystic Dragon. I believe you also know how powerful the Mystic Dragon

was."

Rody then glanced at Kara and said, "According to you, the Hakone Serpent is extremely powerful. The two of us cooperating may not even be able to defeat it. After all, the Hakone Serpent has half the power of the Mystic Dragon. Even the two of us with domain powers are not enough to win."

Kara laughed. "That is why the rest depends on you! I have secretly spied on you when you were in the capital."

"What?" Rody was surprised.

"I was the one who sent Arslan to contact you. However, I could not feel at ease with those Dragons. Besides that, you killed three Dragon Paladins. Because of such skills, others only consider it rumors. They claimed that it was the result of you, Mouse, and Augustine cooperating. But when I asked Augustine, he refused to say anything and would rather receive punishment. I then realized that something strange happened. Hmph. I naturally wanted to see the person who could kill three Dragon Paladins!"

Rody was startled. He then realized that Kara's strength might even be more powerful than his own.

He seemed to have a stealth technique.

Diane was particularly good at this. Others with similar skills were the Silvermoon Tribe. They were all the later generations of Kara's people. It would not be possible for the descendants to be better than the ancestors.

"What does the last part of the phrase have to do with me? Am I not a person?" Rody angrily asked.

Kara did not deny it and simply said, "In a sense, you cannot be regarded as a human."

"From the point of view of others, a human that has mastered domain powers is still a human. Although they are amongst the strongest humans, they cannot jump out of that limit. Of course,

the person I was a thousand years ago, as well as the guys up there now, are naturally not humans. It is only you...Hahaha. Rody, let me ask you. Have you mastered the Mystic Dragon Purge to the extent that it can be released in the Complete State?

His last words shocked Rody.

After a lot of deliberation, he found that Kara's words were reasonable.

After joining together with the Mystic Dragon, it was difficult to tell if he was still a human or a dragon.

"However, if it is only about races, what about the Magic Beasts and Mythical Beasts? Even vampires are not people! If you were to pull a horse in, they would not be people as well! Would the Hakone Serpent obediently take that thing out?" Rody could not help grumbling.

Kara looked over with a mocking gaze. "I didn't expect you to become annoyed...The meaning of 'cannot see people' is simply that only the three 'not people' could vanquish the guardian. The first would be the shameless bastard up there. Second would be the me one thousand years ago. The third one would be the Mystic Dragon!" He seemingly shook his head and continued, "This prohibition was set by that fellow in heaven. The moment he set it, it would be senseless for him to grab that thing. It would also be impossible for me because I have lost my powers. The Mystic Dragon had also been gotten rid of one thousand years ago. In other words, no matter how you look at it, there are no flaws. The vampires, Mythical Beasts, Magic Beasts and other creatures are simply low ranked creatures to the guys in heaven. They are not even considered people. They were not even considered during the time they made the prohibition."

Rody thought for a moment and then said, "After all that, you simply want me to help you go and fight that monster. But why should I promise to help you?"

He looked outside and said, "I came here simply because I was curious. I wanted to see what kind of treasure could threaten the Temple. Now there is a powerful guardian. Why should I take such a big risk?"

Kara sighed helplessly. He then gave a wry smile and said, "We are just cooperating. You want to obtain that thing that could threaten the Temple. I want to obtain my Divine Primordial Spirit. We both just take what we want. Besides that, I want to overturn the religion. Aren't you also opposing the Temple?"

Rody shook his head and loudly said, "These words are meaningless! Right now, I don't even know what is the thing that threatens the Temple. It does not matter much to me whether I obtain it or not. Hmph. To fight half a Mystic Dragon and grab the Divine Primordial Spirit. You are the Devil God. That is a powerful creature created by God. Go and fight it alone! I am just a normal person. Excuse me for not accompanying you."

After Rody finished talking, he walked past Kara and went towards the exit.

Kara desperately and loudly shouted, "Wait!"

Rody looked back and coldly glanced at Kara. "Is there something else?"

Kara seemed hesitant. He finally sighed and said, "How about we make an exchange? You help me get rid of this snake, I will tell you something useful!"

Rody narrowed his eyes and said, "What?"

Kara was becoming irritated. He was a Devil God from the ancient times. Although Rody was a person with a domain powers, he was only a normal human to a God. How could an average person talk to a God so arrogantly? If it was not because Rody was necessary to get rid of the Hakone Serpent, Kara would not be bothered to waste so much energy talking to him. He would simply

cast a spell and kill Rody. He only looked for Rody's help as he still needed to restore his own power.

Thinking of this, Kara suppressed the anger in his heart and said, "Hey kid! I do not know what weird method you used to get the Mystic Dragon into your body, but do you think you can properly acquire the Mystic Dragon with your human body and strength? Hmph. The Mystic Dragon is the world's most powerful creature! Even though you can temporarily make use of it and raise your strength quickly, what do you think the Mystic Dragon is? The more powerful you become, the more powerful the Mystic Dragon would become! One day, once your strength has passed a certain limit, the Mystic Dragon will awaken and consume your consciousness! You would no longer be yourself. That would be more terrifying than just killing you!"

Rody remained silent for a while as he thought of something.

A shadow had been lingering in his heart for the past few days. After being knocked down into the ocean by a Dragon Paladin and going into a coma, he had met the legendary Pontiff Moses in his mind.

He understood that he was in a dangerous situation. Moses had turned the Staff of Moses into a ring that would hold back the Mystic Dragon. Although the problem was solved, the Staff of Moses was only a legendary artifact. Even though it was powerful, it was only an 'even more powerful' artifact.

Could the Staff of Moses truly save him from his perilous situation?

Moses said something about being 'spellbound'. He also said something about can be seven or eight but not nine. This was clearly a warning. Rody could only afford to use the Dragon God Transformation seven or eight times. He would be finished by the ninth one.

The preposterous thing was that every time the dragon

transformed, it was not within his control.

Every time he encountered a special situation, his body would make a breakthrough. After that, there would be a Dragon God Transformation.

Only God knows when the next time he was going to have another Dragon God Transformation was. It could be next year. However, it could also be at the very next minute. If Rody did not know this, how could he have peace of mind in the future?

"You have a way?" Rody stared at Kara and directly asked.

Kara hesitantly frowned and replied, "With my identity, I will not lie to you. So, I will also tell you frankly that I have no solutions."

He then smiled wryly and said, "I also cannot understand what method you used to combine with the Mystic Dragon!" He saw Rody's eyes turned gloomy and disappointed. He then immediately said, "However, I have an idea that may help you solve this problem."

"Say it!" Rody stared at Kara and narrowed his eyes. "What kind of idea do you have?"

"Boy!" Kara coldly replied. "If you want to know, you must promise to help me! Otherwise, I would not have anything to do with your survival. Even if you become a Mystic Dragon, you would only be like an extra one of those shameless fellows in heaven. I am really not against this outcome."

Rody paid no attention to it and said, "If you do not tell me, how would I know whether you are lying to me or not?"

Kara turned pale but Rody could not see his expression under his mask. Rody could hear Kara angrily said, "Ignorant boy! What is your identity? What is my identity? Do you think I am those fellows in heaven? Fine! I will tell you. I believe you are still in control of your body because the Mystic Dragon is still weak. You

have already mastered domain powers. The Mystic Dragon would become more powerful in the future and you would not be able to hold him back forever. However, I have a way to make your personal strength stronger and finally..." He hatefully said, "Finally surpass domains!"

"Surpassing domains?" Rody was finally moved. It was as if a new path had opened up to him. He could not help but be fascinated and murmured, "There is a realm beyond domains?"

"You see that Divine Primordial Spirit?" Kara coldly pointed at the distant red sunlight. "I can teach you how to cultivate a Divine Primordial Spirit! Whether you could succeed or not in the future depends on your fortune. However, if you could cultivate it, you could surpass domains and reach the ranks of Gods! Hmph. You would be at the same level as me and those fellows up there!"

"Same...same level as Gods..." Rody's expression became complicated. His eyes looked blank yet looked preoccupied.

Kara calmed down and said, "What is your reply? I am not deceiving you. I am not like those bastards that deceive people! I will tell you this first. I can teach you but first of all, I cannot guarantee whether you would be able to practice it. Do you think it is so easy to become a God from a person? Second, even if you can do it, I do not know whether it could really protect your consciousness! However, I believe that who controls your body at the end is entirely dependent on whether you or the Mystic Dragon is more powerful. Once you reach the ranks of Gods, you will have enough power to wrestle with the Mystic Dragon!"

Rody pondered for a moment. He finally raised his head and gave a firm expression. He gritted his teeth and said, "Alright! I will promise to help you. But I have one more condition!"

Kara took a deep breath. "Speak!"

Rody looked at Kara and said, "If...if you obtain your Divine Primordial Spirit, you would become a Devil God again. At that

time, would you be a God or a Devil?"

"Hahaha..." Kara laughed wildly. "What is a God? What is a Devil? Those fellows up there and I are the same! Gods and Devils are simply what we call each other!"

"That is great!" Rody suddenly showed a weird smile. "Well. My other condition is...once you obtain your identity as a Devil God, I need a little bit of your blood."

"What?" Kara was surprised. "My blood?"

"Yes." Rody had a sad expression as he lightly said, "This is because I have sworn to revive a friend."

Chapter 280: Hakone Battle (1)

"Are you ready?" Kara asked Rody with a smile.

Rody nodded and returned a glance. "Alright. Are you going first or am I going first?"

Kara laughed bitterly and said, "I will go first. Otherwise, you would think that I am treating you as cannon fodder...I will pave the path and you follow behind me! Remember the plan we had discussed earlier."

Kara then gave a loud and resonant cry in that dreamland. His long and loud voice was filled with a challenging tone. He then moved in.

Kara's white and slender figure was like a meteor as he dashed towards the evil red sun radiating a red light within the clouds.

Rody drew out his Dragon Spell Scimitar while gritting his teeth and scurried out as well.

Both of them were covered in the flames of their fighting energies as they pressed onward. Suddenly, they heard an earthshaking roar. Red flames shot out of the clouds like a monstrous wave that immediately punched into the faces of the two men.

"Rush past it!" Kara shouted. The two charged past the flames while being covered in fighting energy. They then heard a whirling sound of the flames. The dazzling red flames around them made them unable to open their eyes

This flame was clearly not ordinary. Despite Rody's fighting energy protecting his body, he could feel his hair and his clothes burning. It was shocking. Suddenly, there was a break in front, and something had already charged towards them!

Kara then was met by the snake's first attack!

The triangular head of the large snake shot out of the clouds. Its mouth opened wide revealing its two long fangs. The bifurcated-tongued snake tried to bite Kara.

Kara suddenly accelerated to avoid being eaten. Rody could clearly hear the loud snapping sound of the snake biting into empty space. Rody immediately caught up after that. He clenched the Dragon Spell Scimitar and swung it down onto the monster!

This attack was the first time Rody had fully utilized his strength ever since he mastered domain powers. Black flames could faintly be seen on the Dragon Spell Scimitar. The weapon was as if it was a supernatural weapon from hell. The slash was like lightning.

Such a powerful attack amazed even Kara, who was at a distance. He shrank back and covered his face, hoping not to get caught in the crossfire.

Suddenly there was a roar.

Rody felt as though he had slashed something. However, it was a strange feeling.

'A wall!'

Rody immediately had that thought!

Rody had indeed felt as though he had slashed a wall. The blade was on top of the snake's head, but there seemed to be some distance away from it. It was as if something had obstructed it!

There seemed to be a crimson flame around the snake's head, like a barrier. It protected the snake from Rody's attack that was as powerful as a thunderbolt.

'Hell. This snake has fighting energy?'

There was a sizzling sound under Rody's blade, at the part where the large snake's fighting energy protected its body. Flames started to surge from that area because of the fierce collision. Some of the flames were red and some of the flames were black. Rody gasped

and immediately retreated. At that moment, he no longer dared to preserve his strength as he withdrew as fast as lightning. He immediately retreated to behind Kara and said, "It's very hard!"

Rody could feel his hands trembling a little as he held the scimitar. The violent trembling made him feel as though his weapon would drop out of his hands.

"Retreat!" Kara looked at the giant snake roaring angrily and seemed agitated. "It is coming out!"

The two of them separated to the left and right like shooting meteors.

The snake saw the two people separate into two sides and did not know which one to chase. It spewed out flames angrily, shook, and then it slowly left the clouds.

The Hakone Serpent finally revealed its body to the two.

Kara did not have any reaction to seeing the Hakone Serpent. On the other hand, Rody looked blankly at the monster and laughed bitterly. "One, two, three, four...As expected, it is like this."

This was the largest snake Rody had ever seen in his life...

Yes, it was the largest creature Rody had ever seen in his life!

The red light was reflected off the scales of the giant snake. Its body was like the walls of the capital. It also had eight heads.

Its eight identical heads of various sizes were up in the air. Some were roaring angrily, some were coldly staring at Rody and Kara, and some were rushing forward.

Rody had seen strange snakes like these before. In fact, Wuya, who was in the mountains South of the Radiant Empire, was a dozen headed snake.

However, Wuya paled in comparison to the Hakone Serpent. The Hakone Serpent was about a dozen times larger than Wuya. The large aura emitted by the huge monster was also far more powerful

than Wuya. That powerful aura even made Rody, a Domain Master, sweat. He was faintly shocked by the formidable enemy.

The snake slowly came out of the clouds covered in that red light!

"Stop being dazed! Attack quickly! Before it completely wakes up!" Kara shouted. He suddenly ascended a few tens of meters. He lifted his hands in front of his face and towards the snake. He then read an incantation causing a golden light to appear from his hands.

A massive circular halo gathered at his hands and agglutinated. When he chanted softly again, the ring of light shot towards the Hakone Serpent.

The ring of light expanded endlessly as it flew. When it hit the Hakone Serpent, it tied up the snake's body.

Kara seemed to be sweating. His hands were faint as he abruptly endured. The ring of light seemed to be controlled by him. It shrank rapidly and tied up the snake.

The snake became extremely irritable after being tied by the golden ring. Its eight heads roared which clearly showed that the golden ring made it feel very uncomfortable.

Kara's hands trembled after that as if he was exhausted. The snake started to twist and with every twist, Kara became even paler.

"Boy, get to work!"

Rody had already rushed out before Kara finished speaking. His golden flames burned brightly and he was like a golden comet flying towards the snake.

He waved the scimitar in his hands that burned with the black flames of a god's spell.

A pure black light about ten meters appeared and whizzed out of the scimitar.

Rody did not stop and continued to slash in a single breath. A dozen huge black lights shot towards the giant snake.

After slashing out more than a dozen waves, Rody seemed to have consumed too much energy. His golden fighting energy seemed to dim a little.

"Old guy, get back!" Rody hurriedly shouted. He himself also started to move back.

There was another roar.

In that beautiful place, the dozen black waves struck its target. In fact, it was impossible to miss as the target was too near and too gigantic. Rody would be able to strike it even with his eyes closed.

The Hakone Serpent once again spread out its crimson barrier. All the black waves struck it.

All the eight heads of the Hakone Serpent suddenly roared in unison. It rolled about and even caused the clouds to scatter. It was evident that the black waves were extremely painful to it.

The crimson barrier shattered like ice when struck by the black waves. The black waves also severely cut into the snake's body.

The black waves were filled with all of Rody's own energy along with condensed hellfire. As the hellfire had the ability to burn everything, even the Hakone Serpent could not endure it.

However, the black waves could not cause too much damage as it still needed to burn through the barrier, causing it to lose power.

The Hakone Serpent roared when a dozen slash marks appeared on its body. It was unfortunate that only two of those slashes caused severe harm to the snake, cutting off its scales and causing it to bleed. On the other hand, the other waves only left black slashing marks but did not manage to cut off the scales.

After the smoke had cleared, Rody looked at the results of the battle. He could not help but become stupefied and murmur. "This

guy is actually so strong."

"Now do you believe me?" Kara sighed beside him.

Rody laughed bitterly. "Yes, I believe you. But this guy is so powerful. How are the two of us going to fight it? I think we may not be able to get rid of him even if we add another guy with strong domain! It is simply arms-proof! Its fierce fighting ability is too high."

"Do not rush! Just like what I said, this guy has a weakness. We must test and find it!" Kara said and charged forward again. He opened up his hands and his white robes fluttered. His body instantly emitted light. After that, his opened hands also started to emit two balls of light. It then whistled as it flew towards the snake's head from two directions.

Rody gritted his teeth and shot forward, leaving behind an afterimage. He no longer used any fancy tricks with his sword since he knew how terrifying the snake was when it fought back. That hellfire attack he made earlier was powerful enough to kill ten Paladins. However, the monster only received two injuries. Rody was now unwilling to use up more of his strength in vain.

The snake saw Rody approaching and seemed to realize that the severe pain it received from the ten waves earlier was caused by him. It gave up on chasing Kara and moved towards Rody. It opened its mouth wide and forcefully spat.

Rody smelled a stinking smell that almost made him faint as the fierce wind blew into his face. He then saw a large mouth right in front of him. He could not help but curse and evade to the left. Even though they were weaker than the Hakone Serpent, they were fortunately smaller and more agile.

"Bleh! So smelly! This beast did not brush its teeth for thousands of years!" Rody cursed.

The snake bit into empty space. It then nimbly turned its head,

opened its mouth and spat, but these were not flames.

It was a blast of freezing cold air!

"Shit!" Rody cursed. "Wasn't the snake a fire type?" Unfortunately, it was too late. He lifted a palm and instantly created a shield of light with his fighting energy. He hid behind his shield.

There was a loud explosion as the magnificent freezing cold air pounded onto Rody's light shield. Rody's entire body shook. He could feel the strength of the impact, and it kept coming wave after wave. Rody gritted his teeth as he slowly retreated. He then heard sizzling sounds as a thick frozen layer gradually formed on his light shield. The ice from the light shield gradually spread and half-froze Rody's arm.

Chapter 281: Hakone Battle (2)

Kara could see that Rody was in a difficult position. A hammer made of light suddenly appeared in his hands. He lightly brandished the light-hammer and suddenly swung it at the snake's head.

There was a loud explosion as the hammer struck the snake's head. The head that had caused Rody to freeze up was shaken causing its mouth to snap shut.

Rody immediately retreated and used his fighting energy to melt the ice on his frozen arm.

"Boy, are you alright? I forgot to tell you that this guy is a universal type." Kara's voice came from above.

"Just take care of yourself!" Rody unhappily replied. Sure enough, the snake head that had been clobbered by the hammer roared angrily and loudly. It gave up on Rody and charged toward Kara. Suddenly faced with a few snake heads charging at him, Kara was caught off guard. If he had not had the speed advantage...

Rody did not dare to step forward recklessly and observed from the side.

'Hm, I have tried this, I have tried that. One, two, three, four... Also that!'

Rody looked at his target and once again flew towards it in an arc.

According to Kara, the Hakone Serpent might be powerful but it was still defective. There must be a weakness that was difficult to hide.

The Hakone Serpent had eight heads but one of the heads was its weakness. If that weakness could be found and cut off, its strength would be weakened by one-eighth.

Once this head was cut off, a weakness would appear at the remaining seven heads! As long as the weakness could be found again, its head could be cut off again and make it one-seventh weaker.

Another weakness would then appear on the remaining six heads.

This would keep repeating. As long as a person could get rid of its heads one by one, they would be able to slowly weaken it and have a good chance of winning when it only had one head left.

"Shit. It is not this head!" Rody cursed. He moved to a side like lightning, but his shoulder had already turned red with blood.

He had risked himself to test out a head, but he felt like he was trying to cut a rock. The Dragon Spell Scimitar in his hand was vibrating with a whining sound as Rody retreated. However, one of the snake heads saw an opportunity and shot out a blade of wind!

Rody could not take precautions in time so he was swept away. If he had not avoided a majority of the attacks, he would have been cut into pieces!

Even the Mystic Dragon's blood could not protect him from such a powerful enemy.

The situation was even worse for Kara. He had been shot at with a breath of fire and his snow-white robe had been charred black. It was unknown what material his robe was made off that it had not burned instead. With just a look, it could be seen that he was in an extremely difficult position. An even more surprising thing was that Kara's mask had also turned black after getting burned by the flame.

At that moment, the ancient Devil God wearing a blackened mask was like a buffoon being chased by several snake heads all over the sky.

Rody could not help but laugh. Kara then roared from the sky.

"Boy, quickly! Come and help!"

Rody was about to agree when he suddenly felt cold. Rody turned around and saw a huge snake head less than five meters away from himself.

"Hell! This guy knows how to attack sneakily?"

This was Rody's last thought.

The cunning snake took advantage of the moment its two enemies were busy with the other heads and had silently approached Rody. It had moved in such a way that even Rody, a Domain Master, had not noticed it.

Its bloody mouth then swallowed Rody!

In the sky, Kara clearly saw his comrade getting swallowed.

His eyes turned black and he almost fainted.

It was wrong to say he had any feelings for Rody. However, he had spent a lot of time winning Rody's cooperation and had great hopes and expectations that Rody would be able to help him defeat the snake. He did not expect Rody to be swallowed up in such a short time.

Kara became very angry and almost vomited blood. While he was distracted, one of the snake heads swept over and heavily knocked him away...

He was in severe pain as his body was thrown flying through the air, rolling over and over. When he came to a stop, one side of his body was bleeding, the flesh lacerated and numb.

"Is there really no other way?" Kara ignored the pain as he groaned.

Suddenly, the snake head that ate Rody started to whine. Kara then saw a scene that surprised him.

The huge snake's head suddenly expanded like a balloon. Its eyes also protruded out.

The snake's head then exploded in a spray of blood. The body under that head twisted and fell powerlessly.

As that head exploded into pieces, the other heads roared agonizingly at the same time.

From within the exploding bloody mass, something that looked badly mangled shot towards Kara.

Kara looked closer only to find that the thing flying towards him was Rody.

Rody's entire body was covered in blood. However, it was not clear if he was covered in his own blood or the snake's blood. He wiped away the blood on his face and gasped for breath. He then cursed. "So smelly! That snake definitely had not brushed its teeth for thousands of years."

Kara saw that Rody had a few injuries and was bleeding. Rody's face also looked pale after wiping the blood from his face. He was turning as white as paper.

"Old guy, stop looking. Aren't you a sorcerer? Quickly give me some treatment..." Rody smiled wryly.

The Hakone Serpent stopped writhing around in pain. Its remaining seven heads suddenly roared loudly as one. It then spotted Rody and Kara before charging over.

Kara had managed to stop Rody's bleeding with a high ranked Light series healing spell before the snake rushed over.

The two of them could not do anything and could only escape again.

Kara was alright as the snake seemed to target the assailant, Rody. Fire, ice, wind blades and light blades all shot towards Rody. Rody dodged up and down like a firefly beside the snake. Several times he could not dodge completely and had to rely on his fighting energy to protect him.

Seeing Rody being chased around, Kara steadily retreated to a side. He healed up his own wounds with a high-level healing spell and then shouted, "Boy, come over to me!"

Rody had just been rammed at by a snake head. The light shield in his hands disintegrated as he somersaulted out of there. He then turned around and went towards Kara.

Rody was exhausted and was having trouble sustaining himself. He then cursed, "Old man! What are you doing standing here?"

Kara pulled Rody's hand. A holy light flowed from Kara's hand to Rody's body. Rody felt relieved knowing that this was the Light series' healing spell. In the beginning, he had several wounds. Now, his muscles squirmed as his wounds closed.

"We are going out!" Kara said, "We need to change plans. It seems the original plan is not working."

Rody did not say anything and immediately nodded.

Both Domain Masters were injured. They had fought with all their strength but they only managed to cut off one head. The cost was that Rody had almost used up all the strength in his body and Kara was also injured. If they continued fighting, they would die.

Kara extended his fingers as though he was counting something quickly. The large snake has turned its body over. The seven heads then looked at where the two were standing and launched seven waves of attacks. Fire, ice, and wind crashed towards them, all of which were on the rank of domain powers.

The two did not dare to approach and quickly retreated to the back.

There was a thundering crack in the sky. The seven attacks tangled together and became a huge blast. The clouds in the illusive world scattered. The burning flames burned half the sky and the freezing air froze the other half of the sky.

"What are you thinking of? Didn't you say we should get out?"

Rody hurriedly asked.

Kara shook his head and replied, "There is still half an hour! We will hold out for a little bit. You will wait for my signal. When I say retreat, the two of us must retreat to the entrance. You must rush out in time no matter what is blocking you!"

"Are you thinking of..." Rody's eyes lit up.

Kara no longer replied. He repeatedly patted Rody and then turned around to once again charge at the large snake.

"God of the Wind, hear my call..." Kara started to chant, "As punishment for angering the Gods, grant me your tornadoes!"

As soon as Kara finished his incantation, four tremendous columns of tornadoes appeared around the Hakone Serpent at the same time.

The tornadoes swept everything including the flames that had not dispersed, including the large snake.

The snake's angry hisses turned into a violent wind that clashed into the four tornadoes. Suddenly, the snake roared loudly, beckoning the red evil sun to come down. The large snake then coiled itself around the sun forming spirals that kept the sun under its body.

The red light from the evil sun seemed to spread all over the snake's body. The Hakone Serpent's dimmed protective barrier then started to light up again.

Although the four tornadoes roared violently, it could not do anything to the large snake. At most, it could only hold back the snake's movements.

At that moment, three of the snake heads roared majestically in the air and attacked Kara, who was controlling the tornadoes. Kara quickly dodged right and left and was so angry that he roared.

Kara almost fainted from anger when he watched the monster

use his own Divine Primordial Spirit to deal with him.

Rody breathed in for a moment. He felt some of his strength had restored. He then stepped forward with his Dragon Spell Scimitar.

"Hey, monster! You can use fire but did you think that I cannot use ice?" Rody roared and slashed.

Inside Rody's Dragon Spell Scimitar was a special entity. It was the Dragon Paladin that got refined into the sword. The soul of an Ice Dragon.

At the moment he gathered his strength into his scimitar, his scimitar seemed to cry out like a dragon. Ice covered the skies.

Kara was looking at the side when he suddenly shouted, "Don't!"

Before Kara had finished his word, a strange scene had happened.

The ice gathered around the Hakone Serpent suddenly changed rapidly. The Divine Primordial Spirit under the Hakone Serpent suddenly emitted a brilliant ray of light. It was like a black hole that pulled in the ice from the surroundings. It gradually condensed and was steadily absorbed into the sun.

The Hakone Serpent roared. The snake head released a shockwave. Rody had put the sword in front of him to block it. His body was thrown back. Rody then cursed, "What happened?"

Kara could not deal with the Hakone Serpent and dodged a few times. He created an image of himself in front of the snake and then his real body escaped and landed beside Rody. He then said, "This fellow seemed to have learned how to use my Divine Primordial Spirit after thousands of years. My Divine Primordial Spirit has a name, it is called Magatama! Once it is used, it can absorb fire and ice series spells!

"Why didn't you so say earlier?" Rody angrily replied. "What do we do now?"

Kara glanced at Rody and said, "I think that the Hakone Serpent

only mastered this! How could it easily grasp how to use my Divine Primordial Spirit? However, even if your attacks are absorbed by the Magatama, it does not give any benefits to the Hakone Serpent. It is simply an additional defensive skill."

At that moment, Kara looked at the distant Hakone Serpent and said, "Time's up. It is time to leave!"

Using the fastest speed, the two of them quickly rushed towards the exit. The Hakone Serpent obviously did not want to let its enemies escape, so it chased after them with its extremely long body.

Although the exit was not far away from Rody and Kara, the Hakone Serpent was also not slow. Kara was the first to get out with Rody following behind. The moment Rody passed through the exit, he heard a loud crash.

The huge snake head had crashed into the top of the exit. The exit was too small and the snake head could not get through. The Hakone Serpent was extremely angry. It roared and moved back a little before ramming into the exit again.

Rody had just left the cave when he heard a loud roar behind him. He also heard the sound of the mountain cracking from impacts caused by the Hakone Serpent.

Nedis and Sith were still outside the cave as they had not left yet. They had been standing at a distance. When Nedis saw the two come out, she was pleasantly surprised and cried out to them as she ran over. However, she was shocked when she saw their appearance.

Rody and Kara were in a pathetic state. Both Domain Masters were left in rags and covered in blood. If it was only Rody then it would be one thing. However, even Kara's dignified snow-white robe had turned black and his mask was also charred black by flames. Even his hair looked burnt.

"You guys..." Nedis only had enough time to say these two words when she heard a long and uninterrupted hissing sound from the cave!

With the sound of a loud explosion, the four people suddenly felt the earth tremble. There was a rumbling sound coming from behind the sacred mountain. The Hakone Serpent rammed against the exit as if it was coming out.

The walls of the mountain collapsed. The Hakone Serpent's head then came out of the hole. Nedis was shocked when she saw it and cried out in alarm.

Rody pulled her behind him and said, "Go back further!"

Nedis then asked, "You guys...what did you guys do inside? Did you fight with the monster?"

Kara looked gloomy. He looked at the snake head struggling at the narrow entrance and slowly counted, "Five...four..."

There was another loud sound. Rody could see cracks forming at the entrance of the cave. The largest crack had already spread towards the peak of the mountain.

"Two...one! It is done!" Kara sighed and then pulled Rody back.

At that moment, the snake's head had left the exit. It stared fiercely at the four with its electric-like eyes as it struggled to come out.

However, its body was too big. Although its head managed to get out, its body could not get out unless it made the mountain collapse.

Rody suddenly felt the space at the entrance twist. A burst of wind started to blow. Rody was very familiar with that swift and fierce atmosphere.

That entrance made by the Gods had a powerful God-ranked sorcery array. After some time, it started to move...

Chapter 282: Hakone Battle (3)

Thousands of years ago, the Gods created a God-ranked strangling array. Rody had fully experienced how powerful that array was.

"Quickly stand behind me!" Kara said and then used a high ranked Patron Saint Boundary.

This was not out of kindness. But at that moment, he wanted Rody's help. At that moment, Rody was exhausted and in worse condition than Kara. Kara had no choice but to exert himself.

"You want to use this sorcery array to get rid of a snake head?" Rody softly asked. "Will it work? Just now nothing we tried work. Its head is surprisingly hard."

"Just wait and you will find out." Kara seemed very confident. "The power of a God-ranked strangling array is not as simple as you think."

"But..." Rody frowned. "Are you sure that the head that comes out is the weakest? What if it is the strongest head? Are you certain?"

"No!" Kara's reply almost made Rody angry. "I am gambling!"

Without waiting for Rody's reply, Kara added, "Do you have any other way besides this? If you really think having a domain power means you are invincible, feel free to go to the front and duel with the snake."

Rody spat and no longer said anything. He stood behind Kara and looked at the struggling Hakone Serpent.

The sacred mountain shook as boulders of various sizes started to roll down the mountain. The Hakone Serpent's head did not seem to be aware of the impending crisis. It roared at Rody and the others as if it wanted to blow out flames from its mouth.

Then the sorcery array started to move.

The snake head stuck at the entrance also seemed to finally become aware of its situation. It raised its head and roared desperately.

However, midway in its roars, the sound was cut off.

Rody could clearly see the originally broken sorcery array started to create cyclones again. At the beginning, the disc slowly turned but then, its speed suddenly accelerated. Over a dozen cyclones spun in different directions like a dozen sharp blades.

Before the roars ended, there was a burst of blood.

The lower part of the snake's head started to be 'spun' around.

Flesh and blood splashed everywhere. The snake head could no longer make any sound. It struggled powerlessly as it tried to rush out, but then, feeling that it was impossible, it tried to retreat.

However, the entrance was too narrow, causing the snake to be stuck there and unable to move.

And so, flesh and blood continued to fly as the snake head was spun around quickly. As the blood flowed out, the snake spat out its last fiery breath before it crashed to the ground.

Rody with domain powers and his Dragon Spell Scimitar could not injure the Hakone Serpent. However, the sorcery array had easily injured it.

"Is it done? Is it that simple?" Nedis asked in alarm.

"No!" Rody became vigilant. Although he saw the Hakone Serpent's head cut off, he could feel that the snake's aura had not weakened.

Rody could feel the snake weaken when he accidentally got rid of that other head. That earlier situation was completely different.

While the head was indeed cut off, the sorcery array seemed to have slowed down. It was obvious that cutting off the Hakone Serpent's head was more than what the array could handle.

There was a spurting sound. Rody could clearly see the friction between the snake and the cyclone caused sparks to fly. The sorcery array's power then started to tremble.

"Looks like we have lost the gamble!" Kara sighed. He then laughed bitterly and said, "This head is not its weakness."

"What happens now that we have lost the gamble?"

"Look..."

The body that lost its head contracted and left its head on the floor. Then an even more powerful roar came from the cave.

The snake head left in the sorcery array was grounded into powder.

At that moment, something shocking happened.

The four people felt a strong vibration under their feet which made them stand unsteadily.

After that, there was a loud explosion as the sacred mountain burst open.

The huge mountain wall had collapsed and revealed its hollow belly.

Kara then said, "The mountain has collapsed and the illusion is broken. Rody, the rest is up to you."

"What?"

There was a loud cry as the Hakone Serpent broke through the mountain wall and came out.

One, two, three... seven!

Rody then cried out in alarm. "Why does it still have seven heads?"

Kara smiled bitterly and replied, "It only has a weakness. If the one destroyed was not its weakness, the cut-off head would naturally be able to grow again."

The sacred mountain already showed a huge crack and half of the Hakone Serpent's body was exposed. It seemed like it was still struggling.

The sorcery array at the entrance to the cave had suddenly vanished and no longer existed when the mountain wall collapsed.

"The entrance is gone. The sorcery array would naturally disappear as well!" Kara said, "Now is the time! Rody, attack it before it comes out! Use that trick!"

"Are you talking about..."

"Yes! That one!" Kara agitatedly said, "It is that 'not people' trick!"

Kara then grabbed Sith and Nedis who were behind him and then jumped behind Rody.

Rody took a deep breath. He then took out the sword from his waist and held it with two hands.

A faint black flame slowly spread from his hands.

The golden fighting energy from his body spread out gorgeously like fireworks. For some time, it looked as though the sun had fallen to the earth. Rody was burning proudly but then something changed.

The golden flames around Rody suddenly became violent. The two-meter-high flames suddenly soared upward. It was like an extremely massive fireball in the night sky.

Immediately, the clouds started rolling in the sky. After that, the huge golden fireball suddenly changed.

At some point, the golden flame started to have traces of black. The black color gradually spread and turned the entire golden flame into black flames. The blackness was like a black hole in the starry skies as if it was hell's abyss.

Finally, Rody's golden flames had turned completely black. He

was wrapped in a gloomy vague black flame. However, it had a very powerful threatening aura.

Rody closed his eyes and entered a strange state. His face showed an agonizing expression and his arms trembled.

The air around him turned violent. However, it seemed to follow some kind of rule and only surged close to Rody.

The struggling Hakone Serpent at the mountains seemingly felt its powerful enemy change. The snake had turned silent for a moment before all seven heads roared at the same time.

The roar was filled with anger and a bit of fear.

Rody slowly put his hands together forming a circle. His fingers had crossed each other as it pointed towards the snake. Black air mass slowly came out from his fingers. The black air expanded numerous times.

The air started to howl like a beast. Kara's face seemed to remain the same but his eyes gave a weird expression. Nedis and Sith had turned pale and started to tremble.

It was a living being's instinctual fear when a lower life form recognized a higher life form.

Rody finally opened his eyes. His originally brown eyes had turned into evil black. After that, he opened his mouth and said a few strange words.

"@\$!\$#@"

The way the words were spoken was similar to a sorcerer's incantation. Nedis had started to chatter as she said, "Rody... what...what did he say?"

Sith's expression warped a little as though he was cut by a sword. He could not control himself and replied, "He...he is speaking in the dragon language! It is the dragon language! It is those words!"

"What is it?" Nedis could barely stand anymore.

"It is the dragon language." Kara sighed. He pulled Nedis and Sith behind himself and showed a nostalgic expression as if he was remembering what happened thousands of years ago. He then said, "He said, Mystic Dragon Purge."

The black flames at Rody's fingertips grew more and more powerful. Finally, there was a sudden loud noise. A black fiery dragon flew out from his hands. The black dragon opened its mouth and roared violently as it charged towards the Hakone Serpent with the black flames around its body.

As the black dragon roared and flew, it had carried the black flames that seemed to come from hell. It even caused the air to burn.

The seven heads of the Hakone Serpent opened their mouths at the same time and issued its roar at the black dragon.

"Close your eyes!" Kara shouted at Nedis and Sith. Nedis then felt a hand cover her eyes and could not see anything at all.

Red lights...black lights...

Although she could not see anything, the sounds she heard made Nedis' heart shake. The vibration caused by the dragon's roar and the snake's roar almost ripped the sky. They roared endlessly as if the sky was raining thunder.

Nedis was extremely frightened.

Rody's eyes were also closed and did not look in front. However, he could feel the Mystic Dragon controlling his fingertips. It roared as it fought against the Hakone Serpent.

"I will become stronger! Stronger! Stronger!" An unfamiliar voice shouted loudly in his heart.

Rody did not notice that the ring on his index finger, made from the Staff of Moses, was emitting a dazzling white light. But at that moment, he was covered in black flames. The white light looked kind of dim and was hardly noticeable.

After that, there was a clear and melodious crack. The ring had a subtle crack.

The wind whistled in the ears, lightning flashed. It was as if the rules in that entire space were in disarray.

The last ray of light flashed and space started to calm down.

Rody opened his eyes and suddenly felt weak. He could no longer stand and heavily sat on the ground. His vision turned black as though he had fainted.

Nedis and Sith could finally open their eyes. With one look, the sky and the earth had changed.

The sky seemed extremely bright. The biggest change was that all the clouds had scattered. At that moment, all the stars in the sky shined down unhindered by the clouds.

However, under the charming stars was a view that could not be considered charming.

The entire sacred mountain had collapsed. The surrounding trees had disappeared. After the Mystic Dragon's hellfire finished burning, everything had disappeared.

On the black earth, visible to everyone...the Hakone Serpent was right in front there!

The collapsed mountain buried half of the large snake's body. At that moment, the aggressive monster was extremely weak.

The Hakone Serpent was badly mangled. Its broken body was covered with scars. Its flesh and scales were flipped over, exposing what was under it.

What was even worse was its head. It only had six heads left. One head was completely eliminated. The remaining six heads was also broken. One head only had half of the head remaining. There was even another terrifying head with a missing eye hanging down limply.

"Ah!" The terrifying scene caused Nedis to cry out in alarm as she turned pale.

Kara felt relieved but he could barely stand. Earlier, he had used all his strength to create a Patron Saint Boundary. He never had any real intentions to protect Nedis and Sith. It was just that the overwhelming power of that collision would cause Kara's human body to vanish had he not made a Patron Saint Boundary.

Even then, he felt weak. He staggered and almost fell.

"It is still alive!" Sith cried out in alarm.

The Hakone Serpent might have been beaten until it barely still had a body. However, its wounds were rapidly healing. Blood stopped flowing out and its condition improved.

Kara supported himself on Nedis' shoulders and then said, "It is useless! We have already cut off two of its heads. Even if it heals, it has lost a lot of strength. Unfortunately, we don't seem to have any way of killing it."

Rody sat on the ground and breathed heavily. However, even though he breathed in more air, he could not feel his strength recovering. Instead, he felt sleepy. He then bit his lips and hissed, "Old guy, what do we do now? Can you still fight?"

"Sure, I can!" Kara laughed bitterly. "Wouldn't that be strange? Do you want me to grab a rock and pound its head?"

Nedis let go of Kara and pulled Rody over. Rody was sweating as he said, "Let us go quickly. Looks like it is impossible to continue today. Even if we want to get rid of this guy, we need to recover first before coming again."

Sith looked at the two guys with domain powers and said, "Let me try!"

Kara laughed bitterly. He looked at Rody and then back at Sith. He then shook his head and said, "It will be of no use! You have not reached the level of domains. With your strength, you would not

be able to injure it even if you attacked it."

Sith did not believe it. He stood in front and created a gentle light with his staff. After that, several balls of light shot ahead.

The several heads of the Hakone Serpent saw the attack coming and actually gave a mocking look.

Sure enough, the balls of light were reflected by a layer of red light at the snake's body before the attack reached the snake.

The reflected attack flew back towards Sith and almost hit him.

Fortunately, Sith had simply tested it and did not launch a powerful attack.

Rody suddenly said, "Old guy, right now, I don't even have a little bit of strength in my body... Do you have a way to let me immediately restore some of my strength? I do not need much. Just a little will do!"

"What do you mean?" Kara sighed and threw himself onto the floor.

Rody powerlessly laughed. "I have one more trick I have not used! But right now, I cannot even lift a finger. Don't you have any way of doing it?"

Kara laughed bitterly. "I can't do anything. I can heal bodily injuries with sorcery, but I can't help you recover your strength."

At this moment, a rumbling sound came from the mountain. The Hakone Serpent shook its body and raised one of its head. It faced the few people below itself and roared.

Rody turned pale. "It recovered so quickly?"

Kara had also turned pale and loudly shouted, "Run! Run quickly!"

Chapter 283: Hakone Fury

The sacred mountain erupted once every hundred years. As the last eruption was fifty years ago, the dwarves were not very alert about a possible eruption of the mountain. However, that night, they had the biggest shock of their lives.

Countless people awoke from their sleep in the middle of the night. They felt the ground shake a little. Those who had just woken up thought they had the wrong impression. But an even greater earthquake appeared.

At first, the citizens of the capital did not care much. After all, the capital was close to the sacred mountain and weak earthquakes often occurred. That was why those who woke up from their sleep did not care about it. At most, they turned their bodies over and went back to sleep. However, the stronger earthquake had really made them quite frightened.

At first, their furniture violently shook and scattered everywhere. After that, the walls started to crack from the earthquake. The people screamed in panic and ran out of their houses to the streets. After that, they saw an even more surprising scene.

The sacred mountain at the distance suddenly erupted.

The erupted flames shot out several hundred or thousand meters. The flames from the summit had shot to the sky. Small fireballs shot out everywhere. People were looking at the horrifying scene and their feet turned soft.

The mountain had suddenly erupted.

Fireballs had shot far away from the summit. The furthest one had even fallen onto the capital city. There was confusion in the streets. People cursed as they ran in every direction, crowding the streets. Even defenders and soldiers of the city were hurriedly

dispatched.

At the lake at the foot of that sacred mountain, Sith and Nedis were carrying Rody with Kara following behind them. They were all escaping.

There was a scene at the not-so-distant summit of the sacred mountain that made Rody and the others shocked. They didn't expect the sacred mountain to erupt earlier after collapsing. The flames shot out of the top of the mountain like a Mythological Beast. It was like a large wave in the sky sprinkling in all directions.

A sea of flames slowly flowed down from the mountain. Wherever one went, there was a sea of flames.

Fortunately, Sith knew how to fly with his sorcery. He pulled Rody and Nedis as he flew towards the capital. Kara seemed to be on the verge of collapsing but still managed to keep up.

They were not afraid of the mountain erupting, but the extremely powerful Hakone Serpent was right behind them.

The Hakone Serpent had already freed itself from the mountain rubble as it roared loudly and angrily. Although it only had six heads remaining, it had completely recovered from the wounds it received from the Mystic Dragon Purge. Rody had used all of his strength and only managed to get rid of a head. Although the Hakone Serpent only had six heads left, Rody and Kara had already exhausted all their energy. Even if they were people with strong domain power, they had no choice but to escape.

As they flew over the lake, the lake water started to boil. The surface of the water churned and started to bubble. The ninjas guarding the lake felt the sudden temperature rise and all ran away from the lake. Rody and the others progressed without anybody blocking them.

"Run! The farther the better!" Kara shouted from behind.

In fact, Kara was following from behind to watch the Hakone Serpent's actions. The six heads seemed to be wreaking havoc wildly. Fire, ice, and wind were all thrown out everywhere at the same time. Some shot towards the distance while some hit the sacred mountain.

The large mountain started to tremble even stronger as if it was a wild beast being awoken.

The Hakone Serpent seemed to be confused for a while before regaining consciousness. It then remembered its enemy, Rody. Its large body also flew in the air and over the lake.

At that moment, Rody and the others were already flying above the palace. Countless people from the palace were running around screaming.

An explosive sound then came from behind them. A huge fireball flew past them and struck a distant location, causing a huge fire and thick smoke.

Kara laughed bitterly and said, "The Hakone Serpent has gone mad. We better hide our auras otherwise it would catch up to us sooner or later."

The terrified people of the palace saw a large black figure flying over. They then saw that the figure coming over was a snake with many heads. As the dwarves worship the totem of the Hakone Serpent, they immediately prostrated themselves on the ground and cried out words of worship.

At that point in time, the Hakone Serpent had become enraged from Rody's Mystic Dragon Purge. It flew all over the place but could not see its hateful enemy. In its enraged state, its six heads opened their mouths and shot everywhere with its attacks of different attributes.

The people of the palace knelt on the floor in succession. A middle-aged man wearing a golden robe ran out from a building

with golden walls. He saw the panic-stricken people and pulled one of them to the side as he loudly scolded. "[Idiot!](#) You guys..."

Before he could continue, there seemed to be a fierce wind coming from the sky with a whistling sound. A huge fireball then came from the sky and hit the center of the palace.

There was a loud explosion and the palace was instantly swallowed by a sea of flames. Black smoke rose up to the sky. The entire palace had turned into a giant crater and the palace itself had disappeared.

The people outside the palace who were on the ground worshipping suddenly looked up and saw that the palace had turned into a sea of flames. The intelligent ones understood the bad situation they were in and ran away screaming.

'The Hakone God wants to destroy us all?'

These were the dwarves' thoughts.

The smoking crater should originally be a brilliant golden palace. This scene made the dwarves clear-headed. They now understood that it was not the time to pray but the time to run.

In mid-air, the Hakone Serpent could not find its enemies. It roared angrily and attacked those that were visible under it.

Screams and fires were everywhere. The entire capital was in chaos. Everyone was frightened as they wondered if it was the end of the world.

At this moment, Rody and the others were sitting above the clouds a few kilometers away. A few of them were surprised as they looked at the fire below them.

Nedis gulped and said, "Didn't you already get rid of two of its heads? Why is it still so powerful?"

Kara sighed and replied, "This is nothing. Even if it has one head remaining, it could reach the power of a strong domain. Right

now, it still has six heads. Even if Rody and I are not injured, we cannot fight it directly."

Sith laughed bitterly and asked, "Don't we have any other way? Is hiding here the only thing we can do?"

Kara then said, "The only way to kill the Hakone Serpent is to find its weakness and get rid of its head one by one. When it only has one head remaining, we no longer need to fear it."

Rody opened his mouth to speak, but he was very exhausted that even his voice sounded weak. Rody spoke as though he was out of breath, "Old guy, you are the one who started the fight with this snake. Now that the situation has turned out this way, are you going to say that you have no other methods of solving this and ignore it?"

Kara laughed bitterly. "I also never expected it to be this powerful. Those days when I first met it, I could have quickly and effortlessly killed it."

Rody could not help but curse. "Nonsense! What kind of strength did you have last time? What kind of strength do you have now? If we had your kind of strength during that time, would we be in such a situation?"

Kara was silent as he thought to himself for a long time. He then said, "Now, the only way is for both of us to hide here and restore our strength. We can only go and fight it when we have recovered. We will do it according to how we fought it earlier, by finding its weakness and getting rid of its heads. That is the only method left."

Rody took a deep breath. He looked down and could not help but ask, "What about the dwarves down there?"

They looked back at the numerous towering flames. The capital had also been hit by fireballs. There were countless cries and explosions.

Kara faintly said, "We ignore them. Right now, we cannot stop

that monster even if we go down there. We would just be courting death."

The others were silent for a while. They looked at the suffering dwarves below them in pity. Nedis showed a sad expression as she said, "Sigh. It is a pity. I wonder how Yukinari is right now. From the start, he was quite an obedient fellow."

Rody coldly said, "I think you are just reluctant to let go of the exclusive trade of ironwood he promised you."

Nedis laughed and did not refute his words. She then pondered for a moment and suddenly said, "Although we are alright hiding here, it is simply because the snake has not reacted to us. Once it has finished venting, it would inevitably find us. What I mean is, we might as well strike first before it strikes at us." She paused for a while and then said, "I know we cannot defeat it right now. However, I have a plan to hinder it and stall for time. Once we have time, Rody can recover some of his strength and then use his trick to get rid of another head."

She then looked at Kara.

Kara laughed bitterly and said, "Little girl, you don't have to look at me. If you have a plan, just say it."

Nedis rolled her eyes and loudly said, "I am just afraid you would say I am giving you trouble. Right now, we have four people but Rody has temporarily lost his fighting capabilities. That means you are the strongest one here. We can only count on you to hold the monster back. That is why, I am not intentionally doing this to trouble you!"

Kara sighed. "Alright, just say it. I will not argue with a little girl like you."

Nedis laughed and whispered something in Kara's ears. Kara's eyes grew wide as he looked at Nedis. He then frowned and said, "That is the plan?"

"Of course!" Nedis boldly replied, "Unless you can think of something better."

Kara shook his head and sighed. He then said, "Whatever. [Right now, we have to make every effort possible.](#) Might as well fight!" He waved his hand, opened up his arms and went towards the Hakone Serpent.

Kara threw two fireballs at the Hakone Serpent at the same time. The large snake was not prepared and the two fireballs struck it. The Hakone Serpent roared and looked up to see its enemy above it. A few of its heads stood up and breathed flames at Kara.

Kara's body suddenly emitted a white light that protected his body and he shot through the sea of flames. He arrived near one of the snake heads. He then raised his hand at the snake's head and shot out a blade of wind at its eyes.

The large snake did not dodge as an attack of that degree would not be able to hurt it. It merely closed its eyes and the attacks were blocked by the thick scales.

Kara saw another snake head that had been waiting for the chance to attack him. Its large mouth was going to bite Kara but Kara's body moved in an arc and managed to avoid that snake head...

Nedis was excited as she looked at Kara and the Hakone Serpent fight. She could not help shouting, "Keep going! Careful...ah, move left! Fast! Move right...above you! You fool, move left! Ah, it is coming back! Yes, that is the way! Keep going...left...right...Not like that you idiot! Left, left, left! I said left!"

Kara had fought skillfully below. He had reached his top speed as he flew around the six heads dexterously. From time to time, he would throw a fireball or a blade of wind at the Hakone Serpent. Although the attacks were unable to hurt it, it made the monster roar in anger.

The Hakone Serpent was made extremely angry by the enemy in front of him and then it suddenly roared in anger and spat out a huge crimson flame. Kara, who was facing the fire, quickly flew down. The Hakone Serpent seemed to have learned to anticipate Kara's movements and was already waiting. Two more of the snake heads then spat out some strange flames...

Kara truly deserved to be known as the Devil God. He seemed to understand the Hakone Serpent's strength and managed to dodge.

However, the dwarves ended up suffering.

The strange flames the Hakone Serpent had used were different. There were no explosions.

Instead, those that touched the fire had all turned into stone regardless of whether it was man, horse, tree, or house.

Everything that the fire touched was instantly petrified.

Nedis and the others who saw it could not help but took a collective breathe in relief. Even Kara was shocked as he cursed. "Little girl! That will not just trouble me! It will kill me!"

Nedis ignored his insults and shouted, "Left! Left!"

At this moment, Kara was in between two snake heads at his left and right. The one on the left spat out flames, while the one on the right spat out ice at Kara who was in the middle.

These two attacks were at the level of a strong domain. Kara naturally did not dare to take the attacks and shrank his body in fear as he teleported. His body flashed and disappeared and then reappeared several tens of meters away.

The fire and the ice struck each other. The two snake heads roared loudly. One was immediately burned by the flames and the other was frozen.

Kara was covered in cold sweat. He had followed Nedis' plan and flew everywhere to lure the Hakone Serpent. He was almost hit

several times. If it was not because of his speed advantage, that would have been the end of the Devil God.

He raised his head to take a look. He then moved like lighting and flew up.

Nedis clapped excitedly as she laughed. "Great! I am a genius!"

The snake heads had finally noticed the enemies above him. The heads roared angrily and it wanted to approach. However, when it moved a little, it suddenly paused.

The six snake heads had been entangled with each other...forming a knot. The more it moved, the tighter the knot became.

Nedis looked at Kara who flew to her side. At that moment, Kara had cold sweat. His chest heaved up and down heavily and fear could be seen in his eyes.

Nedis then laughed as she looked at the entangled heads of the Hakone Serpent. She then said, "What a beautiful bowknot!"

八嘎was the word the golden guy said in the raw. It is pronounced Ba(eight) Ga(eccentric/cackling sound). As he was scolding and the dwarves are Japanese, I am guessing he is saying idiot (baka).

死马当作活马医 (Sǐ mǎ dàng zuò huó mǎ yī) Treat (medically) a dead horse as though its still alive. A Chinese idiom that says: to do everything possible and to not give up.

Chapter 284: Rody's Life Saving Trick (1)

The battle had reached a stalemate.

The remaining six heads of the Hakone Serpent were tangled together in a knot. Even though it roared desperately, it was still just a beast. It was not smart like humans and it did not know how to untie its body.

"Now what?" Rody shouted as he pointed at the Hakone Serpent and laughed bitterly. "It would not remain like this forever. If it was so easily dealt with, it is not worthy of being God-ranked."

Kara sighed and suddenly said, "It is unfortunate. Although I usurped the Temple's leadership position, I do not have any artifacts! Right now, both of us are injured. However, if we have an artifact with us, this would be much easier to handle."

Rody's heart moved. He could not help but think of the Staff of Moses that had been transformed into a ring. However, he then thought about his subtle relationship with Kara. Although they were currently comrades, it was difficult to say that it would remain the same in the future. The Staff of Moses was a big secret that might be better off not revealed.

Thinking that way, Rody stared at Kara coldly and laughed. "You simply want to take back the God Slaying Bow. You just need to say it!" Rody then stretched out his palm. A silver bow and arrows appeared on his palm. The bow and arrows shined with a holy and pure radiance. It was the God Slaying Bow that Rody took from the Temple at the Thunderous City.

Kara's eyes revealed a smile. The moment he stretched out his hand, Rody pulled back. Kara was displeased and asked, "Boy, what is the meaning of this?"

Rody coldly laughed. "This bow is now mine. Are you thinking of just taking it away like that? On top of that, you are a spellcaster.

Do you even know how to use this? Even if you could, would your archery be better than mine? You might as well tell me how to utilize it. I will do it myself."

Kara was a little bit angry as he replied, "Hmph. What is my identity? Why would I bother with this kind of toy? This lousy bow is called the God Slaying Bow? Hmph. It has a big reputation but in the end, it is just a high-ranked artifact. Do you think an artifact can kill a God? If you really used this against the Gods, they would casually block it with their hands and send it right back to you. Only you would think of this as a treasure! This so-called God Slaying Bow may be powerful, but it could only kill one or two people with domain powers at most. It is funny how you humans are not sensible and consider those with powerful domains as Gods! It is simply exaggerated as a God Slaying Bow!"

Rody's eyes shined as he listened to Kara's words. He then said, "Oh, Are you saying that the God Slaying Bow cannot harm Gods? Then what does one need to use to hurt the Gods?"

"Hmph...perhaps the Dracula Spear might have some effect. Or maybe..." At this point, Kara suddenly kept quiet as he realized something. He coldly looked at Rody and said, "Boy, why are you asking so much? I will definitely not tell you about this right now."

Rody also did not get angry and laughed. "Alright. According to you, this God Slaying Bow is not worthy of its name. However, can it deal with the Hakone Serpent?"

Kara laughed and said, "If we used it at the beginning, it would have been ineffective. But now, the Hakone Serpent has lost two of its heads. It has already lost a lot of its strength. Its original strength was about less than half of the God ranked. Now with two heads less, it would be easier to handle. As long as we find its weakness, we could get rid of the head with an arrow."

They looked at the Hakone Serpent roaring endlessly. Although its body was tangled up and could not move, it was still a dreadful

opponent. As a result, Rody and Kara did not really dare to seriously argue. After discussing a little, they decided that Kara would go and distract the large snake and pretend to attack it. Rody would then attack sneakily from above with the God Slaying Bow and see if it could get rid of a head.

This arrangement was unfair to Kara. Kara had to personally distract the Hakone Serpent. The risk he received would be much higher than Rody who would remain hidden.

However, this decision could not be helped. Rody laughed bitterly and said, "Do I look like I have the strength to fly around and fight it?"

It was true that at the moment, Rody could barely stand. While escaping earlier, he had only managed to recover a bit of his strength. It was just enough to hide and attack sneakily but was still impossible for him to fight directly with the Hakone Serpent.

Kara also restrained himself and did not say anything. He simply complied hesitantly.

However, Nedis saw Kara hesitate and thought he was going to object. She immediately said, "Have you no sense of shame? Rody was the one who got rid of those two heads. Don't you feel embarrassed?"

This made Kara furious.

He was the Devil God. He was someone who stood on equal ground with the other Gods. At that moment, Kara shouted, "Shut up! Watch how I deal with this snake!"

Kara's body soared a little. His exhausted expression was replaced with anger. His entire body was covered in light. His apparition shined in midair as he roared, "Hakone Serpent! You were defeated by me one thousand years ago! Watch how I deal with you!"

A large light-hammer appeared in his hands. Large light-nails also appeared on both sides of the hammer.

In the sky, Kara's apparition was about the same size as the Hakone Serpent. Although it was just an image, the glittering gold light was still astonishing.

Truthfully speaking, Kara's actions were extremely perilous. With his strength, he could only hold out for a little while as he fought with the Hakone Serpent. That was why fighting recklessly against it in an open space was simply courting death.

However, the Devil God's self-esteem that was hidden in his heart was provoked. As a result, he became reckless.

Suddenly, there was an earth-shatteringly loud sound. The large light-hammer and light-nail in the hands of Kara's apparition were swung down like lighting.

That lightning knocked the Hakone Serpent's body to the ground.

There was a huge explosion. The blast from the explosion flew everywhere. Its heads seemed to shorten and did not look like it was in good condition. Its body also sunk a little into the ground. But then, the monster became agitated and opened its mouth. It roared and wanted to rush up to its huge target in the sky.

However, it was thanks to Nedis' idea that made the Hakone Serpent look like a bowknot. One of its heads rushed forward only to be stopped by the knot behind it.

If it really rushed up, the current strength of the Devil God Kara would not be enough to stop it.

Kara's heart burned in anger. Bolts of lightning struck the Hakone Serpent together with the hammer. The electricity burst out in all directions. The Hakone Serpent then managed to suppress the bolts of lightning. Although it started to breathe out flames and ice, Kara was agitated and continued to send out lightning making the Hakone Serpent unable to get back up.

Because Kara was angry, he used his, the Devil God Kara's,

unique skill.

In the legends, the lightning of the heaven was Kara's servant and the flames of hell were Kara's slave. It really made Rody and the others expand their horizon.

Although sorcerers could summon lightning, they would need a long incantation before they could summon another one. However, Kara was different. He was like the God of Lightning. His hammer and nail were like a legendary Lightning God's magic weapon. Not only did the bolts of lightning dropped by Kara weaken, instead, it became more violent.

Sith's eyes turned dull. As one of the top sorcerers of the Roland Continent, he was naturally familiar with the spells that drop lightning. Even the strongest spell, 'Lightning God's Arrival', was not as powerful as Kara's attack.

Not only were there a dozen bolts of lightning. If Sith was the one that did it, he would have run out of magic power.

At that moment, Kara was really like an ancient Devil God. Lightning struck one by one as it collided with the flame and ice breaths of the Hakone Serpent. It made the entire sky quiver.

As both sides collided, a large ball of light appeared in the middle. Lightning, fire, and ice could faintly be seen inside that ball of light.

The situation was at a stalemate.

If the Hakone Serpent could have moved, it would have moved forward and destroyed Kara's apparition. As it could not move, it could only use attacks like its fire breath to fight against Kara.

At that moment, the ball of light in the sky grew larger and larger, looking like it was going to burst. Both sides fought relentlessly and were unwilling to stop. Their attacks seemed to add to the ball of light and caused it to grow bigger.

Rody could already see the bad situation. The Hakone Serpent's

flame seemed to slowly push the ball of light towards Kara. Naturally, it means that Kara does not have the advantageous position.

Although Kara was angry, he was not crazy.

Kara also understood that his current strength was not like when he was the Devil God in the past. Although he had a strong spirit he had used a lot of his strength on the lightning. However, Kara could feel that his body was having trouble sustaining that strength. In a short while, Kara would have been exhausted.

As Kara watched the ball of light slowly approached him, he ran out of methods to use. He was so tired that he spat out blood. He was also injured and had used too much strength. At that moment, he could barely support himself. Even if he recovered in the future, the injury may be critical. Kara, who was out of options, roared, "Boy! What are you waiting for?"

Rody did not wait. In fact, he had been observing. His God Slaying Bow had been aimed at the distant Hakone Serpent as he checked its actions.

Rody noticed a strange habit from the Hakone Serpent. Its six heads would open its mouth and take turns attacking with various elements.

However, one of the heads would always occupy the center position. While the other five heads would rise up after attacking, one would immediately shrink back and stay in between the other heads.

The six heads were all similar and even take turns attacking. If it was not carefully observed, it would be very hard to notice.

"It's now!" Rody took a deep breath. He gathered his barely recovered strength and slowly moved it to his hands. He then drew the God Slaying Bow in his hands.

The God Slaying Bow shined with a white light. The God Slaying

Bow was an artifact. It did not have any real arrows but utilized the user's magical power, fighting energy, or other kinds of energy to transform into arrows.

The God Slaying Bow turned brighter and brighter. Rody knew that he could attack now but he needed to be cautious. That one shot was his only chance. It was his desperate and last bit of his strength placed into the bow.

But he suddenly blacked out and felt his own strength dry up. The God Slaying Bow in his hands flashed a bit. The energy he placed into the God Slaying Bow could not be sustained and the radiance of the bow started to dim.

Rody became frightened but no matter how hard he tried, he had no strength in his body at all and he could not gather even a little bit of strength.

This was not because Rody was incompetent. He had received an injury from Kara earlier in the day. He then fought against the Hakone Serpent recklessly for so long at night. Rody had never received such a heavy injury since he became powerful. The Mystic Dragon Purge had also used up all his strength. Rody's vision turned black and he almost fell from the sky.

"I can't be that unlucky!" Rody lamented. He could not help feeling desperate.

At this time, the ring on Rody's finger seemingly reacted to the God Slaying Bow. It shined slightly with a white light. A warm feeling then flowed out of Rody's finger. Although the warm feeling was not powerful, it was seemingly endless. The energy split into two: one slowly flowed into Rody's body and gradually replenished his exhausted body's energy. The other flowed through Rody's finger and into the God Slaying Bow.

The God Slaying Bow instantly shone as though Rody was holding the sun. It shone so bright that the Hakone Serpent that was fighting Kara noticed him.

The Hakone Serpent became aware of its crisis. One of its heads refused to attack Kara and moved towards Rody. Unfortunately, it could not move. The other five heads were still fighting Kara who was in the sky. The moment this head stretched out, it would immediately be pulled back.

Rody was also surprised at the situation but he could not think too much at the moment. He then took aim at the middle head of the Hakone Serpent.

Rody did not notice that the already-cracked ring on his finger crack even more when his energy was replenished.

The shot arrow flew like a shooting star.

The arrow flew towards the Hakone Serpent. The speed of the arrow did not seem very fast, but it was extremely bright that people's eyes would not be able to look at it. However, the arrow had actually surpassed the speed of light. By the time it was seen, it had already struck its target.

The crimson barrier around the Hakone Serpent's body could not resist at all. It was immediately broken through and was followed by a sharp scream.

The arrow had struck the left eye of the center head. The right side then exploded into flesh and blood from the energy.

The head opened its mouth to roar. After that, something strange happened.

The six heads roared painfully at the same time. Its body twisted as if by instinct. The six heads moved as if to untie the bowknots. The five heads then breathed out white light at the struck head. It seemed as though it was trying to heal the wound. However, the hole in that head grew bigger and burst.

The snake cried out. It could not continue flying and fell to the ground.

"Success!" Rody cried out. However, he also became unsteady and

fell. Fortunately, Nedis clung to Rody's shoulder and embraced him.

Kara screamed in excitement. He then jumped from shock when he saw the violent ball of light.

His and the Hakone Serpent's attack had initially condensed into a ball of light. When the Hakone Serpent stopped attacking, Kara had also forgotten to shoot lightning. The ball of light that lost its driving force moved towards its original trajectory which was towards Kara.

Fortunately, Kara reacted quickly and shot the ball of light with lightning. The ball of light was then pushed back.

The ball of light moved in a beautiful arc. It fell like the setting sun and its destination was the Hakone Kingdom's capital.

A few people did not react quickly enough. They heard a loud sound. The blast from the explosion reached those people that were in the sky and sent them flying.

The huge ball of light exploded on the ground and caused a fire.

A huge mushroom cloud rose from the ground.

A person with strong domain powers had fought against the Hakone Serpent for a long time. That ball of light was the condensed power from the full strength attacks of both sides. Naturally, the explosive power of that ball of light would not be a trivial matter.

As he flew into the sky, Kara cursed endlessly because it was not the Hakone Serpent that almost killed him but the explosion.

Still, in the end, Kara was still Kara. He had already flown towards the other three. He then grabbed hold of Nedis' hair and especially Sith's leg because Sith was almost going to crash. Meanwhile, Nedis continued to hold Rody.

A defensive light burst out from Kara's body. He then protected

the others from the seemingly endless blast.

After some time, the ball of light started to turn into bits and pieces. The huge mushroom cloud also slowly dissipated. Kara then removed his defensive light.

At the moment, Kara was breathing heavily as though he had just run a marathon. His body shook and started to fall. Fortunately, Sith was there. Although Sith was not as powerful as Rody and the others, he was still skilled at flying. He pulled up his few companions and then kept them afloat in the air.

However, the situation below made them all muddleheaded.

At the ground in the distance was a huge crater. The diameter of the crater was about a few dozen miles wide and it was about a dozen meters deep. Inside the crater was a scorched ground. The four of them looked at each other speechlessly.

"Damn. This crater..." Rody could not help but sigh.

Nedis was the fastest to react. She laughed bitterly and said, "The location of this crater...it should be the capital city of the Hakone Kingdom!" She suddenly became angry and shouted at Kara. "Hey! Who asked you to destroy the Hakone Kingdom's capital? You killed that Kikukawa boy! All my efforts are wasted! You better reimburse me!"

A tremendous roar was then heard as the remaining five heads of the Hakone Serpent appeared again.

Chapter 285: Rody's Life Saving Trick (2)

The Hakone Serpent looked different.

It looked much smaller than before. Did it shrink after losing three heads? Rody could not help but think to himself.

Another thing Rody took note of was the scars on its body.

Obviously, the head of the Hakone Serpent had been slain by the arrow before the large explosion.

At that moment, the crimson barrier around the Hakone Serpent seemed to have disappeared. After the explosion, its body was filled with scars and it was still bleeding in some places. There were even some places that were burnt black.

Could it be that it had lost its powerful body that could withstand attacks from those with strong domains powers?

Rody subconsciously looked at Kara. Kara then softly said, "Did you not notice that its aura has seemingly weakened a lot?"

The Hakone Serpent still looked fierce at that moment. However, its ominous eyes that made people frightened and its suffocating and oppressive aura had weakened considerably.

It was evident that the Hakone Serpent had weakened a lot after losing three heads.

"What a pity." Kara laughed bitterly. "If at least one of us were at full strength, we may be able to best it. Although it still has five heads, its strength has dropped more than I have expected. According to my estimates, if a person with strong domain power were to confront it, that person may still not be able to win. However, that person will not lose."

Nedis then sneered. "It is like you did not say anything at all! Look at Rody and yourself. Does it look like you can still fight it?"

Rody and Kara looked at each other and laughed bitterly as they

shook their heads.

Although discouraged, Rody was convinced of the Hakone Serpent's strength. He originally thought that he was unrivaled in the world. Even if he cannot defeat Gods, he could at least be undefeated in the world. He did not expect to encounter the Hakone Serpent that could not be defeated even with the combined strength of two people with strong domain powers.

Kara knew its weakness. They had even used all sorts of schemes and the two people with strong domain powers had lost their ability to fight. Even then, they still could not defeat the Hakone Serpent.

"Let us go down!" Kara made a quick judgment. He had experience fighting in the God and Devil war. There was nobody that could match up to him in experience. "We already have a disadvantage in strength. To keep flying would be a waste of energy. Besides that, we are unable to hide in the sky. Right now, Rody and I don't have the strength to fight back. Sith's flying technique may also be much inferior compared to the Hakone Serpent. We might as well go down to the ground and fight it while making use of the complicated terrain."

Rody did not object to this. Sith looked at the distant Hakone Serpent that was approaching him and felt his scalp turn numb. He was certain that he was not as strong as Rody and Kara. If the people with strong domain powers fought that monster and ended up looking so miserable, a sorcerer like himself would definitely not be enough. He immediately took them back to the ground.

The Hakone Serpent seemed to have spotted them as it roared loudly. Its body gathered wind and then flew towards them.

The others could smell the thick scent of blood from the Hakone Serpent, and understood that the Hakone Serpent's injury was quite severe.

At the moment, the ground had already turned into scorched

earth. The bustling capital city no longer existed. Even the shapes of the buildings could not be seen. It was just a large crater.

Fortunately, there were still many boulders that had not broken apart from the large explosion. The moment the group reached the ground, they immediately helped each other to hide among the pile of rubble.

The Hakone Serpent pursued relentlessly from the ground. Its huge body had smashed on the ground. It was no longer curled up but fully stretched out. It searched while keeping its five heads close to the ground.

As it was strong, all the rubble in its way was knocked away when hit by its heads.

The four people who were at a distance were secretly anxious. However, they could not defeat their opponent and could only flee desperately.

They could hear the sound of the sand and rubble moving. Even though they were running away across the rubble, they could hear that the sound was getting closer. It was evident that the Hakone Serpent was very quick.

"No!" Rody suddenly stood still and said. He then laughed bitterly and added, "We have forgotten something very important!"

"What?" Kara looked at Rody.

Rody sighed. "We only saw that the monster is strong and our thoughts are in a mess. We have forgotten that it is a snake! [Snakes have an extremely keen sense of smell!](#) Although we wanted to use the terrain to overtake it, it could still smell us regardless of the terrain and chase us."

Kara froze for a moment. He then understood and said, "Ah, I did not think of that."

Rody smiled wryly and said, "We cannot run far in our current state. It might be faster if we flew but then the snake's chasing

speed would also be much faster. We cannot defeat it and it looks like we also would not be able to escape far."

Rody suddenly bent forward and placed his ear to the ground. He seemed to hear some sounds coming from the ground. He then looked up and said, "I think it would catch up to us in about ten minutes."

Nedis, shocked, could not help but ask, "Then, what do we do?" She then looked at Kara and said, "This is all your fault. You brought that snake out!"

Rody stretched out his hand to stop Nedis. He then sighed and said, "We still have ten minutes. Yet, it may not be enough time."

He looked at the few people and then looked back at Kara. He then said, "Right now, the two of us who are the strongest here are unable to fight well. Nedis and Sith were also not a match for the Hakone Serpent. We cannot fight or run. Right now, I only have one way left. However, I am not sure if you are willing to bet on it!"

Kara laughed bitterly. "Go ahead and say it."

Rody then said, "I have a life-saving trick! I just need a bit of power to put it to use. A friend of mine gave me a sorcery mark. Unless my strength is used to stimulate this mark, its power cannot be displayed. Right now, I need a little bit of time to restore my power so that I can stimulate this mark. However, I am not sure if ten minutes is enough time."

Kara looked at Rody strangely. "You just said you have a life-saving trick. However, you have already used the Mystic Dragon Purge. I cannot think of anything that could be more powerful than that."

Rody's reply then made the others surprised.

Rody smiled wryly and said, "I don't know! I also do not know what this trick would do. My friend simply told me to use it in a moment of crisis!"

Everyone stared at him blankly! Rody also recalled what happened...

One night before he left for the Roland Continent, the old skeleton Andy had called for him.

"Boy, this time I am a little worried about you being on the Roland Continent." The skeleton laughed. He then raised a finger and said, "You have the strength of a Sacred Swordsman and a body strengthened by the Mystic Dragon. According to common sense, the average people are unable to hurt you. Yet I still feel uneasy. The Roland Continent is mankind's birthplace. Even the Paladins of the Temple are no weaker than you. Sending you off on such an adventure is not my style!"

Rody then gave him a supercilious look and replied, "Do you have any kind of strange plans?"

Andy suddenly took out a white magic scroll and pulled Rody's hand. He put the scroll into Rody's hands and then held both.

A strong light came out from Andy's hands, then the scroll disappeared from Rody's hands.

"This is the life-saving trick that this old man has given you!" Andy then laughed and said, "Use this when in a disaster. If you were to somehow get killed, I would be in distress."

He then stopped smiling and said, "Do not use this when you are not in trouble. Remember! I wasted a lot of energy to create this!"

Rody knew that Andy survived on energy. His energy could not be replenished. The more he used it, the less he would have. Once it ran out, Andy would die. Andy had presumably considered this when he willingly used up this energy to give him that scroll. Regardless of whether it was something useful or not, Rody, who was confident of his own strength, did not believe that he would ever need to use it. That being said, he was touched that Andy had used up energy for him.

Besides that, since meeting Andy, Andy had always given him extremely powerful and weird things such as the lightsaber or the Dragon Transformation technique. The life-saving trick would also presumably be extremely powerful.

For such things, Rody absolutely trusted Andy.

At that moment, Rody was in danger and remembered Andy's life-saving trick. Andy's words seemed to ring in his ears, "I have placed the scroll into your left hand! During a crisis, put your energy into the scroll in your left hand. The magic scroll would then respond to my magical power and something unexpected will happen!"

The Hakone Serpent roared again. Rody did not dare to waste any time. To cut down on the usage of energy, he simply sat on the floor and closed his eyes to rest.

Kara also helplessly sat down. He had to be supported by two people at that time and was not able to continue fighting. Nedis and Sith had imposing expressions. Sith took out his magic staff. Although he knew he would not be able to stop the Hakone Serpent, it was better than nothing.

Time seemed to turn slowly. Nedis could not take her eyes off Rody; she would bite her lips at one moment and looked lost at the next. But her gaze gradually became firm. After that, she laughed gently. She then stood in front of Rody with an extremely determined expression.

Rody did not know this. However, there was a loud sound in everyone's ears. An extremely heavy and large boulder was sent flying. A large figure appeared in front of them.

The Hakone Serpent had finally caught up.

Sith had already set up the strongest Guardian Boundary that he could create. The boundary was easily broken after being bumped by the snake's head. Sith himself was uncertain as to how many

At this point, Rody suddenly opened his eyes.

Although he was tired, he showed a smile.

Rody stretched out his left hand. In accordance with what he was told by Andy, he gathered together his energy slowly, towards the magic mark at his palm.

After a weak fluctuation of magic, a few lines of magical words appeared at his palm.

Rody did not know how to use magic. However, he had still learned how to read a few magical words from his time in the Imperial Academy.

In fact, it was a spell of the lowest level.

Rody did not dare to hesitate and loudly spoke the incantation.

When Sith heard the incantation, he turned pale.

'This is his life-saving trick?' Sith was suddenly filled with despair. He had placed all of his hopes into the boy, but all he got was the lowest ranked summoning spell.

A summoning spell was a sorcery that summoned a Mystic Beast to help the sorcerer fight. Based on the sorcerer's ability, they could call a low ranked or a high ranked beast.

A high ranked Mystic Beast summoned by a high ranked sorcerer was only as powerful as an ordinary powerful warrior. It was already good if it could match a large knight. It could not be compared to a person with domain powers or the Hakone Serpent.

It could only be described as a joke.

On top of that, the spell Rody used was the lowest level spell. Sith despaired as the spell was a beginner's summoning spell that could summon a skeleton at best.

Nedis and Kara were also very surprised as if Rody's life-saving trick was very unexpected.

Rody had just finished the spell and sighed in relief. Although he did not understand the meaning of the life-saving trick, he absolutely trusted Andy.

The space in front twisted a little and a dark crack appeared. Fog then appeared from the crack.

The fog surged as if stirred by something.

Sith secretly thought to himself, 'What can this guy summon? Did he think he could summon a dragon? Dragons are not so easily summoned. Even if he did summon a dragon, it may also not be able to best this snake!'

At this time, the fog gradually dispersed. A flash of metallic armor could be seen at the corners of the fog.

"We are doomed. It is really a skeleton soldier! But why is it wearing armor?" [Sith's face turned dark brown in despair.](#)

However, as the fog gradually dispersed, everyone was surprised.

The 'monster' that Rody had summoned was different from the Mystical Beasts other sorcerers summoned.

The 'monster' wore a powerful and beautiful golden armor. The style of the armor looked like the armors of a court warrior. Nedis could immediately tell that the armor was from the Royal Guards of the Imperial Family of the Radiant Empire.

The 'monster' wearing the golden armor was about two meters tall. Although the armor was beautiful, the wearer's body was too fat.

The body of the wearer was so fat that the armor looked like it was going to burst. The eyes on his face almost could not be seen. The trembling fats even made Sith think that this person was Princess Ruolan.

Even more surprising was the object in the warrior's hands.

Everybody could now see the weapon in the warrior's hands. The

silver color flashed and the quality looked good. However, it was too small.

When they looked at it clearly, they almost fainted. The 'weapon' the warrior was holding was a small knife used to cut meat at mealtimes.

When Sith looked at the warrior's other hand, he felt his heart stop.

In the obese warrior's other hand was a fat chicken drumstick.

The head of the warrior was large and his mouth was greasy with the residue of food.

Rody's eyes almost popped out when he saw this. Even if he were to knock his head, he would never have expected Andy to give him such a life-saving trick.

The fat guy looked displeased and curled his lips. He bit another mouthful of chicken and then said, "Boy, isn't this too much? I was having a midnight snack and then you called me over! Alright. Tell me, what is your problem? You look as though you were badly flattened."

Snakes 'smell' their prey by flicking their tongues. Snakes are also good at detecting movements from the 'vibration' on the floor and have heat vision.

Raws said Sith's face turned to the color of pig livers. Pig livers are reddish brown to dark brown.

Chapter 286: Sly Fatty (1)

Kara, Sith, and Nedis were all completely stunned. They had placed their trust in Rody. In the end, the life-saving trick merely summoned a ...

A fat guy!

Rody's mouth hung open. Before he could say anything, Sky magnanimously waved his hand and loudly said, "Alright, alright. Let this old man help you first before continuing...huh? Fuck!" Sky turned around and saw the huge Hakone Serpent behind him.

The eyes of the chaos-loving Sky burst in excitement. He looked at the angry Hakone Serpent and excitedly ran towards it. He shouted as he ran, "How interesting! I have never seen such an interesting thing in a very long time!"

Sky casually stood in front of the Hakone Serpent as he stood akimbo. He then shouted, "Hey! You ugly being! Are you the one that beat up my little brother mercilessly? However, you do not look so bad. I will not make things difficult for you. You just need to obediently follow me back and accompany me to workout sessions."

Sky started to laugh after he finished speaking.

The Hakone Serpent was stunned to see a small human run towards him instead of escaping. Even if it was a beast, it was confused by the strange situation. Immediately after that, its ferocious nature returned. It then swung its huge tail.

Within a moment, several rocks flew into the sky. The tail made a sound like a wind blade.

Sky had underestimated his opponent. He had stayed on the Radiant Continent and did not know that Rody had already mastered domain powers. He thought that Rody was still at the stage of a Sacred Swordsman. He believed that the monsters Rody

fought against could be easily handled as he has a powerful Domain Master. Even though the snake with many heads looked strange, Sky only thought of it as a slightly more powerful Mystic Beast at best. After all, the Roland Continent had many more Mystic Beasts in comparison.

In front of the other four, the fat guy summoned by Rody's life-saving trick was swept away by the snake's tail. There was a whistling sound as Sky's body flew sideways.

'He...he is an idiot...' Nedis subconsciously thought to herself.

Sith was lamenting his own fate. He could not believe he gave up the opportunity to escape and instead had believed in Rody's life-saving trick.

Suddenly, there was a huge and angry roar.

The fat man that was sent flying had turned around in midair and came back!

Sky's face was filled with anger. His armor had been smashed into pieces. The common armor of the Imperial Guards could not withstand a hit from the Hakone Serpent. The thing that made Sky angry was the embarrassing position he was put into by the snake despite the fact that he was powerful Domain Master.

"Shit! Do you think you are so extraordinary with five heads? I have seen snakes with a dozen heads, not to mention the Mystic Dragon!"

In anger, Sky's body burst into a golden light as though it was a blooming flower. He then created many balls of light with a wave of his hand.

Kara's expression changed as he saw Sky's actions. He could not help but blurt out. "This guy is also a Domain Master?"

Obviously, Sky had already mastered domain powers. Energy easily condensed in his domain.

His body inflated like a balloon. As he occupied a commanding position, he roared, "Rody, go and hide further away! I want to deal with this ugly thing!"

Sith immediately pulled Rody and the others further away. He saw Sky give out a cry and throw both his hands forward. The countless balls of light shot towards the Hakone Serpent like a meteor shower.

They heard an endless thunderous loud sound. The balls of light smashed into the Hakone Serpent's body like a heavy rain. The flames on the Hakone Serpent flashed endlessly.

In the air, Sky shouted, "I strike, I strike, I strike again! To hell with it!"

After Sky had fun fighting and followed Rody out of the Mystic Dragon cave, he had not fought so happily or launched a storm of attacks on that scale. Immediately Sky realized that he had actually rediscovered the pleasure similar to the time he spent fighting the Mystic Dragon at that cave.

The Hakone Serpent roared in anger from within the explosions. At that point in time, it was already much weaker. If their strengths were to be graded, Sky was about only as powerful as Rody and Kara. Although Sky's attacks were intensive, it was not more powerful than the attacks Kara and Rody. However, Sky was fresh and combat-worthy. On the other hand, the Hakone Serpent had been fighting throughout the night and had three of its heads cut off. Its strength had plunged a lot.

Smoke rose from the Hakone Serpent's body. It became angry and began to fight back. It raised its five heads to the sky and sprayed fire and ice at Sky.

"Aha! You even dare to fight back!" Sky laughed. A shield of light immediately appeared from his hands. It was a weapon made from energy. That shield of light was big and was able to cover Sky's body.

"I block!" Sky laughed. However, then the Hakone Serpent's spray attack heavily struck Sky's light shield, Sky's laughter stopped as he said, "Shit. This is bad. I can't block it."

His laughter turned to curses. Sky was like a housefly that got knocked out from the sky and spun as he fell to the ground. A deep hole appeared when he crashed to the ground.

Sky climbed out of the rubble and fiercely shook his head. His body seemed to be bleeding. However, he immediately waved his hand, seemingly as easily as he was breathing, as he used Reshape Origin of the Light series spells.

Sith was knowledgeable about spells. He saw this from a distance and sucked in the cold air. This fat guy was not only a strong person with powerful domain mastery. He was also powerful at sorcery!

Sith did not know who Sky was but Rody certainly did. Rody already knew that Sky was the strongest Paladin of legends in the Roland Continent. For a Paladin to know how to use spells from the Light series was nothing strange. The spells the common Paladins knew were not too advanced.

But such common rules could not be applied to a monster like Sky.

"Shit. I got careless." Sky grumbled. He was not in a hurry to strike back. He turned his head to look at Rody and scolded. "Boy! Why didn't you warn me that this monster is so powerful? When did a Domain ranked Mystic Beast appear on the Roland Continent?"

Rody hid at a distance and laughed bitterly. "Fatty! Be careful! This is not a Mystic Beast. It is..."

Before Rody finished speaking, the Hakone Serpent came out from the rubble. Its body was scarred and charred from Sky's attacks. Although its injuries were not fatal, it had made the snake

angry. It sprayed out an attack at where Sky was standing.

This attack was similar to a dragon's breath. He had fought the Mystic Dragon in that southern cave for several hundred years. For several hundred years, he fought the Mystic Dragon whenever he was not sleeping. That was why Sky was extremely experienced in fighting large monsters.

Rody saw Sky's body flash and disappear. There was a huge explosion as a large crater appeared where Sky was standing.

Two of the Hakone Serpent's heads moved over to look for its enemy but then suddenly its body shook.

Sky had suddenly appeared behind the Hakone Serpent.

Although he had fought chaotically earlier, he had already seen that the snake had only one tail despite having many heads.

Sky was extremely experienced in fighting and naturally had faith in himself. He found the snake's tail and then hugged it with his body.

Although Sky was obese, he was still small when compared to the Hakone Serpent. Yet, he was able to lift up the Hakone Serpent that was hundreds of times heavier with his two hands.

Sky had carefully grabbed the snake's tail and lifted it up.

He held the Hakone Serpent's tail in an embrace and spun around on his feet. As he spun the snake around faster and faster it seemed like a huge wind wheel, with a continuous whistling sound caused by the spinning. The Hakone Serpent even looked dizzy. Sky spun faster and faster and suddenly shouted, "Go!"

He released his hands and the Hakone Serpent was sent flying away!

Sky then acted quickly. He placed both hands in the air and two huge dazzling balls of light issued out from his hands.

"Die!" Sky suddenly roared loudly.

From a distance, Rody and Kara could clearly feel the fluctuation of energy in Sky's body as his aura seemed to burst out to the strongest peak.

After that, there was a violent whistling sound as two huge balls of light shot out of Sky's hands.

Kara's expression changed slightly. 'This fat guy can make the energy of his domain reach the peak instantly? He truly has mastered his domain powers to the peak.'

The two balls of light sped along. One flew to the right the other flew to the left. The rays then curved and moved in front of the Hakone Serpent.

There was a thunderous sound. The two huge balls of light had flown towards the front and back of the snake. After that, there was a huge shockwave like a hurricane at the ocean. The hurricane swept down, scraping the ground. The four people even had trouble staying on their feet.

Thick black smoke rolled and covered the sky.

Sky did not bother to look at the sky and gently patted his hands. He then laughed and said, "How is my Gale Break? I suppose it is not inferior to your Mystic Dragon Purge?"

He then laughed and loudly said, "Alright. I have finished fighting! I am going back to sleep!"

He did not even manage to take two steps forward before his legs turned soft and almost fell to the ground. He then cursed. "Shit. I spun too fast and became dizzy."

Rody and the others held back their laughter. Nedis then went up to help Sky.

It was at this moment when the black smoke in the sky gradually dispersed. The Hakone Serpent roared once again.

Its body was badly broken. Half of its body was badly mangled.

Even more importantly, it only had four and a half heads left.

That half head was broken and tattered but was healing rapidly.

Sky looked back and shouted, "This guy is so tough? That attack of mine would even have bested Domain Masters!"

Suddenly, the four remaining snake heads opened their mouths at the same time. The heads acted in unison and spewed out golden lightning.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom! The four bolts of lightning were like a chain of thunderbolts. Before Sky could react, it had already struck where Sky was standing. The four bolts of lightning engulfed Sky's fat figure in flames. Kara cried out in alarm, yet he could not do anything.

Sith had been vigilant the entire time. He had always felt that the odd fatty was not too reliable and had not put down the staff in his hands.

At that moment, Sith had roared out an incantation. His potential had been stimulated in that moment of crisis. He had used one of the most advanced summoning spells. It had a long incantation that needed two breathes to recite. However, Sith had managed to recite the incantation in a single breath, without pause, during that moment of crisis. [He had roared out over sixty syllables.](#)

He pointed his staff to the sky and a golden light from the sky formed a wyvern.

"Summoning spell?" Kara looked at Sith. He then softly said, "The summoning spell is indeed very powerful. However, even if you summon a dragon, you cannot defeat the Hakone Serpent."

The wyvern gave a sharp roar. Its loud voice immediately attracted the attention of the Hakone Serpent.

Beasts were simply beasts. They were dumb beings that would attack the largest and most conspicuous enemy. As the wyvern was

large and loud, it managed to attract the Hakone Serpent's attention.

At this moment, Rody and Nedis dragged Sky to the side. There were cracks around the ground that was struck by lightning and a little bit of black smoke too. Sky's eyes were closed. His armor was already destroyed and even his clothes were burnt until only a strip of cloth was left.

"Fatty, how are you?" Rody shouted while Nedis shook Sky. Sky then gasped for breath and opened his eyes. He suddenly sighed and said, "It has been a long time since I have been struck like this by lightning. It feels really great!"

"Are you okay?" Rody laughed.

Sky then jumped up from the ground. He glared and said, "I am obviously fine! Did you think you are the only one that wiped the Mystic Dragon's blood all over your body? I have fought with the Mystic Dragon for a few hundred years in that place. Did you think I would not have wiped its blood on my body?"

Sky then used Reshape Origin on his own body. In fact, his injury was light. He was simply put in an awkward position by being struck by lightning. However, the crazy fatty had used the most advanced spell that many high-ranked sorcerors could not use even once in their entire life, Reshape Origin, as though he was eating Chinese cabbage.

"You...you are really alright?" Nedis still felt uneasy. She could not help but cautiously ask, "Those bolts of lightning that struck you, isn't it painful?"

"Pain?" Sky looked at her. He narrowed his eyes as he thought for a moment and then said, "It is not really painful. It is soft yet rough. It is like the feeling of first love."

Without waiting for Nedis to glare at him as though she was looking at a ghost, Sky jumped back to the sky. He looked at the

Hakone Serpent and shouted, "Ugly thing! I am not defeated yet! Let's go again!"

At that moment, the wyvern summoned by Sith was being chased around the sky by the Hakone Serpent.

Indeed, [a real dragon](#) was being chased by a snake and was in a difficult position.

Sky shouted when he saw the Hakone Serpent ignore him. He was about to rush ahead when Kara suddenly shouted, "Hey! Fatty! Be careful when you attack. Attack its head! That head that was half destroyed has still not yet recovered. I am guessing that it must be a weakness!"

Sky could not help but look at Kara. Kara calling him a fatty had put him in a bad mood. Sky looked at Kara's mask and then turned to Rody and loudly asked, "Where did that sneaky masked fellow come out from?"

Raws says sixty words for the incantation. As this is Chinese where each word has one syllable, I changed it to syllables instead.

飞龙 literally 'Flying dragon' or wyvern. There are some that don't consider wyverns as dragons. This one does. Differences are that dragons have 4 or more arms and legs creatures with/without wings depending on their origins/species. Wyverns are dragon-headed bats that don't hang upside down.

Chapter 287: Sly Fatty (2)

Sky was not bothered that Kara was present and his words were very loud on purpose. Anger grew in Kara's eyes. Whether as an ancient Devil God or the leader of the Temple, both these positions were way above the masses; he was never talked to in that kind of tone before.

Sky was an outrageous person. Otherwise, he would not be the Roland Continent's strongest Paladin that had once betrayed the Temple and then hid at some corner of the world. He even dared to challenge the Mystic Dragon as though he was someone who was tired of living.

They glared at each other in midair and sparks seemed to fly. Sky then turned his head around. He looked at Rody and said, "Boy, I am at a disadvantage unarmed. Give me your sword."

After taking Rody's Dragon Spell Scimitar, Sky gently flicked its blade. There was a light and resonant humming sound. The Hakone Serpent had already cornered the wyvern into a difficult position. The wyvern was so afraid of the Hakone Serpent that it finally started to fight back as it could not run anymore. The wyvern cried out and spat its dragon's breath at the Hakone Serpent. Although the wyvern was much bigger than a human, it could clearly be seen from afar that when compared to the Hakone Serpent, it was just like a dog barking at a tiger.

The Hakone Serpent roared. One of the heads ignored the dragon's breath and then bit the wyvern's neck.

Its bite was so powerful that the wyvern was bitten into two.

Sith immediately felt gloomy. He then sat down on the ground with a pale expression and no longer stood back up.

"Ugly creature! Watch the great Sky come and teach you a lesson!" Sky shouted at the Hakone Serpent as he flew up with a

commanding presence.

The Hakone Serpent's half head seemed to have already stopped healing itself. However, that head was still alive and seemingly on its last legs. It glared at Sky with one eye, looking like a goldfish.

With the scimitar in hand and a vigor that was even stronger than earlier, Sky roared loudly and charged again at the Hakone Serpent.

Although he and Kara were at odds, he still clearly heeded Kara's words. Although Sky was bold and reckless, he was not mad. From the few blows he had endured, he knew that this monster was not an ordinary opponent.

Rody only had enough time to shout, "Wait for a chance and attack that half-broken head." Sky had already rushed towards the Hakone Serpent like a fierce wind.

For a time, the man and the snake fought in the skies. It was called a battle, but Sky was just flying around the snake. The Hakone Serpent was continually provoked to attack Sky while he used his speed advantage to dodge and strike back when its guard was down.

Several people on the ground were watching with excitement. They could hear the sounds of battle in the sky. The strange Fatty and the Hakone Serpent were locked in a fierce battle. Sometimes, they could see Fatty slash the snake's body. The blade struck its scales causing sparks and issuing metallic sounds. The other snake heads were also protecting the half-broken head.

Sky had been happily slashing the snake left and right with his scimitar. But suddenly he put away the sword behind his back as he could feel his hands tremble. Sky then soared straight up into the sky, turned around and pointed his finger at the Hakone Serpent. He then threw wind blades towards the snake. However, the Hakone Serpent was seemingly tired and did not react. Instead, it just breathed out fire in response.

Rody watched in alarm below. Nedis was anxious beside him but she could not do anything. Rody was worried about Sky. Although Sky's domain power was at the peak, he was still far below the level of the Hakone Serpent. He did not notice that Kara had retreated too at some point in time.

Sky was shouting as he fought in the sky, "This is great! I have not fought so happily for a long time!"

Looking at the battle in the sky Kara started to realize something ...

'Right now there are three people with domain powers here. That Fatty looked like he was just kidding and fooling around but his domain power skill and control outshine Rody's.'

Without realizing it Kara had ended up standing far behind Nedis and Sith. He just stared at the sky and waited quietly...

Sure enough, after fighting for a while, the snake had been wounded once again. This was because it had fought a long battle with several people with domain powers taking turns. Besides that, the Dragon Spell Scimitar in Sky's hands had left a lot of scars on Hakone Serpent's body. The snake seemed to roar endlessly but it was obviously becoming weaker. Its roar started to be filled with pain and sorrow instead of anger.

Finally, Sky found an opportunity. He whizzed around two heads and instantly arrived at the Hakone Serpent's half-head. He then raised the sword in his hand and swung it down.

There was a cutting sound as that half-head was cut off. The snake's body sprayed out blood. Sky was not prepared for this, so he could not help but curse, "Damn! It is so smelly!"

He backed away quickly and was about to fly back when he heard Rody shout, "Don't retreat! The fewer heads it has, the weaker it would become! All of its heads need to be cut off before it is defeated!"

"Aha!" Sky laughed. "Cut off all of it? That is not difficult!"

Surprisingly, the Hakone Serpent started to retreat.

The monster knew that the enemy in front of it was not easy to deal with. After considering its own condition it gradually retreated.

Sky became spirited and shouted, "Ugly monster! Accept your death!"

At this time, one of the Hakone Serpent's heads opened its mouth and spat out something that looked like a red sun.

The dazzling red light surprised Sky for a moment. He could faintly sense an evil feeling from the red light.

Rody was naturally aware that it was Kara's 'Divine Primordial Spirit'.

That thing had helped the snake to block some of the attacks. But now that it had no other alternative, it was forced to use this treasured item.

The Divine Primordial Spirit gradually helped the snake regain the red glow in its body. The snake also seemed to weep; it only had four heads remaining and its size seemed to be contracting.

Suddenly, Kara's voice came from behind Sky. At some point in time, Kara had already flown up to Sky's side. He pulled Sky down and then whispered, "Right now, there is a chance to get rid of this thing! However, your help is necessary!"

"Speak!"

Kara sighed, "The Hakone Serpent is a supernatural being. It won't die even if you kill it. However, it is not difficult to seal it. You just need to take out that large red pearl..."

Sky then sneered and interrupted Kara, "Stop speaking rubbish and just say it straight!"

Hearing this, Kara could not help but look at Sky and said, "Both

of us may have strong domain powers. However, even if we cut off its last head, it will reincarnate with eight heads. This thing cannot be killed. Making it weaker would only allow it to feel pain. As it is a supernatural being with an immortal body, it will simply come back to life even if you kill it."

Sky frowned and asked, "What do you mean?"

"The key is that pearl!" He then lowered his voice and said, "That pearl is currently its biggest weakness. It was sealed here for that red pearl. We just..." He paused and then gritted his teeth, "Right now, I could only recover a bit of energy. Rody is probably in the same situation as me right now."

Rody laughed bitterly and replied, "Yes. Right now, I feel like my body is an empty shell."

"That's right!" Kara then said, "As long as we can get that pearl, I will have a way to seal it!" Kara did not want to say 'Divine Primordial Spirit' as he did not want Fatty to know his identity. Rody then coldly said, "Mister Kara, just now you said that the snake can be killed off after it has one head left. Now, you say it cannot be killed but could only be sealed. In the end, you just want us to help you get the Divine Primordial Spirit. Am I right?"

Kara's tone was unchanged as he coldly replied, "The Hakone Serpent is powerful. If we do not beat it until its present condition, how are we supposed to grab my Divine Primordial Spirit? Besides that, I would be able to get rid of it once I obtain my Divine Primordial Spirit! How could it be said that I deceived you? I have clearly told you that I fought it thousands of years ago. I had also cut off a few of its heads until it has one head left. Do you know what happened after that?"

Kara looked at Rody and said, "After being crushed by me, it reincarnated in a red light. On top of that, it recovered with eight heads."

"What?" Rody exclaimed.

Kara faintly said, "It was like that! Did you think a God ranked beast like that would just die? Even if we kill it, it would just take some time for him to reincarnate. On top of that, it would reincarnate at full strength! However, once I obtain my Divine Primordial Spirit, we no longer need to fear it."

Rody angrily shouted, "Bullshit! Didn't you tell me it was defective?"

"Hahaha..." Kara laughed. "What do you consider defective? It does not matter if it was the Hakone Serpent or the Mystic Dragon. These are things those bastards in heaven created to deal with me! The Hakone Serpent was easily defeated by me. Naturally, it could only be regarded as defective! However, it having an immortal body is not a lie!"

Sky did not speak and was listening to the conversation between the two. He then looked surprised and said, "Wait! What did you say? What is Kara? What is a Divine Primordial Spirit?" He looked intently at Rody and gritted his teeth. "Is that glowing red thing the Divine Primordial Spirit?"

Kara was slightly surprised and asked, "Oh? You know about the Divine Primordial Spirit too?"

Sky then said, "Although I have never seen it before, I have heard of it before! Hahaha...A Divine Primordial Spirit. Could it be a God ranked fellow? Who are you really?"

Kara lightly replied, "Didn't you hear my name earlier?"

Sky's eyes suddenly changed, "You are Kara? The True God Kara?"

The three wanted to continue talking but the Hakone Serpent seemed to have absorbed a lot of the strange red light from the Divine Primordial Spirit. The wounds on its body started to heal.

Kara turned pale and said, "Stop wasting words! Take advantage of the current moment. Although we don't have a plan yet, right

now we have three people with strong domain powers here! This is already a strong advantage!"

Rody wanted to say something else, but Sky's expression changed and had a thoughtful gaze. Sky suddenly got in front of Rody and said, "Alright, I will help you!" He then looked at Kara and asked, "Tell us. What do you need us to do?"

Kara sighed and softly said, "That Divine Primordial Spirit originally belonged to me. The method to take it back is very simple. The three of us attack at the same time. You, help me to fight the Hakone Serpent from the front. Drag it out and make sure it does not have the time to swallow the Divine Primordial Spirit. Rody, stay at the side and give support. As for me..." Kara's eyes became firm as he said, "My only way is to fight for and fuse with the Divine Primordial Spirit!" He paused for a moment and then said, "I will rush forward. As long as I can reach the Divine Primordial Spirit, we would have succeeded half the job. However, I do not have much energy now. It is necessary for you all to help me open the way. Do not give it the chance to stop me! If necessary, I even need you all to push me forward!" Kara then smiled at Sky and said, "I know you don't like me. That is why, when the time comes for you to kick my ass, just kick me towards the Divine Primordial Spirit!"

The Hakone Serpent roared again in the distance. It seemed to have gradually absorbed a lot of the red light. If they still did not attack it, it would really swallow the Divine Primordial Spirit.

Kara immediately made a decision and shouted, "The opportunity is here! Go!"

Rody and Kara mustered their strength with difficulty. They then charged towards the Hakone Serpent together with Sky.

One of the heads was absorbing the red light while the remaining three heads immediately faced its enemies' attacks.

Sky swung the sword and sent a large wind blade towards the

snake. The head was knocked down. He then shouted at Rody. "Boy, come here!"

Rody actually could no longer fight directly with the snake. He could just only stay close to Sky.

Kara had also advanced towards Sky's side. Sky saw an opportunity and suddenly shot out a fireball with his other hand. It struck a snake head, causing it to cry out in pain and move away. Sky suddenly lowered his voice and said to Kara, "You said I can kick your ass? Then I am going to do it!"

Sky suddenly kicked Kara's backside. Kara's body shook and flew forward like lightning.

However, what surprised Rody was Sky did not kick Kara towards the Divine Primordial Spirit. Kara also felt angry, but he had no time to react. In front of Kara was a snake head whose mouth was wide open.

"Fatty! You!" Rody cried out in alarm.

Sky then grabbed Rody by his collar and carried him towards the Divine Primordial Spirit. The sword in his hands emitted a sharp blade of light as he forced back a snake head that attempted to attack. He then looked at the Divine Primordial Spirit in front of him and said, "Boy, your opportunity is here!"

Sky forcefully swung Rody and then threw him like an arrow towards the Divine Primordial Spirit.

With a loud sound, Rody was thrown towards the evil looking red sun. His entire body then vanished.

Sky was delighted that he managed to throw Rody in and was not prepared for a snake head that attacked him from his left. As he could not avoid or block it in time, he was knocked away. When he finally stopped further away in midair he laughed, "I heard you just needed to fuse with the Divine Primordial Spirit to reach God ranked status! Boy, how will you thank me for this? Kara, oh Kara,

did you think I would be so foolish to work myself to the bone for you?"

At this time, Kara's enraged voice was heard. Sky had schemed against him and also kicked him towards the mouth of a snake head. Fortunately, in that critical moment, he managed to escape the snake's mouth with his Devil God powers. However, his body was fully covered with blood. He did not know whether the blood was his or the snake's. His hair was disheveled and his body was trembling as he faced Sky and shouted, "Despicable fellow! How dare you scheme against me!"

Sky coldly looked at him and said, "I schemed against you, but what can you do about it? Hmph. All of you that are known as God-ranked people are all villains. Just looking at you makes me angry! Not slashing you with my sword then is already showing my respects to the elderly!"

After that, the irrepressible Fatty ruthlessly slashed at the ancient Devil God in front of him.

Chapter 288: God Vs God! (1)

Kara was so angry that his lungs almost exploded.

The True God Kara, the Devil God, had never met such an irrepressible and heretical bastard like this Fatty.

When Kara heard Sky said that it was already respectful of him to the elderly by not slashing Kara, a newfound hatred was born. Kara suddenly roared loudly and threw himself towards Fatty.

It was unfortunate for Kara. If it was a thousand years ago when Kara still had the strength of a Devil God, it would be easy to get rid of the hateful Fatty. Even then, after reincarnating, he had reached the rank of domain powers and could match Sky in strength.

But at that moment, the ancient Devil God had been fighting all night and was covered with injuries. He was also exhausted and was fighting irrationally. How could he defeat Sky?

Sky casually raised his hands to block and also attacked Kara causing him to fly out. Blood could be seen flowing out of Kara's mouth. Kara's face had a ruthless expression as he asked, "Are you scheming against me for that boy? You want to snatch away my Divine Primordial Spirit?"

Sky laughed and did not immediately give a reply. He gave a backhand slash at the Hakone Serpent with several light blades. He then rushed up quickly and flew several laps around the Hakone Serpent. He looked as though he was sending out an endless wave of attacks.

As Sky fought, he shouted in the direction of the red Divine Primordial Spirit, "Rody, I am helping you stall this large snake out here. Hurry up!"

The Hakone Serpent was helpless against this opponent as its four heads spewed out fire wildly. However, Sky had the advantage

in speed. On top of that, Sky was experienced in fighting huge monsters and could deal with it easily

Kara had quieted down as he stayed far behind. Although he simply remained there, his body was trembling. His eyes were cold and sharp and he gritted his teeth so hard that blood appeared on his lips.

"Why are you antagonizing me?" Kara suddenly asked from the back. "For what purpose do you oppose me? If you want the boy to achieve God ranked status by obtaining my Divine Primordial Spirit, it is impossible!"

Sky fought the Hakone Serpent for a while and became somewhat tired. He flew around one lap and then back to Kara. Staring at Kara he said, "I will do whatever I want! If you are unhappy about it, you just need to look for me!"

Kara gritted his teeth and said, "What you just did is harming others without benefiting yourself! What is the use of you throwing that Rody into my Divine Primordial Spirit? Hmph. Do you think it is so easy to fuse with my Divine Primordial Spirit?"

Sky laughed loudly and said, "Of course I know that! However, giving the boy the Divine Primordial Spirit is better than giving it to a Devil God like you! If anything, you should just blame the fact that you met me!"

Kara's murderous intent in his eyes grew stronger. He then said, "My Divine Primordial Spirit cannot be fused together with others. Only I can control it! You are only causing harm to that boy! Fatty, it is not too late! Pull that boy back out..."

"Why is there so much nonsense? I will do what I want! If you want to pull that boy out, do it yourself!" Sky ruthlessly swung his sword and fiercely said, "If you speak more nonsense and provoke me, I will cut you into two!"

At this time, the Hakone Serpent suddenly roared and then its

middle head swallowed the Divine Primordial Spirit.

Before Sky could say anything, Nedis had already turned white. She had seen Rody enter the red sun-like thing and now that thing was swallowed by the snake. Nedis felt her mind go blank. She suddenly screamed out, "Fatty! What are you doing!"

Nedis suddenly rushed towards Fatty. Long sharp nails suddenly emerged from her fingers as she attacked Sky with them like daggers.

"Aha!" Sky jokingly taunted as he dodged. "I did not expect you to be a vampire. Little bat..." Sky laughed at Nedis. "...why are you so angry?"

Nedis almost cried as she shouted, "You...you made him get swallowed..."

Sky easily held Nedis' wrist, laughed and said, "Don't be so anxious. That boy will not die. I am very well aware of the situation."

Sky then turned his head around and laughed, "Didn't you say that the Divine Primordial Spirit cannot fuse with others? Let me tell you. From the start, I have not placed any hopes in him fusing with your Divine Primordial Spirit! However, I have heard of a saying..."

"What?" Kara suddenly had a bad feeling.

Sky smiled proudly and said, "This guy could even convert the Mystic Dragon. Do you think your Divine Primordial Spirit would be difficult to convert?"

Kara could not laugh anymore.

According to common sense, the Divine Primordial Spirit could only be controlled by its original practitioner. After thousands of years of grinding while it was guarded by the Hakone Serpent, how much of Kara's consciousness still remained in the Divine Primordial Spirit was questionable. But the moment the Divine

Primordial Spirit was created, it was impossible to be destroyed. If Kara wanted to take revenge against the Gods, he needed to recover his strength as a Devil God so that he could fight them. There were only two methods.

The first method would be to cultivate from the start. He would need to cultivate from a normal person to a person with strong domain powers. From there, he needed to surpass domains and human boundaries to reach the level of a God. However, Prometheus' body needed decades to master domain powers. The body would have expired before he could reach God-ranked status.

The other method would be to find his Divine Primordial Spirit from a thousand years ago. If he could obtain his Divine Primordial Spirit, he would be able to control what he cultivated last time. He would regain his level as a God-ranked person.

The so-called Divine Primordial Spirit was not an energy. It was simply one of the methods the God-ranked people control their God-ranked strength. It was like a key.

For an average person, obtaining the Divine Primordial Spirit would be useless. This was because they would not know how to use the power even if they get it. It was like having a pair of legs but no body.

However, Fatty's words reminded Kara that the Mystic Dragon was in Rody's body.

Nedis' eyes were filled with tear stains. Sky held her shoulder and did not allow her to continue struggling. At this moment, the Hakone Serpent that had swallowed the Divine Primordial Spirit gave a strange roar.

That roar did not seem to come from anger or pain but...

Years later, Sky, who would recall that day, would comment that 'the ugly monster's roar sounded like it had a stomachache'.

Without any external cause, the snake suddenly and violently

tossed around as it roared painfully. Its body suddenly turned stiff in midair and fell to the ground.

Everybody, including Kara, immediately ran away when the monster fell as none of them wanted to be crushed by the snake.

Sky finally displayed some compassion. Instead of getting rid of Kara, he pulled Kara's hair and dragged him out of the way.

When the Hakone Serpent crashed, there were several cracks in the ground. It suddenly twisted its body. The others that escaped to a distance then saw a shockingly extraordinary scene.

One of the Hakone Serpent's heads expanded as if someone continued to inflate its body. The snake's body continued to expand as it roared tragically. It thrashed its body around as its tail continued to sweep the ground.

Suddenly, numerous cracks appeared on the inflated body. A slight burst of golden light shined through in the cracks between the scales.

The snake gave a blood-curdling scream before it exploded with a loud sound. As fragments of its body scattered, a half red and half gold ball of light flew out of the body.

As the ball of light left the body, the snake roared loudly, fell to the ground and then stopped moving. One of its heads exploded and its size shrank again.

The three-headed Hakone Serpent was now only one-third its original size. It seemed to have no more strength and lay down on the ground powerlessly. The three heads looked at the scene in the sky as it gasped for breath. Its white colored breath could be seen as it breathed heavily.

The half-red half-gold ball of light flew high into the clouds. A loud and long cry then came from within the ball of light.

The voice in the cry was filled with shocking and explosive power. The vibration of the voice caused the clouds to disperse.

The ball of light then burst into numerous fire that was like a meteor shower falling all around. As the light dimmed, Rody's figure could be seen floating in midair.

Nedis was pleasantly surprised and shouted. She was about to rush on ahead when Sky suddenly pulled and stopped her. He then said, "Something is not right..."

The aura around Rody's body seemed strange. He had appeared after the ball of light burst open. However, it was as though his body had no aura. He calmly floated in the air with his head hung down. It was as though it was very quiet.

Only Sky could hear that Rody was mumbling a meaningless whimper.

Kara also seemed to be able to hear Rody's voice and turned pale. "He...he could really absorb my Divine Primordial Spirit? That is impossible!"

Looking from afar, Rody's body suddenly moved.

His body stood straight and he looked at the sky. After that, there was a change.

An extremely violent aura suddenly spread out from Rody's body. It manifested in countless chaotic flows welling up around him. A dark oppressive aura spread out, seemingly able to cover up the entire sky. Rody's hair fluttered like countless snakes.

Even more surprising was that his hair was growing quickly.

As if it had a life of its own, the hair grew until it reached his heels. Rody then roared.

His roar was even more violent compared to the Hakone Serpent. The waves caused by his voice blew the few people away. If Sky had not shielded the others, the waves would have caused them to fall apart.

Rody's roar became more powerful as time passed. His roar was

like the tides that came again and again. Even the Hakone Serpent that was on the ground trembled when it heard this roar.

Sky opened up an aura field to protect his companions. He looked at the distant Rody in surprise and murmured. "That...that voice... could it be...?"

"It is the dragon language!" Kara's gloomily said beside Sky.

"Oh?"

"Hmph!" Kara was angry. "You idiot! I have already told you that the Divine Primordial Spirit cannot be absorbed by others! I already told you that the Divine Primordial Spirit is not energy. Do you think it was an energy crystal? Did you think absorbing it would make a person more powerful and reach God-ranked level? You fool! That would not happen!"

Kara hatefully looked at Sky and slowly said, "Let me tell you. The Divine Primordial Spirit is just a key! Obtaining it allows people to use God-ranked strength. It is useless for ordinary people to obtain it! That is because ordinary people do not cultivate to obtain the God-ranked strength! However, Rody is different. If he were to obtain the Divine Primordial Spirit, it would be more difficult to deal with than the Hakone Serpent! This is because the God-ranked Mystic Dragon is in his body!"

At a distance, Rody's long blue hair fluttered like the lake water. His body then went through a tremendous change.

Black and dark aura balls appeared from his body. It slowly spread out and surrounded him. After being surrounded by the darkness, Rody's agonizing roar became more intense. Suddenly, he stretched out the fingers of his hands and white light poured out. The white light was extremely dazzling.

Suddenly, the black aura balls around Rody split into two. The left half of his body shined with a white light. The right side of his body shined with a black light. Both lights seemed to compete and

consume each other while fiercely entangled with each other. Rody's eyes were closed. His expression became more and more distorted as he continued to roar. His voice filled the world. Even those in Sky's protective domain could feel the voice of the roar striking against their souls.

Gradually, the darkness at his body grew more and more intense as it suppressed the white light. Rody's body shrank into a ball as if he was trembling. Suddenly, he choked as though he was struggling.

Rody suddenly raised his hand and hammered his chest.

He slowly spat out a mouthful of blood. After that, he spat out something from his mouth.

That thing that came out was the red colored sun that had shrunk in size. Strange rays of light radiated from it.

"The Divine Primordial Spirit!" Sky was surprised. "Shit. Just now he was swallowed by the Divine Primordial Spirit. How did it become him swallowing the Divine Primordial Spirit?"

Kara's expression also changed as he shouted, "My Divine Primordial Spirit!"

Kara rushed out extremely quickly. Sky also did not stop him.

Rody's body suddenly stretched out after he spat out the Divine Primordial Spirit. The Divine Primordial Spirit slowly ascended like the rising sun.

Kara anxiously wanted to reclaim his Divine Primordial Spirit. He had regained a little bit of energy after resting a little earlier. He used up this energy without any reservations as he charged towards the sky.

At this time, Rody suddenly opened his eyes.

His brown eyes had turned black. The pupils in his eyes seemed to glow with an evil black light. His eyes seemed to lack human

emotions and seemed to be without consciousness.

He coldly looked at Kara who was flying above him and suddenly gave a sharp roar.

He suddenly raised his hand and a black ball of light was condensed in his palm.

There was a loud thunderous sound as a black fiery dragon came out from Rody's palm and ruthlessly flew towards Kara who was flying in the sky.

It was the Mystic Dragon Purge.

Half the sky seemed to be burnt by the black flames. From the point of view of Sky and the others, Kara was hit by the black fiery dragon and immediately burst into black flames. There was a violent blast and Kara's body was immediately covered with black flames. There was not a single sound. It was like the fiery tail of a meteor, disappearing into the clouds without a trace.

[Rody suddenly burst into laughter.](#) The laughter sounded evil. He then lowered his head and looked at Sky and the others. However, he did not continue looking at them as he found a more distinct target.

The large monster, the Hakone Serpent that was quietly lying down on its stomach.

Obvious to Rody, this target would arouse his interest more. He then roared. The black flames around his body burned even more. As he roared, a black flame shot down towards the Hakone Serpent.

Sky could only taste bitterness in his mouth as he was unable to stop himself from saying, "This is bad...I seem to have brought a disaster..."

"What?" Nedis was seemingly muddleheaded.

Sky sighed and pointed at the distant Rody. He then softly said,

"That is the Mystic Dragon! I have fought it for hundreds of years. I recognize this aura! I can't be mistaken!"

Raws said 'Rody burst into an unconscious laughter'. But that would not make sense as the actions of laughter would not have a consciousness, to begin with. Laughing unconsciously would also not make sense since he is 'awake'.

Chapter 289: God Vs God! (2)

The mountains continued to erupt but the flames had seemingly calmed down. It was no longer as powerful as when it first started to erupt.

Rody charged towards the Hakone Serpent on the ground with black flames around his body. The Hakone Serpent's roar sounded cowardly as its body shrank into a ball.

Rody laughed wildly. He smashed into the large body of the Hakone Serpent like a black fireball and then pierced through it. He returned to the sky like a shooting star, leaving a fog of blood behind him.

The black flames had already covered half the sky, complementing the thick smoke rising from the distant erupted mountain.

Nedis looked at Rody with fear. She trembled and said, "Hey. Fatty...he..."

Sky's face was grim as he looked at the Hakone Serpent yowling mournfully on the ground. He then said, "There is no other way. I am afraid the boy now has a [demonic](#) nature."

"What?" Nedis shrieked.

Sky had a serious expression as he softly said, "Ah...looks like I was too impatient. If Kara was not wrong, the Divine Primordial Spirit is the key to using the God-ranked strength. However, the Mystic Dragon is in Rody's body. Not only did swallowing the Divine Primordial Spirit not increase Rody's own strength, it even awakened the Mystic Dragon in his body."

Nedis turned pale. She could not help but hit Sky as she screamed, "You fat idiot! What were you doing? You...give me back my Rody!"

Sky laughed bitterly and calmly said, "Little girl, pray...that is the

only thing we can do now."

"Hm...perhaps there is a way..." Sith, who was standing beside them, suddenly spoke.

Sky and Nedis immediately looked at the old sorcerer.

In truth, Sith was also a powerful figure. Otherwise, he would not have become the leader of the Sorcerer's Association of the Roland Continent. However, that night, everyone there was at Domain-ranked or God-ranked level. It caused the old sorcerer to seem like someone without any powers. That being said, the old sorcerer's wisdom was still there. He looked at the wounded Hakone Serpent on the floor and suddenly said, "Maybe we should take advantage of this snake!"

"That?" Sky and Nedis were both stunned.

Sith laughed bitterly and said, "Now, Rody has gone mad. You have also seen it earlier. That masked fellow could not even take a single hit. Do you think you can win?"

Sky shook his head like a rattle-drum and replied, "I can't! I have not gone mad! I don't dare fight against that boy when his attacks are so violent. I will not be able to withstand that Mystic Dragon Purge. If I were to fight with him recklessly, both of us would suffer at best. Most likely all of us would die together!" At this moment, Sky's eyes lit up. "Are you saying to fight against him alongside that monstrous snake?"

Sith laughed bitterly and said, "Let us deal with it first before speaking."

Sky then laughed bitterly. "But..." He pointed to the Hakone Serpent. "That guy looks like it can't go on anymore...It looks like it is half dead."

"I have a way for it to become lively again in a short moment." Sith's eyes showed a hint of anguish.

"Good!" Sky made a prompt decision. "I will go and stall the boy.

During that time, act quickly! As for you, little girl..." Sky looked at Nedis and then sighed. "Run quickly. Run as far away as you can. This place would later...It would not be a place where a small vampire like you would be able to protect yourself."

After that, Sky roared loudly and flew towards Rody with Rody's sword in his hands.

Rody was acting violently in the sky. His clothes fluttered from his aura. He suddenly saw a man rushing towards him and shot a fireball at the man without identifying the person.

"Shit!" Sky placed the sword horizontally and blocked it, causing the fireballs to scatter into sparks. He then cursed, "Boy, your attacks are really ruthless!" He sent out a light blade with a backhand slash. Rody violently roared repeatedly. Both of his hands shot out two shockwaves. Not only was the light blade scattered by the attack. The other attack moved towards Sky.

Fatty was very agile and dodged out of the way. He then heard a loud explosion behind him. After the smoke cleared, a large crater could be seen in the ground behind Sky.

Sky then pointed at Rody with the sword and shouted, "Boy! You better wake up quickly! Otherwise, I will beat up your face until your mother cannot recognize you!"

However, Rody had really gone mad. Even without any effort from Sky, he truly would not recognize his own mother even if his mother stood in right front of him. He only felt that the fat adversary in front of him was extremely disagreeable. He suddenly roared loudly and rushed towards Sky. Although he was mad, Rody's strength seemed to explode out. His entire body became a weapon and rushed towards Sky's front like a whistling comet. Sky only managed to utter out a surprised cry before Rody knocked him far away.

However, Rody's actions were even crazier. Without stopping, he shot out dozens of fireballs that wildly chased after Sky. Sky was

then engulfed in many explosions and a sea of flames.

Sith had already run to the Hakone Serpent's side. At that time, the powerful snake was already on the verge of death. It had lost four heads and was no longer as strong as a person with a strong domain. It was badly wounded and was bleeding everywhere. The two big holes caused by Rody was particularly frightening.

Sith did not dare to approach too closely to it. He stood at a distance and raised his hand to cast a spell. There was a bright white light that shined from his body. It was the Light series spell, the Reshape Origin.

However, that spell consumed too much magical power. Even the powerful Black Veil Saint was exhausted after casting it once to save Rody in the Northwest of the Radiant Empire. The old sorcerer had already been fighting all night. His forehead was sweating buckets.

Rody was crazily attacking Sky in the air when he saw a dazzling white light below him. Rody, who had lost his rationality at that moment, only attacked the most obvious targets in his line of sight. He was attracted to the bright light around Sith's body. He stopped bothering with Sky and roared before charging down to Sith.

Sky immediately shouted, "Boy, you have not defeated me!" Sky's fighting energy burst out. The sword shined and revealed a large figure. The several meters large sword slashed at Rody.

A delicate voice then screamed from below. "Fatty! Do not hurt him!"

Nedis was fearful as she watched Sky's attack. Although Sky had told her to run away, Nedis was not a person who would run away in such situations. She firmly stood on the ground as she clenched her fists and looked at the battles in the sky with terror.

There was a loud explosion as Rody was struck from the front by

Sky's powerful attack.

An attack from a person with strong domain powers was obviously not a trivial matter. After being slashed, Rody was sent flying. He somersaulted several times in the air before stopping. He then gave an enraged roar.

Sky had succeeded in getting Rody's attention but he then suddenly felt fearful.

Rody stretched out both his hands. Black gas came out from his hands at the same time. The gas rapidly condensed into two black balls.

"Shit..." Sky exclaimed. He hurriedly asked the old sorcerer below him, "Are you done yet?"

Following Sith's guidance, a white beam of light shot towards the Hakone Serpent's body. Its wounds healed rapidly as Sith's expression turned pale. The consumption of magic was more than what his body could provide. He looked as though he was on the verge of collapsing. He heard Sky's roar and clenched his teeth. He was afraid that if he spoke, he would collapse before he could finish the spell.

The aura around Rody's body became more and more powerful. The heinous black flames forced Sky to retreat. Sky already needed to completely expand his own fighting energy to be able to barely resist Rody's aura.

"Shit. If I wait for you to act, I would be finished!" Sky did not wait for Rody to act and slashed with the sword. Sky's entire strength and fighting energy were contained in it. The powerful aura managed to cut a gap through the black flames. The golden light of the blade had reached in front of Rody.

Rody looked at the attack with scorn. He casually waved his hand and the light was smashed to pieces.

Sky shook his head. "Hell. This crazy Mystic Dragon is actually so

powerful. It was not so fierce when I fought it last time!"

Sky did not know that the Mystic Dragon was weakened when it had been sealed in the cave and could only use a small fraction of its power. Now, the Mystic Dragon in Rody's body had gone through several Dragon Transformations. It could no longer be compared to the Mystic Dragon in the cave.

"Old guy! Hurry up! I am not able to withstand much longer!" Sky saw the black balls in Rody's hand became more intense. He did not want to deal with it and flew back down to the surface of the ground.

At that moment, the white light started to dim but all the wounds were almost healed. The Hakone Serpent seemed to have regained some of its strength. It opened up the eyes of its four heads and roared as it raised its body.

Sith trembled a little before slumping down on the ground. Nedis quickly ran over to help him up. His voice and lips trembled as he said to Nedis with barely opened eyes, "Quick! We need to quickly find a place to hide." He then closed his eyes and fainted.

Sky had already fled towards the Hakone Serpent. However, the Hakone Serpent did not identify the others as allies and tried to bite those near to him. Sky then cursed, "It is really just a beast! It does not know how to repay kindness!" He dodged and was about to strike back when he remembered that the Hakone Serpent was only just healed by Sith. He then stepped back, spat on the floor and left.

The Hakone Serpent's roar caught Rody's attention. The black gas at his hands had completely condensed. He looked at the most conspicuous and largest fellow. He now knew which one to target. He roared loudly towards the sky. The loud voice suppressed the Hakone Serpent's voice. He then rushed down towards the Hakone Serpent.

"Good! Go and fight with him! I am not going to keep you

company!" Sky cursed and then went over to Nedis and Sith as he shouted, "Quickly go! That boy is about to use his attack!"

Sky grabbed a person in each hand and quickly flew away. The Hakone Serpent behind them roared angrily and shout out a powerful wave of light at Rody. Rody was struck and knocked back. He staggered a little in the air. His body was full of wounds and blood continued to flow out. He roared angrily as though he did not even feel the pain. The aura around his body also became somewhat more powerful.

Rody slowly flew towards the Hakone Serpent and let go of the black ball in his hands.

For this attack, Rody had gathered energy and condensed it for a long time. When it was shot, the entire world lost its color.

At that moment, the sky had two suns. One was the sun behind the smokes from the erupted volcano, over the horizon. The other 'sun' was the red Divine Primordial Spirit that Rody had just spat out. When Rody attacked, the spreading shockwave seemed to turn over space itself. The two suns in the sky trembled as though they were about to fall.

There were two roars as two black fiery dragons emerged from Rody's hands.

The dragons had flaming bodies and ferocious expressions. The black flames around was hellfire that could burn everything. The dragons charged towards the Hakone Serpent.

The two black fiery dragons were fast. Sky who watched from afar was secretly fearful. He knew that if he was the one attacked by Rody, he would not be able to withstand the attack.

'Hm...what if I dodge it?'

Sky laughed bitterly in his heart as he did not believe he would be able to dodge it. This was because a person with powerful domain would be able to lock on to his target.

The Hakone Serpent did not avoid the attack and charged forward towards Rody.

Both Mystic Dragon Purges ruthlessly struck the Hakone Serpent. The fiery dragons immediately pierced through the colossal body of the Hakone Serpent, which resulted in half of its body exploding. However, the badly mangled snake continued to rush forward as its head rammed into Rody.

The Hakone Serpent's life-risking attack was powerful. It dispersed the black flames around Rody after ramming into him. Rody was sent flying ruthlessly and then fell to the ground.

There was a large explosion in the sky. The black flames were all swept away like a hurricane.

Sky suddenly opened up a small domain which was like a ball of light. This small domain shook from the powerful storm like a leaf. It was as if it could be destroyed at any time.

The three people could no longer open their eyes. The black flames had spread and covered the world. In the end, only their hearing was unaffected.

However, the endless series of explosions caused them to feel dizzy.

Sky's domain ball was blown to about three miles away by the shockwave. Sky had desperately blocked it.

The explosions lasted for a long time. When the sounds gradually stopped, the three of them were still conscious but Nedis and Sith were in a daze.

Sky took a deep breath and fell to the ground. He then patted Nedis' face and ruthlessly hit Sith a few times. After casting a simple spell on both of them, they woke up from their daze.

"Where...where is this?" Nedis regained consciousness and gave Sky a weak glance.

Sky's eyes were dull as he looked around. He swallowed a mouthful of saliva and firmly said, "Take a look and you will know."

Nearby, there were huge cracks in the ground formed by the explosions. Beyond the cracks was a canyon.

A huge lump of earth was seemingly dug out by Rody's two Mystic Dragon Purges.

The three were at the edge of the cliff of the canyon formed by the explosion.

Nedis looked over the cliff and could not see the bottom. The smoke had not dispersed and it was not known how deep the hole was.

"That...How did that happen?" Sith suddenly cried out in alarm as he pointed to the distance with trembling fingers.

Nedis looked over and saw nothing.

Nedis suddenly realized this and she jumped up screaming, "Where...where is the mountain?"

The three looked towards the sacred mountain.

The originally tall and towering mountain was now missing.

The sacred mountain had been blown into oblivion.

魔 A reminder that the mo can mean magic/demon/evil.

Chapter 290: God's Record Reappears

"All of you wait here, I will go over to take a look!" Sky said as he looked down the cliff.

At that moment, clouds of dust were everywhere and the place under the cliff was unfathomable. Before Nedis and the old sorcerer could say anything, Sky had already jumped down.

"Rody boy, are you still alive?" Fatty looked closely at the ground, searching while flying forward. At the same time, Sky was surreptitiously vigilant. That boy had gone crazily violent and only God knew whether he was sober yet. In case he hid in the dark and shot out his 'Mystic Dragon Purge', then Sky would have been killed.

"Haha...haha...hahaha..." A weak laughter came from a distant. That laughter was mixed with the sounds of breathing and violent coughs. It sounded like Rody.

Fatty immediately attentively rushed over. Rody was tottering and on the verge of collapsing. He stood there in his already torn and tattered clothes. His body was covered with numerous wounds as if a blood man was standing there. He pointed at something in front of him and issued a burst of wild laughter.

Fatty looked towards where Rody's finger was pointing and immediately saw that thing. It was actually the Hakone Serpent.

At that moment, the Hakone Serpent no longer looked like a snake monster. Only two heads remained from the original eight. It looked like a double-headed snake and the body of the snake had shrunk tremendously.

Its length was about the same as the height of a person. With only two heads left, the Hakone Serpent seemed weak against Rody. It was vomiting and its body coiled into a ball from fear.

Sky frowned. "Boy, you have overdone it this time. Lie down,

quickly."

Rody coldly looked at Fatty. The murderous aura in his eyes made Sky trembled. After that, Rody's eyes gradually showed disdain. He increased his pace and advanced towards that big Hakone Serpent.

At that moment, Rody was staggering. He was so weak that he looked as if he was going to collapse anytime. However, the Hakone Serpent seemed to be extremely frightened of Rody, who was in front. Although it was hissing intimidatingly, it dared not attack. Instead, it coiled its body even tighter.

Rody looked at the Hakone Serpent for a while, with his already blackened pair of eyes. After that, he actually stretched out his pair of hands to beckon from the sky. From the thick smoke in the sky, the Divine Primordial Spirit that exuded a bright and bewitching red light, all of a sudden, dropped down once again.

As Sky watched, the following actions taken by Rody were even weirder.

He gradually spat out a series of indistinct characters. After that, he held the Divine Primordial Spirit in one hand, while his other hand was beckoning the big Hakone Serpent back and forth. The body of the big Hakone Serpent suddenly became smaller and smaller and finally almost turned into a miniature shape of a small snake.

Rody looked satisfied. Those characters that came from his mouth become more and more rapid. Finally, the Hakone Serpent roared as its body was hit by a group of strong light and it was quickly sucked into the Divine Primordial Spirit...

Sky was shocked as he looked at Rody's actions. He suddenly exclaimed in his heart. 'Looks like this boy is already able to control the Divine Primordial Spirit.'

In fact, Sky did not know why other people could also control

Kara's Divine Primordial Spirit. Rody's body, at that moment, was occupied by the consciousness of the Mystic Dragon, so he could not control Kara's Divine Primordial Spirit. The Divine Primordial Spirit was a key that could trigger the power of God's level. It had already resonated with the consciousness of the Mystic Dragon, that was hidden inside Rody's body. That was what made Rody violently crazy and almost entered the demonic stage.

Fortunately, even though the Mystic Dragon was hysterical, the power of Mystic Dragon that was inside Rody was still far from the 'Nine Times Dragon Change' level. So, it could not be considered to have achieved God's level. Luckily it was so, otherwise, if it was a 'Nine Times Dragon Change' dragon and with the Divine Primordial Spirit to bring out its basic instinct, then there would be no way in this world that could save Rody.

Rody was lost when he saw the Hakone Serpent being sucked in by the Divine Primordial Spirit. He seemed hesitant as to how to deal with that Divine Primordial Spirit.

At that moment, even though the consciousness of the Mystic dragon had occupied the body of Rody, but it had not undergone the 'Nine Times Dragon Change' and therefore did not have its own consciousness and wisdom. It had not reached the "perfect" state and everything were carried out by virtue of biological instinct.

Sucking in the Hakone Serpent just now was the only approach that the Mystic Dragon could think of then. So, prompted by the consciousness of the Mystic Dragon, Rody also applied that approach.

However, after all, the Divine Primordial Spirit did not belong to the Mystic Dragon. Therefore, at that moment, the Mystic Dragon was without wisdom and relied entirely on instinct. It seemed that it did not know how to deal with that Divine Primordial Spirit, that was in its hands.

Sky was standing by the side. In any case, he could not figure out what Rody was doing.

At that moment, the consciousness of the Mystic Dragon was in a lost state. Propelled by a faint instinct, it felt that that thing in its hands was very important. However, at the same time, it hesitated for a while because it knew that the thing was not its own. Rody then opened his mouth and swallowed the Divine Primordial Spirit...

When that thing entered his mouth, Rody's eyes seemed to flash with a strange light. He then turned around to look at Sky as his mouth issued a slight howl.

Sky's scalp felt numb and he was somewhat embarrassed.

Rody's expression became more and more ferocious. He clenched his fists and paced towards Sky.

In fact, Sky could sense that, at that moment, Rody's aura was extremely dim. His breathing was also very weak. His strength had almost reached his limit. The fight just now was so massive that it had already exhausted almost all of Rody's energy. However, he was still being controlled by the consciousness of the Mystic Dragon. As long as there was a target in front of him, then it would arouse his fighting instinct.

Sky held up the scimitar in his hand horizontally and shouted, "Boy, at present, you are already on the verge of collapsing. Don't insist on fighting with me. I don't want to hurt you. You..."

Rody suddenly roared loudly. The muscles in his body were trembling. His face revealed a somewhat pained expression. It seemed like with every step he made, he had to resort to all his energy. Obviously, he was at the end of his tether.

Rody struggled to raise his breath. With the palm of his hand like a sword, he seemed to rush towards Fatty. Fatty quickly raised a defensive posture. The moment Rody rushed forward two steps,

his body suddenly stiffened. After that, it trembled violently for a while before crashing down.

The ring on his finger, which was transformed from the broken staff of Moses' God, once again radiated traces of white light...

Moses' original purpose of changing Moses' Staff into a ring was to control the pair of Mystic Dragon's fetters inside Rody's body. However, just now, when Rody was violently crazy, the power of Moses' Staff was obviously suppressed by the Mystic Dragon. But, Rody was extremely weak now, and as a result, the Staff once again became effective...

That gave Sky a scare and he exclaimed, "Hey, boy, are you alright? I didn't touch you!"

Sky ran over in a few steps. First, he stood beside Rody and gave him a trial kick. Rody's eyes were closed with his teeth tightly gritted. He was lying down on the ground and apparently, he had lost consciousness.

Fatty was rest assured now. He bent down and gave Rody a hard push. He also checked on Rody's wound.

With that check, Sky was shocked.

The wounds on Rody's body was too scary. He had broken two of his ribs. There was a big hole in his shoulder. That wound was so deep that the bone was visible and blood was gurgling out. As for other areas, there were no less than a dozen big and small wounds. If it was someone else, with such severe injuries, that person would have died.

Without any more delay, Sky immediately put his magic to use. He quickly healed the wounds on Rody's body. His magic treatment was naturally very superior; in a short while, he had already healed the wounds on Rody's body. Although it was not difficult to heal those wounds, Rody was still unconscious.

Sky sighed. Carrying Rody in his hands he returned using the

path that he came from.

Nedis and Sith had been waiting anxiously. When they saw Fatty carrying Rody in his hands, Nedis immediately shouted and ran towards them.

Fatty laughed loudly. "Little female bat, I have brought back this boy!"

Just as his voice faded, he heard Rody, whom he was still carrying, suddenly give a low moan. Fatty was startled. As a reflex response, he almost threw Rody out.

After Rody fell heavily on the ground, Fatty held his scimitar in one hand and vigilantly stared at Rody. He then shouted, "Boy, are you a man or a dragon, say something to me first?"

Rody's body shook a couple of times on the ground. He opened his eyes and seemed to be looking blankly at Sky. His eyes had already regained its brown color and his face revealed a somewhat pained expression. He struggled to give a bitter smile. "Fatty, why did you throw me out?" Suddenly, there was a groan. "Damn...I...Why does my body hurt so much?"

Sky chuckled as he ran over. He pulled Rody up and laughed loudly, "Ah ha, boy, you are finally awake. Just now, you gave me a real hard beating." After that, he patted Rody on his shoulder.

At that moment, Rody was extremely weak. He almost fell again when Sky patted him so vigorously. His face scrunched up and smiled, "Fatty, not so hard please..."

Nedis had long been pleasantly surprised and had shouted. She ran over and pushed Rody on the ground. Tears streamed continuously from her beautiful eyes, making Rody feeling lost.

Sky frowned. He lifted Nedis with one hand and pulled Rody with the other. He shouted, "Well, little female bat, even if you want to cry, let me finish saying what I have to say first."

Fatty looked directly at Rody and said, "Boy, my time is running

out. I was summoned by you. When the time is up, I will have to return. Listen carefully, now. You probably cannot remember what happened earlier. However, the little female bat will tell you later. My main concern now is that you have swallowed that Divine Primordial Spirit and whether there will be any bad consequences...Ahh, I was too impulsive on this matter."

Nedis interrupted, "Then, will Rody behave like just now?"

Sky shook his head. "I don't know. I think he won't. I just thought that the Divine Primordial Spirit probably belonged to Kara and none of us can control it. It is like a key. We obviously know that this key has access to a treasure. Unfortunately, the treasure is in Kara's hands. Even if Rody has this key, it will be of no use...However, I cannot understand why the Mystic Dragon suddenly occupied Rody's body...After I return, I will ask the old skeleton."

Rody seemed like he wanted to say something, but Sky shook his head and said, "Well, later you can ask what happened just now. Do you feel anything unusual now? Do you feel that there is something inside your body?"

Rody frowned and shook his head. "No...I just feel that my whole body aches. I feel that I have no more energy and I cannot even bring out any fighting energy."

Fatty smiled. "You were seriously injured just now. Although I have treated you, it will still hurt for a while. As for your strength, you probably did not know that you acted violently just now...If you still have energy now, then something must have been very wrong."

After saying that, Fatty suddenly closed his eyes and frowned. "Well, the old skeleton is urging me. It seems like he cannot hold on much longer. I must go back immediately..." He opened his eyes to look at Rody. "Boy, take care of yourself." He suddenly whispered, "When you return, there will be a surprise waiting for

you."

After he finished speaking and before Rody could say anything, a white light emerged from Fatty's body. Immediately after that, he disappeared.

"He...he just left like this." Nedis shouted angrily. "This guy messed up this whole thing and he just left like this."

Sith gave a wry smile. "He is summoned here by a magical 'Summon Technique'. In other words, there is a very powerful sorcerer there maintaining this 'Summon Technique'. However, even if this person is very powerful, he will not be able to hold on for too long. When the time is up, he will have to call Fatty back."

Nedis stared and asked, "Must he really go back? Can he not stay here?"

Sith gave Nedis a cynical stare as if he was looking at an idiot on the subject of magic. He whispered, "Do you think that the 'Summon Technique' is an instant transportation? If it is as good as you say, then we, the sorcerers, can go anywhere we want. Within moments, we can move from one place to another. Do you think this is possible?"

Rody suddenly signed and asked, "Where is that guy?"

Nedis and the sorcerer exchanged glances with each other. They immediately knew that Rody was referring to that guy wearing a mask. Both of them did not seem to know how to reply Rody. Should they tell him that he had killed that guy?

When Rody noticed that the two remained silent, he suddenly frowned. "Looks like we got ourselves an insurmountable job. We have fought from morning till night, yet we still cannot find that thing that can threaten the Temple..."

Sith sighed. "That legendary thing is probably inside the mountain. That big Hakone Serpent snake, most likely, is guarding..."

Rody frowned. "Could it be that the Divine Primordial Spirit is that thing?"

Sith shook his head. "No, according to legend, that thing is God's Record."

Rody suddenly smiled, stood up and patted on the Sith's shoulder. He seemed to look at Sith. "You are finally telling me the truth." He paused for a while, before he lightly said, "That guy, wearing the mask had already told me. In addition to Divine Primordial Spirit, there is still another thing."

After saying that, Sith gave a wry smile and looked into the distance. "But, the sacred mountain is no longer there...Where are we going to find that thing?"

At the same time, in a ruin, a few miles away from Rody and the others, a badly mutilated figure struggled to crawl out from among a rubble of stones.

Half of his body was almost mangled. One of his arms had only half left, revealing blood-dripping muscles and ghastly white bones.

The mask on his face had already dropped off earlier.

Kara spat for a while. Although his body was trembling due to the pain, his eyes revealed a trace of deep fierce intention.

At that moment, the injuries on his body almost claimed his life. Kara crawled out from among the rubble and struggled to stay conscious and not lapse into a coma. He then put in great efforts to raise his magic power and slowly displayed a trace of magical treatment light.

However, at that moment, he only had about ten percent of his strength left. At most, he could only cast a low-level magic which could also barely sustain his life.

Although he managed to stop his own bleeding, Kara was in so much pain that he lost his voice. He looked fiercely into the

distance and gritted his teeth. "You bastards, I will return tenfolds your hostility today."

He sighed. He was ready to close his eyes to recuperate in order to restore some strength. He had to wait until he had received sufficient treatment for his injuries before he could leave.

Suddenly, Kara's heart was stirred. He faintly felt a very weak energy fluctuating from the ground where he was standing...

He was unable to deal with his wounds. He immediately bent down to dig up the pile of debris. He only had one arm left and that action made the wound that had barely healed just now, ruptured again... blood flowed incessantly...

Not knowing after how long, a mournful voice sounded...

"Haha...Haha...You stole my Divine Primordial Spirit, but I get 'God's Record' instead...Just wait. I, the great true god Kara, will definitely look for you who dared to have the audacity to offend God, to take revenge."

The wild waves of laughter were followed by a burst of weak coughs.

Chapter 291: Undress

On the road to the south.

It's been two days. Rody and the others had never been so miserable.

Since the injuries, Rody had not completely recovered his earthshaking strength. Although he had rested for two days, he felt that his fighting energy, from head to toe, seemed to have been bound by a weird force. The current Rody, notwithstanding his domain powers, was at most a tall and big man only. It looked like the fierce battle two days ago had left him with a great deal of damage. After he seriously overdrew on his energies, Rody had temporarily lost his combat effectiveness.

Sith's condition was almost similar to Rody's. During the battle at the domain powers level, the old sorcerer did not seem to have the ability to defend. In addition to that, he had overexerted himself in using the 'Reshape Origin' to cure the big Hakone Serpent. That resulted in him over using his magic and exhausting his strength. At the moment, as Sith had completely used up all the magic gems that he had for replenishing his magical power, Sith was unlikely to restore his strength in less than ten to fourteen days.

Nedis' situation was much better. In the course of that fierce battle, she basically had not fought. Besides that, with her negligible capability, there was no room for her to intervene. Therefore, she was the one who was least affected.

Rody and Sith were temporarily cultivating as they had both lost their combat effectiveness. Therefore, of the three of them, the originally weak Nedis had become the strongest.

The capital city of Hakone Kingdom, Kyoto, was blown into a canyon and the sacred mountain was razed into a level plain. As for the palace, [with God's blessing, most of the royal family members of the Hakone Kingdom had perished in that explosion.](#)

They then traveled south from Kyoto city. At the moment, their destination would require them to pass [through the southern part of River Home](#) to find the Sauron Kingdom army and converge with them. Under the current situation where two out of three of them were injured, that was their only way out.

All the way south, they noticed there were tremendous changes in the Hakone Kingdom. Obviously, the aftermath of that battle had caused a great deal of catastrophe to the Hakone Kingdom. The whole city of Kyoto was destroyed overnight. The sacred mountain which was a symbol of the dwarves' kingdom was gone...The dwarven race was defeated in one fell stroke!

The turmoil was just beginning.

As they traveled south, they discovered that the place seemed very chaotic. Numerous civilians had to flee because they had to protect and care for their families. There was a long queue on the road leading to the south. Those people originally lived near the vicinity of Kyoto. However, within one fearful night, Kyoto city and the sacred mountain were gone. Almost all the people were terrified. They thought that it was a punishment by God and so, they could only flee blindly.

'Where are they going to flee to?' Rody could see that those dwarves were at a loss and distressed.

The south? The war was going on in the south. The army of the Roland Continent was fighting, from day to night, in the south. 'Is going south, the right way out?'

During the time of upheaval, there would definitely be darkness. All along the way, there were robbers. Many of the discharged warriors simply turned into robbers, where no capital was required. Rody and the other two were traveling amongst those fleeing people. Nedis spent some money to buy a shabby carriage.

That carriage cost almost all the material possessions the three of them had on them. During such a hellish time, a carriage would

actually fetch an astronomical price. As Nedis put it, the money used to buy this carriage was enough to buy a small farm in her village. The price quoted by that scoundrel dwarf for the shabby carriage with a limping old horse even gave Nedis a kind of misconception. 'It is such a waste that this dwarf is not a vampire!'

In normal times, they would have just directly grabbed the carriage and horse. However, based on the current situation, Rody could not fight, Sith was just a weak old man and the remaining person, Nedis, would not dare cause trouble. After submitting to humiliation and paying a hefty sum of money, the three of them finally was relieved from the pain of walking.

That evening, Rody secretly estimated that, based on their current traveling speed, they would reach River Home in the south in two days' time.

There was a larger town in front of them. From a distance outside the town, there were some dwarven soldiers patrolling back and forth. Rody felt a little strange.

All along the way, they did not see any dwarven army. That massive explosion at Kyoto had completely wiped out the civilians, nobles, and armies. Now that they were approaching the south, they finally saw the dwarven army again. Rody's heart sank. The three of them were not in good condition and he hoped that they would not get into any trouble.

Rody took a deep breath while sitting in the carriage. He felt that he still could not summon the fighting energy in him. That was a familiar feeling. When he was in the Northwest, he had used a gem from Old Mark. That gem enabled him to have an unlimited fighting energy for a short period of time. The tired and empty feeling he had all over his body after using that gem was similar to the feeling he was having now.

In fact, Rody should really be happy. That night, the number of times Rody had used the 'Mystic Dragon Purge' was way too many.

In such a short time, to have used such a powerful skill so excessively would normally cause great harm to his body. If Rody's body had not been strengthened by the blood of the Mystic Dragon but was still that of an ordinary human, he would have died from the rupture of all the blood vessels in his body.

"Attention! Attention!" Five patrolling cavalrymen rode along the main road filled with streams of people. The leading cavalryman shouted, "Everyone, listen carefully. There is an order from His Excellency the Thousand Rider General!"

'The Thousand Rider General.'

Rody and Nedis subconsciously exchanged looks. Rody immediately tightly held on to the reins in his hands to slow down the carriage. Sith at the rear also drew open the curtains to spy on with his head. Obviously, he also heard the ranger shouting.

'Oda Nobunaga? Didn't he die in Kyoto?'

That cavalryman and a few of his subordinates were extremely capable of their actions. When they saw that their shoutings had attracted the attention of the stream of people, they simply went across to the middle of the road. After that, a few of his subordinates threw down a few big bundles from their horses on to the ground. Everyone cried out in alarm.

The contents of those bundles were all food. Although they looked like only rough wheat bread and flatbread, all those were enough to make the eyes of those hungry refugees glow.

That stream of people immediately stopped. They rushed forth towards those few cavalrymen.

The leading cavalryman suddenly pulled out his long sword and loudly shouted, "There is an order from His Excellency the Thousand Rider General! To all those loyal to the Royal Family, immediately go to Kashima Town ten miles ahead. Lots of food has been prepared there. For those who want to live, proceed to

Kashima Town."

That cavalryman was obviously assigned to perform that task. After dropping off those stock of food, he and his subordinates continued riding nonstop from behind the stream of people. As they rode, they shouted.

Soon the stream of people moved even faster forward.

Rody had some doubts. He looked at Nedis. Nedis frowned. "Kashima Town? That place does not lead to River Home. There is a forked road in front. The left leads to River Home while the right leads to Kashima Town..."

The three of them had doubts. However, since they could not understand the situation, they decided not to think about it.

After walking for half a day, there was a team of cavalymen blocking the road. The cavalry unit was quite big. There were about two hundred men. Those men were holding some signs on the road. Beside them were some plain-cloth soldiers. There were also people wearing different attires gathered around them.

Rody already heard someone shouting from afar, "One warrior, two gold coins! Two gold coins! His Excellency the Thousand Rider General has an order. One warrior, two gold coins! In the event that the person provides outstanding military service, he will be rewarded. Those who wish to get rich, come quickly."

There was a group of warriors in tattered clothes standing around that soldier. A person beside him recorded their names, one at a time. Another person gathered them into groups.

Those cavalymen moved, in twos and threes, around the stream of people. Occasionally, they would stop some strong young men.

It then dawned on Rody. He could not help but whisper, "This guy is recruiting soldiers and buying horses."

Nedis nodded and smiled, "He is merely picking some able-bodied men. We don't have to bother."

Rody said with a smile, "You are not in the army and therefore you will not understand. Since they are picking able-bodied men, it is not safe for us to go over."

Sure enough, as they moved forward, the stream of people started to disperse chaotically. Whenever some of the cavalrymen saw young men among the stream of people, they would stop them. Without allowing those young men to say anything, they would be pulled to the roadside. They would forcefully intercept the stream of people and gather them together. If any of those men resisted, they would immediately be punched and kicked. Some of the cavalrymen would even, on the spot, draw their swords and swing down...

Rody looked at the distant scene and whispered, "It does not seem right."

Nedis was somewhat angry. "Don't be bothered by him. We charge ahead. I believe these little fishes cannot stop us."

Rody sighed. "It's alright. Let's get off the carriage. Let's avoid the main road. I probably need a few more days to recover. Master Sith is also not feeling very well. With you alone, I am afraid we cannot dash through safely."

Nedis opened her mouth but still nodded her head. She was only a small vampire. Although her 'Blood Escape' technique was powerful, it could only hide her own trail. She was not effective in a direct confrontation.

The three of them hid among the stream of people. While still a distance away, they jumped down from the carriage. They surreptitiously used the wild vegetation by the roadside to escape. At that moment, the sky had gradually darkened. Among the stream of people, nobody noticed them.

At the side of the main road was a wood. Even though they were fleeing in the woods, they dared not drop their vigilance. Suddenly, they heard a burst of whistling sounds coming from the

distant road. After that, they only heard the sound of horses' hooves. Another group of warriors, on their horses, had charged over towards the stream of people.

Those warriors, their faces filled with murderous aura, were shouting. They were waving their long swords in their hands. The stream of people immediately ran helter-skelter. With a loud rumble, everyone was running everywhere. Rody faintly heard those warriors shouted, "Oda traitors, quickly surrender."

The first group of cavalrymen immediately mounted their horses. They held onto their weapons and directly charged forward.

A melee broke out on the road. For a while, they were scuffling in a confused mess.

The melee spread from the main road to the woods at the roadside and eventually they were all entangled together.

When Rody and the other two looked at that, they felt strange. It was obvious that both sides were the dwarven armies. Why were they fighting against each other?

Nedis suddenly cried out. Looking a little surprised, she suddenly pointed toward the distance at a warrior who was fighting with the cavalrymen. "That guy looks like..."

Rody looked and frowned. "Ah, that guy looks familiar...He is Hideyoshi! He was the warrior we bought at River Home after robbing Kikukawa Yukinari."

Sith also shook his head and said, "Why are they fighting each other?"

Nedis rolled her eyeballs and suddenly smiled. "I understand. Did you not hear Hideyoshi's men shouted 'Oda traitors'? Most probably it was because Yukinari did not die and has brought some men to fight against Oda Nobunaga's men."

Rody replied indifferently, "Let them fight. It has nothing to do

with us. Let's go."

The three of them dared not use the main road. They went southwards through the wilderness. After they lost their carriage, they also did not have any food with them. They traveled for a while before rejoining the main road to continue their journey. However, they were more vigilant and paid more attention to any movements around them."

Suddenly, they heard the sound of hurried hooves and a warrior rushed up from behind. Half of his body was covered with blood. There were two cavalymen chasing him from behind with the intent to kill him.

It was Hideyoshi!

Rody was the fastest to respond. He had already pulled Nedis and Sith a few steps to the roadside. They then lay down on the slope by the roadside waiting.

Hideyoshi was seriously injured. Only half of his warrior's sword remained. At that moment he was using that broken sword to fiercely whip his horse's buttock. He was in a sorry state.

"Ah, this guy is really useless. With so many men, he was still so badly defeated." Nedis pursed her lips.

Rody smiled and said, "This is something you do not understand. Although Hideyoshi had many warriors, they are mostly mobs. Those cavalries are standard soldiers. During a fight, team effort is very important. Even when the mob has more men they are absolutely unable to defeat those trained soldiers."

Hideyoshi rode quickly past the three of them. The two cavalymen continued to pursue from behind and they had gradually approached.

Nedis suddenly said, "I am going to help that guy."

Rody frowned. "No nonsense."

Nedis shook her head and quickly said, "It is not nonsense. I am taking this opportunity to grab two horses. This will make it easier for us to travel faster."

After she finished speaking and before Rody had enough time to pull her, Nedis had already charged out and carefreely stood in the middle of the road.

Hideyoshi was busy running for his life and did look behind. Of course, he did not realize that someone was helping him block off the pursuers. When the two pursuing cavalrymen, from behind, saw a person suddenly jump out from the roadside, they subconsciously pulled the reins and the horses slowed down.

After all, they were professional soldiers. They were a little startled, but they brandished their long swords and rushed towards Nedis. Their mission was to kill their enemies. Regardless whoever blocked their way, they would just chop them down.

Nedis' body suddenly drifted up and charged into both the cavalrymen galloping towards them. One of the cavalrymen felt a sharp pain in his chest. He flew up into the sky and, after a miserable cry, fell down.

The other cavalryman was horrified. He ran a few steps and immediately held tightly onto his horse's reins.

He then changed the direction of his horse's head and turned back to look.

Nedis had already landed on the ground. She stood beside the injured cavalryman who had fallen off his horse. Placing a foot on the chest of that cavalryman she exerted a little force with her foot. The cavalryman immediately felt like he was being crushed by a mountain. However hard he struggled he could not get up.

The other cavalryman was a little frightened, but when he saw that his opponent was alone, he plucked up his courage and drew his long sword.

Suddenly, two other people jumped out from the roadside. One of them was a tall young man, with a scimitar in his hand. The other one was a kind-looking old man.

Nedis shouted at the cavalryman, "Dismount! Hand over your weapon and horse."

The expression of that cavalryman changed. He shouted, "Who are you? Are you the traitors from the Kikukawa family?"

When Nedis heard the statement 'traitors from the Kikukawa family', her heart stirred. She immediately understood and shouted, "I am not bothered whether traitors or not traitors. I just want your horse and weapon."

"You are not traitors?" That cavalryman immediately felt a little more relaxed and a little more confident.

He shouted, "We are the cavalry of His Excellency the Thousand Rider General. Which family's warriors are you? If you do not have an owner, perhaps you will go back with me. His Excellency the Thousand Rider General is in the process of gathering men and horses in preparation for cracking down on traitors. You are in an advantageous position with your skills."

Nedis did not want to say much more to him. She first kicked and knocked out the cavalryman she was stepping on. She then walked in big strides towards that person opposite her.

That cavalryman immediately became wary. He raised his sword and said, "Are you tired of living? You even dared attack the men of His Excellency the Thousand Rider General!"

When he saw that Nedis did not respond and was approaching closer, his eyebrows were raised and his eyes revealed a murderous aura. "What do you really want?"

The good-natured and compassionate looking old man suddenly spoke, "Oh...do you still not understand? We are robbers!"

Rody was impatient and strode forward in big steps. That

cavalryman shouted and swung his sword down at Rody. Rody frowned and he voluntarily raised his arm to resist.

That person immediately felt a little strange... 'Is this man crazy? He actually used his arm to block my sword.'

However, he immediately realized something was wrong. That slash he made with his sword had not cut into Rody's arm at all. Rody had already grabbed one of his legs with his hand. With one forceful tug, the cavalryman immediately fell down off his horse.

Nedis caught up with a few steps and kicked the sword from his hand. She then gave him a cold look. "Hey, do you want to live or die?"

The eyeballs of that cavalryman rolled wildly. He could not figure out what was the intention of those three people.

Nedis gave Rody an eye signal. Rody sighed and with big strides walked to the roadside. He brandished his scimitar and a bright light flashed from the blade of his scimitar. With a loud crashing sound, an ironwood tree which a person could not completely embrace was cut off in the middle.

Although at that moment, Rody's strength had been not fully restored at least he was still comparable to a high-ranked warrior.

The tree trunk came crashing down. That cavalryman immediately turned pale and he repeatedly shouted, "Want to live...want to live, I want to live."

Nedis gave a satisfied smile and said, "It's not difficult to want to live. Just remove the armor and clothes you are wearing."

"Ah!" That cavalryman froze for a moment.

Nedis' eyebrows were raised as she shouted, "Undress!"

Although it does not sound right or logical, the raws is indeed as follows: the royal family died with God's blessing.

戸川市 is actually Togawa City, but in a previous chapter 川戸,

River Home had been mentioned as one of the cities whereas Togawa City was not mentioned at all. Therefore I assume that the author meant 川戸, River Home.

Chapter 292: Insidious

Rody was tall and that armor could barely fit him. It was somewhat out of place. Fortunately, he was riding a horse and therefore it was not obvious. However, Sith's armor seemed to fit him quite well. Sith sighed and smiled. "We only have two horses and there are three of us. What should we do?"

Nedis rolled her eyeballs and smiled. "Naturally, you disguise as Oda Nobunaga's cavalry while I pretend to be your prisoner. Even if others were to look, they will, at most, think that you are all unscrupulous soldiers taking advantage of an ordinary woman only."

They looked to their side at the two cavalymen who were stripped of their clothing. Those two unlucky guys were shivering in the cold wind. However, they dared not resist and appeared submissive.

Rody frowned. "What should I do with these two guys? Should I kill them?"

Nedis had a mildly disgusted expression. "No, it will be too bloody and extremely nauseating." Rody went up to give them a kick each to knock them unconscious. Nedis smiled and said, "Well, let's go and look for that young guy from the Kikukawa family. I believe if he were to see us now, he will be so happy that he will burst into tears."

They had enquired from the cavalymen just now and had some knowledge of the current situation in the dwarf kingdom. Sure enough, that war in Kyoto had brought great turmoil to the dwarves.

That massive war in Kyoto not only destroyed the entire Kyoto, it even busted the shogunate and imperial palaces.

Fortunately, Kikukawa Yukinari and Oda Nobunaga

miraculously survived.

The old Kikukawa general was very cunning. He had already noticed that something was not right with Oda Nobunaga from the assassination attempt that day. So, that night, he assigned the task of investigation to his youngest son, Yukinari, who had always been regarded as the useless one. Although Yukinari had never been given any important assignment, he was the only hopeful candidate left for the Kikukawa general to pick. That was because his eldest son had planned the rebellion and he was left with a dead end.

That arrangement was also with the hope that his youngest son would soon acquire some power.

However, Oda Nobunaga was, after all, not stupid. When he noticed that the old general had doubts about him, he actually took a risk in desperation. Before his opponent could give him any difficulties, he on that very night, used fake military orders and escaped with his cavalry out of Kyoto. So, the old general immediately dispatched his youngest son, Yukinari to lead another of his own competent troop, the "Maruyuki", to pursue and kill Oda Nobunaga.

Originally, Kikukawa Yukinari did not have the courage. He immediately went to look for Nedis, Rody, and Sith. In his heart, he had already become dependent on these three. However, he noticed that his three mysterious patrons had disappeared. As he could not delay his father's order, he could only brace himself to lead the troops to pursue out of Kyoto...

At that time, Rody and the others were in the fantasy land of the sacred mountain.

The following matters were relatively simpler. In the massive and alarming war, Kyoto and the sacred mountain were destroyed. Naturally, the shogunate and the Kikukawa generals were busted.

Even the dwarven royal family was also destroyed.

In the whole of Kyoto, there were hardly any survivors.

After that war, Kikukawa Yukinari and Oda Nobunaga, who were a few kilometers away, were stunned by that kind of major changes. Oda Nobunaga immediately realized that an opportunity was at hand.

The shogunate was destroyed. The royal family was also finished. So, he was probably the most powerful force in the dwarven kingdom then...That was precisely his best chance!

The following few days, Oda Nobunaga's cavalry and Yukinari's troop, the "Maruyuki", fought a few rounds against each other. As both parties fought, they moved southwards.

As Kyoto had already been destroyed, there was no evidence left for assassination and rebellion.

Therefore, Oda Nobunaga simply proclaimed himself as the new shogun general. All along the way, he gathered the local army and recruited able-bodied men from the streams of refugees to combat against Kikukawa Yukinari.

Kikukawa Yukinari, after all, was very much more inferior to Oda Nobunaga. Faced with such a shocking change, he had long been panic-stricken. At that time, a special character would stand out as conspicuously brilliant. That person was the warrior whom Yukinari had recently accepted, Hideyoshi.

Hideyoshi was indeed outstanding. He actually suggested some ideas to Yukinari. He encouraged Yukinari to claim himself as the shogun general and, in the name of shogun general, command everyone in the dwarven kingdom. At the same time, he requested support from the army in the front line, who were then confronting the people of the Roland Continent.

Yukinari also copied Oda Nobunaga; he gathered the troops from all the nearby small garrisons surrounding Kyoto. Although the power of Yukinari was much more inferior when compared to the

so-called "Thousand Rider General", Oda Nobunaga, he was still the son of the old Kikukawa general and so there were still many people willing to follow him.

Although Yukinari was not very capable, fortunately, that troop "Maruyuki" that he brought with him was truly one of the old Shogun's elite army. Yukinari occupied River Home while Oda Nobunaga occupied Kashima Town. Both parties were confronting each other.

The person who was in the most difficult situation was Kumu Yu, the commander of the front line army who were confronting the invaders of the Roland Continent. At the same time, he had received two orders. Both Oda Nobunaga and Kikukawa Yukinari claimed that they were the new shogun general. They asked Kumu Yu to obey their orders. When Kumu Yu first received news of the changes in Kyoto, he was almost frightened to death.

Kumu Yu did not expect the dwarf kingdom to actually suffer such a major catastrophe in such a short time. There were strong invaders from outside and strange natural disasters from inside. What was more cursing was the news that on the night of the explosion of Kyoto, someone saw in the distant sky the big Hakone Serpent

When Kumu Yu heard that kind of scary news, his first reaction was, 'Is God going to destroy the dwarven race?'

As for the orders given by the two shogun generals, Kumu Yu was still waiting to see. He was scheming for himself. Currently, he had a full thirty thousand soldiers. In addition, those soldiers were elite frontline soldiers. He was actually more powerful than the two self-proclaimed shogun generals. Those two guys, one was a dislikeable haughty Oda Nobunaga while the other was a cowardly incompetent young master. Why should he submit himself to obey their orders?

However, Kumu Yu was not very ambitious. He did not have the

idea of becoming the shogun general like Oda Nobunaga. His idea was that, while the two of them were fighting, he would observe from the sidelines. He would only intervene when the time was appropriate. With that then he could show his importance and finally, he would display out his maximum ability and reap the maximum reward.

At the same time, another reason why he did not move his troops was there was the fierce invading Roland army in front of him. How would he dare move with such powerful enemy outside? He was afraid of the war chariot team of the Roland people, as he was badly defeated by them. Currently, the only way was to go through the narrow mountainous passageway on the island and use the solid city walls to defend.

Of course, the cavalrymen held captive by Rody and friends did not know so much. What they had said was the current confrontation between Oda Nobunaga and Kikukawa Yukinari and also the front line commander Kumu Yu's wait-and-see situation. Nedis had guessed the developments based on the current situations.

Rody frowned and whispered, "Do you still want to look for Kikukawa Yukinari? Is it necessary to get into all this trouble?"

Nedis stared at Rody and said, "I had already put in a lot of effort on that guy! If he were to become the owner of the dwarf kingdom, I will be able to get the exclusive business rights of the ironwood.

Do you know how much that is?"

Seeing Rody's disapproving expression, Nedis rolled her eyeballs and immediately changed her tone. She patiently said, "Your purpose of coming to the dwarven kingdom was to find the secret inside the sacred mountain. Now, the Hakone Serpent is gone and the thing that you are looking for was probably blasted and destroyed together with the sacred mountain...We went through such great difficulties to get here and had suffered so much. Are we

just going to go back empty-handed? What a waste! We must grab something before we return!"

Before Rody could express his views to what she said, Sith's eyes suddenly lit up.

That time, King Sauron had two purposes for attacking the dwarf kingdom...One of the purposes was to obtain that thing that had a threatening effect on the Temple and it looked like they had failed. The other purpose was to conquer the dwarven kingdom and acquire their valuable ironwood resources. That being the case, then what Nedis said was somewhat logical. If they could help that useless Kikukawa Yukinari gain power and become the ruler of the dwarven kingdom, then the Sauron Kingdom could exercise control over the dwarven kingdom.

That would be better and more cost-effective than sacrificing tens of thousands of casualties and numerous lives in conquering the dwarf kingdom.

That could also prevent the other kingdoms of the Roland Continent from getting angry. The Sauron Kingdom, in attacking the dwarf kingdom, had already offended the other kingdoms of the Roland Continent. However, helping an obedient shogun general to gain power would prevent ire of the other kingdoms.

Moreover, Nedis and Sith are good friends of the royal family. Nedis was a businesswoman seeking nothing more than wealth. Giving her the sole rights to the management of the ironwood business would ensure that the Sauron Kingdom would still get the ironwood resources and at the same time not under the scrutiny of everyone. 'Let Nedis counter the anger of the other kingdoms of the Roland Continent. Even if they garner hate, they will only hate Nedis.'

As long as Kikukawa Yukinari assumed power and with the support of the Sauron Kingdom stationed in the dwarven island, then Nedis could have the benefit of making some money from the

other kingdoms of the Roland Continent.

Having figured out all those, Sith smiled and said, "I think it makes sense. That young Kikukawa had all this while been very obedient. It is not a bad idea to give him a helping hand now."

Rody sneered as he looked at Sith with a knowing look. Suddenly, he smiled, "Master Sith, looks like you a very loyal and dedicated to His Majesty the King."

When Nedis saw that Sith looked embarrassed, she immediately rushed to respond, "Rody, the army of the Sauron Kingdom is in the south now. Even if do not help Kikukawa Yukinari, the army of the Sauron Kingdom will still fight until they reach here. If we were to help Yukinari, it can be considered that we have avoided a war. It is definitely better to have fewer fatalities..." After a short pause, Nedis smiled unpleasantly, "We have caused trouble in Kyoto. We have blasted their Kyoto, destroyed their palace and flattened their sacred mountain. Let's just consider this as some compensation..."

Rody looked up at the sky and laughed. "Haha...Compensation? You, girl, sound very pleasant. I think if that young Kikukawa were to be under your control, I am afraid you will sell everything in the dwarven kingdom, including the people there."

Nedis smiled but did not say anything. However, she noticed that Rody was silent. Although she had not known Rody for a long time, based on her intelligence she had long seen through his temperament. If it was something that Rody was determined not to do, then he would simply refuse.

No matter what others said, it would have no effect. Then he did not directly refuse which meant that he did not firmly oppose that.

Sure enough, Rody pondered for a while and said, "I have not recovered my strength. Now, Master Sith also cannot cast magic. I am worried that right now we may not be able to suppress that young Kikukawa...I still need another five to six days before I can

fully recover. Then I can be certain."

Nedis giggled and said, "To handle this issue, we need to divide it into two parts."

She seemed to have already thought about that and slowly said, "I am afraid the three of us must split up. You and I will go and see Yukinari. This guy is too timid, while Oda Nobunaga is very fierce. What if Yukinari is not careful and he ends up getting destroyed by the other, then all our efforts will be wasted. It will be better if we go and help him. Even though you are unable to kill Oda Nobunaga and his men now, we can still go and help to give Yukinari some ideas. Moreover, with your current strength, there is probably no one in the entire dwarven kingdom who can defeat you. There is no powerful master in the dwarven kingdom. As long as we do not encounter any large troop, we will not have any problem with self-defense. We just need to wait for another few more days and when you have fully restored your strength, then we can easily get rid of Oda Nobunaga..."

After saying that, Nedis seemed to have thought of something. She shook her head and said, "Ah, I am afraid Master Sith will have to be separated from us...You don't have to go with us to see Yukinari. You go directly to the south and think of a way to get to the army of Sauron Kingdom. It will be useless for Rody and me to go there because only you can order them..."

Sith frowned and asked, "What is the purpose of me going there? Am I supposed to stop the army of Sauron Kingdom from attacking?"

Nedis stared at him and said, "Of course not." Instantly, her face revealed an unpleasant grin. "When you go there, ask them to speed up the attack and to make sure they defeat the frontline army as soon as possible."

Sith shook his head and asked, "Why like this?"

Nedis sighed and slowly said, "Don't you understand? This time,

our meeting with Yukinari will be different from last time. The last time we met him, he was still an unaccomplished young master without any power. Now he is a self-proclaimed shogun general and his subordinates have already acquired some military power. I am afraid he may not be as obedient as he used to be. Although now he has this great enemy, Oda Nobunaga, if the frontline army suddenly supports Yukinari, then Yukinari will probably not require our help. By then, he will not value us. So, you make sure the army of Sauron Kingdom defeats the frontline army of the dwarven kingdom as soon as possible. We must put Yukinari in a tight spot and can only rely on us."

Sith smiled wryly and said, "I am afraid it is not going to be so easy...The battle on the frontlines seems stagnant. I think they must have encountered some difficulties. Do you think that the army of Sauron Kingdom does not want to defeat the enemy? Up till now, the dwarves are still recalcitrant. They are actually able to firmly hold our army in the south. I think the dwarven army is not simple. Although they were initially badly beaten by us, they seem to have reacted very quickly."

Nedis thought for awhile and said, "Then, we just have to do our utmost best. Even if we cannot defeat the front line army of the dwarf kingdom, we must at least injure them seriously. This way only can we show our real formidable strength and also make Yukinari fear us. We must let him understand that even if he were to defeat Oda Nobunaga, he still cannot sit back and relax!"

Rody suddenly said, "It is actually not very difficult to defeat the frontline army of the dwarven kingdom..."

"Oh!" Nedis' eyes lit up. Although she did not know that Rody's true identity was the Duke of the Tulip Family, with Rody's super fighting skills, in her mind he was already 'The Invincible Rody'.

Rody pondered for a while. "You naturally do not understand war. In my opinion, the frontline army of the dwarven kingdom will most probably support Yukinari."

"Why?" Nedis frowned.

Rody smiled and responded, "Don't you understand? Do you think that a war is as simple as a commander leading his troop of soldiers to attack only? In a war, money is a necessity and so are the supplies. Right now, all the supplies for the frontline army of the dwarven kingdom are shipped out from River Home; and River Home is now in the hands of Yukinari. So, I think the frontline army cannot stay on the sidelines for much longer. When there is an urgency of replenishing their supplies, they will turn to Yukinari. I am afraid Oda Nobunaga is also aware of this. Otherwise, he would not be so anxious recruiting able-bodied men and gathering refugees."

"Then what should we do?" Nedis was anxious when she realized that her plan was not workable.

Rody smiled. "This is nothing. Although you are smart, your understanding of war matters is still lacking. In fact, there is still a way out..."

"Oh!" Nedis' eyes lit up. Even Sith looked hopefully at Rody. Master Sith was different from Nedis. He knew the true identity of Rody. Rody was the reputable invincible Duke of the Tulip Family of the Radiant Empire. As for matters regarding war, if Rody said there was a way out, then there must be a way out!

Rody sighed and picked up a stone from the ground and quickly drew four equal circles on the ground.

"These four circles represent the four groups of forces in the current island country of the dwarves...The first is Oda Nobunaga, the second is Kikukawa Yukinari, the third is the defending frontline army of the dwarf kingdom and the fourth is the army of Sauron Kingdom." Rody smiled and continued, "Now, ahead of Yukinari is Oda Nobunaga while behind him is the defending frontline army. Yukinari is sandwiched in between. At present, what he most hope for is the support of the defending frontline

army of the dwarf kingdom and what he is most afraid of is if the defending frontline army turns towards Oda Nobunaga. If that happens, then he will be caught in the middle and there is the possibility of him being wiped off anytime."

Nedis' eyes turned bright and she immediately understood.

Rody gave Nedis a glance and continued, "Since Yukinari has such fear, then we might as well increase his fear, psychologically. First, let him turn hostile with the defending frontline army. As long as he is willing to block the checkpoint of River Home and not allow the military supplies to be transported to the south...by then, even if the defending frontline army of the dwarven kingdom in the south has no intention of rebelling, he will be forced to rebel. Finally, even if the defending frontline army does not rebel, with the stoppage of supplies, then it will not be difficult for the army of Sauron Kingdom to defeat them."

Nedis giggled. She clapped her hands and happily said, "That's right! By the time the army of Sauron Kingdom defeats the chaotic defending frontline army of the dwarven kingdom, then we can dispatch our army to the north. As for Oda Nobunaga, Yukinari can deploy his 'Maruyuki' to have a life-and-death fight with him. The most ideal will be both parties suffer severely. At that time, when the army of Sauron Kingdom arrives, we will support Kikukawa Yukinari as the shogunate general of the dwarf kingdom...By then, Yukinari will no longer have his own army...He will have no choice but to be obedient!"

By that time in the discussion, the face of that gorgeous woman only had the unique smile of a profiteer.

Nobody knew how the dwarves were later conned until they lost their pants, but it was due to three guys who hastily dreamt up the scheme during their flight from their enemy along this wilderness in the roadside...

Sith, who was beside Rody, was secretly scared listening to him.

Sith could not help but give Rody a profound look as he smiled and said, "I didn't expect you can plot such a crafty scheme. It is so vicious and this is completely different from you in normal days."

Rody lightly replied, "War is like this. If you want to win, then you have to be unscrupulous. Victory is the only objective."

Sith sighed and seemed to mutter to himself. "No wonder...No wonder we were so miserably defeated by you below the city wall of Thunder City...You..." Having said that, he suddenly woke up and immediately stopped talking. He looked at Nedis, coughed a couple of times and then said, "This being the case, let's set off quickly. When we reach River Home, both of you go and see Yukinari while I continue south. I will go and find our army."

Rody frowned. "It's alright to go to River Home. However, all your way south, you have to pass through war zones. I am afraid it is not so easy for you to go through that place alone."

Sith proudly smiled and said, "I have also recovered a little bit of magical power. Although not fully, I can cast some low-level stealth. As I travel, my power will gradually become stronger, so you do not need to worry."

Sith suddenly smiled. "My only concern is Yukinari. He is really a playboy who hardly has any skill. Besides that, I am not sure how powerful are his men, the 'Maruyuki'. I am worried that before I can bring the army of Sauron Kingdom to join you, you will have been defeated by Oda Nobunaga. Right now, you are not a master with Domain Powers. During the military upheaval, you must preserve your life."

"Well..." Showing a profound smile, Rody faintly jested as he gently looked at Sith, "If I really were to die here, will it not be what your King hoped for?"

Sith smiled insipidly and seemed a little embarrassed. Rody sighed in his heart as he somewhat regretted lashing out at him. In fact, he did not have too much prejudice against Sith. During the

war, a few days ago, Sith utilized a lot of his strength to help Rody. In a sense, if Sith did not exhaust his strength to cure the Hakone Serpent so that the Hakone Serpent could draw on its violent attribute, then perhaps everyone would have been finished.

Moreover, even if King Sauron was afraid of the Duke of the Tulip Family and would finally plot against him after achieving what he wanted, it wouldn't be now. That time had not yet arrived.

Hundreds of thousands of prisoners of war had not been released yet, so the king would not dare plot against him. Otherwise, without the return of those hundreds of thousands of prisoners of war, the people of the Roland Continent would not be in a position to confront the Temple.

With those thoughts, Rody smiled and changed his tone to say, "Well, let's not talk about this anymore. You can rest assured. I definitely will be alright. Although Yukinari is a playboy, he grew up in the shogunate and he may not necessarily be a bungling oaf."

After saying that, Rody could not help but think to himself, 'Must playboys definitely be useless? Definitely not so! Do not have to consider others. Just consider that playboy in the family, now. He is a talented guy.'

After some discussion, the three of them made their decision. They would travel south towards the direction of River Home. The three traveled by horse and they managed to save a lot of time.

Along the way, they occasionally encountered some scattered refugees fleeing. When those refugees saw Rody and Sith in the cavalry outfits, they hid far away from the two out of fear. When Rody and Sith encountered some of Oda Nobunaga's cavalry, they noticed that the cavalymen would ride nonstop to the north using the main road. They presumably were on their way to intercept those refugees. Occasionally, some of the cavalymen would interrogate Rody and his companions. Rody and his companions

would casually say something to fool them.

Although there were loopholes in their disguise, because in the past two days Oda Nobunaga's men and Yukinari's men had fought with each other several times, it would not be unusual to see soldiers with broken armors. In addition, there was also a beautiful woman, Nedis, on Rody's horse. She was also in a sorry state. Some of Oda Nobunaga's men looked at her with a smile while the rougher ones laughed loudly, "This guy actually managed to grab a beautiful woman. Brothers, let's continue to move forward. When we reach the frontline, let's also grab a few pretty women to have fun."

Occasionally, they bumped into some clumsy soldiers. Rody would casually strike them down even though his strength was still far from the Domain Power level.

Indeed, as he traveled south, his body gradually regained some strength. He was still strong enough to deal with those low-rank soldiers. As long as he did not encounter a big troop of an army, he could still easily manage.

They finally reached a fork in the road. To the left was Oda Nobunaga's Kashima Town and to the right was River Home, which Yukinari had occupied.

After identifying the direction, the three of them headed for River Home. However, after a short while, they heard screaming in front of them. A team of about twenty warriors on horses rushed towards Rody and his companions. All along the way, those warriors on horses shouted loudly, "Get rid of those cavalymen who are traitors."

The horses' hooves threw up the dust...More than twenty shining warriors' swords charged at Rody and his companions. Rody grinned and stared at Nedis as he thought to himself. 'This is your idea. Now, we are wearing the armors of the soldiers of Oda Nobunaga, but instead, we are being chased by Yukinari's soldiers!'

Chapter 293: Dark Mercenaries

At the strictly guarded residential area within the city walls of River Home, Kikukawa Yukinari was looking at Rody and Nedis, who both looked exhausted. They looked miserable too.

"Blood Fox Nedis! You have finally appeared!" Yukinari was genuinely pleasantly surprised when he saw Rody and Nedis. With a joyful expression, he looked at Rody and said, "Even Lone Wolf Rody is here...Ah, where is Evil Star Sith?"

Nedis looked sympathetically at Yukinari. In all fairness, Yukinari was not a bad person. Since getting acquainted with him, Yukinari had shown that he respected his own people and accepted advice. Yukinari had completely believed their lies.

Yukinari was exhausted and his elegant and gentle demeanor was gone. He looked sad and depressed and his eyes were bloodshot. Evidently, he had been having trouble.

He was only a young man who only knew how to fool around. However, after he was robbed by Rody, further down the road he was involved in a struggle for power.

After the incident at Kyoto, he had managed to escape with his life. However, he now had to oppose the ruthless Oda Nobunaga. This was not something he was capable of doing.

Yukinari was a weak and gentle person. He patted his chest and said, "I thank God for his protection. I thought I would never see the two of you again after that disaster at Kyoto. I often worry about your safety."

Rody felt a little bit guilty. Yukinari's concern was very sincere. Rody coughed and gave Nedis a meaningful glance. He had asked Nedis to speak instead.

Nedis also sighed and laughed, not immediately speaking.

Yukinari had been constipated from anxiety in the past two days.

Opposing Nobunaga was beyond his ability and he was powerless. Based on his own abilities, he was no match for Nobunaga. If it were not because of the elite soldiers, the 'Maruyuki', he would have been killed by Nobunaga long ago.

In his mind, becoming a shogun was far different from being a 'young master that is set for life'. However, Yukinari grew up in a political family. He knew he had no way of retreating. Even if he did not want to be Shogun, Nobunaga would still find a way to quickly get rid of him. It was something he did not have a choice in.

He was originally a timid person who was lost as to what to do until he met Rody and the others. He really believed Nedis' words that they were brought here by his rebellious brother.

Nedis saw that Yukinari still wanted to speak and gave him a meaningful glance. Yukinari understood it and gave a signal to the few guards. He then led Nedis and Rody in.

Once he saw that no one was around, Yukinari anxiously asked, "You guys, where have you been? Right now, the situation is difficult."

Nedis sighed. She had an expression as if she did not want to recall her memories as she said, "That day, Rody left to chase after Koichi but ran into some trouble. He was also injured. Sith and I did not want to delay this and followed Rody to look for your brother. Fortunately, we left Kyoto and escaped the disaster."

Yukinari turned fearful when the disaster was mentioned. Evidently, that night had left a shocking impression on him especially when he saw the fire in the distance and the large explosions that could make everyone faint. And then that huge city went up in smoke. Soon after that, the whole world was filled with lightning and thunder rolls. Even the towering sacred mountain was gone. Such a terrifying situation had reappeared as nightmares to Yukinari every night.

Nedis also noticed the fear in Yukinari's expression and immediately changed the topic. "Although we were lucky and escaped, we had left too anxiously and did not take anything with us. Along the way, we met Nobunaga's cavalry. Rody defeated a few of them and obtained the information about you from them. We, the Dark Mercenaries, are very trustworthy. Since we have decided to help you, we will not abandon you. That is why we are here." Nedis showed a sincere expression as she spoke.

Yukinari sighed, feeling grateful, and said, "You two must have gone through a lot for me! But...I do not know how you ended up in such a miserable position."

"Er...About that...To make the journey more convenient, we robbed a few of Nobunaga's soldiers of their armor and horses. We then pretended to be their cavalry. You also know that the road was not very safe. The road leading to River Home was in Nobunaga's sphere of influence. We pretended to be their cavalymen and came all the way here." Nedis then quickly said, "But it is unfortunate that we met your men along the way. As a result, both parties fought each other. We were helpless and could only change into the uniform of your men. However, what happened later made us dumbfounded."

"Hmm?"

Nedis sighed and said, "All this while, your men were fighting against Nobunaga's men. If we dressed as your subordinates, we would naturally fight against Nobunaga's cavalry. However, if we dressed as Nobunaga's cavalry, we would be misunderstood by your men. With our capabilities, we are not afraid, but we still cannot fight against a large force. Besides that, we did not want to harm your loyal men. That is why the both of us decided to deliberately discard and hide our equipment. We dressed up like the common people so that the enemy could not find us. It was just like the saying, using the people to surround the enemy!"

"But why do the two of you still look as though you were in a very

miserable position?"

"Young Master Yukinari. Please let us finish!" Nedis showed a furious expression as she said, "Rody and I are still young and inexperienced. Although we did not make the wrong strategical decision, we wrongly estimated the development of the current situation. We have pretended to be commoners and successfully disguised our identities. However, we were still chased by both Nobunaga's men and your men. These soldiers of fortune were more ruthless than robbers. They kill and loot the common people. Not only do they forcefully conscript men. They also rob and capture the beautiful women! We took turns fighting fiercely along the way. It also made us very exhausted. That is why we now look like this."

"Such a thing happened?" Yukinari showed a hideous expression and exclaimed. "Those fellows are actually doing such things behind my back?"

Nedis immediately replied, "Young Master Yukinari, you do not need to worry. We have already taught those guys a lesson in your name! The Kikukawa family is powerful and large. The lawless people we encounter along the way here are small in numbers. As we have already taught them a lesson for you, it is no longer an issue."

Nedis did not want Yukinari to investigate who was responsible. Such a situation could hardly be avoided during these disturbing moments. Secondly, the more noise the troops made, the more unpopular Yukinari would become. This was beneficial to Nedis. If Yukinari received popular support and the unity of the dwarves, she would not be able to turn him into a puppet.

The third point was the most important one. Yukinari was not a strong leader. Otherwise, his subordinates would not have resorted to robbing the people.

Nobunaga's men did such things to gather strength and military

supplies. They also forcefully conscripted men. However, Yukinari was occupying the second largest city in the dwarven kingdom, the River Home. The city was bustling and it was densely populated. His men running wild only showed that Yukinari was bad at management.

On top of that, Yukinari usually did not have any good reputation. It was clear that he got command of an army through a sheer stroke of luck. It was the result of the old Shogun commanding them to find and kill the traitor. Right now, the Shogun had died at Kyoto. Only God knew if the Young Master could keep the army under control. If his men were to start a mutiny, Yukinari would be finished before he could rise to power. At that time, everything would be totally wasted.

Yukinari sighed as he pulled the two to a soft couch to sit. After the three of them rested for a moment, Yukinari opened his mouth and asked, "You two...There is not a day when I do not worry. Our country had suddenly encountered such a disaster and my heart is a mess. Do the two of you have any way to help me?"

Nedis intentionally plied on some pressure as she pretended to think for a moment. She then said, "Young Master Yukinari, I have only received news of you along the way here, but I think you are handling things quite well. In a critical moment, you raised the banner and gave orders in the name of the Shogun to the entire kingdom. This approach was correct and very decisive. After all, you are the late Shogun's son. Now that the Shogun is gone, you are the justified heir. At this point, Nobunaga has no way to argue with you."

Yukinari laughed bitterly and said, "Miss Nedis, I don't feel comforted at all." He sighed and looked sad. "Father is not around anymore. The heavy burden now lies on my shoulders. I have never felt such a sense of panic since I was young. On top of that..." He looked sorrowful as he said, "Father and Mother are gone... Then there is the princess... I had competed for the position of the

heir because of the princess! It is for giving what His Majesty the Emperor expects of me! But...after the disaster at Kyoto, I heard that the entire palace was destroyed. Not a single person escaped... I...I thought of the princess' death and..."

At this point, the young man was in tears.

Nedis thought to herself it was not the time to back down now. She quickly said, "Young Master Yukinari, you now shoulder the late Shogun's expectations. At this moment, you must not have such weak mindset!"

Rody showed an expression of disdain and secretly snorted.

The little bit of guilt he felt for Yukinari had instantly disappeared. This was because Yukinari had only lightly mentioned his parents' death. He did not look very broken-hearted from that. However, he was very broken hearted due to the death of one woman. He was very simple-minded.

Nedis shook her head. "Young Master Yukinari, you must not be like this. The current situation is still quite optimistic. You should be happy that you made the right decision at the crucial moment. Right now, you raise your banner to confront Nobunaga. As the successor of the Shogun, you can command a lot of the Shogunate's army. Right now, you are the rightful party!"

After some comforting words, Yukinari calmed down a little. Nedis slowly said, "What else are you worried about? Since Rody and I are here now, you can tell us your worries. After that, we will see if we can help you remove those worries."

Yukinari thought for a moment and then said, "I am now most worried about the frontlines with the invading Roland army." He paused for a while and then added, "The Roland army is powerful. We dwarves originally rely on the power of the Navy to defend ourselves at sea. However, they have now landed. I am afraid that it doesn't matter whether I win or Nobunaga wins. In the end, we will all be killed by the Roland people!"

This answer surprised both Nedis and Rody.

They initially thought that Yukinari would be worried that he cannot defeat Nobunaga or worried that the army at the frontlines would support Nobunaga. They did not expect Yukinari to be so insightful.

Seeing both Rody and Nedis looking at him with questioning eyes, Yukinari smiled awkwardly and said, "Don't look so surprised. I also did not know this. It was something others told me."

He then looked happy as he said, "You know him too. He is that guy we hired at River Home that day, the warrior named Hideyoshi. I managed to get here thanks to his loyalty and devotion. He was also the one that helped me win the hearts of the people at River Home. He was also the one that gathered people and bolstered the strength of my men here." Yukinari then sighed with admiration. "This person was found and recruited by us together. In other words, the two of you are my lucky stars."

After hearing this, Nedis subconsciously looked at Rody. She saw Rody look back at her meaningfully.

Yukinari then happily continued, "This time, becoming the Shogun was also following Hideyoshi's proposal. He also said that Nobunaga was occupying Kashima. That was where people flee to take refuge. In case Nobunaga draws in refugees and grows in strength, he suggested that I send a small unit to frequently harass them. This was so that Nobunaga could not progress without problems. Ah, I am really blessed. When my Kikukawa Family is facing such a disaster, I was given such a talented person!"

Rody and Nedis exchanged glances. They could not help but think that Hideyoshi was indeed capable.

Nedis pondered for a moment as if having a discussion with herself. She waited for Yukinari to calm down and then laughed, "Young Master Yukinari, your worries are justified. However, did

you forget what I told you about the Roland army?"

Nedis deliberately paused. She then assumed an enigmatic expression before saying, "Did you forget where I came from? Did you forget that Rody, Sith, and I, the Dark Mercenaries organization, were brought here by your brother Koichi? The Roland army from the South was also brought by him to obtain military power. He cooperated with the Roland army and let them in. This was all arranged by us, the Dark Mercenaries!"

"That's right!" Yukinari looked excited. "I did not forget! Now that you are here, is it possible for you to go to the Roland army and ask them to retreat?"

Rody secretly shook his head when he heard this. 'Yukinari does not know how to make major decisions. A war is not such a trifling matter that could be ended with a single word of retreat. He is too simple-minded, like a child.'

Nedis immediately showed a gentle smile. Blinking her eyes, she said, "Rest assured. Didn't you see that Sith is not here with us? He has already gone ahead to contact the Roland army."

Chapter 294: Fighting a One-Sided Battle

Yukinari had a pleasant smile on his face. "Is that true?" He excitedly rubbed his hands as he asked, "Can Sith really make the Roland army retreat?"

Nedis turned to look at Rody, quietly asking if she should be the one continuing to speak. Rody nodded calmly.

"Young Master Yukinari," Nedis gave a mocking smile. "you also know that the Roland Army was brought here by your brother. They have made an agreement with Koichi, which is why they took this risk. Koichi must have definitely promised them a lot of benefits. Otherwise, why would the Roland people come here? Do they find fighting fun?"

"You mean..."

Nedis sighed and continued to lead Yukinari. "Now, Koichi is already dead. His agreement for the collaboration could no longer be honored. Do you think the people from the Roland Continent would be willing to go back after taking so much effort to send the army here? If they do not get some benefits, they would naturally be dissatisfied."

Yukinari sighed and said, "So it was like that. It is easy if it were benefits. What do they want? Money? I can compensate their losses by paying double."

Nedis coldly laughed, "Young Master Yukinari is so generous!" Her expression became cool as she narrowed her eyes and glanced at Yukinari. She then said, "If it was just money, we, the Roland people have plenty. How much were you intending to give? One million gold coins? Ten million gold coins?"

Yukinari's forehead started to sweat. He smiled wryly and said, "Miss Nedis, you must be joking." He paused for a while and then he looked at Nedis' face and tested the waters. "Then, you are

saying..."

Nedis laughed in her heart and said, "Originally, we, the Dark Mercenaries, were the intermediary. We could naturally send the Roland Army back! Young Master Yukinari, we will not be taking your wealth. We have just met and yet you have treated us with respect. I and Rody can go back. Asking the Roland Army to retreat is also not difficult."

"Oh?" Yukinari's eyes lit up. He felt that Nedis' words were right on track and immediately smiled, "Miss Nedis, your words make me feel ashamed."

"Do not be ashamed!" Nedis coldly said, "We originally discussed the conditions with Koichi. Now that he is dead, at most, it is our bad luck. After all, Koichi is Koichi and you are you. Every injustice has a perpetrator. We, the Dark Mercenaries, will not be unreasonable. But...Hahaha..." Nedis then quietly sneered at Yukinari.

Yukinari felt goosebumps as he was stared at. However, Nedis did not feel it. Yukinari sat awkwardly and could not help but ask, "Miss Nedis, why are you laughing?"

"Oh..." Nedis laughed. "I was laughing at you. Young Master Yukinari, the people of the Roland Continent retreating is not an issue. The problem is that after we retreat, you would be finished!"

"What?" Yukinari's expression crumbled.

"You still do not understand?" Nedis coldly said, "Young Master Yukinari, do you think you have the ability to fight against Oda Nobunaga? Do you think you can defeat him?"

"No...I cannot." Yukinari turned pale.

"That's right!" Nedis continued to sneer. Her eyes were like an owl's when she fiercely looked at Yukinari. It made Yukinari unable to lift his head. This was the secret to Nedis' success. A lie would always have flaws. To bluff others, the first step was to not

look afraid.

Sure enough, Nedis' imposing manner had already pressured Yukinari. Nedis coldly snorted and then leisurely said, "Young Master Yukinari, I am guessing that your only hope now lies in that thirty thousand soldiers at the frontlines? Do you want their support so that you are able to defeat Nobunaga?"

"Yes!" Yukinari's eyes lit up. "That is why the Roland Army retreating now is crucial. For each day they do not retreat..."

"You fool!" Nedis glared and said in a cold voice. Her slender finger was pointed at Yukinari. Her fingertips were trembling with anger as she put on an expression showing resentment that he failed her expectations. "Young Master Yukinari, how could you have such stupid thoughts? Who...who told you such a stupid idea?"

Seeing Nedis angry, Yukinari's reaction turned weak.

Nedis dared to do this because she knew Yukinari. If she did this to the late Shogun, she would have already been angrily scolded and then chased away. On the other hand, Koichi would have probably just left while Nobunaga would have killed her.

Right in front of her was Yukinari. Facing her, he did not have any leadership at all and, on the contrary, hung his head down.

Nedis felt lucky inside but on the outside, she did not dare let her weakness show. She coldly said, "Young Master Yukinari, you are putting too much hope in the army at the frontlines...Hmph. Let me tell you that if you have such thoughts, you would end up facing a disaster."

"What?" Yukinari raised his head in surprise and looked as though he was in disbelief.

"Hmph." Nedis sneered and asked, "Have you ever given the frontlines any orders? Have they ever heard a verbal command from you before?"

"Yes...I have given a total of three orders using the name of Shogun." Yukinari replied.

Nedis sneered. "Is that so? Then what are their replies?"

"Lord Kumu Yu from the frontlines...no...the Thousand Guard Kumu Yu! He replied that the frontline is hardpressed and that it is impossible to transfer...he also said..."

Nedis coldly interrupted him and replied, "He said that the incident at Kyoto was too sudden, the soldier's morale is unsteady and that he did not dare to act rashly? I think he also probably said that currently, a lot is at stake and that both you and Nobunaga should sit down and talk instead of fighting each other. Am I right?"

"You...how did you know?" Yukinari stared at Nedis with wide eyes.

Rody did not speak but he sighed in his heart. These kinds of reply were just polite talk. Since Kumu Yu of the frontlines wanted to assume importance by controlling the troops, he would inevitably use high-sounding words for a reply. This can be easily deduced.

"Hahaha..." Nedis burst out laughing. She trembled as she laughed. However, she deliberately gave a compassionate look to Yukinari.

Rody sighed at the side. 'This vampire has a talent for acting!'

After Nedis was done laughing, she said, "Young Master Yukinari, carefully think for yourself! What is Kumu Yu's common attitude towards you in normal times?"

"Ah...it seems...it seems like he does not respect me much." Yukinari showed a helpless expression.

After all, Yukinari was the youngest son of the Shogun and had no real power. Everyone believed that Koichi was the future Shogun and did not place any importance on Yukinari.

Nedis nodded and then said, "Then let me ask you this. Based on his past attitude towards you, do you think he is keen to be at your beck and call, to be your subordinate?"

"This..." Yukinari immediately lost his self-confidence.

Without allowing Yukinari to calm himself, Nedis quickly asked, "What about Kumu Yu and Nobunaga's relationship?"

"It seems like...it is not too bad." Yukinari's voice became soft and softer. As if not convinced, he then retorted, "But Kumu Yu had been very loyal to Father."

"Hmph! Loyalty!" Nedis sneered in disdain. "Are you speaking of loyalty? Wasn't Nobunaga loyal to your father? In the end, he still worked together with your brother Koichi to commit treason! Fine! Even if Kumu Yu was loyal to the late Shogun, the late Shogun is no longer around. Are you certain that Kumu Yu would be loyal to you?"

"I...I..." Yukinari's mouth hung open and powerlessly replied, "I am not."

Nedis' question was like a heavy hammer striking Yukinari's heart. It was as though each strike of the hammer accurately struck a vital point.

According to common sense, other than the high ranking generals, the others don't take too kindly to a playboy that wasted his time. On top of that, Yukinari had a formidable brother. Nedis' series of questions had immediately demolished Yukinari's already miserable self-confidence.

After Nedis felt like she had attacked enough, she became gentle again and slowly said, "I have said too much. Have you understood it already? Kumu Yu is simply paying lip service to you. He had no intentions of listening to your orders. On top of that, I believe you are not the only one giving him orders. Isn't Nobunaga also claiming himself to be Shogun? He probably had sent Kumu Yu

orders as well."

Yukinari became restless. He had a complicated expression but still nodded. "That is most likely."

"That's right. After making clear these connections, the answer is obvious!" Nedis then continued, "Kumu Yu must have already colluded with Nobunaga. He is not moving so that he could wait for Nobunaga to destroy you first. After that, the dwarven kingdom would belong to them both!"

In all fairness, Nedis' pretext was full of holes. If it was anybody else, her words would have already long been exposed. However, Yukinari had been suppressed by his brother for so many years that he had no self-confidence. He had a timid character which made him easily fooled.

Sure enough, Yukinari remained silent for a moment. His expression was gradually filled with anger and he gritted his teeth. "Kumu Yu! He was placed in an important position during Father's time! Now that Father is gone, he actually colluded with that traitorous Nobunaga! I must kill him!"

"That's right!" Nedis struck while the iron was hot. "Nobunaga and Koichi have conspired to assassinate the late Shogun. This crime cannot be forgiven. However, instead of taking revenge for the late Shogun, Kumu Yu did not move and waited for Nobunaga to deal with you! Such sinister intentions...Hmph!"

Yukinari turned pale and slammed the table. He then shouted, "I will personally kill him! I..." Yukinari had stood up.

After that, his face turned white and he lost his momentum. He had realized that he was powerless. He could not even defeat Nobunaga, much less Kumu Yu.

'If...if Nobunaga and Kumuyu were to attack me from both sides, I am finished.'

Yukinari turned pale thinking of the danger.

Nedis looked at Yukinari's expression and guessed his thoughts. She deliberately coughed and Yukinari looked back at her. His heart stirred and then he threw himself on the ground. He clung to Nedis' legs and cried out with tears in his eyes. "Miss Nedis, Mister Rody, You must save me! When we met, you said you will help me to become Shogun...Now..." His snot and tears messed up Nedis' pants.

Nedis immediately felt nauseated and struggled to move away. Resisting the impulsive urge to kick him away, she forced out a laugh and said, "Young Master Yukinari, you do not need to panic. Although the situation is troublesome, it is not impossible to handle. If you listen to our advice, killing these traitors would not be difficult."

"But...right now, the soldiers under my command would not be able to match up with Nobunaga. On top of that, there is also Kumu Yu!"

Nedis laughed as though she had a well thought out plan and said, "Young Master Yukinari, have you forgotten? You still have elite soldiers in the South!"

"The South? Only Kumu Yu and his men are at the South. There is nobody else there."

"Go further South." Nedis laughed.

"Further South?" Yukinari's eyes then shone. "You are talking about the Roland Army!"

Nedis lightly said, "The Sauron Kingdom has dispatched fifty thousand Royal Knights and two hundred naval warships. With so much power, it shouldn't be too difficult to destroy Nobunaga and Kumu Yu!"

Yukinari hesitated a little. After all, he was not a complete idiot. He was afraid that if he opened up the doors and invite the wolves in, he would also get a bad ending.

Nedis was seemingly dissatisfied as she asked, "What is it? Kikukawa Yukinari!" She deliberately stopped calling him 'Young Master Yukinari' and instead called him by his full name. She then coldly said, "Do you think I would betray you? Hmph!"

Nedis' expression became even more unsightly. She narrowed her eyes and coldly said, "Don't forget. That day, inside the Shogunate at Kyoto, Rody had saved your father. Otherwise, your father would have been dead, Koichi and Nobunaga would have risen to power, and you would have also probably be killed! If we wanted to harm you, we could have just continued watching that day and not act! Why would we wait until now?"

Her last words were very powerful and wiped away Yukinari's doubts. He gritted his teeth and said, "Fine! If they are so heartless, I will be unfair! Miss Nedis, tell me what is to be done!"

After pausing for a while, Yukinari suddenly had a thought and asked, "I suppose the Sauron Kingdom's knights would not help me for nothing. Do they have any conditions?"

Nedis laughed and replied, "That is nothing! As long as you give us what you initially promised me. That is, the promise of giving me the exclusive right to trade ironwood once you become Shogun and rule the dwarven kingdom. That is our only condition."

Yukinari immediately felt relieved. He did not care about the exclusive trade of ironwood. 'Isn't it just money in the end? The dwarves already have a lot of money. If they want the rights to ironwood, they can have it!'

"This is simple! I can sign an agreement with you! In the future, the trade of ironwood would be given to Nedis in the future!" Yukinari had immediately made the promise.

Nedis' eyes gleamed.

She looked as though she was not looking at Yukinari but many piles of gold coins.

Secretly swallowing her saliva, she maintained her composure and said, "Of course. We will let some Sauron Kingdom's soldiers to be stationed here and guard the dwarves. The army would be used to protect you! Young Master Yukinari! Think for yourself. The dwarven kingdom had suffered a huge disaster. Although you have risen to the position of Shogun, there is no guarantee that there would be others with ulterior motives like Nobunaga. The knights of the Sauron Kingdom would remain here to protect you. You can then safely be Shogun."

Yukinari smiled without any doubt and said, "Of course, that would be best!" He was also afraid that his position would be unstable. He could not help but feel fear when he thought of Nobunaga's valiant cavalry killing his warriors. If the Sauron Kingdom's Royal Knights were to protect him, he would not need to be worried.

Looking at Yukinari's reaction, Nedis and Rody looked at each other and had the same thoughts.

'Cheating this idiot is really like fighting a one-sided battle.'

Chapter 295: Terrorizing with Military Force

The next thing was much simpler.

Nedis gave Yukinari a proposal to immediately cut off the delivery of supplies to Kumu Yu from River Home. This would cut off their combat effectiveness.

Yukinari had already been misled by Nedis to believe that the person handling the front lines, Kumu Yu, was an enemy.

Kumu Yu was treated unjustly. He actually did not have any alliance with Nobunaga. However, Nedis' guess was quite accurate at the fact that Kumu Yu did not think highly of the playboy, Yukinari. If the person giving him orders was Koichi, he might have immediately responded. However, Kumu Yu did not feel happy with the weak playboy giving him orders. On top of that, the Roland Army was approaching and could be used as an excuse to delay. Once a winner between Nobunaga and the playboy emerged, he would be able to return with a high position and be greatly valued.

Although he did not have any intention of rebelling, his action of using the troops to maintain his importance was accurately guessed by Nedis. By instigating a little she had confused Yukinari.

Yukinari hesitated for a moment when he was told to cut off the supplies to Kumu Yu. After all, he was an indecisive person. He felt that this was inappropriate and said, "This...should I summon the other officers and ask for their opinion? Perhaps I should discuss this with Hideyoshi..."

"Hmph!" Nedis grunted. This could not be discussed. Yukinari might be an idiot but his subordinates might not necessarily be idiots! Especially Hideyoshi. He seemed to really quite clever. Nedis' lies might not be able to get past them.

"Young Master Yukinari!" Nedis boldly said, "I think you should change your character! You are no longer the young man people despise! You are now the Shogun of the Dwarven Kingdom! You are the leader of the Dwarven Kingdom! You do not need to discuss everything with your subordinates! As a leader, you need to sometimes be resolute! You need to be dictatorial! Think of how your father did it last time. Was he always afraid to do anything and discuss with his subordinates first?"

Yukinari lowered his head. After a while, he became spirited again and showed an excited expression. "Yes! I will immediately give the order!"

He then straightened his back and loudly shouted for someone to come.

A voice replied from outside and then the sliding door opened. A young warrior stood in the doorway and asked, "Shogun, do you have any instructions?"

Yukinari put on a majestic appearance, but his eyes still showed his anxiety. "Have the supplies been sent out to Kumu Yu on the frontlines?"

"Not yet!" The warrior did not dare to raise his head. He respectfully said, "You have already inquired about this yesterday. The supplies have already been prepared and loaded. It is ready to move out tonight."

"Good!" Yukinari waved his hand and then said, "Pass my orders that all these are to be returned to the treasury! Not a single arrow or a piece of grain is to be shipped out!"

"Huh?" The warrior lifted his head from shock and said, "But... Shogun..."

Yukinari wanted to explain himself but then he saw Nedis' agitated expression. He immediately raised his eyebrow and shouted, "Bastard! My words are my orders! Do you dare to defy

my order?"

"No...no..." The warrior hurriedly replied, "But this is..."

Yukinari somehow gathered his courage. He strode forward and slammed down both of his hands. The two loud sounds frightened the warrior and he immediately lowered his head. His body stood perfectly straight and he no longer dared to speak.

Yukinari then shouted, "After passing my orders, do not speak wantonly! Now go and pass my orders! If you delay this matter, I will have you commit seppuku!"

"Yes! Yes!" The warrior then hurried away.

Yukinari trembled from excitement. That earlier feeling made him unable to help himself from trembling.

This is the feeling of a Shogun! This is the feeling of power! The ultimate power allowing you to manipulate others!

It feels great!

Since young, Yukinari had never felt so great in his life. He was originally looked down and treated as a playboy. Even if he was the Shogun's son, when he meets the other generals, it was only to the degree of being subservient. After being instigated by Nedis, he now felt a proud and elated feeling.

He turned to look at Nedis with genuine gratitude. He felt that the beautiful woman in front of him was the person that had treated him the best in his life.

"Miss Nedis!" Yukinari's voice still trembled from feeling touched. "I do not know how to thank you...How about this, just say something. If I can do it, I will give it to you!"

Nedis laughed and replied, "Shogun Yukinari, you do not need to be so polite. I would already be very satisfied if you gave me the exclusive rights to trade ironwood."

She had calmly said 'Shogun Yukinari'. This made Yukinari feel

even more joyful. He was so excited that he felt muddle-headed and could not help but say, "How about this, I am so grateful to you. How about you be my, the Shogun's wife, in the future! I will repay you with all my strength and you can also always be by my side to pull me up!"

These words had disturbed the hornet's nest. Nedis' smile instantly disappeared. Her expression became ice-cold. She cursed in a soft voice and kicked Yukinari.

...

"What did you say?" Oda Nobunaga was in a warrior's costume. He was sitting cross-legged on a couch. His coat was open, revealing his hairy chest. A long and shiny katana was by his knees.

In front of him was an officer who was standing. That officer had just given a report that made Nobunaga unable to sit still.

"Is what you said true?" Nobunaga's expression was gloomy. He suddenly stood up and took out his katana with one hand. He then roared and slashed downwards.

A long table in front of him was split into two. Nobunaga became angrier and angrier as he shouted, "Has that young Kikukawa gone mad? He actually dared to cut off the supplies to the frontlines?"

Nobunaga had received this report from the spies in River Home. He found out that the supplies Yukinari had planned to send to the frontlines had been kept back.

Nobunaga cursed, "That idiot's mind is broken! Does he not know that we would all be doomed once Kumu Yu's forces at the frontlines collapses and the Roland Army comes in? He is digging his own grave!"

He breathed heavily from his agitation. He looked as though he was thinking strenuously. Finally, he gritted his teeth fiercely and said, "Pass down my orders. Assemble the army!"

"Yes!" The officer immediately replied and ran out.

Nobunaga's breath slowed down. His eyes turned murderous.

'Hmph. Kikukawa Yukinari. I initially thought of letting you live for a few days but then you did something so preposterous. Do not blame me for being merciless!'

Nobunaga was a wise person. He could immediately see the terrible consequences of Yukinari's actions. He had not immediately gone ahead to kill Yukinari after recruiting soldiers because he knew that the biggest problem was the Roland Army invading from the South. He was not bothered by the internal problem known as Yukinari.

Until now, Nobunaga still had not immediately sent troops to kill Yukinari. This was because he thought of the foreign enemies. He wanted to wait for the foreign danger to be removed before dealing with the internal problems. If he were to fight against Yukinari, Kumu Yu may not be able to hold out on the frontlines. At that time, everyone would be killed by the Roland Army.

On top of that, the supplies being sent to the frontlines came from River Home that was under Yukinari's control. Nobunaga would be happy to remain at the back and expand his army. However, Yukinari's stupid actions had destroyed all of Nobunaga's plans.

Nobunaga immediately thought that Kumu Yu would be immediately routed without supplies. When the Roland Army's knights and chariots dive straight in, even his army would not be a worthy adversary.

'I have not dealt with him because I considered the entire situation! I was thinking of dealing with the foreign elements first! Does he think I am afraid of his 'Maruyuki'? Hmph! What a joke!'

'But this idiot had to suddenly do something foolish!'

'There is no choice. I can only risk it and destroy Yukinari first!'

Once I occupy River Home, I can support the frontlines and drive away the Roland Army. The dwarf kingdom would then belong to me!'

'All that is left is Kumu Yu. I still understand him. He is not someone who is ambitious. He is just taking this opportunity to gain some benefits. Since I have major plans, there must be some tolerance! A leader must tolerate those that are difficult to tolerate!'

'Hmph!'

Nobunaga heard the sound of the army outside and stopped daydreaming. He immediately dressed neatly and then grabbed his katana. He walked out of the room and loudly shouted, "Bring me my horse!"

...

Hideyoshi was wrapped in yarn cloth, but he still looked very spirited. He did not show any agony on his face. He straightened his body and brought his subordinates around River Home mobilizing the defenses.

Hideyoshi always had high aspirations. He was initially a warrior without a successful career. He was confident in his strength and will. Besides that, he was also prestigious amongst the other warriors that were out of luck at the River Home market. Many people respected him and lots of people were willing to follow him.

He had not expected the opportunity to come so quickly.

He was suddenly recruited by the Kikukawa Family. At that time, Hideyoshi had thought of joining the Kikukawa Family and become recognized for his skills in the future. He did not expect God to play a trick on him.

In a single night, the powerful Kikukawa Family was destroyed.

'It was a natural disaster! The Shogun is dead! The Royal Family are dead! Kyoto is also destroyed! The ideal life I had for following

the Young Master Yukinari is also finished!'

'This Young Master Yukinari is also not a respectable person. Although he is my master, he is a bungling oaf without ability. He is cowardly and indecisive. He would soon be killed by Nobunaga.'

However, Hideyoshi suddenly changed his thoughts. 'Isn't this an opportunity? An incompetent master would allow me to work from within! If I take this opportunity to obtain power, I would be able to rise above others! In the past few days, Yukinari trusts me more and more. He accepts and complies with the suggestions I give him.' Hideyoshi had spared no effort to help Yukinari. This was because it would be easier to get promoted under such a master.

'Perhaps even one day, once I become fully fledged...Hahaha...'

Every time Hideyoshi thought of this, his eyes showed a clear trace of ambition.

Hideyoshi had also thought of betraying Yukinari and then joining Nobunaga. However, Nobunaga was too smart. Nobunaga was also the Commander of the cavalry and would naturally have his own trusted officers. 'If I go there, it would be difficult to be placed in an important position. I might as well stay here. Yukinari depends on me so much I am pretty much the second-in-command already!'

However, Hideyoshi immediately panicked when he heard the reports of the men that night.

'Has Yukinari gone mad? He has given such a ridiculous order! Does he not know that we are all living steadily here because Kumu Yu is resisting against the Roland Army outside?'

Hideyoshi ignored the pain in his body and hurried to the temporary Shogunate to see the Shogun, Yukinari.

The guards did not stop him. They knew that this warrior was Yukinari's favorite. Hideyoshi walked with large strides in the

courtyard. He walked in without waiting for the people to announce his arrival.

'This is something urgent!'

It was at night. The moonlight was bright as the night breeze blew gently. Although Yukinari had no ability, it had to be admitted that he was very elegant. Even the layout of the courtyard of the temporary Shogunate was very sentimental.

There was a small pond. Yukinari liked to watch the moon quietly next to it. It seems that it was the only time every day when he could let go of the worries in his heart.

Hideyoshi knew of Yukinari's habit and immediately went there. However, Yukinari was not around.

Hideyoshi then saw another scene. There was a slender figure at the pondside with plum blossoms and enchanting moonlight.

The night breeze caused her clothes to flutter. The moonlight colored her hair silver.

She sat by the pond like a sculpture. The pond water rippled by her feet. The night breeze blew as red petals scattered onto the water. Her beautiful legs refused to move together with the water.

She had a lonely expression as she looked at the distant dark blue sky. Her eyes seemed sad as she sighed, hiding her frustration.

Her sigh made Hideyoshi's thirty-year-old heart suddenly twitch.

But then, Hideyoshi suddenly saw another person. It was a man.

The beautiful woman that made his heart move had sighed. The bitterness in her eyes was all for that man.

The man looked very young and had an angular face. He did not smile and looked very calm.

He was extremely tall – that was, by the dwarven race's standards.

Hideyoshi was in a trance for a moment. He then recognized the two people. These two were the people that came to the River Home together with Yukinari to recruit him.

The man's appearance had not changed. However, he had become much taller. On his waist was a strange curved sword. Hideyoshi looked at the curved sword for about two seconds before the other party looked over.

It was awe-inspiring gaze filled with an intangible oppression. At that moment, Hideyoshi became dazzled and lowered his head. It seemed as though he did not dare look at the person face-to-face.

As a warrior, Hideyoshi was very familiar with this kind of imposing aura. The aura is kind of faint yet impossible to defy! People with this aura are often used to commanding. They are used to giving orders and are accustomed to controlling the life and death of others.

In front of such a person, Hideyoshi suddenly felt extremely small and unable to defy.

At the same time, Hideyoshi's instincts as a warrior allowed him to understand that this aura was definitely not something obtained from birth. It was something that was forged over corpses.

In fact, that night, Rody and Nedis did not intend to go to the courtyard and meet each other.

Rody felt strange and simply went to the courtyard to take a breather. Nedis had secretly followed him.

Seeing Rody stand at the edge of the pool and was seemingly in a trance, Nedis smiled and walked over.

The little vampire Nedis had special feelings for the man named Rody.

The first time they met, Rody was not baffled by her charm. In front of a crowd, he mercilessly slapped her backside. That bitter experience still had Nedis feeling agitated when she remembered

it.

Another time, she and Darke had been trapped by a vampire. Both of them had almost died. However, Rody calmly came out from the woods. He looked very calm and had an imposing manner that seemingly held everything in contempt. What made Nedis shocked was that Rody easily made the other vampire burn. That spirit made Nedis unable to forget his figure.

She obviously knew that he was Miss Nicole's lover, but she could no longer keep him out of her mind.

After that, they met again in the Roland Continent...She then secretly followed him onto the boat. During the days she hid in his cabin, she could feel that Rody had a strange hatred for vampires... Since young, she had never met any man who was not attracted to her. However, while being stuck with her in the hold of the ship cabin for a few days, this guy had a cold indifference towards her from the beginning until the end.

Later that night, a battle had broken out at the ocean. He had held her with one arm and broken through the explosive blaze unhindered. Nobody could stop him. On that battlefield, he was like an invincible God.

Then at the dwarven kingdom, there was that battle at the sacred mountain. He had displayed such extreme power...

Nedis' heart was no longer able to suppress her feelings. She could not help but give a gentle cough.

Rody, who had been in deep thought, simply turned his head around to look at her. He faintly said, "You are here."

Nedis felt a little disappointed but she still smiled sweetly and went to Rody's side. She took off her shoes and stretched out her feet into the water. She then smiled and said, "What are you thinking about?"

Rody's reply made Nedis almost vomit out blood.

"I was thinking of Nicole..." Rody sighed. "I met her in the Imperial Capital on this day, last year. Time flies. A year has actually passed already."

Nedis' movements turned stiff for a moment. Her sweet smile turned bitter.

At this moment, Hideyoshi arrived.

Nedis naturally recognized Hideyoshi. She immediately hid her own feelings and said, "I am going back. You deal with this fellow."

She had even lost the mood to deal with Hideyoshi. With a bad temper, Nedis went to look for a place devoid of people to vent.

Once Nedis had left like a gust of wind, Rody looked at Hideyoshi's face and slowly walked over.

The hairs on Hideyoshi's body stood up. He saw the man walking towards him and felt like a weak sheep facing a lion.

"Are you nervous?" Rody laughed.

Hideyoshi suppressed the alarmed feeling in his heart and straightened his body. He said, "I...I recognize you."

Rody nodded and replied. "Yes. I also remember you, Hideyoshi."

Hideyoshi gritted his teeth and said, "I...I came to see Young Master Yukinari. Today, he had given an order..."

Rody's eyes suddenly gazed coldly at Hideyoshi's face. It was as though his cold gaze turned sharp and cut into his heart. Hideyoshi involuntarily stopped speaking.

"Your eyes tell me that you are an ambitious person." Rody indifferently said.

Hideyoshi immediately felt tensed.

Rody suddenly walked over and gently put his hand on Hideyoshi's shoulders. His voice rang in Hideyoshi's ears. "Right now, I will speak and you will listen. Unless I ask you anything,

you do not speak. Understand?"

Hideyoshi subconsciously nodded.

"You must remember this. Right now, you are just a subordinate. Yukinari is your master. Before anything else, you must bear in mind one point..." Rody's eyes looked down towards the katana on Hideyoshi's waist. "A qualified subordinate should not be wearing weapons in the inner courtyard of his master. This is not just courtesy but also the rules. You better remember this."

Rody's hand pressed down on Hideyoshi's shoulder. Hideyoshi's body turned stiff. He could feel Rody's boundless aura pressure him until he felt breathless.

"I know why you came here. I know what you intend to say to Yukinari." Rody continued. His voice was not stern. On the contrary, it was very gentle. "However, you do not need to say anything else about this."

Rody loosened his grip on Hideyoshi's shoulders and walked behind him. The moment his hand left the shoulder, Hideyoshi immediately felt relaxed.

However, Rody's following words made Hideyoshi's nerves tighten.

"Remember your identity! Do not say things you are not supposed to say. Do not think of things you are not supposed to think of. Do not ask about things you are not supposed to know. Do not do things you are not supposed to do!" Rody's voice came from behind. He slowly and gently added, "That is if you want to live well."

After pausing for a while, Rody asked, "Do you understand?"

"I...I understand..." Hideyoshi heard himself answer.

"Good." Rody replied, "Remember this. Do not make me say it a second time. If I say it a second time, you will regret it."

After that, Rody slowly walked away.

Hideyoshi felt the back of his clothes soaked with sweat. He felt a biting cold from the night breeze.

That guy...

For some reason, Hideyoshi felt as though that person could kill him with a wave of his hand if he wanted to. That kind of aura could not be faked.

Hideyoshi felt that this kind of aura that was bursting with oppression was not something one was born with.

It was obtained from many piles of corpses.

Thinking of this, Hideyoshi moistened his dry lips as he looked at the main hall. He remembered his purpose of coming here.

Suddenly, he stomped his feet, and turning around, he left.

Chapter 296: Black Veil Again!

Near the hour of dawn, the moon remained on the horizon. Meanwhile, the east started to turn bright. The soldiers at the gates of River Home looked tired and struggling to hold their weapons.

The hours before dawn were the hours where people were most tired.

A group of soldiers walked on the main street behind the city gates. A few shadowy figures appeared at the corner of the street.

These people held katanas in their hands but they wrapped the blade with a black cloth to prevent their flash from exposing them.

At the gates, there were four soldiers slacking off. Among these four, three of them had already fallen asleep. The remaining one was fighting against his drowsiness.

At this time, the few figures rushed forward. The one that had not fallen asleep did not even have the time to cry out in alarm before a blade cut into his throat.

Blood sprayed out and the other three men up work up. However, someone had already stabbed them with a knife. The killers were very skillful and had targeted the neck.

By cutting in that very spot, the victim would not be able to make any sound.

After killing the guards at the gate, they lowered the corpses to the ground. They feared that too many movements would alert the soldiers on the gate.

Two of them then took out something. These two objects combined together to form a sharp saw.

The dwarves really deserved their reputations as those that were good at making tools.

They started to see the capstan controlling the gates. Everything was going on quietly.

By the time the patrol soldiers returned, they had already opened the gates.

"Who is it?" The patrolling soldiers roared out as they rushed forward.

The people launching the sneak attack were already aware that they had been discovered. The one in front laughed sadly and shouted. "Men! It is time to die loyally for the Thousand Rider General!"

They drew their weapons and fought against the patrolling soldiers. One other person had already opened up a small seam at the gate. He also took out a small cask and opened it.

Swish!

There was a clear and melodious sound as flames soared into the sky, blooming into a dazzling firework.

With this, all the defending soldiers woke up. However, before they could recover, at a distant point on the horizon outside the gates, dark shadows had appeared.

The thundering roar of the horses' hooves was like the rain, ruthlessly beating at the hearts of the defenders.

'It is Oda Nobunaga's cavalry!'

It was not known who roared out first. The warriors then grabbed their weapons. Some of them picked up bows and arrows. The officers all hurriedly gave commands to their subordinates.

Most of the ones that launched the sneak attack under the gates had already been beheaded.

The soldiers were frightened and went towards the city gates. They tried to close back the city gates. However, the capstan was already destroyed. The few people were unable to move the heavy

iron gate.

The distant cavalry started to approach like a flood and the warriors became frightened.

Suddenly, a voice from behind them shouted, "Follow me!"

Rody had heard the sounds of battle at the gates earlier and rushed over. He had quickly rushed towards the front like lightning.

When others were afraid and a person stood out to take the lead, others would blindly follow.

These soldiers that heard Rody's orders involuntarily rushed out with him.

"Group up and hold the lines!" Rody's deep voice rang out in the night, giving a calming effect. "Front row, lift your shields and maintain a close formation! Block the gates!"

The Maruyuki were the elites of the dwarves. At that moment, more soldiers came down to the city gates following the orders of the officers.

Within a short moment, a simple square-shaped formation was organized in front of the city gates.

Nobunaga's cavalry soon reached the front. It was like a flood striking at the square-shaped formation. The horses that bumped into the shields were thrown off their feet along with their riders.

The cavalymen immediately fell down and were soon killed by the Maruyuki soldiers.

However, Nobunaga's cavalries were also elites. They charged towards the city gates in waves.

Nobunaga saw that the gates had already been opened by the spies inside and felt victory close at hand. He refused to give up this opportunity and had given a death order for the cavalymen to rush into the gates.

They just needed to break through the square-formation at the entrance and rush into the gate to win.

Soon, corpses could be seen stacking up by the entrance. The cavalry's charge caused the square-shaped formation to falter and gradually retreat.

In fact, many of the soldiers were already afraid.

'The gates have been destroyed. How could the shield soldiers resist against the cavalry charge?'

At that moment, Rody was unable to deal with all that. He shouted and jumped out from behind holding his scimitar.

The moment he came out, he had jumped over the crowd and landed near the enemy.

He slashed forward, causing blood and flesh to fly. Those near Rody could not avoid his attacks. Often the cavalymen cut into two before they had the chance to rush to the front.

Hideyoshi and Yukinari had also arrived at the gates. Seeing the gates destroyed, Yukinari could not stand firm and almost collapsed.

Fortunately, Nedis was by his side and seized his arm as she ruthlessly said, "With me and Rody around, what are you afraid of? Right now, you need to give an order!"

Yukinari pulled out the temporary katana he brought along and shouted, "Forward! All units forward! Drive them back!"

Hideyoshi was gathering soldiers towards the city gates but he could clearly see Rody's figure outside of the city gates.

He saw Rody seemingly wrapped up with an aura and went out with a blade. His actions were seemingly never fruitless. Rody was like a Death God. He scimitar cut down Nobunaga's cavalry as though it was paper.

Although Rody had not yet completely recovered, his strength

had recovered until he was at the level of a high-ranked warrior. Although he was not able to fight back the force of an army, he fortunately had the Mystic Dragon's blood strengthening his body. The weapons of the cavalymen that struck him could not harm him.

Facing such a situation, Rody did not bother warding off blows. He simply attacked and ignored the attacks of his opponents.

In a short moment, corpses started to pile up in front of Rody. The corpses of the horses and the people blocked the way and prevented the cavalry from proceeding.

Although the gates were opened, space was narrow. Rody's current strength was unable to stop the entire cavalry's charge. However, with so little space, the cavalry was also unable to launch a large-scale assault. [It created a situation where one person could prevent a large cavalry from getting through.](#)

On top of that, with Rody taking most of the pressure, the square-shaped shield formation was able to relax.

Far behind, Nobunaga had watched his cavalry rush to the entrance of the city gate but was unable to go further. That scene made him shout in anger. He saw a tall figure standing at the city gate as though he was a mountain. His cavalry that rushed towards this figure were all crushed.

Nobunaga cried out angrily and shouted, "Come with me!"

He patted his horse and led his soldiers forward.

At the moment, Rody's side was filled with corpses. The cavalry also started to become afraid and no longer approached. An empty space formed in front of Rody.

The cavalry realized that the charge was not having much effect and slowly drew the troops back further away and opened the formation.

Rody wiped his bloody face and felt short of breath. He felt that

his strength was not flowing in the battle earlier.

This kind of feeling made Rody uncomfortable.

Right now, he felt that his strength was recovering too slowly. If he was at full strength, he could have just sent out a blade of light and settled everything.

However, Rody now no longer dared to use his Half Moon Slash. He knew that his strength was only at the level of a high-ranked warrior at most. He was probably not even close to reaching the level of a Sacred Swordsman. The Half Moon Slash consumed a lot of energy and he would be exhausted after two or three slashes.

He then heard the sound of horses. A horse rushed in front of Rody. Its rider pointed his sword at Rody and shouted, "Who are you?"

Both sides gazed at each other and were in a daze.

"So, it was you!" Nobunaga gritted his teeth and felt his heart turn cold.

He could naturally recognize Rody. Although Rody had returned to his original appearance, his facial features were the same as when he stopped the Shogun's assassination at Kyoto.

He remembered that, on that day, this guy had defeated Shinyu with a casual wave of his hand. This kind of strength was far beyond Nobunaga.

However, they were now in a crisis. Nobunaga was a warrior. He gritted his teeth and said, "Good! You are the one that got in my way again! Today, I will thoroughly deal with you!"

He then pulled out his katana and jumped off the horse. He roared and rushed towards Rody.

Just like this, the battle had turned into a duel.

Rody was tired at that moment. He saw Nobunaga rushing over and placed his scimitar sideways to block. The swords clashed.

Both of them felt a huge impact on their hands and stepped back.

The first bout ended in a draw.

Rody was angry. 'This Nobunaga is only at the level of a High Knight at most. If it was last time, I can kill him within three strikes. But now...Shit!'

On the other hand, Nobunaga felt reassured and greatly relieved. 'Looks like this guy was not as powerful as I imagined. Maybe I can best him. On top of that, he has been fighting for so long now...'

Thinking of this, Nobunaga rushed forward again.

The two continued to fight again. Although Rody was not as strong as before, he was a brilliant student of the Imperial Academy's swordsmanship and was extremely skilled. On top of that, his body was tough. Even if he was struck once or twice, it would not be able to hurt him.

In fact, Rody was currently slightly weaker than Nobunaga. His world-shaking powers could not come into play.

In a moment of desperation, Nobunaga gathered the strength in his body. The katana in his hands faintly give out fighting energy. With all his strength, he pushed Rody back and suppressed him.

The soldiers on both sides cried out endlessly. Rody was furious. He suddenly took a step back as he held the scimitar with one hand. He then took a deep breath and sent out a blade of light towards Nobunaga.

Nobunaga was shocked and moved his katana to block it. A shield formed from fighting energy appeared in front of him. A blocking sound was heard as the wind caused the dust to rise. Nobunaga took a few steps back and then stood firm. However, his hands faintly trembled.

Rody was also not at ease.

That blade of light did not cause much damage, making Rody feel

vexed. Even the God-ranked Hakone Serpent was afraid to block his attack when he used the Mystic Dragon Purge, but now Rody was like a mountain tiger trapped in the flat plains where he was disadvantaged.

"Shit!" Rody cursed. That Half Moon Slash had consumed a lot of his energy.

'I cannot use this trick anymore!' Rody immediately thought to himself.

Nobunaga shouted loudly as he held the katana. He suddenly slashed at the air. A tooth for a tooth! Using his fighting energy, he sent out a wind blade roaring towards Rody.

Usually, this level of attack could easily be blocked by Rody. However, Rody could now feel the fatigue in his body. He barely managed to block it. The huge force struck his body and he flew back before landing on the ground. Fortunately, he managed to maintain his balance and was only knocked back a few steps instead of falling to the ground.

Nobunaga felt relieved. 'Looks like this guy is no match for me!'

He waved his katana and was about to order his cavalry to charge again.

At this time, in the wilderness far outside the city, a tremendous sound could be heard. That noise startled everyone.

It was as if countless people were running in the wilderness. As it gradually approached dawn, both sides saw a scene that surprised them.

From the south, in the wilderness, were countless people running. A large number of soldiers seemed to be running in disorder. Their uniform showed that they were the Dwarven Army.

Nobunaga and Yukinari immediately had the same thought. 'Is that Kumu Yu's army coming over?'

'That cannot be! The Roland Army is still watching him!'

'Could it be...'

The two then immediately thought. 'Has Kumu Yu been defeated by the Roland Army?'

Indeed, the soldiers looked as though they were fleeing. There were countless black figures that were not wearing helmets and were running around as though they were houseflies.

Soon after that, the sound of horse's hooves could be heard.

In the wilderness, the silhouettes of a cavalry started to appear.

These people looked as though they were chasing to kill the retreating dwarves. A cavalry divided into two teams to catch up to the dwarven deserters running away on foot. The cavalry all wore the standard armor of a Roland Knight. On the horse, they held a shield with one hand and a cross-shaped sword in the other.

The defeated dwarves were scared witless and their tragic cries could be heard in the wilderness.

Even Rody and Nedis were stunned. 'How could the Roland Army defeat Kumu Yu's soldiers so quickly?'

'The supplies has only been cut off today but the Roland Army had already defeated them?'

Nobunaga's heart sank to the bottom. He needed to make a prompt decision. Two thoughts emerged in his mind.

'We must immediately kill our way into the city! There is no other way! We need to quickly seize River Home and fortify the walls to fight against the Roland Army!'

The other choice was...

Flee at once!

'Right now, the cavalry had not taken too much damage! Retreat North and gain the opportunity to re-gather strength to fight

against the enemy!'

Nobunaga's expression continued to change. He also felt that something was quite right.

'How did the Roland Army break through the frontlines?'

The answer was soon revealed.

Lightning struck not far in the sky. Looking back to the sky, they saw that the sky was already covered with clouds. The dark clouds seemingly pressed down. From the clouds, a human-like figure flew closer quickly. The entire figure was wrapped in silver flames. The clouds dispersed when the figure passed through it.

Within a short moment, that figure stopped about ten meters over the city gate. It was a black robed and a black veiled figure. The figure stood high in the dim light of the night under the black thunderous clouds. It was as though a God had descended.

The figure's slender eyes looked at the people and corpses around before setting on Rody. The eyes then showed a trace of anger and surprise.

The surprised and angry gaze soon landed on Nobunaga. A clear and cold voice then came from the sky. "Are you the one who injured him?"

Nobunaga started to feel a sense of fear.

The opponent was in the sky and had a cold aura. It made Nobunaga's entire body turned stiff.

The clear resounding voice seemingly gritted her teeth and said, "Bastard dwarven beast! Unforgivable!"

With a whistling sound, the figure in the sky lifted both her hands...

The dust rose in front of Rody and Nobunaga before it suddenly became a hurricane. The weapons, armors, and corpses were swept away by the hurricane.

The hurricane then advanced towards Nobunaga.

Within a moment, the hurricane had engulfed everything. The countless cavalrymen were thrown into the air like leaves.

If one man guards the pass, a ten thousand cavalry cannot get through. Idiom.

Chapter 297: Swept Away

When Rody saw the figure in the air, he became relaxed and half knelt on the ground. He leaned onto his scimitar so as to not completely fall to the ground. That battle had drained all his fighting energy, leaving behind only emptiness and fatigue.

The hurricane spun in the air for ten minutes.

Oda Nobunaga looked at this and was stunned. He could not believe that the hurricane was man-made.

When the hurricane stopped, there was dust everywhere. Thousands of corpses fell from the sky and caused more dust to fly into the air.

When the dust settled, and visibility was restored, the banners were scattered all over and had lost their usual majesty. The ground was full of bright red blood mixed with the soil. The blood and soil had mixed to form a dark red mud.

Nobunaga's eye socket cracked, and he bled a little from the corner of his eye. He could not help but roar endlessly. He did not expect the figure in the air to have such ability.

When Nobunaga looked at the figure in the sky again, he saw that person softly landing on the ground. The figure quickly moved towards Rody.

The black veiled figure went in front of Rody. She half knelt and hugged Rody's shoulder.

Before she could speak, Rody suddenly sighed. He released the sword in his hand and tightly hugged her in return.

After the two hugged for a while, the black veiled figure stretched out her right hand and touched Rody's face. The resolute and firm edges of his face were covered with blood and dirt. It no longer looked like last time. The fingers of the black-veiled figure were slender and thin, [looking like they belonged to the hands of a](#)

[woman.](#)

The black veiled figure suddenly took off her veil and used it to help Rody wipe off the blood and dirt on his face.

Rody muttered softly. "Mouse, why are you here?"

Mouse raised her head. Her sparkling eyes carefully inspected Rody's face. The black veil in her hands moved and restored Rody's facial appearance. It was no longer blood-stained and dirty. Although Rody's face still looked pale, it started to look more like before.

At that moment, Mouse had many questions. Like how a guy like Rody with such great powers got bested by a warrior whose level was only at a major Knight level. She also wondered about his experiences during the long time that he spent here...and many other questions. However, seeing that Rody was pale and dazed, she was reluctant to ask any question. She then tightly held on to Rody with all her strength.

Rody laughed bitterly and sighed. Except for the time at the Duke of the Tulip Family's mansion with Nicole, he had never relied on a woman for protection before. He had myriad feelings in his heart but was unable to control his actions. He could not even struggle away from Mouse's embrace to stand up. Rody thought to himself, 'How long has it been since I ended up in such a situation? Even encountering that damn Hakone Serpent was not so miserable or unbearable.'

Besides him, there were two more whose expressions had changed. However, both were surprised and confused.

The first one was Kikukawa Yukinari. He saw Mouse leading the charge of the soldiers and then, right out of empty space, she created a hurricane of knives and swords. With a snap of the fingers, Nobunaga's one thousand elite cavalymen were massacred. He then saw that Mouse had a close relationship to Rody. At the start, he thought they were just siblings or good

friends. That was until Mouse took off her veil. Yukinari was surprised to see that she was a woman. It was ordinary if a man were so powerful...but it was especially surprising since Mouse was a woman that was exceedingly beautiful.

When he saw Mouse hold Rody's head to her chest, he had already given up all hope for the woman. First, it was the breathtakingly beautiful Nedis, and now, this unbelievably beautiful woman also showed extreme concern for Rody.

The other person was Oda Nobunaga. Nobunaga could not believe it when he saw Mouse's hurricane. However, he soon understood why the army at the South was so quickly defeated. The other party was so powerful that he could not figure out what to do. With a single wave, he had lost thousands of his elite soldiers and horses. The army at the South might dominate in numbers but in the end, Mouse only needed to wave her hand a few more times.

Right now, Mouse no longer needed to wave because there were already thousands of casualties with that single wave. A soldier in the army only had a certain amount of mental endurance. After seeing such a terrifying enemy, they would start to break down psychologically. At that time, his own army would break and scatter on their own—the Roland Army need not even give any assistance. Just with them running in all directions, they would trample over each other causing a significant number of casualties.

Nobunaga could not understand. A person with such extraordinary powers was a woman. On top of that, she had slain thousands of his soldiers simply because Rody was injured.

Nobunaga saw Mouse and Rody silently reuniting in front of him with a mix of joy and anguish. He believed that the opportunity to attack was right in front of him.

The idiot was still having delusions of mounting a sneak attack to kill Mouse and continuing to chase his dream of becoming the Shogun.

Nobunaga moved slowly in fear of alerting Mouse. He gathered the remnants of his army and prepared to move

Nobunaga's cavalry deserved to be called brave warriors that fought hundreds of battles. They had witnessed their colleagues torn to pieces, yet they continued to wait for orders and did not break away. They were worthy of being called well-trained soldiers.

At the side of the battlefield was another person who wore a strange expression—that person was Nedis.

She had already vaguely guessed that the figure was Mouse the moment she arrived. Although she already knew of Mouse's relationship with Rody, she had always been stuck inseparably with Rody these past few days. As a result, Nedis was completely different from last time. Previously, she had always had a vengeful perception towards Rody because of his previous frivolous actions that day. However, by now, she was already infatuated with Rody. But Rody did not seem to have any interest in her.

Nedis was a proud and arrogant woman. When Rody did not respond to her, she too did not profess her love to Rody. However, when she saw Rody and Mouse embracing each other, an ache arose in her heart.

At this moment, Nobunaga had already mobilized his soldiers and horses as they quietly moved towards Mouse.

When they were about ten meters away from Mouse, Nobunaga pressed his legs on both sides of his horse and charged towards Mouse.

Nobunaga pointed his katana forward like a short spear, with its tip pointing straight towards the back of Mouse's waist.

Mouse had not realized this and continued to bask in the warmth of Rody's body.

Rody had long felt the pressure coming from up ahead. His eyes

opened wide as he looked at the tip of Nobunaga's katana.

He roared loudly and turned around. His back became completely exposed to the tip of Nobunaga's katana and his hands also moved quickly to push Mouse away.

At that moment, Nedis had broken out of her sentimental feelings when she saw the imminent danger. She could not help but shriek in concern.

Mouse was surprised for a moment when Rody pushed her away. However, she was stunned for only one-tenth of a second before she lifted both her hands as if pushing forward.

The tip of Nobunaga's katana had almost reached Rody. During that imminent peril, Rody suddenly roared.

Nobunaga had an expression of disbelief. His blade had clearly felt the elasticity of Rody's muscles. However, it could not pierce through. On the contrary, his own stomach felt as though a powerful force had boxed him.

Nedis' expression of worry and self-reproach did not last long. She saw Nobunaga's movement stall as though it was hit by a giant hammer and flew away as though he was a broken kite.

Nobunaga flew back a full thirty meters and heavily crashed on the ground. The once-calm cavalrymen started to panic. They could not understand what had happened since their master had obviously succeeded but was then suddenly thrown through the air by the enemy. Their opponent's strength seemed to have already become terrifying.

The moment Nobunaga fell to the ground, a few loyal men immediately dismounted from their horses and helped Nobunaga up as he was lying on the ground with a disbelieving look. Blood that was almost black in color flowed out of the corner of his mouth.

Mouse became furious. If she had been a little bit slow, Rody

would have been injured by Nobunaga. Although Rody had once basked himself in the Mystic Dragon's blood and was unlikely to be pierced through by a katana, the power from a horse charge would still cause the injured Rody to suffer a powerful blow.

Mouse once again floated to the air. Like in the earlier attack, she placed her hands in front her chest, muttering some incantations before pushing her hands outward.

Suddenly, the sky and the earth changed their color. The dark clouds in the sky gathered and rolled as if there was a mighty force standing in the sky. Under the dark clouds came thunder that rolled towards Nobunaga and his soldiers.

Nobunaga and his men had given up all hope. Their belief of being able of fleeing from the tremendous dark clouds had already long shattered like the illusion it was.

When the dark clouds were a few meters away from them, it once again formed into a hurricane. It rolled with a dull, rumbling sound.

When the hurricane reached the cavalry, its shape could no longer be seen. It was completely covered with dust and broken weapons.

The whistling hurricane trapped the cavalry in the middle...

There was endless screaming...

In front of them was the sky covered in red...

Their faces were filled with expressions of fear and despair...

Those in that wretched situation could only give up hope.

By this time, Nobunaga had already been helped up onto a horse by his subordinates. Only he remained calm and roared, "Retreat!"

The cavalry all around started to retreat. They were no longer like well-trained soldiers as they scattered away.

Nobunaga took a few subordinates with him and rushed through

the gaps in the hurricane. He hoped he would get a chance to stay alive.

Seeing all of this play out in front of him, Rody praised Nobunaga in his heart, 'This person can be considered a great general of this generation. Even in such a situation, he is still trying his best. He did not panic or even try to escape. All of these are not things that come naturally. It is a talent honed from hundreds of dangerous battles!' Although Rody appreciated Nobunaga in his heart, he could not help but feel sad since they were enemies. If they had not been enemies, and he had not yet chosen to help Yukinari, Rody would have chosen to help Nobunaga.

While Rody thought of all this, the subordinates following Nobunaga had taken advantage of the fact that the hurricane had not yet fully gathered. They found a gap and escaped from the rage of the hurricane.

After escaping the hurricane, Nobunaga no longer had the energy to reorganize his men. He just shouted to the ones that followed him to run without looking back. In a flash, they escaped far away.

The remaining ones that did not follow Nobunaga did not have such good luck. They were caught by the powerful hurricane and pulled to the center. For a moment, there were tragic screams.

Even Yukinari and Nedis could not bear watching this. After all, just like that, thousands of lives were turned to dust and wrecked remains from the majestic force.

After a long time, the hurricane finally stopped, and the dust settled. The cavalry thrown into the air had fallen as smashed and scattered remains.

The moment the hurricane stopped, there was a rain of blood. For everyone present there their eyes saw only a crimson hue.

Soon, the ground was full of the remains of the cavalry. There was not a single intact corpse. There were eyes, limbs and even

internal organs.

Nedis felt dizzy. Although she did not care about these people, she could not bear seeing them die so tragically.

Yukinari was not thinking about the corpses. He only thought of Nedis who was beside him. Yukinari could smell the aroma from Nedis' well-endowed body; he could not prevent himself from feeling excited. He saw Nedis looking as though she was about to faint and felt his heart shook. 'This woman is my lucky star. If I could keep her here as my wife, then...' Nedis was not in the condition to deal with this. She did not even notice Yukinari's insolence. Nedis was completely shocked by the sight in front of her and felt nauseous.

...

There were no more signs of the cavalry on the battlefield. All of them seemed to have perished from Mouse' rage.

At that moment, some of Rody's strength was restored and he could finally stand up from the ground.

Nedis looked at the battle scene in front of her and said, "That scene was so devastating. I am afraid less than one hundred people escaped!"

Mouse was still furious but when she turned around to speak to Rody, the coldness in her voice reduced slightly. "I have already estimated. The leader took ten cavalymen with him. Besides them, the others that escaped elsewhere is probably less than ten."

Rody had experienced battles more brutal than this one. However, when he saw the devastation and the rivers of blood, he was still unable to bear it. He gave a long sigh and no longer said anything.

Hideyoshi rushed forward unaware that Yukinari was still fantasizing about Nedis and knelt down. He then said, "Young Master Yukinari, that traitorous Oda Nobunaga is still alive. It will

cause us a major disaster in future."

Yukinari was startled out of his daydream by Hideyoshi. He looked at the kneeling Hideyoshi, unsure of what the man had just said.

Hideyoshi also knew that Yukinari had not heard his words and added, "I request Young Master Yukinari to allow me to command the 'Maruyuki' and take Nobunaga's head!"

Although Yukinari was a bungling oaf, he knew that Hideyoshi's words made sense. If Nobunaga were to rest and recover, he would remain a huge threat. And so, Yukinari imposingly waved his hand and said, "Alright. I order you to command the 'Maruyuki' and get Nobunaga. I want to see him dead or alive. If you cannot find him, do not come back!"

Hideyoshi greeted his teeth and accepted the military order. He thought to himself in his heart, 'Shit! This damn oaf is actually pretending to look wise. He can't do anything but is first-rate at pretending to be the Shogun. He could even say words like 'do not come back'!'

Thinking about it, Hideyoshi was confident about hunting down Nobunaga. How far could a seriously injured person and a few people go? Presumably, he would look for a resting place to escape to. It was because Hideyoshi did not expect Nobunaga to run far that he was willing to take the initiative and requested to pursue and kill Nobunaga. Hideyoshi thought this through and decided to help Yukinari so that he could claim credit.

Soon after that Hideyoshi took a small group of 'Maruyuki' with him and pursued Nobunaga.

The author kept saying black veiled figure and tried very hard not to reveal her gender since the previous chapter, to the point of saying that the hands of the figure were like a woman's hands. However, it is nearly impossible to do this in English while making the sentence sound nice due to the lack of gender-neutral words.

Chapter 298: An Ambitious Person's Desolation

After Hideyoshi took a group of soldiers to chase Nobunaga, the remaining people gathered.

Rody looked softly at Mouse and asked, "Why are you here?"

Mouse smiled as though she was enjoying Rody's care towards her.

"The more I thought about you being in the Roland continent, the more worried I became. The situation here is too confusing. King Sauron probably did not have any good intentions when he asked you to lead the soldiers here. So, I decided to request the Royal Concubine to come together with me. When I came, I saw the Roland Army attacking for a long time without success, so I lent some help along the way."

Everybody frowned after listening to that. She said she lent some help but instead caused the two evenly matched sides to shift. What would have happened if Mouse were to have seriously helped one side?

Rody was startled when he heard Mouse's words. He was startled not because of her comment about her lending a hand but because he was worried about something else. He moved to Mouse's side and whispered, "What about Seth? Is he still in the Sauron Kingdom?"

Mouse smiled again. She grabbed Rody's arm and replied, "Don't worry. He also came with us. I know you are worried and you would not want to leave him alone. Naturally, Old Mark also followed."

Rody calmed down. He was worried that nobody would be watching Seth after Mouse came here. If he escaped again, it would be very difficult to find him. At that time, Rody would have to play

two roles again. He would need to pretend to be Earl Rody and also the Duke of the Tulip Family. It would be extremely torturous.

Yukinari was amazed at Rody's influence and became more and more humble. He walked towards Rody with an expression full of smiles, then he invited everyone into the official residence to speak.

Mouse said, "Sounds good. Let us find a place to stop before continuing. You also need to rest." Mouse had spoken while looking at Rody with full concern. Rody showed a slight smile on his pale face. He was seemingly telling Mouse that his injuries were not serious. Mouse continued, "It is about time that Ruolan and Miss Nicole followed the Roland Army into the city. I will send someone to look for them later."

Everyone moved forward together.

Along the way, Yukinari, feeling uneasy, said to Nedis, "The Roland Continent's army has almost fully controlled River Home. At that time, they will not kill me as well, right?"

Nedis was now feeling distressed and bitter. She smiled coldly at Yukinari as though she was sneering. "Please. Think like a human! If the Sauron Kingdom wants to control the dwarven lands, they would need to dispatch someone to manage it. Even if it would not be bothersome to you, it would be bothersome to them. They will leave some troops behind for you to maintain the postwar order and help you rebuild. They will not directly occupy your land." Nedis said in her heart. 'Only you dwarves think that this lousy place has fantastic feng shui? If it was not because of the ironwood, do you think the other kingdoms would even care for this rotten land?'

Yukinari only nodded his head and consented submissively. Although he was still uneasy, he did not dare to continue asking but instead chose to act according to the situation to protect his life. He knew that his life was totally in their hands. Although he

had the Maruyuki, they were no match for the black-veiled woman's strength.

After reaching the residence, Mouse supported Rody to one end of the room. She left the others in the hall and ignored them. Nedis also wanted to go over but she did not have any good reasons to do so. She watched Rody and Mouse walk far away and gave an anguished smile.

...

Inside a room in the backyard, Rody was lain down on a bed by Mouse. Mouse then sat beside him.

They tightly held hands and looked around. Both seemed to have a lot of things to say yet did not know where to start.

Mouse finally opened her mouth to ask a question. After all, the question had been bothering her.

"What happened to you? You could easily defeat a Dragon Paladin so why can't you defeat an opponent like that?"

Rody shook his head as if he had no strength to tell such a long story. After thinking for a while, he started to relate the whole story starting from his departure from the Sauron Kingdom. When he finally talked about the Temple Elder and that he was the Devil Kara, Mouse let out a cry of alarm. She found what Rody was telling hard to believe, but she completely trusted Rody. Mouse could not find any reason for Rody to lie to her. After that, she calmed down and continued to listen to Rody.

Rody soon told of how he summoned Sky to fight against the Hakone Serpent. However, he hid the fact that he was being controlled by the Mystic Dragon at that time.

In the end, Rody spoke to Mouse in a heavy tone, "Since then, I have lost my Domain Powers and become an ordinary warrior at the level of a high-ranked knight. Perhaps it was because I fought too hard in that battle. I hope I could recover after some time."

Rody showed a wry smile. "I also have this strange feeling that my strength would not be restored."

Mouse immediately covered Rody's mouth and gave him a complicated look.

She found Rody's experience almost inconceivable and she could not accept the fact that Kara was the leader of the Temple. However, her rationale told her that Rody's words were true.

It was as if all of Mouse's faith was taken out. She lay down on Rody's chest. Initially, Mouse had some remaining hope for the Temple.

However, Mouse did not say anything about these. She murmured, "I don't want to bother with these anymore. The Temple and domains can all go to hell...Rody, I just want you to remember that no matter what happens, you must not throw me aside." She stared at Rody's eyes and whispered, "If love is a poison, you are my pufferfish...Do you still remember this?"

Rody gently stroked Mouse's long hair, softly like water.

Mouse felt Rody's touch and slightly raised her head. Her eyes were filled with tears. Rody could not bear to let go. He raised his head and gently kissed Mouse's eyelids. Mouse seemed to shed tears in his arms...

After receiving Rody's kisses, she gradually warmed up. She took the initiative and drew her charming lips to Rody's dry and cracked lips.

The two wrapped their hands around each other as they kissed, their pent-up passion exploding, filling the room with their passion...

...

While they were filled with tender feelings, Hideyoshi was filled with stress.

Oda Nobunaga was an experienced general and naturally knew how to hide the tracks of his escape. He left behind fake clues to confuse the pursuers. This forced Hideyoshi to rack his brains.

However, the resources Nobunaga's men could use were extremely limited. He only had six subordinates. With only six people retreating, in the end, Hideyoshi would be able to track them.

Nobunaga immediately sat down. He knew Hideyoshi was fast approaching from behind, but despair did not show in his eyes. He said, "Looks like God wants me to die today!" He turned around and saw a small house. After thinking for a while, he approached it.

Nobunaga felt helpless. Had he not received an injury fighting Rody and another injury during his sneak attack on Mouse, he would not fear being pursued by a junior warrior like Hideyoshi. However, with his injuries, he knew he would not be a match for Hideyoshi. If he were to fight desperately, he would be able to injure Hideyoshi but he was certain that he would also be killed. Hideyoshi was an ambitious man; he might have lost many times, but he now had the chance to take revenge and certainly would not let Nobunaga die so easily.

People can get killed but must never be disgraced. Rather than be killed after being pursued by Hideyoshi, it was better to end it himself.

The dwarves had a tradition of committing seppuku after defeat. Since it was hopeless, it was better to die by their own hands rather than let the enemy have his way.

With that in mind, Nobunaga got down the horse and looked at his six remaining subordinates. "In today's battle, I feel ashamed to face you all. Go and escape. Take off your cavalry uniform. You will not be humiliated. The pursuers are approaching, and I will not be able to escape death. Today, this small house shall be my

burial ground." Although these were dying words, it had a formidable air perceived by everyone. It was something Yukinari did not have and something Rody admired.

When the six subordinates heard Nobunaga's words, they stopped and glanced at each other. They knew that they all had a death wish too, so they said, "Thousand Rider General, we are all proud warriors! Today's defeat simply ends in death! We will accompany you to the warrior's most glorious seppuku!" Their words were resolute and had no compromise.

Nobunaga heard them and sighed. He knew it was impossible to persuade his subordinates to escape on their own. He looked up to the sky and shouted, "Good! Let us warriors die with dignity! Die a heroic death!" After that, they went inside the small house.

...

When Nobunaga shouted, Hideyoshi was not far and had also heard it.

He felt elated as he knew that he was now close to where Nobunaga was. After all, the opportunity to claim credit was right in front of him. He looked back to his men. The Maruyuki had spread out to track Nobunaga leaving only five members with him. Hideyoshi was worried that he might not win against Nobunaga. However, he was impatient and no longer cared that much. On top of that, he knew that Nobunaga was wounded and was more or less counting on this in his mind.

And so, Hideyoshi shouted, "The traitor is not far! Let us hurry and give chase!"

When Hideyoshi reached the small house, he had almost rushed in but suddenly saw the tracks of the horses. He thought of the situation inside and stopped his horse.

Hideyoshi carefully studied the tracks and knew that Nobunaga would definitely be inside. He wanted to ride inside with his horse,

but he felt worried.

Instead, he told this to the few Maruyuki behind him, "Nobunaga is definitely in there. Who dares to go first?"

Several of the soldiers looked at each other. Although they knew that Nobunaga was seriously wounded, they still acted cowardly. After all, the difference in strength was too big.

Hideyoshi cursed silently, 'A bunch of useless people. Their hearts say one thing but do something else.' He exclaimed, "Fine! Since nobody dares to go in first, I will. Listen to my orders!"

Hideyoshi rode in with his horse. Although dangerous, it would be exchanged for riches and honor.

Nobunaga and the others knelt at the hall when they entered earlier. The house seemingly used to be the home of a warrior, with 'Budokan Fortune' written on a plaque on the wall. It was possible that the owner had died during the war and their family had fled.

Nobunaga and the others knelt under the plaque and tore their upper clothing, revealing their muscular chests.

They sighed deeply together. Nobunaga then said, "I did not expect to end up here after fighting for so long! This good-for-nothing Yukinari has actually allowed the enemy in. My Hakone Kingdom is now gone!"

Tears rolled from his eyes as he spoke. His face looked determined as he drew his katana.

The rest of the cavalrymen had also taken out their katanas and pointed it to their own stomachs.

Nobunaga sighed again. His eyes turned ruthless, then he cut into his own abdomen without hesitation. He turned it sideways after the blade entered his body. Blood came out from his mouth. His eyes looked as though he was not reconciled as his body turned and collapsed sideways. The other warriors did the same. Just like

that, in but a short moment, seven warriors died.

Hideyoshi carefully entered with his katana only to find seven corpses.

Hideyoshi felt ecstatic almost shouting with joy but covered his mouth, not letting himself cry out happily. 'Yes. How could I share such an easy victory with the guys outside?'

Hideyoshi calmed himself down. He went to Nobunaga's body and saw Nobunaga's eyes glaring at him. He could not help feeling angry. 'Hmph. Glaring at me even in death.' Hideyoshi felt annoyed and kicked the corpse. The corpse bent back to the other side. Hideyoshi took out his katana and lifted Nobunaga's head by pulling his hair with the other hand.

The blade was swung, and it cut off Nobunaga's head.

As the blade flashed, Nobunaga's head ended up in Hideyoshi's hand.

Hideyoshi looked at the head. He unexpectedly did not feel very happy. Instead, he felt a faint sorrow.

'I have finally cut off the distinguished Thousand Rider General's head. I should be in high spirits, but I feel a chill in the air instead.'

Those that came from the Roland Continent also had a strength that made Hideyoshi feel a sense of despair. This strong feeling was like a bucket of cold water being poured over his burning ambition.

After thinking of this, Hideyoshi gave a wry smile and whispered, "Oda Nobunaga, was our battle to the death meaningful?"

After a while, Hideyoshi carried Nobunaga's head out. He coldly looked at the few soldiers outside. The soldiers did not believe that Hideyoshi could actually cut down Nobunaga's head but the scene in front of them forced them to believe it.

Hideyoshi spoke aloud, "The head of the traitor, Oda Nobunaga,

is here. Let us report back!" He mounted his horse and rode away, disregarding the other soldiers.

Everybody looked at each other. Although they still had doubts in their hearts, they still followed quickly.

...

In the large residence at River Home, Concubine Ruolan and the cross-dressing Seth sat in the hall. The host, Kikukawa Yukinari, sat on the seat with lower priority. He looked at the pig-like Concubine with an inconceivable expression.

Yukinari had only one thought. He wanted the Sauron Kingdom that had suddenly invaded to have compassion.

Mouse supported Rody out of the back door. After the two came out, Mouse's hair was disheveled, but it added to her charm.

Ruolan had seen Mouse many times before but this was the first time she saw Mouse look beautiful and feeble. Her eyes shone and looked stunningly breathtaking.

When Mouse and Rody entered, Ruolan stood up before the servants had the time to react and helped Mouse to find a seat. Mouse and Rody then sat down as they leaned on each other.

Before Rody and Mouse came out, Nedis had already explained the situation to Ruolan and Seth. Naturally, she hid some things and did not speak of Kara and the Hakone Serpent.

As everyone thought of how to start, Nedis was the first to speak.

"Alright. Now we just wait for King Sauron to come in. Young Master Yukinari, first, sign your contract with me."

Everyone frowned, feeling puzzled at the same time. Yukinari also panicked, not knowing how to reply.

Rody spoke, "Nedis, you do not have to worry about that. Let us wait for King Sauron to come first before speaking. Not just your contract, but the two nations need to discuss their contract, too."

Yukinari was still feeling disturbed about the conditions of the contract with King Sauron but gave Rody a grateful glance. At least he could delay and look at King Sauron's conditions before speaking. If King Sauron wanted to take away the rights to trade ironwood, how could he sign another contract with Nedis? That would be courting death. Although Yukinari was a bungling oaf, he knew that the only thing he could give was the right to trade ironwood. However, he also hoped that King Sauron would help him rebuild the kingdom.

At that moment, an announcement was made outside the door.
"King Sauron has arrived!"

Chapter 299: Battle of Wits

Originally, the negotiations should have been held in the palace or the Shogun's office. However, Rody's battle with the Hakone Serpent had turned both to dust. As a result, they had no choice but to negotiate at a large home with a courtyard.

The course of the negotiation was unusually simple. The Sauron Kingdom had gotten everything they wanted with little to no effort. The only thing that was of value was the ironwood resources. Whoever became Shogun on that piece of land was insignificant.

An agreement was reached within an hour. The Sauron Kingdom would station thirty thousand soldiers to help Kikukawa Yukinari rebuild the Dwarven Kingdom and help him rise to the position of Shogun. In fact, this was not difficult to do. Kumu Yu and his men were utterly routed by the Roland Army earlier. Oda Nobunaga and his elite cavalry had been wiped out by Mouse. The palace was also destroyed. The only person left who was qualified to become Shogun in the Dwarven Kingdom was Yukinari. The only thing the Sauron Kingdom needed to help him with was to build his prestige which was really easy to do. With military power in his hand, there were not many people who would openly oppose him. On top of that, Yukinari would also have the support of the powerful Sauron Kingdom.

The other part of the negotiation was naturally the right to trade ironwood. This was everybody's main objective. Even though the Sauron Kingdom was the victorious nation, they could not make Yukinari hand over the ironwood for free. The nation, as an organization, could not play a business role to manage the ironwood trade. Nedis had mediated and in the end, Nedis was given the business role. An agreement was signed for Nedis to acquire the rights of trading ironwood. At the same time, Nedis also signed an agreement with the Sauron Kingdom to ensure that

the supplies and the sales would prioritize the Sauron Kingdom.

These were the main contents of the agreement between the Sauron Kingdom and Yukinari. However, Nedis, as the one initiating the negotiation, had drafted the agreement to sound more magnificent. There were also clauses concerning military power, [people rights](#), environmental protection, the protection of shipping and many others. A total of twenty-one clauses were signed. The historians of the future in the Dwarven Kingdom would later call this surrender of sovereign rights under humiliating terms as [the Twenty-One Demands](#).

The later generations would treat the treaty dubiously. Some people would believe that the treaty greatly limited the development of the dwarves. It would make the Dwarven Kingdom, thirty years later, become industrially hollow. Another group would also admit that the treaties were harmful to the interests of the dwarves. However, they would believe that if it was not because of the Heroic Great Shogun Yukinari and his capable assistants, the Blood Fox Nedis, Evil Star Sith, and Lone Wolf Rody, the Dwarven Kingdom would have been forced to pay tribute to the Sauron Kingdom even if they were not destroyed. Just like this, the Dwarven Kingdom would become dependent on the Sauron Kingdom. These people would consider Yukinari as the history's most famous Shogun who had created a lifeline for the dwarves to revive in the future. A contribution like this could not be erased by history.

The two factions debating about Yukinari would have had debated for more than three hundred years and would continue even when a parliament was later formed in the Dwarven Kingdom. They would often fight in the parliament, giving the Emperor a headache.

After signing the treaty, King Sauron no longer demanded anything from Yukinari. He went to the backyard to talk to Rody.

At that moment, Hideyoshi had finally returned. He brought

back Nobunaga's head and presented it to Yukinari, allowing the man that had just become a Shogun to give a final sigh. This time, he no longer had anyone else that would oppose him becoming the Shogun.

Hideyoshi naturally boasted about his pursuit and made himself look heroic. Although Yukinari was an oaf, he understood that Hideyoshi was not a match for Nobunaga. What really happened needed to be verified. However, no matter what, Hideyoshi had brought back Nobunaga's head. Yukinari also needed personnel and could not be bothered to investigate what happened. Hideyoshi did this to obtain a more revered position. Yukinari also could not find anyone who was capable of taking a high-ranking position. Now that Hideyoshi had brought back Nobunaga's head, Yukinari also gained a good reason to promote Hideyoshi and win over the masses.

Not long after that, the Royal Family was reestablished. Yukinari casually looked for a person who had a little bit of the royal blood in them. He then appointed that person as Emperor. The Shogunate was also immediately reestablished and Yukinari became the Shogun as expected. Hideyoshi also replaced Nobunaga's position. It was a new generation of the Thousand Rider General, and he would be responsible for guarding the southern borders of the Dwarven Kingdom.

King Sauron naturally had a lot of things to say to the envoy Rody. Although Rody was dissatisfied with King Sauron's methods, he was no longer the young man that did not know the relative importance of this. Now, Rody clearly knew how to categorize things based on their priority. He did not mention anything about how King Sauron had deceived him. Instead, he continued to discuss with the King about the exchange of warships and prisoners of war.

A few days later, Yukinari shed tears of gratefulness as he sent off King Sauron. King Sauron took the Roland Army along with

Concubine Ruolan and Rody back to the Roland Continent by ship.

After arriving on the Roland Continent, they received a grand welcome from the Sauron Kingdom. News of their victory against the Dwarven Kingdom had long spread throughout the kingdom, so everyone was enthusiastic. Rody looked at the scene with other worries in his mind. He was worried about the Temple and Kara who embodied Prometheus.

Rody had a premonition that Kara would start a counterattack soon. The God's Record that could fight against the Temple had also gone missing.

Even then, Rody still did not know that Kara had found the God's Record. If he knew, he would have felt even more worried.

Rody knew he still could not recover his energy. With his strength reduced, he was also less confident. He was unable to predict his own future and could only hope to return to the Radiant Continent and see if Andy had a way to restore his powers.

After staying at the Sauron Kingdom for a few days, Seth had become more well-behaved. He kept quiet and did not say anything when Mouse removed his makeup. He had seemingly given up all hope for this matter. Basically, at that moment, Seth had given up escaping. He planned to honestly follow Rody back to the Radiant Continent to become the Duke of the Tulip Family.

After a few days, Rody had recovered to his maximum limit. On top of that, the agreement with the Sauron Kingdom had been realized. The Sauron Kingdom's warships had been prepared. Rody planned to end his mission as the envoy and return to the Radiant Empire.

Rody was anxious. His domain powers had not recovered, making him feel uneasy. He wanted to quickly return to the Radiant Continent so that Andy could help restore his strength.

The King pretended to persuade Rody to stay, still fearful of the

fake Tulip Duke's powers. He hoped Rody would remain in the Sauron Kingdom. Even if he was unable to get Rody's help, at the very least Rody would not become an enemy. However, Rody had already decided. When King Sauron saw this, he had no choice but to let Rody go.

On the eve of the departure, King Sauron hosted a banquet at the Royal Palace.

Before the start of the banquet, the King sat at a side hall solemnly. He played with a strangely shaped, sharp dagger in his hands.

"Looks like the plan at the Dwarven Kingdom has failed." The King sighed, looking melancholic.

"Your Majesty." Sith stood there, his face full of wrinkles. His hand was kept behind his sleeves. He slowly said, "The God's Record has been destroyed. Although this did not bring us any benefit, the plan still had us managed to obtain ironwood."

The King shook his head. The ironwood was a secondary objective to him. He looked at Sith and asked, "You said Rody has lost his Domain Powers. Are you sure about this?"

Sith pondered for a moment and replied, "Until now, I still cannot remain calm when I recall what happened that day...People who possess Domain Powers were truly powerful. I have fully felt that way then. After the battle against the Hakone Serpent, Rody seemed to have really lost his combat effectiveness. Right now, he is simply just a high ranked warrior! I initially thought he would recover but that day when he fought at the dwarves' River Home, he showed weakness...His power had been lost inexplicably!"

The King squinted as if thinking deeply. His gaze turned cold. "If..." he started in a low tone, "if I want Rody to stay in the Roland Continent, do you any confidence?"

Sith's expression turned stiff. His voice was dry as he asked,

"Have you decided?"

"It is simple!" The King lightly said, "We and the Radiant Empire would not be friends forever! After the prisoners are returned, both sides will have no more reason to cooperate. Now, they also have gained control of Roland warships. The Lightning God's Whip is not frightening. The frightening one is that this elite troop is controlled by a legendary Commander."

Smiling, the King continued, "You have also obtained information of the civil strife in the Radiant Empire. Their Emperor is currently dependent on the Duke of the Tulip Family. If the Duke dies in the Roland Continent, our powerful enemies in the South would be in confusion for several years.

Sith sighed and replied, "This would certainly be good for us... However, I have two doubts."

"Is the first doubt Rody's fearsome strength?" The King laughed.

Sith's expression remained serious as he said, "You did not see what happened that day! Rody was like a monster that could create miracles! I cannot even imagine what other things he cannot do..." Sith recalled the time when Rody was spellbinding. His crazy appearance and the fact that he blew up an entire mountain made Sith feel hopeless and afraid. "Your Majesty, I admit that I have great fear in my heart. However, I can guarantee you that you would be even more afraid than me if you were there!"

The King stopped smiling and replied, "I respect you, Master Sith. I am not laughing at you. I also believe your doubts are justified...but..." The King laughed bitterly. "At present, this is our only opportunity."

His gaze turned cold as he said, "According to our intelligence, the Duke of the Tulip Family, Rody, does not have any descendants. If he dies...the sword above our heads, the future threat of the Tulip Family, will be eradicated!"

Sith sighed as he looked at the King. He immediately replied, "Your Majesty, we are taking risks!"

The King shook his head and asked, "What is your second doubt?"

Sith helplessly said, "That is the reaction of the Radiant Empire!" He paused for a moment and his brow wrinkled as he said, "Right now, our biggest enemy is the Temple! I believe you are also not keen on having the Lightning God's Whip trying to take revenge from the sea while you fight the Temple. Now they have 800 Roland warships!"

The King narrowed his eyes. He faintly smiled and silently murmured. "An angry Lightning God's Whip hellbent on revenge. That is truly a terrifying force...but..."

He opened his eyes wide to look at Sith and said, "What if this vengeance was not directed at us but the Temple?"

"What do you mean?"

The King seemed to laugh as he said, "Think of a way to give away the envoy's position to the Prime Minister. I am sure the Temple would soon receive the news and another assassination would take place. Could the Duke of the Tulip Family deal with a Dragon Paladin without domain powers?" The King then sighed and looked at Sith. "I know you currently have a somewhat good opinion of Rody, but I hope you remember this. Our mission is to revive the ancient Empire! Both of us are under that compulsion! This is also something you need to do...After all, the Black Veil Saint is by Rody's side!"

Sith sighed and did not say anything as he glanced at the King. The atmosphere at the hall felt constrained.

At the same time, there was a similar atmosphere at the Prime Minister's house. There was a candlelight swaying in a dark room.

The palm of the old Prime Minister was like a withered tree

trunk. That hand slowly stroked the chair as he hesitated, not knowing what to say.

"Just speak directly." There was a tall figure. That figure was Concubine Ruolan. At that moment, her fat face had a disdainful smile.

The Prime Minister finally became resolute and looked at Concubine Ruolan. It was definitely not the kind of look a father would give to his daughter.

"I need you to help me do one thing!" The Prime Minister's voice sounded earnest.

Ruolan coldly replied, "If I am not wrong, this should be the last time!"

"Yes!" The Prime Minister slowly said, "Once this is done, your family's promise would be fulfilled! You would no longer need to take orders from me!" After pausing for a while, the Prime Minister said, "If you succeed, I can guarantee that the Temple will withdraw the prohibition of your family that was in place for hundreds of years!"

"In other words, I don't have to continue pretending to be your daughter?" Ruolan sneered. "I also no longer need to be the concubine?"

The Prime Minister sighed. "I know you are still sore from me marrying you off to the King years ago. But, you also know that the King had just ascended the throne. I also needed to get the rights. Marrying you off to the King was an inevitable necessity!"

"This is nothing." Ruolan's tone was very flat. "I owe you a debt. Naturally, you have the right to ask me to do anything for you! But, you best remember your words! This is the last time!"

The Prime Minister nodded his head and then said, "The King would not let Rody return from the Roland Continent so easily! I believe he should have also found out about my allegiance with the

Temple. So, he would send news through me and have the Temple assassinate the Radiant Empire's envoy...You..."

"You want me to kill Rody?" Ruolan frowned.

"No," the Prime Minister replied, "someone will come and do that. The Temple will send their own Paladin...The King would also most likely send Sith. They would join forces. The weakened Rody would not be able to ward them off even if he has the Black Veil Saint by his side."

"What do you want me to do?"

The Prime Minister slowly said, "Ensure Rody's safety! If there is an opportunity, kill that old sorcerer Sith! Or maybe that dispatched Paladin. It doesn't matter which one you kill."

Ruolan was not surprised at all. She looked very unconcerned about the Prime Minister's demands. "Is that your request? Then I will promise you that!"

She paused for a while, then looked at the Prime Minister and said, "Kill Sith or the Paladin. Now I am curious. Aren't you supposed to be on the Temple's side? Why aren't you protecting the Temple's interest wholeheartedly?"

The Prime Minister sneered, "What's wrong? Are you not certain about this task? Or could it be that you are not confident in dealing with Sith or the Paladin?"

"What a joke!" Ruolan glared and replied, "Who do you think I am? [I am Ruolan Sky!](#) The descendant of the most powerful Paladin in the history of the Roland Continent."

"I believe in your strength! After all, you are the only person with the strength of a Paladin other than those in the Temple." The Prime Minister laughed and continued, "I will also keep my promise. After this is over, you are free! You no longer need to take my orders. I will ask the Temple to restore your family's powers!"

In the raws and literal translations, it would be human rights.

However, these people are dwarves. Since the discussion should involve both humans and dwarves, I decided to call it people rights.

There is a "Twenty-One Demands" in the real world. It involved Japan giving China a set of demands in 1915.

我是若兰.天 in the raws. Ruo Lan.Tian. Tian could mean Sky/Day/Heaven/Season and a few others. The only name worthy word for it would be Sky. Meanwhile, 天烈Tian Lie was translated as Sky, the fat Paladin Rody met many chapters ago. The 'Lie' part could mean strong/violent/staunch. At the time Tian Lie appeared, I named him Sky in accordance with all the English-like names that appeared such as Nicole. On top of that, Chinese surnames are supposed to come first (assuming it is Chinese) This makes Tian Lie 'right', but Ruo Lan.Tian 'wrong'. As this seems to be a one-time thing, I will leave the names as they are.

Chapter 300: A Defeated General (1)

A charming serenade reverberated within the hall of the palace. The nobles, men and women, invited by the king danced to the music in the banquet hall. The envoy that came from the Radiant Continent, Earl Rody's identity, had already been made public officially. Either way, they were already prepared to face-off against the Temple. That was why matters like peace negotiations no longer needed to be done surreptitiously.

Rody and Mouse did not dance but only stood on the sidelines. Mouse calmly held Rody's arm, but she was looking at the others dancing and looked rather eager to dance as well.

Rody gave Mouse a glance and whispered, "What's wrong? Could it be that you have never danced before?" Rody immediately realized he had just asked something stupid the moment the words came out of his mouth. Mouse was a Saint of the Temple. As a practitioner of the Temple, she would never have the chance to live like a noble.

Thinking of this, Rody laughed and stood in front of Mouse. He gently stretched out his arm and asked her to a dance.

"May I?"

The expression in Mouse's eyes changed. The Black Veil Saint who could confront a mighty force without batting an eyelid looked confused at that moment. Still, she held Rody's palm.

"Follow me, I will take you dancing."

And so, the most dazzling man and woman in the audience finally entered the dance floor.

Mouse did not know how to dance and Rody was not much better than her. Rody had gone through special training to learn how to dance in the Duke's Mansion and only learned simple steps. However, the two still danced to the music as they gently

embraced each other. They only saw their tenderness for each other in their eyes.

Together with Rody's identity as the envoy, the two of them became the focus of the audience.

"What? Are you envious?" Seth laughed as he glanced at Nedis.

Nedis fiercely glared at Rody. She gritted her teeth and hmped at Seth. She sternly said, "Are you trying to make me angry? Does it benefit you if I am angry?"

Seth immediately kept quiet.

In a way, Seth had finally met his nemesis.

The originally proud playboy did not have a good opinion of Rody. Even though Mouse had made him miserable, Seth always thought that Mouse had simply used her overwhelming strength to force him into that situation.

However, Nedis, who returned alongside Rody, made the playboy hit a wall.

In fact, ever since he learned that they were about to return to the Radiant Empire, Seth had actually thought of a few ways to escape. However, his plans failed every time, not because of Rody or Mouse but because of the cunning woman, Nedis.

Two days ago, Seth had climbed out of the window in the middle of the night. He thought of a plan and took a bit of the fragrance of the dark orchid. This fragrance could hide the traces of people's movement and make them invisible. This fragrance might be useless against masters like Rody and Mouse but was enough to deal with the Royal Knights guarding the palace.

However, Rody had earlier said that Seth must not be allowed to escape. Nedis had been paying attention. Nedis was aware when Seth had gone and collected the dark orchid fragrance, so she kept silent and did a devious trick.

"In fact, there was nothing complicated." Nedis later explained to the surprised Rody and Mouse. "I only added a fragrance that could attract bees on top of the dark orchid fragrance."

Seth, who had put on the fragrance and was ready to escape, went to the gardens and was chased by the Sauron Kingdom's local poisonous bees. It was a spectacular sight where 'Miss Nicole's' long sleeves fluttered while bees buzzed about her.

Fortunately, Mouse, the powerful sorcerer, was there and treated Seth's red face. Seth only experienced some pain.

After Seth had recovered, he tried to escape again the next night. However, he was too conceited. Even though he wanted to leave, he wanted to take revenge on Nedis first. The result was a failure.

Nedis was as cunning as Seth and had already expected Seth would try and run away again. She had also expected him to try and take revenge before running away. That was why she was already on guard.

Unfortunately, the Gods did not help Seth. Seth had used a low ranked magic stone to summon a few black bats.

The result could be imagined. Nedis was a genuine vampire, so the black bats brought by Seth had been commanded to go rush back to Seth with a single wave of her hand. As a result, the playboy's body turned red again and lost a lot of blood. It should be known that bats summoned by dark magic were simply cute animals to the vampires.

After these two experiences, Seth had given up escaping. He now also considered Nedis his archenemy. Although Mouse had healed Seth, she was unable to help him recover from the blood loss. Seth, having lost a lot of blood, was frail and thus was unable to escape.

Seth looked at Nedis and saw no unusual expression on her face. He sighed in relief and quickly stood further away.

The song ended. Rody was still holding on to Mouse. Both of

them seemed intoxicated. The song then changed to a cheerful rhythm. Mouse's cheeks turned red and she breathed heavily. It was not clear if that was because she was tired or in love. Rody held Mouse with his strong arms.

Nedis almost broke her teeth from gnashing too hard as she watched this. She finally sighed and turned to Seth before coldly asking, "Hey. Transvestite. Do you want to dance?"

"Hm? What?" Seth immediately became vigilant.

"I asked if you wish to dance!" Nedis glared at Seth.

Seth pursed his lips and softly said, "Right now, I am dressed as a woman. Is two women dancing together fun?"

At this moment, Concubine Ruolan came in from a corner of the hall with large strides.

The concubine still had an alarming vigor. She deliberately wore a warrior's robe for men, giving her a valiant appearance. However, the way she was dressed made her really look like a man.

Concubine Ruolan seemed to be looking around. She saw Mouse and Rody dancing cheerfully and looked disappointed but then saw Seth. Her eyes lit up and she walked over in large strides.

Seth reacted quickly. He had already seen Ruolan from afar. When he saw her eyes seemed to glow in red, he subconsciously shuddered and quickly replied to Nedis, "You want to dance? Okay, let's dance!"

"Hm? Didn't you..." Nedis sneered.

"Just keep dancing. Don't talk so much!" Seth quickly said. He then grabbed Nedis's hands and went to the middle of the hall.

The two stunning beauties went to the middle and started dancing to the song. The surrounding people could not help but be surprised. Fortunately, the people had gotten used to behavioral extremes by Concubine Ruolan on normal days. That was why

they did not have a huge reaction to this.

Only Ruolan saw 'Miss Nicole' ran away. She became a little angry and glared fiercely.

After some time, the music changed again. The dancing style also changed. In accordance to the music, the dancing partners would be exchanged. Originally, Rody and Mouse were a pair and Seth and Nedis were another. During the exchange, Nedis wanted to pull Rody and give Seth to Mouse. However, in a hurry, she pulled the wrong person. Once she pulled the person, she found that the person in front of her was Mouse.

As a result, Seth and Rody were dancing arm in arm...

The dance continued, and they could not stop immediately because of etiquette. Seth was dressed in woman's clothing and Rody was helpless. Rody resisted the urge to laugh wildly as he held Seth's hand, and made Seth spin under his hand...then spin the other way...

Nedis was surprised for a brief moment but soon calmed down. Her original purpose was to separate the affectionate couple. Although there was a slight error, she had achieved her objective. Mouse did not think too much when she watched Rody put on a helpless expression as he danced with Seth, who looked like an endearing young girl to others...

The two girls then laughed at the side...

When the song ended, the two men separated quickly from each other. Rody had quickly rushed out of the hall. His speed was slightly faster than the time he fought the Dragon warrior—his objective was obvious. He wanted to wash his hands at the pond outside.

Seth felt agonized as well and he could not help but fiercely rub both hands.

"I wonder if there is a spell that could re-grow limbs that have

been cut off..."

...

Rody was standing at the pond outside the palace. He had washed his hands several times, but his heart still felt cold. Suddenly, a simple and honest voice came from behind him.

"Excuse me. Are you Rody, the Earl of the Radiant Empire?"

Rody turned his head around. He saw a tall middle-aged man standing not far behind him.

The man had a squarish face. His gaze was firm and also upright like a soldier. His clothes showed that he was a noble of a lower rank. Compared to the other brightly dressed nobles, his formal clothes were simple and trim.

The man approached Rody and gave a slight smile. He then stretched out his hand and said in a pleasant voice, "My name is Tiger, commander of the Sauron Kingdom's knights. I am also the commander of the current Roland Coalition."

"Oh?" Rody was a little bit surprised.

It was rather inconceivable. The commander of a hundred thousand soldiers had fought so long in the war between the two continents but the two had not met each other. Even though the coalition surrendered after that, Rody had not attended the surrender ceremony.

He did not expect General Tiger to return so quickly. He was most likely repatriated along with the first batch of prisoners.

Rody did not belittle the enemy that had lost to him on the battlefield. In fact, if it was not because of the internal contradictions and conflicting commands of the coalition, it would have been difficult for Rody to win. There were also many signs that showed that General Tiger was an experienced and reliable General.

With that thought in mind, Rody also stretched out his hand. He shook the other person's hand and smiled, "Yes. My name is Rody. General Tiger, I am happy to meet you. When did you return?"

"Three days ago," Tiger replied naturally. "The first one hundred thousand soldiers have returned three days ago."

Rody nodded and smiled slightly.

Tiger hesitated a little before whispering, "Earl Rody, I heard from others that you have been under the command of the Duke of the Tulip Family. I have a bold request that I hope you can grant."

"What is it?"

Tiger took a deep breath and loudly said, "That time, I was defeated by your country and taken prisoner. Although I was defeated, I am convinced of the Duke's resourcefulness as a Commander! My only regret is, I did not have the opportunity to meet the Duke when I was in your country! If you meet the Duke when you return, I would like you to help me convey my respect for him! As a soldier, it was my pleasure to meet such a strong rival on the battlefield!"

"Oh?" Rody was slightly surprised but felt ashamed in his heart. He did not expect the enemy he defeated to respect him. He embarrassedly replied, "General Tiger, do not be like this. Victory and defeat are common in the military. You need not be discouraged by a single defeat. I wish to see General Tiger once again be inspired by military might and provide impressive and meritorious military service to your kingdom. On top of that, you must have also understood the current situation. I am sure the King still needs your service to the kingdom!"

Tiger's eyes glinted. He repeated Rody's words, "Victory and defeat are common in the military...these are great words! Earl Rody, your words are truly exquisite!"

Rody gave a wry smile and did not reply. These words were

originally in Dandong's notes. Rody felt that it was fitting and had inadvertently said it.

Tiger saw that Rody did not speak. He laughed loudly and said, "No matter what, it was still a defeat. I admire the Duke of the Tulip Family very much. He is worthy of your country's legend! That is why I have a request. I need your help to express my respect to the God of War of the present era. Otherwise, I would have everlasting regret!"

Rody quickly agreed. "Alright. I will help you convey it."

Tiger seemed very grateful. He said, "You were under the Duke's command, so you presumably must have personally experienced it?"

"Yes. I used to be an officer of the Lightning God's Whip. I was the captain of the Duke's bodyguards," Rody replied with that excuse.

Tiger was immediately in awe. "The Lightning God's Whip are elites. I have learned this from experience! Your country really has such a powerful and astonishing army!"

Tiger seemingly had a lot of questions in his mind. In fact, after his defeat, he had studied his failure and summed up a lot of things. At that moment, he met a high-ranking officer that had experienced the same war as him. That officer was also someone that had personally defeated him. Hence, he asked the questions he himself could not understand.

Rody had a very favorable impression of Tiger. Although Tiger was a defeated general, he had shown respect for his opponent regardless of his own reputation. This showed that he was a very open-minded person, and he now even modestly asked for advice. This man was indeed a true soldier.

The two talked for a while. It could be said that nobody understood the situation about the war as much as these two. One

was the Commander of the Roland Coalition Army. The other was the Commander of the Radiant Empire. After discussing for a while, Tiger sighed. "If it went according to this argument, I am starting to have more questions."

"Oh?" Rody smiled.

Tiger earnestly said, "Actually, since the start, I have thought that the war was very strange! The Roland Continent obviously did not have enough strength to subjugate your country! However, we insistently took the initiative to start a losing war...As soldiers, we were supposed to serve the country. However, I cannot understand being sent to court death! Now, listening to your analysis, I am even more certain of it! This war was doomed to fail for us from the start!"

Rody naturally knew the answer to Tiger's question. This was all the Temple, or rather, Kara's plan. However, in respect of each other's status, Rody could not tell him. Therefore, Rody just smiled and said, "General Tiger, we are both soldiers. These are things we cannot figure out. In that case, we should stop thinking about it. These are not the responsibility of the military but the business of politicians."

Chapter 301: A Defeated General (2)

Tiger sternly replied, "Yes. Your words are very logical! I feel that there would be a great change on the Roland Continent. Otherwise, His Majesty would not be so anxious to get us back in exchange for eight hundred warships."

Rody nodded. "This time, you have returned to your country. I am sure His Majesty will certainly need you in an important position. There is still a need for your abilities."

Tiger shook his head and replied, "Although I am a soldier, I am not a war maniac. If war can be avoided, it should be avoided. Once a war starts, there would be countless casualties."

Rody was filled with deep respect. He praised him, "You truly have a noble mindset."

Tiger smiled wryly for a moment then looked around with a hesitant expression before whispering, "Earl. If I am not wrong, His Majesty is anxious to get us back to prepare and fight against the Temple! You must also know this...but from your point of view, do you think we can win?"

Rody burst out laughing and he replied, "General Tiger, isn't it unsuitable to ask me such questions?"

Tiger faintly smiled and said, "There is nothing unsuitable about it. Either way, we all already know this in our hearts. I also have such thoughts in my heart. However, the Sauron Kingdom lacks talent. It is rare to encounter a person proficient in military affairs like you, which is why I had no other option but to ask for your opinion."

Rody felt moved, causing him to smile. "General Tiger, I suppose His Majesty is the one who ordered you to ask me this?"

"That's right!" Unexpectedly, Tiger did not deny it. "I do not understand His Majesty's intentions for him to want me to ask you

about this. He seems to place a lot of importance in your opinion. I was initially puzzled but after talking with you, I found that you really have extraordinary views about these things. If it is said that looking for you was an order from His Majesty, asking you these questions would be entirely out of my personal respect for you."

Rody squinted at Tiger for a while.

Rody did not have a good opinion of the King. It was obvious that the King wanted to make use of him one last time before his departure. However, he had a good opinion of General Tiger. This person dared to speak and act without any pretense. He was the kind of person Rody admired.

Rody thought for a moment and sighed. 'Forget it. Let's be considerate to Tiger and not make things difficult for him.'

"General Tiger, if you really must listen to my opinion..." Rody sternly said, "to tell you the truth, I believe that you all may not win against the Temple even after uniting the dozen kingdoms on the Roland Continent!"

"Oh?" Tiger simply raised his eyebrows, but he did not seem too surprised.

Rody nodded and continued, "To make things clearer, the problem is the quality of the troops! I admit that if the dozen kingdoms were to unite, you would have the advantage in numbers! The knights of the Temple would only number about two hundred thousand no matter how they expand. On the other hand, it would not be too difficult for the other kingdoms to desperately gather together a million soldiers. However, the troops' combat effectiveness does not lie in numbers. It depends on the quality of the troops!"

"That's right!" Tiger sighed. "If we only compare numbers, we would not have lost to you. I learned later that your Lightning God's Whip had only been reorganized before the war. The Central Cavalry only had fifty thousand soldiers active on the battlefield.

However, those fifty thousand soldiers, along with the Northern Legion, had bested our army of eight hundred thousand!"

"Yes. The Holy Knights would also not lose to our Lightning God's Whip. More importantly..." Rody thought for a moment then said, "It is also the aspiration of the people. The Temple has ruled the Roland Continent for too long. It does not matter whether it is the nobles or the commoners. Everyone has faith in the Temple. Even if the King declares war, it is difficult to say which side the public will support. I suspect that when the war starts, the rearguard will have an insurrection before the frontlines can even retreat."

"Yes." Tiger's expression seemed gloomy. "This is also one of my concerns. The Temple has already won the hearts of the people through religion! If we do not win the hearts of the people during a war, it would become very terrifying."

Rody smiled and said, "It is not impossible to defeat the Temple. But..."

Tiger raised his eyebrow and sternly asked, "But what? If you have any misgiving, just say it out."

Rody smiled as he looked at Tiger. He slowly said, "I am afraid that once I say this, you would think I have selfish motives."

Tiger immediately replied angrily. "Don't say that. I am also not a fool. If you propose a plan that would be harmful to me, I would be able to spot it!"

Rody gave a shallow smile. His smile then became stern as he said, "My method is to delay for time!"

"Delay?"

"Yes!" Rody's eyes flashed. "Delay it! The longer the war is fought, the better! The best is to fight the war for three to five years, or even longer. Maybe even eight to ten years!"

"What?" Tiger finally showed a surprised expression. "Fight for

eight to ten years? Do you know how much damage that would cause the Roland Continent?"

He fiercely glared at Rody in anger.

"I know!" Rody coldly replied, "The longer the war is dragged on, the more people will die. The Roland Continent would lose its vitality..."

"You know that, and you still gave me such a proposal?" Tiger squinted his eyes and coldly said, "Do you people of the Radiant Empire want us to destroy ourselves before sending over the Lightning God's Whip?"

"Hahaha..." Rody burst out laughing. His laughter was filled with awe, making Tiger's heart turn cold.

"General Tiger. I already said this earlier that you may not be able to take my advice. In that case, I will just keep quiet."

Tiger revealed a complicated expression. He hesitated for a moment before he bowed sternly. "I was too impatient. Please continue."

Rody coldly looked at Tiger and asked, "Didn't you doubt my motives?"

Tiger replied, "I do! But I am thinking there must be more to it!"

There was a pause. The Sauron Kingdom's number one commander continued, "From our discussion earlier, I can see that you have extraordinary talent. Even if you wanted to scheme against us, you would not say something that we can so easily see through. That is why I believe that you must have a deeper reason!"

Rody narrowed his eyes as he looked at Tiger. A sudden feeling surged in his heart. 'If...if the Roland Coalition Army was not disunited during the war and had a centralized command, it would not be easy to defeat this person!'

Rody finally looked at him normally and said, "Alright...General Tiger, you must have analyzed the war between your country and the Temple. In your opinion, what weakness does the Temple have that could be utilized?"

"This..." Tiger hesitated for a moment and said, "I think the biggest weakness of the Temple is that the number of soldiers they have is too few. Although the Holy Knights are strong, if we take advantage of our superior numbers and slowly deplete them..."

"Hahaha..." Rody deliberately laughed coldly and pretended to be dissatisfied. "You are lying to me! I do not believe the number one Commander, General Tiger, to only have so little knowledge!"

Tiger turned red and gritted his teeth. "I...Fine. In my opinion, the Temple lacks foundation."

"Oh?" Rody was slightly surprised. He did not expect the man who was a pure soldier to also see that fact.

The Temple has ruled the Roland Continent for thousands of years! Its history was longer than many of the other small kingdoms. However, Tiger had just said the Temple lacked 'foundation'.

Rody sighed. "I did not expect you to think of this as well."

Rody paused for a while. Since he decided not to beat around the bush any longer, he said, "If you want my opinion, I will speak freely."

Tiger nodded and looked around. He then pulled Rody to the edge of the pond and sat down.

Rody pondered for a moment before he spoke.

"Although the Temple is extremely influential in the Roland continent, it has a fatal weakness! It does not have its own territory! Even the weakest kingdom in the Roland Continent has its own territory, its own people, and its own farmland. However, the Temple does not have these!

"In other words, the Temple rules the Roland Continent by prestige. It relies on the tribute and taxes of the different kingdoms and the people.

"You also know that war costs money! Without land, there would be no land tax! Their Holy Knights are elites. However, as elites, their expenses are also frightening...

"At the beginning of the war, the Temple may have a lot of money to spend. However, it is impossible for them to keep using it forever. Besides that, the other kingdoms on the Roland Continent should also be financially more powerful than the Temple. The Temple may be able to win with their strong army at the start. However, if you were to guide the army steadily and keep delaying your opponent, the Temple would not be able to keep holding out!

"Once the war has started, the other nations will no longer give tax revenue to the Temple. Without tax money, the Temple will be like a large tree without roots.

"Why does the Temple have the aspiration of the people right now? I believe the worship of the Gods and even the blessings are all fake! Do you know this? According to my understanding, at present, a common family of the Roland Continent pays forty percent of their earnings as a tax to the kingdom. They must then give twenty percent to the Temple as the religious tax. The remaining money is their own. In fact, the ordinary people did not think too much. The Temple's taxes are low while the kingdom's taxes are high. That is why they felt that the Temple was better than the Kingdom.

"If it were me, I would immediately lower the taxes in the kingdom just before the start of the war! I would lower it down to an outrageous level! When the war starts, it would be inevitable for you to lose territory in the beginning. However, in order to receive funds, the Temple would definitely start to ask for tax money. This way, no matter how much taxes they ask for, they would

inevitably lose popularity! Based on my conjecture, the Temple's resources for fighting the rest of the continent could last for half a year. When it is exhausted, more taxes would be the inevitable outcome. As a result, the taxes levied will be bound to be higher than the kingdom because it would not be enough if it was low! People will then stop supporting the Temple!"

"But..."

Rody smiled and said, "People are selfish! If you were to ask an average person to pay twenty percent of their annual income as tax to worship the Temple, they may be able to accept. However, if you told them to pay half or more of their income, most people would not want to. For the sake of having a meal and staying alive, faith and religion are not worth mentioning!"

Rody then laughed very hard. "I know there are some religious fanatics that would donate all of their property. However, those kinds of lunatics are a minority. Having one of such lunatics out of every thousand people can already be considered good! Most, or rather, the vast majority of people are all ordinary people. As a result, this would become much simpler. The Temple would lose the popular feelings of the people. As long as you persevere for a long time, the final victory would be possible!

"The important thing to take note of is—the Temple only has two hundred thousand Holy Knights. Their only solution is to hope that they are able to rout your main force as soon as possible in a large campaign. That is why you should just give up some territory and avoid confrontation. If the Temple wants to occupy those territories, they would need to divide their forces to handle it. This would make them slightly weaker. You do not need to worry about military strength. Although the territories have been occupied, once they divide their forces, it can be taken back. The defenders in that small area would probably not be able to resist even if they were elite Holy Knights. In short, the objective is so that they are not able to collect the taxes so easily!"

Rody sighed. "In fact, the most difficult part of this approach is the early phase of the war! The guys at the Temple are not all fools. Some people will have thought of this and will inevitably find ways to end the war as quickly as possible. That is why the pressure will be immense at the start of the war. That is why persevering is the only way! If...if you can prevent yourself from being defeated for two years, things will start to improve!"

Tiger took a deep breath. He looked as though he was trying hard to digest Rody's words. He then smiled wryly and said, "You are saying to reduce taxes during the early days of the war for the people. But our large army will also need money to support..."

Rody sneered. "With a dozen kingdoms, the Roland Continent's financial resources would definitely be able to hold out longer than the Temple! If the time comes when the finances are not enough, there is still the Dwarven Kingdom! Those guys are not of the Roland Continent! You can easily impose high taxes there! The dwarves are also not your own soldiers and they are separated by the sea! Do you think the Temple can attack the dwarves? On top of that, the dwarves had been trading ironwood for hundreds of years. They are very rich!"

Rody paused for a while. He then cautiously said, "Even if you still require assistance in the end...Our Radiant Empire can consider lending financial support. Of course, we will not send soldiers to ensure our position and to prevent your side from getting restless!"

Tiger laughed bitterly. "This plan is too weird...But now that I think about it, this is the only way. But, I am not proficient in finance..."

Rody harshly rebutted, "The Roland Continent has so many kingdoms and nobles. Each family has many servants and are extremely wealthy. If you really lack money and provisions you can just threaten the nobles. I am sure the King has confiscated property before!"

Tiger, terrified of such a proposal, blurted out without thinking, "This cannot be done..."

Rody calmly replied, "These are dangerous times. Everything can change. If you cannot comprehend this truth, the King may be able to comprehend it!"

Tiger had a cloudy expression and seemingly hesitated. Finally, he gritted his teeth and said, "Earl, I would like to first thank you for your advice! Although I have reservations about your idea, I will certainly convey this to His Majesty...Also..."

Tiger seemed to have finally made up his mind and then said, "I fully admire you. Is the Earl interested in staying on the Roland Continent and helping me? I promise to persuade His Majesty to give you the best treatment...I think..."

Rody faintly smiled. Tiger did not know his identity, but the King did. He straightaway refused though Tiger also did not give up. He even thought of an alliance and invited Rody to help him as an advisor. However, this was also rejected by Rody.

Finally, the commander of the Sauron Kingdom sighed and slowly said, "I did not expect the Radiant Empire's Duke of the Tulip Family to have so many talented people under his command. Although I did not personally witness the Duke's strength, today's discussion made me gasp in admiration."

He paused for a while and sighed. "Looks like I will never have a chance of a repeat battle with the Duke! I am fully convinced of the strength of your country's strong army and abundance of talented people!"

The man finally bowed to Rody then walked away with his chest held up straight.

Rody sighed in relief. He was about to turn back to the hall when he heard Nedis' voice next to him.

Nedis laughed in a sharp voice. "Wonderful, Rody! I did not

expect you to be so sinister as to give them such a plan! If the Roland people listen to your lies, even if they win the war, they will only be able to recover after a hundred years!"

Chapter 302: Identity!

Rody's expression tightened as he looked around. When he saw nobody else around, he showed a wry smile. "When did you arrive? Did you eavesdrop on our conversation?"

Nedis did not deny it as she replied, "I wanted to hear what kind of evil plan you have given to the Roland people."

Rody thought for a moment before replying, "My plan is not completely harmful to them. You have listened in for a long time. Don't you think my plan made sense?"

Nedis pouted her mouth and walked over. She held his arm then pinched it for a moment.

Rody raised his eyebrows. His body was tough so Nedis's gentle pinches could barely be felt. He only felt the charming and gorgeous body of the woman close to him. Feeling somewhat uncomfortable, Rody moved his arm away.

"Hmph!" Nedis was extremely angry. "I thought you were honest to an absurd extent. Even I would not dare to suggest such a harmful plan...You are really someone that must not be underestimated."

Rody narrowed his eyes and coldly said, "Why are you trying to say?"

Nedis looked Rody, who had stepped away from her a little. She angrily raised her hand and gestured as she said, "Alright, let us talk about just this point. You asked the Roland people to reduce taxes...hmph. Reducing taxes is easy, but increasing it again after that is not! A person's feelings such as greediness and selfishness are things you are familiar with. Now, in order to fight against the Temple, you lower the taxes. You then raise the taxes again in the future. Do you think the Roland people are that stupid?"

Rody shrugged his shoulders and replied, "What about it? When

a disaster is at the doorstep this method is useful."

Nedis coldly said, "You then advised them to confiscate the properties of the rich and powerful families...Don't tell me you do not understand the significance of this! Although those nobles amassed their wealth unfairly, you must also know that the Kingdoms were established mostly by these nobles. If you confiscate their property, how can the nobles support the King? If they listen to your lies, it will be the same as digging their own graves!"

Rody laughed and said, "I am only saying it. The King is also not an idiot. He will not confiscate all the properties of the nobles."

Nedis finally said in dissatisfaction, "You also told him to extort money from the Dwarven Kingdom...Don't you know that the Dwarven Kingdom is now my, Nedis's, territory? If you squeeze dry the Dwarven Kingdom, what kind of profit will I get?"

Rody could not say anything in reply so he simply kept quiet.

Nedis did not hesitate to continue, "What impressed me the most is that you brazenly advised them to draw out the duration of the war! You should know that the longer the war, the more serious the damage will be to the Roland Continent! A war that lasts for one year usually takes them two to three years to recover. If they listen to you and go for a long-term, all-out war, it will take decades or a century for them to recover!"

Rody narrowed his eyes in admiration to Nedis and said, "Since you already understand this, why are you still asking me?"

Nedis stared blankly at Rody for a while. She was seemingly at a loss, but she still sighed and said, "I am simply admiring you a little. If I can see this problem, the King will also be able to see it... You know this, too. However, you still proposed this to that general. Hmph. Right now, the Roland people are in a quandary. Although your idea would be harmful to implement, the Roland people would have to do what you say unless they get a better

idea...This kind of approach is just like..." Nedis thought to herself for a while and laughed bitterly. "It is like digging a hole then waiting for the Roland people to jump in."

Rody also laughed. He added to Nedis's words, "On top of that, they will have to jump in despite knowing that there is a hole in front of them!"

Nedis suddenly revealed a sharp gaze as she approached a few steps towards Rody. Her nose almost touched Rody's chin. She then asked, "Tell me, Rody. Who are you really?"

Rody's heart tightened and he took a step back.

"At the Dwarven Kingdom, you showed such powerful strength and have actually reached the legendary rank as a Domain Master. At that time, I was already feeling suspicious of you. Unfortunately, Sith was around. There were a lot of things that I could not ask you. Besides that, the old sorcerer also said you had the Mystic Dragon's aura...That person you summoned, Sky, is also a Domain Master...The more I see, the more I do not understand you..." Nedis slowly resumed, "On top of that, the people close to you such as the Black Veil Saint apparently betrayed the Temple once you came to the Roland Continent. Looking at how intimate the two of you are, I believe you are the reason she became an apostate! However, this should be the first time you came to the Roland Continent! You and the Black Veil Saint are from different continents. How did you meet each other?"

Nedis continued to speak but looked as though she did not want Rody to answer her. It was as though she was just listing out her thoughts.

"In the Radiant Empire, you are Miss Nicole's lover. I heard you are an officer in the Lightning God's Whip, so this is not that hard to explain. But now, how do you explain the 'Miss Nicole' around you in the Roland Continent? A man who looks so similar to

someone of the Tulip Family must be related...Hmm..."

The more Nedis spoke, the brighter her eyes shined. She exclaimed, "Putting these together, I can only think of one explanation!" Staring at Rody, she slowly said, "You are the Duke of the Tulip Family!"

However, the moment Nedis said it, her expression looked doubtful. "But how would that explain your love for the real Miss Nicole? Could it be that the two of you, as siblings, ..."

Rody saw Nedis with an astonished expression and an evil smile as she looked at him. He panicked and quickly covered her mouth as he shouted, "Stop talking nonsense! Do you think this is something you could simply say?"

Nedis coldly replied, "Either way, you must give me an explanation today! Hmph! We have returned for so many days, but you keep avoiding me and not give me any opportunity to ask you. Now that we have to leave, you should be able to tell me, right?"

Rody laughed bitterly as he looked at Nedis. He still did not say anything. Nedis' eyes suddenly lit up. "Right. Your current face must be a fake! I heard the Duke has blond hair and blue eyes. You must be wearing a magic mask..."

Nedis stretched out her hands as if she was trying to tear off Rody's cheeks. Rody finally became impatient, shouting, "Are you done making trouble?"

He held Nedis' hands looking annoyed. "These are all just your crazy ideas!"

"Then...you are not the Duke of the Tulip Family?" Nedis narrowed her eyes.

Rody was flustered but calmly replied, "I am not! I am not right now, and I would not be in the future! Satisfied?"

Truthfully speaking, Rody now feared the beautiful vampire. Nedis' analysis might not have been exactly correct, but it was not

far from the truth. It was a huge matter that others must not find out.

Rody had trained himself in the art of lying. He looked calm and a little bit impatient as though he was wronged.

Nedis coldly looked at Rody. She suddenly said, "Keep disguising yourself! I will follow you and see how long you can pretend!"

After that, with a whiff of fragrance, Nedis turned and left.

Rody heard the words 'I will follow you' and felt his scalp turn numb. He stood by the pond lost in thought.

...

The Prime Minister was sitting quietly. Even though he was one of the heavyweights in the Sauron Kingdom's political circle, he did not attend the farewell banquet. The King also did not seem to have invited him. He was silently reading the confidential reports on the table in front of him.

The report clearly stated the route the Earl would take when returning to the Radiant Empire. It showed which day he would arrive at which city and which day he would arrive at the port.

The secret report had been sent to his table ten minutes prior. It was a secret report sent by his planted agent in the Royal Knights.

"Secret report?" The Prime Minister's facial muscles contracted, looking like a dried tangerine skin. "It is really a 'secret report'! What a joke!"

He stood up and walked back and forth. He then took a deep breath and muttered, "Looks like King Sauron is really skilled. Not only does he know I have connections with the Temple. He even knows I have an agent in the Royal Knights. Otherwise, this information would not have 'fallen into' my hands so quickly."

The Prime Minister looked so old that he seemed to have trouble moving. He stared at the report. His eyes suddenly gleamed

cunningly as he stretched out his hand...

Without any warning sign, the parchment suddenly started to burn. It turned into ashes within a moment.

The weak-looking old man of the Sauron Kingdom actually had the abilities of a sorcerer.

"Hm. I cannot wait anymore..." The Prime Minister closed his eyes and thought for a moment.

Just an hour ago, he had decided on an action and a precondition with Empress Ruolan in that room. He did not expect the King to have acted so quickly. Fortunately, everything was still within expectations.

He came to a decision and suddenly stood straight. His slightly humpbacked body suddenly turned perfectly straight. He quickly grabbed a small curved sword hanging on the wall, then pulled the wall cabinet with one hand.

That object that looked as though it weighed two hundred kilograms of ironwood had been moved away by the weak-looking old man with just one hand!

Behind the wall was a small iron door. The Prime Minister inserted the curved sword into a socket above the iron door and firmly turned it.

It was cold inside the secret room as though ice was stored in it.

The Prime Minister then walked down the stairs behind the dark door. Under the ground was a small, dark room of about a dozen square meters.

The dark room looked plain. In the middle was a pond carved into the stone. Water was bubbling in the pond as though the water was boiling. There was even white steam floating out.

However, if a person were to stretch out his hand, he would feel a bone-piercing coldness. The white 'steam' was cold air. On top of

that, a layer of shiny ice crystals could be seen on the stones at the edge of the pond.

The Prime Minister stood at the edge of that pond sighing and he started to undress.

He started by taking off his luxurious robes and then his silk underwear. Moments later, the Prime Minister looked like a person in a bathhouse. His emaciated appearance looked scary. The signs of his old age could be seen on his body. His skin was loose, and his muscles were weak. Even his thin ribs could be seen on his chest.

The Prime Minister looked at himself in the mirror by the wall and suddenly murmured, "Hmm. Every time I see this appearance, I feel very unpleasant."

He suddenly remembered Concubine Ruolan's question. "I am curious. Aren't you supposed to be on the Temple's side? Why aren't you protecting the Temple's interest wholeheartedly?"

"Hmph..." The Prime Minister said to himself, "On the Temple's side? What an interesting statement."

He lifted his feet and stepped into the water and gradually submerged his body in the cold biting waters...However, the Prime Minister did not seem to be in pain. On the contrary, he looked as though he felt comfortable.

After that, something strange happened.

When he soaked himself in the piercingly cold water, his originally aging skin suddenly glowed with a healthy luster. The muscles under his skin all seemed to move fluidly as though his muscles were rapidly changing shape...

The pale and gray-skinned old man glowed with a young and healthy luster. His shriveled-up body gradually bulged with healthy muscles.

Finally, he put his head in the water and soaked his head.

After a moment, he raised his head out of the water.

His gray hair turned into a healthy black and his old, dried tangerine face glowed with a clear white brilliance.

He had a strange pair of eyes. One of the pupils in his eyes was brown while the other was blue. His nose was high and straight. His mouth looked even more remarkable as it gently pursed as though he was looking at everything with disdain. However, when he smiled, there was an indescribable charm contained within.

At last, he walked out of the pond and stood naked at the side of the wall. His aged body had once again turned young and healthy. He stretched his hand and gently waved ...

A huge picture suddenly appeared on the black wall. The picture looked extremely complicated, but it was evident that it was a very advanced magic symbol.

It was a sorcery array for a long-distance transport spell!

He muttered an incantation softly. The sorcery array on the wall immediately drifted out like ripples. Taking a step forward, he walked into the wall...

Brilliant light flashed through an unknown room and a strong magical vibration appeared in the room. A naked man suddenly appeared from the sorcery array, seemingly squinting, then he sighed.

He looked around with a satisfactory smile on his face.

The room was completely sealed and had no windows. The only entrance was a stone door shut tightly. Unless a person was summoned, nobody would dare to open the door.

The Prime Minister that had assumed a new appearance took off a set of clothing on the wall to wear.

He wore a white robe with a peculiar texture on the outside and took a brand-new silver mask from the wall and wore it on his face.

It revealed only his soft mouth.

He gently hit a small peculiar golden bell on the table. A moment later, the door to the room was pushed open from the outside.

Two people wearing the clothes of the Temple's high-ranked priests stood at the entrance with their heads respectfully bowed. They respectfully asked, "Your Excellency the Pontiff, what are your orders?"

The old prime minister, or Prometheus, or Kara, rather, spoke in his gentle and familiar voice, "Summon the Elders. I want to convene an emergency Elder's meeting!"

Chapter 303: Sneak Attack

Arslan had never felt this weird.

The flames of the huge candlelights swayed in the empty hall of the Temple. The shadows on the ground also moved.

The haughty Prometheus was still as mysterious as before. Arslan knelt on one knee and lowered her head. She could feel an oppressive gaze down her back.

She exhaled and lifted her head as she asked, "Is this your order?"

"This is the decision of the Elders," Prometheus calmly replied without a trace of emotion. "The Radiant Empire's envoy must die in the Roland Continent. You must accomplish your task before they reach the sea. You also know that we have no way to deal with the Sauron Kingdom's navy at sea."

Arslan suddenly had an extremely strange feeling.

In the past, she had always felt an indescribable pressure when in front of Prometheus. It was as if the man that was set above the masses was an undefeatable existence. Prometheus was just standing there but his gaze looked as though he could see through all of Arslan's thought. Standing in front of such a person made Arslan feel like a sheep facing a lion. Even though the lion was always calm, in the stillness a kind of fear and foreboding was growing inside...

But on that day, that same feeling of fear when standing in front of Prometheus had seemingly become much lighter... as if...

'Did he become weaker?'

Arslan was startled by her own thoughts. Although her head was lowered, she subconsciously gave a murderous gaze.

'If...if I attack now—or perhaps I still need a sword.'

The idea grew in her mind like weeds growing wildly in summer.

Arslan's body even shook from the agitation and secretly tightened her fists.

But then she felt as if she was glared at more fiercely. The pressure from the penetrating glare made Arslan feel a stab of pain. A drop of sweat flowed down her forehead. She finally sighed and lifted her head gently as she replied in a respectful tone.

"As you wish, Prometheus."

After that, she stood up raising her cloak and walked out of the Temple.

Prometheus watched the strongest warrior of the dragon race walk out. Only he remained in the hall. He sighed in secret.

"These reptiles are getting harder to control." He frowned lightly and then added, "One Paladin does not seem to be enough... Might as well add another."

...

The date of departure had arrived.

The Special Envoy and Earl of the Radiant Empire, Rody, brought his mysterious friends with him on the journey back. The King had shown respect and decorum as he personally accompanied Rody's group till ten miles out of the capital with the guard of honor.

Soon afterward, the old sorcerer Sith had was also deputized as part of the entourage. According to the King, Sith would be their guard.

Another person following them would be Concubine Ruolan. A high-sounding way of saying it would be that the Empress was the representative of the Royal Family in seeing them off. However, most people would rather believe that Ruolan simply wanted to drool at Rody's three beautiful female companions.

What made Ruolan regret was that Seth, Mouse, and Nedis always sat inside the carriage and did not come out. Ruolan was

also too big-sized and was unable to squeeze in with the other three in the carriage.

She wore a formidable set of knight's armors and was riding a large and specially-selected horse. Rody even suspected that the horse was raised through special methods. Probably it was raised using the method for raising horses for the War Chariot. Otherwise, it would not have been able to carry Ruolan.

From the capital, they journeyed unhurriedly for three days. A subordinate announced that they would reach the southern port of the Sauron Kingdom in another twenty miles. From there, they would take a ship that would only need three days to reach the Radiant Empire.

A mountainous range appeared on the horizon. A narrow valley could be seen in the distance.

Rody rode in front and saw the terrain. He could not help sighing.

'This is a perfect place to set an ambush.'

He had already been expecting an incident. The three calm days had made Rody feel very satisfied. Rody pointed his horsewhip to the front of the canyon and then laughed. "Is this the only way to the port?"

Sith rode to Rody's side laughing and said, "Yes. Once we go through that place, we would be able to see the port."

Rody laughed. "The terrain here is a bit weird. In the continent, it is very rare to see mountains so close to the sea."

Sith nodded. His expression turned strange. "This is not a natural mountain. It is man-made. This mountain in front of you is created using earth spells by a large number of land-system sorcerors."

"Oh?" Rody's eyes lit up.

Sith gave him an indiscernible smile and continued, "A few

hundred years ago, during the era of Abbas the Great, our two continents were at war. Your country's Lightning God's Whip had passed through the Thunderous Straits and fought a war near here. As it was too difficult to defeat your cavalry in the wilderness and the surrounding area was flat plains with no strategic points to base off, he took half of the sorcerers on the Roland Continent to create this mountain as a natural barrier!"

Sith pointed at a gap in the canyon.

"That gap there was created by magic. When the Roland people established a fortress during those years, we managed to keep the Lightning God's Whip at the coastal areas. As the Lightning God's Whip crossed the ocean to fight, they were trapped there and unable to come further in."

Sith sounded somewhat proud mentioning these events. After all, the number of times the Roland people had triumphed over the Radiant Empire was too few. The various kingdoms of the Roland Continent wrote volumes of that victory in their historical records.

Rody naturally knew the history and nodded lightly.

It was one of the things in history that made Abbas the Great lose his temper during his later years. In order to conquer the Roland Continent, he had dispatched almost half of the Radiant Empire's Army. The result was that the powerful Navy of the Roland Continent managed to stop the majority of them at sea. Most of the troops were lost at sea. The groups that landed were also badly injured and lacked supplies. In such a situation and also with this mountain range created by the Roland people as well, it was not a surprise that the Radiant Empire failed.

When the group approached, they saw that the mountain valley was not long. Standing at this end they could faintly see the exit on the other end. Man's capabilities were limited. Those years the mountain made by the Roland Continent's sorcerers was actually not too big or high.

Seeing that Rody did not reply, the sorcerer also kept quiet. After all, Sith was not so shameless to brag about how powerful they were in front of the Commander of the most powerful army.

On top of that, in the recent war, hundreds and thousands of soldiers were forced to surrender by him. This was a fact that could be seen.

Sith felt anxious. The King had given the command to take advantage of the Temple's sneak attack on Rody to kill him. But in the past three days, not a single shadow could be seen.

Sith had the same opinion as Rody as he looked at the inaccessible terrain in front of him.

'This place is undoubtedly the most suitable for ambushes. Moreover, this would also be the last opportunity for it'.

Sure enough, as Rody and Sith thought about this, an escort knight suddenly shouted, "Someone is in front!"

A white warhorse dashed out from the valley. On the white horse was a knight wearing a pure black armor. Her red cloak fluttered in the wind. The sword in hand was not the large sword used by the other knights. It was a thin and slender long sword.

The knight was not wearing a helmet. Her hair fluttered in the wind. Her cool and elegant face had a solemn expression.

"Earl Rody, I am sorry, but your journey ends here."

Arslan did not shout. Although she had spoken calmly, her voice traveled far and wide clearly heard by all.

The Paladin immediately waved her hand and a group of fully-armed, black-armored knights filed out from the canyon.

They all wore black armors but unlike Arslan, their cloaks were white.

Their equipment and armor were all standard issues of the Holy Knights. However, their white cloaks showed that they were not

ordinary soldiers in the Holy Knights. Instead, they were high-ranked knights.

There were not many of them. At most, they only had about three hundred people. They crowded at the intersection and took up a very packed battle formation.

Arslan raised her sword to the sky and waved it twice. A few figures floated above the mountains. They wore white sorcerer's robes. Immediately, violent magic waves in the sky floated towards them.

The magic waves even caused Sith's expression to change.

Five sorcerers floated in the sky. The one in the middle wore a bright red robe as if he was a red cloud.

Sith's expression tensed up and he exclaimed, "Red Clothed Saint!"

Chapter 304: Red Clothed Saint

Rody felt relieved now that the enemy had appeared. He had long expected to encounter them so that if he were to encounter them earlier, the earlier it would be solved, and he would not have to worry about it every day.

His opponent seemed to only be a Paladin, a group of Holy Knights and a few sorcerers.

Although he had lost his strength, dealing with the ordinary knights would not be a problem. On top of that, the Black Veil Saint and Old Mark, both of whom were powerful, were present. It would not be too difficult to break through them.

Rody absolutely did not expect himself to be so wrong.

Arslan finally had the appearance of a Paladin this day. She was no longer sneaky, like in the past. She pointed her sword to the front and shouted a phrase.

What made Rody surprised was that he could not understand Arslan's words.

The only one who understood it was Sith.

"It...it is the dragon language!" Sith was shocked and loudly shouted, "Be careful of those Holy Knights! They are all dragons!"

The three hundred knights gave an earth-shattering roar. That roar was like a mighty force. The knights pointed their weapons at their enemies. Their horses stepped forward in unison and the troop of knights gradually approached.

Arslan's heart felt perplexed.

After the dragons started to support the Temple, four dragon Paladins and some dragon warriors that had been dispatched were killed by Rody. Other than those, Arslan had brought out all these others.

These knights were dragon warriors. A common dragon had a dragon's body. However, those that could transform into human-like figures were high-ranked dragons. At that place, all of the knights were stronger than the average human knights. The dragons being powerful was not just an empty statement.

These people were all loyal to Arslan. King Sauron plotting against Paladin Fielding and the Elders also relied on these people. Arslan felt helpless as she understood that her opponent was powerful. There was the Black Veil Saint and also Rody, whom she feared. She had no choice but to go all out from the start.

The dragon warriors roared powerfully. It became even more imposing and some even had a murderous aura. It made the Sauron Kingdom's Royal Knights step a few steps back in fear.

Arslan roared, "Kill!"

The three hundred knights that had been approaching gradually began to sprint.

"Prepare for battle..." The commander of the Royal Knights was very conscientious. He had already given the order aloud but before he could finish his sentence, he suddenly felt his neck turned cold. Whatever words he still had could no longer be spoken.

A wind blade had cut off his head. Its remaining strength made it cut through the armor of the knight behind him. Half of his arm was cut and badly mangled.

They saw that the three hundred dragon warriors were still hundreds of meters away. There were dense flashes of light. The dragon warriors holding swords shot out numerous wind blades and light blades.

'What the hell? These guys are actually so strong?'

Rody was shocked. To send out wind blades or light blades, a person would need to have the military skill of a high-ranked

warrior. The enemies that were quickly approaching obviously had such strength.

Rody drew his scimitar. He did not look at the Royal Knight that had perished on duty and shouted in a deep voice, "Fall into formation!"

However, it was too late. The attacks had reached Rody's formation and tragic cries could be heard. Many Royal Knights were struck and fell off their horses, dying tragically. The troops were thrown into confusion.

There was a snap as the roof of the carriage was smashed by a light blade. Old Mark jumped up from the position of the driver. He carried Seth with one hand and jumped towards the rear.

The magic waves filled the sky. The sorcerers took turns attacking. A thunderous sound was then heard. The man wearing red robes, the Red Clothed Saint, held a ball of light with both of his hands. The ball of light was almost as bright as the sun. He then smashed it down.

'Shit!'

Before Rody could say anything, a black figure from the carriage flew towards the sky. The Black Veil Saint put her hand on her chest. She created a defensive wall with her sorcery and sent it towards the large ball of light.

A thunderous roar could be heard in the sky. The explosion brought a glaring light to the eyes of the people. The violent wind even caused the Royal Knights to have trouble sitting tight on their horses.

The Black Veil Saint in the air chanted. She spun her body quickly in the air and sent out a black tornado towards the sorcerers of the Temple in the distance.

The charging dragon warriors had almost reached the front. These tough fellows were not affected by the explosion in the sky

and did not even close their eyes under the glaring light.

The first row of Royal Knights had immediately engaged with the enemy but was broken through as easily as paper. The Royal Knights were unable to withstand the dragon warrior's attacks. One after another, they were hacked to death along with their horses.

Chaos!

The remaining Royal Knights fought back against the people from the Temple. However, the screams continued as the number of Royal Knights dwindled rapidly. The Black Veil Saint continued to battle with the sorcerers in the sky.

Sith also flew to the sky. He seized an opportunity to fight at the periphery, throwing a light ball to the Temple's sorcerers from time to time. The joint efforts of Sith and Mouse gradually pushed back the Temple's sorcerers and the Red Clothed Saint. There were constant explosions and bright lights in the sky.

Rody had just blocked the sword in front of him when he heard a sorrowful cry from the horse under him. He immediately jumped off the horse and saw that a light blade had cut off the hooves of the horse.

Two swords then came from both his sides. Rody quickly retreated and leaned on the broken carriage. He gritted his teeth and blocked the attacks.

After two clashes, Rody's arm became a little numb. He had used his fighting energy this time thinking he could disarm his opponents. However, the two dragon warriors simply grunted and retreated a few steps back. They still held firmly to their weapons.

"Earl Rody!" Arslan's voice was heard. She had already rushed into the tangled battle. Her long and thin sword stabbed forward lightly as she cried out and appeared in front of Rody in a short moment.

"Please..." the beautiful dragon Paladin said in a low voice, "go and die!"

Her snake-like sword reached in front of Rody. He quickly moved sideways, and the sword stabbed into the carriage behind him. Bang! The carriage fell apart and its broken parts flew out. Rody felt a severe pain on his shoulder. He took a glance and saw that the armor on his shoulder and his clothes were torn. Faint sword marks started to appear.

'I have actually started to bleed!'

'Looks like my current strength is really weak. If it was at that time, the Paladin's attacks would not even hurt me.'

Arslan's earlier attack could clearly be seen in Rody's eyes. If it was in the past, it would not even be a problem to counter this attack.

Although Rody had dodged earlier, his body's reaction was already not good enough. The sword even managed to harm him.

Arslan had a murderous expression. Blood slowly dripped from the sword point. Her body disappeared at that point. Rody's heart tensed up. He then instantly felt a cold blade thrust from behind him.

Rody gave a backhand swing. His attack was fruitless as it was blocked by his opponent. Instead, Rody himself felt like he was electrocuted as he flew sideways.

"How did you become so weak?" Arslan's voice was cold but a little surprised.

What was originally the most terrifying enemy had suddenly become weak.

Ruolan's sword had split a dragon warrior into two halves. Blood splashed all over her face. She heard Rody's groan and suddenly remembered her task. She turned to see Rody sent flying away by Arslan. She sneered, and her huge body charged towards Arslan at

an incredible pace.

Arslan had underestimated the enemy.

She initially did not expect her opponent to be so powerful. She had lightly waved her sword. The Royal Knights were too weak in her opinion and nobody could withstand her attack. However, when their swords clashed, Arslan groaned. Her long and thin sword had bent over. A tyrannical force had immediately pushed over and moved towards her body.

"Who are you?" Arslan was forced to take two steps back to confront her powerful enemy.

Ruolan saw Arslan's cool expression turn into a startled expression. She then grinned and smiled, "Little beauty, when I capture you and take you back, I will slowly tell you!"

As soon as she said that, she swung her huge sword.

Arslan became so angry that her face turned blue.

She knew she was beautiful. However, with her strength and status, she had never been teased in such a wretched tone. No one dared to call her a 'little beauty'.

The two figures, one fat and one thin, could be seen clashing against each other. Ding! Ding! Dang! Dang! The sounds of their weapons clashed; the sounds were so close that it sounded like the rain. As the light and shadows interlocked, the two suddenly shouted loudly at the same time. Boom! A burst of light flashed, and the two figures backed off. Ruolan's face was black and Arslan had turned pale.

Arslan's sword trembled slightly in her hands. She then held the sword with both hands. On the other hand, Ruolan had already held her sword with her other hand.

The first battle the two had with each other ended up as a tie.

Rody struggled to get up but several dragon warriors had already

surrounded him. They slashed at him at the same time. Rody cursed as he waved his sword in an arc. A light blade burst forth and whistled. The circular arc of light forced the enemies around him to retreat.

Nedis hid amongst the crowd using her vampire race's Blood Escape as she looked for an opportunity to attack sneakily.

Old Mark guarded Seth with one hand and fought back the surrounding dragon warriors with his other hand.

At the moment, the Royal Knights had almost been completely annihilated. The remaining one or two stronger ones were sooner or later surrounded by even more dragon warriors and killed.

Old Mark needed to protect Seth and the actions he could take were limited. He cursed as his sword changed into a huge light. He jumped up and slashed down.

There was a loud sound. A large fissure appeared on the ground. There were three dragon warriors who could not dodge in time and were cut into pieces.

Seth who was being held and protected by Old Mark softly whispered out commands. "Left, right...left...left...There are fewer people on the left."

Rody had fervently defended for a while but was soon struck from all directions. Fortunately, these dragon warriors were much weaker than Arslan. Although the attacks struck Rody's body, it was not able to hurt him. It only gave him a little pain.

Rody ignored their attacks and only focused on protecting his head. He spent the rest of his time slashing wildly at his enemy as though he had gone mad. However, they soon got used to his movements and started fighting more carefully. Other than the first three or four individuals, Rody was not able to cause any more heavy damage.

Instead, his body suffered from more attacks. Although he was

not injured, he had almost lost consciousness from the pain.

At that moment, Mouse gave a cry of anger in the sky. Her hands slowly drew a circle.

The originally sunny sky quickly filled with dark clouds filled with lightning. Mouse floated in the sky, her robes fluttering, and stretched out slender her hands as if guiding the Gods.

Boom! A lightning struck at the enemy sorcerers...

The Red Clothed Saint was a middle-aged man. He smiled coldly and shouted, "Get ready!"

He ignored the other sorcerers at the back. He turned his body and faced the lightning as he dashed towards it. It was vaguely visible. He was holding a huge and almost completely transparent disc.

Boom! The lightning struck the disc in his hand, but the transparent disc was like a mirror. When the lightning struck it, it was deflected towards Mouse.

Chapter 305: I Am Going To Kill Him!

Mouse's expression changed, and she quickly retreated far away. She saw the lightning hit the distant mountain and the rocks at the edge of the mountain collapse. Dust flew everywhere.

"Red Cloth, I did not expect you to have mastered this forbidden spell!" Mouse gritted her teeth.

"Black Veil, if you still have any words to say, save it for when I catch you and bring you to the court of judgment!"

Mouse sneered and replied, "Hmph. Red Cloth, did you think you could defeat me with just a forbidden spell?"

Her expression became even colder. As though the thunder in the sky reflected her mood, the bolts of lightning in the sky grew more intense and seemingly shot out of the clouds.

"In accordance with God's command, we are bringing the blasphemous person to the Supreme Judgement..." The Red Clothed Saint's voice seemed to sound like chanting a scripture. His expression became more and more solemn. His voice echoed in the sky as he said, "God declared that we are benevolent. So, all sinners are to be returned to him in the Supreme Judgement."

As soon as he said that, he tapped the huge mirror-like disc. There was then a loud clanging sound that seemed to have an effect that of a solid wave, scattering a lot of the dark clouds.

"Black Veil, accept the Supreme Judgement of the Gods!" The Red Clothed Saint sneered. "You may be more powerful than me but in the face of Supreme Judgement, even your most powerful tactics would be sent back to you!"

"Hmph!" Mouse sneered. "It is just a mirror. Watch me break it!"

Her slender fingers moved very quickly. There was a concentrated thunderous sound. The clouds in the sky dropped another four lightning bolts at the Red Clothed Saint.

The Red Clothed Saint shouted out and hid behind the mirror. The lightning bolts struck the mirror then there was a golden light. The Red Clothed Saint's expression fiercely twisted a little, as though using that sorcery was strenuous. However, soon after that, the Supreme Judgement once again sent the lightning back to Mouse.

Mouse sneered. Her finger gave a command and the clouds in the sky dropped a few lightning bolts, striking the deflected lightning bolts and causing it to disperse.

"Red Cloth!" Mouse's beautiful face was ice-cold. "I have already said this earlier. Your Supreme Judgement is just a laughable sorcery trick...Hmph. Let us see how long your magic power can last."

Mouse then spun her body in place. Countless lightning bolts dropped from the sky and struck the Supreme Judgement mirror.

The Red Clothed Saint seemed to shake. The rapid consumption of magic power made him turn pale. However, the mirror still reflected all the lightning.

Mouse did not stop at all. Lightning bolts continued to shoot from the sky and struck down the reflected lightning bolts, while the remaining ones continued to bombard the Red Clothed Saint's Supreme Judgement.

Finally, there was a clear and melodious cracking sound. The Red Clothed Saint flinched and quickly let go of the mirror as he retreated.

The edge of the Supreme Judgement immediately started to crack. Countless thin cracks appeared on the originally smooth mirror. Finally, the mirror broke then disappeared like fireworks...

Mouse sneered as she stopped. She looked murderously at her opponent and asked, "Red Cloth, what else do you have?"

The Red Clothed Saint had retreated quickly. However, his pale face revealed a smug smile.

She soon saw a few sorcerers from the Temple had prepared a strange and skewed hexagram in the sky. The Red Clothed Saint had retreated to the center of the hexagram.

"Black Veil, you are just a woman. In the final analysis, you are still not a match for me!" The Red Clothed Saint suddenly stopped laughing and shouted, "Die! Black Veil!"

The old sorcerer, Sith, had already retreated to the rear. When Mouse and the Red Clothed Saint fought, he had tried to attack a few of the other sorcerers. However, they successfully defended their positions and had used some kind of sorcery array. At the periphery, there was a Guardian Boundary blocking Sith's attacks.

Sith also did not try his best. His task was to take advantage of the chaos to attack Rody. It was not to fight desperately against the Temple.

"Something is not right!" Sith warned Mouse and had quickly descended. He conveniently threw a fireball down. The dragon warriors attacking Mark was knocked back, and he then headed towards Rody.

The hexagram made by the Temple's sorcerers quickly emitted a white light. The white light gathered at the Red Clothed Saint in the center, as though he was standing in the middle of a holy light giving him a God-like aura.

"The holy light will cleanse the evil of the world. Be enlightened, Black Veil!" The soft voice of the Red Clothed Saint was heard. Mouse immediately felt everything in front of her had turned bright.

A huge beam of light enveloped Mouse. She could not dodge it even with her strength. Her entire body was shrouded in that beam of light.

At the start, Mouse closed her eyes subconsciously to avoid the glare. However, when she reopened her eyes, she noticed that her body did not suffer any injury. Although the light was intense, she felt warm as though the afternoon sun was shining on her body.

But then, Mouse's expression immediately changed. This was because she felt her magic power rapidly being pulled out of her body.

She raised her eyebrows and quickly moved to the left. However, when her body hit the edge of the beam of light, she actually bounced back!

Mouse gradually felt weak...

The magic power in her body started to flow out faster and faster. Finally, it was like a powerful current. Mouse bit her lips in pain. At that moment, her body felt a weird pain.

Inside her body, the movement of magic power pierced through her soul with an ice-cold feeling. However, her skin that was illuminated by the beam of light felt warm and cozy. She felt as though her soul was being torn apart by two large hands.

She suddenly opened her mouth and uttered a pained scream...

At that moment, the beam of light had something indiscernible appeared like flowing water. It was like the flow of energy pulled out of Mouse's body that slowly moved towards the Red Clothed Saint. It then gradually entered the Red Clothed Saint's body...

Sith had secretly approached Rody. However, the huge changes to the situation in the sky caused him to pause instinctively. He took a look and shouted aloud without thinking, "Combined sorcery! It is the Temple's combined sorcery!"

Rody had just been sneakily attacked by a dragon warrior behind him. He staggered a little and knelt on one knee barely able to support his body with his scimitar. His entire body felt painful. The power in his body seemed to have dried up.

Suddenly, he heard Mouse's voice in the sky...

Her scream was filled with pain, fear, and sorrow...

Rody's mind then hummed as though something from inside his body charged into his mind. It seemed something like a stick in his mind broke...

"Mou...Mouse..." Rody involuntarily looked towards the sky. The situation in the sky had made the weak-looking Rody instantly appear incomparably angry. He suddenly roared loudly, "Mouse!"

In an instant, Rody's body burst out with his golden fighting energy. His eyes looked extremely murderous. His large body suddenly stood back up. His scimitar carried a golden flame...

Swish! Swish! Without even having the opportunity to give a horrified shriek, the few dragon warriors near him had instantly been split into two. Their broken corpses fell to the ground, forming a river of blood.

Rody roared. He saw the beam of light in the sky finally dispersed. Mouse's body was like a fragile leaf as she fell from the sky.

Rody fiercely stomped his foot into the ground, creating a deep imprint, and propelled body into the air like an arrow. He caught Mouse in the air and then crashed to the ground.

Mouse's eyes were tightly closed. Her breathing was very weak, and she looked very pale.

There was a long and haughty laugh in the sky. The pale-faced Red Clothed Saint now looked as rosy as his clothes. He again magically took out a huge mirror, pointing it to the people on the ground and shouted, "All you sinners, accept God's Judgement!"

The sorcerors of the hexagram once again started to send out wisps of holy light that flowed towards the Red Clothed Saint.

As the light accumulated in his body, his body once again shined

with a dazzling white light.

"Run quickly!" Sith's expression changed as he quickly escaped.

Arslan and Ruolan were in a situation where both sides had suffered injuries. Arslan had the strength of a dragon warrior. During the fight, she had used fire and ice, causing a lot of damage to Ruolan. At that moment, half of Ruolan's armor was covered in ice with the other half being burnt black.

Arslan had also suffered a lot of injuries. Blood flowed from her mouth. Her movements have also slowed down a lot.

Ruolan's specialty was power. She had used her overwhelming strength to suppress her opponent. This kind of adversary was the perfect nemesis of Arslan. In the battle just now, both of them had suffered substantial injuries.

Arslan had long been aware of the situation in the sky. She quickly retreated and shouted in the dragon's language.

Countless roars were then heard. All the attacking dragon warriors suddenly howled in strange voices...

Their bodies suddenly expanded. Their body armors burst open.

Within a moment, all the dragon warriors transformed into dragons of different sizes. These dragons did not continue to attack Old Mark. Their dragon wings flapped rapidly as hundreds of dragons retreated towards Arslan.

The frightened Sith roared loudly, "Everyone! Disperse!"

As if following his words, a huge beam of light shot down from the sky.

The huge mirror in the Red Clothed Saint's hand caused the beam of light to be magnified by more than ten times.

Hearing Sith's warning shouts, Ruolan moved immediately. Old Mark was also fast. However, the light was too quick even for people who were as strong as Paladins to escape.

Old Mark was apparently far agiler than Ruolan. He had already tried to jump out from the beam of light. However, just in that moment, he suddenly felt his body turn cold and his body stiff in the air, as if a large chunk of his soul was cut out. The indescribable feeling of pain distorted his old face.

However, he still managed to jump out of the light. Although he had crashed heavily to the ground, he had escaped.

The beam had been magnified ten times by the mirror. It was as though the speed at which it extracted energy also became ten times faster.

Ruolan was not so lucky. When her body crashed heavily into the edge of the beam, she bounced back. As the beam of light shined on her body, she quickly lost the ability to stand. She slashed out with her sword. However, the beam of light was like a solid object. When her sword reached the edge of the light, it was stopped!

Ruolan soon lost the energy to even curse and her huge body crashed into the ground.

The only one that had not been hurt was Rody.

He held on to Mouse as he knelt. His body and mind had all been focused on Mouse. His large hand caressed Mouse's face as he called her name, "Mouse...Mouse..."

Mouse's eyelids trembled slightly and opened a little. She could not see clearly but she knew who was in front of her from the familiar aura.

Mouse's lips had lost its color. Her lips fluttered softly as though she was saying something. However, she was so weak that she could hardly say a complete sentence.

Rody suppressed the anger in his heart and tilted his head down to listen to her.

"Rody...run...run quickly...We...cannot win. That Red... Red..."

Rody trembled. He seemed to find it difficult to suppress the murderous rage in his heart. He seemingly had a desire to tear things apart. However, the powerful Black Veil Saint in his arms was like a delicate glass.

"Mouse, are you talking about that Red Clothed Saint?" Rody gritted his teeth.

Sith stood not far from Rody and whispered, "She will not die. It is just that sorcery had sucked away all her magic powers. Right now, she is very weak."

Rody felt that his heart was about to explode. He gently carried Mouse and laid her by Sith's side.

His eyes were filled with a mixture of ice and fire. He coldly said towards the old sorcerer, "Look after her. I am going to kill that red-clothed fellow!"

Chapter 306: You Never Realized

Rody could clearly feel a portion of his strength in his body beginning to recover. Although he was still not as strong as before, the feeling of being full of vitality and the feeling of the flow of fighting energy in his body gave Rody a strong will to fight.

He held his scimitar with both hands then jumped and soared into the air towards the Red Clothed Saint. Rody shouted. His scimitar became a dazzling light as he slashed straight downwards. The hexagram barrier formed by the Red Clothed Saint emitted a protective white holy light.

Clang! Rody's scimitar seemed to have slashed at a solid metal surface. The huge rebound knocked Rody back in the air.

"Courting death!" The Red Clothed Saint raised his eyebrows. He focused his attention on Rody. Immediately after that, a beam of light shot out from his body like before. Its target now was Rody.

The beam of light was fast. Rody did not have any chance to dodge. Before he could stabilize himself, he was already shrouded in the light.

Old Mark and Sith, who were standing on the ground, cried out in alarm at the same time. Right then, Rody also felt some changes in his body. His strength started to leave his body.

In the light beam, black whiffs came out of Rody's body. It condensed and floated towards the Red Clothed Saint.

"It is black?" The Red Clothed Saint seemed to be somewhat puzzled. He then automatically dismissed it. There was absolutely no way for opponents hit by the light to do anything about it. No matter from whichever angle you look at it, he had already won.

Rody roared but his body started to tremble. It was not known how he did it. As though there was a weird power, the black whiffs were reabsorbed.

"This...this is..." The Red Clothed Saint's expression changed.

He could clearly feel the energy he had absorbed moving rapidly in the opposite direction. It seemed as though that there was a force on the other side pulling.

The Red Clothed Saint desperately used his magic power. After pushing his magic powers to the extreme, the strange black whiffs once again flowed back to the Red Clothed Saint.

Rody had stopped roaring as though he had given up resisting. The black whiffs then started to leave his body.

Rody suddenly opened his eyes and coldly shouted, "Are you trying to suck out my fighting energy?"

"Huh?" Looking at his opponent's indifferent expression and dull tone made the Red Clothed Saint surprised. 'Isn't this the moment where he should be desperately struggling or crying for mercy?'

Rody did not intend to wait for the Red Clothed Saint to speak. Although his body trembled, he lifted a finger lightly and gnashed his teeth. "In that case, go ahead and suck this in!"

A small black qi mass gathered at Rody's fingertips. The black qi mass appeared out of his fingertips like a flame then flew towards the Red Clothed Saint from his spell.

"This...this is..." The Red Clothed Saint instinctively felt that something was wrong, but his reaction was a little too slow. The black qi mass gently touched his sleeve ...

Immediately, black flames started to spread. At that moment, the Red Clothed Saint screamed horribly. In that short moment, his arm and his sleeve had burned to nothing.

Not even ashes were left!

The black flames continued to spread. It had spread to the rest of the Red Clothed Saint's body. He screamed as parts of his body disappeared successively.

Even more frightening was that the black flames could still spread further. The sorcerers standing on the hexagram who were nearest to it could feel the black flames becoming a threat to themselves. They could no longer keep calm and scattered in a panic.

The Red Clothed Saint also dashed around in a panic. In that brief moment, he had attempted all kinds of spells to extinguish the flames. Unfortunately, he did not succeed in stopping the spread of the flames while half his body had disappeared.

While the Red Clothed Saint struggled violently the other sorcerers dared not approach. One after another, they escaped as far away as they could. Finally, the Red Clothed Saint's screams grew softer. His body had turned into dots of light and disappeared...

Nothing was left behind.

Rody could no longer stabilize his body. His body fell and crashed to the ground. He was gasping for air. Just now, he had had a sudden burst of strength. This little bit of power was not enough to restore him to his previous self. But he had duped the Red Clothed Saint into absorbing the hellfire. He crooned, "Hmmm!"

However, Rody had also suffered a huge loss. After all, his energy was absorbed by the Red Clothed Saint until there was almost nothing left.

Arslan watched the Red Clothed Saint die tragically in the sky. She showed no signs of helping.

When Rody fell to the ground, she finally felt relieved. 'This Domain Master had not yet recovered!'

"Kill them!" Arslan exclaimed. The operation was almost a success. After giving her command, her subordinates, the dragon warriors, roared and attacked.

Hundreds of dragons burst with a powerful murderous aura.

Again, and again they puffed their hot dragon's breath. Sith had already carried Ruolan up. He used his powerful sorcery to create protective Guardian Boundaries. On the other hand, Old Mark grabbed Seth as he barely held back the huge flying dragons.

He had already killed about a dozen dragons but carrying Seth had compromised his speed and evasive ability. This was why he could only fight back and block his opponents' attacks. He did not have the leeway to dodge. Consequently, it was very tiring.

At that moment, Old Mark growled as he cut off the head of a dragon with his sword. However, the dragon's breath had almost claimed his life. He had quickly dodged but his leg was singed.

Rody could only kneel with one leg on the ground and resist by brandishing his scimitar with one hand.

Arslan's objective was clear. It was Rody.

Rody was barely able to endure her two slashes. Her first slash had sent Rody flying. He crashed into a rock that broke into pieces. Rody had almost totally lost his ability to fight. Arslan resolved that she must kill Rody life on that day. She then swung her second slash down, aiming at Rody's heart.

Rody did his utmost to dodge. Although he had avoided the sword striking his heart, it had still managed to pierce through his shoulder. The sword nailed Rody's entire body to the ground. He could no longer move or dodge anymore.

"His head is mine!" Arslan waved her hand and pushed away a dragon warrior that was next to him. She then stretched out her hand. A few long sharp nails emerged from her originally thin fingers. The nails were like blades gradually approaching Rody.

Rody sighed. He could not help but glance at Mouse who was at a distance. At that moment, Mouse was exhausted, lying down on the ground by Sith's feet. Sith was using defensive spells to block the attacks of the dragon warriors flying around. Mouse's eyes

looked as though she had no perception.

Suddenly, Rody's neck felt cold. His first thought was: 'This is how I die...'

"A...Argh!" The one that screamed was Arslan!

When her sharp fingernails jabbed into Rody's neck, his blood had colored them red. But at that moment, there was a sudden change.

With sizzling sounds and green smoke, the parts of the fingernails that were contaminated with Rody's blood started to burn silently. Those parts melted and turned into a green smoke with sizzling sounds.

Arslan cried out in pain and pulled back her hand. Her body jumped back like a spring.

However, the nails at her fingertips had been almost completely burnt. Her fingers had already begun to melt. The melting had even spread.

Arslan acted decisively. She gritted her teeth and swung her sword down, cutting off her hand from the wrist.

The beautiful female Paladin cried out in pain and quickly retreated. A few of the Temple's sorcerers in the sky descended and started to treat her with sorcery.

Rody had survived but his neck still had a deep wound. Blood continued to gush out. It was as though the body heat was also flowing away.

Suddenly, it seemed somebody had approached him. A warm and soft body pressed into him. A soft sobbing voice was then heard. Rody immediately recognized that this voice belonged to Nedis.

He felt a drop of water on his neck. After a few sizzling sounds, the cut on his neck began to heal quickly, and the bleeding gradually stopped. Although Rody could not see Nedis, he heard

her ask, "Are you feeling better now?"

In the earlier battle, Nedis had no choice but to use her unique skill, the Blood Escape, to hide because she was not powerful enough to protect herself. When she saw Rody in danger, she ran over to his side impetuously.

Rody sighed as he struggled to sit up, and whispered, "What did you use to heal me?"

Nedis tried to reply. "My..."

Before Nedis could finish, a dragon warrior saw that Rody had recovered and hissed loudly. He rushed toward Rody but the latter acted quickly. He grabbed Nedis and rolled away. He then heard a loud sound as a large hole appeared at the place they were at.

Rody suddenly pushed away the person in his arms and shouted, "Go and hide!"

Rody immediately grabbed his scimitar and knelt on one knee.

Arslan had now healed. However, she was furious from losing her hand. She roared and then shouted from the sky. "Everyone fall back! Fall back!"

The dragon warriors began to retreat once they received the order. Old Mark immediately ran towards Rody. Rody had also quickly rushed towards Sith. He then held Mouse in his arm.

Mouse was unconscious, but her breathing was smooth even though it was weak.

Arslan roared in the sky. "Rody, you actually broke my hand! You have actually caused such a severe damage to my precious body!"

Rody sneered and replied, "You are just a reptile! What are you shouting about for?"

Arslan's body burst into flames. She seemed to have pushed herself to her fullest potential. As her fighting energy was all-encompassing, the flames around her body turned golden before

turning white then finally turning to a red color.

Tik tik! Tik tik! Tik tik! ...

As Arslan roared non-stop, the sound of a hurrying horse could be heard on the horizon.

From the horizon, a black stallion could be seen running wildly as it approached. Its rider wore a simple armor. His body shined with a golden light. It was evident that he was wearing a golden armor symbolizing his status as a Paladin. He held the reins with one hand and a huge cross-shaped sword in the other.

Before Rody and his companions could figure out who the knight was, he heard the approaching knight roared loudly from a distance.

"Run! Rody! Take Mouse and run towards the canyon!"

The thick and rough voice sounded familiar to Rody. Mouse, who was in his arms, was still a little conscious. She forced her eyes open and spoke with a faint voice, "It's...it is Augustine!"

Augustine had already approached with his horse. He jumped off the horse and then shot like an arrow towards Arslan in the air.

Arslan sneered, "Augustine, you actually escaped from prison! Are you determined to become an apostate?"

Augustine did not say anything. He slashed down at Arslan with his cross-shaped sword.

Arslan did not dare to be careless against the attacks of such a Paladin. She blocked a few of the attacks when Augustine suddenly shouted, "Why are you not moving? Run!"

Rody stood on the ground and looked at Augustine and Arslan fighting in the sky. He gritted his teeth and shouted, "Thank you!"

He then held Mouse and ran towards the canyon.

Old Mark pulled Seth while Sith supported Ruolan. All of them were powerful people. Although they were all injured, they could

still manage to run quickly for short distances.

Arslan shouted and the other dragon warriors went to stop them.

Augustine also shouted. He forced Arslan a few steps back and then quickly descended. He quickly fell behind those escaping and sent a dragon warrior flying with a swing of his sword. Woosh! Woosh! He then sent out wind blades left and right, stopping the pursuers.

"Augustine!" Arslan had instantly moved in front of Augustine. Her blade was like a poisonous snake thrusting itself towards Augustine's heart. Augustine did not block the attack. Instead, he gave a backhand swing at Arslan.

Arslan did not want to perish together with her opponent. Naturally, she tried to get away. But a nearby dragon warrior had burnt Augustine's arm with its breath.

The Paladin rolled away but suddenly stuck his sword into the ground and swung it upward. Countless gravels were shot out. Several dragon warriors were hit and scattered away in painful retreat.

Arslan seized this opportunity to thrust forth with her sword.

Finally, Augustine reacted. However, he still did not dodge. He simply moved forward, towards Arslan's sword. The sword in his hand flew towards his opponent's neck!

Arslan was angry but she still refused to perish together with her opponent. She turned her sword and blocked Augustine's sword. She repeatedly took a few steps back and then shouted, "Augustine, are you mad? Do you want to die?"

Augustine was solemn, and his eyes looked desolate. He gritted his teeth and still did not speak.

Arslan pointed at Augustine with her sword and said, "You escaped from prison and protected those heathens and fight against me! Your actions are equal to apostasy. Augustine! Do you

admit your guilt?"

Augustine finally shook his head and replied in a low voice, "Words are useless. Fight!"

Arslan and Augustine were both from the Temple. Arslan naturally knew how powerful the person known as the present generation's strongest human Paladin was. She herself was injured. Although Rody was escaping further and further away, she had no choice but to raise her spirit and carefully deal with Augustine.

A few of her subordinates had tried to get past Augustine and pursue the others but Augustine had airtight defenses. He sent out two light blades, cutting off the wings of a dragon warrior attempting to get around him. The remaining dragon warriors then obeyed Arslan's orders and finally decided to concentrate on eliminating Augustine first.

Arslan was the first to attack. Her body and the sword in her hand seemed to merge together. It became a dazzling light, shooting forward. Augustine blocked the attack. With a loud clash, his body shook violently, and he stumbled a few steps back but then slashed horizontally. With a whistling sound, a huge light blade swung forward. Arslan jumped up high to dodge it. But two dragon warriors behind her could not react in time and were cut into four pieces.

Arslan became faster. Ting! Ting! Tang! Tang! Within a short time, she thrust seven to eight times like a thunderstorm. Augustine blocked those strikes in a single breath, but he suddenly felt a sharp pain in his back. Augustine knew he had been struck in the back. His vision turned black as he instinctively rolled down.

The back of his armor was a bloodied mess of flesh. A dragon warrior had struck him in the back. Fortunately, he wore an armor and the injury was not too heavy.

The dragon warrior that had sneakily attacked him was too

greedy. The first thing he did was to get nearer. Augustine's murderous aura condensed and quickly slashed. The dragon warrior's head burst into a mass of bloody fog.

Arslan soon found an opportunity. In the fog, she suddenly thrust her sword into Augustine's body!

Augustine had apparently already anticipated it. He did not dodge at all and struck at Arslan's shoulder.

The two Paladins grappled with each other. Arslan's sword was inserted into Augustine's lower abdomen. Augustine's sword had pierced Arslan's shoulder.

Arslan suddenly had a weird feeling. That attack. Augustine could have dodged it! But...

She looked at Augustine's strange expression.

"You wish to die!" Arslan exclaimed.

Augustine used force in his hands as he caught Arslan's shoulder. At that moment, both of them had half their bodies stained with blood. Augustine then smiled sadly, "Yes. I want to die! I have finally become an apostate today. So, I should also die here!"

Arslan panicked and struggled madly. She fiercely twisted the sword in Augustine's abdomen. Augustine was sweating profusely but he struggled and held onto Arslan's shoulders. As they struggled, the sword stuck in Arslan's shoulder moved in deeper. Blood gushed out and Arslan's lips turned purple.

The two of them then rolled on the ground. The other dragon warriors could not interfere even if they wanted to help.

Augustine's body suddenly burst into a golden flame filled with fighting energy. The flame became more and more intense and violent...It faintly started to become uncontrollable...

"You...you are..." Arslan was really afraid. She had no intention to die together with Augustine here!

Augustine's golden flames continued to rise. Finally, he opened his eyes wide and roared. Even his eyes had turned golden.

The qi flames expanded to an alarming degree. The periphery looked as though it was electrified. It was as though things were gradually getting out of control.

"Augustine! Are you trying to blow yourself up with the fighting energy?" Arslan struggled desperately and screamed wildly. "Do you want to rebel for just a few heathens? You don't want to live anymore? Don't do this. Augustine! Don't..."

Augustine's hand that held Arslan's shoulders had plunged inside her. With a murderous gaze, his other hand then grabbed something out from within her bosom.

He opened his bloody fingers and a black veil appeared in his palm, making a sizzling sound as it burned in the qi flames.

Momentarily, Augustine's murderous eyes were replaced with tenderness. He finally whispered:

"Mouse, you never noticed but...I love you..."

Boom!

Arslan screamed tragically as the golden flames exploded. The explosion was like a golden ball that devoured everything. The vibrating energy of the qi blast convulsed the land, creating a wall of earth that was several ten meters high...

Chapter 307: Successor

The shock from the explosion caused the mountain to collapse. Rocks, big and small, continued to fall from the mountain walls on both sides of the canyon.

Rody could somewhat feel that something happened behind him. However, the blast rolling behind them made it impossible for them to turn their heads around.

The golden light made the sun look dim. It was as though the land was ruled by that burning flame. A violent shockwave struck the mountains. The entire land had cracked and torn apart.

They ran out of the other end of the canyon without stopping. Booming thunderous sounds continued rumbling behind them. They turned around and saw that the canyon was blocked by countless broken stones.

"Augustine...Did he perish together with them?" Rody was stunned.

Everyone's face was covered in dust and was almost indistinguishable except for Mouse whose head was buried in Rody's arms. At that moment, she finally raised her head. Although too weak to speak, drops of tears rolled out of her eyes.

Mouse did not hear Augustine's dying words. However, there was that explosion on top of the fact that she could no longer feel his aura, then probably...

That battle had made them feel hopelessly vexed. Originally, they had Old Mark and Ruolan who were Paladin-ranked masters. They even had the Black Veil Saint and Sith who were also powerful sorcerers. However, they were badly beaten. Not only did Mouse and Ruolan totally lost their fighting capability, Old Mark had also suffered substantial injuries. Had Augustine not desperately sacrificed himself, they would have really been totally wiped out.

Rody gritted his teeth. He looked at the others and softly said, "Let's go!"

The others did not speak. They knew they had no other choice but to leave the coast by ship as quickly as possible.

Rody gave Sith a profound gaze. This was clearly Sauron Kingdom's territory. Since such a large force from the Temple could come here, King Sauron would not be able to escape being suspected.

Rody also felt that he had been too optimistic. The Temple had ruled the continent for a long time and would definitely have their own formidable areas. Although he himself and his companions were strong, they had still suffered a crushing defeat.

At that moment, they had no horses. Everyone could only walk. Fortunately, there was nobody pursuing from behind anymore.

Augustine's suicide explosion had stopped the pursuers from chasing any further.

On the other side of the canyon, there was a large crater about ten meters large. The crater was surrounded by many broken corpses of the dragon warriors. Most of their blood had dried up. The rest of the blood had mixed with the dirt and turned it red and black.

Augustine's body had vanished like smoke. His fighting energy had burnt his entire body from the suicide explosion. Not even his metallic armor was left behind. Only a broken cross-shaped sword was left on the ground.

That sword was a Paladin's sword. It could be considered a good sword that was hard to come by. Now, only half of it remained. The blade of the sword was burned black. It stood obliquely, half buried in the ground

Stuck next to it was a thin long sword. Although it remained intact it had a few more cracks in the blade. This was, indeed, the

weapon used by Arslan.

The power of a Paladin's suicide explosion was truly extraordinary. Even the sword that was the dragon race's treasure could not endure it.

Although both Arslan and Augustine were already dead and gone, their swords were still standing together on the ground as if they were still entangled in their conflicts.

Suddenly, a hand stretched out and pulled the thin sword from the ground. His hand was hidden behind his black robes. His sharp slender fingers skillfully held the sword.

A golden light came out from his hand and instantly covered the sword. The sword gave out what sounded like a dragon's cry. The sword was quickly and automatically repaired. Its damaged parts quickly looked brand new.

The man seemed very satisfied as he looked at the sword. He then gave a faint sigh.

The sun was covered by the dust in the sky and the sky looked gloomy. The man stood under the gloomy sky. His hem of his black robes fluttered, revealing his spotlessly white calves.

"Arslan, I have already said that you would not be successful. Sigh...how unfortunate..." The low and deep voice had an indescribable charm as though carrying an old singing accent.

This was the mysterious black clothed person that was always with Arslan at the Temple.

"Arslan, how beautiful you were when you were still among the living..." He had a hint of fanatical and infatuated expression in his eyes for a moment. It soon dimmed as he said, "It is a pity. You could only turn to dust after death. Hmph...I really miss your beautiful body..."

The man held the sword with one hand and removed the black cloak on his head with the other, revealing his face...

The lines on his face were sharp like a knife. His long slender eyes not only did not look defective but, on the contrary, looked seductive. This was especially true for his long eyelashes that shrouded the eyes. He had a straight nose and a small bright red mouth, an elegant smile hanging on it.

The face looked exactly like Arslan's!

The only difference was that his slim neck had a bulge...Adam's apple!

He took a look around. "Hmm. Did those little guys die as well? Sigh...Augustine, you make my heart ache. Although those guys are useless, losing so many at one go would make it hard for me to give an explanation to those old guys in the family."

"Hmph. The Temple only has one Paladin left. The remaining ones are just like skeletons...Although the combined sorcery was a headache...still..." His eyes then turned grim. "Prometheus...what other powers do you have that could bind us great dragons?"

A long series of laughter rang out in this broken wilderness.

...

The survivors were not far from the ocean. They would reach a small town soon. It was the Sauron Kingdom's southernmost port even though it was modest in size.

Rody could no longer hold on. Him being weak made it impossible to continue holding on to Mouse. While fleeing, Rody realized something that made him enraged...

Nedis had not kept up with them!

Old Mark was with Seth, Sith was carrying the unconscious Ruolan, and Rody was carrying Mouse...However, Nedis had gone missing.

"You don't need to look anymore Rody..." Sith lightly said, "It is impossible for anyone to survive that violent explosion."

Rody's eyes flashed coldly as he quietly watched the old sorcerer.

Sith was somewhat unable to endure being glared at. Rody then lightly asked, "What about you? When do you plan to attack?"

"What?"

Rody then sneered and said, "Don't pretend anymore. Didn't the King give you the order to make me stay on the Roland Continent?" He paused for a while before continuing, "This is the Sauron Kingdom's territory. If it was not secretly arranged by the King, how could the people from the Temple leisurely wait here to stop us? On top of that, we have created such a huge ruckus with our fight and yet the garrison soldiers here have not appeared. Why have they not appeared even after so long?"

Sith started to have cold sweat on his head. He gave a strained laugh and said, "You...you are rather attentive."

Rody sighed. "Sith, we faced trials together at the Dwarven Kingdom, so I do not want to be your enemy. But if you intend to fight here, I would have no choice."

Sith smiled wryly but his eyes were firm. He softly said, "Rody, I am sorry. I do not want this...but since I was born, my life itself has already dedicated to the revival of the Shaka Empire!"

He quickly retreated and stood outside the attacking range of Rody and the others. He spread out his hands and the magical vibrations from his body also quickly spread out.

"Rody!" he shouted in a deep voice. "You should be able to understand that right now, all of you would not be able to defeat me! That earlier battle has given all of you a lot of injuries. No one among you here can defeat me!"

Rody held out his scimitar and laughed coldly. "When have you ever seen me surrender?"

Sith wanted to continue speaking, "I only need to prevent you from leaving the Roland Continent. You can also follow me back to

the King! At the very least, your companions would not die..."

Old Mark laughed. He took out his sword and jumped out in front of Rody. He then smiled and said, "Old guy, if you have any skill, it would be best to use them all now. Show me how powerful you are!"

The old sorcerer shouted. There was a sad and sharp whistling sound. About five wind blades shot out from his hand. Old Mark became like a red light dashing left and right to block. The wind blades were all stopped.

The volume of Sith's voice became lower, "It is useless! Although you are a Paladin-ranked warrior, we are fighting in long-ranged combat! You are not a match for sorcerers! Rody, I will give you one last chance to pick between two choices. The first choice, I will kill all of you here and frame the Temple. The second, you follow me back obediently and you will be placed under house arrest, but your life will not be in danger..."

Rody sneered. Waving his scimitar, he shouted, "Just drop the idea!"

Sith sighed. "Then, please forgive me. You leave me no... Argh!"

He gave a surprised and tragic scream before he could finish.

A sword with its tip covered in blood pierced out of Sith's chest. The tip of the sword was still dripping with blood. Sith looked at the blade piercing out of his chest with a disbelieving gaze.

The sudden change also shocked Rody and Old Mark.

A clear and icy voice then whispered from behind Sith. "Forgive me. I did not want this, but you have also left me no choice..."

The longsword was pulled out. Sith inhaled deeply but could no longer exhale. Both his hands were open as though he wanted to grab something. However, he was not successful as he fell down to the ground...

Behind him, a person staggered, half covered in blood. It was Nedis.

At that moment, half of Nedis's body was soaked in blood. Her tender and beautiful face had turned pale. However, she looked at Rody with a mixture of deep love and hatred.

Rody was startled. By the time he recovered and went to support her, Nedis had already fallen down.

Rody ran forward quickly and had Nedis lean on his shoulder. Before he could speak, Nedis suddenly opened her mouth and bit him in the neck!

She had bitten very hard but was not able to injure him. Rody could feel two streams of tears flowing down his neck.

"I had been following you but soon thought of leaving you... " Nedis's voice had deep resentment.

"When that female dragon stabbed you, you even pushed me away! Could it be that I do not even have the right to die with you?"

Rody's first thought was to scold the woman as he normally would. However, his throat felt blocked as though he was choking and unable to speak. He could only carefully support Nedis. His movements were surprisingly light as though afraid that he would affect Nedis's injuries if he used a little more strength.

At that moment, Rody could only hold Nedis with one hand and Mouse with the other. "Alright. This is not a good place to stop. We must quickly leave here."

Old Mark did not move. He suddenly gave a wry smile and pointed to the sky as he sighed and said, "I am afraid it would not be so easy..."

The sun in the sky was obscured by the dust. A tall and slender figure floated in the sky. His body was covered in black robes and he was carrying a long and slender sword!

Although it was not clear who that person was, his murderous aura had manifested clearly.

"How touching...I did not expect to see such a touching scene after arriving so late!" That person said as he gradually descended. His feet touched the ground and then he strutted over.

Rody was surprised when he saw the figure's face. "Arslan!"

"No, you are wrong." The man smiled. His face was gentle and bright like the moonlight. "My name is not Arslan. My name is... more complicated in the dragon's language. However, when translated into your language, it would mean the successor to the Dragon God! You may address me as Your Excellency the Dragon God!"

As he said those words, his eyes flashed with a trace of light. Rody and Old Mark felt their heads hurt as though theirs were pricked by something. They involuntarily staggered and stumbled back a few steps...

Chapter 308: Dragon God VS Mystic Dragon

The so-called Dragon God's aura suddenly became weird. His entire body seemed to emit fierce black colored dragon aura. The powerful aura felt oppressive like it came from hell. His face, especially. It has a perilous tinge in of a feminine aura.

Rody made a decision from the powerful presence.

'I cannot fight this guy in my current state!'

'But...a Dragon God?'

'Do the dragons really have a God? If the dragons really have a God, shouldn't it be the Mystic Dragon?' Realizing this, Rody suddenly felt relaxed.

'Now, confronting any self-proclaimed God, I definitely cannot win especially when they are God-ranked. However, since I can confirm that he is not God-ranked, there may still be some hope.'

He who strikes first gains the advantage. This was what the teacher had taught him the first day he learned swordsmanship. It was used especially when he was at a disadvantage.

Rody exchanged a quick look with Old Mark then rushed forward. Although he was unable to continue using his golden fighting energy, his scimitar that contained the dragon soul was still powerful. Old Mark's figure lightly floated over like a ghost. The sword in his hand was like a poisonous snake...

The other side gave a contemptuous smile. He lightly pointed at Rody. Rody felt a black light arriving in front of him. His whole body shook, and then he was flung away.

Another black light was shot at Old Mark but it was obvious that Old Mark was underestimated.

Old Mark was definitely not weaker than any Paladin. Even if he was injured at that moment and was weaker, he was at a level

where Rody could not compare. Old Mark gave out a sharp cry. His sword burst into a golden light. The sword hit the black light and then slashed at the self-proclaimed Dragon God.

The self-proclaimed Dragon God finally dropped his expression of disdain and frowned. His body flashed and disappeared. He then appeared ten meters overhead.

There was a loud whoosh. A huge pair of dragon wings appeared on his back that gently flapped in the sky.

"Good! You guys still have a Paladin! I have underestimated you!"

When Rody was struck by the black light, he was afraid he would become seriously injured even if he survived. He had not expected that he would feel more relaxed after standing firmly and then taking a deep breath. It was as though the black light had quickly dissolved into his body after hitting him. It secretly circulated around in his body a few times before disappearing...

‘Strange...What kind of weird attack is this?’

‘Not only is it not painful...It even feels comfortable...’

The self-proclaimed Dragon God’s expression turned cold. He extended his palm that soon magically changed into a grotesque light sword.

However, this light sword was different from the others created by the fighting energy of ordinary Paladins or Domain Masters. The light on this sword would suddenly dim and suddenly brighten. The sword did not look like light but an actual solid.

What made Rody even more surprised was that the shape of the sword looked familiar...

Old Mark shouted as he rushed forward. He soared high into the sky and reached above the Dragon God before slashing down.

Clang!

There was a loud sound as the Dragon God swung his sword up to

meet with Old Mark's sword. As the two swords crossed, Old Mark's sword emitted a metallic cracking sound. Half of the sword then flew up. Defeated, Old Mark quickly retreated.

The Dragon God did not chase. He carefully stroked the blade of his sword looking satisfied.

"Hmph. How could your inferior weapon compare with my Dragon God's Sword!"

Rody looked and understood. He could not help but shouted, "Nonsense! What Dragon God's Sword? It is just a Dragon Fang Sword! What is so great about turning the Mystic Dragon's Fang into a sword?"

"Shut up!" The self-proclaimed Dragon God's expression immediately turned cold. His eyes flashed with anger. "You dare to call His Majesty the Dragon God the Mystic Dragon? Bastard!"

A black light shot out from his sword and moved right towards Rody. Rody dared not dodge as Mouse and the others were behind him. If he dodged, those people behind him would be harmed. He gritted his teeth and blocked the attack with his scimitar.

With a loud sound, the black lightning struck Rody's blade squarely. Rody roared loudly and his body shook. The powerful force that struck him caused his feet to sink into the ground!

Although his legs were sore, the black light flowed into Rody's body from the sword. Like earlier, it was like a river water flowing into the ocean. Rody's body reacted. Unexpectedly a small force started to move and mix with this incoming external power. It then rapidly stirred in Rody's body!

'This is the feeling of strength!'

Rody was shocked and then delighted. This was the first time he felt the familiar power flowing inside his body since he came back from the Dwarven Kingdom.

However, his joy did not last long. His strength immediately

turned around and was sucked in as though there was a black hole in his body. He soon felt weaker and weaker until it was gone.

Rody cursed, 'So, it was like that!'

My strength was not lost but absorbed by that weird thing! Thinking about it, it must be that Kara's Divine Primordial Spirit!

At this moment, Old Mark was fighting against the Dragon God in the sky. Although half of his sword was broken, he managed to deal against his opponent's offensive although with great effort.

Rody could feel the Dragon God's powerful aura and see his horrifying strength. However, each of his attacks looked jerky as though...

'It looks as though this is his first fight?'

Rody saw the Dragon Fang Sword burn with a blazing black flame. The flame felt faintly familiar. Rody thought of it for a moment and immediately recalled the place where he felt the familiar feeling.

'It is Wuya!'

'With the mountain tribes at the South of the Empire...The son of the Mystic Dragon. Wuya, the Elder of the mountain tribes. He had a similar aura!'

Obviously, that opponent's attack was not something Old Mark could resist directly. He relied solely on his two hundred years of experience to dodge. The self-proclaimed Dragon God was angry but was still unable to use his strength properly.

Rody took a look and realized that if it was him fighting, he would have three ways to attack Old Mark. However, the Dragon God did not seem to have any fighting experience.

Rody gritted his teeth and roared out, "Old Mark! Lead him down!"

Old Mark heard him. He, unable to hold out anymore, soon

jumped down. A black light flashed behind him. Old Mark had immediately moved sideways but Rody went forward directly to take the attack and parry it with his scimitar.

Sure enough, Rody was once again sent flying from the tremendous force. Before he could fall, the strength had already been absorbed into his body. Rody, having had the previous two experiences, immediately took advantage of the time the force was circulating in his body to adjust his balance so that he could land steadily.

Rody shouted and his body burst with golden fighting energy.

He slashed out in a cross. The golden flames were forced into the blade of his scimitar. With a roar, two cross-shaped Half Moon Slash had been sent out.

The Dragon God coldly laughed. He stretched out his hand to easily neutralize it. However, when the light slashes hit his body, he screamed and quickly retreated. His hand had instantly exploded into a badly mangled mass.

A blackness on his face flashed twice and then his wound quickly healed up.

Rody sneered. "Hmph. Taking my Half Moon Slash with your bare hands? Did you really think you are a Dragon God?"

Old Mark shouted, "Don't talk anymore! Take advantage of the moment and continue your attack!"

Rody laughed bitterly. His attack only borrowed his opponent's energy. He had to let his body absorb the attack and take advantage of that moment to use the energy before it is absorbed by the Divine Primordial Spirit.

However, the attack made Rody's strength dry up again.

In a way, Rody was now like a bucket with a hole at the bottom. No matter how much water was poured in, it would all leak out. This was why Rody was unable to gain any strength.

Old Mark saw the look in Rody and no longer questioned him. Rody thought of something and said, "Find a way to provoke him!"

"Alright!"

Without any feelings of doubt, Old Mark raised his half-broken sword and rushed up again. However, Rody did not attack but just followed at the back of Old Mark.

Old Mark attacked the Dragon God directly while Rody hanged around at the periphery. He would help with a few slashes at every opportunity. The Dragon God roared loudly and suddenly burst into a mass of black flames. Old Mark immediately created a ball of energy in front to protect himself as he shouted, "Back!"

Rody did not retreat but, instead, advanced! He stood right in front of the Dragon God! A faint black lightning shot out of the Dragon Fang Sword. Small black balls of energy had gathered and condensed rapidly at the swordpoint. The Dragon God released an earth-shattering roar. The black ball of energy then shot towards Rody.

"Damn! Why are you making so much noise! Did you think I have never heard a dragon's roar before?" Rody scolded as he rushed up.

While Old Mark and the Dragon God were still surprised, Rody had already been hit by the black ball of energy but the black ball did not explode as expected. Instead, it wrapped around Rody and was quickly absorbed into Rody's body.

The Dragon God was furious and roared loudly. He then slashed out with the Dragon Fang Sword a dozen times. Each slash carried an intense, electrifying black light.

All of a sudden, the sky was covered with black lightning striking densely into Rody's body. At that moment, Rody was wrapped in the black energy mass. When the lightning struck the black energy around him he was sent flying around like a leaf in a fierce gale.

Rody endured the physical tearing pain he felt as his body

endlessly absorbed the black energy in the attacks.

'Hit me again! Hit me! Hit me more! Hit me more!'

Rody roared in his heart, and then finally cried out loudly.

"Ah!"

The Dragon God finally realized the weird situation. He stopped suddenly and quickly retreated about ten meters away.

The black energy around Rody gradually faded. His clothes were burned by the black lightning and his body was injured. However, his face was covered with a layer of black qi, especially his eyes.

His eyes had turned completely black and the trace of black energy made him look a little evil.

"You...you were having fun attacking me earlier, weren't you?" Rody shouted.

Rody stretched out his hand. Black balls of energy quickly gathered at his palm. It was similar to the Dragon God's attack but it was even more violent and frightening.

In an extremely quick manner, the black ball of energy quickly grew larger. Crackling sounds could be heard at the periphery as the black light flashed...

After that, there was a dragon's roar that seemed to come from hell. A black dragon's head burst out of the ball of light, whistling and roaring, shooting towards the Dragon God.

"Mystic Dragon's Purge!" The Dragon God's expression turned ashen immediately. He shouted and retreated like a meteor.

However, the speed of the black dragon was faster than him. The black energy in the sky had already locked on to him. Seeing the dragon's head in front of him, the Dragon God's face was distorted as he shouted, "Impossible! You are supposed to be dead!"

His body suddenly expanded a few ten times and transformed into a roaring black dragon. He sent out a dragon's breath towards

the approaching dragon.

The hellfire of the Mystic Dragon's Purge broke through the Dragon God's last protective screen. The small dragon and the large dragon in the sky collided. There were loud roars causing countless shockwaves. Old Mark had already pulled Rody over and pressed him to the ground. The two of them continued to lie prostrate on the ground.

The sky exploded with thunderous rumbling sounds as though the sky had collapsed. Suddenly the Dragon God's body expanded and exploded with a loud sound.

When the hellfire burned down the clouds in the sky, it slowly dispersed.

In the mist, a black ball of light slowly fell from the sky. It was like a figure slowly descending to the ground.

Rody immediately called out. "It is a soul! High leveled cultivators can preserve their souls after the death of the body!"

Old Mark had already rushed towards the spirit as he shouted, "Do not let him escape!"

Chapter 309: Real History

The light-body slowly fell to the ground but did not immediately flee. In fact, the soul had no ability to escape.

It was a human-shaped transparent body of light that seemed to have shrunk as it kneeled on the ground. The light-body seemed to sizzle around as if it was dispersing.

Rody and Old Mark went up to surround him. Just as Rody was about to cut him down, Old Mark stopped him.

"You don't need to do anything anymore. With nothing to attach to, the soul would perish in a short moment." Old Mark sighed and threw his broken sword on the floor. He then said, "Why? It is not easy to cultivate the soul. Why did you risk your life to fight with us?"

The soul's face had the features of the self-proclaimed Dragon God. His facial features looked fuzzy but his voice could still be heard. He weakly repeated. "I don't believe this...I don't believe this...Impossible...Impossible..."

Seeing Rody stand in front of him, the soul finally raised his head as if carefully looking at Rody. However, his face was made out of light and his stare gave Rody a strange feeling.

"Your Majesty is still alive?" the soul suddenly asked in a low voice.

Rody frowned. He naturally understood who the words 'Your Majesty' referred to. However, there was no easy answer to that question. If it was alive, how would anyone explain the Mystic Dragon getting absorbed by Rody? If it was dead, then when Rody became possessed, how would anyone explain when he turned into the Mystic Dragon?

Before Rody could feel awkward, the soul sighed and continued, "I understand now. Your Majesty is still alive. That earlier was the

Mystic Dragon's Purge. I would definitely not be wrong..."

The soul then fell to his knees and said, "Your Majesty, please forgive my sins...Please forgive..."

His voice was filled with endless despair as he gradually grew weak and his voice vanished. Finally, the soul started to disappear as if the last trace of consciousness he had completely vanished.

Old Mark suddenly cried out, "Quick. Absorb it before it dissipates!"

"What?" Rody froze for a moment.

"Idiot! You are now half a dragon! Only you can absorb it. Otherwise, I would have done it myself!" Old Mark scolded.

Rody lightly prodded the top of the soul with his finger. He frowned and asked, "Are you joking? Absorb it? How am I supposed to absorb it? What are...ah!"

Before he could finish his words, his finger that was touching the soul felt scorching hot. The soul turned into a golden light and entered his body through his fingertip.

"Shit!" Rody cursed as he fell sideways and fiercely hit the ground as though he was struck by lightning.

That familiar feeling rose again. The flow of energy began to move up like an endless river but then the strange black hole in his body once again rapidly drained his energy. His empty body became full before it became empty once again...

This time, Rody felt a strange tingling in his mind. He instinctively closed his eyes as though something had pierced his head. He put his hands over his head and then there was a loud sound as countless pictures rushed through his head like lightning.

This seemed to be the last traces of memory from the self-proclaimed Dragon God. He was 'looking' at history.

History from thousands of years ago.

Suddenly, Rody saw an extremely huge, incredible black dragon flying in the sky. Its body was densely covered with black hellfire. Rody could feel the fear and despair in the air suffocating him.

He did not know that these were the memories of the soul. It was as though the soul was very afraid of the Mystic Dragon in that memory. The fear had been engraved into his memory.

Rody soon 'saw' Kara. Kara stood in the sky amongst the dark clouds. His upper body was human but his lower body comprised the bodies of six different monsters. He held a huge silver sword with one hand and a huge flaming hammer with the other...It was as though the heaven and earth were filled with a long sad howl...

The mournful howl seemed to still ring in Rody's ears. Kara's image was just as described by the Church!

Soon it was the earth-shattering battle between Kara and the Mystic Dragon.

The Mystic Dragon had sent several black hellfires into the sky, the earth, and everywhere around him. Kara looked furious. During his long howl, the sky was torn apart. Countless lightning rained from the sky and scattered the hellfire. The two legendary creatures then started to fight...

Rody felt dizzy as the picture changed.

In the darkness of the chaos, there was a slight poisonous and suffocating atmosphere. There was a moment of brightness. Rody saw a huge dragon head looking attentively at him. He heard something in the dragon's language.

However, in the memory, Rody could understand what was said.

"From today onwards, you are my, the Mystic Dragon's, first child!"

These words blasted Rody's heart!

'The Mystic Dragon's first child! The self-proclaimed Dragon God

was also one of the Mystic Dragon's child, like Wuya!

However, before Rody could think about it carefully, the picture changed quickly showing him the scene of a great war!

Although Rody was familiar with the battlefield, he could not help feeling excitement when he took in the scene.

What he saw was a magnificent and deeply moving scene.

He saw a great sturdy jade-white city wall. Many human warriors donned in the armor of knights stood on the wall. All of the knights emitted out a holy brilliance. Some of them were strange and humanoid with one, two or even three pairs of white wings behind them. They were flying over the walls with bows or swords in their hands. However, these angel-like warriors had stronger aura than the warriors.

A loud roar then came from the horizon. The huge body of the Mystic Dragon emerged from the clouds on the horizon. Its black body covered half the sky. It roared as though it was the offensive warhorn. Countless of the other dragons also roared. With a loud sound, many more large and small dragons could be seen flying in the sky.

The shrill, mournful roars were so penetratingly loud that the people almost turned deaf. However, the knights on the walls held up their weapons. Archers shot out holy and purifying arrows of light. The knights sent out huge blades of light!

The humanoid creatures had exceptionally powerful strength.

This was particularly alarming to Rody. Each of them had the strength of a high-ranked knight. Right now, high-ranked knights were difficult to find in the human world. Even if the total number of soldiers from the Holy Knights and Lightning God's Whip were to be doubled, they would not be able to find high-ranked knights that number in the thousands!

What made Rody even more surprised was the might of the

dragon race.

Having fought with the dragon warriors, Rody a poor impression of them. The dragon warriors were not so powerful as in the legends.

However, the scenes in the memories surprised Rody.

A rain of arrows and light blades from the white walls were thrown towards the dragons. The attacks in the sky caused massive successive explosions. The huge balls of light made Rody unable to open his eyes.

However, the dragons quickly broke through the explosion zone. They flew above the white walls and breathed fire down. The first wave of attacks by those that looked like humans had not seemed to be effective.

The dragons sent fire, wind and ice pelting down onto the walls. The soldiers used strange huge shields to block while using their own weapons to fight back.

The ones that looked like angels flew up. They decided to approach the dragons and fought a close battle.

The ones that looked like angels were very formidable. Although small in size, they were able to cut down the dragons with their swords. Hence, large dragons frequently fell from the sky.

Their huge bodies crashed onto the city walls smashing it and sending rubble everywhere.

Facing hundreds, even thousands of dragons densely covering the sky the soldiers on the white walls were soon overwhelmed. At that moment, a deep indescribable voice came from the sky. The voice said, "The Holy City must not fall."

With these words, innumerable lightning bolts suddenly struck from the sky.

These lightning bolts flashed with a strange holy white color but

were terrifying. The countless white lightning tangled up into a terrible strangling net. In this net, numerous dragons flying in the sky were instantly cut into countless pieces! Broken flesh and blood scattered all over, turning the sky and earth red.

The Mystic Dragon finally roared to the sky. Rody soon witnessed a very familiar scene. A large ball of black air condensed in the sky and then a black light dragon appeared...

‘It is the Mystic Dragon’s Purge...’ Rody sighed.

After that, there were endless explosions all over the sky. The network of white lightning was dispersed by the Mystic Dragon’s Purge. Half the city walls had collapsed. There were also a lot of warriors killed and injured.

Rody stared. He had seen the Mystic Dragon and Kara before but he had not seen the real ‘God’ in heaven before. Now that he was looking at the legendary war during the ancient times, he was really curious.

But at that moment, a weird white light appeared that blocked everything. Everything in front was blocked by the white light and nothing could be seen.

He could seemingly hear a roar in his ear. He could not tell if it was an explosion in the scene or it was his imagination.

When it was clear again, the pictures Rody saw had gone through a tremendous change.

In the sky, a countless number of winged angel-like creatures were killing the dragons all over the sky. The huge dragons were hunted and killed by the short angelic warriors. Rody looked carefully and noticed something strange. The angels were not powerful but the dragons had become very weak.

The dragons were no longer so powerful like what he had seen earlier. They were now as weak as the so-called dragon warriors he fought today.

What happened? How did such a big change happen? It looks as though there had been no change but they were several times weaker.

Also, the Mystic Dragon is now missing from the sky. Only the remaining dragons were hunted tragically.

The picture changed again. It now showed a pair of knees.

Knees?

Rody was startled. He immediately realized that this was the perspective of a person who was kneeling on the ground.

Immediately, an indescribable voice from the sky came and said, "I can forgive your sins and bestow upon you the status of Dragon God. In my glory, you will take over the place of your father, the Mystic Dragon, and the dragon race will once again be under the glory of the Holy City!"

The pictures came to a standstill. Rody felt a stinging pain in his head. The stinging pain almost made him go crazy.

He desperately wanted to shout and wake up from the illusion but in a panic, he found out he could not do this. He was unable to make a single sound and was unable to control his body...

Wait...body?

At this moment, Rody realized that he could only 'see' and 'hear' things in the illusion. He did not have a real body. It was as if everything was a fragment of a memory.

Chapter 310: Truth of God's Record

The pictures in front of him broke as though a glass was smashed. Rody seemed as though he was standing in the dark. His mind was blank and his heart was suddenly filled with doubts.

'Why?'

'From these fragmented memories, humans and dragons from long ago were much more powerful than now.'

'During the ancient times, there were so many human masters on the walls. All of them had the strength of a high-ranked knight or warrior! With such strength, both continents would have already been conquered in the current era!'

'Even if all the humans were to be counted right now, we would not have so many masters.'

On top of that, the dragon warriors brought by Arslan were pitifully weak compared to the dragons in the memory fragments.

If the dragon warriors were as powerful as before, humans would have been totally destroyed long ago.

So, what made the races in the world become weaker?

As if responding to Rody's question, a sudden burst of light appeared in front of him.

Another picture had flashed in front of him...

The picture was blurry. He could vaguely see a slender man. He was in a trance as he faced a huge and jade-like boulder. He then took out a sheepskin parchment.

The man then magically produced a broken wooden staff. He then quickly scribbled on the parchment with the end of the staff...

The staff seemed to carry a powerful magical light. Each time a word was written, the parchment shone with a golden light. Rody could not see the words but he could feel that the words engraved

with sorcery were fluctuating with a powerful magic.

Rody was curious as the picture became blurry. He found it irresistible to take a closer look but he had no physical body in that world. His wished in his mind and then he felt as though the picture moved closer. Rody was surprised but he wanted to continue to get closer, like earlier. However, the man holding the staff suddenly exclaimed loudly. He raised his head in alarm and seemingly stared fiercely at Rody.

"It's you?" the man uttered clearly.

Rody was surprised. Most of the scattered memories he saw were broken and chaotic. It was rare for him to hear such a clear voice. Rody had first thought that the man was talking to him.

The man's face became clearer. It was as if the fog covering him had dispersed. The man's thin face looked somewhat familiar.

The man seemed to coldly look at Rody and said, "I did not expect the Dragon God of the dragon race to also be interested in this."

His expression suddenly changed as he snapped, "Do not come near!"

The man lifted his wooden staff and chanted. Woosh! A golden light shot out from the staff. Rody's mind droned when he saw the golden light. Even the pictures he saw shook.

One could imagine that this scene must have left a very deep impression on the memories of the Dragon God. Otherwise, it would not have been so vivid.

He saw a black lightning shot out and blocked that man's attack. The man with the staff waved and the golden light became more intense.

It was obvious that the owner of the memory was the Mystic Dragon's son, the self-proclaimed Dragon God. He was fighting the man with the staff and both of them seemed to be competing for that parchment in the man's hand.

Finally, Rody heard the familiar voice of the Dragon God call out.

"Moses, are you planning on betraying God?"

'Moses!' Rody's mind stirred and he immediately understood. 'The guy with the staff is Moses, the first Pontiff! I have seen this old guy in my mind before. No wonder he looks familiar!'

'The staff in his hand is the one I had once obtained!'

The young Moses sneered. "God? How ridiculous. The son of the Mystic Dragon is willing to become a servant of God? It is truly laughable to hear you say those words!"

With a loud explosion, Moses took a few steps back again.

Right then, a strong beam of light shot down from the sky. The beam struck Moses. He screamed and dropped his staff. His body trembled as he fell to his knees.

A majestic voice seemed to come from the sky.

"For blaspheming against God, you will not speak, but only words in praise of me!"

Moses struggled more and more. He opened his mouth but was unable to say anything...

Moses' body was covered in a bright light and then he disappeared without a trace. The Mystic Dragon's son grinned and went to pick up the parchment on the floor. He smiled as he said, "God's Record, God's Record..."

However, something changed. The moment he held the parchment, golden flames suddenly appeared from the parchment and burned his hand.

He gave a hoarse scream and thrown the parchment aside.

A sigh came from the sky. The majestic voice helplessly said, "The parchment can be sealed but cannot be destroyed. I will make it such that this parchment cannot see the sky, cannot see the earth and cannot see people."

'What is the God's Record? Exactly what was recorded?'

'Why did this question suddenly appear? I was just wondering why the human and dragon races were more powerful in the ancient times. Why did it then take me to the memory of the God's Record?'

'Could it be that there is a relationship between the weakening of the races and the God's Record?'

Rody felt as though his heart was hit by a hammer. He reflexively shouted, "Yes...yes! So that was it!"

At that moment, Rody paid close attention as he watched the 'God Record' that fell to the ground. Suddenly, a ray of light came from the sky. Rody felt a pain in his head and he lost consciousness, unable to see anything...

...

"Ah!"

Rody growled. He suddenly struggled and sat up from the bed. He was sweaty all over and his face was flushed. He was gasping—his chest heaving violently.

"Finally awake?" Old Mark's cold voice came from his bedside. "You fell unconscious and slept for a long time."

"Unconscious?" Rody was still dazed. In his mind, there were still fragments of the memories of the ancient god and demon war that bewitched and enchanted him.

'I fell unconscious?'

Rody felt a sharp pain in his head. He remembered that he had just killed the self-proclaimed Dragon God who was another child of the Mystic Dragon. He had then absorbed the soul that had fragments of memories...

In other words, he had killed two of the Mystic Dragon's children; Wuya from the Southern Mountains of the Empire and

the self-proclaimed Dragon God. Rody sighed as he felt his muscles ached all over.

"Does it hurt?" Old Mark laughed bitterly. "Unfortunately, we do not have any sorcerer to give you any treatment. Our injuries are merely being treated with medicine instead. The pain you feel is normal."

"I...How long have I been sleeping?" Rody felt his mouth was dry and bitter.

"Not long. Only two days." Old Mark said as he raised two fingers. "On top of that, I want to tell you the good news. We are now aboard a ship."

Rody could faintly feel the room moving up and down, like in a cabin. [He felt his glabella ache.](#) "What about the others? What about Seth and Mouse? They..."

"The good news is they are alive and on this ship." Old Mark shrugged expressionlessly. "The bad news is that damned combination spell caused your black veil lover to be unable to get out of bed even now. She cannot even stand straight. The sow is also in the same condition."

"Sow...Are you talking about Concubine Ruolan? You also took her away?" Rody stared with eyes wide open.

"It was my decision." Seth's voice came from the dusky cabin doorway. "It is obvious that the Temple is not the only one that wants our lives. King Sauron is also not so kindhearted...With his concubine, we can at least guarantee a bit of our safety. We no longer need to fear the Temple in the ocean but it is still the domain of the Sauron Navy!"

...

On top of the tallest tower at the main peak of the temple, a bell that had never been rung suddenly pealed loudly. The Holy Knights moved quickly from below the suspended stairs. The

golden bell was only allowed to be rung during an important emergency.

Numerous knights with distinctive armors stood at the Temple square. Flags continued to flutter. A murderous aura alarmingly set off the quiet and holy atmosphere...

The trained knights gathered quickly together. Besides being solemn and nervous, they also had an uneasiness in their eyes.

‘What happened? The golden bell that has not been rung for hundreds of years had now been rung!’

‘Has the war been declared?’

The space between the eyebrows.

Chapter 311: Nedis's Love

The bell rang!

The sound of metallic ringing brought a murderous aura to the Temple. The Holy Knights fell into a square phalanx formation at the ancient Temple square without making any racket. They all had a solemn expression looking upwards at the Temple Shrine.

A row of old men with white fluttering robes stood at the front of the Temple. Some were tall, some were short. Some were fat, some were thin. However, they all had a majestic presence. Standing in the middle was a man with a silver mask. This was the religious leader of the Elder Council, the Chief Elder, Prometheus!

"In the name of God, this continent shall always be ruled under God's glory! Believe my words and be free of worry! Believe my words and be eternal!" Prometheus' sweet voice reverberated in the sky. Brilliant magical light spread out from his hands as he stood above the Temple glowing with a sacred light, like a God.

"I shall be crowned Pontiff in the name of God. I shall lead you to spread the light all over the earth. Your swords shall obey my commands. Those who blaspheme against God shall receive the cruelest punishment!" Prometheus' words suddenly became stern.

Immediately after that, two servants dressed in gray robes brought a well-made and exquisite crown.

Prometheus took two steps forward and slowly knelt down on one knee. Both his hands were placed on his chest. The crown was then placed on his head.

"Long live the Pontiff!" Thousands of people shouted in unison.

"Long live God!"

"Long live God's glory!"

The Holy Knight's expressions brightened as they looked at their

leader with absolute piety.

On that day, the Chief Elder of the Temple's Elders Council, Prometheus, had officially been crowned the Second Pontiff in God's Temple.

Unlike the grand occasion during the coronation of the first Pontiff from hundreds of years ago, the coronation this time was not attended by the representatives of the Roland kingdoms.

The now-Pontiff, Prometheus, soon announced the renaming of the Roland Continent Calendar to Sacred Calendar. This year was also known as the start of the Sacred Calendar.

However, many years later, the historians would call this year the 'Year of Darkness'.

That very day would also be known as the 'Advent of Darkness'.

...

Rody gently stroked Mouse's face with his hand. Mouse sighed and laughed bitterly. "Don't I look laughable right now?"

Rody shook his head quietly.

Mouse looked sad as she said, "I cannot feel even a little bit of magic. I feel as though I am dead."

Rody forced a laugh. "It is fine. You can still move and walk, just like an ordinary person."

"But I am a sorcerer!" Mouse's eyes were red. "If I am going to be like this forever, I might as well die!" She sighed faintly. "I grew up practicing sorcery. Is my lifetime effort now completely wasted?"

Rody bent down and kissed her gently on the forehead. He smiled and said, "Alright. Everything will work out fine. Do you still remember the time we met at the northwestern grassland of the Empire?"

Hearing about the Northwestern grassland, Mouse's eyes looked tender as she softly said, "Of course I remember. How could I

forget?"

Rody nodded. "Do you remember the first time we met? After defeating me, I became unconscious and even lost my warrior's powers. I only recovered after ten days. Your magic had only been absorbed by their sorcery. It will slowly recover over time."

Mouse nodded her head gently. Although she did not really believe it, she had relaxed a little.

Rody laughed and said, "Besides that, even without magic, so what? In the future, you will be by my side. I will be the one dealing with everything. Didn't you also lose your magic from the red dragon blood poison when we were hunted at the Northwest? Didn't I properly protect you during that entire time?"

Mouse finally showed a sweet smile. She remembered the escape during her time at the Northwest. Rody kept calling her a fool. Feeling affectionate, she could not help but move over and nibble Rody's ear.

Rody's heart stirred. He felt Mouse's sweet breath at his ears. His was touched and he turned to embrace her and planted a kiss on her.

The two of them lazed in the cabin for a long time until they heard a knock on the door. Seth's voice entered from outside. "I am not trying to bother you but there is something. Rody, you should come out."

Seth opened the door and saw the red-faced Mouse. He laughed and said, "I know that it is not appropriate to say this right now but Black Veil, we will probably see land tomorrow. You...can you change me back to a man? I do not want to dress like this. Surely the people of the Empire would not want to see their Duke of the Tulip Family turn into a woman."

Mouse was left in the cabin to concoct a magic potion so that a way to turn Seth back into a man could be found. Rody left the

cabin and went onto the deck.

It was already nighttime. The ship was not large. It was not a warship but a merchant ship that Mark had obtained at the port.

As King Sauron did not want to let Rody and the others return, he would naturally not prepare any ships at the port. Rody had also expected that King Sauron would not have such good intentions. When he was planning for the return home, he had already been looking for a way to contact the Empire.

The merchant's ship was actually a refurbished Imperial Navy ship that secretly came to assist.

That day, Old Mark was carrying the unconscious Rody, and was leading the injured Mouse, Nedis, Concubine Ruolan and Seth. He had cautiously approached the port. He had expected that the army from the Sauron Kingdom would intercept them, but King Sauron did not want to attack them directly. Even Sith had relied on the Temple's help to kill Rody. All these were so as not to give the Radiant Empire any excuse for a fall out with them. Even the port pretended to have prepared a ship for Rody to return to the empire.

But how would Old Mark dare to board that ship? He did not appear at all but instead secretly found the other ship that was there to give support and hence left the Sauron Kingdom.

At that moment, everyone, from the deckhands to the captain of the ship, was officers of the Radiant Empire Navy. As they were afraid that the Roland people still had more tricks, they avoided the main shipping routes and took a big detour as they returned to the Empire.

The sea breeze at night was relatively strong. The sail of the mast was billowed high, producing a whirling sound as the ship sailed under the bright starry sky.

Rody took a deep breath. He looked at the open sea. The gloomy

feeling of the past few days gradually relaxed.

At that moment, he heard a faint sigh.

A pretty figure stood at the bow of the ship. Her pretty hair flew up from the breeze. The slender figure leaned on the railings.

Seeing the slender figure, Rody felt a little guilty and he gently walked over.

She heard the footsteps behind her and immediately knew who it was. However, she did not look back and continued looking at the stars.

"I...You..." Rody stood behind her. For a moment, he did not know what to say.

Nedis turned around and laughed. Her face looked charming and beautiful. "Did you forget how to speak?"

Rody looked at the charming face in close proximity and whispered, "I want to...thank you." He gently coughed and then continued, "Had you not saved me that day, I would have..."

"Are you talking about killing Sith?" Nedis stopped smiling, sadness filled her eyes. "I don't want to hear you say those words."

"Then what do you want me to say?"

Nedis quietly looked at Rody for a while. Her gaze made Rody panic and, unable to look into her eyes, he lowered his eyes.

Nedis laughed bitterly and said, "That day, I had not planned to follow you to cross over. I also no longer plan to appear...Do you know? Even now, I cannot get myself to forgive you!"

Her gaze became colder. "When you escaped that day, you were only concerned for Mouse. You did not even realize that I was not beside you! You had neglected me...At that time, I really wanted to just let you die!" Her voice was filled with deep hatred. But, she soon smiled. "Unfortunately, I have human feelings even though I am a vampire. When I saw you in danger, I could not help coming

forward."

Rody quietly listened to her finish. He then said, "I still want to thank you...Also, I am sorry."

"Sorry?" Nedis sneered. "Why are you sorry?"

"For a lot of things!" Rody replied. "A lot of things! You should understand!"

Nedis's eyes were bitter. She murmured, "Yes...I understand...I should understand..."

Rody sighed in relief. "When I get off the boat, I will return to the Imperial Capital. What about you?"

Nedis's eyes gradually turned moist as she shook her head. "I do not know. Maybe I will go to Westwood...Ah, maybe not because it is the Tulip Family's fief."

Rody's heart felt inexplicable pain and remained silent.

Nedis suddenly laughed. Although she laughed, her gaze was cold. "Don't worry. I will not bother you. I am not like your other women...I..." She gritted her teeth and raised her head. She then loudly shouted, "Rody! You bastard! I admit I love you! Yes! I, Nedis, a vampire, has fallen in love with a human! But I am different from other women! I will not tolerate sharing a man with others!"

Rody quietly listened and did not speak.

Nedis's eyes were brimming with tears, but she was still smiling. "Did you think I would be like Mouse and Miss Nicole? There is even that little girl Diane! Do you think I would be just like a stupid, silly girl who would stay by your side? And give up everything to wait for you to shower me with your pitiful love?"

She seemingly used all her strength as she said, "I will not!"

Rody still did not speak and just quietly watched her.

Nedis forcefully wiped her tears and bit her lips. She suddenly

asked, "Rody, answer me honestly..."

"Say it." Rody sighed.

Nedis's voice trembled. "At the Dwarven Kingdom, all those days we spent together, were you, even if it was just a little, were you attracted to me?"

Rody froze for a moment. His heart was filled with complicated feelings. His lips moved as he was about to speak.

Nedis suddenly forcefully rushed over into Rody's arms and ruthlessly kissed him.

Rody was muddleheaded and seemingly wanted to push Nedis away. However, he only extended his hand a little before giving her a light hug.

Nedis's lips were soft and had a salty taste from the tears.

After some time, Nedis gently raised her head and said, "You... Don't answer me...Just leave me with some good memories."

Finally, she rushed away from Rody's arms and went back into the cabin without looking back.

The breeze blew. Nedis's back was seemingly weightless. Rody's heart was in pain as he shouted, "I had!"

Nedis turned stiff. She turned her head and laughed before leaving.

Rody looked at the starry sky unable to sort out his feelings. He subconsciously let out a long sigh.

Nedis also did not go far. After turning the corner she leaned on the cabin. It felt as though all her energy was sapped. She bit her lip and spared no effort to control herself, not daring to look back at Rody since she was afraid that she would want to rush back into his arms.

She murmured, "The most remote thing in the world is me standing in front of you, but you do not know that I love you. The

most painful thing is when you know I love you, but you do not love me." She bit her own lip until blood started to flow out.

"So, my own blood is salty." The smiling face under the moon was poignant.

The ones distressed in love did not know they were being watched by a man.

Old Mark stood on the mast and let out a weird smile at them.

"Ah...these young people. Should an old man like me go out and help them solve their problems?"

Chapter 312: Bestowing a Marriage

The ship docked off the coast of the Northern Province of the Radiant Continent, forty miles away from the Thunderous City. A troop of Imperial Guards had been waiting there under orders to meet the envoy. Leading the guards was Rody's old acquaintance, Commander Gordon, who had now been promoted to General Gordon. This was because Gordon had already been the Deputy Commander of the Imperial Guards after the war with the Roland Continent's army.

Before Gordon arrived, he was ordered by His Majesty the Emperor to keep the return of the envoy strictly confidential. After receiving the envoy, his orders must be obeyed without exception.

Gordon and his two adjutants waited at the shore when the ship docked at the pier. A group of people then got off the ship.

Leading the group was a large sturdy figure. He had a resolute and melancholic expression. Gordon recognized him as Earl Rody, the one rumored to be the Emperor's illegitimate child.

With vigor, Gordon immediately walked up and bowed. He soon saw the man behind Rody and became stupefied.

The young man behind Rody was slender and tall. He had a handsome face that would even make the Sun God jealous. He had long blond hair and lake blue eyes.

"Duke of the Tulip Family...Duke!" When Gordon saw Rody, he only showed ceremonious respect. However, the moment he saw the Duke of the Tulip Family, he reflexively shouted and knelt on the ground. His two adjutants from the Imperial Guards had also previously fought together with Rody in the Northwest. Naturally, they would recognize the 'Duke's' appearance and instantly knelt down with surprised expressions.

'Wasn't he behind closed doors nursing his injuries? How come

the Duke is here accompanying the envoy to the Roland Continent?'

Gordon immediately realized that this was a secret from the upper levels of the Empire. It was not something he should be excessively inquisitive about. Gordon whispered to the two behind him, "The Duke's whereabouts is the Empire's greatest secret. Do not leak this information!"

The two adjutants subserviently agreed.

Rody suddenly felt perplexed when he saw General Gordon finally treating Seth as the Duke of the Tulip Family.

Rody momentarily felt at a loss when he saw them show their utmost respect towards Seth. This kind of look was once only for Rody. This kind of glory was something he had earned from personally involved in bloody duels. Losing this made Rody feel somewhat empty.

Rody's expression was somewhat strange. Mouse immediately noticed the subtle change in his mood. Rody was in a daze when he felt a small and soft hand holding his palm. He looked back at Mouse and saw her eyes filled with tenderness. He suddenly smiled.

'Yes. So what if I lost the glory that is fleeting like clouds? I have already obtained the most precious thing in the world!'

Seth was truly talented at acting. He maintained his composure and bore the majestic posture of the Duke. He nodded and said, "Get up. This time, Rody is in command."

Rody also nodded and laughed. "General Gordon, have you been well?"

Gordon saluted. He laughed and said, "Everything is well. The Earl has shown no disgrace during the diplomatic mission. His Majesty would reward you heavily after you return. Let me first congratulate you here."

Rody immediately ordered Gordon to find two carriages. He invited Seth, Mouse, and Ruolan into a carriage. After all, Seth was now once again the Duke of the Tulip Family. It was not suitable for him to be seen publicly.

When Rody saw Nedis again, he did not know what to say.

Nedis looked calm. She smiled and said, "Alright. Everything has settled down, Rody. I should also leave now. Please get me a horse. I will be able to go back by myself."

Rody opened his mouth. "You..." However, Rody did not know how to continue from there.

Nedis sighed. "There are no feasts that never ends in this world, Rody. Let us leave it at that."

She moved to one side and took a horse. The nearby adjutant saw that the Earl did not say anything and obediently gave her the horse.

Nedis jumped onto it. She whipped the horse and galloped off. The horse started running. After running about ten meters, she suddenly shouted, "Rody! I hate you!"

After that, she continued without stopping and disappeared.

Rody looked at the disappearing figure, unable to tell the feelings in his heart. Old Mark simply smiled at the side and said, "Don't shilly-shally! What should be yours would remain yours. Even if you put it aside, it would not be able to escape. What are you worried about? As long as she remains in the Empire, you would not need to worry that you would not be able to find her."

Old Mark then pushed a crystal into Rody's palm and softly whispered, "I have already secretly cast a magic spell on her. Take this crystal. You would be able to find her even if she runs to the ends of the world."

After that, this devilish old man laughed and jumped up onto Seth's carriage.

Rody was in a daze as he held the crystal in his hand. He did not notice Mouse sigh as she looked at him from the carriage.

"Why are you sighing?" Ruolan, who shared the same carriage as Mouse, asked. She had lost her scary strength, making her look like an ordinary person aside from her large size. Besides that, losing her Paladin strength had turned her into a fat person who gasped for breath after every two steps. She said, "Men are not good people. You..."

"Shut up." Mouse coldly replied and then closed her eyes.

Mouse treated everyone except Rody coldly. This iceberg would only melt for Rody.

...

With an escort of two thousand Imperial Guards, the group traveled towards the Imperial Capital. Only Gordon and a few of his trusted subordinates knew that the Duke of the Tulip Family was also with the group. The rest of the soldiers did not know.

All of them were fanatical worshippers of the Duke of the Tulip Family. These few subordinates were no exception as they rode their horses as close to Seth's carriage as frequently as possible. They tried their best to give a majestic impression hoping to get the Duke's attention.

Rody smiled in his heart. He was not used to riding in a carriage and rode a horse beside Gordon.

"General Gordon, your two subordinates are really amusing."

Gordon laughed. "The little rascals would definitely not be able to hold it in when they know that the army's god is in that carriage." He then sighed. "If I am allowed to be rude, I have also witnessed the rise of the duke. I have even fought together with the duke in the Northwest." He then glanced at Rody and laughed. "Earl was also the Duke's subordinate. Me saying all this is just singing my own praise."

Rody laughed and replied, "You do not need to be courteous." He paused for a while and looked at the anxious young adjutants by Seth's carriage. Smiling, he said, "Commander Gordon, please ask your men to come back. Like this, they would look unsightly. If they are interested, I can introduce and recommend them into the Lightning God's Whip in service of the Duke."

Gordon laughed. "Then I will thank you for them! Those two are good people. If they could follow the duke, their future prospects would be good! Alas...it is boring to remain in the palace."

Gordon suddenly noticed something. "What did you call me...? Commander Gordon?"

Rody immediately realized that he had made a mistake. He had already been accustomed to addressing Gordon this way at the Northwest.

Gordon showed a weird expression. "Why does your tone also sound so familiar when you called me Commander Gordon?"

...

Seven days later, the delegation arrived at the Imperial Capital. When they returned, Rody was surprised to see more soldiers patrolling the city walls compared to usual. Many warriors wore the Flame Warriors uniform on the gates and at the streets, patrolling together with the city guards.

Rody frowned and glanced at Gordon. "What happened? Why are the Flame Warriors at the Imperial Capital?"

Gordon smiled wryly and replied, "This? Under His Majesty's prohibition command, I cannot tell you. You should go and personally ask His Majesty."

Gordon thought to himself. 'You are His Majesty's illegitimate son. If you ask, I am sure His Majesty would tell you. However, I cannot go against His Majesty's orders.'

The delegation entered the Imperial Capital and went to the

palace. Along the way, many Flame Warriors could be seen on the streets carrying weapons and making inspections. This scene made Rody restless.

A group of escorts from the delegation escorted Seth to the Duke's residence. Rody learned that Nicole had returned to the Imperial Capital and also wanted to go back immediately. However, the Emperor had given the order for Rody to proceed immediately to the Imperial Palace to see him. Even though he did not know what ruse the Old Skeleton had up his sleeve, it was not proper for Rody to object.

Everything was as usual at the Imperial Palace. There was nothing strange. However, at the Radiant Hall, the Emperor had already summoned the loyal officers and even the Deputy Commander of the Lightning God's Whip, Sieg. The old fox Marquis Garoline also waited for Rody's arrival.

Rody had, accompanied by Gordon, changed into a clean armored uniform of the commander of Imperial Guards. He was then brought to meet the Emperor. It seemed that the meeting would be very formal.

"Rody! You have finally returned!" The moment Rody walked into the hall, Andy who was sitting on the throne excitedly shouted. He also pretended to laugh and said, "My dear Rody, I heard you have successfully completed the mission. I am proud of you!"

He had walked in front of Rody and gave him a warm hug before Rody could reply.

The other ministers including Marquis Garoline could not help but sigh. "After all, it is His Majesty's illegitimate child. The ties between father and son must be very strong."

Rody was embarrassed and whispered into Andy's ears. "What are you doing?"

"Shut up and play along," Andy said before letting go.

Andy then went back to his throne. He ordered Rody to formally report about the events of the diplomatic mission.

Rody had already long prepared his report. He spoke of the situation at the Roland Continent. The Sauron Kingdom had united with the other kingdoms of the Roland Continent to go to war against the Temple. The Sauron Kingdom also had occupied the Dwarven Kingdom and obtained control of the ironwood resources. Finally, all the Paladins on the Roland Continent were dead except for Fielding.

When these matters were related one after another, the ministers were all endlessly surprised.

Rody was originally sent on a diplomatic mission to have a peace discussion with the Roland kingdoms. He was to think of ways to cause a civil strife so that the kingdoms and the Temple would be busy fighting. They did not expect it to be so successful. Right now, both sides have openly turned hostile against each other.

"Good! Very good!" Andy deliberately beamed. Andy replied 'very good' to each and every of Rody's sentences with a satisfied expression. The delighted look in his eyes seemed to show paternal love.

There was a pause. Andy then said, "Rody, I presume you do not know but a few days ago, while you were probably on the way back, we received news from the Roland Continent. That Prometheus from the Temple had crowned himself Pontiff! The Sauron Kingdom's army had already gathered at their border for the coming confrontation with the Holy Knights of the Temple. The war now cannot be avoided!"

All the ministers genuflected and loudly cheered. "God bless our Radiant Empire!"

Andy then loudly said, "In view of Earl Rody's great success and

contribution to the Empire, I am determined to reward him well!"

There was a pause. Andy then revealed a cunning look. He smiled and said, "Rody, feel free to make a suggestion!"

Rody froze for a moment before he shook his head. "I have none."

Andy laughed. "Alright. If you are too embarrassed to say it, then I will say it for you!"

He gently coughed and said, "I already know about the matter between you and Miss Nicole. Now, you have safely returned and have also contributed greatly to the Empire. I have decided for you and will wed Miss Nicole of the Tulip Family to you. The two of you will marry in three days, and I will personally preside over the wedding ceremony."

"Huh?" Rody was dumbfounded. He did not object to marrying Nicole, but he felt that it was going too fast.

He saw the other ministers giving him a weird smile. They had apparently heard of his love story with Nicole. After all, tales of the love between Nicole and the Emperor's illegitimate son at the Westwood province had already spread.

Amongst the people gazing at him, Sieg also smiled happily. After all, Sieg was the Deputy Commander of the Lightning God's Whip. He could already be regarded as a subordinate that was closest to the Tulip Family. If Rody were to marry Nicole, he could then be considered as one of the family.

"In addition, I have decided to revoke Rody's military rank as an Imperial Guard and promote him to a Marquis! He..." The Emperor glanced at the audience and said, "He would also be the Regiment Commander of the Central Cavalry! The Commander of the Lightning God's Whip!"

Boom!

The audience burst into an uproar!

Chapter 313: Coincidental Loss of Military Power

The entire hall was shocked.

"Your Majesty, I object!" A military elder rushed to speak. "Earl...no, Marquis Rody. Although he has served meritoriously for the Empire, he is still young and he is still quite a junior. The Lightning God's Whip is the Empire's elite and invincible army! The Marquis' prestige is not enough to undertake this task!"

The military elder was about fifty years old. Rody recognized him. When he was still pretending to be the Duke of the Tulip Family, this elder was the one that had helped him in the hall. Unexpectedly, the situation now had been reversed.

After he spoke a lot of people also concurred.

Unexpectedly, Sieg did not speak.

First of all, Sieg knew Rody capability. He had fought together with Rody during the sneak attack on the Thunderous City. He admired Rody's strength, courage, insight, and judgment.

Secondly, Rody was also about to become related to the Tulip Family. Everything would be fine as long as the Lightning God's Whip belonged to the Tulip Family. The other issues were not important.

Thirdly, Sieg had visited the Duke's residence and met Nicole prior to that day's meeting. She had hinted to him that he must not oppose His Majesty's decision on that day.

Although His Majesty's decision was alarming, Sieg remained silent due to these three reasons. Sieg was a smart person. He knew that this was just a transfer of power from the Duke of the Tulip Family to his brother-in-law. It did not matter as long as it is still in the hands of the Tulip Family. The Duke also had not shown up for a really long time and had also neglected military affairs for too

long.

On top of that, the troops were trained by Sieg himself. If Rody was a disloyal person, he would not be able to do much with Sieg around.

Sieg also had a faint suspicion in his heart as he looked at the young man. Sieg always had a faint inexplicable feeling. It was as though Rody was an old friend that had gone through trials of life and death together with him. He was unable to understand this feeling.

Looking at the military men objecting one after another, Andy narrowed his eyes and smiled. "Everyone, this decision is, in fact, also Seth's decision. As we all know, the Duke has been recuperating after the war and is unable to deal with military affairs..."

"But there is still General Sieg. If Your Majesty is worried about the military affairs, it is better to allow General Sieg to temporarily command the Lightning God's Whip until the Duke has finished recuperating!"

The military elder objected again.

The Marquis Garoline could not help but sigh at the side.

'It seems like His Majesty is determined to push his illegitimate son onto the center stage. He wants to make Rody the heir and first marry him off to the Tulip Family, tying him to the strongest pillar of the Empire, and then dominate military power. Hey, His Majesty really has a good plan.'

As he was thinking of that Garoline suddenly saw the Emperor looking at him with a wry smile. He realized that His Majesty wanted him to say something.

Garoline laughed bitterly. 'Looks like I have to play the villain again.' He coughed gently and immediately gained the attention of the rest of the hall.

The military elders frowned. They all knew that Garoline was not a good person. Garoline had always helped the Emperor to face off the military and the Tulip Family.

"Your Majesty, I think your decision is correct!" Garoline smiled and said, "Although Marquis Rody is young, he has experienced fighting in a recent holy crusade and also experienced acting as an envoy of the Roland Continent. It is clear that his abilities are outstanding. In addition, he has served under the Duke. Therefore, he must also be very familiar with commanding the military. As for status...finally, regarding his status and position, how could being a Marquis and the brother-in-law of the Duke of the Tulip Family be insufficient for him to become the Commander of the army?"

"But...it is not an ordinary army! This is the Empire's most powerful army, the Lightning God's Whip! It is the backbone of the Empire's military!" an old general from the military immediately objected.

"Enough," Andy said in a timely manner. He continued, "This decision is, in fact, also the Duke's intentions."

'The Duke's intentions?'

The military elders glanced at each other. Though they were somewhat skeptical, their voices had started to lower.

"Your Majesty!" Finally, one diehard opened his mouth. "I still feel that this is wrong..."

"Oh? What, then, do you suggest?" Andy asked with a smile and without any anger.

"I believe that Marquis Rody is young and promising. However, the Commander of the Lightning God's Whip is an important position that cannot be changed so easily. The Duke of the Tulip Family now commands the Central Cavalry and has earned the support of the soldiers. This prestige is something Marquis Rody

would be unable to match. Changing the commander like this may cause the soldier's morale to be unstable. If Your Majesty insists on advancing Marquis Rody's career, you may wish to find him a more suitable different military post."

Andy gave a cunning expression as he looked at the others. "Do the rest of you think so as well?"

"Yes!"

"What about Marquis Garoline?" Andy looked at the old fox again and asked.

Garoline thought for a long time but also felt that Rody was being promoted too quickly. He laughed and said, "I have no opinion. Your Majesty should decide as you please."

Andy laughed. The laughter made Rody shudder. Every time Andy laughed like this, someone would be met with misfortune.

"In that case, I will revoke this command..." The military elders sighed in relief. However, Andy suddenly said, "However, it is not suitable for Marquis Rody to remain as an Imperial Guard. I have decided to dispatch him to a localized army...He has just returned from the Roland Continent so he should be most familiar with the situation over there...Let us do it like this. Milo has been in the Northern Legion long enough. Let him return to the capital to give his report to the Central and then assume responsibilities there. The position of Commander of the Northern Legion is given to Marquis Rody! That is all!"

As soon as these words were said, the military elders showed a weird smile as though they were forcibly holding back their laughter. They were all looking at Garoline maliciously.

Garoline was shocked and angry. The Emperor's action is clearly to remove military power from his family.

'But...is it possible to argue?'

'Letting his nephew and the potential future Emperor compete

for military leadership? What a joke! Unless my entire family is looking for a disaster.'

The military elders did not expect the change in the Emperor's proposal to make such a huge difference. They felt happy seeing the Emperor playing tricks on that thorn in their sides and loudly agreed.

Garoline was angry but he did not dare to show it on his face and could only nod his head in agreement.

Sieg squinted and looked at the Emperor. He suddenly remembered the Emperor giving him the order that instead of withdrawing totally, to leave twenty thousand of the Lightning God's Whip behind, at the Thunderous City, to assist the Northern Legion in managing a large number of prisoners after the war. Now, the profound meaning of that action became obvious.

'His Majesty the Emperor had long wanted to relieve the military power from the Marquis Garoline's family! Everything has already been planned. If the Marquis and the Northern Legion dared to defy his commands ... heh, heh, there would be twenty thousand of the elite Lightning God's Whip to control the situation!'

Once the meeting ended, Andy instructed Rody to remain behind for a private talk while the rest left the place.

The military elders now saw Rody in a good light as they had finally put Garoline in his place. They gave Rody words of support before leaving. Finally, Sieg also came to see Rody. With a kind smile, he said, "Rody, congratulations."

Rody looked at his old comrade who had been with him ever since he enlisted in the army. He warmed up and held out his hand to Sieg as he laughed. "General Sieg. I will be relying on you in the North."

Sieg held Rody's hand and felt a strange familiarity. He then laughed. "You are about to become a part of the Tulip Family. May

you bring more glory to the Tulip Family's banner."

The two of them then shook hands and bid each other farewell.

...

"What the hell were you doing?" Rody immediately asked loudly the moment he followed Andy to a secret room in the palace.

"Boy, you don't need to complain." Andy lay on his chair and laughed lazily. "I gave you a pleasant task. Aren't you satisfied?"

Rody was vigilant as he replied, "Pleasant task? I think it is more of you having a different intention. The civil war on the Roland Continent has begun and you are sending me to the north. Are you going to take advantage of the war to send the army across the ocean?"

"I do not have that in mind." Andy shook his head. "I am simply taking advantage of this opportunity to take away the military power from Garoline. That old man is an expert in administration. Unfortunately, his ambition is a little wild. Taking away military power from their family would also make them work more honestly in future and not think of useless things."

Rody nodded and finally believed Andy.

Sky then came in through the door and laughed when he saw Rody. "Rody, you are back! You still have all your body parts with you?"

Rody looked at Sky angrily and said, "Thanks to your help, I almost died by you messing around with the Divine Primordial Spirit!"

"Aha!" Sky scolded, "I simply had good intentions. Can't you tell the difference between good and bad?"

The three had a friendly banter for a while. Rody told them all the interesting news about the Roland Continent such as the secrets of the Temple, the secrets of the royalty of the Sauron

Kingdom, and Prometheus' identity. These things could not be revealed at the meeting earlier.

When Sky was summoned earlier, there was not enough time to talk about these things. At that moment, Rody finally explained everything.

Andy finally frowned. "Kara...Dragons...Putting these two things together is really a headache."

Rody sighed. "Although Kara still lives, he has not yet obtained the Divine Primordial Spirit. He is also seriously injured and will not recover so quickly. The dragon Paladins are all dead. The self-proclaimed Dragon God is just one of the Mystic Dragon's son and I have killed him. The remaining dragons should not be anything for us to worry about. After all, these things only concern the Roland Continent. Right now, we cannot do anything about it..."

Andy smiled slightly. "That is not necessarily true." He laughed cunningly. "I think that Kara is not such a simple person. With the God's Record around it is even more complicated."

Rody sighed. "I have been puzzled about the God's Record for a long time. In the memories I saw from the Mystic Dragon's son, the ancient humans and dragons were different from the current entities. I feel that this is connected to the God's Record."

Andy shook his head. "For now, let's not think about this. We can discuss this again at leisure when there is time."

Rody nodded and replied. "Yes. On my return, I saw a lot of Flame Warriors in the Imperial Capital. What happened? Why did the Church suddenly mobilize so many Flame Warriors to the capital?"

Andy looked at Sky. Sky then laughed and said, "Boy, do you still remember me telling you that I have a surprise to give you when you come back?"

"What?"

Andy nodded and created a magical barrier that isolated everything in the room including the fluctuation of energy. He walked to the back of the secret room and took out a long narrow box.

The box seemed to be made from an unknown magical material and had a luster to it.

"This box can keep the aura of the thing inside from emitting out. It is something from the Church. You will know what it is when you see it."

Rody was curious and slowly opened the box. He immediately felt an extremely strong and dark aura emitting from inside. It had a cold and murderous aura.

A dark aura filled the box and a cold light flickered, revealing the contents.

"The Dracula's Spear!" Rody exclaimed. "How did you steal it? When did you steal it?"

Sky laughed. "This? I must thank those vampires..."

Chapter 314: Shackles

"Just two days before you summoned me to fight that large snake, a group of vampires appeared at the Imperial Capital. As if they had gone mad, they flew all over the capital and then to the Church institute in broad daylight like a swarm of bees and launched a suicidal attack."

Sky gave a supercilious look and shook his head.

Rody frowned. "The vampires attacked the Church's institute in broad daylight? Have they gone mad? What did you two do when that happened?"

Andy gave an evil laugh. "What could I do? I was unconcerned. What does their quarrel have anything to do with me? That day, the sky was full of bats. I simply ordered for more troops to patrol the streets."

"What happened then?"

"After that..." Sky was the one who replied. "The vampires attacked the religious institute as though they were mad. They must have gathered a lot of power. I have never seen that many vampires in my life. That day, those guys at the Church were very busy. The mages could almost shoot light spells to the sky at random and hit the vampires with their eyes closed. However, the vampires were also really bold. They noticed that the defense power of the religious institute was lacking and declared war on the Church after gathering so many people. In other words, the vampires now really have guts."

"The Church obviously did not expect the vampires to cause such a huge scene. Even I did not expect the vampires to become so aggressive. After discussing with the Old Skeleton, we felt that there must be a big problem there."

"Yes." Andy smiled. "I immediately thought of this Dracula's

Spear. This is the vampire's sacred weapon. At first, I thought it was strange that they did not make any fuss after the Dracula's Spear was taken away by the Church. There was not even a single move then. But now, however, I also did not expect them to make such a big move."

"Haha." Sky laughed cunningly. "I do not dare to fight Corsica VI directly. I am not certain I can endure that God Summoning spell. However, when I see them running around hastily, I felt it would be foolish to not take advantage of the opportunity the vampires created for us."

"You..." Rody had a smiling look in his eyes.

Andy shrugged his shoulders and put on a solemn appearance. "I had naturally given the order to the officer of our Imperial Guards, Sky, to take our valiant warriors to assist the Church, the pillars of the Empire, to fight against the wicked and heretical vampires."

Sky also solemnly said, "I had also completed His Majesty the Emperor's orders strictly. I created a strong gale at the periphery. It killed and blasted all the vampires within several tens of meters, eradicating a lot of these evil enemies!"

Rody was surprised. "Wi-Within several tens of meters? Blasted?"

Sky gave a sigh and looked regretful. "Yes. Blasted...However, because of my small misjudgment, it was not only the enemy but also half of the religious institute was destroyed. Hopefully, the Gods would understand that his people were forced to do it." Sky drew a cross at his chest.

Rody suppressed his impulse to laugh. Suddenly, he remembered something. He raised his eyebrows and asked, "What about Corsica VI? He..."

"Hahaha. After the vampires came and caused the ruckus, His Holiness the Pope together with the elders went to oppose the master of the vampires together. They all went to the outskirts of

West Hill and fought a big battle. That was a world-shaking incident. I extremely admire the display of the Pope's invincible might."

Sky sighed. "However, in order to prevent wanton destruction by the vampires, I had, en passant, carefully searched both the inside and outside of the Church's institute. Of course, this was done secretly. As a result, I found a sealed treasure chest underground."

Andy narrowed his eyes and smiled. "At a crucial moment, our loyal and valiant warrior Sky had encountered the vampires and, under the patronage of the Gods, got rid of all of them. Unfortunately, all the religious magicians had died tragically too...Ah...May their souls rest in peace!"

The Skeleton then devoutly made a cross at his chest.

They had taken advantage of the other side's misfortune and stolen the Dracula's Spear. Furthermore, they had destroyed the entire cathedral, erased all the evidence, and then blamed it on the vampires...

Rody sighed weakly. "You guys...you guys are really daring!"

However, Andy said, "The usually cautious vampires did such a bold and crazy thing. If we did not gain some benefits from this, I would feel sorry for the cute bats that died!"

Rody gently caressed the cold spear in his hand and pulled it out of the box.

The cold texture touched the palm of his skin. Rody felt a strange feeling. No wonder this spear was the vampire's sacred weapon. Its evil murderous aura could be felt just by holding it.

The murderous aura made Rody suddenly feel cold and he said, "Master...Master Autumn is..."

Sky and Andy's faces turned gloomy as they looked at each other. Andy laughed bitterly and said, "I did say that the Dracula's Spear is a dark magical artifact that could absorb the soul but..."

"But what?"

Andy sternly said, "I am not a God! Do you think it is easy to revive a person that has become a soul? If a soul is exposed, it would quickly disperse. Did you know that? If we took out Master Autumn's soul from the spear just like that, it would vanish in a short moment. At that time, everything would be gone and lost forever! Furthermore..." Andy sighed. "I don't know how to get his soul out."

"What!" Rody became angry and glared. "You say you do not know! At that time, you..."

"Boy, you do not need to glare." Sky sighed. "If we did not say that, you would have long ago went and desperately looked for Corsica VI. Besides that, Master Autumn's soul was really absorbed by the spear. This is a true fact. But we are not Gods. We also do not know how to do some difficult things like resurrection."

Andy smiled and said, "The Dracula's Spear is one of the most ancient magical artifacts. There would be countless souls absorbed by it. In the past thousands of years, there should be at least eight to ten thousand souls at a minimum. Have you heard of any single one reviving?"

The to and fro statements of the two old guys made Rody speechless. Rody stared at them and frowned. "Then Master Autumn..."

"We can think of a solution slowly. But I think that since this spear can absorb the soul and stop it from disappearing, there must be something like a shackle inside. Let us first find a way to interact with the soul and then think of a solution. Maybe..." Sky smiled. "It has been such a long time. Whether the soul still exists is another matter."

"Interact? How to interact?" Rody frowned.

Sky laughed bitterly. "This is not something we can do. I heard

that the reason you could cultivate so quickly initially was because a power seed was planted in your body by Master Autumn. Since you have Master Autumn's power seed, we may need to rely on you to make his soul respond. That is something that I can't do."

Although Sky and Andy tried to console Rody, he was insistent on staying. He just sat there on the ground with his legs crossed as he held the Dracula's Spear and racked his brains thinking about the matter.

In Rody's mind, Master Autumn was like a teacher and a father. He was an idol who had guided him to the peak of swordsmanship. Saving him was one of Rody's greatest wish.

Andy was helpless and could only pull Sky away. Before leaving, he once again covered the entire room with a barrier that blocked the aura from leaving.

Rody's fingers gently stroked the cold spear. He tried hard to calm himself down to sense the inside of the spear but he could feel only the coldness of the spear and nothing else.

He tried to send a bit of his fighting energy into the spear...

The spear gave a humming sound as though a power had surged through it. Black qi emerged from the spear. The black qi felt tyrannical and murderous, throwing Rody's calmed heart into chaos.

"No...Not right..." Rody shook his head and frowned, and then just sat there thinking hard for a long time.

The secret room had already been blocked and sealed. Gradually, the candlelight burned out and the place was surrounded by darkness. Only Rody's breathing could be heard in the dark.

A night had passed unnoticed and Rody still remained in the room. He had not rested, slept, eaten, or drank anything. He was still holding the spear and sat cross-legged. He had not moved at all.

Outside, at the Duke's residence, Nicole had received news of Rody's return and had already dispatched someone to the Imperial Palace, but she received the message that Rody was discussing an important secret matter with the Emperor.

Rody, thus, was still there on the third day. He sat there like a statue as though his face and body had frozen.

"Fatty, do you think that boy has gone bonkers?" Andy sighed.

Sky shook his head. "I hope he comes out quickly. Otherwise, Nicole might send people to fight and kill their way into the palace. Hopefully, she does not think that we have murdered her husband..."

The two of them were standing outside the room when they suddenly heard a loud humming sound from inside...

"Huh?" Andy's expression changed. 'I had isolated the space in the room. How could the sound from inside escape?'

The two old men looked at each other. Sky strode in.

Rody, who had not rested for three days, had a beard stubble on his chin and his face looked pale. He was using his finger to tap hard on the spear. The weird thing was every time he tapped on the spear, it gave out a loud and clear humming sound.

"You...How did you do that?" Andy frowned.

Rody remained expressionless as though lost in thought. He just kept tapping hard on the spear.

Sky pursed his lips and wanted to go and pull Rody. However, the moment he stretched his hand, he felt Rody's body covered in an aura. He was instantly hit by a huge force and his large body bounced back.

"What the hell!" Sky exclaimed as he stepped back a few steps. "When did he recover to this level?"

Andy also showed a weird gaze.

This time Sky tried harder. He cleared his throat first. Seeing that Rody still did not respond, he once again reached out slowly. He could feel that Rody's body was covered with a weird aura. The aura was pushing, pressing and spinning. These forces were tangled up as though there were no rules governing them as they were being released from Rody's body.

Rody's fingers were tapping harder and harder. The humming sound started to become ear-splitting. Black qi began to emerge from the spear and became thicker. More and more murderous aura was coming out.

Andy's expression changed. "This is bad! If he continues to tap it like this, the black qi would leak and spread out. If the people from the Church finds out, it would become troublesome! Why is my barrier not working?"

Sky's expression had changed drastically. His eyes then lit up and he said, "No! This boy is projecting his domain! Right now, we are in his domain! No wonder your barrier is not working!"

"Domain?" Andy looked hard at Sky and asked. "Didn't this boy lose his powers already?"

Sky was also puzzled. "How would I know? I have been standing outside together with you!"

Rody suddenly opened his mouth and shouted. He withdrew his finger and then spread both hands out to hold both ends of the spear tight and then started to use force to...

"What does he want to do?" Sky's eyes opened wide.

Andy shook his head. "He... Is he trying to destroy the spear?"

The spear continued to hum in Rody's hands. The sound seemed to carry a heavy pressure. Gradually, that sound was slowly filled with sadness...

"Boy, are you mad? Are you trying to destroy it?" Sky's expression changed. He took a deep breath and then forcefully

charged towards Rody.

As Sky was prepared to attack this time, he had managed to hit Rody. Rody fell and the spear also dropped onto his body.

"What are you doing?" Rody asked as he lay on the ground and looked at the two geezers with an unhappy expression.

"Are you trying to destroy this magical artifact?" Andy's tone was solemn.

Rody thought for a moment and replied, "I am just trying to tear open the shackles imprisoning the souls."

Chapter 315: New Home

"Don't you mean, destroy this spear?" Andy asked in an abnormally solemn voice.

Rody thought for a moment. "Not exactly." He seemed to struggle to find the right words to express his idea, "I felt that the spear had absorbed a lot of heterogeneous energy. Under this messy mix, I am unable to interact with Master Autumn. Unless..."

"Unless you destroy the spear and then let you have a good search, is it?" Andy squinted his eyes and shook his head. "Stupid! You silly boy, what is the Dracula Spear? It is a legendary magic weapon that can even harm God! Do you think it can be easily destroyed? Moreover, it is precisely because of the special characteristics of the spear that enable it to absorb the spirits of those souls! Without this spear as the object that can be attached, the spirits of those wandering souls and Master Autumn would have been long gone! If you were to ruin the spear yet there is nothing like that for Master Autumn to attach his spirit, then...Just think of the consequences yourself!"

"You mean, the soul vanished into thin air and the spirit entirely destroyed!" Rody's expression changed slightly.

Andy looked seriously at Rody and slowly nodded his head.

Rody felt a little terrified. Fatty Sky frowned and said. "Just now, you actually projected your 'Domain Power'. When did you recover to this extent?"

Rody was alarmed. "'Domain Power'? Did I project my 'Domain Power' just now? But why did I not feel it myself?"

Fatty and the Old Skeleton looked at each other and after that Fatty squinted his eyes. Suddenly, he gave a gentle cry and punched at Rody. Rody was taken aback. He dodged backward by reflex. Seven weird forces suddenly burst out from the fist of Sky.

Boom! Rody was hit by the blast and he crashed into the wall.

Rody snorted. That smash caused some cracks in the wall. Rody fell to the ground.

"He does not seem to have recovered!" Fatty frowned. Although he punched Rody he was only testing. At that instant, he had already held back ninety percent of his strength and did not injure Rody.

Rody stood up from the ground. "Hey!" He angrily yelled, "Fatty, what are you doing?"

Andy dragged Rody and then looked up and down at him carefully. He frowned and whispered, "Strange, he did not have fighting energy flowing in his body, but just now, very clearly..." After a short pause, Andy continued, "Rody, tell me, what were you doing just now?"

Rody closed his eyes and pondered for a moment before saying, "I have sat here for a long time and I am still unable to get any response from inside the spear. I can only try to use different kinds of energy to test. I have tried various methods to apply the energy; sometimes large, sometimes small, sometimes light, sometimes heavy, sometimes straight, sometimes flexed. I have been thinking. This spear can absorb numerous souls so that they are not scattered, then naturally it carries a type of fantastic force inside itself. If I can find out the law of that field of force, then naturally I can find a solution. Tapping the spear, time after time, was me trying to find a way to test the law of that force field.

Andy squinted and said, "So, it can be said that, just now, when we approached you, we felt that there was an external force around you. That was...That should be the response given by the spear. That was also the energy of the responding vibration! "

Fatty also frowned and said, "But how could the energy of the response vibration actually be condensed into a weird 'Domain Power'? The force field of the 'Domain'...could it be..."

Andy sighed, "Who else could it be? Of course, it must be Mr. Autumn!"

The three of them were confused. They discussed more for a while, yet they still could not find a solution. Finally, Andy sighed, "Let's not talk about this matter now. In any case, the spear is now in our hands, as long as we are careful not to let the Church find it. Study it slowly. We will certainly come out with a solution." After a short pause, he smiled wryly, "You better go out first. Nicole, that girl, is so anxious that I am afraid she cannot wait and may send someone to tear down the palace. In addition, that Black Veil little girl, you brought along, also seems extremely anxious."

Fatty also laughed, "That's true. You better go out first. You have been here for a few days, do you not need to eat?"

"Few days?" Rody was shocked. "Has it been a few days already? Why do I feel like I have only worked at it for a while?"

The two old monsters looked at each other and revealed a wry smile.

Previously, the Black Veil Saint had followed Rody into the palace. The day before, after the meeting in the great hall, Rody had gone into the secret room. Naturally, Andy had settled Black Veil Saint inside the palace. The explanation he gave her was that Rody had sealed himself up in cultivation to restore his strength.

Mouse was originally from the Temple. Therefore, she had experienced a lot of such closed-door matters and naturally familiar with it. However, next to her was, Concubine Ruolan, the person who had always liked to mess up matters. Fortunately, they both had lost their powers and thus did not cause any trouble.

Rody had not realized it when he was in the secret chamber and it was only after he came out that he found his body was already very weak. He ate a little and then rested for a while before he met Mouse. He also reviewed with her those strange matters pertaining to the spear. Although Mouse had super magical strength, she also,

for the time being, could not think of any clue. After that, the three of them prepared to leave the palace.

"Well then, go back to your mansion to have a look." Andy smiled slightly. "You will probably like that place?"

"What do you mean?"

Fatty smiled and said, "Kid, you are already a Marquis, now! The Old Skeleton has given you a house. You will certainly like it when you see it."

When Andy saw that Rody was at a loss, he smiled and said, "Do you still remember Prince Baron? You destroyed his palace. I ordered the reconstruction of a large mansion on that original site and now it is the mansion of Marquis Rody. Now that you have found Seth, the mission of the Duke of Tulip Family has also been completed. We cannot let you continue staying in the mansion of the Duke of Tulip House. Also, kiddo, I did not expect you to have waited in the secret room for so many days. Tomorrow is your wedding day! How can you get married and yet not even have a house?"

After hearing the phrase 'Mansion of Marquis', Rody merely nodded his head. However, when he heard the phrase 'Tomorrow is your wedding day', he reflexively became startled. "Tomorrow?"

"Of course, it's tomorrow!" Andy smirked. "That day in the great hall, I have already said to bestow you a marriage in three days' time. Tomorrow is the third day! If not for the Empire's custom that the groom and the bride must not meet before the wedding, Nicole would long have rushed into the Palace to look for you!"

Rody was surprised yet happy. He also could not help but look at Mouse, who was next to him. From Mouse's eyes, she looked a little bit dejected. Just when he was about to say something, Fatty Sky patted both their shoulders hard and laughed, "Is the black veil girl jealous? Rest assured. Although Rody, this kid, is a little

stupid, he is actually a good person. At worst, next month, he will have another wedding and marry all you girls. Anyway, his Marquis mansion is not too small... Big enough for all to live in."

Fatty had good intentions. However, Princess Ruolan, who was beside him, sneered. "Nonsense! Miss Mouse, do you still want to continue to follow this heartless man? He will marry another woman tomorrow. Why don't you follow me back to the Roland Continent?"

Sky eyes opened wide, "You, fat pig! Shut up!"

With Ruolan's temper, how could she tolerate this kind of words? With a loud hoo-hah, she rushed up to fight with Fatty. Fortunately, Rody held onto him tightly. The two fatties, a man and a woman, glared at each other. Nevertheless, both of them refused to look away.

Andy laughed cunningly, "Concubine Ruolan, you came to our Radiant Empire, so you are our distinguished guest. I think it is still better for you to live in the palace for the time being. When the situation in the Sauron Kingdom has stabilized, I will naturally dispatch some men to send you back."

Ruolan looked ferociously at the Emperor of Radiant Empire in front of her. Hateful as she was, she strangely laughed, "Aha, obviously you kidnapped me and now you are being sarcastic! Now that I am already here, it's up to you whether you want to kill me or whatever!"

Fatty Sky really found her intolerable. He went up and knocked Ruolan's head with his palm. He instantly knocked her out as he scolded, "Where did this woman come from? These past two days, she was extremely annoying!"

...

It had been just a few days after the construction of the new Marquis' mansion started that rumors began in the Imperial

Capital that Rody was the Emperor's illegitimate child. So, soon after Andy ordered the construction of Rody's mansion, the officials in charge of this matter built that mansion very luxuriously to please the Emperor. The original residence of Prince Baron was situated very close to the Palace, occupying a large area. The grand residence was built with an imposing style with splendid golden walls. However, the family emblem above the main door gave the officials a little headache.

In their hearts, Rody was the illegitimate child of the Emperor, but they could not blatantly use the emblem of the royal family. However, Rody himself did not have any family crest. Finally, Andy himself solved that problem. That Old Skeleton brandished his brush. He personally drew a brand new family emblem for Rody...

A skeleton!

However, Fatty, who was watching at the side, was obviously not satisfied. He made some changes to the emblem. Finally, he changed it into a skeleton that had an enormous knight's sword inserted into its skull.

As a result, that emblem shocked the officials responsible for the construction!

Whichever way you looked at that emblem, it was scary. If that emblem was really engraved above the door, the fear was that, within a short time, it would become the laughingstock of the Imperial Capital.

Eventually, the final emblem was decided on by Nicole. Everyone had long regarded her as Rody's fiancée and naturally, no one objected to it.

Nicole finally changed the emblem into a sword within a flame and there was a blooming tulip clearly carved on the sword! And that flame, it was golden!

In the Radiant Empire, only the emblem of the royal family can be golden in color. After Andy's approval of the emblem, the relationship between that Mr. Rody and the royal family was finally confirmed in the entire Imperial Capital...

Rody got off the carriage and stood in front of this own mansion. He could not help feeling a little lost.

From staying in a dilapidated dormitory that had cost him five silver coins per year of rent, he had now turned into the currently-in-favor marquis of the Empire...And all those were obtained not by impersonating as someone else. They were all truly his own!

In front, the main gate was made from a fiery silver material and the huge family emblem was engraved from a fiery diamond. There was also the row of respectful servants standing in the doorway.

Rody took a deep breath. His brain was filled with a complex mood. In a daze, he saw inside the door a woman dressed in a white muslin gown slowly walk out. That woman had a cool elegant face, but her eyes were filled with excitement and even more fiery passion. As she stood there, her tender and timid figure seemed to be trembling slightly. If it was not Myka, then who could it be?

Myka half bit her lips and looked, a little puzzled, at Rody. She saw Rody holding the hand of a black-clothed woman. She felt a little uncomfortable. Originally, the moment she saw Rody, she had wanted to throw herself into his arms, but then she was a little hesitant now.

Right behind Myka was a woman fully clothed in a fiery red dress. It was Diane. She deliberately sneered and deliberately pushed Myka vigorously. After that, she pretended to say loudly, "Well! You think about him all day and all night. Now that he has come back, why are you just staring blankly at him?"

Rody took a deep breath and gave a warm smile. He looked at

Myka and waved at her. Myka also finally smiled. She walked forward a few steps and gently hugged Rody.

Diane jealously smiled from behind, "Rody, your new home was organized by Myka, personally. Everything inside was also selected by Myka personally. These few days, she was so tired that she has lost a lot of weight. You should repay her well!"

Myka smiled slightly. She quietly pulled Diane's hand and then stuffed it into Rody's hand. Diane blushed and gently tried to break free. She did not try very hard though and, instead, ended up holding firmly on to Rody's hand and was reluctant to let go.

Myka then looked at Mouse, smiled and said, "How do you do? You certainly must be Miss Mouse. My name is Myka." After she finished speaking, she pulled Mouse by her hand.

Mouse was naturally indifferent. Besides Rody, she had never been so close to other people. However, when she looked at that beautiful and attractive Myka in front of her and was being pulled by her soft little hand, she could not refuse. She just, as if in a daze, followed Myka to enter the door...

...

At the same time, in the mansion of the Duke of Tulip Family, Miss Nicole was spellbound. Seth, who was carefully standing next to her, laughed and said, "Well, my dear sister, Rody, that kid, has already left the palace. Didn't someone already announce it just now? Anyway, tomorrow you are going to marry him. For now, there is no need for you to hurry."

Nicole blushed and immediately tensed up. She said coldly, "Shut up! Your opinion is not needed now!"

Seth immediately laughed apologetically and said, "Well, that's enough. Haven't you tormented me enough for the past two days? You have hit and scolded me. On the first day you saw me, you have already struck me with a lightning magic and almost

murdered your brother. If I were to die, where are you going to find someone to replace Rody as the Duke of Tulip Family?"

Nicole bit her teeth and hatefully said, "If I do not teach you properly, only God knows what tricks you will come up with next!"

Seth giggled and then he walked over to gently hug Nicole. He casually said, "Well, sister, tomorrow is your wedding day. It is said that an angry woman will age and turn ugly faster. Now, there are many beautiful women by Rody's side. You must be a little bit cautious, ah!"

After saying that, he quickly loosened his hold on Nicole and rushed to one side to escape. Nicole was full of anger as she raised her hand. Shortly after, Seth's miserable screams and flashes of lightning issued from the room...

Chapter 316: Wedding

For the wedding of His Excellency Marquis Rody, it was obvious that a lot of effort was put into planning it.

In fact, the officials in charge of planning had already shown some signs of collapsing.

To arrange a grand wedding within three days was already a very difficult task. The thing that made it even more awkward was...The status of that Marquis Rody was somewhat ambiguous and therefore the specification of the wedding ceremony would be some kind of a challenge.

He was a Marquis and he was going to marry the older sister of the Duke of the Tulip Family. More importantly, the groom was the illegitimate son of His Majesty...the only son, as it was right then.

When such a person got married, what kind of rules should the wedding follow? If in accordance with the customs of the ordinary aristocrats, apparently, it would not be appropriate. If in case, in future, that Marquis became an emperor...Heh, heh, the wedding of the future Emperor and Empress of Radiant Empire could not be too simple. Otherwise, in the case of a moment of anger in the future, the unlucky person would probably be their own self.

So if it was arranged in accordance with the regulations of the royal family, it obviously was also not appropriate. After all, then, the relationship between His Excellency the Marquis and His Majesty the Emperor had not been made public. If it was arranged in accordance with the regulations of the royal family, and in case people resented and blamed him for meddling, then the unlucky one would probably still be their own self.

Awkward, Really awkward...

Finally, that clever official really had no more idea. So, he could

only go directly to His Majesty the Emperor to ask for his opinion. His Majesty's reply was, "Make it as grand as possible!"

Because of that statement made by the Old Skeleton, the scene of Rody's wedding was astonishing.

Early in the next morning, a team of cavalry from the Imperial Guards, wearing the brightest uniforms, was already very busy. They covered the roads in the Imperial Capital, all the way from the mansion of the Duke of the Tulip Family to the mansion of the Marquis, with red carpets.

Immediately after that, two thousand Imperial Guards, wearing the most outstanding outfits, temporarily controlled the traffic flow of that section of the road.

A team of Royal Musician Guards of Honor formed an array outside the mansion of the Marquis playing the most celebrated song. Following which, the youngest Marquis of the Empire was ready to set out to greet his bride.

The following scene was an eye-opener for the people of the Imperial Capital.

The full five thousand fully armed 'Wolf Fang' cavalry from the 'Lightning God's Whip' present was of course not going to war that day. The 'Wolf Fang' warriors were wearing the normal outfits that they used for the grand inspection ceremony. The warriors were in a mile-long formation in the street starting from the front of the mansion of the Duke of the Tulip Family to greet them. All of those brave warriors wore happy smiles on their faces. The older sister of their invincible commander was getting married that day. Sieg had picked five thousand men from the 'Wolf Fang' to serve as the guard of honor to greet them. Those five thousand men were carefully selected in order to be able to serve their invincible commander effectively. Actually, those young warriors would even break their heads to be a part of the soldiers selected for the group.

The five thousand 'Wolf Fang' exhibited the most mighty and formidable stance. In contrast, those Imperial Guards whom Marquis Rody brought with him to greet the bride were somewhat inadequate.

When Rody and his entire group of people approached, Rody, who was riding on a white horse, looked down the street. Standing on both sides of the street to greet him were all 'Wolf Fang' warriors. He was so angry that his nose almost went crooked.

'Today is my wedding day! We are not going to war! Why create such a murderous setting!'

There was a swishing sound.

When Rody walked into the array of the 'Wolf Fang', all the five thousand soldiers raised their scimitars, at the same time. For a moment, the brightness of the scimitars flashed, giving Rody a strange feeling.

However, it had always been like this in the Radiant Empire. The Empire had always advocated martial skills. From the decree of the aristocracy regarding inheritance of the title for the common people, everyone would regard the ability to obtain warrior status as a glory. Even the customs of wedding ceremonies also carried some such uninhibited atmosphere.

Under the brightness of the scimitars of the 'Wolf Fang', Rody, with only a thousand Imperial Guards, could only make every effort to straighten his back atop his horse. He maintained a graceful and majestic appearance and refused to lose any bit of loftiness.

In the distance, just at the doorstep of the mansion of the Duke of the Tulip Family, there was a young man sitting on a black steed. He had long, bright golden hair that dazzled like sunlight and a pair of lake-blue eyes. He also had a handsome face that even the Sun God was jealous of. He wore the outfit of an Imperial Marshal. He was none other than the Duke of the Tulip Family, His

Excellency Seth!

That scene was an extraordinary custom of the Empire.

That was because the Empire advocated martial arts. In a military leader's wedding ceremony, the groom must first undergo a test from the family of the bride... That test was naturally a martial arts competition.

Although it was a wedding ceremony and it was just for show, usually they would also let both parties demonstrate their martial skills. That was to show that both parties were excellent at martial arts.

Generally speaking, the persons stepping forth to test the groom were usually the father or older brother of the bride. Since Nicole's father had passed away a long time ago, so naturally that legendary Empire's most formidable and forever invincible, the Great His Excellency the Duke of the Tulip Family would personally test the martial prowess of Marquis Rody.

According to everyone's opinion, that newly-appointed Marquis, the young Rody, should feel much honored to have a chance to be guided by the Great Excellency the Duke of the Tulip Family.

In reality, at that moment, Seth was mumbling and secretly cursing the original person who established that kind of custom.

"Test" Rody's martial prowess? What the hell. With just a slash of his sword, he would be able to strike me down from the horse!

Rody bottled up his laughter. Looking at Seth, who was sitting on the horse and trying his best to keep calm, Rody called out loudly, "Your Excellency the Duke."

Seth gave a gentle cough and then slowly pulled out his slender sword. He spoke slowly in a dignified tone, "Draw your weapon, Warrior Rody! Let me see if you are qualified to enter the Tulip Family clan!"

"Long live the Tulip Family!"

"Long live the Tulip Family!"

As soon as the commander pulled out his sword, the five thousand 'Wolf Fang' simultaneously issued a sky-shattering cheer!

That sound shot straight up to the sky. Rody was already accustomed to such a scene. On the contrary, it almost gave Seth a shock.

Those five thousand 'Wolf Fang' were elite soldiers. Many of them had followed Rody to the northwest Great Moon Kingdom. They had also participated in the holy war against the invading Roland armies and most of them had personally witnessed the invincible might of His Excellency the Duke on the battlefield. Although Rody was nominally a personal guard of the Duke, because he showed up using his real identity too late into the war, most of these soldiers did not know him.

However, just thinking that this guy could actually marry the beautiful older sister of His Excellency the Duke made people envious. In addition, getting the guidance of His Excellency the Duke truly made people jealous.

"Well, come on." Rody pulled out his scimitar and kicked the stomach of the horse. He moved closer to Seth and whispered, "Rest assured, I will maintain propriety."

After he finished saying that, he struck straight down towards Seth with his scimitar.

To be honest, when Seth saw the flash from the scimitar, his instinctive response was to dodge. However, before he even had time to dodge, he already heard Rody whisper, "Raise your hand!"

Seth instinctively raised the longsword in his hand. He only saw the two weapons clashed with a tinkling sound. Seth did not feel any tremendous force. Instead, he felt the longsword in his hand was empty as if that strike that Rody made with his scimitar was without a trace of strength.

Rody deliberately said loudly, "Very good!" Immediately, it seemed like the scimitar in his hand was blocked. Even his warhorse could not help but repeatedly move back a few steps.

It was clear to everyone that the His Excellency the Duke only needed to block casually and this already forced the opponent to retreat. That caused the 'Wolf Fang' to issue the sky-shaking cheer again.

Although Rody was temporarily unable to deploy his 'Domain Power', as a master of 'Domain Power', his skill in controlling the force used was still at its peak. When he used that small trick, naturally nobody saw through it.

Seth took a deep breath. He still managed to maintain his usual composure. Rody was thinking of advancing again, but Seth thought to himself, 'I will not oblige anymore.' After that, he quickly shouted, "Enough!"

Rody seemed to want to smile but yet did not, as he stopped his action. He then looked at Seth.

Seth coughed gently and said imposingly, "Judging by the power of that strike, it was not bad. It cannot be considered as a disgrace to my older sister. As far as I am concerned, you have passed the test."

As soon as he finished speaking, they heard the surrounding people exclaim in admiration. Everybody said that His Excellency the Duke was magnanimous and benevolent.

With such compliments, even if Seth's face had a thick skin it would feel hot. He then lifted his sword high up and waved it. Soon after, in the midst of cheering, the His Excellency the Duke temporarily exited the scene.

At noon, twelve guns of salute were simultaneously fired at the four city gates of the Imperial Capital! Since it was the older sister of the marshal of the Empire getting married, the army would

naturally do their utmost to liven up the atmosphere.

The atmosphere in the entire Imperial Capital was livelier than the wedding of the Emperor, many years ago.

Marquis Garoline stood in the midst of a group of aristocrats who came to congratulate, feeling somewhat moved.

To be able to mobilize such a massive activity to conduct the wedding ceremony, it absolutely must have had the permission of His Majesty the Emperor. It was clear that His Majesty was really good to that illegitimate son.

With regards to the handing over of the military power of the Northern Army, Marquis Garoline was somewhat displeased that day. However, immediately after going home and reflecting on it for the whole night, he felt relieved.

Currently, the Tulip Family had already re-established their glory. But, so what? Even if his Lionheart Family could grasp the power of a military legion, there would not be too much significance.

For now, the most important thing was to lie low.

Judging from various aspects, Marquis Garoline had already been convinced and had conceded defeat. It could also be said that he had given up competing with the Tulip Family.

Since it was impossible to overwhelm the Tulip Family, then it would be better to abandon that idea and maximize the development of his own family clan.

The army was already the realm of the Tulip Family. Then, why should he need to fight over that little bit of military power? Would it not be better for him to divert his family focus on other more practical areas?

As with regards to enticing that Marquis Rody...Hmmm, he had already married the older sister of the Duke of the Tulip Family. Would it still be possible to entice him?

Old Marquis shook his head and sighed, "Luck is not with me. This must be the will of God."

At that moment, Rody, in the midst of the cheering of everyone, carried Nicole, who was dressed in splendid ceremonious attire, out of the main door of the mansion of the Duke of the Tulip Family.

Nicole's face was flushed red, but her eyes were filled with happiness.

The five thousand 'Wolf Fang' and the one thousand Imperial Guards cheered. In the midst of the chaotic cheering, Rody firmly hugged Nicole and whispered in her ear, "I said before, I will use my real identity as Rody and let you honorably become my woman."

After he finished speaking, he carried Nicole and placed her on the horse. He jumped up and sat behind Nicole. Under the escort of a large number of cavalry, they headed towards his own Marquis Mansion.

All along the way, numerous rose petals were sprinkled down and covered all of the four miles long of the red carpet. As the hooves of the horse trampled on those petals, Nicole felt so happy and blessed that she almost fainted...

Far away on the city gate tower, the fat Sky looked at the chaotic cheering crowd in the distance. He sighed and said, "Oh, what do you want me to say? Shall I say 'Lovers eventually got married' or 'Rody is a damn lucky fellow'?"

Andy swallowed a cup of golden alcoholic liquid. He then licked around his lips, smiled, and said, "I think this boy is in trouble. To marry a wife, he has already caused such a massive activity. There are a few more in the house. In future, when he marries, one by one, will he not die of exhaustion?"

An eccentric voice said angrily, "What is so good about that boy!

It is like 'a stalk of fresh flower stuck into the cow dung'!" She was Concubine Ruolan.

Ruolan looked sideways at the two old guys. Ever since she was under house arrest at the Imperial Palace, she had always been by the side of those two guys. In Ruolan's mind, that Emperor of the Radiant Empire was a little strange. That fat warrior was also very weird. The two of them, one was the Emperor while the other was a warrior with terrifying strength. However, they both seemed like lunatics. When there was nobody around, the two would even curse and laugh at each other. It was completely without even a little bit of an Emperor's dignity.

That fat Sky took a look at Ruolan. In his heart, he felt that this fierce woman somehow seemed decent to him. The way she talked was very pleasant. Even when they quarreled and bickered it was in line with his temperament. He could not help but smile and say, "Old man, it is about time. I think you, as the host of the wedding, should go there already."

As soon as he finished, he looked at Ruolan again. "You guy, don't you dislike that boy, Rody? I think you are unable to defeat him. However, you can take advantage of today's wedding and it will not be difficult to get him drunk. Do you dare?"

Ruolan opened his eyes and stared. "Why not? Do you think I will be afraid of that pretty boy?"

Fatty patted his huge thighs and said, "Well, today, if you can get that boy drunk until he crawled, then I will teach you a set of tricks!"

Andy gave Sky a cold look and lightly said, "Very good, if you, Fat Lady, succeed, I will also teach you a top-notch magic."

Ruolan rolled her eyes but said, "I am not interested in your whatever shit magic. If you give me a few of the beauties in the Palace, then that will be good enough."

With a chuckle, the mouthful of wine that the Old Skeleton just drank, accidentally spurted out. It splashed right on Fatty's face.

Chapter 317: Rody's Happy Life

The grand wedding of Miss Nicole, the eldest daughter of the Tulip Family, had become the topic of enthusiastic discussion for the common people as well as the aristocrats in the Imperial Capital for a very long time. In addition, several newspapers in the Imperial Capital also published extensive propaganda on this.

Even members of the royal family also admired the gorgeous wedding and the extent of its lavishness. That was coupled by the strong support of the military force that allowed the most powerful army of the Empire, the 'Wolf Fang' of the 'Lightning God's Whip' to serve as guards of honor. The formidable marshal of the Empire and the great Emperor of the Empire personally acted as host and witness of the marriage. That kind of arrangement could be considered unprecedented and never to be duplicated.

Of course, in the eyes of some resolute people, they also saw that little bit of subtle differences...

As everyone knew, regardless whether it was the Roland Continent in the north or the Radiant Empire, people believed in religion. The religious bodies of the two continents were doctrinally different and mutually regarded the other party as blasphemers. However, at least in the Radiant Empire, the Church was still the state religion and had supreme status. Religious rights were even on par with imperial power. Right from the Emperor to aristocrat ministers of the Empire, they were all believers of God.

However, in that grand wedding, whether it was the great Duke of the Tulip Family or the mysterious Marquis Rody, no one invited the clergymen to be witnesses of the marriage!

For all followers of the religion, their marriages must be conducted in the church and presided by the clergy. Only then could it be considered as an official ceremony. However, that

wedding that affected the political landscape of the Empire actually did not have any participation of the clergy. In fact, they were even not invited to the ceremony!

Moreover, it was quite obvious that His Excellency Marquis Rody was not a follower of God...The Empire was not without non-believers of God. Generally speaking, the Empire allowed people to be non-believers of God, but at the same time did not allow them to believe in other religions. However, in the aristocratic circle in the Empire, there were very few non-believers of God. Moreover, Marquis Rody, who held such a high position, controlled the military power, and also had the trust of His Majesty, actually did not believe in God. That was simply something unheard of.

Even His Excellency the Duke of the Tulip Family did not seem to believe in God...The significance of such matter was somewhat thought-provoking.

After the wedding, the situation in the Empire was very peaceful. News about the northern Roland Continent came in secretly. Of course, all those news were deliberately blocked under the command of the higher authority of the Empire.

The war in the Roland Continent had started and the Sauron Kingdom became the leader of the alliance of more than a dozen kingdoms of the Roland Continent. They had gathered millions of troops and, together with the Temple's Holy Knights, have had thirteen large and small skirmishes.

Under the command of General Tiger of the Sauron Kingdom, all of the thirteen military campaigns ended with the defeat of the alliance of kingdoms of the Roland Continent. However, under the command of Tiger, although their huge army suffered certain losses, their strength was not affected. Tiger actually divided the troops of millions into several groups to fight respectively! Such deployment was indeed a very clever move.

From the combat effectiveness of the troops, regardless of

whether it was the Royal Knights of the Sauron Kingdom or the armies of any other kingdoms, they were far from comparable with the elite Holy Knights of the Temple. However, in terms of numbers, there was no doubt that the Temple was at an absolute disadvantage. Tiger had divided the huge army into several groups, but purposely only harassed the enemy and did not give them any chance to make a decisive battle stand. Obviously, he had prepared himself for fighting a war of attrition. At the same time, due to the disadvantage of numbers, the Holy Knights of the Temple were unable to divide their troops...If they were to do so, they would only make their troops, which number only few hundred thousand, weaker and ultimately difficult to avoid the danger of attacks on the reduced numbers.

The Roland Continent was caught in a stalemate. Although there were occasional reports of the war, both sides also did not achieve a decisive victory.

In such a moment, the attitude of the Church of the Radiant Empire was somewhat ambiguous.

Although there were disagreements with the doctrines of the northern Temple, seeing the conflict in the northern Roland Continent between the Temple and the kingdoms, there was a possibility that the Temple would be destroyed. The Church of the Radiant Empire inevitably would have some sympathy.

Due to the fact that the two continents had always been hostile to each other, it was impossible for the Church to intervene in the affairs of the northern continent. However, at that moment, the status of the Church was inevitably a little awkward. Under the leadership of Pope Corsica VI, the churches in all the cities of the Radiant Empire were significantly busier than in the past.

Many activities for winning the hearts of the populace had started, such as distributing holy water and disseminating doctrine. Some bishops even personally went out to all parts of the country to preach and to win over the people.

However, at this point in time, the situation in the Imperial Capital was unsettling.

All officials of the Empire had remained silent! Historically, every large-scale activity of the Church would be officially coordinated by the imperial government. After all, in the Empire, the Church and the imperial government had always mutually supported each other. However, based on the situation now, it seemed that under the instruction of the Emperor, the officialdom of the Empire stood completely on the sidelines as a spectator and indifferently watched the people from the churches busy running back and forth.

Thinking of the last court event; thinking of the wedding of the Empire's most important figure in the Tulip Family; that people from the Church were not invited; and that His Excellency the Duke of the Tulip Family was actually not a believer of God...With all those added up, the people could not help wondering.

"Let them jump! The higher they jump, the heavier they fall!" Andy sighed. He just casually put aside those reports on the activities of the Church in various places that were sent to him and then picked up a battlefield report from the northwest.

General Elliot of the Northwestern Army personally wrote a report on the battlefield. Five days ago, at the Watts Fortress in the Northwest, the Northwestern Army led by General Elliot, once again, thwarted the army of the Great Moon Kingdom led by Reuenthal. That time, the military objective was very successful. General Elliot killed a total of twenty-five thousand grassland cavalry. As in the past, he did not spare any prisoners...All were executed!

Elliot's iron-fist approach was undoubtedly the most suitable way to deal with those wolves in the grassland. Reuenthal had repeatedly invaded for such a long /time but had always been foiled by Elliot. It was said that the Dragon Plateau had already started to find their losses gradually intolerable!

The Northwest Army had also suffered huge losses, but the original Northwest Army had been re-established earlier and reorganized and expanded repeatedly. The Empire was almost an endless source of soldiers compared to the grassland where the population was too sparse.

Andy smiled after reading the battlefield report. He immediately drafted an order and gave it to a chamberlain to send it down.

"The Empire is not without talent. However, under the jurisdiction of the original muddleheaded Abbas XI, it would be a wonder if the nation was not subjugated." Andy smiled and stretched himself lazily. "Very true...It is really tiring to be an Emperor. This old man here really cherish those days when I was sleeping all day."

Andy waved his hand to send all the chamberlains in the room away. Only Fatty Sky stayed behind.

"Old Skeleton, the damn old Pope has asked to see you three times. You have always refused to see him. Are you not afraid of offending them?"

Andy laughed. "It is because he saw the fate of the Temple in the Roland Continent. He is inevitably somewhat distressed because he is concerned that the same misfortune may befall the Church and wants to repair our relationship. Hmm, the Radiant Empire is not like those kingdoms of the Roland Continent where all the kingdoms are not cooperative. Here, we have a strong and unified empire! Let him wait. It is not the time to sort them out yet."

After pausing for a while, Andy's smile gradually turned treacherous. "I have ordered all newspapers not to report any activities of the Church! They wish to win over the people, very good, ah. Just let them struggle slowly with it. I will not allow them to get the people's attention! I have already ordered all the newspapers in the Empire to give full coverage of Rody's recent wedding. After the news of the wedding has quieted down, give full

coverage of the war in the northwest! Coincidentally, Elliot has won the war again! Hmm, the Church! They have gone to such great lengths and put in so much effort, but they could not catch the public's attention! It is like throwing a stone into the water. I purposely made sure that there would not be any splash at all!"

Fatty lowered his head and thought for a moment. Suddenly, he said, "Right now, you have been staying out of this matter. Are you waiting for an opportunity?"

Andy nodded. "Yes, I have waited for so long. I think those vampires should also have noticed something, right? I have made it clear when I drew the boundary with the Church. Those vampires must be very happy now. They will seize the opportunity to attack the Church. Let them fight it out. Anyway, I live in the palace now and will pretend that I did not see anything."

Fatty sighed. "Damn you old man. You are always thinking of these ruinous activities all day. I see ..."

Andy shook his head. "This is nothing. Some days later, there will be even better shows to see! By the way, how is Princess Ruolan these days? I am afraid she has gone crazy, getting stuck in captivity."

Fatty immediately revealed a bit of a smile. "That chubby girl has a bit of talent. I taught her a few tricks and she actually was not a slow learner. Now I do not have to bother with her. Every day, she would hide in the secret room to practice...This person is somewhat interesting. She actually has quite a bit of the charm that I had when I was young. Even the Fighting Energy Style that I created...She actually mastered it faster than I did then..."

...

In the fief of the Tulip Family of the Empire, at the outskirts of West Hill of the capital city of Westwood Province was the Tulip Family hunting ground.

"Rody, hurry up! There!" Diane stood on a branch of a tree, carrying a bow and excitedly pointing at the distance.

Hearing the shouts of people, a wild fox vigilantly pricked its ears, whizzed into the underbrush and channeled into it.

Swish!

As an air-splitting sound broke out, a sharp arrow bored right into the body of the fleeing wild fox. The beast rolled on the spot twice, then it immediately collapsed and started to twitch.

After a long howl, a gray shadow channeled through like lightning. A huge three-eyed gray wolf had channeled over and bit that wild fox in the mouth. Straightaway, it bit off a piece.

"How dare you!" Diane jumped down from the tree. She pulled out a whistle and fiercely blew it. That three-eyed wolf immediately trembled, shrunk into a mass and buried its head in the ground whimpering. Diane mercilessly flayed it twice with her whip before stopping.

"Enough, Diane, enough." Rody was riding on a black warhorse. He had already put down the bow in his hand as he slowly approached from behind.

He wore a simple warrior outfit. His blue hair was ingeniously pleated into a whip and draped at the back of his head. It was not known whether that was the handiwork of Nicole or Myka.

"Not enough! This guy is always not obedient. I must teach it a good lesson." Diane kicked again before she stopped.

Rody sat on his horse not knowing whether to cry or to laugh. He also did understand how a woman thought. That monster was a captured beast—he had not expected Diane to actually treat it as a pet.

Diane was a beautiful girl, but it was not easy to be her pet. It was ridiculous that Diane was determined to raise that three-eyed wolf to become the first vegetarian wolf in the history! The three-eyed

wolf had not eaten meat for a long time, so naturally, it could not help itself when it saw the prey. Although Rody pitied the wolf, he would not because that beast had provoked that girl, Diane. He could only look sympathetically at the whimpering wretched wolf and keep his mouth shut, not saying anything.

Rody whistled and a night owl flew down from the branch of a tree. The owl was also originally one of the beasts they had snatched from the vampires.

Rody tidied up the prey hanging on the horse. Together with Diane, they went towards the lake in the middle of the hunting ground.

At the lakeside, a simple camp had already been set up. A few fine horses were quietly feeding on grass at the side. Myka and Nicole had already laid out the barbecue grill.

Mouse was sitting by the lakeside alone with her eyes closed, meditating and practicing magic power. In the previous few days, her strength had gradually restored. Although the progress was a little slow, she meditated and practiced magic every day. One fine day, she would be able to restore her powers to the level of the original Black Veil Saint.

They heard a 'plop' sound and a person jumped out of the lake. It was the bodyguard, Randt. His whole body was soaked and he had two big fish in his hands.

He strode onto the shore. He gathered his fighting energy and, in a moment, his wet clothes were completely dry. Myka had already taken over the fish and proceeded to prepare them.

When Rody looked at that scene, he couldn't help but wonder, "Isn't this lake without fishes?"

Nicole looked up and smiled. "Originally, there were none. But after we left last time, I got some people to channel a lot of fry from the surrounding lakes and rivers. After all these days, the

lake is now full of fishes and shrimps."

Rody gave a wry smile. "If you want to eat fish, just bring some directly from outside. Why do you need to go through so much trouble?"

Nicole smiled and stood up. She pulled Rody over and whispered, "It is more fun to catch our own. Otherwise, it is very easy if you just want to eat fish."

Diane had already thrown the prey hanging on the horseback over and Randt caught them, one after another. Immediately, his longsword flashed with a cold light and, within a short while, the preys had been skinned.

The group chatted and laughed, as they prepared the food in a confusing manner. On normal days all of them were waited on by servants, so naturally, they were not used to any kind of kitchen work. It was not until the sun set before they finally finished preparing dinner.

Since Rody's wedding, he took everyone and left the Imperial Capital to come to Westwood Province. He had a carefree and unfettered time here, with nothing eventful every day. He spent all his time with his lovers and was also very happy. He really wished to retire in that forest mountain, no longer caught in the messy matters outside.

He saw Mouse finally open her eyes, stand up and walk towards them. Rody pulled her hand and whispered, "How are things?"

Mouse smiled faintly. "It was quite alright. In the beginning, the progress was a little slow, but these past two days, it was much better."

After she finished, she gently raised her hand and with her fingertips turned out a bunch of small flames. She smiled and said, "Look."

Beside her, Nicole enviously said, "Well, truly a Black Veil Saint.

Although I am a high-level sorcerer, to use the magic of fire, somehow I would need to first recite some incantation. It is very different from your relaxed style."

Mouse blinked her eyes, smiled and said, "You wish to learn sorcery. I will teach you."

Nicole shook her head and smiled, "Let's forget it. My innate sorcery skill differs greatly from yours. Even if I were to practice, I will absolutely not reach your level. It is still better for you to practice properly. In future, if something happens, only you can help Rody. "

Randt handed over a leather bag filled with fine wine. Rody lifted his head and drank a few mouthfuls. Excitement had completely filled him. He smiled and said, "It has been a long time ever since I had such a carefree feeling. Perhaps it is better to stay here tonight and not go back."

Next to him was Myka, who smiled and whispered, "If you wish to stay, then let's stay."

After she finished speaking, she took out a little harp. She gently fiddled a few times with her slender fingers and, immediately, a stream of wonderful musical notes flowed from her fingers. Myka gently opened her lips and started singing softly.

Everyone stopped whatever they were doing and looked at Myka. Myka's voice was pleasant. Accompanied by the evening breeze, it intoxicated the people who listened to it.

When the song had ended, everyone was still reflecting, but Diane suddenly shouted, "Really infuriating!"

Myka gave her a glance and held back her laughter, "Why are you mad again?"

Diane frowned and said, "Miss Nicole is so refined, beautiful and open-minded. Myka has unparalleled talent in singing and dancing. Mouse excels in magic. Except for me, I am good at

nothing!"

Nicole smiled slightly and said, "You have swordsman skills and you are a powerful warrior. As far as this is concerned, we cannot compare with you."

Diane rolled her eyes and said, "Yes, come, Randt, let's fight!"

After saying that, she rolled up her sleeves and pulled out a dagger. She then headed towards Randt for the challenge.

The tall and sturdy Randt was silent. He did not even dare look at Diane, as if he was a wooden stake standing there.

Myka pulled Diane, smiling as she said, "You are actually very smart. Rody is the strongest here. Why don't you challenge him?"

Diane covered her mouth and smiled, "Although I am not smart, I am not stupid either. With my ability, I am only able to bully Randt. How would I dare challenge the master of 'Domain Power'?"

Rody sat at one side and just smiled. Looking at the moonlight in the sky, he just felt that life's happiness could not exceed this. He only hoped that this moment could last for a long time.

In the midst of the jungle, a horse galloped over from the distance. On the horse was an Imperial Guard. That warrior had rushed over, then he jumped off his horse and respectfully said, "Your Excellency Marquis, something has happened in Westwood Province. Please return immediately..."

Rody sighed. He stood up and looked at Nicole and the others. "What happened again?"

Chapter 318: Riots

The commanding officer of West Hill City's Public Security Force was having a terrible headache right now.

Today, something strange happened in the city. A crowd surrounded the God's church in West Hill City and rioted. The rioters were mostly civilians who seemed to have come from villages and towns neighboring West Hill. The angry mob, clad in clothes made of coarse cloth, surrounded the church and some were even crying out loud for justice.

The whole of Westwood Province was the fief of the Tulip family, and West Hill was the capital of Westwood Province. Being the commanding officer here, he surely would have some capability and not a good-for-nothing.

Once the commanding officer got the news, he immediately rushed to the scene with a team of soldiers, but he realized the situation was nothing of the ordinary.

First of all, the actions of the civilians seemed moderate. They surrounded the church without doing anything violent, just shouting and cursing but did not actually launch an attack. Most of them sat there in silent demonstration, while some went on to preach loudly to the onlooking West Hill citizens about how the religion of God cheated them...

When the commanding officer received the news about people attacking the church, he immediately came here with heavily armed soldiers, but then he found out that things were not as bad as he imagined. It was just that the roads around the church were congested, but the church remained safe and sound. The mob did not seem like they were going to break into the church. The church's tightly closed doors were not untouched, and not even a single piece of glass on the windows was damaged.

It seemed like the main purpose of these rioters was not to wreck

the church, but...just to create an impact!

In the face of the soldiers who rushed to the scene, these people automatically made way for them. The commanding officer sternly requested them to disperse, but the villagers remained unmoved—he, of course, could not order his men to go forth and tackle these villagers.

Right now, Miss Nicole was in West Hill! And Marquis Rody was also here. If there were any bloodshed at this time, the first one to get into trouble would be him!

The use of force would only be a deterrent and not a solution! This was the first thought that popped into the commanding officer's mind.

However, the wrath of the church bishop would not be easily quelled.

As West Hill was the capital of Westwood and Westwood Province the fief of the Tulip family, according to the Empire's law as well as out of respect for the Duke of the Tulip Family, the Empire's army was not stationed here. Hence, the church did not have Flaming Warriors group stationed here too! There were only security forces loyal to the Tulip Family in the whole Westwood Province.

Hence, when confronted with these disgruntled villagers surrounding the church, the Bishop had no way of driving them off. The bishop did not naively think he could influence the angry masses with the power of God. Although he was a powerful magician, when faced with hundreds of angry villagers holding sickles and hunting forks—it was impossible to reason with these people.

The commanding officer ordered his men to guard outside the church, and he brought a few confidants inside to meet the bishop.

"Your Eminence, my men are now guarding outside. There is no

need to worry that the crowd will break in for the moment. However, can you please tell me why are they doing this?" The commanding officer's brows drew together.

"How would I know?!" The bishop's face was pale due to anger, "I request that you, the commanding officer of the security forces in West Hill, order your men to disperse the mob outside! And arrest their leader!"

"I'm sorry." The commanding officer smiled wryly. "I do not have the authority to do so. You are familiar with the Empire's laws. Although those people outside surrounded the church, they have not done anything which violates the Empire's law as they have not launched any actual attack on the church—if they do so, my men will immediately take the necessary actions by force, but right now they are only surrounding the church, yelling and shouting. You know very well that standing on the streets shouting and yelling, though such behavior causes you displeasure, the Empire's law did not specify what crime it is to do so."

The bishop was so angry that his voice trembled as he spoke, "You are trying to evade your duties! Those people outside daringly besiege the church, this is blasphemy against the dignity of God's religion! Disrespect to the Gods! According to the code of God's religion..."

"If so, Your Eminence can go ahead and punish them according to the code...We are soldiers under the direct control of the Tulip Family, not the Flaming Warriors troops of God's Church!" The look on the commanding officer's face became somewhat hostile. He did not want to work for the bishop, especially when his future was concerned.

"Bastard! If our Flaming Warriors are here, will I still tolerate the mob outside?!" The bishop was almost roaring. He snarled and said, "If it is reported to your superior that such a thing has happened under your rule, I'm afraid you won't be able to get away with this! After all, besieging the church is a serious matter, do you

think..."

"Very well!" The commanding officer sighed. "I'll go out and negotiate with them, but if they do not attack the church first, my men will not resort to military actions. After all, they are the subjects of the Tulip Family's fief; I cannot intensify the conflict!"

The commanding officer immediately went out to negotiate with the villagers, but it was obvious that they were given guidance by somebody secretly. They refused to pay attention to the commanding officer. The clamorous crowd ignored him as they only had one demand: They wanted the bishop to come forward and give an explanation!

The commanding officer knew at once that things were not that simple, so he dispatched his men to ask for instructions from Marquis Rody—since the Duke of the Tulip Family was far away at the Imperial Capital, naturally the supreme leader here was Marquis Rody, the Northern Army Regiment Commander, whom at the same time was the brother-in-law of the Duke.

When Rody received the news, he immediately rode over. The soldiers led the way for him and the crowd instantly parted to let him enter.

Rody frowned as he looked at these enraged villagers. He strode up the steps in front of the church and bellowed, "Quiet!"

He used his fighting energy and his body emitted a light golden flame. With the effect of the fighting energy, his voice rang throughout the place. The crowd soon quieted down and their gaze fell on Rody.

"I'm the Regiment Commander of the Empire's Northern Army, Marquis Rody of the Empire. Why are you gathered here creating disturbances! I now order that you send a representative to speak to me, and tell me your demands. If not, I will order my soldiers to dispel all of you!"

Rody's authoritative gaze swept across the crowd.

The crowd calmed down and, a moment later, an old man walked up among the villagers. His hair was grizzled and his face had the imprints of age, but the pair of eyes looked somewhat sly.

He bowed and said in a loud voice, "Marquis Rody, we are from various villages west of West Hill City. Those standing here are all loyal subjects of the Tulip Family!" He paused before continuing, "I apologize for our impulsive actions today, but please believe us. We did not intend to offend the mighty Duke of the Tulip Family. Standing in front of you are a group of angry people conned by filthy psychics, and all they want is justice!"

At this moment, the doors of the church behind Rody opened. The bishop had seen Rody coming from the church's windows. He heaved a sigh of relief, came out from the church and stood beside Rody.

As soon as he came out, his black robe immediately caused a commotion among the crowd. The people who had calmed down started shouting angrily again.

"Quiet!" Rody yelled. He turned to look at the bishop standing behind him, "You must be the bishop of West Hill."

"Yes, Marquis Rody. Thank you for coming, please order your brave soldiers to disperse this mob!" The bishop's face was full of rage.

"No way," Rody simply replied as he gazed coldly at the bishop and said in a low voice, "you've seen for yourself. There are thousands of them. I do not want my soldiers to cause any bloodshed here."

The bishop's face changed. He could lash out his anger at a commanding officer, but with his status, when confronted with Rody who held powerful a post as the Empire's Marquis, he dared not to be rude to him.

Rody ignored him and turned his gaze to the crowd, saying loudly, "All right, now that the bishop and I are here, tell me what exactly you are angry about!"

Once again, the old man spoke, "My dear Marquis Rody, we are originally devout believers of the God's religion and the Supreme God, but three days ago..."

Although the old man looked a bit nervous, he managed to maintain his composure. He was able to give a detailed account of what happened.

Three days ago, a group of clergies from the God's religion came to their town. There were about thirty or more of them, all wearing the black robe of the clergy, and among them were two magicians.

These people preached in the town in the name of the religion and gathered the villagers at the town's square...

"You see, these are the pieces of evidence of them deceiving us!" As the old man was saying angrily, behind him several villagers brought forth a huge shabby chest and placed it in front of Rody.

The box was open, and it was filled with all sorts of weird stuff.

Anger was written all over the old man's face. He shouted, "Look at this bone! The psychics claimed that this is a sacred bone, and sold it to us at the price of ten gold. And this..." The old man held up a cup made of gold. "They told us this is the Holy Grail, this too was sold to us at the price of ten gold. And this...which we later discovered was chicken feather...They have the guts to tell us that this is an angel's feather, and cheated us ten gold for this!

"And these atonement talismans!" The old man grabbed a bunch of objects made of paper from the chest. "They claimed that these were blessed by the bishop and sold them to us at one gold each...but all these things are fake!"

Rody looked blankly at these objects, and before he could speak, a

roar of anger came from the bishop standing behind him, "This is a frame-up! Slander!"

The bishop's face reddened due to anger. He bellowed, "I've never sent anyone to your town, and I did not...did not commit any fraudulent act!" He shouted angrily, "Marquis Rody! Please order the immediate arrest of these thugs!"

Rody's eyes narrowed as he looked at him and said slowly, "Your Eminence, he's not finished yet."

The old man took his time and asked loudly, "Your Eminence, you said we are slandering, but there are so many of us, those of whom are civilians from seven different towns and villages. Are you saying that we have walked dozens of miles just to come here and slander you?"

Rody's heart thumped and he asked in a deep voice, "Did you just say seven towns and villages?"

The old man answered loudly, "Yes! When we realized we were cheated, we immediately sent some men to go search for those filthy psychics, but we found out that several villages and towns around us were cheated too. Those psychics went around cheating people to gain money. There are a total of seven towns and villages ripped off by them, and a total of two thousand golds swindled!"

As he was speaking, the crowd at the back started yelling again. All of a sudden, the crowd was consumed with rage, and those agitated ones even shouted slogans like 'Hang the psychic!'

Rody looked deeply at the bishop behind him who was ashen, and then turned to stare at the old man in front of him, "So this is why you all gathered at West Hill? And surrounded the church?"

"All we want is justice!" The old man seemed to be afraid of Rody's stern gaze, but he plucked up his courage to speak out. He pondered for a while and added, "If our wish is not fulfilled today, then we're not leaving!"

"Yes! Not leaving!"

"Not leaving!"

The crowd behind roared.

Rody smiled lightly and said in a loud voice, "Okay, I've understood what happened. I promise you in the name of the Marquis of the Empire, that I will investigate this matter thoroughly and give you justice!" He paused for a moment before continuing, his tone gradually became stern, "But you need to disperse immediately and go home! You are not allowed to stay here and continue creating disturbances!"

"But..." The old man seemed like he had something else to say.

The bishop, who was standing behind, was reluctant and he shouted in a hurry, "Marquis Rody, you can't let them go! These people are disrespectful to the Gods, and they even framed the sacred clergies, they need to be arrested!"

Rody stopped him, coldly saying, "Shut up!"

The muscles on the bishop's puffy face trembled when he saw Rody's chilling glare. He almost went limp and fell to the floor.

Rody's hands pressed on the scimitar's blade hung on his waist. He said in a deep voice, "I now order you to disperse immediately! And then send a representative to go back with me. I promise you in my name that I will definitely give you a satisfactory explanation!"

The old man was a bit hesitant, "Marquis Rody, it's not that we do not believe you. After all, our loyalty towards the Duke of the Tulip Family is beyond question, but these psychics are too cunning..."

Rody thought for a moment and his gaze suddenly fell on the commanding officer, "Are you the commanding officer?"

"Yes!" The commanding officer immediately bowed and

answered respectfully.

"How many men do you have now?"

"There are a total of two thousand soldiers in the public security stations in the whole of West Hill."

"Good!" Rody's lips curled slightly, "Now I order you to personally to lead five hundred soldiers and guard outside the church starting from today. From now on, without my orders, nobody is allowed to enter or exit the church...and I mean nobody! Do you understand?"

"Ah..." The commanding officer was stunned for a moment, but he immediately sensed Rody's glare. He clenched his teeth and replied, "Yes!"

"Marquis Rody!" The bishop jumped. "You...How dare you besiege the church of God? Are you trying to keep all the clergies in captivity?!"

Rody smiled lightly, "You're wrong to say so. I'm just dispatching the men to protect you. You've seen it for yourself, to ensure the safety of you and your noble priests, from now on you cannot take a single step out of the church...Or else, I will not be able to guarantee your safety!"

"This is house arrest! It's blasphemy against the Gods! It's..." The bishop leaped to his feet and roared, but Rody ignored him. Instead, he ordered flatly, "Escort the bishop inside for a good rest."

The bishop spluttered and howled with rage, "I want an appeal! I want to report your actions to His Majesty the Pope! You will be punished! You..."

"Shut up, you hog!" Rody replied icily. "The Pope? Humph! I'm Marquis of the Empire, I'm only loyal to His Majesty the Emperor."

He cast an impatient look at the commanding officer, "Why are you still standing here? Am I not clear enough?"

The commanding officer's heart pounded. He immediately unsheathed his sword and yelled. Two of his soldiers went forward to hold the bishop one on each side and 'escorted' him into the church.

Rody sneered before turning back to face the old man standing beneath, "Now, can you ask your men to disperse?"

The old man's face paled. He did not expect this young Marquis to have such courage to order the siege of the church.

But he was still anxious about his mission. He smiled wryly. "Marquis Rody, they are not my men, they are just a bunch of poor civilians who were cheated. But I have some prestige among the villagers, I will persuade them to leave immediately."

"Good." Rody nodded and smile, "I'll give you two hours. After dispersing the crowd, my men will bring you to the Tulip's mansion to see me."

When he finished, Rody left behind a few warriors from the Imperial Guards and rode back on his horse.

There was a strange smile on his face. He laughed and thought to himself, 'Old Skeleton, you've played it big. By framing and incriminating, you're damaging the religion's prestige among the common folks. Humph, this is certainly ingenious.'

Chapter 319: Show of Authority (1)

Rody had just arrived at the Tulip's mansion, but Nicole had already come running out to him, her brows drawn together and there was a worried look on her face.

"Rody, I've heard that you asked your men to besiege the church? You've held the clergies captivity in the church?"

Rody smiled.

"But isn't it way out of line to do so? After all, the Empire has never besieged a church and imprison the people of the church for centuries! Even during the coup in the era of the Great Emperor Abbas, nobody dared to be disrespectful of the church."

Rody thought carefully and replied with a smile, "Don't worry, it will be fine. Someone will be more than happy to see me do this..." He paused before mumbling to himself, "I'm afraid the old rascal has predicted that I will help him fan up the flames of trouble, which is why he sent his men here to create trouble in West Hill instead of other places."

After explaining in detail to Nicole to lessen her worry, Rody went in to change and had some food. Although Nicole was comforted by Rody, she still seemed a bit heavy-hearted. On the contrary, Diane, who could not care less, said, "Those rascals from the Church, what's the big deal about imprisoning them? If it was me, I would have stabbed each and every one of them with a sword!"

Rody could not hold back his laughter, but he immediately remembered that Diane was from the Silver Moon Tribe, which meant she was the true descendant of Kara. The Church was their absolute enemy, as they had exterminated her entire tribe and kingdom.

After drinking Myka's concoction of oriental flavor tea, Rody

walked into one of the studies in the mansion. He soon sent someone to bring over the old man who was the representative of the villagers.

The old man had arrived at the Tulip's mansion moments ago and had been waiting outside all the while. As he entered, he tried to maintain his composure to look calm, but his eyes wandered around.

Rody chuckled and said, "Please have a sit. I've always respected elders."

Rody paused then asked somewhat casually, "Have those villagers retreated?"

"Marquis Rody, in the face of your commanding presence, nobody in West Hill City dared to defy your orders. You may rest assured since as soon as you left just now, everyone immediately dispersed, and they asked me to thank you for being just!"

Rody laughed coldly, "Being just? I don't think so."

The old man's eyes flickered around and flattery remarks spilled out from his mouth. Rody did not interrupt him but listened quietly until he finished talking. Then suddenly, his brows snapped together and an impulsive murderous aura radiated from his body. He roared, "How dare you!"

The old man was startled and he almost fell down from his chair. His voice was trembling as he asked, "Marquis Rody, what do you mean by that?"

Rody's eyes narrowed. His expression remained calm, but the chilling energy emitted from him caused sweat to trickle from the old man's forehead.

"What's your name?"

"Uhm..."

While he was hesitating, Rody bellowed, "Speak up! What's your

name?!"

"Old Lennon!" Rody's bellow caused the old man to stand up on his feet involuntarily and answered in reflex.

"Where are you from?"

"Zolen suburbs of West Hill Province."

"Age!"

"Fifty-four!"

The aura surrounding Rody became more and more intense, and his questions shot out faster and faster. The old man was forced to the verge of suffocation. Rody's previous questions were of no importance, but he asked his final question in one breath, "What's your post in Andy Bulletin?"

"Regional editor contact person...ah!!!" Before the old man could think deeply, the words slipped from his mouth in reflex. He suddenly shrieked, his face went white and he stared at Rody aghast.

A smile crept up Rody's face. He stood up slowly and walked to the old man, giving him a pat on his shoulder. He then said gently, "All right, you need not be shocked. Since you work for Andy Bulletin, whatever you say here is safe."

The old man's mouth was wide open, and his voice shook as he said, "You...you're a devil!"

Rody shook his head and smiled, "As I said, you don't have to be afraid."

He sat down again, "How many of you are in West Hill for this act?"

"What...what act?"

Rody smiled lightly and said, "Of course I'm referring to what you guys have been doing in the towns and villages around West Hill in the past few days! Cheating and igniting anger among

civilians, and then framing up the God's religion, how brilliant!"

The old man almost died of fright, and he was unable to utter another word.

Rody sighed and stared at him. He then said slowly, "Why, you still don't trust me? If I wanted to harm you, I wouldn't have asked my men to besiege the church today! Isn't this sufficient to reassure you?"

The old man hesitated for a moment, the look on his face seemed like he was having some inner struggle. Finally, he replied in a hoarse voice, "All right, Marquis Rody, what do you want?"

Rody shook his head and said slowly, "You're wrong. Now it's not about what I want! But instead, what do you want! Clearly, it's you, not me, who needs help! I must admit that you're very cautious and also loyal, but to do such things, it's not enough to just rely on these. I suppose your men must be hiding somewhere now? But what happened today has blown up. Even though there are no Flame Warriors in West Hill now, once the Church received the news, the Flame Warriors troops would arrive here within three days. At that time, do you think your men can escape from being hunted down by the fierce warriors?"

Rody's smile was serene, "Okay, I repeat, while in here, you can absolutely trust me! In fact, it was obviously prearranged for you to be sent here and to create trouble at my place."

The room fell into dead silence. After some time, the old man finally sighed and smiled wryly. "I'm overwhelmed, Marquis Rody. It seems like you really are one of our men...You already knew everything, and if you really wanted to harm us, you would have directly arrested me and sent me to the interrogation chamber. Well, my men are currently hiding in a place not far from West Hill City."

"How many of you?"

"Eleven, including me."

"Are there magicians and warriors among you?"

"Two warriors and two magicians, including me. I'm also a magician."

Rody nodded satisfactorily, "That's right, only magicians can imitate the Light Series Spells to deceive those civilians. What is your mission? To create trouble and then frame the church?"

The old man pondered and replied with a bitter smile, "As a matter of fact, we don't really know much, it's just that we are absolutely loyal to the organization. Our mission is to complete today's task and the following order was to stay put in West Hill. We were told that there will be further arrangements later on—now it seems like Marquis Rody, you are our next step."

Rody sighed and massaged his temple. He gave him a bitter smile. "You guys are so good at messing around...Hmm, no, your boss is really good at messing around. He knows very well that I'm off duty, but he deliberately created trouble for me. Humph, is it because there are no Flame Warriors at the Tulip Family's fief, so he thinks that he can do whatever he like here?"

Rody was silent for a moment, his fingers lightly tapping on the table. He finally let out a sigh and said, "Let's do it this way. You immediately go fetch all your men and come to the Tulip Mansion tonight. I suggest that you hide here; because even if the Pope comes here personally, he will not dare to search this place. Before the sun sets tonight, I want to see all eleven of you standing here unharmed! And that money that you swindled, and the stolen goods, make sure they are hidden properly! Do you understand?"

The old man's eyes glinted cunningly. He bowed deeply, "Dear Marquis Rody, please do not worry, my boys have been rigorously trained! Another thing, tonight, can I borrow one of the studies here?"

"Hmm?"

"Hehe, I need to write a detailed report as soon as possible and send it back to the bulletin's office in the Imperial City. I need to tell the public about the scandal regarding the Church which has happened here!" An evil smile spread across the old man's face.

Rody looked him up and down carefully before waving his hand, "Okay! After you've finished writing let me have a look first, and then...I will dispatch a cavalry to help you deliver it to the Imperial City under the pretense of delivering battlefield report."

"That's brilliant, Marquis Rody!" the old man complimented aptly.

'Humph! Old Skeleton, this was already in your plan too, right!'

Three days later, a troop of two thousand men from the Flame Warriors arrived at the West Hill Province! These Flame Warriors clad in weird uniforms immediately attracted the civilians to gather and watch. The Tulip Family's fief had never seen any other troops of the Empire for generations, and the civilians were attracted to their weird uniforms. But when the crowd knew that these armed forces were under the command of the church, their gaze gradually became disdainful.

Someone in the crowd shouted, "These are the goons of the Church's bloodsuckers!"

The crowd immediately boiled and buzzed.

"Stooges! Get out of West Hill!"

"Drive them out!"

"Don't let them defile the Tulip's sacred land!"

All of a sudden, several eggs and tomatoes shot out from the crowd. This action immediately acted as a reminder to the cursing crowd, and subsequently more objects came flying.

The Flame Warriors dared not attack the civilians. Moreover,

there was a large group of security forces ‘protecting’ them throughout the journey, so they could only cover their heads and scamper around. The face of the chieftain of the Flame Warriors was dark in rage.

The Church’s sacred Flame Warriors was an army protecting the holy church! They represented the supreme dignity of God’s religion! When did they receive such ‘courteous treatment’ in any other place in the Empire before?

When they finally broke through the crowd and came to the church of West Hill City, they were stunned by the scene before their eyes!

Was this still the honorable, supreme holy site where the Gods were worshipped?

Chapter 320: Show of Authority (2)

A deep moat was dug around the perimeter of the church! And outside it was circled by a fence of barbed wires! Groups of armored soldiers guarded the place, with swords in their hands and a murderous look on their faces! Besides that, at the church's entrance, two men clad in clerical uniforms were hung on a pillar while two soldiers were lashing at them severely with the whips in their hands!

The men from the Flaming Warriors felt like they had never seen such...such treacherous scene!

In the fury of anger, they almost wanted to immediately unsheathe their swords and put up a fight with those evil soldiers who dared to savagely beat the servants of God!

However, a smiling officer intercepted them. He held aloft a personal order autographed by the honorable, mighty Supreme Commander of the Empire, the Empire's God of War, Duke of the Tulip Family's brother-in-law, the hero of the Empire, the hot, new star of the Empire, Marquis Rody!

Marquis Rody's orders were clearly written on the personal order—[Nobody is allowed to enter or exit the church! Those who defy the orders of the Marquis will be immediately arrested and whipped twenty lashes! For repeat offenders, soldiers are authorized to kill them on the spot!]

The officer said with a smile, "I'm the commanding officer of West Hill. I was given orders by Marquis Rody to punish these two guys who defied His Excellency's order. They have to receive twenty lashes. Their punishment is not over yet, please step back."

The chieftain of the Flaming Warriors was so mad that he almost vomited blood. He roared in rage, "What order did they defy?"

The commanding officer shook his head and sighed, "They tried

to escape from the church, so we had to..."

At that moment, noticing the presence of their own warrior's group, one of the guys who could not bear it anymore gathered all his energy and yelled, "We were just going to the market..."

"Shut up!" the commanding officer turned and bellowed fiercely. He shot a warning glance, and the soldier who was whipping increased the strength of his lashes. The poor guy screeched and his voice shook beyond recognition. He was not able to utter another word again.

When the commanding officer turned around again, the fierce look on his face immediately vanished and was replaced with a respectful smile, "Your Excellency, you must be tired after traveling so far. Marquis Rody has arranged a residence for you just nearby, and cool tea will be served...Would you like to go there and have some rest?"

Considering that he could not afford to offend that Marquis, if he could, the chieftain of the Flaming Warriors had only one thought in his mind right now—to punch the daylight out of this plump, smiling face in front of him!

After some negotiations, the commanding officer's expression became cold, "To release them is out of the question! Marquis Rody's military orders cannot be revoked! If I release them without permission, the next moment, I will be the one hung up here and getting whipped! If you have any questions, please discuss it with Marquis Rody!"

The chieftain of the Flaming Warriors was desperately anxious. He finally bowed his head and pleaded, "In that case, can you please drop the whipping of these two first?"

"Impossible!" the commanding officer replied coldly, "In the entire Westwood Province, in West Hill City, I now only take orders from Marquis Rody. If you want me to release these people, please go to the duke's mansion and ask for Marquis Rody's

personal order. Once you have that, I will release them immediately!"

The chieftain of the Flaming Warriors was so mad that he almost drew his sword. Suddenly, the topmost window of the church opened. The pale-looking bishop stuck his head out. When he saw the Flaming Warriors, it was as if he saw his loved ones as he shrieked 'Help!'.

The chieftain of the Flaming Warriors was not an idiot after all. His ranking in the church was quite high, or else he would not have been sent here to deal with this matter. For someone of such high position, it was impossible that he could not see clearly the current situation. He rationally stopped his angry warriors from drawing out their swords.

The current situation was obvious. The surrounding soldiers from the public security forces were already lined up in battle formation. They were now looking at him viciously. Although he had more men, if a bloodshed crisis erupted between the Church's and the Empire's armies at a time like this, he would not be able to bear the responsibility at all.

"Marquis Rody's personal order?" The chieftain of the Flaming Warriors said through clenched teeth, "I'll go see him right now, but..." He lowered his voice and said pleadingly, "Can you suspend the whippings first? I'll be gone for at most one...no...half an hour! I'll be back within half an hour!"

"In that case..." The commanding officer gave him a friendly smile and nodded. "I have respect for the Gods too. I'll give you half an hour, even if that means I risk myself getting whipped by Marquis Rody. Please hurry up and come back quickly!"

The chieftain of the Flaming Warriors sighed. He picked the most level-headed deputy to stay behind with the group, and gave him a strict order to not start a fight no matter what happened!

Then, he brought twenty of his confidants and rode towards the

Duke's Mansion.

Less than five minutes after they left, a sly smile spread across the commanding officer's face. He suddenly glared at the soldiers who stopped whipping and snarled, "Idiots! Marquis Rody had ordered for punishment. How dare you stop! Do you wish to die? Keep whipping them hard!"

His words pissed off the officer from the Flaming Warriors. He was about to go forth and argue, but the commanding officer had already turned away from him. He deliberately stretched himself and walk towards the back, muttering loudly as he walked, "Such a hot day, and instead of resting at the back, I'm here standing under the hot sun, am I out of my mind?"

He gave one last order, "Buck up! Marquis Rody has ordered. If you let even a single one escape, you shall bear the consequences!"

Hundreds of soldiers gave a majestic roar. They unsheathed their swords and scowled viciously at the Flaming Warriors standing in front of them.

The officer from the Flaming Warriors went white. He kept in mind the chieftain's orders and dared not make any moves. The square quieted down for a while, except for the shrieks of 'Ah!' and 'Ouch!' from the two clergymen being whipped.

On the other hand, the chieftain of the Flaming Warriors, together with his twenty capable subordinates, galloped to the Duke's Mansion. However, this was not a place where they could come and go at will. He and his men stood outside and waited patiently at a small side door for fifteen minutes before a servant came running out and informed them lazily, "Marquis Rody is not around. He left to the hunting grounds with Miss Nicole for hunting early this morning!"

When he finished speaking, he did not even look at them but immediately closed the side door.

"This is too much!" The chieftain of the Flaming Warriors almost crushed his teeth. He wanted to break in, but this was the Duke of the Tulip Family's mansion!

Tulip!

Speaking of this name, whoever offended the duke and his family in the Empire, without the need of the duke to take any actions himself, his fanatical supporters could have drowned the offender just by spitting. Moreover, if he offended the Tulip Family, the Pope would tie him up and personally hand him over to them to resolve the issue...

He forcefully swallowed the blood which he nearly spat out and climbed on his horse with hatred. He roared, "Go to the hunting ground!"

He whipped his horse hard and shouted, "I don't believe I can't meet that Marquis Rody today!"

After rushing to the hunting ground, the men were already exhausted. They had been rushing about for a few days before arriving in West Hill, and before they could rest, they were running around again for such a long period of time. Seeing the hunting ground's entrance from afar, the Flaming Warriors' chieftain finally felt slightly relieved.

Suddenly, a group of fifty cavalymen came galloping towards them, and stopped fifty feet away, blocking the entrance.

"Halt! This is Tulip's private hunting ground, how dare you trespass! Do you wish to die?!"

The Flaming Warriors' gaze fell on the men. They realized that these cavalymen looked extraordinarily tough, and each of them was not wearing the Imperial Guard's armor. Instead, they were clad in black armor with a helmet resembling a wolf head, and in their hands were long, oddly-shaped scimitars! Each of them had a murderous look on their face. Although there were only dozens of

cavalrymen lined up here, an oppressive aura radiated from them as though standing in front was a mighty army!

The Lightning God's Whip! They were the legendary 'Wolf Fang' of the Lightning God's Whip!

The chieftain of the Flaming Warriors took a deep breath and said, "We are the Flaming Warriors of the Church. I am the Church's First Class warrior, Honorary Assistant Regiment Commander Strehl..."

"I don't care whatever group you are. This is not a place where you can trespass. Get out of here immediately!" the leading officer of the Lightning God's Whip roared.

Swoosh!

After a neat swoosh sound, fifty Wolf Fang warriors simultaneously drew their scimitars, and fifty battle horses moved one step forward at the same time.

The smell of death was in the air!

This was a genuine murderous aura! This kind of aura could not be acquired from the training field! It was cultivated as a result of the experience of life and death in real battlefields and bloody fights.

"Wait...wait a minute!" Assistant Regimental Commander Strehl shouted frantically, "I'm from the Church! I need to meet Marquis Rody for something urgent! Please..."

The officer of the Lightning God's Whip glanced at him with the corner of his eyes and interrupted coldly, "Marquis Rody and Miss Nicole are hunting! Right now, this place is under warzone control! His Excellency has given orders that no matter what, nobody is allowed to enter and disturb him before sunset today! Leave immediately!"

"But..." Strehl panicked.

A chilling light flashed in the eyes of the Lightning God's Whip officer. He suddenly shouted, his voice icy cold, "Wolf Fang!"

"Kill!" Fifty cavalymen bellowed at once, and fifty scimitars were held high in the air! They were prepared to charge forward!

"Those in front listen carefully! According to the Empire's war zone rules, I demand that you leave within ten seconds! If not, you will be killed! One!"

Swoosh!

Once again, fifty battle horses took another step forward simultaneously!

"Two!"

The cavalymen bent down, the eyes beneath their helmets glinted with a bloodthirsty look!

"Three!" The officer of the Lightning God's Whip roared, "Attention Wolf Fang warriors! Target ahead, kill without mercy!"

The men from the Flaming Warriors finally could not stay still anymore. One of Strehl's men gently nudged him and said in a trembling voice, "Your Excellency, we better...We cannot afford to provoke these Wolf Fang warriors, they are a bunch of bloodthirsty lunatics!"

Strehl's heart burnt with rage. He replied stubbornly, "I'm a First Class Warrior of the Church, I don't believe they can defy the laws!"

The Lightning God's Whip officer across him roared, "Four!" He paused, and then bellowed, "Advance!"

Hooves clattered!

Fifty Wolf Fang warriors lined up orderly in a charge array and began moving slowly. The horses' hooves started to trot, gradually closing in on the panic-stricken Flaming Warriors!

The oncoming intense ferocious aura caused Strehl to finally

come to his senses. The opponent meant business! These Wolf Fang warriors were not like the other armies of the Empire! There were already rumors saying that this troop was the Lightning God's Whip's most mysterious elite troop! According to the legends, they could crush the Roland's powerful Holy Knight Regiment, causing the latter to abandon their helmets and armors. Now with only twenty men, if they really engaged in a battle, it was possible that they would be wiped out clean in less than a moment!

"Five!"

Seeing that the opposing cavalymen gathered speed, Strehl gave out a long sigh and yelled, "Retreat!"

The twenty men of the Flaming Warriors were already scared out of their wits. Before the commanding officer's voice died away, they had already turned around their horses and sped off.

A roar of laughter came from the Wolf Fang warriors behind. The officer of the Lightning God's Whip sneered. "Bullshit Flaming Warriors! Turns out that they're just a bunch of garbage!"

In the hunting ground, at the same lakeside, Rody lay on the grass comfortably, looking up the sky in silence.

Nicole was sitting beside him. She could not help but asked, "Rody, is it really appropriate for you to do so?"

"Why would it be inappropriate?" Rody smiled, "We've already decided to sever the relationship with the Church anyway! The Rolands up north were too occupied, they won't have the time to bother us. I think that Old Skeleton wanted to take this opportunity to get rid of the empire's centuries-old lurking danger at one stroke!"

Mouse stopped meditating and opened her eyes suddenly. She laughed. "All right, Nicole. You don't have to worry about these things for Rody. Although this guy looks honest usually, if he is up

to mischief, I'm afraid we are not his match at all."

Nicole sighed. "But there are two thousand men from the Flaming Warriors, and in West Hill, we only have the soldiers from the public security force, are they able to suppress them?" She paused here and turned to look outside the hunting ground. "Right now, the men from the Flaming Warriors must be here looking for you."

Rody flashed her a smile. "They won't be able to enter."

Nicole smiled bitterly. "Are you sure? The person who came must be someone important in the Church. Will the Lightning God's Whip dare to stop them?"

Rody sat up. An arrogant look appeared on his face, and he said without much emotion, "I've personally brought this troop of Wolf Fang warriors to the battlefield! I dare say that, wherever the Tulip's battle flag points, even if the opponent is the Pope, their hooves and scimitars will charge forward without hesitation! Humph! Those second-class followers of the church, it is best if they just get lost. If they refused to leave, they should be dead by now. The scimitars of the Wolf Fang warriors can make do with an extra few drops of blood!"

Chapter 321: Peculiar Loot

"Religion is like a double-edged sword!" Rody sighed and smiled bitterly. "Of course it is useful to control people's mind, but the more sacred it is, the more unacceptable for it to be desecrated. Once the believers realized that the bishops and the servants of Gods whom they've always regarded as sacred and superior are actually a bunch of conmen, such difference will evoke unusual wrath!" Rody's tone gradually became grave, "Such wrath is enough to destroy everything!"

Nicole lowered her head and thought for a moment before saying slowly, "I see, so your plan is to seize this opportunity to defame the Church? A notorious Church will not gain continuous support from the people."

Rody slipped his arm gently around Nicole's waist and smiled. "Okay, we've been on this hunting ground for one whole day, it's time to go back to the church and visit the bishop. The bishop must have slimmed down quite a bit these few days due to depression."

Mouse, who was sitting beside them, sighed and looked at Rody, her expression complicated. "Rody, these methods of dealing with the Church, why didn't you mention it when in the Roland Continent? You've never suggested it to the Sauron King too."

Rody was silent for a moment. He then said in a soft voice, "Mouse, are you blaming me? Now that war has started in the Roland Continent, many will die in this war between the Temple and the various kingdoms. Let me put it this way, the method we are using now, even if I've told the Sauron King about it then, he wouldn't be able to use it against the Temple! The situation in the Roland Kingdom is different from Radiant Empire!"

Inside the West Hill Church, the bishop was very miserable. The soldiers from the public security forces surrounded the church,

making it seem like a prison. Nobody was allowed to enter or leave, including those who were in charge of daily purchase of food supplies for the church.

Initially, the bishop was even afraid that they were planning to let him and the others starve to death in the church. Seeing that those who had been sent out to purchase food were severely punished after attempting negotiations but failed, nobody dared to step out again.

Fortunately, Rody did not want their lives right now. He ordered his soldiers to toss a few pieces of cheap, dried, black bread inside every day.

But since when had the bishop who was used to live an extravagant life suffered such hardship? And none of those high-ranking clergymen around him were true ascetics. After eating three days of coarse food, all of them were already whining, but they dared not make any moves as they were deterred by Marquis Rody's authority.

However, they could tolerate everything else. Even if the food was bad, they could just put up with it, but the soldiers outside not only stopped those inside from leaving, they also stopped those who came to clean up the church, which of course included those carts which handled the toilets!

There were dozens of clergymen stuck in the church for these few days. No matter how little they ate, they still needed to defecate! The toilets in the church were not cleaned for days. Upon stepping inside, one could smell the unconcealed stench around the once-sacred church.

The bishop could only sit about and pray every day. Things were getting out of hand this time, and he knew that even if he could escape doom, he would need to bear huge responsibilities afterward...

He had been waiting for the Flame Warriors day and night, and

when they finally arrived, things did not go as expected by the bishop. That Marquis Rody's attitude was extraordinarily uncompromising. He totally ignored the Church's Flame Warriors and the public security forces' soldiers had no intention to disperse at all. The Flame Warriors were simply pushed aside!

Rody's attitude was harsh. He did not even order his men to arrange proper quarters for the Flame Warriors to be stationed. He merely sent the commanding officer to greet them for show and set up a simple shelter outside the church. After Strehl failed to meet Rody, he went back to the church dejectedly, and he understood that this matter could not be resolved within a short period of time.

The first thought that came to his mind was to meet the commanding officer and request for quarters to be arranged to house his two thousand warriors.

The reasons Strehl gave was simple. First of all, whenever the Flame Warriors traveled to any place in the Empire, usually the local church would be responsible to provide for them. But now that the church was under siege, and there were never any armies of the church stationed here as West Hill was the fief of the Tulip Family, so naturally West Hill should take over the responsibility.

The commanding officer had already received secret orders from Rody. He listened to the Flame Warriors' request quietly then spread out his hands, replying without emotion, "I'm sorry, but I cannot fulfill your request. Barracks for the Church's warriors never existed in West Hill City. To be honest, the only barracks here is where our public security forces' soldiers are stationed. Other than that...hehe, before this there was an empty barrack for the guards of the Tulip Mansion, but now it is occupied by Marquis Rody's escort troops. Hence, there's nothing I can do about your request..."

Strehl objected angrily, "So, are you saying that we, the warriors of the holy Flame Warriors, shall live in the streets?!"

The commanding officer rolled his eyes and replied lazily, "Well, to be honest, this is beyond my jurisdiction. But if you must find a place to stay, why not head to the Tulip Mansion's barracks and discuss with Marquis Rody's escort troops? Ask them if they can make some room for you in the barracks..."

Strehl immediately sent ten of his men there, but in less than an hour, all of his ten warriors came running back with bruises and swollen faces.

It turned out that when they arrived there, before they could even finish talking, they were ruthlessly thrown out by Marquis Rody's escort troops. These people from the Flame Warriors had always been arrogant and looked down on local troops.

But this time, they had run their heads into a brick wall.

Marquis Rody was here in West Hill with his newly-wed wife, Miss Nicole, escorted by a troop of two thousand guards. Although they were not the Lightning God's Whip and their combat power was also way inferior to the Lightning God's Whip, their haughty manner was outrageous!

Those were two thousand Imperial Guards!

Who were the Imperial Guards? They were the palace guards who were specifically responsible for guarding the royals all along! In the name of the royal family, each of them had always looked down on other people. The Flame Warriors' arrogance? The Imperial Guards were even more arrogant than them!

At that time, both parties turned against each other and the Imperial Guards hurled curses at them. 'All this while it was only us, the Imperial Guards, who bullied others. There was never anybody who dared to come grab our territory!'

Strehl was deeply troubled. He was not a fool. Although he was a little bit ill-tempered, he immediately sensed something amiss after calming down.

It was obvious that this Marquis Rody was deliberately defying the Church!

The identity of this newly emerged dignitary of the Empire was somewhat unique. He was not only the brother-in-law of the Empire's supreme commander, Duke of the Tulip Family, he was also a Marquis and the regiment commander of the Empire's Northern Army. What was more thought-provoking was the fact that a Marquis of the Empire was escorted by 'Imperial Guards' during his travel...This honor was exclusively for members of the royal family!

He could not afford to offend such a person! It seemed that this time the Church was not well prepared enough! Initially, they thought it to only be a normal dispute within the local area of the church, so he was sent here to mediate and suppress the mob. It did not occur to them that the situation here was so complicated...

Strehl was absolutely cautious about acting rashly. Things had come up to this point where it could not be handled by someone of his rank anymore. He immediately sent his men back to the Imperial City to report on the situation here. On the other hand, he had no other choice but to order all his men to station on the square outside the church.

When this order was passed down, the Flame Warriors were stunned.

'Stationed on the spot? How? By sleeping on the streets?'

Due to the powerful influence of the Church in the Empire, the Flame Warriors never had the need to bring any supplies when traveling to any city in the Empire. This time, when two thousand of them came to West Hill, they did not bring any forage, just some personal rations, let alone heavy supplies like tents.

These two thousand people had to be fed, and the horses needed to graze too. Where would they source for these?

At one point, Strehl even put aside his ego and beseeched the public security commanding officer. When it did not work, he then quoted sayings from the Church and tried to influence these savages in the name of the almighty God.

However, when they heard of his sayings, from the commanding officer to the soldiers, all of them rolled their eyes and replied straightforwardly, "I'm not a believer."

In the Radiant Empire, although the religion of God had established its status as the state religion, the Empire's laws did not make it mandatory for its civilians to embrace the religion of God. Also, even though the laws dictate that one was not allowed to embrace any other religions besides the religion of God, and it was declared as the only legal religious organization in the Empire's territory, at the same time, the civilians were given the right to be a non-believer.

This meant that as long as you did not believe in other religions, then it was a personal choice whether or not to embrace the religion of God.

Strehl was in utter despair now. He had already noticed that in West Hill, even in the whole of Westwood Province, everyone here, no matter if it were the soldiers or normal civilians, they seemed to possess an extraordinary air of superiority. In their hearts, whether it was the Empire's emperor or His Excellency the Pope, they were incomparable to the great Duke of the Tulip Family! In their eyes, they knew nobody except the Tulip. This place was basically the Tulip's private kingdom!

But fortunately, Rody did not really want them dead.

After the Flame Warriors spent a night on the streets, Marquis Rody finally showed his face.

At noon the next day, young Lord Rody probably woke up late. After having breakfast and washing up, he brought along the fifty men Lightning God's Whip cavalry bodyguards and swaggered to

the church on horseback.

When greeted by a weary-looking Strehl, a gentle smile finally appeared on Rody's face. He did not dismount from his horse, but instead sat there and spoke in a kind manner, "Lord Strehl, you arrived yesterday? It must have been a tough journey. I wonder if you've rested well last night?"

Strehl looked helplessly at the smile on this young Marquis' face. He had a sleepless night, and right now his stomach was also empty, but he had to smile and give some reply.

Rody yawned and said smilingly, "Since you've had a good rest, then we shall start handling this dispute today. I'm sure you already knew what happened a few days ago. I hope you understand that the reason I ordered my men to besiege the church from the beginning, and forbid anyone from entering and leaving, is because I'm afraid someone will take the opportunity to destroy the evidence. I did this purely for the purpose of preserving the Church's sacred glory!"

Rody paused and waved his hands, signaling the soldiers surrounding the church to make way. He finally dismounted from his horse. He held Strehl's hands and smiled, "Let's go in and meet the bishop."

Upon entering the church, Rody's expression became harsh when he saw the bishop. Rody was livid and he looked at the bishop coldly, saying in a deep voice, "Your Eminence, I've sent my men to do some thorough investigations these few days, and indeed some people were practicing fraud in the name of the Church..."

The bishop's voice was hoarse, but he shouted, "We have been framed! False accusation!"

Rody shook his head and replied softly, "Whether or not you are framed, we will know soon. As the saying goes, to catch a thief you must find the stolen goods. Hence, as a gesture of justice, I will order my men to enter and search the church to see if there's any

booty. If there aren't, this move is the most effective method to crack down on those slanders! To prove the church's innocence with irrefutable evidence! I think this is the best solution we have now, what do you think?"

His final question 'what do you think?' was obviously directed at Strehl. Rody then added, "The reason I delayed the search here is to wait for your arrival. These past few days, I merely ordered my men to surround the church so that we will only do the search in your presence when you're here. Only by doing this can justice be preserved."

Search the church? Search a religious institute of a parish of the religion of God in the Empire?

Even during the era of the Great Emperor Abbas, who was a powerful ruler who ruled with an iron-fist, he was not so disrespectful to the Church!

But then, even the Great Emperor Abbas had never sent armed forces to besiege the Church.

Strehl carefully weighed Rody's words in his heart. Search the church? If this young Marquis dared to come up with such proposal, then he must be quite confident. Or else, what he did these few days would be totally useless.

Under the current circumstances, it seemed like he did not have any reason to refuse...

After thinking over and over again, Strehl finally scowled and replied, "Marquis Rody, the church is a place where the supreme and almighty God is worshipped. Dispatching troops to search the church is an act of disrespect to the dignity of the religion of God. You see..."

"I'm sorry," Rody replied flatly, "first of all, I'm not a believer. Secondly, I'm a Marquis of the Empire, and I only obey the laws of the Empire! The church's rules are not suitable to be used on me!"

Though his words were short and simple, his tone was clear that there was no room for discussion.

Strehl stole a glance at the bishop. The bishop was hesitant at first, but then he nodded vigorously. Strehl was relieved.

Since the bishop had no objections, then let them search! These past few days, the church had been surrounded so tightly by the soldiers outside, it would be impossible for anyone who wanted to frame the church to plant anything here.

Rody smiled and said, "To be fair, how about the Empire's troops and the Flame Warriors each account for half of the amount of the people who search this place?"

When Rody said so, there was an increased suspicion in Strehl's heart. Was this young Marquis really so confident? Even the bishop had an uneasy look on his face, but he took a tough stand and exclaimed loudly, "If the search is unfruitful, Marquis Rody will need to compensate us as this is blasphemy against the Gods!"

Rody readily agreed.

Immediately, fifty men from Rody's Lightning God's Whip and another fifty men from the Flame Warriors worked together and started searching the church. They searched the place in detail, not even an inch of land was missed. After two hours had passed, they found nothing.

The bishop's attitude gradually toughened, and Strehl too looked at Rody smugly.

Rody did not panic at all. He squinted his eyes and smiled as he listened in silence to his men's report. Suddenly, his eyes fell on the statue of God right in the middle of the church's hall. He then ordered in a low voice, "Move the statue!"

"No way!" The bishop's face changed. Even Strehl's expression turned into anger. He said through gritted teeth, "Marquis Rody, the statue of God cannot be moved! This touches on the issue of the

dignity of the supreme God! For over centuries since the Empire was founded, no such thing has ever happened! You've already gone too far today!"

Rody ignored the two's clamor. He looked coldly at his men from the Lightning God's Whip and said softly, "Did you not hear my orders?"

The Lightning God's Whip could not care less about the Gods. In their eyes, they only acknowledged the Tulip family! Currently, Rody was the brother-in-law of the Duke, and he was also from the Lightning God's Whip, so they already considered him as one of them. Once they received Rody's order, the Wolf Fang warriors immediately obeyed and moved the statue in a flurry.

Strehl's eyes became red with anger. He was about to turn hostile and order his warriors to stop them, but Rody's eyes narrowed and his hands were already pressed on the scimitar at his waist. His eyes were icy cold, and his murderous aura caused Strehl and the bishop to tremble in fear.

"It is best that you two do not act rashly! This is West Hill! The fief of the Tulip Family! Everything here is subjected to my orders! I repeat, I'm not a believer! The church's rules cannot restrict me, I only obey the Empire's laws!"

A chilling aura radiated from his body. His imposing manner caused the bishop and Strehl to stifle.

A rumbling noise was heard, and the huge stone statue of God was already moved halfway. The bishop's face immediately changed. His feet wobbled vigorously, and his face ashen. His lips too trembled uncontrollably and it was unclear what he was muttering to himself.

"Marquis Rody, there's something here!" one of the soldiers from the Lightning God's Whip reported loudly.

Rody sneered and looked at the two of them coldly before

striding towards the statue. The bishop's knees went all weak and he plopped down on the floor.

There was a drastic change in Strehl's expression. He glared at the bishop before he hurriedly followed Rody.

Beneath the statue, there was a secret compartment made of wood. Rody cast a quick look at it and unsheathed his scimitar with a low grunt. After a flash of bright, cold light, a cracking sound was heard and the secret compartment split. Countless shiny gold coins then scattered from within!

Following such a huge pile of gold coins suddenly exposed, the faces of those who stood next to it were immediately illuminated with a dazzling gold light. However, Strehl's face turned ashen at once.

"Unbelievable! I think there are at least fifty thousand coins here...Gentlemen, the clergymen had always claimed that it is their duty to serve the almighty God, but why do they possess such amount of personal wealth? If searching the church and moving the statue of God is an act of blasphemy, what kind of behavior is it called to hide a large number of gold coins beneath the statue of God?" Rody's voice remained tepid.

Strehl glowered at the bishop, the look in his eyes was that of undisguised enmity and despair. The Flame Warriors' gaze upon the clergymen in the church too became disdainful.

"Eh? There's another layer beneath..." Rody suddenly smiled. He raised his scimitar and struck it down, and another layer was split up.

Crash! A bunch of objects fell out, and those at the scene had a weird look on their faces. They looked at the bishop, stunned and unable to speak.

"Hmm...Candles, whips, iron chains..." Rody's tone was strange. He sighed and the smile on his face was creepy. He then said

slowly, "Your Eminence's tastes are somewhat peculiar..."

The bishop finally came back to his senses and screeched suddenly, "These...these are not mine!"

Rody snorted coldly and said, "Not yours? If it's not yours, is it mine then? Your Eminence! Now that the evidence is here, what else do you have to say?!"

Strehl's eyes flickered and a harsh look flashed in his eyes. He suddenly roared, "I'll kill you! Scum of the God's religion!"

After he finished roaring, he immediately drew his sword and struck it in the direction of the bishop!

As the chilling blade was about to strike the ashen bishop's neck, clang! Rody's scimitar already warded off the sword. Strehl's body trembled. He felt as though the sword was struck by a lightning, and there was extreme pain from the point between his thumb and his index finger. His sword almost slipped from his grip, and he was forced to retreat a few steps.

Rody narrowed his eyes and looked into Strehl's. He then said coldly, "Why? Are you trying to kill to silence him?"

He gave him a ferocious stare before saying in a clear voice, "The bishop of the religious institute of the Church of God in West Hill has illegal possession of wealth of questionable origin. Immediately move these things back and arrest all the clergymen of the West Hill Church for interrogation!"

Fifty Wolf Fang warriors rushed forward and savagely tied each of them in pairs. They then pressed the terrified clergymen down to the ground.

The bishop was on the verge of collapsing. The flesh on his fleshy face trembled, and he was muttering to himself.

There were magicians among those clergymen, and they tried to fight back on the spot, but Rody was standing there, and his movements were as fast as lightning. In the blink of an eye, he had

already knocked down two fellows who tried to resist arrest.

Strehl's mind went blank.

As far as he knew, the embezzlement of high ranking clergymen in the religion of God was not news anymore. He could not understand why this young upstart in the Empire would take such a big risk to openly defy the religion of God over such ordinary matters.

Was it because the bishop had offended this Marquis Rody?

Seeing that the clergymen were already tied, Rody left haughtily without looking at Strehl anymore.

Strehl was silent for a moment before sighing, and ordered his men quietly, "Pass my order, from now onwards, all of our men should behave themselves. Do not have any conflict with them, and do not act blindly! We shall wait for the orders from the Imperial City!"

The follower beside him hesitated and asked, "Your Excellency..."

"Shut up!" Strehl's face was pale, and he replied in a low voice, "This time, we've run into trouble! Great trouble!"

When he saw the whips, iron chains and candles scattered on the floor from the corner of his eyes, a sick look appeared on his face. He spat angrily and strode out.

Rody did not bother with these guys anymore. He went back straight to the Tulip mansion with his men. Those arrested were all thrown into the public security force's prison. Rody especially told the public security forces' commanding officer, "Do not interrogate or bother them. Keep them well-fed! But watch them tightly and keep them under tight security! None of them is allowed to die! Especially the bishop!"

Rody smiled when he saw the confused look on the commanding officer's face. He did not bother to explain but waved his hand signaling for him to leave. He then mumbled, "They still have

greater uses! By keeping them alive, they are the best evidence of the Church's scandal! Humph! That Strehl tried to kill them under my eyes to wipe out the evidence. Does he think that I'm a fool?!"

When he came back to the mansion, Rody briefly told the ladies about what happened that day. As he reached the part where the pieces of evidence were found and the interesting expressions on the faces of those people from the Church, Diane clapped her hands and laughed happily.

Then she blurted out a question, "By the way, are those gold coins really embezzled by the bishop?"

Rody nodded and replied, "The corruption of the high-ranking clergymen of the Church in the Empire was already not a secret long time ago."

The girl's eyes glittered. "But...those whips, candles and iron chains, what are they used for?"

Rody choked and looked at her awkwardly. He faltered for a while before finding an excuse to run away.

The girl became even more curious. She turned and asked Nicole instead, but Nicole's face immediately reddened. Myka too seemed embarrassed to talk about it. She avoidingly answered her just to put her off.

The more Diane thought about it, the more suspicious she became. She felt that there must be some unspeakable secret in this. When everyone had run away, she suddenly called upon a servant and ordered, "Go get me a whip, a candle, and an iron chain!"

After dismissing the servant who had a weird look on his face, Diane cocked her head sideways and muttered to herself angrily, "Humph! Do you think I can't figure it out myself if you all are not telling me about it?"

Chapter 322: Replacement

News of what had transpired in West Hill kept coming into the imperial city.

The newspaper industry in the empire flourished under Andy's devoted support such that the people's passion towards this new stuff kept rising. In Andy's opinion, newspapers had become an important tool to educate and even control the people's sentiments.

About seven to eight versions of the scandal regarding the church in West Hill were created and published in the newspapers.

Fatty could not understand why Andy insisted on writing the scandal story into seven or eight different versions.

The old skeleton smiled lightly and said, "In this world, humans have the strongest curiosity. When faced with such an interesting matter, if we merely tell this in one simple version, there will always be flaws and some smart people will see the flaws. But if we deliberately tell the story into a few different versions, then even if there are flaws, the people will be too occupied to ponder about it deeply. After all, our goal is to stir up trouble and blow things up! No matter how long they are going to debate, regardless of what's the final result, all that matters is the scandal involving the church that has left a deep impression in everybody's mind! As for the truth... Humph! There are thousands of mouths on thousands of people, and maybe a thousand mouths can come up with a million versions of the story! Haha..."

Fatty looked at the sinister smile on the old skeleton's face and reflected on his words for a moment. He then said slowly, "Old devil, nobody can be more sinister than you when it comes to scheming and plotting!"

Anyhow, the authority of the church was already destroyed. Under the propagation of the empire's newly emerged newspaper

industry, the whole Empire seemed to be discussing this scandal which happened in the Tulip Family's fief.

The old skeleton had put in enormous efforts in arranging this matter. First of all, the influence of the church was weaker in the fief of the Tulip Family. Secondly, the Tulip Family was almost a divine existence in the hearts of the Imperials, they were an idol worshipped by millions of people. Now that such a scandal occurred in such a sacred place, rage would erupt as the people despised the disdainful practice of the church. They had defiled the sacred honor of the Tulip Family!

The imperial newspapers had follow-up reports almost every day.

For example, the new confessions of the arrested bishop.

Or the people's comments regarding how the greedy bishop embezzled such a huge amount of money...

And those whips and iron chains which were discovered also sparked discussion among some special groups...

Finally, one day, almost all newspapers in the empire published a report with a huge headline:

"What is actually beneath the glorious halo — holiness or darkness?"

The tone and words used in this long report were obviously to draw attention to the church! Although it was not directly stated, those who had read this report would mostly have this doubt, 'How many more such greedy conmen are there in the church? Though one bishop was caught, those who were not, were they really innocent?

'Every year, we have paid so much religious taxes. Were these really used for worshipping the Gods? Or was it used to fatten these greedy conmen?'

All of a sudden, there was an uproar in the Empire!

The signature on this report was, of course, the chief critic and writer, Mr. Andy.

Under the setting sun, a troop slowly escorted a carriage into the imperial city.

Sitting inside the carriage were Marquis Rody and his wife, Miss Nicole of the Tulip Family, as well as his two other confidantes.

Rody had returned to the imperial city secretly under the escort of a troop of imperial guards and fifty elites from the Lightning God's Whip, officially ending his carefree days at the Westwood Province.

During this period, Rody was so annoyed being in Westwood. The church had sent some men there to request the release of the bishop. They had also demanded thorough investigations to be carried out regarding that matter to restore the honor of their religion.

Rody was strongly against such stiff demands. He had once kicked out the elder from the highest religious institute sent by the church to the Tulip Mansion. This elder was an old rascal from the elders' council, and he had rushed here from the imperial city to specially handle this matter.

Rody replied boldly, "I'm not a believer! Your rules are useless to me! I'm only responsible towards the imperial laws! So, stop telling me what to do!"

The elder who held quite a high position in the church fumed. He almost turned against Rody on the spot. Driven by rage, he immediately gathered the two thousand Flaming Warriors stationed in West Hill City and was about to snatch those arrested by force.

But Strehl, the deputy regimental commander of the Flaming Warriors remained sensible. He arrived here earlier and had experienced the stubbornness of this Marquis Rody. It was just a

waste of energy to try to influence and persuade someone who was not a believer of God.

Moreover... he carefully advised the elder who was dizzy with anger, "We only have two thousand Flaming Warriors here, but they have thousands of imperial guards! To say the least of it, if a fight really breaks out, hehe... they are imperial guards, representing the empire's royal family..."

Although this was not pleasant to hear and was also somewhat frustrating, it managed to cool down the elder. After all, for one to be able to climb to such a high position, he was definitely not a fool. He was just angered by this young marquis whose attitude was ignorant. When he calmed down, it immediately dawned on him that this Marquis Rody was deliberately looking for trouble!

Since tough methods were not effective, then he would try a softer approach.

But Rody was not going to give him any more chance. He hid behind closed doors, refusing to see any guests. So what if you were the elder of the church? The gate of the Tulip Mansion was locked, and the Imperial Guards and the Lightning God's Whip were guarding outside. Even if the pope came here, they would most probably ignore him too!

The imperial guards would only obey the emperor, and the Lightning God's Whip would only obey the Duke of the Tulip Family or Miss Nicole!

The church had also attempted a prompt change of strategy. Initially, they requested for defending themselves, but most probably due to the great pressure from public opinion in the imperial city, in the end, they requested to immediately execute the heinous bishop who 'blasphemed against God and betrayed the church's trust! This action was equivalent to admitting their crime, but as long as it could immediately put an end to this matter, it was better having done that than letting the situation

snowballed.

But Rody continued to ignore them. He merely gave a simple reply, "Investigations are ongoing as the case is complicated!" And he drove them off afterward.

The church, of course, had some foundations to be able to operate steadily in the empire over the years. Many of the imperial officials were believers of the religion. Since they could not settle the problem privately, then they would try to use other ways, for example, to pressure this young Marquis via official channels. Of course, right now, nobody within the officials' circles would dare to offend this young Marquis Rody whose future was boundless. But to move him with affection and entice him with the promise of gain was an eternal practice within the official circles.

Rody's stand was way too firm!

Especially in the fief of the Tulip Family!

When Rody first came back from the war in the northwest, there was a rebellion among the local consuls. He seized the opportunity to make a clean sweep of the whole Tulip's fief. The original power structure was basically swept out, and currently, those who remained in the Tulip's fief were absolutely loyal to the Tulip Family. Some of the officials were even retired military officers from the Lightning God's Whip who had followed the duke in the northwestern war.

There was no room to maneuver for the church's official power when faced with these people.

Hence, after dealing with them for some time, Rody received a secret letter from Old Skeleton, and he left the fief with his men back to the imperial city.

Once the carriage entered the imperial city, Rody could sense something different even though it was already evening.

The previously common sight of clergymen walking in the streets

of the imperial city in small groups had disappeared. It seemed like there were basically no clergymen walking in the streets anymore. Even when, occasionally, one or two general laborers wearing the uniform of the church were spotted, they all bowed their heads and scurried by.

Rody went back straight to his Marquis residence and brought his guards to the palace to meet Old Skeleton.

In the royal martial arts field within the palace, everyone was prohibited from entering. A group of imperial guards could be seen from afar guarding the outside. Rody entered alone, and all the guards saluted him with bows when they saw him.

When the heavy door was pushed open, a roar came from within, and a chilling light came straight at his face.

Rody acted mostly out of reflex. He unsheathed his scimitar with lightning speed to ward off the attack, and a crisp sound of metal clinking was heard. His opponent grunted and retreated two steps, the sword in her hand broke into two pieces.

Rody did not feel any better. The person who ambushed him had great strength. After he hastily warded off the attack, he could feel a gush of energy rampaging in his chest. His arm felt numb and he too grunted. It was due to the fact that his Dragon Spell Scimitar was a magical weapon that he was able to break his opponent's sword.

Once Rulan managed to get to her feet, she glared at Rody and sneered, "Rody boy, your skills are indeed excellent. Old Fatty said I won't be able to harm you with this strike!"

Rody smiled reluctantly. His strength was recovering too slowly. So far, he had only recovered up to the level of a Sacred Swordsman. As for Domain Power, that was certainly far beyond reach now. Although Rody was frustrated, he knew that the Divine Primordial Spirit that he swallowed was something extraordinary. For his strength to recover completely, perhaps it was not

something that he could achieve in a short period of time.

Clap, clap, clap! A series of clapping rang out. Fatty Sky stood at a corner of the martial arts field and beamed at Rody. He then shouted, "Good boy, it's good to see that you did not embarrass me!"

Rulan pondered for a while and shouted, "Fatty! I still cannot defeat him! Let's continue training!"

Rody pulled himself together and finally managed to suppress the energy rampaging in his body.

The old skeleton sat on a chair clad in an imperial robe, crossing his legs without much care for his image. His eyes were drawn to the center of the field where weapons clattered and a male and a female fatty started fighting again. He glanced at Rody from the corner of his eyes and waved to him, "Young man, you're back?"

Rody walked towards him and smiled bitterly, "You gave me a lot of trouble again. The elder from the church stopped me at the entrance of the Tulip Mansion every day in West Hill. If I don't come back soon, one day, I will be so annoyed I will chop him up!"

Andy beamed and looked at Rody. He suddenly whispered, "Then chop him up!"

"Why? Is it time to strike now?" Rody shot a glance at him.

Andy sighed, "I've already given orders to investigate the religious taxation within the entire empire. Since yesterday, all the territories of the Radiant Empire have stopped collecting religious taxes!"

Rody gasped, "By doing this, wouldn't the financial source of the church have been cut off? Will the Pope agree?"

"He cannot disagree!" Andy sneered, "Unless he is confident enough to turn against us right now and start an internal war!"

Rody thought about it and answered, "It is quite impossible for

them to start a war. Currently, the empire's military forces are very powerful, whereas the Flaming Warriors are scattered. Our Lightning God's Whip was just reorganized after the war, so the soldiers are absolutely loyal. Also, the army's morale is at its peak right now. On the other hand, the atmosphere within the church is most probably not so united."

Andy snickered, "After this scandal blew up, the loyalty of the previously devoted believers within the empire has plunged greatly. I guess the situation is the same in other places. From what I've heard, even within the Flaming Warriors, their morale has become somewhat unstable, too. If war breaks out, those warriors would probably think twice about whether it is worth it to sacrifice themselves for such a despicable, corrupted religion. Hence, the pope will definitely not dare to start a war! He has no confidence!"

Rody pondered and frowned, "But now that you've instigated this matter, what exactly do you want to do next?"

The old skeleton mumbled, "Rody, do you know? Man's faith in God is nothing but a spiritual sustenance. Man needs guidance, an idol, to seek solace within their hearts. Religions are merely providing the people with such satisfaction in their soul," he paused and continued with a smile, "So it is impossible to let religion disappear completely. What I'm thinking of is..."

His eyes squinted and his smile deepened, "To create a new religion to replace the current religion of God!"

When met with Rody's puzzled look, the old skeleton smiled and continued, "The Empire has been worshipping the Gods for centuries. Such foundation cannot be completely uprooted by you and me. So, I do not want to waste my energy doing such useless thing! What I mean is, I want to let everyone understand that, Gods do exist, and we do need to have faith in the almighty Gods, but the current church does not represent the Gods! We can guide the people to think that the church has betrayed the teachings of

God! They have fallen to such an extent that their existence is blasphemy against the Gods! They are not worthy of being the servants of God anymore! So, I want to create a new religion in the empire, to replace the church!"

Rody seemed to understand now. He whispered, "So you mean..."

The old skeleton stood up and clapped his hands smilingly, "What I mean is, to create a new idol for people to worship! To create a new god for the masses to believe in! And it happens that we have an exceptional condition! We already have an extremely glorious treasure!"

Speaking of this, Old Skeleton's smile became evil. He whispered, "Young man, are you interested in becoming a god for once? Duke of the Tulip Family... my almighty 'God of War'?"

Chapter 323: Looming Crisis

The conflict between the empire and the church slowly emerged. Everybody was gradually stripping away the last layer of pretense, and various contradictions were now on the table.

Pope Corsica VI had publicly announced that the Imperial order to stop religious taxation was a challenge against the church's prestige, a disrespect to the Gods. At the same time, the church's Flaming Warriors were frequently mobilized and assembled.

However, the old skeleton was even more ruthless. He issued an order in the name of the Empire's Emperor, that any mobilization of local armies within the empire which involved more than one hundred people must obtain the approval of the imperial commander-in-chief! After such order was issued, the mobilization of the Flaming Warriors was greatly restricted. In some places, hundreds of cases of friction between the Flaming Warriors and local garrisons were reported. All of a sudden, the empire was glutted with countless news of chaos.

In the midst of the dangerous undercurrent, the Duke of the Tulip Family ordered the suspension of all leaves of the Lightning God's Whip and to be in full alert awaiting orders to set out!

Marquis Rody, the Regimental Commander of the Northern Army, ordered the suspension of all leaves within his army and be in full alert awaiting orders to set out!

Earl Elliot, the Regimental Commander of the Northwestern Army, ordered his army to stand by and wait for orders, be in full alert awaiting orders to set out!

General Camus, Regimental Commander of Southern Army, ordered the transfer of two troops of heavily armored cavalries to move up north towards the imperial city!

Meanwhile, at the eastern territories of the empire where the

church was most powerful, 30 thousand men from the Flaming Warriors successfully broke through the blockade of the empire's local garrison and gathered. They had also conquered two medium-sized cities and issued orders to expel the imperial officials stationed there under the name of His Majesty the Pope. They declared that they would temporarily take over cities in the name of God.

This caused an uproar in the empire!

"Young man, do you know that believers in any religion are made up of three different groups of people?" The old skeleton smiled cheerfully. He then slowly raised his finger and continued at a slow pace, "The first type are those absolutely pious religious fanatics. These people are our toughest enemy... but luckily, the numbers of these type of people are not many! Among ten thousand believers, this kind of fanatics does not even account for one percent! The second group of people are those who waver easily. These are the people who embrace the church but are not fanatical. Most of them have this attitude of 'if you believe, then it works; but if you don't, then it will not work'. These kind of people, although they look pious during normal days, when their personal gain is involved, they will abandon their faith to safeguard their own interests! For example, if they have to take out a small amount of their income to worship the church, they may be willing to do so, but if they have to offer all their properties and reputation as a tribute, these people will definitely cower. Fortunately, the scandal regarding the church that we created in the Westwood Province had, to a great extent, caused the loyalty of this group of people towards the religion to drop dramatically. This type of people from the second group accounts for the most among the believers of the religion. They are the largest group in a religion. We can say that these people account for more than seventy percent of the believers in the religion of God!"

The old skeleton paused and took a few breaths before

continuing, "The third group are those pseudo-believers. Don't be surprised, this is very normal! The church has been operating in the empire for centuries. They have flourished and expanded in scale. Believing in the religion has become a habit, a trend! There are many who are originally atheists, but when they saw those around them embrace the religion, they then became believers with the psychology of 'joining in the fun'. This type of people make up quite a large portion in the religion of God, but their loyalty towards the religion is the lowest! Once the empire and the church become enemies, in consideration of their personal interests, they will abandon their religion without hesitation."

Rody nodded and smiled, "So, even though the church claims that they have tens of millions of believers in the empire, it's actually not that terrifying!"

"Correct," the old skeleton smiled, "Tens of millions of believers was just a falsely exaggerated figure. Once the Empire and the Church become enemies, those who are willing to rise in revolt with the Church will never exceed hundreds of thousands. And among these hundreds of thousands, the true Flaming Warriors does not even amount up to half the sum. The remaining are just ignorant civilians! As long as we use drastic measures... it is not hard to solve this problem!"

Rody was silent for a moment. He then said in a low voice, "But still, there are hundreds and thousands of people...When such chaos breaks out, how many will die, and how many families..."

The old skeleton shook his head, "The church has become an enormous malignant tumor on the empire's body! If we do not seize this opportunity to finish them off completely, when their power expands and their foundation deepens in the future, then it will be even more difficult to get rid of them! The Roland Continent is the best example!"

Seth, who was seated at a corner, was looking out of the window with a smile on his face all the while. When he heard their

conversation, he turned his head and his gaze fell on the old skeleton, "I think we still need a triggering factor to strike, what do you think?"

"We already have that!" Andy took out a military report from his sleeve.

The following was the report from General Camus, Regimental Commander of the Southern Army:

"Acting under the orders of the Emperor, the Southern Army has conducted a massive search on all religious institutes and churches of the three provinces in the south. We have discovered large amounts of money amounting up to 1 million and 90 thousand gold coins of questionable origin! Properties and land deeds of unknown source amounting up to 2 million and 200 thousand gold coins! Among those arrested from the church were three local bishops, nine high-ranking clergymen, 28 medium-ranking clergymen and 160 low-ranking clergymen. During the period of search, the Southern Army had some friction with the Flaming Warriors. There were 620 casualties reported in the Southern Army. Among them, there were 190 dead, 300 heavily injured, and 130 mildly injured. 1,080 men from the Flaming Warriors were killed, and 2,600 people were held captive. General Camus, Regimental Commander of the Southern Army, reports to His Majesty that the situation in the south is chaotic. The church is inciting the civilians to create chaos. There have already been a total of 21 cases of friction between the Flaming Warriors and the Empire's local garrisons."

"Don't you think this is sufficient to light the fuse?" The old skeleton smiled and took out another piece of paper, "This is the order I have drafted. I'm preparing to send this to the South today!"

"In lieu of the increasing crisis in the three southern provinces, I hereby order General Camus, Regimental Commander of the Southern Army, to declare the three southern provinces as war

zones and implement the code of war! General Camus is appointed as the supreme commander in the war zone! At the same time, pass down the orders of temporarily banning all religious activities in the three southern provinces! General Camus has the authority to kill those who defy the orders!" Rody sighed when he finished reading this order. He shook his head and said, "It seems like you're preparing to strike first in the south? Seems like a good move. Regimental Commander Camus of the south is very experienced, has great capabilities, and is also very prestigious in the south. Besides that, he is very loyal to the empire and at the same time a non-believer. He is indeed a good candidate."

"This is still not enough!" Seth suddenly interrupted again, "How's the situation of the church in the imperial city? Corsica VI did not make any other moves?" He looked as if he was sneering, "By the time your orders arrive in the south, the internal war would have already erupted! Corsica VI will, for sure, immediately leave the imperial city and head towards the eastern region of the empire, the stronghold of the church!"

When he said that, the three of them exchanged glances and whispered simultaneously, "We shall strike first! Kill him!"

The old skeleton smiled and said, "The old Pope's God's Vanquishing Spell is no joke. Even a Domain Master will not necessarily be his match. We still need to discuss this..."

Hatred leached from Rody's eyes, and he said lightly, "We have Fatty, a Domain Master, and also me and Royal Concubine Rulan, a Sacred Swordsman and a Paladin. We also have Black Veil, and not to forget Old Mark. We should be able to get rid of that fellow!"

Seth nodded and agreed, "But we cannot do that in the imperial city! We can get rid of him halfway, and then..."

An evil grin spread across the old skeleton's face, "And then put the blame on the Vampire Tribe..."

Seth looked at the old skeleton and smiled, "That's right. Erm..."

It's best that we disclose this news to the Vampire Tribe beforehand so that they can do their part..."

The two despicable conspirators, one young and one old, started to draw up their plans. Rody was bored listening to them, so he stood up and left to look for Fatty for training.

At the core of the Empire's church, in the inner hall of the religious institute within the imperial city.

The Pope, Corsica VI looked so much older. His eyes looked as if they were closed, but occasionally there was a sharp look in his eyes.

Several senior elders from the church clad in white robes sat in front of him.

"The development of the matter has become apparent. The Empire is preparing to strike at us this time!" The pope finally opened his mouth — his tone had traces of anger, "The internal war of the Rolands up north seems to have awakened the empire's royals. They want to take this opportunity to eradicate the Church."

"Your Majesty," an elder spoke up, "It is meaningless for us to continue staying in the imperial city. Currently, in the eastern region of the empire, our Flaming Warriors has conquered two cities and taken control of a province. We should immediately go there before the royals openly turn against us! And then we shall build a parish there to fight against the empire!"

"Yes!" another elder chimed in, "The church has the deepest foundation in the eastern region! We have countless devout believers there, and also tens of thousands of courageous Flaming Warriors! We should go there immediately, and announce to the whole empire about the crime of the royals betraying the Gods! Then we shall start a great holy war to defend the Gods!"

The Pope, Corsica VI finally opened his eyes. His gaze swept

across all those in the room and sighed, "Is this what you all have agreed upon?"

Everyone was silent, but they looked straight at the Pope.

"All right!" Corsica VI stood up and waved the wand in his hand, "Since they want war, then we will give them war! Pass down my doctrine and announce that the royals of the Radiant Empire are heretics who blasphemed against the Gods! The church will lead all the believers in the empire to wage war against these heretics!"

He paused, then said in a low voice, "We will leave the imperial city tomorrow! But my doctrine should only be issued after three days."

Chapter 324: A Two-Hundred-Year-Old Conspiracy

It was said, "A dark and windy night is perfect for killing."

The night was not quite dark as a bright moon illuminated the night sky. It was dry and cold, but not at all windy.

Four carriages were quietly moving along the path from the imperial city to the empire's eastern region.

These carriages were made with excellent craftsmanship. Although the path was rugged, the moving carriages did not make any noise, which was rather creepy. The drivers of the carriages, too, were silent. The convoy was totally quiet except for the occasional sound of lashing whips.

Inside one of the carriages, an old man wearing a black robe was lost in thought. The black robe he was wearing was made from the most ordinary material. His gray hair was neatly combed, and he was in a somewhat subdued mood, but the expression on his face was as cold as a hard rock.

Nobody would have thought that inside this convoy of carriages, which was not guarded by any warrior, were the seven highest-ranking elders of the church in the empire. The black-robed elder was no other than Pope Corsica VI, who was currently the supreme leader of the church in the empire, the most powerful man of the religion in the empire.

The doctrine of the church was issued one day ago. The rupture of the relationship between the Empire and the church had been brought to surface. But what caught Corsica VI by surprise was that the action of the emperor was way faster than he expected! In the southern province of the empire, armies were suddenly dispatched to officially take over Purple Leaf City led by General Camus, Regimental Commander of the Southern Army.

Immediately, the 150-thousand-men southern army was divided into six troops and headed out to control the whole southern province. Their following move was to wipe off the religious institutes and churches of the religion of God in each and every city!

General Camus was indeed a veteran of the imperial army. He was very experienced, and the combat power of the Southern Army was very strong. The Flaming Warriors scattered in the south were not his match at all. This sudden change caught Corsica VI by surprise, which caused them to hasten to bring forward their plan to evacuate the imperial city and flee to the eastern region of the empire within two days. As for the Pope's doctrine, it was hastily issued halfway on the road.

Corsica VI felt somewhat uneasy in his heart!

This Abbas VI, the Emperor, had surprised him. How could this guy use such ruthless measures? Have such a cunning mind? And so despicably conspiratorial?

The moment their convoy left the imperial city, they were attacked by the imperial guards. Luckily, this route had already been prearranged, and another troop of Flaming Warriors was deployed to mislead the enemies on another main road to draw away the pursuing cavalries. This ensured the safe evacuation of the supreme leaders of the religion of God.

Years ago, Abbas VI was just an incompetent emperor. It did not make any sense to the Pope on how he became such a sharp-witted opponent with sinister measures.

"Hmm, things might get better once we're in the eastern region," the Pope sighed. He drew a cross in front of his chest and muttered, "God bless our religion. May the supreme God bless his most loyal servants, and punish the heretics who defy the dignity of Gods..."

Eastern region. There were three provinces in the eastern region

with millions of inhabitants. There was a large number of believers who were loyal to the church among the civilians. Also, there were many local aristocrats who sympathized with the church, the loyal Flaming Warriors, and also great wealth. As long as they reached the eastern region, they could totally call upon a two hundred-thousand-men army to fight against the empire with the prestige of the church!

Although the Duke of the Tulip Family was very powerful, there were rumors saying that he was severely injured in the war against the Roland army, and had not recovered till now. This was a great situation! Without the Duke of the Tulip Family as the commander-in-chief of the imperial army, their combat power has already been reduced by half...Whereas we have the combination-magic, a gift from the almighty Gods! As well as millions of devoted believers in the empire...

Pope Corsica VI comforted himself and tried hard to calm down his mind which was having a severe headache right now. He had been feeling too tired these few days.

He drew the curtain aside to let the moonlight sprinkle into the carriage. He felt that all the bones in his body were aching.

"Hmm, it seems like I've aged a lot..." Just as this thought came up in his mind, his gaze involuntarily fell on the three elders sitting beside him.

All the other three elders looked very tired, too. They were seizing the time to close their eyes and rest, but the frail looks on their aged faces could not be concealed.

Corsica VI suddenly had a doubt which somewhat frustrated him.

'Why? Why were my subordinates all old and weak? Why aren't there any warriors among the Flaming Warriors like those under the Duke of the Tulip Family who would risk their lives to fight for their revered leader? Why aren't there any powerful sorcerors among the elders like the saints in the temple of the Roland

Continent in the north?'

It was like this in the church within the empire. Greedy fat bishops who were cunning and wasted their meager intelligence on how to embezzle more gold coins. Though the Flaming Warriors were loyal, and their personal practice was pious, their combat power had never reached the level of the Lightning God's Whip!

The Flaming Warriors in the Radiant Continent that was as powerful as the Roland Temple's Holy Knight Regiment centuries ago, was now no longer an invincible army which was fearsome to their enemies! As the years passed, the spirit of the Flaming Warriors was lost completely in the centuries of peace.

This did not make sense at all...

Corsica VI shook his head and forced himself to stop thinking, but, one after another, questions kept popping up in his head.

The convoy gradually moved into a valley. Right after the valley was the River Kiva, a big river from the eastern region of the empire. After passing through the river, they would then reach the territory of the eastern provinces.

The carriages entered the valley quietly. Only the creaking sound of wheels running over pebbles could be heard.

On the peak to the left, one fat and one skinny figure stood erect.

"Fatty, do you know why the church was defeated so quickly? Why is it that the seemingly enormous church was so defenseless against the blow from the empire? I think Corsica VI that old man will not be able to figure this out no matter how hard he tries."

Old Skeleton's smile was very sly. He wore a black robe, and his body seemed to have blended into the dark night.

"What is there to guess..." Fatty mumbled, "It must be due to the writer, that idiot, wanting to end this book and speed up the progress, so he wrote it like this..."

"Hehe..." the old skeleton chuckled before saying in a serious manner, "The reason why the seemingly enormous church was defeated so quickly was, all of this has already been destined two hundred years ago during the era of the Great Emperor Abbas!"

"Oh?"

Old Skeleton sighed, "I've studied several decrees preserved from the era of the Great Emperor Abbas. He was indeed the greatest emperor of the empire. Those decrees were all thought in depth and planned carefully! When the decrees were implemented two hundred years ago, the church was already destined to become an outwardly strong but inwardly weak empty shell! Great Emperor Abbas had already laid the foundation of royal power for his descendants!"

The old skeleton's gaze was locked on the convoy of carriages in the canyon beneath. He continued in a deep voice, "The first decree that the Great Emperor Abbas left behind was, following the announcement of this decree, the Flaming Warriors shall not be recruited in any of the empire's wars in the future! I've checked the history of the empire. During that time, the church in the empire owned 250 thousand Flaming Warriors! The Flaming Warriors back then was not lax, like now. They were elites who had lived through real battlefields! At that time, the empire's northwest was just stabilized, and the Roland kingdoms up north were eyeing the empire covetously, while the mountain people down south rebelled. This was a time when armies were in great need on the battlefield! But Great Emperor Abbas issued the decree which refused the deployment of the Flaming Warriors no matter how difficult the situation was for the empire, and how weak its military forces were. Such courage, such foresight, I still break out in cold sweat whenever I think about it!"

His voice was gradually filled with respect and reminisce, "You know very well that armies are always involved in any country's conflicts! The armies are the foundation, a guarantee of strength,

the trump card in one's hands! But Great Emperor Abbas had already uprooted the church two hundred years ago! Think about it. There have been never-ending wars in the empire for over two centuries. During these two hundred years, the Roland kingdoms in the north had started three holy wars, there were also endless wars in the northwest and the rebellions in the mountainous regions of the south were frequent too. All these wars had maintained the vitality and combat power of the empire's own army! The Flaming Warriors? An army which had not been to war for two hundred years...Hehe, how much combat power do they still have?

"I don't deny the fact that two hundred years ago, the influence of the church was indeed great! After the series of battles by the empire to unite the Radiant Continent, not only the Lightning God's Whip had emerged, the Flaming Warriors of the church, too, were trained into elites by assisting in the battles. Otherwise, the ambitious Great Emperor Abbas would have already eradicated the church back then! But he was smart enough to not do that. Instead, he let the church bleed slowly by slicing them with a soft blade! On one hand, he lifted the church up high, and gave them numerous authority, including the authority to collect religious taxes, as well as a high status...On the other, he cut off the vitality of their army...Hehe, this was really clever! two hundred years of peace, two hundred years of comfortable life. This was sufficient to turn the then-ferocious lion into weak and feeble sheep! This was enough to wear down their sharp claws!

"Once an army loses its vitality and does not participate in battles, then it will rot very quickly and go downhill. Without war, outstanding generals will not emerge; without war, there will be no talents in the army! At the same time, two hundred years of peace was enough to cause the Flaming Warriors to lose the sense of urgency and vigilance which were required in an army! They are now merely an awkward squad assembled from the church's own warriors. Once they encounter a real war, they will not be able to

cope at all! Even if they have unwavering faith and the courage to sacrifice themselves, these are still not enough! I've investigated in detail. Currently, there are almost no outstanding military leaders among the Flaming Warriors. They can't even complete the most basic combat system...Hehe...This is the reason why I dare to lay my hands on them!"

Fatty shook his head, "Cunning, too cunning..."

"This is just the tip of the iceberg..." the old skeleton sighed, his tone full of respect as he said, "The boldest move by Great Emperor Abbas was to solely grant the authority of religious tax collection to the church! What is tax collection? It's money! Lots and lots of money! Within the period of two hundred years, the continuous inflow of enormous amount of money was sufficient to corrupt the church! Presently, the church has become a machine specialized in accumulating wealth for the religion. Their ability to accumulate wealth is greater than their Flaming Warriors. Sliced slowly by these two soft blades, within two hundred years, the bloodletting of their courage was almost done..."

"In comparison to the church, the empire was totally different. The wars in the northwest, south, and north had trained generations of armies in the empire. It had nurtured countless talents in the armies and maintained the vitality and combat power of the empire's armies over these two hundred years! Even during the most difficult times for the empire, the Flaming Warriors was not summoned to participate in the wars. Of course, except for the war against the Roland kingdoms last year. That was the only time the Flaming Warriors participated in a war throughout the two hundred years, but you've already seen the results. That lad Rody could so easily leave thirty thousand Flaming Warriors behind as cannon fodders. Thirty thousand Flaming Warriors, they can't be totally useless right? Their courage and faith must be unwavering, too, but in the end? When faced with the hastily assembled army of the Roland armies, they

couldn't even hold Thunderous City for one day, and were completely annihilated! Doesn't that explain the problem? If it's our empire's own army, even if we did not employ the Lightning God's Whip but just any thirty thousand soldiers from the Northern Army, it would not be a problem at all to hold that place for three to five days even when faced with this large number of enemies. But thirty thousand Flaming Warriors lost Thunderous City in just one day! This shows how weak their combat power is! It was from then that I realized, the opportunity to eradicate the church has come!"

Fatty glanced at the old skeleton. He slowly unsheathed his sword and gave it a slight flick. The blade produced a clank.

"Old Skeleton, how long do you think we need to eradicate the church completely?"

Old Andy erected three fingers, "Three months. After three months, I can assure you that there will not be any more flags of the church in the territories of the Radiant Continent!"

He paused for a moment before continuing with a sneer, "Poor Corsica VI. He was indeed very smart and intelligent. He was also very powerful, but it's a pity he did not see through this truth. He is just a man bound by his petty cleverness. As a leader, he lacks great wisdom. Did he think that after fleeing to the eastern region of the empire, he could raise the flag of rebellion against the empire? Humph! Once the war starts, when confronted with death and spilling blood, how many of the so-called believers are willing to give up the lives of their loved ones and their properties to fight for an illusory religious faith? Humans are all very realistic and selfish! When their own interests are not involved, they may show some respect for religion, but once...hehe...once they have to cut their own flesh, offer their own blood, and give up their lives, most of the people will be unwilling to do so! As for the Flaming Warriors? Humph, as long as the Lightning God's Whip strikes, the two-hundred-thousand Flaming Warriors will be destroyed in one

battle! So what if they have controlled the eastern province where the empire's military force is the weakest? These idiots have no idea at all that I've deliberately given up the eastern province to them!"

"Yes, just like killing the chickens. When there are so many chickens running around the yard, it will be too troublesome and exhausting for the chicken killer to scramble after them...It is better to herd the chickens to one place—into a cage. By doing so, it will be a lot easier to kill them!" An evil smile appeared on Fatty's face, too.

The old skeleton nodded, "That's right! Eastern region, this is my gift, the cage, for those chickens from the church! Once their scattered forces all converge in the eastern region, that will be the time we wipe them out once and for all!"

In the long and narrow valley beneath, the carriages convoy was almost near to the end. They will exit this valley into an open field another one hundred meters ahead! After that, moving forward another fifty miles, they would then reach the great river...

Corsica VI gazed into the distant horizon. The long night was going to be over soon.

Just as he was about to start thanking God's blessing, a howl of laughter came from the front at the exit of the canyon!

"Hahahahahaha..." The rough, coarse voice sounded somewhat strange, and a huge, large figure suddenly jumped out!

This figure was almost two meters high! The fleshy body was squeezed into the largest sized armor of the imperial guards, and a huge warrior sword of the finest quality in the empire was held in the figure's hand. Moonlight shone on the person's face. Such a sturdy person turned out to be a woman!

Ruolan squinted her eyes. She raised her feet and kicked at a heavy stone, causing it to fly off and hit one of the horses hard.

The horse pulling the front-most carriage neighed in pain and immediately fell. The driver, too, cried out in alarm and almost fell off the carriage.

The convoy immediately halted. Several drivers jumped down from the carriages simultaneously. There was a murderous look mixed with nervousness on their faces. They ripped off the robes covering their body to reveal the suits of armor of the church's Flaming Warriors hidden beneath. Pulling out their swords under the seats, they closed in on Ruolan.

Ruolan shook her head as she looked disdainfully at the four warriors dressed like drivers. She said coldly, "You guys from the church, unfortunately, your end has come! Please ask your Pope to come down from the carriage. I will send him to heaven to meet your Gods right now!"

Having said that, the sword in her hand suddenly moved!

A large light-blade emerged and shrouded the four drivers!

Boom! The rocks on the ground flew haphazardly, and the four drivers were thrown out horizontally. They rolled away for several meters before they managed to get up on their feet. Blood was trickling from each of their mouths. The suits of armor on their body were badly damaged, and the swords in their hands buzzed and trembled vigorously.

"Humph! So this is the strength of the Senior Warriors of your Flaming Warriors? You are way weaker than the Holy Knights Regiment!" Ruolan smiled hideously and strode forward...

Chapter 325: Twists and Turns

Corsica VI's heart sank.

He had never seen this strange, terrifying woman before, but judging from that blow just now, her strength must be one of the greatest in the Radiant Continent for being able to blast off three senior members of the Flaming Warriors with just one strike! And she wore the armor of the imperial guards...Since when did Abbas XI have such a master under him?

He sighed and moved his spiritual force, whispering, "Get rid of her first! And then move forward rapidly! If they can intercept us here, there might be some changes in events!"

The doors of two carriages opened, and four elders from the church came down one after another. A white light surrounded their bodies. That was obviously the advanced Guardian Boundary of the Light Series Spells. Their white robes fluttered along with the air current. Apparently, a strong magical energy was fluctuating beneath their robes.

"Who are you! How dare you intercept His Majesty the Pope's convoy of carriages!" an elder bellowed, and the wands in the four elders' hands were raised high.

The four balls of dazzling white light were very eye-catching in the dark night. Following a howl, four chain-like, white light shot towards Ruolan.

Ruolan laughed and retreated one step. The sword in her hand drew an arc, and a crescent-shaped light blade struck out.

Boom! The four balls of white light shot out by the elders of the church were blasted into pieces mid-air. The crescent-shaped light blade then shot towards the four elders. They cried out in alarm, and their bodies immediately floated up. At the spot where they previously stood, a deep, large pit was blasted out from the ground

after a huge bang.

The four elders were drenched in cold sweat due to shock. This woman's strength was beyond their expectation. They did not dare to waste any more time. After exchanging glances, all of them started chanting loudly some strange spells.

Ruolan sneered and she bent her body. After picking up some momentum, she shot towards the four elders in the sky like a sharp arrow.

"How dare you rebel!" The three warriors from Flaming Warriors struggled to stand up, and the swords in their hands shot towards Ruolan. They did not have the skill to fly into the air. Seeing that the elders were still chanting and afraid that this enemy would harm the elders, they threw their weapons towards her.

Ruolan chuckled and struck out her left hand. A flash of golden light appeared and formed into a dazzling fighting energy. When the sword thrown by the three warriors touched the dazzling golden light, they were immediately struck.

The three warriors grunted, and blood spurted from their mouths. Their body trembled several times and then collapsed.

Ruolan's body was already floating in the air, and she thought to herself, 'These guys lack strength, but they have praiseworthy courage.'

Seeing that the white light surrounding the four elders were getting brighter, she laughed hysterically and shot towards them like a meteor.

Following a loud boom, Ruolan crashed onto the Guardian Boundary created by her opponents. She gave out a weird cry and bounced away hard as if she had crashed into a mountain. She felt as though she could not breathe, and she almost collapsed. She could see stars in front of her eyes, and she almost blacked out.

Ruolan cursed angrily, "Excellent skills! Even the most advanced

guardian sorcery in the Roland Continent could not stop me, you..."

She stood up and launched a second attack, but this time she dared not to use her head anymore. Instead, she struck with her fist. The blow from her fist carried a powerful fighting energy and a great amount of strength. With such force, she could even knock down a city wall.

Even though they were all Paladins, in terms of strength alone, this monster-like Ruolan definitely did not belong to the level of humans.

A loud bang was heard, and the white Guardian Boundary shook violently. The four elders who were desperately chanting opened their mouths and spurted blood at the same time. The white light around them dimmed for a moment but immediately shone brighter than before.

Ruolan looked as though she was struck by lightning. She bounced back seven to eight meters before she was able to stabilize herself in midair.

The four elders gave a tragic laugh and bit on their tongue. They then spat a mouthful of blood on the wands in their hands.

In the dark of the night, their four light balls merged into one and became a massive ball of fire.

Above their heads, dark clouds formed, and currents rolled among the clouds. Rumbling sounds like thunder could then be heard.

Ruolan's face changed drastically. She had not seen or heard of such powerful magic before! This was not an ordinary sorcery to conjure thunder and lightning. Those dark clouds above their heads must be dozens of miles wide when joined together! The huge thunderbolts were still brewing among the clouds, and it was already so terrifying. If the thunderbolts struck down, this whole

canyon would most probably be evened out.

What kind of magic could have such great force?

On the peak of the mountain, the expressions on Old Skeleton and Fatty's face had changed too. They exchanged a glance and whispered at the same time, "Combination Magic!"

Was this the legendary Combination Magic possessed by the church, which could even defeat a Domain Master?

The temple of the Roland Continent had the Combined Sorcery, and sure enough, the church in the Radiant Continent had the Combination Magic!

A rumbling sound came from above their heads. Fatty suddenly grabbed Old Skeleton and after a flash, they had already moved hundreds of meters away.

As they were moving away, a golden lightning struck and blasted the peak where they stood just now into infinite pieces. The rock pieces fell like raindrops.

This was just a small leakage of energy before the Combination Magic actually blasted in full force!

Fatty could not take care of anything else. He roared, "Blast off these black clouds with your strongest move before it is too late!"

The carriage beneath started moving again. This time, there were no drivers driving the carriage. Instead, the one sitting in front of the carriage was an elder from the church clad in a white robe. The carriage had abandoned the four elders who were desperately maintaining their magic up in the sky and left at high speed without them.

The old skeleton sighed and said quietly, "Forget about them!"

Ruolan's body was already surrounded by golden fighting energy and she looked like a tiny burning sun. She gave out a roar and said, "Old Fatty, watch me use the ultimate move that you taught

me! Destructive strong gale!"

Her body suddenly spun like a tornado, the sword in her hands became a golden light and she shot towards the dark clouds in the sky.

Fatty sighed, "Fat lady, do you want to kill yourself? Your old master Sky does not want you to die!"

Fatty opened his mouth wide and a golden light spilled from his mouth. He soon uttered an unknown curse. Suddenly, he raised his fist and knocked the old skeleton down from the clouds before charging at the dark clouds in the sky.

The ruckus he created was greater than Ruolan. He looked like a meteor from outer space, trailing behind him was a long fiery flame which rapidly scattered the edge of the black clouds.

Sky had completely unleashed his Domain Powers. An invisible force in heaven and earth was unleashed and it tightly enveloped the poised clouds wherein lightning would strike down at any moment.

Fatty entered the clouds, his body trembling slightly and his head full of sweat. It was apparent that he was using all the energy he had. Bulks of energy were unleashed like nets which enveloped the clouds layer by layer, wrapping it densely and tightly.

Ruolan's fighting energy shot out like light blades. She lost her strength as her fighting energy dispersed suddenly, and she teetered, almost falling down from the sky.

After a series of booming sounds, numerous light blades shattered the lightning bolts which were brewing in the clouds. The lightning bolts rumbled and dissipated.

Fatty Sky held on with all his strength to prevent the clouds from bursting.

The two of them, one on the outside and another on the inside, acted like a millstone to cripple the strength of the Combination

Magic cast by the four elders of the church, who were top-level magicians in the Radiant Continent. Layer by layer from the inside and outside, they crippled the magic like peeling an apple, and the roaring thunderbolts gradually calmed down.

The dark clouds in the sky gradually faded and thinned. Finally, they turned into tiny spots of lights and disappeared.

The four elders had already fainted. They had used up all their magic and their strength, and they fell out from the sky. They were not warriors, and so they did not have strong bodies. As they fell from the sky onto the ground hard, they naturally died. But till death, they would not have believed that this powerful Combination Magic passed on by the Gods was so easily countered by these two people.

The radiance from Fatty's body had disappeared, and a helpless feeling arose from his heart. This stretch of clouds which continued for a dozen miles was wrapped by his energy, preventing it from exploding. How much energy was depleted by doing this? Although a Domain Master was almost near to a god-like existence, a man's strength still had its limit. By using man's strength to wrap those thunderbolts producing dark clouds to prevent it from exploding, Fatty had already used up all his strength.

He laughed bitterly. The energy in his body was almost completely exhausted. He cursed softly, "I had fought the Mystic Dragon for centuries, but I've never felt so exhausted. The Combination Magic of the church is indeed powerful! It was definitely more troublesome than the Hakone serpent."

His mind went dim and he fell down from the sky.

A hand grabbed Fatty's collar. The old skeleton smiled wryly, "You Fatty, it's rare that you feared that I'll get hurt and pulled me away. No wonder we're attracted to each other."

As a white magical light entered Fatty's body, his eyes opened, and he laughed, "Old Skeleton, we've finished off four, now it's

Rody's turn. Without the assistance of his elders, I don't think the Pope will be able to cast the God's Vanguishing Spell by himself!"

The old skeleton was all smiles. The magical energy from his hand continuously flowed into Fatty's body. He smiled and said, "Okay, let's go see how the fat lady is. Such an adorable girl, I hope she's not badly injured."

There was only one carriage left moving at high speed. Pope Corsica VI's expression was terrifyingly gloomy. The two elders sitting beside him, too, looked uneasy. The Pope saw clearly what happened just now. The black clouds covering the sky were cleared away by their opponents before they could actually launch an attack. What kind of strength was this?

Did the emperor have a Domain Master under him?

'But even if it was a Domain Master, he would have suffered quite badly after forcefully breaking up the Combination Magic of such scale? Humph! Luckily, I was smart enough to never disclose the secret of the Combination Magic mastered by the church!'

Fortunately, there were no more enemies coming after them. The great river was just a little further ahead, and after crossing the river, the Flaming Warriors will then come to aid. By that time, the situation will be totally different from now!

All of a sudden, a roar came from the sky!

The roar did not sound like a wolf, a tiger, or a lion, but as if a dragon's cry!

The muscles on the pope's face twitched. He looked outside and saw a huge shadow soaring in the air, its pair of wings brought a fierce wind.

That was a dragon!

Although it was just a lower-formed dragon, it was still a dragon!

"Dragon! Dragon!" the elder driving the carriage outside

shrieked.

"Shut up!" the pope bellowed, "Dragons do not exist in the Radiant Continent! The Emperor must have colluded with some masters of sorcery! That is just an inferior dragon summoned by conjuration sorcery! There's nothing to be afraid of!"

The flying dragon lowered its body and swept past. It was flying at low altitude, very close to the top of the carriage.

The horses immediately got frightened. It was the fear of a lower form of life towards a higher form of life. Even battle horses which were strictly trained were also frightened.

The four horses which were pulling the carriage suddenly ran in different directions. Boom! The carriage tilted to one side and almost crashed over.

The pope jumped out from the window like a ghost. He gave one slight tap and the four ropes broke silently. The four horses escaped in different directions, and the carriage came to a sudden halt. The wheels were also broken. The axle cracked, and the carriage sank deeply. It then came to a complete stop.

A long howl came from above, and the flying dragon soared down from the sky. It opened its mouth and breathed fiery flames onto them.

Corsica VI sneered, "How dare you, tiny reptile, disrespect the Gods!"

He raised his wand high up in the air, and a white flame shot out from its tip. The white light not only dissolved the dragon's breath, it also caused the flame to rapidly burn the flying dragon's massive body. The dragon screeched. Half of its wing was burnt, and the scales on its body lifted up. A loud bang was heard, and it plunged to the ground not far from the carriage.

The pope sneered and said in a loud voice, "Which sorcery master from the Roland Continent is here? I did not know that the sorcery

masters from the Roland Continent have switched allegiance to Radiant Empire's royal family! Show yourself!"

The three elders had gotten off the carriage and stood behind the Pope. They had already started chanting, and a ripple of magical energy unfolded.

A chilling laughter came from the sky, and a slender figure gradually appeared. A black robe shrouded the graceful figure, which seemed to have blended into the night sky. She chuckled softly. Although it was just a soft chuckle, her voice seemed to be ringing right beside the Pope's ears.

Corsica VI looked at the figure in the sky, and his expression changed slightly, "Such powerful sorcery! Are you a sorceror from the Roland Continent?"

Mouse held out one finger, and a black flame burst from the tip of her finger. A slight sneer spread across her face, and she said softly, "Roland Continent? I've already forgotten about it!"

She gently pointed her finger and a ball of black flame immediately shot down. The muscles on the Pope's face twitched and he exclaimed, "Hellfire!"

He immediately darted backward, but his three elders had no sense of danger. The elder at the front raised his wand and shot a white light towards her.

Although Mouse's ball of black flame was small, when it came into contact with the white light, boom! It burnt rapidly like a spark splashed by oil. The white light immediately ignited and became a ball of black flame!

The elder who shot the white light was caught off guard. He could only shout 'ah!' as he saw his white light became a black flame and spread onto his wand along the source.

Instantly, the black flame devoured his arm, and then he was ignited like a scarecrow!

The remaining two elders cried in alarm and retreated quickly. The elder burnt quietly for a moment, and then vanished completely!

Corsica VI said through gritted teeth, "Very impressive hellfire! You're not only a sorceror, you're also an evil heretic who worshipped the devil!"

Mouse's expression was icy cold. She sighed and thought to herself, 'This hellfire given to me by Rody is indeed savage!'

She shook her head and said, "I don't like to kill people, but you've injured my dragon just now. That guy's life will be considered as payback for my dragon's life."

She moved in a flash and disappeared among the clouds. She sneered and thought to herself, 'Another elder killed. Now that the pope's men have lessened, he will not be able to use the God Vanguishing Spell anymore? What God Vanguishing Spell, is it really that powerful?'

Corsica VI, who was standing on the ground, was stupefied when he saw Mouse disappeared in the sky. His expression was stiff.

He was confused whether this female sorceror who appeared out of nowhere was here to hunt him down and kill him or not. Why did she run off after killing only one of his elders?

But her hellfire was indeed very terrifying. It was rumored that even the Gods feared the hellfire, which was the symbol of the Mystic Dragon!

The pope clenched his teeth as he looked at the two terrified elders standing beside him.

He enjoyed a high status in the church, and even in the Radiant Continent, he was above all the others. Since when was he bullied like this?

He stomped his feet hard and growled, "Let's go! We must arrive at the great river before dawn!"

The two elders sighed. As they were about to speak, they were shocked by another surprise attack!

Boom! Dust and crushed soil suddenly blew about at the place where the three of them were standing!

The sky filled with dust blocked the three's vision! A grey figure broke through the ground and moved swiftly like a ghost. A chilling light flashed in its hand.

Blood spilled and before one of the elders could cry out, he had already been decapitated!

The grey figure came up close to the pope, and a chilling light shot across. The pope roared angrily, and his body suddenly swelled. Light spilled out and struck right on the grey figure. The person screeched and retreated dozens of meters away like lightning bolt. He knelt on the ground on one knee and raised his head, revealing an aged face. His eyes squinted, and his gaze was sharp as a blade. He laughed as blood trickled from the corner of his mouth, and the clothes he wore was also torn.

"The pope of the church is indeed formidable!" He laughed three times and before the Pope began to strike again, he continued to retreat. In just the blink of an eye, he had already drifted dozens of meters away and disappeared into the dark of the night.

Corsica VI was stunned as he looked at the elder collapsed beside him, whose throat was slit. His face went white due to anger. He felt a tinge of sweetness in his throat and spurted a mouthful of blood. He cursed shrilly, "Damn Abbas XI, I will tie and burn you at the stake!"

Old Mark ran for fifteen minutes before his body wobbled and he almost collapsed on the ground. He laughed bitterly, "I'm already old. It seems like my body is not working very well now. Sigh..."

Mouse suddenly appeared beside him from the darkness. She asked softly, "Mister Old Mark, are you okay?"

Old Mark shook his head and smiled wryly, "I'm old now, unlike you youngsters. If I have a young body, humph! How could he, a mere pope, hurt me?"

Mouse was silent for a moment. Her fingers slightly moved, and a healing spell was placed on Old Mark's body. A troubled look appeared on her face. She then said in a low voice, "From what I see, the pope's magic has already reached the level of a Great Practitioner. I'm afraid he is three times more powerful than me."

Old Mark sneered, "Humph! So what? I've killed an elder in front of him and escaped at ease. He could not do anything to me...But... but the blow he hurled at me in the end, it seems like the most advanced magic called the 'Original Seal of Spirit'. It is rather remarkable for an old man to attain such a level. He is one of the few in the history of the Empire over these few hundred years. But now, without his elders, the most formidable God's Vanguishing Spell of the Combination Magic cannot be conjured anymore. Now we will have to see if young Rody ahead can finish him off."

Mouse frowned and said, "You guys seem to fear the God's Vanguishing Spell very much. Is it a very powerful magic? Why haven't I heard of it before?"

Old Mark went silent for a moment. He then shook his head and said, "Girl, that God's Vanguishing Spell is really terrifying. Previously, a Domain Master was beaten until his soul was scattered by his God's Vanguishing Spell. Not even his corpse was left behind..."

Mouse's expression changed. She clenched her teeth and said, "No wonder Rody was reluctant to tell me about it. Is he afraid that I'll worry?"

She stomped her feet angrily and said, "I'm going to find Rody. He's alone ahead. I'm a bit worried!"

Having said that, she drifted away like a gust of wind.

Old Mark gasped for breath before he stood up. He still felt some pang in his chest, and he said with a bitter smile, "Sigh, have I been living an overly carefree life all this while? I'm already two hundred years old, why can't I even defeat a pope?"

Chapter 326: Rody's Revenge (I)

The pope only had one elder following him now. They could only rely on their powerful magic to fly as they had lost their carriage. After flying for dozens of miles, they saw from afar a wide river flowing ahead.

It was already nearing dawn right now. There was a faint white light in the sky, and a glow gradually appeared at the end of the horizon in the east.

The surrounding was quiet and peaceful, only the gurgling sound of the flowing river could be heard. However, the pope did not dare to let his guard down anymore. Initially, he thought that he would be able to divert the attention of the royal family's pursuers by dividing his forces into two groups, while he and several elders flee through another route. But they were hunted down several times in one night. It was obvious that the royal family knew their escape route very well, especially now that they had reached the river bank, which was the best natural place to intercept them.

He took a deep breath. Under the effect of powerful magic, a golden light flashed in his eyes, and the clarity of his vision immediately increased ten times. He could see clearly each and every detail of the surrounding areas with his eyes. Even the tender shoots on the tree top and the pebbles on the river bank became extremely clear.

He turned and whispered to the elder beside him, "Okay, release the signal."

Upon hearing his order, the elder took out a tiny crystal rock which was as red as blood from his chest. He slowly threw it into the sky and pointed his wand at it.

Boom! An invisible ripple, which was colorless and shapeless, spread out. This was a secret signal formed using magic and only those with profound magical powers could see it. Ordinary people

could never see it.

This was the secret signal of contact within the church. By using it, they could also avoid being hunted down by the royal family's armies.

"Your Holiness, they're here!" the elder exclaimed, excited and delighted at the same time.

Sure enough, in the sky, a stream of gentle magical energy was transmitted from across the great river. Although he could not see anything with his naked eyes, Corsica VI could clearly sense the other party's echo with his powerful magic ability.

The traces of magic rippled like water waves. It corresponded to the signal he released from afar.

However, he apparently sensed something amiss.

"Why is it so quiet?" Corsica VI scowled, "Weren't they told to bring their men to come to our aid?"

His eyes narrowed. Although the great river was about a hundred meters wide, when the pope scanned his eyes across the river and probed around using his magical powers, there was not the slightest sign of life energy from humans across the river, but only a hint of...

A hint of death!

The pope suddenly gasped, "Something is not right!"

Just as he was saying that, the surface of the great river in front of them rolled and foamed in an unusual manner!

Corsica VI could clearly sense a strong and pure energy unfolding. That was apparently the most authentic and purest form of energy of the Light Series!

Regardless of the sorcerors in the Roland Continent or the magicians in the Radiant continent, those who believed in the religion of God all practiced the purest magic of the Light Series.

But this energy coming from in front was gentle and warm without a tinge of ferocious murderous aura. It was as if it had blended into heaven and earth...

The wide great river before them split quietly!

The tranquil surface of the river was as though cut open by a pair of invisible scissors! The water which was flowing slowly suddenly became static, and a gap approximately five meters wide appeared in the middle of the river. The gap cut off the flowing waters and exposed the pebbles and soil on the bed of the river. There seemed to be an invisible force which stopped the flowing waters of the river on both sides.

A tall and big figure slowly walked up from the split river. His long, blue hair fluttered in the wind, and his uncreased warrior uniform did not even have a speck of dust on it.

His feet did not touch the ground and looked as though he was floating. Only Corsica VI could sense that that pure Light Series energy was actually emitted from this person!

His hand was held up gently, and the pure white ring on his fingertip radiated a soft glow. As he walked forward slowly, the river water on both sides retreated away....

This was obviously not a worldly power! Splitting the river easily and causing the river to become static without using any explosives!

Sweat drenched the forehead of Corsica VI. He who knew the religious books very well immediately thought of the ancient mythological legend written in the books!

Slowly, the person walked out from the river and came up to the riverside. The pope finally could see his face clearly. His expression became gloomy, and he said with his teeth clenched, "So it's you...I recognize you. You're the Marquis of the Empire, Regimental Commander of the Northern Army, Lord Rody."

Rody nodded. The expression on his face was calm, except for an occasional complicated look that flashed in his gaze. The murderous look in his eyes was not at all harsh, but it pierced deeply into Corsica VI's body like ice.

"Pope, did you know? I've waited for this day to come for a very, very long time..." There was no warmth in Rody's voice. It was as cold as ice.

He slowly unsheathed his strange scimitar. His movements were very slow and careful as if he was afraid he would make any mistakes.

"Lord Rody, did Abbas XI send you here?" The Pope squinted his eyes, his hands gripping his wand tightly.

Rody looked up calmly, but his eyes were locked on to the Pope's face. His voice was even calmer, but this calmness sent chills down Corsica VI's spine.

"Your Holiness, did you know? I've been wanting to kill you since a long time ago. I've always wanted to..." Rody said calmly, "So I've been waiting for this chance like today for such a long long time... I've even thought about this before, if one day I can confront you, how will I strike?"

A smile crept up on his face...That was a very scary smile!

"Previously, I thought I will be very agitated, very angry, and I will lunge at you recklessly and fight you until death..." Rody continued slowly, "But I will not do this...because this opportunity is too precious...I will cherish this opportunity. Even though now my heart is raging, and I wanted so badly to rip you into pieces immediately...I still need to remind myself to remain calm and be careful. I cannot afford to make a single mistake!"

He raised his scimitar and smiled, "You see, I'm ready now. I assure you that I will go to all lengths. No matter what, I must kill you today!"

Confronted by such a terrifyingly calm Rody, Corsica VI subconsciously retreated one step back. He could clearly sense the murderous aura from Rody, but the expression on Rody's face was way too calm...

"Marquis Rody, I can't recall when the religion of God had offended you!" Corsica VI said coldly, "As the empire's marquis who has boundless prospects, you deliberately defy the religion of God in the Tulip Family's fief...You said you wanted to kill me, but I don't remember having any grudge between you and me."

Rody chuckled, and a weird look appeared in his eyes. He shook his head and said, "Pope, you are very smart. Are you trying to stall for time? Let me tell you, the Flaming Warriors across the river whom you are waiting to come to your aid will not be coming anymore...never. All three thousand two hundred of them were completely dead last night! I can assure you in my name, none of them have survived. Every single one of them is dead!"

"Impossible!" the elder standing at his side roared, "Impossible! We have millions of armies in the eastern region. You...you can't possibly sneak into the eastern region and kill off all our support army quietly!"

Rody smiled, "It was indeed impossible...but unfortunately, you all are just a bunch of psychics. Perhaps there are powerful magicians among you who have boundless magical power, but when it comes to war, you all are just amateurs..."

Rody gently erected one finger, "Just one small trick! We just carefully revealed bits and pieces of the news of your escape to the Vampire Tribe, and intentionally advanced your contact time half a day earlier. So yesternight, the three-thousand-men army that was waiting to get in touch with you at the opposite side of the river were ambushed by the Vampire Tribe. One thousand assassins from the Vampire Tribe had easily crushed the three thousand Blazing Warriors that were sent to pick you up." His smile was evil, the kind of evil that was formed from genuine

hatred from the depths of his heart, "Of course, we secretly helped them a bit...

"I suppose you have been hunted down several times along the way? That was just to hold you up and buy some time so that I have the time to get rid of your supporting armies..."

The smile on Rody's face finally disappeared, and a murderous look appeared in his eyes. He said in a low voice, "Now, I can assure you that there aren't any forces of the church within a hundred miles from here. And you, Your Holiness Corsica VI, there aren't any elders or Flaming Warriors beside you anymore, so, you are destined to die here today!"

"You...As the royal family of the empire, how can you collude with the Vampire Tribe!" the elder standing beside the Pope shouted angrily. He was so frightened that he could only vent his stress by shouting and scolding.

"Shut up," Corsica VI suddenly whispered. His originally aged face seemed to have become ten times older in the blink of an eye. His eyes became hollow, he shook his head gently and said in a low voice, "Lord Rody, you guys are really brilliant...very brilliant...but I really don't understand. Where did your hatred towards me come from?"

He smiled, but his smile was very bitter, "I can sense your killing intention towards me...Such hatred, where did it come from?"

Rody walked towards him slowly. As he closed in step by step, golden fighting energy silently flared up from his body, and the scimitar in his hand buzzed due to the fighting energy.

"I was just a small boy who was alone and had no one to depend on since young...There was once this person who treated me very well. He was like a teacher, like a father, to me. He taught me how to become a man, and he taught me swordsmanship. He made me understood the truth of strength, and he even taught me all his lifetime knowledge..." Rody's voice became softer and softer, his

body trembled uncontrollably, "But, you killed him! You killed him right in front of my eyes! You destroyed his soul and mind, and not even his corpse was left behind..."

He waved the scimitar, and a golden half-moon slash split out!

After a howling sound, the half-moon slash struck heavily on the ground in front of Corsica VI's feet. A deep crack was left behind on the ground.

"Half-moon slash...You, you are talking about Master Autumn!" the pope's pupils constricted, and he exclaimed, "I remember now! You were that lad who battled the Vampire Tribe's prince at Prince Baron's residence that night years ago! It was on that night that we obtained the Dracula's Spear!"

Looking at the burning golden fighting energy around Rody's body, Corsica VI sighed feebly, "I didn't expect that you've already attained the level of Sacred Swordsman...Master Autumn's disciple is indeed extraordinary...hehe..."

He thumped his wand hard on the ground and bellowed, "Come on then! I'm God's most loyal servant. I would like to see how you are going to fight against God's dignity!"

An outstanding white light surrounded the Pope Corsica VI. There was a holy glow on his face. His beard and hair fluttered under the morning twilight, making him look like a divine lord!

"Evil heretic, receive the punishment of the Gods!" The elder at the side suddenly roared and took two big steps forward, blocking in front of the pope. The wand in his hand was also inserted into the ground. He drew a cross on his chest using his hands, and then his wand too emitted a white light.

"Humph! The Light Series' Gods Guardian Boundary again...Do you really think that that thing that looks like a turtle shell can stop me?"

Rody sneered, and then he moved!

He seemed to have moved in a flash and took one step forward.

But by taking just one step, he had already stepped forward several meters and suddenly appeared in front of the elder!

Sure enough, the white Guardian Boundary of the Light Series was unable to stop him. He had just entered as he pleased!

Both the elder and Corsica VI's faces changed drastically. They looked at Rody in disbelief!

Impossible!

Even a Domain Master could not so easily break through and enter this kind of Guardian Boundary!

Rody's body flashed again, and he went up so close to the elder, his face was almost touching the elder's nose. There was a chilling smile on his face.

"I forgot to tell you that I possess the body of the Mystic Dragon! Whichever Light Series Spells you use, unless you've attained the Domain level, if not, when used on me..." His eyes suddenly narrowed, "I'm immune!"

A black flame shot out from his hand.

A whooshing sound was heard, and a black dragon rammed through the elder's body.

The elder screeched and he fell to the ground as a hole was punched through his body. A black spear was impaled on his body, and a black flame was silently devouring his body...as well as his soul!

"Dracula's Spear!" The pope looked as though he had just seen a ghost. His face changed dramatically, "So it was you who took it away!"

Rody grabbed the spear and stepped forward.

The Vampire Tribe's magical weapon was indeed powerful. The flesh and blood of the elder who was pierced with it were rapidly

drying up, as though his whole body was sucked dry by this magical weapon that was cursed by the Gods. He immediately became a mummy!

Rody pulled up the spear and looked at the pope smilingly, "Years ago, you ambushed Master Autumn with this spear. Now...I'm going to do the same to you!"

Chapter 327: Rody's Revenge (II)

"Go to hell!" Rody roared and stabbed the spear in his hand forward!

Corsica VI laughed woefully, but he did not dodge. A light of despair flashed in his eyes, along with a tinge of madness.

The spear pointed at the pope who stood upright and unafraid. He raised his wand high and bellowed, "Come on, young Rody! Even if I die here today, I will bring you apostate to hell with me!"

Poof! The spear pierced through Corsica VI's body. The black flame spread along the spear into the pope's body, but an odd glow appeared in the pope's eyes.

He closed his eyes and he chanted a spell slowly...

Ripples of energy started to flow out from the wand and spread out in the air silently.

Rody immediately felt that something was wrong.

The Dracula Spear was the Vampire Tribe's magical weapon. The flesh and blood of those who were pierced by this magical weapon would be sucked dry. Even their souls would be absorbed into the spear and imprisoned in it for eternity.

However, the spear had pierced through the pope's body and left a massive hole in his chest, but everything seemed to have frozen. Although fresh red blood was slowly spilling out, there was nothing else unusual about the pope's body except for his face which had become paler.

Rody could indistinctly make out the golden rays radiating from the pope, which suppressed the devil flame on the Dracula Spear. The golden rays did not look like any Light Series Spells. This aura...

Rody's heart sank. He had an uneasy feeling.

This aura, it felt like....

It felt like the same aura that Rody had experienced during the battle with the Hakone Serpent in the Roland Continent! That aura was completely different from any power in this world. It was an aura beyond human strength! It was not a fighting energy, not a Domain Master's energy, but....

The level of Gods! Rody finally understood why he was so familiar with this aura.

It was because traces of a 'Divine Primordial Spirit' fluctuated with it!

The smile on the pope's pale face became creepier. He opened his mouth and released some golden gas. He then gave a sad laugh and said, "Marquis Rody, let's go to hell together!"

As he was saying that, he waved his wand gently, and a golden light shot into the air towards the clouds like a sharp arrow. It looked as though it could pierce a hole in the sky.

Rody's heart raced and he subconsciously withdrew the spear, but it felt like some force was controlling the Dracula Spear, and the golden rays emitted from the pope was rapidly devouring the black flame on the Dracula Spear. The body of the Dracula Spear started to buzz, and Rody could clearly feel the spear vibrating!

Rody gritted his teeth and let go of the spear. His other hand grabbed the Dragon Spell Scimitar and struck it forward violently.

The pope sighed and closed his eyes, but he held out one hand and warded off Rody's scimitar bare-handed.

A loud clang was heard.

As Rody's scimitar which carried golden fighting energy struck heavily on the pope's arm, a loud noise was made. Under the protection of the golden rays on the pope's arms, his arms emitted a strange glow that made it seem like it was not made of flesh and blood anymore.

A thundering sound exploded, and Rody felt a shock from the great impact that his body was unable to resist as his body shot backward.

An arm soared into the sky. The pope cried out in pain and his body staggered, almost collapsing onto the ground. He spurted blood again and sighed, "Good! Good! Good! Good one, Marquis Rody! I didn't expect that besides having the Dracula Spear, your scimitar carries the Dragon Tribe's curse! Even my magical body could not withstand it!"

Rody was shocked as his arm ached and went limp.

Although he had only recovered to the Sacred Swordsman level, he could smash a huge rock with his scimitar laced with fighting energy in just one blow. But now, the pope warded off his attack with his bare arm, and even knocked him off!

Rody felt that his fighting energy was smashed by the impact just now. He took a deep breath with great difficulty and managed to suppress his scattered energy.

The pope narrowed his eyes, and the golden rays from his body became more and more dazzling. He had an inviolably sacred and majestic aura around him.

The golden beam from the wand in his hand connected directly to the sky, and it tore open the vault of heaven. Flames and thunders poured down from the opening, burning the sky and even suppressing the rays of the rising sun in the east.

A strange phenomenon was formed in the sky. Half of it occupied by the rising sun, and the other half was full of thunders and lightning!

"Rody, you are already very powerful...I did not hesitate to shorten my life and merge my body with the artifact gifted by the Gods to the church. I thought that none of the weapons in this world can harm me anymore, but I did not expect that..." He

glanced at his amputated arm.

Before Rody could speak, a cold voice rang from afar, "You've committed the sin of blasphemy by merging your mortal body with God's artifact! As a pope, how dare you steal the power of the Gods!"

Mouse drifted to Rody's side like a whiff of smoke. There was concern in her eyes, and she placed a healing spell on Rody's body.

"Be careful..." Mouse whispered, "Those who have merged with the God's artifact, even if you rip their flesh, you will be struck back by the artifact's natural powers!"

Rody sneered, "It's just an artifact. I've seen many of them, what can it do to me!"

Mouse's eyes fell on the pope standing at a distance who was emitting dazzling golden rays. She clenched her teeth, "This is not the same, not the same. We've only seen ordinary artifacts. The force exerted by those artifacts were driven by human's magical powers, but since he had merged his body with the artifact, that means he is now using his life to drive the artifact!"

"Ah..." The pope suddenly opened his mouth and rays of golden light spilled out. The expression on his face seemed like he was in extreme agony. The golden fighting energy from his body flowed continuously onto the wand, which then became a beam shooting directly up into the sky. The beam kept tearing the opening bigger and bigger!

Mouse's expression changed, and she exclaimed in shock, "It's the Heaven Mending Stone! It's the Heaven Mending Stone! This old devil has refined the treasured artifact of the religion, the Heaven Mending Stone, into his body!"

She grabbed Rody and shouted, "We cannot kill him today, let's go!"

Rody struggled free from Mouse's grasp and roared, "Why! If I

don't kill him today, how long more do I have to wait for the next chance!"

He would not listen to Mouse. He held his scimitar and charged forward. Immediately, fighting energy exploded from his body, and a magnificent Half-Moon Slash shot across the sky.

Following a loud crack, the Half Moon Slash collided with the golden rays radiating from the pope. It then dissipated, but the pope trembled, and blood trickled from his mouth—even his blood had become golden in hue!

Rody already came in front of him and raised his scimitar before swinging it down onto his head!

Clang! It was as though it had struck something metallic. Rody could clearly see the golden rays from the pope's body entered the scimitar in his hand, and also a great resistance! As he inched deeper, his strength would be rapidly neutralized. Finally, Rody roared and his scimitar sliced through the pope's skull!

Crack! One-third of the pope's head was sliced open, but then something weird happened.

No blood was spilled, and no brain matter splattered out. One-third of the pope's head was split open, but Rody groaned and suddenly flung out. The scimitar in his hands vibrated in agony as if it was overwhelmed.

Mouse raced towards him, but before she could come to Rody's side, he was already struggling to stand up. His hands were covered with blood. He already used all his strength for that blow just now, but it merely split open one-third of the pope's head! And the part between his thumb and index finger was torn due to the impact.

The pope looked creepy with his head split into two and the Dracula Spear impaled in his chest, but he still stood firm without any sign of collapsing. A chuckle came from his mouth, but that chuckle did not sound human-like anymore.

Finally, a golden ray spilled out from his mouth and fell heavily onto his wand. He then slowly collapsed and sat on the ground.

Rody stared at the pope sitting afar in disbelief. He asked through gritted teeth, "What is going on?"

Mouse shook his head, "You can't kill him! His body is equivalent to a God's artifact! Can you destroy the Dracula Spear? Can you break the Dracula Spear into two? Even if it's you, it's still impossible right?"

Rody immediately recalled himself trying to destroy the Dracula Spear a long time ago. Indeed, it was not easy to destroy a God's artifact or a magical weapon.

During their conversation, the roar of thunder became more and more violent. Flashes of purple thunderbolts struck down from the sky. The gorgeous lightning filled the sky like writhing snakes.

Rody's expression changed, "Why on earth did he pierce a large hole in the sky?"

The pope sat there, his head eerily split in half, and he suddenly opened his eyes. Mouse's hair stood on end as the scene she saw was too scary.

An intangible voice floated into their ears, "Rody, receive the God's punishment..."

"God's Vanquishing Spell..."

After a loud boom, a lightning the size of a huge axe struck down right on the pope's wand. However, there was no explosion. The pope and his wand became ashes and smoke in the midst of the purple lightning! They had become invisible!

A gigantic hand stretched out from the sky and completely tore open the crack in the vault of heaven. A large black hole appeared, and a golden armored giant formed from light stepped out from the black hole!

Mouse was stupefied as she looked at the weird phenomena in the sky. She muttered, "It's indeed the God's Vanquishing Spell! It is the supreme magic that has been lost for thousands of years, the God's Vanquishing Spell!" she shook his head and said in a low voice, "The pope merged himself with the God's artifact, so he can perform the God's Vanquishing Spell alone without the assistance of others using Combination Magic. But the price he has to pay for using his life to drive the God's artifact is to finally become ashes and smoke!

The gigantic warrior above, who looked like a god clad in golden armor, stepped out from the clouds. His eyes which resembled lightning gazed upon the earth, and a loud shattering howl came out from his mouth. The gigantic axe in his hand burnt with golden flames, which caused the sky to burn with a golden color.

Immediately, a row of figures appeared behind him. All of them were warriors clad in golden armors. Their bodies were surrounded by golden flames, but they were smaller in size compared to the giant.

They stood among the clouds like divine troops descended from heaven!

"Sinful apostate! You have the evil dragon breath in you!" The golden armored giant suddenly roared in anger. His eyes fell on Rody. Immediately, two large beams surrounded Rody and pierced through his body, illuminating every inch of his body! Under the illumination of the light beams, Rody's fighting energy dispersed and became invisible. The innate nature of his force was revealed!

That was a ball of black flames! The flames of the Mystic Dragon!

The golden armored giant's roar sounded like thunder. A huge hand then waved, and the burning gigantic axe struck down above his head!

The God's Vanquishing Spell had resurfaced!

In the canyon dozens of miles away, Old Skeleton and Fatty looked at the strange phenomena in the distant sky in disbelief. Old Skeleton forcefully swallowed his saliva. He could feel bitterness in his mouth.

"How could this be possible...how could this be possible...How could the pope perform the God's Vanquishing Spell on his own? Oh no...Is that boy Rody still alive? Even a Domain Master might not be able to withstand the God's Vanquishing Spell...Moreover, Rody is not at the domain level now..."

The flesh on Fatty Sky's face was trembling too. He was having a great struggle in his heart right now. Finally, he sighed and said loudly, "The boy looks pleasing in my eyes, I must go to his rescue!"

When he was done, his large body suddenly soared into the air and flew towards the distance like a huge bird.

Andy stomped his feet and cursed, "If that boy dies, I'm afraid Nicole will put up a deadly fight with me. Little boy, I'm not willing to let you die..." When he finished saying, he immediately used his magic power to fly and followed after Fatty.

Back there, Rody held his scimitar and looked arrogantly at the gigantic axe striking down from the sky. He pulled Mouse behind him and manipulated the fighting energy in his whole body. He rose into the air like a tiny sun and knocked into the giant axe!

A loud boom was heard. It felt like the sky was falling and the earth was cracking apart...

Chapter 328: Eighth Transformation

Rody collided into the gigantic axe like a comet!

Although the golden armored giant in the sky was just an apparition and not a physical entity, the axe contained boundless magical power. Rody immediately felt the Dragon Spell Scimitar in his hand let out a sorrowful buzz and then it began to crack inch by inch starting from the tip of its blade!

His limbs too felt as though they were breaking apart, and his body was about to disintegrate. He held his breath and did not dare to reserve any of his fighting energy. He suddenly roared, and his fighting energy instantly transformed into pure black flames!

That was the hellfire!

The hellfire had the characteristic of devouring everything, and the golden armored giant's gigantic axe too could not resist it. The enormous light apparition was immediately devoured, leaving behind a gap, and the black flames were working hard to devour the giant's axe!

"Lowly apostate! How dare you use the devil's fire forbidden by the gods!" a loud voice exploded from the sky above. The huge sound wave immediately blasted Rody away, and he fell heavily on the ground.

Boom!

A deep, large pit ten meters wide was formed in the ground!

Even though his body was toughened by the Mystic Dragon's blood and became extremely strong, he was still soaked red with blood from head to toe. There were thousands of wounds on his body, and every inch of his skin had split open! Right now, Rody was badly mutilated. Not an intact piece of flesh could be found on his body.

Mouse cried out in alarm and staggered towards Rody and let out

another shrill cry when she saw the ripped flesh on Rody's body. Tears of pain trickled down her face, and she threw herself beside him. She held out her hands, but she dared not touch Rody because his appearance right now was too scary. He looked as if he would break apart anytime. Mouse was afraid that she would injure Rody if she was not careful.

Rody could not even open his eyes now. He opened his mouth, but his voice was very soft. He only managed to say, "Mouse, you... leave immediately..."

Mouse wept bitterly. One healing spell after another was performed on Rody, and she was unaware that her sorcery was almost exhausted.

A loud roar came from the sky once again, and the loud voice exploded in their ears, "Lowly apostate! Receive the ultimate judgment of the gods!"

The gigantic light axe in the golden armored giant's hand had become intact once again and the gap had disappeared. He raised the huge axe with his hands and struck it down for the second time!

A clear whistling sound came from afar and a huge light ball with a flaming tail charged in their direction. The figure flew past Rody and Mouse like a thunderbolt and snatched the Dracula Spear on the ground like a gale. He then turned around and bellowed towards the sky, "Stop your nonsense about the gods!"

The expression on fatty Sky's face was hideous. He gave out a loud roar before grabbing the spear and throwing it upwards!

The Domain Master's attack was nothing out of the ordinary, but its spear attack was quiet, and nothing happened. An invisible domain force was formed between the heaven and earth. The sky was distorted in an instant. The opening in the sky where the golden armored giant stood trembled, and it looked as though it was closing up!

Flames radiated aggressively from Sky's body. The Dracula Spear he threw traveled at a speed indiscernible to the naked eye and shot towards the golden armored giant. It had only raised its huge axe halfway when it suddenly gave out a thunderous roar!

The Dracula Spear was indeed the vampire tribe's most powerful weapon, which could injure the gods as told in the legends! The golden armored giant's roar was filled with pain and rage. The light from his body dimmed, and even his figure was starting to look blur.

Sky roared again and soared up into the sky! The flames around his body became even more terrifying, and his body suddenly increased ten times in size. It was as though a light-figure of Fatty magnified ten times exploded from his body!

Old Skeleton's voice rang, "Fatty! Are you going to risk your life!"

Old Skeleton had only arrived slightly later than Fatty. He held out his hand and created a boundary to protect himself as well as Rody and Mouse. He then shouted, "Black Veil chick, don't worry about that guy first. He's not going to die. Put up your most powerful boundary! Fatty has gone all out! He... he has conjured the Domain Master's astral body!"

The greatly magnified light-figure of Sky suddenly soared into the clouds, holding a huge, long sword condensed from fighting energy. He roared, and his imposing manner stood up to the golden armored giant!

A flash of golden light swept past, and Sky's light-sword struck forward. It smashed the little light warriors standing on both sides of the giant in the blink of an eye. Those warriors were formed from coagulation of light, so it was immediately scattered with Sky's one mighty blow!

The giant roared, and the sky felt like it was going to crack. It moved its axe in a sweeping motion and swung it hard on Sky's light-sword.

At this moment, it felt as though the sky was going to fall apart!

Even dozens of miles away, the sky could be seen completely covered in a golden light. Sky's light-figure was knocked off with one blow. It gradually dimmed before it disappeared completely. Sky's physical body flew out like a bullet and finally crashed into the walls of the distant canyon. A huge hollow was blasted out of the mountain wall.

Old Skeleton saw this clearly and gave out a shrill cry, "Fatty, you aren't dead, are you!"

Rody struggled to stand up. Half of the wounds on his body had healed after Mouse continuously cast dozens of advanced healing spells on him. But he felt pain all over his body, as though it was going to burst open! He could only watch helplessly as Fatty charged towards the sky and was blasted off after striking at the golden armored giant. His heart ached terribly!

The memory from the imperial palace years ago immediately came back to him. He remembered how Master Autumn, who was also a Domain Master, was crushed after one blow by the God's Vanquishing Spell. When he saw Fatty getting knocked down, his emotions surged, and blood spurted out from his mouth.

The empty space in his body formed from the 'Divine Primordial Spirit', which devoured half of his strength, suddenly spun at high speed! Rody's body trembled uncontrollably, and a humming sound came from his mouth. It was as though he was in great pain.

Mouse was shocked, and she immediately grabbed Rody. As she was about to speak, she gave out a cry of surprise instead. She was bounced off violently by a powerful force just as her fingers came into contact with Rody's body.

The empty space in Rody's body spun rapidly like a roulette as if something was rapidly ballooning inside and trying to break out from within!

Plentiful and strong forces spun out vigorously from the empty space. Rody was overwhelmed by the massive torrent! He suddenly opened his mouth and a beam of light shot out. The face of Old Skeleton changed drastically. He pulled Mouse and said in a low voice, "We need to get out of the way!"

Rody's clothes were already torn into pieces. Blood suddenly gushed out vigorously from the numerous wounds on his body! But the flow of blood was somewhat strange. It looked like there was some force within his body squeezing out all the blood from his whole body!

Rody's roar became louder and louder. His backbones cracked and beneath his skin, dots of black scales were slowly showing up! He suddenly knelt on the ground, and swoosh!

An enormous pair of dragon wings spread out from his back!

The blood gushing out from his wounds finally stopped. Black flames rose from his body which evaporated the gushing blood in an instant. Rody stood up slowly. He had bled so much, but his body was gradually swelling up!

His eyes had transformed into an abnormally black color, and they looked towards the sky maliciously. The wounds all over his body were healing at an insanely high rate! Granulation tissues could be seen growing insanely with the naked eyes!

All of a sudden, he clenched one fist and punched it towards the golden armored giant in the sky. A beast-like snarl came from his mouth.

"Roar..."

Following a loud bang, gusts of wind whipped up, blowing away the golden light filling the sky!

The scales on his body were rapidly growing. In just a while, the scales had covered all of his body and it finally stopped after spreading towards his cheek. Rody, right now, had a pair of huge

wings behind his back, his body was covered with black scales, and he had become three times taller!

The golden armored giant instinctively flinched at the power of his roar. But he then gave out a weak howl, "Lowly, evil apostate! You! How dare you use the Mystic Dragon's Spiritual Dragon Change in front of the gods!"

Old Skeleton's face changed drastically. He stared at Rody and was unable to utter a single word.

Mouse was aghast. She, too, looked at Rody anxiously. Her voice shook as she said, "He... did he... did he..."

Old Skeleton closed his eyes and he calculated rapidly, "Hmm, at the southern mountains where he transformed into a dragon and killed Wuya, that was the first transformation. In the imperial city where he wiped off the vampire tribe after Jojo was killed, that was the second transformation. At the Thunder City where he battled with Paladin Fielding, that was the third transformation. At the sea along his journey to Roland Continent where he battled with the first Paladin of the Dragon Tribe, that was the fourth transformation! In the Roland Continent where he put on the ring from old Moses' staff and was hunted down by three Dragon Paladins, breaking through the domain, that was the fifth transformation. In the Hakone Kingdom where he underwent yet another transformation while slaying the Hakone Serpent, that was the sixth transformation... And then on his way back he got rid of the pursuers from the Roland Temple, that was the seventh transformation..." he spoke rapidly. After he finished calculating, his expression calmed down a bit. He sighed and said, "Luckily, luckily, so now this is the eighth transformation! The situation is still not out of hand..."

Rody's body bent forward slightly. He poised and suddenly shot into the air! A loud bang was heard. The ground where he stood previously exploded and rubbles spattered everywhere.

The wings on Rody's back spread open and fluttered. He stood high up in midair! Black fumes silently spread out from his body, and it was totally different from the 'hellfire' performed by Rody during normal days. These were not flames... but just black fumes, spreading out silently...

The golden armored giant seemed to fear Rody very much. Although Rody was very tiny when compared to him, Rody just stopped right beneath his nose, and the giant dared not strike the gigantic axe in his hands down on him...

A series of laughter rang through the sky. Rody's laughter was extremely ear-piercing, and it was not the kind of laughter that humans could make. When Old Skeleton and Mouse heard his laughter, they trembled, and their faces were ashen. They had to quickly cover their ears with their hands as the laughter sounded like some devilish voice from hell that could rip open one's soul when it fell on their ears!

The golden armored giant seemed like he was becoming more and more afraid. Finally, he could not endure it anymore and gave out a loud roar. The light-axe in his hands swung out aggressively, and this blow too shook heaven and earth. It was even more powerful than that blow which knocked off Fatty just now!

Clang!

A strange noise came from the sky. Andy and Mouse looked up and saw the axe in the golden armored giant's hands frozen.

Rody held out one finger and placed it in front of him. The blade of the axe struck heavily on Rody's finger, but no matter how loud the giant roared, he was unable to move it forward another inch!

Rody remained standing quietly in the air. The black fumes around his body did not explode, nor did it bedazzle. It continued to silently spread out from his body...

Silence!

Rody's movements were so quiet that it was terrifying! Without making any noise and too much movement, he easily had intercepted the blow from the golden armored giant's axe which could split the earth and heaven!

The large body of the golden-armored giant trembled vigorously. It was apparent that he was filled with fear!

Suddenly, he opened his mouth and shouted, "The devil's power has taken shape! Retreat immediately..."

Rody finally moved again!

His two fingers gently pinched on the blade of the gigantic light-axe, and then he opened his mouth suddenly! An ear-piercing howl spilled out from his mouth, and Rody's body immediately shot forward like a black ball of flame!

Following a loud bang, a golden light radiated all over the sky. The black ball of flame not only pierced through the gigantic light-axe, it also pierced into the golden armored giant's body!

The golden armored giant gave out a roar, but his roar stopped abruptly. He opened his huge mouth wide, but he could not let out a single sound anymore...

The huge golden figure in the sky suddenly inflated! It inflated rapidly like a balloon. The expression on the golden armored giant's face became more and more scared as he inflated bigger and bigger. Finally, after a boom, a golden light filled the sky and its huge body exploded into shards of light. It then vanished completely!

Rody's figure appeared from the golden light. An evil smile was spread across his face and he took in a deep breath, inhaling the golden light through his nostrils. He seemed quite pleased, and he turned to look at the tiny golden warriors behind him who had cowered away. He casually waved his hand, and a black flame swept across the sky. Before the golden warriors could make any

sound, they turned into a golden gas and disappeared...

Old Skeleton body trembled uncontrollably. The expression on his face was of shock, fear, as well as excitement. Mouse, who was standing beside him, paled and asked shakily, "Rody... Has he recovered to the domain... domain level..."

Old Skeleton took a deep breath and turned to look at Mouse. He said through gritted teeth, "No..."

The expression on his face was very odd and the smile on his face was worse than crying. He said slowly, "Even the domain level is not so powerful... He... he seems to have entered the rank of the gods!"

Chapter 329: The Devil's Coming

Rody stood upright in the sky, looking like an ancient devil with the pair of dragon wings spread out. Purple sky-fire and lightning flashed and roared within the huge crack in the sky. Lightning streaked like writhing snakes, but when they struck on Rody's body, they were immediately shattered by the black flames surrounding him.

Rody's body trembled slightly as he held out his hands with his palms stretched, as though forcibly ripping something. He seemed to be exerting a great effort, causing the black flames around his body to surge and shine brightly. The huge crack in the sky soon slowly closed up.

Rody suddenly let out an ear-piercing howl that almost knocked out Old Skeleton and Mouse. The crack in the sky gave a weak sigh like a tired beast. It sounded angry but furiously helpless at the same time.

Rody shattered the last streak of purple lightning with one blow, and the crack in the sky closed up completely. Rody then steadied himself, placed his hands down, and lowered his head to re-examine this land.

Old Skeleton and Mouse both possessed super strength, so their vision was naturally very sharp. Both of them could clearly see the expression on Rody's face. His expression was cold and ghastly. His eyeballs were abnormally black, and the corners of his mouth curved into an eerie smile which would send chills into those who look at him...

Finally, Rody's gaze fell on Old Skeleton and Mouse. He let out another sharp howl and dashed downwards swiftly like a lightning!

He lifted one finger, and a whiff of terrifying black flame sprung up from his fingertip. The air was immediately separated, and he

reappeared right in front of Mouse and Old Skeleton.

A murderous look filled his face, and following a slight tap with his fingertip, the boundary set up by a master magician and a master sorcerer was disintegrated in an instant. A pair of cold hands grabbed Old Skeleton and Mouse's throats, lifting them from the ground!

Mouse could clearly feel his hand choking her throat. She gazed at Rody fearfully. Sorrow spilled from her gaze, and she called out to him in a hoarse voice, "Rody... Rody... What's wrong with you... you..."

Rody's eyes turned to Mouse who was struggling weakly, and a complicated expression appeared on his face. The expression looked as though he was having an intense struggle in his heart. The hands clutching their throats would relax but then tighten up again. The expression on his face became increasingly pained and frantic. Murderous look and confusion alternated in his eyes. Finally, Rody's hands let go after a loud roar.

Old Skeleton and Mouse fell onto the ground gasping for breath, but Mouse immediately got up and hugged Rody's legs, sobbing, "Rody... Rody... What is wrong with you!"

As Mouse hugged Rody, a murderous look immediately flashed in his eyes, and his hand struck towards Mouse's neck like a lightning. However, halfway through it, his action froze, and a complicated look appeared in his eyes. Rage suddenly flashed across his face but was quickly replaced by reluctance, which then turned into an expression of struggle.

"Silly woman, are you out of your mind!" Old Skeleton dragged Mouse away from behind. He held down Mouse's shoulders tightly and shouted, "He's not Rody now! He's the Mystic Dragon! It's just that Rody's consciousness is fighting with the Mystic Dragon for this body, so he did not kill us... you..."

Mouse's heart ached terribly. Tears streaked her face and she

screamed, "No! Why did Rody become like this!"

Mouse struggled desperately, but Old Skeleton held her down firmly. Rody's eyes locked on the two of them standing in front of him, his hands raised and dropped, and dropped and raised again. It was obvious that he was at the edge of flipping out with his inner struggle.

Finally, he opened his mouth and gave a thundering roar filled with rage and helplessness. The pair of dragon wings spread out and after a few howls, he soared into the sky once again. After a series of long screeches, his body shot towards the east and disappeared from their vision in the blink of an eye.

"Rody..." Mouse looked up into the sky and shrieked. Her body then swayed, and she passed out gradually.

Old Skeleton looked helplessly at the woman beneath his feet, and then looked into the east, helplessness filled his heart.

They had lost terribly today. Although they managed to get rid of the pope, that boy, Rody, had become mad. Judging from the way he behaved, it was possible that the Mystic Dragon had taken control of Rody's body. They would need to rack their brains on how to solve this mess.

Old Skeleton lifted Mouse and carried her on his back and walked slowly back on the path they came from.

After walking for some time, he saw a quivering black figure flying towards them from the peak in front. The figure seemed unsteady, and it almost fell down twice, like a big bird with injured wings. As it flew closer, it was actually fatty Sky!

Sky looked extremely wretched. All that was left of his clothes were strips of torn fabric, exposing his fleshy body. He was covered in blood, and there were black and grey patches on his face. His huge head was now bald. Not only was his head bald, even his eyebrows were gone.

When he saw Old Skeleton, he eventually could not hold on any longer, and crashed down in front of Old Skeleton.

"Old Skeleton, please cast dozens of healing spells on me quickly. My goodness, that blow almost crushed me! If it was not because I've battled with the Mystic Dragon for 200 years and bathed in the Mystic Dragon's blood, I would have died today! The God's Vanquishing Spell was indeed powerful! Even a Domain Master is not his match! If it was not because I have a body strengthened by the Mystic Dragon's blood, I would have been killed by the God's Vanquishing Spell today like Master Autumn!" After saying all this in one breath, Sky panted, and he felt like he did not have the strength to move even one finger anymore.

Old Skeleton sighed and placed Black Veil Saint down. He cast several powerful healing magic before Sky finally regained some of his strength and was able to stand up and walk.

After resting for a moment, they saw one fat and one slender figure sped towards them. They were Old Mark and Rulan.

Old Skeleton saw that both of them looked quite wretched too. He could see blood seeping from Old Mark's shoulder from afar. He exclaimed, "Oh heck, tonight is pure bad luck."

During the battle just now, Old Mark and Rulan were not far away. They wanted to rush here, but the fierce battle following Rody's transformation into the Mystic Dragon was earthshaking, like a furious thunderstorm.

Old Skeleton and Mouse were a master magician and a master sorcerer, respectively, so they could create a strong boundary to protect themselves. But Old Mark and Rulan were warriors who were not capable of creating boundaries. They could only protect themselves with their own fighting energy. Hence, when they saw the fierce battle going on, they could not come any closer.

Once they came together, Old Skeleton rushed to treat their injuries. Mouse finally regained consciousness, but there was deep

sorrow in her face, and she did not utter a single word.

They had a short conversation. All of them were worried about Rody's current situation, but they could not come up with a good solution.

...

Eventually, the sun rose. Above the city walls of Panka City at the edge of the eastern province of the empire, a row of warriors from the Flaming Warriors stood there guarding the city.

Ever since the church and the empire fell out, the Flaming Warriors suddenly rose in revolt in the empire's eastern province, the area where the church had the most profound influence. They took over the control of the majority of areas in the eastern province, and Panka City was one of those cities being controlled by the Flaming Warriors.

In fact, Panka City was just a small stronghold. Situated in the empire's eastern province, Panka City was previously a military stronghold. Four hundred years ago, before the Radiant Empire unified the Radiant Continent, Panka City was a military stronghold at the border of the Empire in the east of the Radiant continent. It was a frontline battlefield used to resist the Radiant Empire's attacks. But after the Radiant Empire unified the Radiant Continent, Panka City had evolved in these 400 years into the Empire's eastern province border's important traffic point. It had also gradually transformed from a military stronghold into a half-military city.

Panka City was not large. Originally, there were fifty thousand ordinary residents, ten thousand local garrisons of the empire, and about ten thousand merchant travelers who came and went. It was merely a pit stop for transportation and trade.

When the church and the empire fell out, the Flaming Warriors seized power here and expelled all the empire's local garrison. As a result, almost all the residents here had fled too!

The local garrisons of the Empire were all local people and they were basically residents of Panka City. When the army was expelled, the residents of Panka City too fled together with the army.

Old Skeleton was correct. Religion was just illusory. For the normal folks, when it involved the matter of survival, being religiously pious would then be far less important.

Hence, although the Flaming Warriors had seized this important city in the eastern region of the Empire, they had lost almost ninety percent of the population. All they got was just an empty city!

But there were still high walls around Panka City, and inside the storehouse, there were also numerous properties of the local government as well as weapons and material resources of the local garrisons. All these had tremendously helped the Flaming Warriors of the church. After obtaining the military resources originally belonging to the local garrisons, the eight thousand Flaming Warriors stationed here had greatly strengthened their military power.

The supreme commander here now was Moreira, a senior warrior of the Flaming Warriors.

Moreira was 40 years old this year. His strength had reached the Empire's Grade 5 Swordsman and was considered a master now. What was more, he was very loyal to the Church. Right now, he was standing on the city wall, gazing at the morning sun in the distance, but there was an uneasiness deep inside his heart.

Currently, there were eight thousand Flaming Warriors in this city and abundant military resources and food supplies. Two days ago, another three thousand Flaming Warriors arrived. These people came from the heart of the eastern province, and it was said that they were here to carry out an important mission. Although Moreira did not know what this mission was, he could guess that

they were here to receive some important people at the border of the province.

An important person from the direction of the imperial city... Could it be His Eminence, the honorable Pope?

Apparently, the church was going to start a Great Crusade led by His Eminence, the honorable Pope! To overthrow the Radiant Empire's evil royal family who blasphemed the gods!

Moreira was filled with emotions, but on the other hand, he felt a bit uneasy!

Just last night, the three thousand Flaming Warriors went to the great river to carry out their mission, which was just several dozens of miles away from Panka City. If all went well, they should have come back this morning! But until now, there was no news at all...

Did something go wrong?

Thinking of this, Moreira sighed. He had just sent twice the usual number of scouts to go check things out.

This city was at the border of the eastern province. Once the war with the empire commenced, this place would be the first battlefield to be attacked by the imperial army! Hence, all this while, Moreira had been cautious and intensified the preparations for war. This morning itself, he had sent out two hundred scouts.

But till now there were still no traces of the three thousand Flaming Warriors who went out last night!

Did a large number of imperial army sneak in and finish off the three thousand Flaming Warriors? Probably not! If they were to finish off all the three thousand Flaming Warriors without even one escaping, then there must be a large number of the imperial army! But according to the intelligence at hand, Moreira was certain that there weren't any Empire army with more than two thousand soldiers within a hundred miles of Panka City!

Standing on top of the city walls and looking at the sun which was rising higher and higher, the uneasiness in Moreira's heart intensified, especially when he thought of the peculiar phenomena in the distant sky during the wee hours today...

In the wee hours, there were rumbling thunder and flashes of lightning in the distant sky, but there was not a single drop of rain. Moreira had never seen such strange weather before!

He paced around anxiously and bellowed, "Pass on my orders, assemble the fourth battalion! I'll personally lead them out and have a look!"

After ordering his deputy to guard the gate carefully, he walked towards the gate. At that moment, a loud boom came from the sky!

All of a sudden, a black flame speared its way across the originally clear sky! The black lightning looked as though it was going to tear a slit through the blue sky! A tiny black figure could be seen standing in the sky above Panka City with the naked eyes, and strange black flames seemed to be emitted from it. Although the distance was so far away, an unexplainable fear crawled within Moreira...

Another long groan came from above their heads. The groan was not loud, but it immediately spread across the whole Panka City. A look of horror spread across the faces of the Flaming Warriors standing on the walls. The figure in the sky came down slowly, and it gradually became clear...

It was a person!

A person wrapped in black flames! Although his face was not visible within the black flames, the long groan brought forth an invisible sense of oppression and fear. Moreira subconsciously shouted, "Archers, ready!"

The person in the sky suddenly let out a long howl! The howl was ear-piercing, and the warriors on the city walls screeched in pain.

The voice had a strange magic as though it could pull out one's soul from the body.

One after another, the warriors vomited blood. Several warriors with the lesser strength had collapsed after letting out a shrill cry.

Blood trickled from Moreira's mouth too, and he looked up at the human in the sky with fear. The person suddenly opened his arms, and at his back...at his back...

There was a pair of huge wings!

The boundless black flames suddenly surged and burnt like a black sun. The person then opened his arms and a huge black blaze formed in his arms. Finally, there was a long howl...

In Moreira's final memories, he saw that huge black flame came roaring down from the sky with a long fiery tail behind and struck on Panka City...

This was the last sight everyone in Panka City saw that morning before their life ended!

In the palace of the imperial city, Emperor Abbas received an urgent intelligence from the eastern region of the empire.

They had just come back to the imperial city yesterday. These masters were all ashen and wretched. Fatty Sky was the most heavily injured. He was the one who was struck hard by the God's Vanquishing Spell directly, almost getting killed. But the most worried of them all was Black Veil, that lady. She looked empty and dazed, most probably... Most probably those women in Rody's house were going to cause some headaches.

Andy had no choice but to send Fatty to Marquis Rody's Mansion to calm those women down with whatever means possible. The rest of the matter would have to be put off until sometime later.

Just when they had calmed down a bit, he then received this secret report!

In the secret report, the accounts recorded from the officials of several towns in the Empire's eastern province which were still under the control of the Empire's administration were as follows:

One day ago, a peculiar phenomenon suddenly occurred in Panka City which had fallen into the hands of the church!

According to the accounts of witnesses from afar, in the morning that day, a black lightning struck down from the sky and hit Panka City. In an instant, the skies fell apart and the earth opened up, and Panka City was burnt down into ruins! There were no survivors within a radius of ten miles from Panka City, including the eight thousand Flaming Warriors of the church!

Old Andy's eyebrows twitched. He crumpled up the secret report in his hands and sighed, "What bullshit black lightning from the heavens... Sigh, that was obviously that madman Rody's 'Mystic Dragon Purge'!"

Thinking of this, Old Skeleton smiled wryly, "Luckily... luckily that day after Rody boy went mad, he headed towards the east. If he headed to the west, the ones in trouble would be us!"

Chapter 330: Nedis's Journey

The empire's eastern province, Rawles City.

Being the largest city in the eastern region of the empire and the capital of the eastern province, Rawles City's situation was very chaotic right now.

The Flaming Warriors of the church had taken control of the entire city a couple of days ago and drove off the empire's government officials here.

Originally, the garrison had thirty thousand locals stationed here, but the eastern province was indeed an area where the church had the most powerful influence. The entire eastern province had the highest number of devout followers. Even within the local garrison, this was the case.

Among the thirty thousand locals in the garrisons, there were five thousand devout followers. Part of the reason was the church had deliberately infiltrated the local garrison with a group of their own so as to strengthen the infiltration of power within the empire's strongholds in the eastern province. When large numbers of Flaming Warriors and magicians from the church suddenly rose in revolt, they rapidly seized control of the municipal government and then expelled the local garrison soldiers.

It could be said that in Rawles City where the church was deeply rooted, the government which was loyal to the empire's royal family was stunned by the attack. Before they could assemble the army, they were already defeated. The five thousand devout followers lurking in the army took the lead in mutiny. Under such circumstances, the local garrisons could not do anything at all.

Once the church took control of Rawles City, they immediately released the officials of the municipal government and several arrested aristocrats.

And now, this city had become the center of religious rebellion in the eastern region of the empire. These days, large numbers of Flaming Warriors kept heading towards Rawles City. According to preliminary estimates, the highest number of military force had once reached a hundred thousand. This did not include the devout followers, a portion of believers, and the mutiny soldiers of the empire who had formed a militia organization.

With Rawles City being the center, large numbers of Flaming Warriors spread out to light the fire of rebellion of the church everywhere in the eastern province. Within less than a week, half of the territories in the eastern province had fallen into the control of the church.

Now above the Rawles City walls, the thorn flower flags which were the symbol of the Radiant Empire, could not be seen anymore. The Governor Mansion which originally belonged to the province's governor had been burnt down, and the new central authority was set up within the original church. Militia wearing sleeve badges of the church could be seen walking on the streets. They wore long white robes and pointed hats, and in their hands were swords and weapons taken from the local garrison's military armory. They now acted as the security patrol soldiers.

From time to time, there were missionaries giving various fervent speeches and instigating the masses at the square in the center of Rawles City. Of course, in these speeches, the royal family of the Radiant Empire was accused without exception as the core of evil who blasphemed the gods and an evil organization that went against gods' will

Traces of destruction could be seen everywhere in the streets of the city. There were marks left behind by fires, collapsed houses, big piles of rubbish on the streets and people scurrying about.

It was apparent that the church was merely a religious organization. Although the church managed to seize control power due to its deep-rooted influence in the eastern province, they were

not capable of managing a city. To be frank, they were excellent saboteurs. They had driven out the Empire's government officials, dissolved the institution, and disrupted the original system that kept the city running. However, no other effective mechanism was constructed.

A bunch of religious fanatics had transformed the whole city into a fanatical religious center. The huge statue of Abas the Emperor, which was erected in the middle of the city square, was demolished, and the stones were transported to the city walls as a military preparation for the upcoming holy war....

The church had even given out weapons publicly. They recruited devout followers of God among the ordinary civilians to take up arms and join in the armed rebellion against the Empire.

Unfortunately, no matter how hard the missionaries shouted at the point of weapon distribution, there were only a scarce few who responded. They had only managed to recruit less than three hundred people in a week, and half of these were street thugs who joined for the sake of the generous pay.

Anyhow, without a doubt, the whole of Rawles City was shrouded in a fanatical religious atmosphere. Militias wearing sleeve badges could be spotted around every corner of the city. Various slogans and piles of rubbish on the streets could be spotted too. This was because the original government was dissolved, and the new government formed by the church was busy with much more important matters such as the holy war. They did not have any energy to spare to take care of trivial matters such as rubbish on the streets.

The situation in all other cities of the eastern province where the church took control was almost similar to Rawles City.

Of course, there was another distinct characteristic in the eastern province. As this was the stronghold of the traditional influences of the church and also where the holy war erupted, the power of

the vampire tribe in the entire eastern province became unprecedentedly weak. They had almost become extinct!

A carriage slowly exited from the west gate of Rawles City. The curtain was drawn at the corner of one window, and a pair of charming eyes appeared from behind, gazing at the bustling militias and recruited craftsmen.

"Sigh... these lunatics," a graceful voice sighed inside the carriage, "Do they think they can hold off the empire's elite troops with this chaotic rabble?"

A long queue was formed at the city gate as the tightly packed crowd awaited interrogation to enter or exit the city.

The church had set up a new surveillance system at the city gate, and a new city gate tax was also implemented.

When the church first expelled the Empire's officials, they had obtained a large amount of wealth. However, it was obvious that these religious charlatans did not know how to allocate the funds. They had spent large amounts of money to repair the city walls, recruit militias and also hoard military resources and weapons. Soon enough, they realized that their pockets had become empty!

In desperation, they began to levy taxes!

Not only did the traditional religious contribution tax increase by thirty percent, those entering and leaving the city had to pay a certain amount of fees too.

Apparently, judging from the expressions of those waiting to enter and leave the city gate, they were very unhappy about this.

Old Skeleton had said that religion was illusory. Once it involved actual survival interests, most people will abandon this empty devotion. After all, there were only very few religious fanatics in this world.

"A bunch of idiots!" the person in the carriage looked at the angry passersby and sighed from the bottom of her heart, "The first thing

they should do after seizing control of a city and obtaining vast territories, is to win popular support in every possible way! Those fellows from the church, don't they even understand such simple truths?"

The carriage headed to the west slowly. When Rawles City was far behind, the person in the carriage opened the windows, revealing a beautiful face.

"How long do we need to move westward to reach the place?" a gentle and charming voice came from inside the carriage. The girl who spoke was Nedis, who had the vampire bloodline and had been missing for several days after she left Rody.

Nedis's hair was casually tied behind her head, and she was wearing simple clothes made from coarse materials. Her face seemed to have slimmed a bit, and her beautiful eyes looked weary, losing its usual sparkle.

The driver smiled and said, "Miss, we better go southward for half a day before heading to the west. Currently, there is chaos in the west. I've heard rumors that Panka City was struck by disaster the day before. Thunder fired down from the heavens and destroyed the entire city! Right now, large numbers of troops are rushing there! Sigh... Miss, you need to be extra careful now that the entire eastern province is in turmoil..."

Nedis smiled lightly and let out a soft sigh, "Turmoil? To me, this is the safest place as there are so many Flaming Warriors here... At least, those from the vampire tribe won't be coming after me."

She paused and laughed loudly, "You said Panka City was destroyed by some thunderbolts from the heavens? What was that all about?"

"Shhhh!" the driver was startled. He looked left and right cautiously before saying in a hushed voice, "Miss, you must not speak carelessly regarding this matter. I've only heard a little about this after overhearing the conversation of two men from the

Flaming Warriors when I was changing the wheels at a workshop this morning. It seems that it is a bottled-up secret of the church, so we can't just simply talk about it!"

After pausing for a moment, the old driver sighed and continued, "Isn't the church representing the gods? How could thunderbolts descend from the heavens and destroy Panka City? Sigh, there are rumors saying that nothing was left of the city. It was all burnt down into ruins. Sigh... There were so many people there, and suddenly they were all dead. What a pity..."

When he finished speaking, he lashed his whip.

Nedis became curious after listening to him. She smiled and asked, "Oh? You've described it so vividly, did such a thing really happen?"

"Of course!" the driver lowered his voice as he said, "Don't you know? A lot of strange things has been happening in the eastern province these two days. I've heard that in many villages, many suddenly died overnight. And in some of the places, mountains which were previously present would suddenly vanish in one night. Nobody knows what the hell is going on. Those Flaming Warriors could not care less. The previous local garrison soldiers of the Empire would frequently go out and patrol, unlike these fellows from the church. They look glamorous during normal days, and each time they speak it's about the gods, but now they keep asking for money. I really don't understand, why would the gods need so much money?"

Nedis was unable to help herself from giggling as he was too funny.

When the driver saw his beautiful passenger's smile, he became excited and burst out cursing in a suppressed voice, "Damn it! I need to pay 5 bronze coins as tax just to exit the city gate. If it weren't because miss paid me a higher fare, I would have been at a loss for this ride. Sigh, how I wish the Duke of the Tulip Family

would bring his men here soon and throw out this money greedy religious charlatans! They're nothing but bloodsuckers!"

Nedis's face dulled when she heard the word 'Tulip'. She then became silent and did not speak anymore.

Wheels rolled, and the carriage drove towards the west. After moving for a while, it took the fork towards the south.

As Nedis looked out from the carriage, she noticed that they were surrounded by wilderness, and there were only low hills in the distance. She smiled and asked, "Where are we now?"

"We will be there soon after turning around the small town in front." As the driver was speaking, his tone became anxious. He lowered his voice and said, "Miss, do you know, there were some paranormal activities going on here the day before? You see..." he pointed at a hill in front and continued, "Did you see those hills? It was originally connected together, but when you look at it now, it was disconnected in the middle right?"

Nedis eyes followed his finger and indeed, the supposedly connected hills seemed like it was dug out in the middle.

She laughed, "So what?"

The driver kept shaking his head and exclaimed, "It's not the same! It's not the same! Few days ago when I passed by this road, the hills were not like this! They were originally in one row, and I heard that on that night the day before, there were rumblings of thunder and flashes of lightning from the sky, but strangely it was quiet in other places. The rumblings thunder and lightning bolts only gathered here and struck down at this place continuously. In the end, a gap was formed between those hills. So, don't you think this place is haunted?"

"Oh?" Nedis frowned and her expression became grave.

The hills at the distance were not high, maybe about several dozens of meters. They were low hills, characteristic of the eastern

region.

"Is it that the empire's armies had invaded here, and these were marks left behind by the fights between the magicians in the armies and the church?" Nedis mumbled to herself, but then she decided to let it go, "What has this got to do with me? I'm now just wandering around and need not worry about anything else. As long as I don't bump into the vampire tribe, who's fighting with who has nothing to do with me!"

Thinking of this, a smile reappeared on her face, "So you knew that this place was haunted a few nights ago, why did you dare take this road now?"

The driver laughed and said, "Miss, I'm an uneducated man. Although I don't know much, I still know that a good horse will not turn back to crop the old grass. Think about it, even animals like horses understand this principle, don't the supernatural beings know this too? Hehe... A good horse will not turn back to crop the old grass, so I guess supernatural beings will not turn back too? There were already hauntings here a few days ago, I suppose they will haunt some other places now. So, it's very safe for us to take this road today!"

Although the driver was rough in speech and manners, the way he talked was somewhat interesting. Nedis gossiped with him for some time until she felt tired. She then smiled and said, "Okay, I'm going to rest for a while. Wake me up when you've reached the town in front. I need to buy something there."

The driver laughed and replied, "Sure! The town is just after that hill ahead. Please rest, miss. I will wake you up in a little while."

Nedis nodded and retreated into the carriage. She lay down and tried to nap, but the driver's mention of 'Tulip' evoked feelings of sadness in her heart. Although she wanted to rest, her mind could not stop spinning. She would think about that guy's tall back, his brilliant smile and the scene where he burst in while she was

bathing in the sea that night. She would smile one moment and then sigh the next.

Time passed, and just as Nedis was starting to feel drowsy, a shrill cry suddenly rang from outside!

Years of being hunted down had led Nedis to become extremely vigilant. She immediately sat up and her hands already reached for the dagger hidden in her boots. Holding the dagger in her hands, she pushed open the window and shouted, "What's going on!"

Right now, the carriage had halted. As Nedis pushed open the windows, she saw the driver sat there terrified, his eyes locked straight ahead...

Chapter 331: Little Vampire's Wisdom

A small town appeared ahead after the turn at the hill in front.

Or to be exact, this 'was' a town!

Everything in sight had burnt down and laid in ruins. It looked as though a beast had ravaged the whole town. There was not a single house which was intact. Previously there was a row of tall trees at the entrance of the town, but now they had fallen as if knocked over by some powerful force.

Also, there were residual flames in some of the buildings, emitting puffs of black smoke. A few stray dogs scurried away at the entrance of the town.

The whole town was utterly desolated!

"What... what happened here?" Nedis was shocked to see this miserable scene.

The driver's knees trembled, and he kept repeating nervously, "Ghost... ghost... there are ghosts..."

Nedis cautiously took a few steps forward. The driver behind her looked as if he wanted to stop her, but he dared not make any sound after opening his mouth.

Nedis walked slowly towards the collapsed wall and took a handful of soil from the ground. She crumbled the soil and let it slip through her fingers.

Her expression was grave.

Apparently, this place was attacked. Judging by the way the walls collapsed, they must have been struck down by some powerful magicians or powerful light blades or wind blades of a powerful warrior. What kind of destructive force was that to damage about ninety percent of the town's buildings!

About several dozens of meters away, a large pit was blown out

on the streets beneath their feet, and the houses on both sides had all collapsed!

More importantly, Nedis could sense a vaguely familiar aura!

A complicated look appeared in her eyes. She suddenly bit her lips, and her body transformed into a blood-red light before vanishing completely on the spot!

The driver standing behind her did not know that this pretty young lady was using the vampires' 'Blood Escape Spell'. His eyeballs almost popped out, and he was scared to death. So this girl who had been talking to him for one morning was also a monster! The driver suddenly let out an ear-piercing shriek. He turned around, dashing back to the carriage like a rabbit shot by an arrow, and fled for his life along the path they came.

Nedis used the Blood Escape Spell to hide her movements. Her body floated towards the town like a breeze. The nearer she came to the central part of the town, the more terrifying were the signs of destruction.

It seemed like an explosion occurred in the central part of the town, and the impact spread to all directions, causing the destruction of the entire town. A deep, round pit was formed in the small square in the middle of the town. The buildings around it were all smashed and became piles of indistinguishable rubble.

Suddenly, Nedis's body froze, and an astonished look appeared on her face. Her hands trembled as she looked ahead in shock...

Amid the ruins, a tall and big figure stood there with his back facing Nedis. He stood there silently in the ruins, and there were no signs of life from the body.

He seemed to be looking at the sky, lost in thought. His long black hair fluttered in the breeze, and he wore a tattered armor of an imperial warrior. The armor was badly torn, leaving only shreds and pieces hanging on his body.

Nedis's heart trembled, and she wanted to turn around and flee. She did not have the courage to face this person anymore. However, she could not control her feet and she ended up walking towards him silently.

Her 'Blood Escape Spell' was indeed amazing. That person did not notice her even after she came closer, but Nedis could already hear him muttering to himself.

"Stop killing people! Stop killing people!" His voice was hoarse, and there was a tinge of anger and pain in it.

Immediately, the voice paused and switched to a vigorous long laugh. His tone turned stiff and strange, "They... have the smell of the gods... I... hate! Those with the smell of the gods...all...will kill!"

His tone switched again, and it turned into the initial angry voice, "If you do this again, we'll fight and perish together!"

"Tsk tsksk... Rody, you... angry? Why? Kill those... gods... very good! Very interesting!"

Nedis's body swayed, and she almost fell to the ground. She could now clearly see the side of that person's face. The sharp facial features, straight nose, and the tough look on his face. That was the Rody who had caused her to have sleepless nights!

But Nedis could sense a dangerous aura...

After all, she had seen Rody possessed by the Mystic Dragon during the battle with the Hakone Serpent in the Dwarf Kingdom of the Roland Continent. Right now, Rody's long hair had turned black, and his eyes too became abnormally black. The corners of his mouth were twisted into an evil smile. This was how Rody looked like when he was possessed!

Suddenly, Rody's face changed. Anger was written all over his face, and he bellowed, "All right! Let's fight again!"

His face changed again, and his expression became scornful. A

cold voice slowly rang, "Come!"

Whoosh! Rody moved!

His left fist raised and struck down hard on his own chest. The fist was enveloped in a fiery golden fighting energy, but his right hand immediately stretched across his chest and forcefully clamped down his left hand.

Rody's furious voice could be heard amid the vicious cold laughter, "We shall die together!"

A wind blade appeared in his left hand and sliced towards his throat. A loud boom was heard, and black flames suddenly exploded from Rody's body, shattering the wind blade.

Rody roared and his body shot into the air before it smashed down onto the ground. Both his arms were tangled in a fight, but after a series of loud clashing sounds, it was Rody's own body that was injured.

Blood continuously spurted out from his mouth, and there were wounds on both his arms too. The two wounds on his shoulder had burst open, and blood spurted from the wounds...

Nedis was stunned by this scene. Her mind went blank, and she looked on in shock as Rody battered himself. She suddenly screamed when she saw blood spurt from his body again, "Stop!"

Just as she was screaming, Rody who was previously rolling on the floor and wrestling with himself suddenly trembled, and then he vanished in front of her eyes!

Nedis's heart jumped, and all of a sudden, a vicious laughter rang from behind her ears. It was the cold voice again, "Eh? Vampire?"

Immediately, an iron grip grabbed Nedis by the back of her neck and lifted her up. Nedis was terrified, and she turned around and saw Rody's face as she struggled.

The expression on Rody's face was completely twisted. Anger,

complacency, scorn, pain... The various expressions were entangled, seemingly causing his soul to become twisted too.

"Stop... Do not hurt her!" Rody roared angrily. His left hand struck down towards the right hand which held Nedis.

"Hahaha..." The roar immediately switched to laughter again. Nedis felt a great strength tossing her away. Her body went flying and crashed heavily onto the ground. As she turned around, she saw Rody standing behind her, with one hand choking his throat and another hitting himself hard on his chest.

A golden fighting energy suddenly exploded from his body. The golden fighting energy flared and Rody's face immediately became normal again. He looked at Nedis and shouted, "You must run now! Run..."

Before his voice faded away, the golden fighting energy suddenly transformed into black flames. The expression on his face too became an evil sneer. His voice switched back to the stiff, dry tone again, "You... Vampire... Come here..."

The golden fighting energy seemed to try to burn again, but it was suppressed by the black flames. Finally, little by little, the golden fighting energy was completely devoured.

Rody's body eventually stopped trembling, and he stood upright with a triumphant smile on his face. He stretched himself hard, shook his head and heaved out a long breath. He then looked up into the sky and roared with laughter, "I've won! I've won again! Rody, you've battled with me three times... you keep losing... to me!"

As he was saying, he took a deep breath and raised his hand. Black light radiated from his body and immediately, the wounds on his body healed completely. A black flame then shrouded his body, and the tattered armor on his body too mended in an instant. A brand-new armor was now covering his body!

When he was done, 'Rody' slowly walked towards Nedis who was shaking with fear. He sneered and asked, "You... vampire... Rody's woman, too?"

He closed his eyes and seemed to be pondering over something. A smile then appeared on his face, "Ahh... I know... you... Nedis!"

Nedis stared at this 'Rody' in front of her. Of course she knew that although this was Rody's body, it was the Mystic Dragon which was controlling this body now!

"Shocked? Don't!" the Mystic Dragon's voice was a bit strange. It was as though he was unfamiliar with the human language, "His memory... I can... see."

As he finished, he held out his hand and lifted Nedis, holding her in front of him.

"Rody... What did you do to Rody?" Tears welled up in Nedis's eyes, and she screamed.

"He... fell asleep," the Mystic Dragon smiled, "Every time he lost, he would fall asleep."

Nedis was a bit relieved when she heard that, but as she looked at Rody who was now possessed by the Mystic Dragon, she quietly moved a few steps back. Finally, when she managed to retreat few steps, she chanted some spells in her heart and her body was shrouded in a blood red light before disappearing suddenly!

"Eh?" the Mystic Dragon's eyebrows twitched slightly. He scorned but did not immediately stop Nedis when he saw her using the 'Blood Escape Spell' to flee. All of a sudden, he pointed a finger at the distance and tapped lightly.

"Ahh..." Nedis's scream rang in the air, and her body immediately reappeared. There was a bloody hole on her shoulder as a blood arrow shot out from the wound. She staggered before collapsing on the floor.

The Mystic Dragon walked towards her slowly. With one wave of

his hand, the wound on Nedis's shoulder immediately healed.

"You... vampire... Do not run," the Mystic Dragon said coldly, "Your 'Blood Escape Spell' doesn't work on me."

When he saw the terrified look on Nedis's face, the Mystic Dragon mockingly said, "The Blood Escape Spell... I taught... you vampires!"

"What...!" Nedis exclaimed in shock.

The Mystic Dragon bent down and stained his finger with some blood from the wound on Nedis's shoulder. He then waved his fingertip across Nedis's face and drew a weird symbol on her forehead with her blood.

"You... vampire... Dark Faction. Me... Mystic Dragon, Dark Faction!" The expression on the Mystic Dragon's face was icy cold, "Vampires... my slave! You were before, and still are now!"

He stood up and waved his hand, and a black flame shot towards Nedis's body. It immediately penetrated her body, and Nedis felt her whole body relaxed. All the pain and feeling of weaknesses in her body had suddenly vanished.

"I like the dark aura radiating from your body. I will not kill you," the Mystic Dragon strode forward, but then he turned back and ordered coldly, "Follow me, do not escape!"

He waved his hand, and Nedis felt a strong force dragging her towards him. Her body could not resist that force at all.

Both of them flew for a few miles, but the Mystic Dragon seemed to be extremely curious about everything. He flew here and there along the way, and he would grab the birds he saw flying in the sky to examine before crushing them to death.

When he saw houses in the distance, he would stare at it for a moment and then shoot a black flame towards it with a wave of his hand. They would then immediately turn into ashes.

And then he would turn around to look at Nedis and say in a serious manner, "The smell of gods... kill!"

Nedis understood those households must be devout followers of God.

Now that the entire eastern province was under the control of the church, those who were loyal to the Radiant Empire had already fled. Those that remained were mostly inclined towards the religion of God. If this Mystic Dragon were to kill as he wished, the population of the entire eastern region would be wiped off by him!

The longer Nedis followed him around, the more she noticed that his mode of thinking was somewhat strange.

He was like an insensible child!

Nedis had been following the Mystic Dragon around for the whole day. At night, the sky had darkened but the Mystic Dragon seemed like he was not sure where he wanted to go, or maybe he did not have any destination in mind at all.

Finally, Nedis called out to him from behind, "Wait!"

The Mystic Dragon immediately drifted in front of Nedis like a gust of wind. He asked coldly, "Why?"

Nedis jumped and retreated a step back. She whispered, "I... I'm hungry!"

"Ah." The Mystic Dragon's expression was dark. He looked at Nedis coldly, "Vampires, weak tribe."

With a wave of his hand, he grabbed a few wild birds from the trees beside the road. He wrung their necks and threw the badly mutilated birds to Nedis, saying coldly, "Drink blood, vampire!"

Nedis opened her mouth and looked helplessly at the Mystic Dragon.

She was not a pure-blood vampire. She had half-human blood

and half-vampire blood coursing through her veins. She did not usually drink blood, and her eating habits were similar to that of humans.

She smiled bitterly as she looked at the Mystic Dragon. Suddenly, an idea struck her, "Please wait, I have something to show you."

As she said that she took out a water bottle which she carried with her and a small package. Inside the package were a small knife and a few tiny bottles.

She then picked up some twigs from the roadside and started a fire.

The Mystic Dragon frowned and watched her. He was curious and confused at the same time.

So vampires don't drink blood?

Nedis feared that the Mystic Dragon would become impatient, so she did everything very quickly. In just the blink of an eye, she already removed the feathers and skin on the wild birds. She then sliced open their stomachs with the small knife and washed it with some clean water. Finally, she pierced them with tree branches and started roasting them over the fire.

Then, Nedis opened the tiny bottles and sprinkled some powder onto the roast birds from one of the bottles. Immediately, a delicious aroma filled the air.

A strange look appeared on the Mystic Dragon's face when he smelled the scent. He felt that this scent was somewhat tempting, but he had never come across such weird scent before this.

Nedis rapidly turned the branches which skewered the wild birds. She secretly cast some spells to make the fire burn more vigorously. She smiled and explained, "I've sprinkled some seasonings which I carry with me while traveling."

When the meat was evenly roasted, Nedis handed the branch to the Mystic Dragon. She smiled and asked, "See?"

The Mystic Dragon frowned and took a step back, staring at the thing in Nedis's hand, not knowing what to do.

Nedis smiled and took a bite of it before handing it over to him again.

The Mystic Dragon's eyebrows smoothed out and he took it. He tried one bite, and his mouth was filled with the fragrance of the food. He had never tasted such flavor before.

In his memory from thousands of years ago, he used to eat Mythical Beasts' meat and drink their blood. Even the meat of the Three-Faced Boar's meat, which he thought was the most delicious, dimmed in comparison with the food this little vampire offered him today!

He finished it up in a few gulps, and the way he looked at Nedis became kinder.

Seeing that he enjoyed his food very much, Nedis sped up what she was doing and handed him another one. A strange smile appeared on the Mystic Dragon's face and he did not look so evil anymore.

Nedis sighed silently in her heart. Mystic Dragon from the ancient times? An existence which even the gods feared? It seemed like he had never had any delicacies before. Hmph! The life of His Majesty the Mystic Dragon was not as comfortable as an ordinary human.

Thinking of this, she passed him another bottle which was filled with wine. Nedis was in the wine business, so the wine that she carried with her was, of course, some fine wine.

The Mystic Dragon did not refuse her offer this time. He poured the whole bottle of wine into his mouth and swallowed it all. His expression was very happy.

Nedis looked at the smiling Mystic Dragon. It was as though it was Rody who was standing in front of her, and she was entranced

by looking at him.

Right at this moment, there was the drum of hooves in the distance.

A troop galloped towards them from the main road ahead. There were hundreds of people, all clad in the Flaming Warrior uniform of the religion of God. They carried longbows on their backs and sharp swords in their hands. They galloped rapidly towards them like a gust of wind.

The Mystic Dragon did not even bother to look at them. He was focused on the lingering aftertaste of the rich wine. He felt that none of the food that he had eaten in his entire life were as good as the one offered by this little vampire tonight.

Five hundred Flaming Warriors had come up to them in an instant. They halted their horses, and the leading warrior bellowed, "Who are you!"

The Mystic Dragon's eyebrows drew together, and he looked at them coldly. His expression became more chilling as he said in a low voice, "Gods... the stench of gods..."

Nedis sighed. She knew that the Mystic Dragon was going to kill again. She could not bear the sight, so she turned around.

That warrior did not know that he was already in grave danger. He shouted, "Who are you! And you! You are wearing the armor of an imperial warrior! Soldiers! Arrest them!"

The Mystic Dragon suddenly pointed his finger and looked coldly at the warrior in front of him.

"You... stink of God... I... hate..."

The warrior looked at the Mystic Dragon strangely. Just as he was about to speak, a black flame suddenly shot towards him.

Nedis had already closed her eyes as she could not bear to look on anymore. A loud boom rang in her ears, and the earth shook under

her feet so much that she could hardly keep her balance. She could hear fierce winds blowing up the sand and rocks.

When she opened her eyes once again, there was no sign of any Flaming Warriors anymore!

The main road ahead was completely destroyed. A hundred-meter-long and hundred-meter-wide huge pit appeared in front of them. Black smoke fumed from the ground, and the men from the Flaming Warriors had vanished completely together with their horses.

The Mystic Dragon's expression was dark, and he said coldly, "Gods... the smell of the gods... I hate!"

A thought came up in Nedis's mind, but she kept a straight face and asked, "You... You hate those with the smell of God?"

The Mystic Dragon's face was gloomy. He said slowly, "Hate them! Hate them! Kill them all!"

A cunning look appeared in Nedis's eyes. She immediately took a few steps closer to him. The expression on her face was sincere and she said respectfully, "Your Majesty, go northward! North! After crossing a strait, the whole continent there are people loyal to the gods! There is even a temple there! Inside the entire temple are all servants of the gods! Why not I bring you there?"

Rage immediately appeared on the Mystic Dragon's face. He bellowed, "Servants of gods!"

He suddenly let out a long howl, drawing up a strong gale all over the sky as he shouted, "Kill them... kill them all!"

He grabbed Nedis's arm and roared, "Bring me there!"

As he was speaking, he waved his hand. After an explosion of black flames, the entire land within the perimeter of a hundred meters became scorched earth. The Mystic Dragon then lifted Nedis and flew up into the air. Under the moonlight, both of them shot towards the direction of the Roland Continent up north like a

comet...

Chapter 332: The Forbidden Door

At the highest peak of the Roland temple, the great hall was somber as always and a huge fire flickered. The shadows of the fire swayed on the walls, causing the entire hall to be filled with a mysterious atmosphere.

Prometheus, the Roland temple's Pontiff. He was still wearing his silver mask, and currently, he was alone in the great hall.

Prometheus slowly climbed up the stairs of the spiral staircase. There was an open platform above it, where one could fully feel the cold wind from the summit.

Looking down, below the steps of the temple's main building, there were several ascetics praying at the main hall of the temple on all fours.

He gazed at them for a moment, and his lips curled into a smile.

Absurd fellows.

The war had started for quite a few days. The Holy Knight Regiment was fighting a bloody battle. Although they had lost their paladins, the Holy Knight Regiment was still much more powerful than the armies of the Roland Continent's kingdoms. However, the commander of the Roland Kingdom was not a fool. He led his massive army to fight a long war of attrition against the temple.

This was a smart strategy, but the result was still foolish!

Prometheus sneered.

Nobody knew that he, the pontiff of the temple, never wanted to win this battle—How ridiculous! Why would Kara the great devil care about the mere position of the humans' Pontiff?

The sole purpose of starting this war was to destroy the temple! To destroy that person in heaven's agent in the human world!

No matter who won or lost this battle, there was no difference at all for Kara.

If the Roland Kingdom won, the temple would be destroyed as a result. This would undoubtedly be the best result.

If the temple won, then the Roland Kingdom would be united into a massive empire of the temple—and its leader would still be him!

Hahahahaha... What a wonderful situation!

"Your Majesty, what are you smiling at?" a cold voice rang from behind.

Prometheus turned around and looked calmly at the person behind him. He sighed gently, "Fielding, you've gotten out?"

Fielding was wearing a badly torn armor. His gaze was terrifyingly calm, as though it was not life flowing in it, but ice!

He slightly bowed and said in a low voice, "Yes, Your Majesty. My training has ended. The person you sent over just now told me that you wanted to see me."

Even though he was bowing, there was not a single trace of respectfulness in his voice.

Prometheus squinted his eyes at Fielding. His eyes scanned from Fielding's face to his hands. His right hand was pressed on the handle of his sword all the time, and the coarse knuckles seemed to be full of power.

"Hmm. Very good. I can see that you have achieved some great improvements after your training this time!" Prometheus nodded, "Now that the Holy Knight Regiment is fighting a bloody battle, as the only paladin of the temple, I wish that you could go to the front line! Are you willing to do so?"

Fielding was silent for a moment before he raised his head, and a mocking smile appeared on his face. The paladin then spoke, not

too loudly but his voice was firm, "I'm sorry, Your Majesty, I refuse to do so!"

"Oh?" Prometheus did not show any discontent or anger. His lips were still curled in a smile, "Why?"

The smile on Fielding's face disappeared. His expression became solemn, "Prometheus, there is no one else here, so let's just be frank and open. Since the first day I returned to the temple, you already knew my intentions! You should have understood that the main reason I came back to the temple was to kill you! You already knew this long ago, and I also knew that you have seen through my mind! But what surprised me was that you possessed a strength that was unpredictable to me!"

Prometheus remained smiling, "Paladin Fielding, you are a brave man."

Fielding lowered his head and said in a low voice, "I understand that although I'm a paladin, my strength as one does not pose a threat to you. Hence, you did not harm me! As for me, I knew that I won't be able to kill you, so I chose to continue training. I've once sworn that before I have the certainty to be able to kill you, I would not end my training!"

Prometheus laughed, "So now that you're out, you must be confident that you can kill me?"

"A little, but not much," Fielding confessed straightforwardly. He then shook his head and said, "Too bad I can't wait anymore! I'm afraid that if I wait any longer, there will not be enough time anymore."

He suddenly looked up straight into Prometheus' eyes and asked slowly, "Tell me, what is your true purpose?"

Fielding grasped the handle of his sword and moved forward slowly, "The temple cannot win this battle. You and I know this very well. Even if you release all the forces of the temple available

now, it will only bring havoc to the Roland Continent. The final outcome will be the temple being destroyed while the Roland Kingdom only suffers severe damage! As the supreme leader of the temple, what is your objective?"

"Do you really want to know?" Prometheus' voice was malicious and evil. He smiled, and then slowly said in a low deep voice, "My purpose, is to destroy the religion of God, or... to destroy humans, the humans of your god's tribe!"

"Almighty God!" Fielding exclaimed. Swoosh! He already drew out half of his sword.

Prometheus looked at Fielding with pity in his eyes. He sighed and said, "Fielding, it seems you have indeed achieved some breakthrough. I can see that your strength has improved quite a lot."

He then shook his head and said slowly, "But have you ever wondered why I didn't kill you and instead let you continue to stay in the temple, keeping an enemy who had intentions of killing me?"

Fielding showed no emotions.

Prometheus sneeringly asked, "Since you can't get it, why not try piercing me with your sword?"

Fielding did not hesitate at all and drew his sword! Golden fighting energy enveloped the sword and pierced into Prometheus' chest like a fire dragon!

A tearing sound was heard, and the golden fighting energy shattered Prometheus' entire body...

"Illusion!" Fielding's expression suddenly changed.

"It is indeed an illusion." Prometheus' voice came from afar and struck the bottom of Fielding's heart, "Fielding, come in. Come to the temple's highest level, in front of the 'Forbidden Door'. I'm waiting for you there!"

...

At the foot of the mountain, Nedis breathed out slowly as she looked at the towering peak. The air was very cold, and she could not help but shudder.

"Stench... the stench of gods!" There was an uneasy look on the Mystic Dragon's face, and his eyes were filled with hatred and rage.

"The temple is at the peak. This is the heart where the servants of the gods control the entire continent." Nedis sighed and pointed at the peak above. It had never occurred to her that she, an insignificant vampire of the vampire tribe, would one day bring someone to attack the temple!

...

After passing through a long corridor, it was the forbidden area of the temple.

Strange words and pictures were carved on the stone walls on both sides. As Fielding walked further inside, the uneasiness in his heart became stronger and stronger.

He pushed open a five-meter-tall door in front of him and inside was a room the size of a mini piazza.

In the middle of the room, Prometheus sat cross-legged on the floor. A smooth stone slab as thick as a book was in front of him.

"You're here, Paladin Fielding." Prometheus looked up and said smilingly, "Don't worry, I'm not an illusion anymore."

Fielding was silent as he walked closer slowly.

"This is the temple's highly forbidden area." Prometheus' gaze swept across the room, "Only the chief elder can enter this place. And you, you're the second person entering this place for the past ten years."

He then pointed at the door beside him and smiled, "That's the temple's 'Forbidden Door'. Unfortunately, I can't tell you what's

behind the door, because I too have never been inside."

Fielding stood in front of Prometheus and asked coldly, "Why did you lead me here?"

Prometheus' fingers gently stroked the stone slab in front of him. His fingers glowed with a magical radiance, and lines of texts immediately appeared on the stone slab. But in just the blink of an eye, the magical radiance vanished as his fingertips swept past, and the texts too disappeared.

"Fielding, have you heard of a story called the Tower of Babel?"

Prometheus smiled gently and said, "A long, long time ago, humans had once doubted the existence of God. Hence, all the humans came together and built a very tall tower. They wanted to reach the heavens through the tower to see if God really exists."

His gentle voice seemed to carry with it some magic and echoed in the entire room.

"However, how could the lowly humans offend God? So when the humans have built the tower halfway, God got angry and destroyed the Tower of Babel, forbidding the humans from seeking the existence of God since then...

"But humans are lowly and ignorant. To make sure that humans do not do anything blasphemous to God anymore, God decided to send someone to discipline these ignorant humans." Prometheus smiled and then sighed, "So, God sent his messengers to the human world and created a religion which believed in God to achieve the purpose of controlling the humans. They taught the humans to respect God and believe in him. Hence, there is the religion of God in this world!

"But during that time, not everyone in this world believed in God. Some of them did not believe that God exists. So, war erupted among the humans. The kingdoms which believed in God united to destroy the kingdoms which did not believe in God... To make it

simple, it was war! How ridiculous... The allegedly noble religion of God, was just an organization which utilized the power of religion to eradicate dissidents!"

Fielding subconsciously loosened his grip on his sword and looked at Prometheus in shock.

"The matter is not over yet. In this world, human beings are the hardest creature to control. They are smart but greedy. They have wild ambitions and imaginations. When the religion of God finally let the entire human world believe in God, wars still continued to erupt among the humans. The human kingdoms fought against each other to jostle for their own interests. Even the religion of God could not stop this. Seeing that His agent in the human world had encountered trouble, God came up with a good idea..." Hatred appeared in in Prometheus' eyes as he was saying this, "Divert the conflict!"

"God created the messenger Moses and gave him the Staff of Moses to split the Thunder Straits. As such, the human's attention was no longer focused on the battle in the Roland Continent. Their gaze had turned to the south, where there are vast lands, rich resources, and boundless territories... Hence, what followed next was again war! But this time, the humans united, and their common enemy was the Kara Tribe which originally inhabited the Radiant Continent!

"After that, it was still war. The Kara Tribe had their own god too, but their god was already defeated by the human beings' God in the heavens. Hence, without any more help from their god, the Kara Tribe was rapidly wiped out by the humans, and the humans took hold of the Radiant Continent. Later on, the religion of God of both continents split! Absurd humans, absurd God, and absurd religion of God! As the agent of God in the human world, they possessed powers that were the envy of others. And man's greed eventually grew in the face of power. The church then became the aggregation point of charlatans. Their focus was not on serving

God anymore, but on seizing power. In the end, the religion of God of both continents broke off. They hated each other and became enemies."

Fielding finally opened his mouth and asked loudly, "What about God? Since the church had broken up, why didn't God interfere?"

"Because God was smart! Because God had supreme wisdom!" Prometheus smiled and continued, "The religion of God was established to control the human world so that the humans believed in God. However, if humans became united, what happened thousands of years ago would repeat itself again. The human would boldly build another Tower of Babel to pry into the heavens, to pry into God's territory. So, to ensure that humans remain obedient, God decided to let them fight. It was better to let them fight non-stop so that they could never unite. As long as the religion of God still exists, who cares if the religion of God of both continents were split? Moreover, in the human world, even if the religion of God of both continents hated each other, they still believed in God."

Fielding gasped and stared at Prometheus. It had never occurred to him that the Pontiff of the temple would say something so treacherous!

"Don't look so shocked." Prometheus smiled, "If you do not believe me, you can have a look at this." He pointed to the stone slab in front of him. There was a creepy smile on his face, and he said in a slow, strange tone, "This is the legendary God's Record! You must have heard of this before..."

Chapter 333: Time to Unveil the Truth

"God's Record!" Fielding's expression changed. He looked at the stone slab in front of Prometheus in shock, "This is the God's Record!"

Prometheus stood up and smoothened his clothes gently. Smiling, he said, "Exactly. The so-called God's Record only recorded a little bit of historical truth, but those events were nothing glorious, so naturally, God is not willing to let anybody see this thing."

"According to the legends, the God's Record cannot appear in this world!" Fielding asked in a deep voice, "How did you get it?"

Prometheus did not answer. He gently lifted the stone slab and walked slowly towards the 'Forbidden Door' behind him.

The huge door was purely made of stone, but there was something strange about that door. If you put your ears on the door and listen, you could hear some whistling sound behind the door, and there seemed to be a faintly discernible force which could captivate one's soul.

Prometheus held the God's Record and sighed. He turned his back to Fielding without taking any precautions, and said gently, "This 'Forbidden Door' has existed in the temple for thousands of years, and the temple has regarded it as the most sacred place, but nobody could open it... How ridiculous! Even if they wanted to open it, it is impossible! If it were not for me standing here, how will you people know the secret to opening this door? And who would know what is behind this door?"

As Fielding looked at Prometheus' figure, he tightened his grip on the handle of his sword. He could not help staring at the back of Prometheus' neck. A murderous look appeared in his eyes as he asked in a deep voice, "What do you mean?"

Prometheus turned and looked at him, and then he chuckled, "Fielding, you must have reached the Domain Master level? You've finally achieved some breakthrough during your training this time... sigh... "

He shook his head and sighed, "Actually, before this, I did not think highly of you. Among the two Paladins of the temple, I am more optimistic about Augustine. He is more talented than you. You are way too young, and your obsession is too strong, so I thought you will not be able to achieve the Domain Master level in your lifetime... But this is not your fault. Domain Masters have not appeared in the Roland Continent and Radiant Continent for centuries."

Fielding was silent for a moment. He sighed and walked forward slowly, saying in a low voice, "I never thought I would break through too. If it were not because I've met him... "

A hint of mockery flashed in Prometheus' eyes, "Met him? That guy was certainly an unexpected marvel. All the while those who break through the level of Domain Master, which of them were not extremely talented, which of them had not undergone rigorous training? Even you, Fielding, from what I know, you are the first man in the Roland Continent's history to have attained the Domain Master level before the age of forty. Maybe I was wrong, the obsession in your human heart will produce miracles... "

"What did you say... you said, 'your human'?" Fielding narrowed his eyes and raised his sword.

Prometheus shook his head and asked softly, "Are you anxious already? It is not time to attack yet, Fielding. I haven't finished my story."

He held the God's Record in one hand, and his other hand glided across its surface. A strange glow entered the stone slab from his hands, and lines of weird texts appeared on the stone slab.

"Have you heard of this saying?" Prometheus was calm, and he

continued slowly, "The domain is the road to heaven!"

"The domain is the road to heaven?" Fielding stopped dead in his tracks.

Prometheus sighed again. He shook his head and said, "It is time to unveil the truth about everything."

He pointed to the 'Forbidden Door', and there was an odd smile on his face. His voice sounded foggy, "This door, is the door to heaven!"

The door to heaven?

Shock was written all over Fielding's face.

Prometheus was lost in his thoughts as he looked at the door. There was yearning in his eyes, as well as nostalgia. He then shook his head and whispered, "How many years has it been since I left that world? One thousand years? Or two thousand years? I'm afraid I can't even remember it myself."

He then turned his gaze to the shocked Paladin once again.

"Fielding, it was written very clearly in the books of the religion of God, that this world was created by God. There was nothing wrong with this sentence. This world was indeed created by God."

"All beings, mountains, rivers, oceans, flowers, trees, birds, beasts, as well as human. The sun in the sky, the moon, the stars, all of them are the creation of God."

"However, when God created this world, He did not make humans the ruler of this world. Long, long ago, when this world was just created, humans were like other animals. They were just part of the living beings in this world, there was no difference between the humans and other animals."

"But human beings are too scary. Maybe God made a mistake, or maybe it was the act of providence, anyhow humans were so powerful that it was beyond God's expectation. Humans have

wisdom, wild ambitions, and creativity that other animals did not have! In just the short span of several thousand years, humans had conquered this world, and other living species became the humans' slaves."

"It's like you've planted some flowers and bred some animals in your backyard, but suddenly one day, you realized that your backyard had become an independent world. One of the animals that you kept there became the leader of the other animals, enslaving all other creatures. Besides that, they had also set up their own world and order, dominating your backyard, and seemed to gradually expand towards your threshold... At this point, would you be shocked?"

Fielding asked coldly, "So why didn't God destroy this world?"

Prometheus was silent for a moment before continuing slowly, "God tried, but He failed."

"What did you say?!" Fielding asked hoarsely.

Prometheus' expression was grave. He replied slowly, "Haven't you read about the great flood recorded in the temple's classics?"

"According to the temple's classics, God the creator of this world was very angry because humans were full of sin. So, in order to punish mankind, he decided to destroy these creatures He created... " Speaking of that, Prometheus burst into laughter. There was a tinge of madness in his laugh, "Sin? Hahaha... The greatest sin of mankind was disrespect to God!"

"One month after the humans built the Tower of Babel, God finally became enraged. Or it could be said that... He became scared! So, He created the flood waters in an attempt to destroy the human world, forbidding humans from continuing the exploration of God's territory. What did the temple's classics say about that great flood? Hmph... God intentionally kept a few obedient humans as the seed of mankind, and it was due to God's mercy that humans were not annihilated... Hahaha, another big lie!"

"Of course, God wanted to annihilate mankind. He wanted this species which was out of his control to completely disappear, but He can't! Even God was not omnipotent!"

Fielding's face was shrouded in doubt.

Prometheus shook his head and sighed, "You had received education in the religion of God since young, and your reverence toward God was already deeply rooted, so even though you were shocked by what I said, deep inside your heart, you will not completely believe me."

He paused before continuing.

"It's not that God did not want to annihilate mankind, it's just that He can't do it! To be fair, the difference of strength between humans and God is like the comparison between ants and humans. When a human finds a colony of ants in his house, can he possibly kill every single ant? Hence, although God used tremendous superpowers to draw up a great flood which almost inundated the entire world, there were still many living beings which survived! Mankind did not go extinct, and the world did not die out too! Although the world suffered great damage, not long after that, it thrived again."

Prometheus paused and sighed. He then said in a grave tone, "Because the world already had its own order and rules!"

"So, after some time, God helplessly realized that the humans in this world became powerful once again and flourished. It finally dawned on him that although He created this world, it was already out of his control and it was impossible for Him to destroy it anymore. Hence, he changed his strategy... "

Fielding frowned, "So, like what you said previously, the religion of God emerged. Am I right?"

"Yes." Prometheus smiled, "But God was full of wisdom. He knew that he could not completely control the humans with just the

religion of God."

He stared straight at Fielding's face, "Have you ever seen the big reservoirs above rivers? Big reservoirs were built above rivers to control the flow of water by blocking the path of rivers."

"Hence, the religion of God is an oppressive existence. Its purpose is to suppress the growth of mankind, to suppress mankind's exploration of higher realms, and to suppress mankind's adventurous spirit as well as their initiative to explore the truths of this world! However, suppression is just a measure. God's fear of humans is great, so he understood that he cannot completely control mankind with mere suppression. Human beings are the scariest and most powerful creatures in this world. Humans are weaker and slower than many other animals. A single human is no match for a huge beast, but now they have enslaved most of the living creatures on earth! This is because humans have wisdom! Because they have wisdom, they mastered powerful weapons, powerful magic, and sorcery, and became a powerful species. And among the humans, there is the most terrifying existence which truly threatens God!" Prometheus' tone was very solemn. He pointed at Fielding and said, "Which is someone like you, a Domain Master!"

"You people have mastered the rules of space, learned how to utilize the rules, destroy the rules and even create new rules. Such capability has already threatened God's existence! So, there is this door to deal with mankind's top master like you! This 'Forbidden Door'!"

"Once humans become powerful, they can't resist exploring God's territory. God cannot tolerate such actions, but human's growth is already beyond God's control... The religion of God is just a religion. It will not be able to truly control mankind completely. Aren't human beings always trying to explore God's territory? Which is why God left behind a door leading to His territory for you humans! So there is this saying 'Domain is the road to

heaven'!"

Fielding was full of shock. What he had heard in his entire life was not as shocking as what Prometheus said today.

"God feared the Domain Master because your status is already close to God... But take note, I said close! When a human reached the domain level, he already saw through the rules of this space. Though he still does not have the ability to overthrow God, he is already close... But God will not allow you to become truly powerful to be able to overthrow him! So, God was smart. He will wipe out the threats while they are still budding!"

He pointed to the door, "Fielding, this is the road to heaven for you humans who are Domain Masters! Behind it is God's territory which mankind tried to explore for thousands of years! God left behind a door for you and make it seemed like you have saved lots of time in finding the road to heaven yourself. But this is just a trap. Or in other words, it is another shackle!"

Prometheus patted the God's Record in his hands and sighed, "There are conditions to open this door. You need the keys!"

"One of the keys is this God's Record as it contained the incantation to open this door. However, did you know how hard and dangerous it was to get this God's Record... " Prometheus smiled bitterly. That powerful Hakone Serpent was already a half-god creature. Even the human Domain Master would be killed by the Hakone Serpent if they try to take the God's Record by force!

This was like when you have rats in your house, it was better to set up a mouse trap, place some baits on it and wait for it to come take the bait, than wasting energy to try and capture it all over the place.

"As for the second key... "

Prometheus walked towards Fielding slowly. He looked into Fielding's eyes and said softly, "To open the Forbidden door, it will

require all the blood of a Domain Master... "

He shook his head and sighed, "I wanted to go behind this door very badly, but although I've gotten the God's Record, I can't possibly kill myself and offer all my blood to this door, right?"

"So, I've drawn you here because I need your blood, Fielding... " As Prometheus was saying this, a powerful aura radiated in full blast from his body!

An invisible domain immediately unfolded in this room. This was not a pure fighting energy of a warrior or a magical boundary of a sorcerer...

Fielding's expression was stone cold and there was no sign of fear, "Prometheus, the reason you tell me all these is to kill me here? Have you forgotten that I'm also a Domain Master! Will you be able to kill me!"

"I don't know... but I can try, because I really wanted to go behind that door... " Prometheus lowered his eyelids, "I've already lost one chance to restore my strength, and the only way left is to go home. My home is in heaven!"

He slowly held out a finger and swished it like a blade. Immediately, Fielding grunted in pain. He quickly used his sword to ward off the attack, but a bloodied arrow shot out from his shoulder.

Fielding clenched his teeth and retreated.

"Open up your domain, Fielding! Let me see your strength as a Domain Master!" Prometheus' tone was eerily cold.

Fielding's raging roar rang from within the temple. A loud boom followed, and the great hall at the peak shook violently. A boundless aura expanded within the temple and extended slowly from the peak to the sky!

...

On the steps below the temple, there were dead bodies everywhere. Those magicians wearing the clergy's robes, and also several Holy Knights who stayed behind were all dead on the floor. There were blood stains all over the ground, and Rody, no, the Mystic Dragon, was standing above the steps silently.

One of his hands was stained with bright red blood and the strange glow in his eyes became stronger and stronger.

Below the steps, the long stairs which were a hundred over meters were already stained red by blood. The Mystic Dragon seemed to have walked up calmly from the hill of bodies.

Nedis was already vomiting. Although she already knew the Mystic Dragon was very powerful, she could not help but feel scared when she saw how Rody came all the way up here. Those people from the temple did not have the ability to stop him at all. They were killed by Rody in an instant with just a wave of his hand!

And now, there was no longer anyone alive below the temple!

The Mystic Dragon raised his head and looked coldly at the temple above. He frowned and said, "Inside, there are two Domain Masters fighting!"

As if to confirm his statement, there was a loud bang.

One corner of the temple crumbled, and a series of terrifying banging sounds came from within.

The Mystic Dragon looked at Nedis coldly, "Stay here!" He then let out a long howl and a shrill dragon groan. His body immediately rose a few meters above ground and shot towards the temple like a ray of light...

Boom!

Fielding fell down on the floor, and several cracks appeared on the stone floor. Half of the walls in the room had collapsed. The battle between two Domain Masters was about to overturn the

temple.

Fielding's sword had already been broken into half, the armor in front of his chest had disappeared, and one of his arms was broken. Blood was all over the left side of his face.

Prometheus was also very wretched. He knelt on the floor with one knee and kept panting. His robe was torn beyond recognition with blood stains on his collar, and he just spurted a mouthful of blood.

"Fielding, you're not my match. Even though you've reached the Domain level, you're just a warrior! But me, I not only possess the Domain powers of a warrior, I am also a sorcerer!"

"Hmph!" Fielding snorted and stood up. The broken sword in his hand suddenly shattered, and countless fragments shot towards Prometheus like shooting stars!

Chapter 334: Entering Heaven

A black figure rushed in like a whirlwind. The wind broke the already crumbling walls on both sides of the passage.

With a loud sound, the five meters tall door was crashed open.

The shattered stones crashed. The Mystic Dragon stood there looking indifferently at the forbidden holy area of the temple.

The blood on the ground had not yet dried up. Fielding was sitting there with his back against the wall. Beside him was the 'Forbidden Door'.

At that moment, the door was completely out of shape. The surface of the slab stone door rippled like the surface of the water and shined with a silver light as though something had just been put into the water.

Fielding looked as though he had fallen asleep. His hand was holding the hilt of a sword with the blade missing. His head weakly leaned on his shoulder. His other clenched fist was dripping with dark red blood.

A trace of resentment and anger could be seen on his face. His messy hair dropped down his forehead and covered his eyes. However, his face looked lifeless.

The Mystic Dragon stood there and stared at Fielding. He suddenly had a strange sad emotion.

"Rody, are you feeling sad right now?" the Mystic Dragon muttered softly.

He slowly walked past and put a hand on Fielding's head. "He is already dead."

A trace of hellfire appeared and burned off Fielding's body. A few sparks flew in front of the Mystic Dragon and his expression turned a bit complicated.

"Did you wake up, Rody?" The Mystic Dragon smiled bitterly. His voice was a bit hoarse, "I suppose you know this person. I know your memories."

In front of the Forbidden Door, Prometheus was lying on the ground facing upwards. He looked so calm to the extent that he was excited. His silver mask was broken and unable to cover his face.

The Mystic Dragon quietly looked at Prometheus as though he was in a trance.

"Rody, you do not want to fight with me for this body?"

"Mystic Dragon, now is not the time."

A sneer appeared on his face. The Mystic Dragon pointed at Prometheus and said in a dry voice, "He has gone in. Through that door is heaven! In heaven, the body is not needed. Only the soul. Now, let us enter too!"

Broken to pieces on the ground was the God's Record.

He stretched out his hand to touch the Forbidden Door. His fingertips slid over the surface of the water, causing ripples.

"The body is not needed in heaven, but if I want to go in nobody can stop me!"

A black aura spread out from his hand and the water burned. A large hole gradually appeared in the middle. Inside it was a formless mass.

With a single step, Rody entered heaven!

...

After stepping into it, everywhere seemed boundless and indistinct—in front, behind, up, down, left and right. Things that looked like white clouds seemed to revolve around.

[Golden stairs were by his feet.](#) It was obvious that the stairs were made of light.

Rody had just walked through the door and with a whooshing sound, his body had burst into black flames. The surrounding 'white clouds' burned as well.

He suddenly raised his neck and roared loudly. His body shined with a black light and after that, whoosh, his figure had split into two!

Rody inconceivably looked at his hand. He looked at himself from top to bottom for a while and then frowned. "What happened?"

"We have separated," the Mystic Dragon replied. His stiff voice came from behind Rody.

Rody turned around and saw another 'Rody' standing in front of him. His face and hair looked exactly the same. The only difference was his indifferent expression.

"Did you return my body to me? But how did you divide it into two?" Rody asked coldly.

"I am a god." The Mystic Dragon slowly walked past Rody. "Having a body here will affect my strength."

Rody frowned and carefully examined his body. He did not feel anything strange. He secretly checked his fighting energy and also did not feel anything out of place.

"You just gave up my body like this?" Rody frowned.

The Mystic Dragon slowly walked forward. His head did not look back as he said, "I do not need it anymore."

Suddenly, he looked back at Rody and said, "Aren't you curious? Follow me."

Rody looked back. The solitary stone door was stood in front of him. Around it was just a formless emptiness drift. The slab stone stood tall and upright, right there.

"Can I still go back?" He laughed bitterly. He then sighed and

followed behind the Mystic Dragon.

The Mystic Dragon walked at the front. With every step, the black flames from his body would burn away the surrounding indistinct mass. Rody felt as though he was walking in the clouds. He was surrounded by boundless whites as though it was a sea of clouds.

God could create a rich and colorful world. So why is it so dull in his own space?

Even until walking to the end of the golden stairs, the Mystic Dragon did not talk to Rody at all. He did not tell Rody the reason for giving up the body. He also did not attack to kill Rody. He simply kept walking forward.

A sound was then gradually heard. The cluster of cloud-like things gradually became thin. Everything then became open and clear.

At the boundless space, there were only the golden stairs under their foot. At the distance, a tall towering palace gradually appeared. The palace looked golden. Even weirder was that the golden palace was transparent.

It looked as though it was made of golden glass.

As they gradually approached the palace, golden bolts of light suddenly flew over from the sky. Golden angel-like things flew to Rody and the Mystic Dragon. It then hovered around them. The golden angels shone with a bright light. Each of them was as big as a small bird. A pair of wings flapped behind them. Their faces were devoid of expression as they simply looked at Rody and the Mystic Dragon. Only their eyes showed curiosity.

"These are the angels that serve God. They have no gender, no intelligence, and no emotions. Their minds are empty. They only have a simple mechanical awareness. They don't even have a body!" The Mystic Dragon had an impatient tone. He grabbed an

angel with his hand and forcefully crushed its neck.

It burst into a golden light. The angel that was crushed really had no body. Its 'body' was just an apparition, leaving behind a golden fog.

The surrounding angels looked astonished. They retreated a little and then came back.

"Look. They do not have intelligence. They do not know how to be afraid. They do not know about death." The Mystic Dragon coldly said, "I hate these things. I hate them ever since I lived here a long time ago."

Rody curiously extended a hand and let an angel flew over his palm. Sure enough, the little things did not have any intelligence. Its height was not even as long as Rody's finger. It had an exceptionally good-looking face with curious eyes.

"Cute little things." Rody sighed. "Nicole and Mouse would like it if I could take them back."

The golden stairs reached its end. They were finally under the palace.

The golden door looked lofty and majestic. Although it was transparent and the things behind the door could be seen, an extremely powerful aura shocked Rody.

There was a person standing in front of it.

Prometheus, or rather, Kara, was standing at the entrance and was coldly looking at the door.

"It's you?" Kara turned around and looked at the Mystic Dragon. He then looked at Rody and was a little shocked. "Rody, you also came here? Then you, big headed lizard. You came back to life?"

"Right now, I will not kill you." The Mystic Dragon coldly looked at Kara. "Right now, you are just a Domain Master."

"You are not much better." Kara laughed. "You and the boy split

into two. You are no longer god-ranked! You had split into two, so half of your power is given to the boy. Right now, you are only about as strong as that Hakone Serpent!"

Rody was shocked. He looked at the Mystic Dragon and could not help but ask. "You lost half your strength when you came out of my body?"

"Having a body here will affect my strength," the Mystic Dragon replied coldly.

Kara coldly looked at Rody. "Boy, you are very lucky, but you are also misfortunate." He laughed with a bit of a mocking smile. "You have won half the power of a god but because you physically entered heaven, you are not able to use any of it here. Soon, there will be a huge battle here. See if you survive and return back to the human world after that."

Kara then looked at the Mystic Dragon and frowned. "I really do not like your current appearance. Did you get addicted to the human form?"

The Mystic Dragon was silent for a while before replying. "This is because I have already understood."

The Mystic Dragon looked at the towering palace and then looked back at Rody. "You know it best. Dragons have nine transformations. Right now, we have already transformed eight times. Yet, we already have the power of a god. Don't you find it strange? What will happen when I reached the ninth transformation?"

Without waiting for Rody's reply, the Mystic Dragon smiled as he looked at the door of the golden palace. His voice was filled with a deep anger. "After a thousand years of sleep, I finally understood how cunning the God that created me was. The Mystic Dragon does not have a ninth transformation! What they call the ninth transformation is a lie!"

Kara sighed. "Is it really like that? There is no ninth transformation?"

"..." The Mystic Dragon was silent for a while. "There is. There is a ninth transformation."

He looked at Kara and coldly said, "At the start, when I first went to war with you. That is the ninth transformation! What they call the Mystic Dragon's ninth transformation is a lie. A deceit. A joke that made me shackle my own neck!"

"God created me, but he was afraid of me. So he gave me the falsehood of the ninth transformation. I already had the same ability as the gods at the eighth transformation. However, the ninth transformation would make me lose my rationality and become a mindless beast. A beast without wisdom! With my ability, I no longer need to be limited by the form of a body. To pursue the transformation, I ended up remaining with a dragon's body."

"Things would turn the opposite way when they reached an extreme state," Rody replied and coldly asked, "What is the use of you bringing me here?"

"There is none." The Mystic Dragon shook his head. "In the human world, we are unable to separate. I was only able to break away from you in heaven."

"Break away?" Rody gave a wry smile. "I never wanted to break away from you? You are the one occupying my body."

Kara glanced at Rody with eyes of pity. "Boy. You only have one choice left. That is to wait here. Wait for us to kill the gods. Maybe after the battle, I will break open space for you to go back. Or perhaps you could follow us in and watch us get defeated together by the gods. After that, you would be destroyed as punishment. In other words, you would not be able to return by yourself."

After a pause, Kara sneered. "Of course, you could also discard

your body now and cross the Forbidden Door with your soul. However, without a body, how would you survive in the human world?"

Rody became gloomy and asked. "I cannot go back anymore?"

Kara smiled slightly and extended his palm. "Give it to me!"

"What?"

"My Divine Primordial Spirit." Kara smiled calmly. "Return to me what's mine. When I and this dragon defeat God, I will send you back."

Rody sneered. "Really? Right now, at the most, you are just a Domain Master, but you ran all the way to heaven. Are you not afraid of courting death?"

Kara shook his head and pointed to the door. "I came here much earlier than you two. Do you know why I did not enter? This is because I was already prepared to wait here."

"This is heaven! The difference it has with the human world is that the passage of time here is much faster! One day in heaven is one year in the human world! I am ready to slowly cultivate outside this door. It is much faster than cultivating for a century in the human world. Either way, I have already overturned the temple on the Roland Continent. God's agents in the human world have been destroyed by me. My only wish is to return here and pull that guy out of his throne. Not only do I not need to worry about other things by cultivating here. Cultivating here for a few tens of days is like cultivating for a few decades in the human world! With my godly knowledge, I can soon cultivate a new Divine Primordial Spirit and once again become god-ranked!"

Rody frowned. "You can cultivate in front of this door?"

Kara laughed calmly. "Why not? For ordinary people, standing here would cause the guardian angels to attack. But I am different! I had reincarnated under the light system! The guardian angels

would not attack me and the old guy in there would not come out!"

Rody frowned. "Guardian angels? What is that?"

"It is them." The Mystic Dragon suddenly said as he pointed to the angels flying everywhere.

"Them? They can attack?"

The Mystic Dragon suddenly looked at Rody. He suddenly extended a finger and forced out a mass of black air at his fingertips. It then magically changed into a human form with an evil aura. However, the aura was much weaker.

The angels in the sky immediately uttered an extremely shrill cry at the same time.

Countless angels flew towards them at the same time while little bows and arrows appeared in their hands together and their shrill cries filled the sky. Countless golden lights were shot at the thing the Mystic Dragon created.

The human-like gaseous figure was instantly riddled with the gold lights and was instantly crushed.

"Did you see that? Those little things are not just birds flying around. Once there is something evil, they would immediately destroy it. The fierceness of their attacks are not things you could imagine! More importantly, they are unable to die! Even if you kill them, you would only disperse a ray of light. But the golden light will quickly just turn into an angel again!" Kara sighed. "Although I hate these dumb things, they are really useful."

Rody looked at the angels flying around in the air, packed densely like locusts, and asked, "Why do they not attack me? Why do they not attack the Mystic Dragon?"

Kara sighed. "They did not attack you because you have my Divine Primordial Spirit! They did not attack the Mystic Dragon because..."

The Mystic Dragon coldly looked at Kara and said, "Enough!"

Kara laughed. "Old dragon, are you afraid I would tell him your most embarrassing story?" He then looked at Rody and continued. "They did not attack the Mystic Dragon because the Mystic Dragon has God's mark on his body! When he was created, he had that mark to say that he is forever God's slave and servant!"

The Mystic Dragon's expression turned bad and looked a little bit angry. But he simply looked at Kara for a while and said somberly, "Enough!"

Rody took a deep breath and asked. "What about me after I give you back your Divine Primordial Spirit? What would happen to me?"

Kara narrowed his eyes and said, "Those angels will attack you. However, with me and the Mystic Dragon here, they would be unable to hurt you. However, without the Divine Primordial Spirit, you may return back to becoming a Domain Master, but you would not be able to use the Mystic Dragon's power even if it is in your body."

"I will return you your Divine Primordial Spirit if you send me back out!" Rody coldly said.

"Deal!" Kara then sighed and added. "However, we must wait until everything is finished. Otherwise, I will not be able to send you back."

"Why?"

Kara gritted his teeth and slowly said, "Obtaining the Divine Primordial Spirit would restore my strength to semi God-ranked. However, I would still not be able to cut the space and stand you back. Did you think it would be easy to return to earth from heaven?"

Rody shook his head. "I don't believe you. I have seen God's Vanquish before. You can forcibly separate the passageway to

heaven."

The Mystic Dragon suddenly said, "He is not lying. The only passageway to the human world is inside. We cannot leave through the door we came in."

Rody sighed. "In other words, I would have to follow you in."

...

A black fire was shot outside the palace. A black screen spread out and protected the three inside.

Rody had already spat out the Divine Primordial Spirit from his body. He initially did not know how to spit it out and needed Kara to teach him.

Kara held his Divine Primordial Spirit with excitement and muttered silently in a strange language.

The angels now sensed Rody's aura and flew down. Countless golden arrows were shot towards Rody. However, the Mystic Dragon's protective screen was like a huge umbrella. The light arrows fell onto the screen, pitter-patter like raindrops, and exploded. The sky lit up as though there were fireworks.

"Boy! Cover your ears!" Kara said with a somber expression. The Divine Primordial Spirit slowly became dim but his face shined with a holy brilliance. "Hmph. Did you think the Divine Primordial Spirit was something to swallow? Without my incantation, you would not be able to use the power inside! Now cover your ears if you do not wish to break to pieces here."

Rody saw the Mystic Dragon took a deep breath and he quickly covered his ears...

Suddenly there was a long and loud cry filled with anger and a hostile aura. Although Rody covered his ears, he still felt his body tremble and his heart shook.

The angels in the sky were all destroyed by the roar, lighting up

the sky shine with a golden brilliance. Only Kara coldly smiled as he stood at a side.

"Hmph. This dragon is still as bad-tempered, just like a thousand years ago. Are you calling that guy out to challenge him?"

Kara had already stretched out his hand to gently tap the golden transparent door. His movements were very gentle, and he lightly knocked twice as though he was visiting a neighbor's house.

There was a loud sound. The large door in front of Kara suddenly shattered into thousands of golden rays of light.

Numerous fierce and sharp whirlwinds almost cut Rody's face. Rody was sure that if his body was not strengthened by the Mystic Dragon's blood, he would have been long cut into thousands of pieces.

Kara's cold voice resounded. "Mystic Dragon. Let us cancel off our enmity with each other from a thousand years ago! You were sealed off for thousands of years and my body was imprisoned after being destroyed. After we get rid of that old guy today we can each go our separate ways!"

After that, Kara led the way and took a step towards the palace.

The Mystic Dragon coldly smiled. He pulled Rody lightly and walked into the palace.

What was behind the door was a different world compared to what was outside.

Rody took a step in and immediately felt a calm and peaceful atmosphere. He looked around and saw that it looked like a fine spring day. There was lush and thick grass; the trees were blooming; the leaves and flowers were lush and flourishing. The sun and the moon co-existed in the sky. He clearly knew that this place was heaven and it felt like a paradise.

"Aren't we inside the palace?" Rody frowned.

"Hmph. Did you think heaven is a broken palace? This is just an illusion. It is also the place where God breed the Mythological Beasts!" Kara coldly sneered. "Yes. You released the Mystic Dragon, so I suppose you have seen the Sphinx? That guy is also a Mythological Beast. Similar Mythological Beasts like it are plenty here."

Kara then pointed to a towering tree and laughed. "For example, that bird on that tree is also a Mythological Beast! These guys can be considered God's watchdogs!"

Just as soon as Kara said that, a shrill whistle came from the tree. A roc with seven-colored wings flew over. A flap of its wings brought forth sharp, cutting winds.

The Mystic Dragon waved his hand and the bird immediately gave a blood-curdling scream. Its wings broke into two. Its golden colored blood sprayed out as it fell from the sky.

"Let's go," the Mystic Dragon coldly said, "I don't like the atmosphere here."

Kara sighed. "Hmph. You do not like a clean and peaceful place like this but you like the scorching hell?"

A man, a god and a dragon walked into the depths of the fairyland.

天梯 Technically, a very tall ladder on high buildings or structure. Separately it would be heaven stairs/steps/ladder. Constantly calling it the golden stairs of heaven would break the flow of the sentence, so I generalized it to golden stairs.

Chapter 335: Dragon Egg

"How much further?" Rody sighed. He had already been walking for two hours. [Two hours was enough time to walk around an entire palace.](#) However, the first layer of illusion inside this palace was still extremely lush and flourishing, and it was not clear how big this whole place was.

If it was a new space created by God, it need not be as big as the human world. Even one-tenth the size of the human world would be enough to cause Rody to die from walking.

What Rody was most worried about was that he was in heaven. A day in heaven meant a year in the human world. Kara and the Mystic Dragon were two-thousand-year-old monsters and they naturally would not care. However, Rody was waiting to go home. Rody thought it would be frightening if the two were to spend twenty days in that space.

He looked a little resentful at the Mystic Dragon who was at the front of the group.

Did this guy get lost after not coming here for a thousand years?

"Are you worried?" Kara's voice came from behind him. "Rest assured. We are not looking for a road. We are looking for a mythological beast."

"A mythological beast?"

"Yes." Kara smiled. "This illusion has no fixed exit. When God created this space, he left behind one of the most powerful mythological beasts to guard it. The only way out of here is to find it, kill it, and capture its magical core. Then only would we be able to break out of this fairyland to leave."

Rody was silent for a while. He then asked, "The most powerful mythological beast?"

"It's a dragon." Kara sighed. "Didn't you notice? Why did none of

the mythological beasts attack us again along the way? Oh, I have almost forgotten. You have the Mystic Dragon's aura too, so you did not realize it... Can't you feel the Mystic Dragon's extremely heavy murderous aura? The murderous aura made the ordinary mythological beast move further away and not come closer. This saves us a lot of trouble. In addition, another important method would be to attract the dragon over. Dragons are very territorial. If there were other dragons not from its group, it would take the initiative to attack! The Mystic Dragon and I have used this method before when we were here last time."

Rody was still puzzled. "But isn't there only a few dragons left? You said that killing the dragon here is the only way out. You also said that you all once fought God. If the only dragon left here was killed by the Mystic Dragon, then wouldn't there be no more dragons here? In that case, how would I be able to leave?"

Kara smiled. "How could God's power be so simple? You have probably seen the Samsara River in the valley that sealed the Mystic Dragon. On top of that, there were also those angels outside! Even if they were killed, the golden aura would form a new angel. All of these are reincarnation. So, even if the dragon here is killed, it can reincarnate in this environment. However, such a powerful thing would not be able to reincarnate as easily as the angels outside."

Rody sighed and laughed bitterly. "How big is this place? How long do we need to look for it?"

Kara frowned. "Logically, the dragon should have already come over when it felt the Mystic Dragon's aura. But up till now it still has not appeared. I find it strange too..."

"Is the guardian dragon here strong?" Rody asked warily.

Kara gave Rody a glance. "It is not very strong, but it is also not weak. I told you about this just now that domains are the road to heaven. I believe you still remember? The angels outside and the

mythological beasts inside would all try and kill the humans that tried to enter God's domain. Even if a Domain Master enters, they would not be able to get past this guardian dragon. I knew the guardian dragon from one thousand years ago. It was truly a holy and large dragon. Although it was slightly weaker than the Hakone Serpent, it is not that far off."

Rody sighed and murmured. "Domain is the road to heaven. How many of the human's Domain Master have been tricked into entering heaven in the past thousand years? Even if they do not die at the hands of the angels, they would still be buried in this fantasy land."

The Mystic Dragon suddenly stopped. From the side, his expression looked somber.

"Large lizard, why have you stopped?" Kara frowned.

The Mystic Dragon pointed at a distance and suddenly said in a strange tone, "No need to look for it anymore. I wasted all my effort. Even if I release a strong dragon aura, that dragon will not attack us!"

His body flashed and disappeared.

Kara's expression turned solemn too and pulled Rody's hand. "He must have found something. Let us go and see." The two of them then disappeared.

...

When Rody stood behind the Mystic Dragon, he could feel that the Mystic Dragon's aura was somewhat gloomy. His face was filled with shock.

At the same time, Rody could feel a weak trace of a dragon's aura. However, the aura did not come from the Mystic Dragon. It came from the object the Mystic Dragon was staring at.

There was a huge egg with a white ring of protective qi in a thick clump of grass. The dragon's aura was coming from that egg.

The Mystic Dragon looked at the dragon egg for a long time without saying a word. However, he looked shocked to the extent of almost forgetting himself. Rody could see the Mystic Dragon's clothes faintly shake.

After a long time, Kara took a deep breath and walked forward a few steps. He waved his hand and destroyed the protective qi.

He paused for a moment and gently put his palm on the dragon egg. He then closed his eyes and carefully felt the egg.

Kara also had an imposing expression. He opened his eyes and looked at the Mystic Dragon. He then asked in a dry voice. "What do you think?"

The Mystic Dragon shook his head. He looked shocked and dazed.

Kara slowly said, "The Sacred Guardian Dragon is currently being reincarnated. Even if he is killed, he would revert to an egg and then reincarnate! However, how long does it take for the Sacred Dragon to hatch?"

The Mystic Dragon squeezed out his voice as he replied, "About two hundred to three hundred years."

Kara sighed. His eyes revealed a sharp gaze. "When was the last time you came here to fight with the old guy? Was it about one thousand three hundred years ago? At that time, you killed the Sacred Dragon once. My last time here was about one thousand years ago! That time, I had killed the Sacred Dragon once. I had good fortune at the time as you had killed it just three hundred years before that. It had only just hatched when I came to kill it. As a result, it was not too strong, and I had easily passed this level. But..."

Kara's tone then became stern. "However, since I had killed it a thousand years ago, there should not have been anyone else who came here! The Guardian Dragon immediately becomes an egg after being killed. However, the egg has not yet hatched! In other

words, it was killed in the past three hundred years. But in the past three hundred years, you were sealed and asleep at a remote mountain. My body was destroyed, and my soul was wandering around. The only other thing that could kill it was the Hakone Serpent that was sealed at the Dwarven Kingdom. Besides us, who else could have come here? Who else has the ability to kill this Guardian Dragon?"

The Mystic Dragon was speechless. Both he and Kara became even tenser.

Since someone has come here before and killed this dragon, it means someone has broken through this fantasy land!

The atmosphere became somber. The Mystic Dragon and Kara both did not speak but their breathing gradually became heavier.

Rody had a suspicion in his heart. He could understand Kara's words and he was also puzzled.

"Kara, I have something to ask you." Rody suddenly spoke.

He looked at Kara in the eyes and continued. "I know my strength is not worth your attention, but I have a question..."

Rody then looked at the Mystic Dragon and slowly said, "Recently, I experienced the war between the two continents. The Roland people has learned the legendary combined sorcery. I heard that a miracle happened in the temple. They said that God had shown his might and once again taught the humans a trick used by the ancient humans that were lost. I presume this is your doing?"

Kara immediately nodded without hesitation. "That's right. I am the one that taught them combined sorcery. Otherwise, they would not have come out and would not dare to cross the ocean and attack you."

Rody's tone gradually became heavier. "What about the combination spells and the God's Vanquishing Spell from the Radiant Continent's church?"

Kara looked at Rody and sighed. "That was also me! At that time, I looked at both continents and saw that there were no Domain Masters aside from me. I feared that if the Roland Continent had mastered combined sorcery, their power could not be suppressed. So, whatever the consequences, I went and stealthily taught the combination spell as a miracle, to the Radiant Continent's church. That ludicrous Pope actually thought it was a miracle..."

Rody nodded. "So, it really was you. I have a friend that was also suspicious for a long time. God had not appeared for so long and yet both continents suddenly these kinds of lost forbidden skills. Now I understand it was your handiwork."

Rody frowned and asked, "But how do you know all this? You are the Devil God Kara. You are not God. Both the combined sorcery and combination spell were something taught by God. How did you master it?"

Kara's expression gradually became strange as he looked at Rody. However, he remained silent.

"This is because..." the Mystic Dragon suddenly spoke, "This is because he was once a part of God!"

"What?" Rody was really surprised this time.

Kara looked a little angry. He looked coldly at the Mystic Dragon.

The Mystic Dragon's cold expression remained unchanged as he continued, "Rody. Don't you find it strange? If the world was created by God, where did the Devil God Kara come from? Let me tell you. A long, long time ago, there was only one God. One day, God suddenly went crazy. The two consciousness in his mind fought and then one of them left and took along some part of the godhood. So, the gods split became two. They both fought in heaven. The winner became God while the loser occupied the Southern Radiant Continent as Devil God Kara..."

The Mystic Dragon then looked at Kara's angry eyes and coldly

said, "Earlier, you spoke about my mark. Now we are even."

Rody was silent for a moment before he suddenly laughed wildly.

He pointed at Kara and laughed extremely wantonly until he could hardly catch his breath. But anybody would know that Rody's laughter was not a cheerful one.

"You! You guys!" Rody suddenly stopped laughing as he coldly looked at the Mystic Dragon and Kara. "You gods and Devils are spoken off so loftily, so mighty and majestic! The ridiculous humans went on war expeditions for thousands of years. Countless people spilled their blood and were just sacrificial offerings for you all! What a joke! Hahahahahaha..."

Although Rody was only a human, he looked at the god and the dragon fearlessly, in profound anger.

Kara's expression gradually cooled down as he asked, "What is so funny? Humans were created by us and are not so different. Humans in high positions fight by using the humans at the bottom just like us. This is an unchanged rule in the world."

Rody did not object and took a deep breath. He then slowly said, "Perhaps you are right. But just now, when I saw this dragon egg, I had thought of a very interesting possibility. I wonder, has the great Mystic Dragon and Devil God thought of this already?"

A deep mocking look appeared on Rody's face. "God has not created any miracle for hundreds of years. The dragon egg shows that someone or something has reached this place and achieved God's domain level a few hundred years ago... Have you not thought of the possibility..."

He looked at the two legendary people that had been worshipped by millions, opened his mouth and slowly said, "...that God probably no longer exists?"

The actual word is 'castle' but the previous chapter mentioned 'palace'. So 'palace' is retained for consistency.

Chapter 336: God?

"Nonsense!" Kara coldly rebuked while the Mystic Dragon seemingly turned pale.

Rody smiled calmly. "Then can you explain the dragon egg? You said that nobody would come here but you had forgotten that the saying 'domain is the road to heaven'."

Kara frowned as he thought to himself. He then shook his head and said, "Even if a human comes here, a Domain Master cannot kill this Guardian Dragon."

The Mystic Dragon then coldly said, "There is no point in continuing to guess. We might as well go in and see the answer."

He sent out a wind blade to cut open the dragon egg.

This was the first time Rody saw a young dragon that had not yet been hatched.

The embryonic form of a dragon could be seen and was about the size of a small kitten. It was completely covered in a silvery mucus and its eyes were closed. There was a horn protruding on his forehead. The pair of wings behind its back has not yet opened...

The Mystic Dragon looked at the young dragon and sighed. He sent a wind blade to the young dragon's head, creating a splatter of blood. A five-colored crystal slowly rose from the young dragon's front horn. The Mystic Dragon then held it in his hand.

An incantation was spoken by the Mystic Dragon. Rody felt a wind blow under his feet. The surrounding lush and green environment started to fade. It was as though the scenery was a thin paper that disappeared after being blown by the wind.

The three found themselves standing in the golden hall, less than one hundred steps away from the palace doors.

"How do we go up?" Rody asked. "There doesn't seem to be any

stairs."

Kara snorted. "This is heaven. Don't use human rules to make guesses. Just open that door in front of you and you can immediately go up.

At first, Rody did not believe it. However, when the three reached the door, he could not help but look around with wide eyes.

The door was opened and Rody already found himself on the castle terrace.

Kara's expression was somber. He had just accused Rody of speaking nonsense but he himself felt that it was peculiar. In front of him was a flight of stairs that numbered hundreds of steps and was twenty meters wide. They would reach the heaven's hall after walking up those stairs. What made Rody apprehensive was the armored warriors at the side of the stairs. Their armors and their bodies were like the angels outside, made of pure light. The armored warriors looked exactly like the one summoned by the pope's God's Vanquishing Spell.

Right now, they appeared to be standing at the side lifelessly. Rody could not help but wonder if they were real warriors or just statues.

"You have not found it odd." Kara pointed at the warriors on the sides and laughed. "These are all real, just like the angels outside. However, they are even less intelligent than the angels and will only obey God. They are simply..."

"Naïve thugs, right?" Rody added coldly.

Kara laughed but his eyes looked anxious. "It is very strange... Last time when we came here, these golden armored warriors would have long attacked us. On top of that, heaven's Valkyrie is also missing."

Rody's heart stirred. "[Heaven's Valkyrie?](#)"

"It is the leader of these thugs. Hmph. As something created by God, its job is to guard the highest layer of heaven and also to inspect for evil and disrespect against God in the human world. In ancient times, those devout to God could summon the Valkyrie to eliminate the so-called evil such as the vampires, the Kara race, powerful Mystical Beasts and others. That guy has a little bit more intelligence than these fellows. It is also stronger. You should have also seen it before. The so-called God's Vanquishing Spell summons the Valkyrie!"

Rody laughed and glanced at the Mystic Dragon. He then exhaled and said, "In this case, I think you do not need to look for the Valkyrie anymore. It has already been killed by the Mystic Dragon."

Kara frowned and looked at the Mystic Dragon. "This old lizard always acts in a cold manner. Since you have already defeated the Valkyrie, why didn't you tell me? God may be taking the opportunity to create a new one. We should seize the advantage in this situation."

Kara then quickened his pace.

Rody looked at the disturbingly quiet palace and shook his head. The golden armored warriors on both sides looked so lifeless that Rody thought that they were corpses.

At the top of the stairs were sixteen pillars made out of light, supporting the roof. However, the surroundings were roofless.

Under the roof was a circular pool of water. The waves were golden and calm like a mirror.

"Something is strange." Kara looked around suspiciously. "It does not matter whether it is me or the Mystic Dragon. To reach here, we would have already encountered a fierce battle. Those armored warriors seen along the way up here today looked dead."

Kara then could not help but said, "That old guy is clever. Did he

hide because he saw me and the Mystic Dragon coming here together and knew that he could not win?"

Suddenly, the light rays on Kara's body became dazzling. A halo appeared on his head. His white robes fluttered calmly as though something was slowly moving in his robes.

He immediately created a golden curtain of light. The light immediately transformed into a large and sharp sword that was ten meters long. The sword then shot towards a corner of the palace.

The Mystic Dragon frowned and created a black flame to protect himself and Rody.

Boom! The sword created by Kara cut off the topmost layer of the palace.

Following the burst of golden light radiating all around, Rody was shocked to see the damaged top of the palace. The golden light that was shattered started to coalesce together and seemed to grow. Gradually, the one-third of the roof that had been cut off started to repair itself. However, the speed of repair was not too fast.

"What are you doing? The palace cannot be destroyed." The Mystic Dragon coldly said.

"Of course, I know that. However, I can force that old guy out! If he doesn't come out, I will break it ten thousand times!"

The moment Kara's voice ended, an imposing voice came out from inside the palace.

"Who! Who destroyed my bedroom? Shit. Where is that damned Valkyrie? Did it slack off in the mortal world? I am going to punish you a hundred times!"

The voice was dignified and majestic. However, saying such things in that tone made Rody show a strange expression.

Kara's face turned strange and looked at the Mystic Dragon with surprise. The Mystic Dragon was dazed. It was as though they do not recognize the voice...

"This is God?" Rody resisted his urge to laugh wildly.

Kara shook his head looking confused. "His voice sounds alike but..."

The moment that was said, a burst of golden light shot out from the distant broken roof with a booming sound. It transformed into a person's figure as it that flew towards the three.

A slender old man stood in front of them.

This was the first time Rody saw the real God. God's appearance looked like what was described in the church's records, the pictures, and the sculptures.

He wore an extremely simple robe. His long hair and long beard almost reached his chest. His face radiated a holy light and his body faintly carried a holy aura. He was barefooted.

His eyes, especially, carried a trace of godly majesty. His gazed over, making Rody feel somewhat shocked.

At that moment, God had an angry tone and his voice carried a fierce wind as though handing out punishments. He shouted, "Who destroyed my bedroom?"

The moment God said that, he saw the three people in front of him and froze for a moment. "Who are you? No. No. [Are you people or something?](#) Should it be what are you? Or maybe you are not anything?"

Kara and the Mystic Dragon turned stiff. They looked at the god in front of them as though their eyes were about to drop out.

God waved solemnly and brought his sleeves together behind his back. He narrowed his eyes and said, "Hm. One is semi god-ranked. One has a dragon aura. Eh? Are you twins? How do you have the

same appearance? No, that is not right. One is a fake human with a dragon's aura while the other also has a dragon's aura but is human. Hm? How did you physically enter heaven? How did you come here?"

At that moment, the anger on his face turned into a happy smile. "This is great. It has already been more than two hundred days. I feel suffocated being here alone. Every day I only interacted with these corpse-like things. It is not joyful at all. Eh? No that is not right. Two hundred days would mean..." He then pulled out his five fingers and counted. He frowned. "It should be more than two hundred years. After all, one human year is only a day in heaven."

When God finally finished speaking, Kara and the Mystic Dragon shouted out at the same time. "Who are you?"

"Me?" God raised his eyebrows. He revealed a solemn expression and gently coughed before saying loudly, "I am this world's god! I am the omnipotent, noble and greatest existence! Hm... You all do not need to kneel. I am not fond of formalities."

Kara could not take it anymore. He raised his palm and the large sword in the sky then slashed down at God.

Boom! God moved one of his hands from behind him. His hand was holding a small unknown object that suddenly shot out a golden light. The giant sword coming down from the sky was shattered.

"Aha! You guys are really malicious!" God showed an excited expression. "Come! Since you came to heaven, it must be to challenge God. I... Hm? No!"

The aura in Kara's body spread out as he gave a loud cry. The body of the Temple's Pontiff suddenly shattered, and a golden light shot out from within to form a huge body.

Kara stood in the sky. His upper body was human, his lower body was that of six different monsters. He held a huge silver sword in

one hand and a giant flaming hammer in the other... It was as though the sky was covered in his sad howl...

Next to him, the Mystic Dragon also gave a long whistle. The black flames around his body grew more and more intense. Finally, the flames reached to the skies imposingly. The black flames in his hands grew more and more intense.

Rody was clearly very familiar with this. The Mystic Dragon was clearly ready to release the Mystic Dragon's Purge.

"Oh, so it was the Devil God Kara and the Mystic Dragon of ancient times." God narrowed his eyes and looked somber. He glanced at Rody. "What about you? What kind of transformation do you have?"

Rody laughed and stepped back a few paces. "I am a human. I am a pure human."

Rody stood beside the Mystic Dragon. This way, Kara's fierce aura and the flames would not be able to hurt him.

The Mystic Dragon's hellfire naturally did not hurt Rody who also had the Mystic Dragon's body.

"I will ask you again! Who are you?" Kara's voice resounded like thunder in the air.

God took a step back. He frowned and looked at the two angry mythological monsters. His gaze looked strange as he sighed. "Trouble has come. The predecessor's debt also needs to be cleared by me. This is not fair."

He suddenly raised his hands and laughed gently. "You two. Wait for a moment. I surrender alright? Everyone is either a god or a devil, or even the Mystic Dragon. Such a huge fight would not be meaningful."

He then laughed bitterly and said, "I am indeed God. However, I only obtained this position for about two hundred days. Um, it should be two hundred years. If the previous God had offended

you, you can destroy or take whatever you want here. Is that all right?"

When these words came out, Kara almost fell from the sky. The Mystic Dragon's black flames also stopped burning. Rody stared at God with his eyes wide.

"You all asked who I was, right? Let me tell you. I am God. A more detailed explanation would be, I was the one who challenged the original bastard and took over his position. In simple terms, a successful rebellion."

As these words came out, Rody's suspicions became more intense. Rody felt as though the old man's manner of speaking, his demeanor, and his tone, were very familiar. It seemed to be someone he knew.

Finally, as if by instinct, Rody blurted out, "Andy?"

God froze for a moment and looked at Rody. "What did you say? Andy? Do you know Andy? No, I am not Andy. My name is..." He thought for a while and then laughed. "My name in the human world is Dandong!"

巡守武神 Literally patrol.guard.military.god. Renamed it to Valkyrie because it sounds more 'heaven themed'.

Question was are you people or 'things' like the armored warriors.

Chapter 337: The Final Chapter (1)

Dandong!

All of the absurd things Rody had heard of in his life when added up would have never been as shocking as this.

The Great Sage of the Empire actually became a god!

Kara and the Mystic Dragon stood there silently. Kara had withdrawn his magical body and returned to a human form

"Not fighting anymore? Every injustice has its perpetrator. Devil God and Mystic Dragon, the one who has offended the two of you is not me but my predecessor." Dandong shook his head. He stretched out his finger and drew a line. A crack in the air appeared as though the air was cut. It then turned into a door.

"You are all visitors from a faraway place. Come. Follow me in." Dandong said with a joyful tone. "I had long hoped that someone would come here."

Once Rody stepped into the door, he had a slightly familiar feeling. They were in a room inside the golden palace. The layout of the room was similar to the laboratory Dandong had left behind at the Duke's residence.

Although everything was recreated with Godly powers, Rody could not help but smile when he looked at the strange instruments on the table. Kara and the Mystic Dragon, on the other hand, may not necessarily understand what they had seen.

"Alright. I know you all must have many questions. However, I believe I may be able to answer them.

The Mystic Dragon looked at Dandong with his strange black eyes and asked, "You are human. How did you become a God?"

"Domain is the road to heaven. I believe you all know about this. This ridiculous lie was just a trap that deceived even me..."

Dandong sighed. "Fortunately, I was no longer a Domain Master when I heard this lie."

"Then what were you?" Rody asked.

"God-ranked." Dandong shook his head. "Or so it should be, as God is not the only one that is god-ranked. I spent a lot of time researching and found out that those myths and legends actually existed. Since those existed, then Mystic Dragon, Kara, and God should also exist. So, since god-ranked isn't limited to just the god spirit, why can't I do it as well?"

Rody was speechless.

He could create a completely new creature, Andy.

He could create a new space. Wasn't the mask a key used to store things in a space?

He also found a way to make the soul transfer bodies and keep on living like Old Mark.

Weren't these god-ranked powers?

Rody suddenly asked, "Are you researching... for a way home?"

Dandong showed a surprised expression. "You read my notes?"

Rody nodded. "Andy is my friend and the daughter of the Tulip Family is my wife."

Dandong nodded. He showed a very weird smile and asked, "In other words, you studied the Sunflower Treasure?"

Rody naturally did not know the meaning of Dandong's weird smile and just nodded seriously.

Dandong glanced at Kara and the Mystic Dragon as he said, "The story of God and the Devil God, I know about it. The two of you getting free of the thousand-year shackles and coming here is to presumably settle your score with God. However, that guy no longer exists. So, if the two of you still have something else, please speak up."

"Frankly speaking, I have no interest in being God. My only purpose is to find a way home. The place I seek is probably in another space. I initially thought God would be the most powerful person who mastered space, so I searched for this place by hook or crook. Unfortunately, the god spirit did not give me a way home." Dandong smiled bitterly.

Rody then asked, "Where is that god spirit?"

Dandong gave an evil laugh and said, "If I tell you I ate him, would you believe me?"

Rody was startled and blurted out, "Dragon Conversion Technique!"

"It is not simple. You actually know about this. Looks like that bastard Andy..." Dandong then gave an awkward expression and said, "All of this changing and transformations in this world is nothing more than the conversion of energy. The so-called idea that God will not die only verifies the law of conservation of energy in my original world. Although I cannot make the previous God completely disappear, it is still possible for me to convert his existence into another form."

Rody smiled wryly. "At first when I converted the Mystic Dragon, I almost lost my body to him."

Dandong looked at the Mystic Dragon and laughed. "It is because you two are identical. Presumably, the Mystic Dragon now feels disdainful to remain in your body. You are just an ordinary human, but you converted the powerful, god-ranked Mystic Dragon. Naturally, it would be unbearable. However, I am not afraid of this. It is like a body having two souls. The more powerful one would be in control. You are too weak compared to the Mystic Dragon. Of course, it could not work."

Dandong then clapped his hands and laughed. "Alright. I have already said all that I should say. Do you still have any more questions? If you are interested in this palace, I will give it to you.

If you want to become God I can also leave now."

After that, Dandong sighed and said, "If the two of you really want to fight me, I will also let you break these old bones apart. However, this is heaven. Even if we tear each other apart, we will just reincarnate again. There is no point in fighting... If you want to seal me up like what God did to you, there is no need for that. Just give me a house and I would quietly do my research inside. I wouldn't have even come out had you all not destroyed my roof!"

After Dandong had finished, he asked with a smile. "Now, what do you want?"

Kara sighed as he looked at Dandong and said, "A small human could actually reach this far. You are really a miracle."

He then continued coldly. "God no longer exists, but heaven should not belong to you. From now on, I will take control of heaven. I will be the new God!"

"Sure!" Dandong immediately replied as though he felt relieved.

The Mystic Dragon then said in a low voice, "Heaven has nothing to do with me. I also have no interest in the human world. However, the dragon race will no longer be under God's jurisdiction!"

After that, the Mystic Dragon looked at Dandong and asked, "Are you really willing to give up the position of God? Having this position is becoming the supreme existence; you will be above millions and second to none"

Dandong laughed and replied, "You came from the human world. Didn't you hear that God has not shown any miracles for centuries? I have no interest in these things."

The Mystic Dragon and Kara looked at each other and then said, "Deal."

Kara added, "I promise you. After I become the new God, the dragon race will no longer be bound to heaven."

Dandong laughed and said, "In that case, I will give you the mark of God. However, before that, what do we do about this human?"

Kara looked at Rody and smiled. "I have promised to send him back. I am the Devil God Kara. I am not that despicable old guy."

Dandong nodded and glanced at Rody as he said, "Come with me."

Dandong immediately opened a door of the room. They then walked to the pool outside.

Standing there, Dandong looked hard at Rody and asked, "How is Andy?"

Rody laughed bitterly. "He should be doing well."

He then thought in his heart, He already became an Emperor. Could he still be doing any worse?

Dandong nodded and pointed to the calm mirror-like water. "This is the gateway to the human world. It is the only exit! It is also the only channel through which God can control that space!"

Rody realized something. Dandong's tone emphasized the word 'only'.

Dandong then laughed again and said, "I presume my mask is still in your possession? You must also know that my mask is a small space of my own creation. I have left some of my few interesting toys from those days in there. Those things inside... I am giving it all to you."

Rody was surprised. That mask is already in my possession. Its inner space is also simply where Andy sleeps. At most, it has various junk, the lightsaber, and the magical cores from Mythical Beasts. Although these things were strange, they already belong to me. Why is it being mentioned seriously?

Dandong stared at Rody's eyes and suddenly smiled. "You have to take care of that mask. It is the only key to that storage space. If it

is lost, even I will no longer be able to enter that space to take those things."

After that, Dandong gave Rody a wink. However, this action was not seen by Kara and the Mystic Dragon.

Dandong began to speak an incantation. Immediately ripples began to form slowly on the surface of the water. Dandong stared at the water with a strange expression. He could not help but said, "Eh? Strange. There is a war going on down there. The people of the church are fighting against the Radiant Empire."

Rody was stunned for a moment. He then laughed. "That is..."

Before Rody could finish, Dandong stopped him with a look and lightly laughed. "Both sides seemed to be fighting for their faiths in God. I think it is better to separate them."

He waved his hand and several Guardian Angels appeared in the sky. The angels gathered and flew around Rody's head but did not attack Rody.

Kara coldly asked at the back, "What are you doing?"

Dandong laughed. "In the future, you will become the new God. The people down there are all yours. Are all of them fighting meaningful? I did not do anything in the past two hundred years ever since I became God. So now I am simply doing a few exciting things to satisfy myself before giving away the position."

Dandong grabbed Rody. A golden divine power entered Rody's body. Dandong suddenly whispered quickly in Rody's ear, "The banner fighting below belongs to the Tulip Family, right? These angels are the last time I help an old friend. However, they cannot stay in the human world for too long and will soon disappear."

Kara started to have an uncomfortable feeling at the back. He could not help speaking out, "What do you mean? You..."

Dandong had suddenly and fiercely kicked Rody into the pool. There was a splash, and Rody immediately sank. A whirlpool

formed in the water. The angels in the sky then flew down the whirlpool like a golden stream.

Rody felt dizzy as though he was falling into a cloud. He heard Dandong's final mocking words—

"The human world does not need God!"

Rody seemingly heard Kara and the Mystic Dragon's angry roars.

Hody turned around to look. All he saw was a world of water. However, it was clear that the ripples were drifting along. Behind the water ripples was a misty emptiness. The group of guardian angels flew behind him. The whirlpool opening then became smaller and smaller before bursting into a golden light.

That was an explosion!

...

In the eastern province, outside the city of Lorsch, there were twenty thousand fully armed Lightning God's Whip troops with murderous aura. On their left was the heavily armored infantries of the Northern Legion. At the moment, there was a strong bloody scent on the battlefield.

The imperial army had just fought a battlefield in the middle of Lorsch. The blood on the ground had not yet dried up. Corpses were left all over. The gates of Lorsch City were closed in a panic. The Flame Warriors on the city walls had expressions of panic and anger. Just a moment ago, they had watched twenty thousand of their companions killed by ten thousand of the Wolves' Fang. Finally, they left behind the corpses and retreated into the city.

The imperial army did not seem anxious to start a siege but allowed them to retreat into the city.

"Duke!" a commander of the Wolves Fang beside Seth said, "They have already retreated."

Seth nodded. He was riding a black warhorse. He wore a set of

armor accompanied by a large sword at his waist. From afar, his conspicuous gold armor along with the tall flying banner of the Tulip Family made him look like an invincible God of War.

However, only Seth knew how tired he was.

Shit. How is this armor so heavy!

"Let us fall back. We will continue to educate this gang of thieves tomorrow!" Seth exhaustedly waved his hand.

The commander next to him asked. "Duke, are we not going to lay siege today? With enemies of this level, I am sure a single charge would be enough to drive them off the walls!"

Seth frowned. "No need. Sieg is still mopping up the other church rebellions in the Eastern province. We do not have to fight so desperately here. As long as the Eastern provinces settle down, they would naturally surrender. It is fine as long as they do not come out courting death.

Seth muttered in a low voice, "Rody, what kind of army is this? All of your officers are like war maniacs. Don't they know that it is dangerous to go to war? It is more sensible to gain the fruits of war without any deaths."

The whole army then rapidly executed the duke's orders. Just as the soldiers began to withdraw systematically, there was a loud sound...

Boom!

A thunderclap suddenly came from the originally clear and boundless sky. A whirlpool that looked like a large hole then appeared. Golden brilliant lights could be seen flying out. The golden figure at the front then stopped in the air.

The lifelike figure in the golden brilliant light then flew slowly around in a circle.

The people on the ground were stunned. Both the church's army

on the walls and the imperial army were stunned at the strange scene.

That figure then lifted his finger, pointing towards Lorsch City.

The golden lights began to move.

Numerous golden guardian angels gave a majestic cry. Golden arrows materialized in their hands and were shot towards the wall.

It was like a mighty gold torrent. The Flame Warriors on the walls wanted to counterattack with their own arrows, but their scattered arrows were pitiful.

Tens of thousands of people were shocked as they saw the golden torrent descended from the sky and fiercely struck the walls of the Lorsch City.

There was a series of explosions as the entire city was covered in a golden light. Finally, there was an oppressive sound as the imperial army felt the earth shook.

A few deep cracks appeared on the walls after the explosion. The walls then finally collapsed.

Seth's eyeballs almost dropped out as he looked at the sky in surprise. Shit. That looks like an angel!

The angels attacked God's church?

There was a shout as Rody quickly flew to the army. He stood in midair and laughed at Seth. "Duke, how are my angel troops?"

Seth's expression turned stiff when he saw Rody. He fiercely looked at Rody with a bit of resentment and helplessness. Finally, he waved and shouted. "Wolves' Fang! Charge! Rush into the city!"

The horses galloped ahead, and the suits of armor pressed forth.

Chapter 338: The Final Chapter (2)

Under the setting sun, Rody stood under the ruined walls of Lorsch.

The heavenly angels had already disappeared. The angels naturally could not survive for long without a complete body. After some time passed, they vanished and became golden rays of light in the sky.

Seth stood beside Rody and gritted his teeth. "You finally came back! Did you know this was supposed to be your fight? Yet, those guys actually forced me to come here."

Rody shook his head. "You are now the Duke of the Tulip Family. The army would not even have half of their fighting spirit if they cannot see the Tulip Family's banner. Even if I was the one leading the troops, the war would end so easily."

Rody paused for a while before he suddenly asked, "How long has this war been going on?"

"It has been a month." Seth looked around at those cleaning up the corpses after the war as he softly said, "The preparations for the war took fifteen days. Most of the Lightning God's Whip was commanded by Sieg. Meanwhile, I led this army to the Eastern Province to attack their headquarters."

Rody nodded. Separating Seth and Sieg was correct. Amongst those in the Empire, Sieg was with him the longest and knows him the most. If Sieg and Seth were together, the perceptive Sieg would surely be aware that something was not right with the 'Duke'.

There was a moment of silence. Seth subconsciously asked, "Was what you said earlier true? Dandong is God? Heaven and this world have now separated? God would no longer appear in this world again?"

Rody smiled as he replied, "I know you are very curious. If you

want to go to heaven, there is still a way. There is a forbidden door at the Roland temple. You can walk through that door, but you will not be able to come out."

Seth thought for a moment and shook his head. "I won't go. You said we need to abandon the body to go to heaven. Without a body, there must also be no fun in heaven. On top of that, even if I want to go, did you think I can?"

He suddenly laughed and said, "Besides that, Rody, when you return to the capital, you will have trouble waiting for you."

"Trouble?" Rody froze for a moment. "What other trouble is there?"

Seth restrained his laughter and said, "After you became crazy and disappeared without reason, the women in your home quickly went mad. Strange news kept coming from the east. If Sky had not forcibly detained the Black Veil Saint, nobody could have stopped her from going to the East to look for you... But after that..."

At this point, Seth paused and sighed. "You are really a flirtatious fellow. Several days later, a woman suddenly came to the empire and told us that you went to the Roland temple. When we found out that you, the demon, is no longer in the east, we finally dared to dispatch soldiers to fight against the church. That woman now lives at your residence at the imperial capital."

"It is Nedis!" Rody immediately remembered. Although his body was possessed by the Mystic Dragon, he was still aware. It was merely his body being controlled by someone else.

He was initially worried about Nedis. However, the people at the temple had already been killed by the Mystic Dragon. He believed that Nedis would not encounter any more danger. However, he did not expect Nedis to go to the imperial capital and inform the others.

"Yes. That woman seems to be called Nedis. At first, my sister

was very hostile to her. However, the fatty said something to my sister and then her attitude suddenly changed." Seth then glanced at Rody with his eyes. "You are really popular with women."

Rody's mouth tasted bitter. Even if he were to think with his feet, he believed that the women at home would no longer be so nice to him.

He looked at Seth, who was gloating at his misfortune hatefully and had the intention of striking back. He stretched out his hand towards Seth and asked him. "Seth, what do you think this is?"

A golden light moved around in circles on Rody's palm as though it was a life force.

Rody deliberately spoke slower as he smiled and said, "This is not my fighting energy. It is also not sorcery. This is a trace of divine power. Dandong has given me some divine power. Let me tell you this. The god spirit has no body. At first, I struggled to find God's blood. However, after finding Dandong, I learned that the God Spirit has no body. How could there be blood? That is why God's blood must be the trace of divine power from their body of light.

When he saw Seth's uncertain expression, Rody deliberately laughed and added, "This divine power is the god's blood. I heard that as long as the body is well preserved, God's blood could even revive the dead."

With a long laugh, Rody took a warhorse next to him and got on it. He then lightly said, "You have been restricted by the Black Veil Saint's sorcery, so you are unable to escape. I will go back to the Imperial Capital first and wait for you there... When you come, I will personally send you a surprise!"

Seth felt uneasy as he saw Rody rode off towards the setting sun.

Even though he felt uneasy, the mighty Duke of the Tulip Family commanded the equally mighty Lightning God's Whip to overrun the remaining armed rebels from the church. Naturally, the

current church was then classified as evil heathens by the emperor.

When the Duke of the Tulip Family led his army for the final battle against the heathens' headquarters, even angels came down from heaven to help. Such a miracle was unprecedented.

Even when humans fought against the Kara race in the ancient times, angels did not come down to help.

For a time, the people believed that the duke was God's envoy that came from heaven. The Duke of the Tulip Family was invincible because he was protected by God!

Of course, a certain person hiding in the imperial palace laughed himself off the chair with this kind of rumors.

A month later, the Duke of the Tulip Family withdrew his army from the east after stabilizing the area and returned to the imperial capital. The ceremony for the triumphant return of the God of War was extremely grand. Tens of thousands of civilians went to the streets outside the city hoping to have a glimpse of the graceful patron saint of the empire. A huge crowd could be seen from a mile away leading to the entrance to the imperial capital.

Seth was still wearing the gorgeous but heavy armor as he rode his black warhorse at the front of the convoy. His loyal Wolves' Fang was on both his sides. The golden fluttering banner of the Tulip Family was behind him.

Countless flowers flew over alongside the cheers of the crowd. Countless people took off their hats and screamed their cheers. They almost deafened the ears of the Wolves Fang warriors.

Without a doubt, the ones having the hardest time were the public security soldiers of the Empire.

However, when the Duke of the Tulip Family saw the important figures waiting for him at the gate, his eyes grew wide.

Although his pale face was hidden behind the thick helmet and

nobody noticed his body shook on the horse, it was a fact that the duke had an uneasy and shocked expression.

A slim and graceful woman slowly walked up. She smiled and looked around. Her powdered face was filled with joy and expectation but looked a little pale. It made her look gentler and touching.

When Seth saw this woman, he almost had the urge to turn around and escape.

His Majesty the Emperor, Abbas XI, or rather, Andy, laughed as he looked at the young woman. He desperately suppressed the urge to laugh and whispered, "Jojo, do you remember my words earlier?"

Jojo, the young woman who had just been resurrected bit her lips and said, "But Seth hates people forcing him to do things the most."

Rody, who was standing behind Andy, coughed gently. Nicole said, "Rest assured. My little brother has a weakness. In this, there will be someone helping you to make decisions."

The duke's group then arrived at the front.

Jojo trembled with excitement, but her eyes were firm. She took a deep breath and slowly went to greet Seth.

"Jo... Jojo... Hello." Seth got down the horse while being revered by many. Jojo smiled magnificently, but her eyes were moist with the excitement. "I am back. Are you unhappy?"

"I am happy." Seth sighed. He knew how Jojo died. Although he had a heart of stone, he could not turn away the girl who was willing to die for 'him'.

For a time, Seth's feeling of frustration against Rody for saving Jojo had turned into feelings of gratefulness.

There were joyous voices as the two embraced each other. All the

people watching felt happy for the patron saint of the Empire.

It was at this time when His Majesty the Emperor coughed solemnly.

"I declare that three days from now, I will personally host the wedding for the Duke of the Tulip Family!"

Seth's legs turned soft and he almost slipped. He looked at the Emperor with pleading eyes.

...

Three nights after.

The carnival had ended. The Duke of the Tulip Family's mansion grounds were full of colored ribbon and cut flowers fluttering in the wind. That day was the wedding day of the Duke of the Tulip Family, the God of War of the Empire. Although numerous women in the Empire had cried secretly, the wedding was conducted in an extremely grand manner. His Majesty the Emperor personally presided over the wedding ceremony. Almost all of the Lightning God's Whip had been mobilized to act as guards of honor for their great commander.

The only regrettable thing was that the groom's smile seemed unnatural.

"Shh. Quiet, Fatty. You almost shoved me..."

"Shut up. It is crammed here. Do you want me to fly up?"

Near the back door of the Duke's mansion, several figures stealthily hid in a tree.

Rody looked at Sky and Andy who was beside him helplessly. It was hard to imagine the Emperor peeping at the new groom that night, at the back door.

"What did you drag me here to see tonight?"

Andy gave him a glance and said, "Right now, you are Seth's relative. Don't you understand that person? A playboy like him

was forced to get married by us. He might try and run away."

Rody's eyes lit up. "So we are waiting to catch him here?"

Sky shook his head and replied, "Of course not. We are just here to watch the excitement."

At this moment, a slender figure slipped out from a side door. He looked around for a moment to see the situation.

"He is here!" The three guys hid at a dark place behind the branches.

Just as the figure felt relieved, he heard a shout from the courtyard. "Seth!"

The figure quivered and the three guys hiding at the tree immediately chuckled. However, Sky was too huge. When he laughed, his body shook. The branches could not support him and it snapped. The three of them then crashed from the tree.

According to common sense, these three guys—one was a super magician, one was a Domain Master, one more was a demigod—would not fall to the ground. But Sky was holding on firmly to Rody in the darkness. When Rody struggled, he bumped into Andy who was trying to quickly cast a spell. In turn, Andy crashed in pain into Sky. As a result, all three of them came into contact with the ground.

As the tree was outside the fence, they were unable to see inside the house. However, they could still hear the voices from inside.

"Seth... are you trying to sneakily escape?"

"Ah? Hahaha. Jojo, you got it wrong. I simply saw that the moon tonight was beautiful and came out for a walk."

"Moongazing? Do you need to bring along a luggage to go moongazing? Seth... you hurt my feelings."

Whoosh! There was a sudden sound. Nobody knew what happened, but the three people outside could see a flash of light

inside the fence followed by Seth's horrible shriek. "Ah! Didn't Mouse say she has lifted the sorcery restriction spell on me? Why..."

Jojo's voice seemed a bit distressed. "Seth, are you hurt? I am sorry. I am sorry. Mouse gave me the restriction control... This is a spiritual sorcery placed on your body. Whenever I feel sad, the restriction on you will be triggered."

The voices stopped here. They did not know if the duke had already fainted.

The three guys then lay on the ground and looked at the stars.

"Andy, do you think Dandong and the others are still up there?" Rody pointed to the sky.

"Hmph. Did you think Master would be content with sacrificing himself to trap those two monsters in heaven?"

Rody was unable to utter a reply for a time.

Andy was sly, quick-witted; even treacherous and despicable. It could be imagined how 'clever' Dandong was to be able to create such a person.

A guy that was so dangerous and had god-ranked powers too. Rather than feeling worried for Dandong, it would be better to be worried about the Kara who had been muddled by extreme anger and hatred and the indifferent and rigid Mystic Dragon.

After a moment of silence, Rody said in a dissatisfied tone, "Old guy, today at the wedding, you have suddenly announced that I am your adopted son. Why did you do that?"

Sky laughed. "The adopted son of the emperor. In the future, even Seth will need to call you 'Your Highness'. Wouldn't that be interesting?"

Rody sounded somewhat vigilant as he replied, "Interesting... I feel like you all have some kind of conspiracy."

Andy laughed. "Ah. Initially, I did not intend to do that... However, the Empress gave birth to a girl, and I am a skeleton. I can never father a child... Think about it. Even if I could live for a few hundred years, don't you think it would be too absurd for an emperor to live for a few hundred years? At most, I can help the empire for about twenty to thirty years. Then I would find somewhere to be free. At that point in time, who could I let to manage the empire? Who would inherit the title of Emperor? My adopted son..."

The skeleton laughed proudly and sinisterly. Rody was silent for a moment before he wailed mournfully.

The sky was beautiful, and the night was splendid. Sky was happy, and his unbridled laughter could be heard in the distance. With his gruff voice, he began to sing.

Toads in the river creating a racket.

Croak! Croak! Croak! Croak!

The old man was driven mad by the racket.

Why don't I catch some to go with my wine?

Croak! Croak! Croak! Croak!

They all ran away!

< End of Novel >

Table of Contents

[Masked Knight](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 201: Tit for Tat](#)

[Chapter 202: Nicole's Tender Love](#)

[Chapter 203: Strange Visitor From the Imperial Capital](#)

[Chapter 204: Legendary Scimitar](#)

[Chapter 205: Lake Monster](#)

[Chapter 206: Break Out](#)

[Chapter 207: Holy Beast, Mythical Beast](#)

[Chapter 208: Darke Joins the Group](#)

[Chapter 209: Trap](#)

[Chapter 210: Taming](#)

[Chapter 211: Scoundrel Darke](#)

[Chapter 212: Intimate](#)

[Chapter 213: The World at the Bottom of the Lake](#)

[Chapter 214: Blood of the Sinners](#)

[Chapter 215: Staff of Moses](#)

[Chapter 216: Hatred](#)

[Chapter 217: Special Assignment](#)

[Chapter 218: Looking at the Roland Continent!](#)

[Chapter 219: At the Sea](#)

[Chapter 220: Inhuman](#)

[Chapter 221: Evil Rody](#)

[Chapter 222: Rapid Kill](#)

[Chapter 223: Muddy and Turbid](#)

[Chapter 224: Dragon Warriors](#)

[Chapter 225: Coincidence](#)

[Chapter 226: The First Pontiff](#)

[Chapter 227: Complete State](#)

[Chapter 228: Rupture!](#)

[Chapter 229: Reptiles](#)

[Chapter 230: Next](#)

[Chapter 231: Rules](#)

[Chapter 232: Shackles](#)

[Chapter 233: “Love at First Sight”](#)
[Chapter 234: Beauty Trap](#)
[Chapter 235: Stunning Beauty – Seth](#)
[Chapter 236: Legendary Master](#)
[Chapter 237: Provocation](#)
[Chapter 238: Freak](#)
[Chapter 239: Female Paladin’s Visit](#)
[Chapter 240: God’s Chosen One](#)
[Chapter 241: The King’s Ambition](#)
[Chapter 242: The Curse of ‘God’s Record’](#)
[Chapter 243: The Sauron Royal Family’s Secret](#)
[Chapter 244: The Person Standing Outside the Circle](#)
[Chapter 245: Underground Cave](#)
[Chapter 246: Mural](#)
[Chapter 247: True History](#)
[Chapter 248: Mouse’s New Clothes](#)
[Chapter 249: Swine](#)
[Chapter 250: Enemies are Destined to Meet](#)
[Chapter 251: Fielding's Transformation](#)
[Chapter 252: Estrangement](#)
[Chapter 253: Break!](#)
[Chapter 254: Nebulous](#)
[Chapter 255: A Night Perfect for Assassin](#)
[Chapter 256: Aliens will not be Loyal](#)
[Chapter 257: Prometheus](#)
[Chapter 258: Seth’s Fear](#)
[Chapter 259: Garden Encounter](#)
[Chapter 260: Departure](#)
[Chapter 261: Unexpected Follower](#)
[Chapter 262: Nuisance, Nuisance](#)
[Chapter 263: The Enlightened Bait](#)
[Chapter 264: Another Use for Fighting Energy](#)
[Chapter 265: Arrival at the Border](#)
[Chapter 266: Second Robbery](#)
[Chapter 267: Kikukawa Yukinari](#)
[Chapter 268: Restricted Area](#)
[Chapter 269: Thousand Rider General](#)
[Chapter 270: Sudden Change \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 271: Sudden Change \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 272: Guileless Manipulator \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 273: Guileless Manipulator \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 274: Treasure Hunters I](#)
[Chapter 275: Treasure Hunters \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 276: Can't See Sky, Can't See Earth, Can't See People \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 277: Can't See Sky, Can't See Earth, Can't See People \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 278: Divine Primordial Spirit](#)
[Chapter 279: Not Human](#)
[Chapter 280: Hakone Battle \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 281: Hakone Battle \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 282: Hakone Battle \(3\)](#)
[Chapter 283: Hakone Fury](#)
[Chapter 284: Rody's Life Saving Trick \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 285: Rody's Life Saving Trick \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 286: Sly Fatty \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 287: Sly Fatty \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 288: God Vs God! \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 289: God Vs God! \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 290: God's Record Reappears](#)
[Chapter 291: Undress](#)
[Chapter 292: Insidious](#)
[Chapter 293: Dark Mercenaries](#)
[Chapter 294: Fighting a One-Sided Battle](#)
[Chapter 295: Terrorizing with Military Force](#)
[Chapter 296: Black Veil Again!](#)
[Chapter 297: Swept Away](#)
[Chapter 298: An Ambitious Person's Desolation](#)
[Chapter 299: Battle of Wits](#)
[Chapter 300: A Defeated General \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 301: A Defeated General \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 302: Identity!](#)
[Chapter 303: Sneak Attack](#)
[Chapter 304: Red Clothed Saint](#)
[Chapter 305: I Am Going To Kill Him!](#)
[Chapter 306: You Never Realized](#)
[Chapter 307: Successor](#)
[Chapter 308: Dragon God VS Mystic Dragon](#)
[Chapter 309: Real History](#)
[Chapter 310: Truth of God's Record](#)

[Chapter 311: Nedis's Love](#)
[Chapter 312: Bestowing a Marriage](#)
[Chapter 313: Coincidental Loss of Military Power](#)
[Chapter 314: Shackles](#)
[Chapter 315: New Home](#)
[Chapter 316: Wedding](#)
[Chapter 317: Rody's Happy Life](#)
[Chapter 318: Riots](#)
[Chapter 319: Show of Authority \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 320: Show of Authority \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 321: Peculiar Loot](#)
[Chapter 322: Replacement](#)
[Chapter 323: Looming Crisis](#)
[Chapter 324: A Two-Hundred-Year-Old Conspiracy](#)
[Chapter 325: Twists and Turns](#)
[Chapter 326: Rody's Revenge \(I\)](#)
[Chapter 327: Rody's Revenge \(II\)](#)
[Chapter 328: Eighth Transformation](#)
[Chapter 329: The Devil's Coming](#)
[Chapter 330: Nedis's Journey](#)
[Chapter 331: Little Vampire's Wisdom](#)
[Chapter 332: The Forbidden Door](#)
[Chapter 333: Time to Unveil the Truth](#)
[Chapter 334: Entering Heaven](#)
[Chapter 335: Dragon Egg](#)
[Chapter 336: God?](#)
[Chapter 337: The Final Chapter \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 338: The Final Chapter \(2\)](#)